

# *The Interlocking System*



*of*



# ARROGANCE



**Nuclear Destruction**

for the



*Christian Way of Life*

# The Interlocking Systems of Arrogance

## The Black Death Plague of the Spiritual Life

4<sup>th</sup> Edition

The Arrogance Encyclopedia

Motivational Arrogance

&

Functional Arrogance

Taken from detailed biblical studies By Col. R. B. Thieme Jr.

The Life of David, 1971, Series 631, and many other studies

Compiling and Editing by:

Dr. Frank P. Ferraro

**Copyright © 2024 ALL rights reserved**

The content of this document is protected by all applicable copyright laws. Unauthorized use and/or duplication of this material **FOR THE PURPOSE OF SALE OR PROFIT** to any degree without express permission from the author is strictly prohibited.

**Copyright © 2024**

ALL presentations of the Absolute Truths of Bible Doctrine must be WITHOUT FINANCIAL CHARGE OR OBLIGATION in order that those without the means to pay for them can still have the the TRUTH. It is, in effect, a function of EVIL, to charge people to receive the TRUTH of the Doctrines of GOD since GOD GAVE THESE TRUTHS TO US FREELY AND HAS PRESERVED THEM THROUGHOUT HUMAN HISTORY! Bible Doctrine is a product of the Grace of God therefore this UNMODIFIED Doctrinal compilation as a reflection of the Grace of God is available to all at NO CHARGE. Duplication and distribution **WITHOUT MODIFICATION** is permitted by all.

## Table of Contents

<b>Dedication.....</b>	<b>22</b>
<b>Preface.....</b>	<b>23</b>
<b>Additional Bible Doctrine Compilations Available:.....</b>	<b>25</b>
<b>Introduction.....</b>	<b>26</b>
<b>Christianity &amp; Christian Way of Life.....</b>	<b>26</b>
<b>The Creation and Fall of Man.....</b>	<b>26</b>
Prehistoric Angelic Creation.....	26
Satan's Strategic Offensive Action in Eternity Past.....	27
Restoration of the Earth & Creation of Man.....	29
<b>Existence of man – Power Systems.....</b>	<b>30</b>
Power System of Satan = Slavery of Man.....	31
Power System of God = Freedom of Man.....	31
<b>Introduction to the Interlocking System of Arrogance.....</b>	<b>33</b>
<b>Degeneracy vs Sin.....</b>	<b>34</b>
Immoral vs Moral Degeneracy.....	34
<b>Power System of Satan = Slavery of Man.....</b>	<b>37</b>
<b>Understanding the 2 Dynaspheres in the Power System of Satan.....</b>	<b>50</b>
The Enemy – the Cosmic Dynaspheres.....	50
<b>Demon Influence.....</b>	<b>50</b>
Entrance into the Cosmic Dynaspheres.....	51
<b>Who Controls the Soul.....</b>	<b>53</b>
Fallen Angels.....	54
Arrogance a Primary Enemy of the Spiritual Life.....	55
<b>The Consent of the Believer.....</b>	<b>55</b>
Manufacturing Losers.....	55
<b>A Clearer Understanding of Arrogance.....</b>	<b>58</b>
The Purpose of the Interlocking System of Arrogance.....	60
<b>Arrogance &amp; Power Systems.....</b>	<b>61</b>
<b>Recognizing Entrance into the Interlocking System of Arrogance.....</b>	<b>62</b>
Demon Influence & Demon Possession & Arrogance.....	63
Fragmentation of the Spiritual Life & Arrogance.....	64
Polarized vs Self Fragmentation.....	66
Self Fragmentation.....	67
Polarized Fragmentation:.....	68
<b>Polarized Fragmentation distorts Freedom and Authority.....</b>	<b>68</b>
Solutions to Fragmentation.....	69
Illustration of Implosion, Explosion and Fragmentation.....	69
<b>How the Interlocking System of Arrogance Functions.....</b>	<b>69</b>
<b>Arrogance vs Truth.....</b>	<b>71</b>
<b>Principles of Arrogance.....</b>	<b>73</b>
Part & Counter Part.....	75
<b>Arrogance &amp; Crisis or Disaster.....</b>	<b>78</b>
<b>Erroneous Evaluation of One's Life.....</b>	<b>80</b>

<b><u>Arrogance vs Grace.....</u></b>	<b><u>81</u></b>
<b><u>Arrogance &amp; Faith Rest.....</u></b>	<b><u>82</u></b>
<b><u>Arrogance, Prayer &amp; Evil Influence.....</u></b>	<b><u>88</u></b>
<b><u>Arrogance is not Reversionism.....</u></b>	<b><u>88</u></b>
<b><u>Interlocking System of Arrogance &amp; Reversionism.....</u></b>	<b><u>90</u></b>
<b><u>Arrogance and Modern Man.....</u></b>	<b><u>91</u></b>
<u>Characteristics of the Arrogant Person.....</u>	<u>92</u>
<u>Anti Establishment Acceptance in Arrogant People.....</u>	<u>93</u>
<b><u>Arrogance vs Humility.....</u></b>	<b><u>93</u></b>
<b><u>Arrogance &amp; Age.....</u></b>	<b><u>95</u></b>
<b><u>Arrogance &amp; Humor.....</u></b>	<b><u>96</u></b>
<b><u>Arrogance &amp; Rejection of Truth.....</u></b>	<b><u>96</u></b>
<b><u>Arrogance &amp; Divorcement from Reality.....</u></b>	<b><u>97</u></b>
<b><u>Arrogance and Application of Bible Doctrine.....</u></b>	<b><u>99</u></b>
<u>Categories of Failure of Bible Doctrine Application.....</u>	<u>100</u>
<b><u>Introduction to Motivational Arrogance.....</u></b>	<b><u>102</u></b>
<b><u>Gate #1 – Angelic Arrogance.....</u></b>	<b><u>104</u></b>
<u>Angelic Arrogance and EVIL.....</u>	<u>107</u>
<b><u>Gate #2 – The Arrogance of Negative Volition.....</u></b>	<b><u>107</u></b>
<u>Negative Volition &amp; Free Will Decisions.....</u>	<u>111</u>
<u>The Arrogance Grenade &amp; Negative Volition Arrogance.....</u>	<u>113</u>
<u>The 4 Rs of the Grace Apparatus for Perception.....</u>	<u>115</u>
<u>Stage 1: Reception.....</u>	<u>115</u>
<u>Stage 2: Retention.....</u>	<u>115</u>
<u>Stage 3: Recall.....</u>	<u>116</u>
<u>Stage 4: Resistance.....</u>	<u>116</u>
<u>Negative Volition, Cosmic Dynaspheres vs Divine Dynasphere.....</u>	<u>116</u>
<u>Rejection of Truth.....</u>	<u>118</u>
<u>Negative Volition, The Jews &amp; The Big Blot Out.....</u>	<u>120</u>
<u>Negative Volition, Gentiles both Believer &amp; Unbeliever.....</u>	<u>127</u>
<u>Negative Volition to Truth is Arrogance, Reversionism &amp; Antagonism.....</u>	<u>132</u>
<u>Negative Volition &amp; Scar Tissue of the Soul.....</u>	<u>133</u>
<u>Scar Tissue of the Soul &amp; The Jew.....</u>	<u>137</u>
<u>Negative Volition leading to Reversionism.....</u>	<u>138</u>
<u>Arrogant Subjectivity in Perception of Bible Doctrine.....</u>	<u>143</u>
<b><u>Gate #3 – The Arrogance of Ignorance.....</u></b>	<b><u>148</u></b>
<u>Criminals, Crusaders &amp; Arrogance of Ignorance.....</u>	<u>152</u>
<u>The Doctrinal Side of the Arrogance of Ignorance.....</u>	<u>154</u>
<u>Arrogance of Ignorance vs Divine Veracity.....</u>	<u>155</u>
<u>Arrogance of Ignorance &amp; Power --&gt; Disaster.....</u>	<u>156</u>
<u>Arrogance of Ignorance, Power &amp; Lucifer.....</u>	<u>157</u>
<u>History &amp; Arrogance of Ignorance.....</u>	<u>157</u>
<b><u>Gate #4 – The Mental Attitude Arrogance of Pride.....</u></b>	<b><u>158</u></b>



<u>Mental Attitude Arrogance, Motivational Arrogance from Evil.....</u>	<u>163</u>
<u>Mental Attitude Distortions.....</u>	<u>165</u>
<u>Pride &amp; It's Counterparts.....</u>	<u>166</u>
<u>The Origin of Pride.....</u>	<u>171</u>
<u>Mental Attitude Arrogance as Motivational Arrogance.....</u>	<u>173</u>
<u>Results of Mental Attitude Arrogance.....</u>	<u>173</u>
<u>ALL Pride is based in THOUGHT.....</u>	<u>174</u>
<u>Pride &amp; Rejection of Authority.....</u>	<u>176</u>
<u>Pride &amp; Rejection of Truth.....</u>	<u>177</u>
<u>Pride &amp; Fluctuation of Standards of Life.....</u>	<u>179</u>
<u>Pride &amp; Alcoholism.....</u>	<u>180</u>
<u>Pride vs Ego.....</u>	<u>181</u>
<u>Pride &amp; Emotional Revolt of the Soul.....</u>	<u>182</u>
<u>Pride &amp; Guilt.....</u>	<u>182</u>
<u>Pride &amp; Honor.....</u>	<u>182</u>
<u>Pride vs Grace.....</u>	<u>183</u>
<u>Pride vs Humility.....</u>	<u>184</u>
<u>Pride &amp; Pettiness.....</u>	<u>186</u>
<u>Pride &amp; Thanksgiving.....</u>	<u>187</u>
<u>Pride &amp; Psychology.....</u>	<u>188</u>
<u>Character Flaws.....</u>	<u>188</u>
<u>    Physiological – Genetic Flaws.....</u>	<u>189</u>
<u>Hangups.....</u>	<u>189</u>
<u>Syndromes.....</u>	<u>191</u>
<u>Mental Attitude Arrogance vs Relationship with God.....</u>	<u>192</u>
<u>Pride, the Original Sin &amp; the Woman.....</u>	<u>192</u>
<u>Pride &amp; False Motivation.....</u>	<u>196</u>
<u>Pride vs Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God.....</u>	<u>201</u>
<u>Pride in Weak vs Strong Believers.....</u>	<u>204</u>
<u>Pride vs Confidence.....</u>	<u>204</u>
<u>Mental Attitude Arrogance &amp; Testing.....</u>	<u>205</u>
<u>Defense Mechanisms leading to Maladaptive Defense Mechanisms.....</u>	<u>207</u>
<u>    Forward Line of Troops in the Child.....</u>	<u>208</u>
<u>Maladaptive Defense Mechanisms &amp; Arrogance.....</u>	<u>208</u>
<u>Maladaptive Defense Mechanisms.....</u>	<u>209</u>
<u>    Denial.....</u>	<u>210</u>
<u>    Projection.....</u>	<u>211</u>
<u>    Rationalization.....</u>	<u>211</u>
<u>    Dissociation.....</u>	<u>211</u>
<u>    Delusion.....</u>	<u>212</u>
<u>    Autistic Fantasy.....</u>	<u>212</u>
<u>    Pseudo Self Esteem.....</u>	<u>213</u>
<u>    False Memory Syndrome.....</u>	<u>213</u>

Acting-Out.....	213
Idealization.....	213
Intellectualization.....	213
Isolation.....	213
Repression.....	214
Suppression.....	214
Reaction Formation.....	214
<b>The 4 Major Battles in the Soul of the believer.....</b>	<b>215</b>
Stress.....	215
Sin.....	216
False Doctrine.....	216
Maladaptive Defense Mechanisms.....	216
<b>Maladaptive Defense Mechanisms &amp; The Psychotic Christian.....</b>	<b>217</b>
<b>Arrogance &amp; Integrated vs Dissociative Personality.....</b>	<b>218</b>
<b>Solutions to Maladaptive Defense Mechanisms.....</b>	<b>219</b>
<b>Solution to Pride.....</b>	<b>220</b>
<b>Gate #5 – The Arrogance of Failure / Flaw Transference.....</b>	<b>221</b>
Projection.....	222
<b>Gate #6 – The Arrogance of Jealousy.....</b>	<b>223</b>
Jealousy & Anthropopathisms.....	223
Technical Definitions.....	223
Principles Related to the Doctrine of Jealousy.....	225
The Source or Causes of Jealousy.....	226
Characteristics of Jealousy.....	227
Jealousy & the Old Sin Nature.....	229
Jealousy, Negative Volition & Reversionism.....	231
Jealousy & Emotional Revolt of the Soul.....	236
Jealousy & The Cosmic Dynaspheres.....	237
Jealousy & Interlocking System of Arrogance.....	238
Jealousy & Soul Fragmentation.....	240
Implosion.....	240
Explosion.....	241
Illustration of Implosion and Explosion.....	242
Jealousy, Arrogance & Split Personality.....	243
Jealousy & Lust.....	244
Jealousy & Pride.....	245
Jealousy & Bitterness.....	246
Jealousy & Blind Arrogance.....	247
Jealousy & Hypersensitivity.....	247
Jealousy & Suffering.....	247
Jealousy vs Love.....	248
Personal Love Vulnerabilities.....	249
Impersonal, Unconditional Love Strengths.....	251

<u>Jealousy &amp; Category 2 Love, Romance.....</u>	<u>251</u>
<u>Jealousy &amp; Category 3 Love, Friendship.....</u>	<u>252</u>
<u>Personal Conditional Love vs Impersonal, Unconditional Love.....</u>	<u>252</u>
<u>Jealousy &amp; Relationships.....</u>	<u>254</u>
<u>Jealousy &amp; Stress.....</u>	<u>256</u>
<u>Jealousy &amp; Psychosis.....</u>	<u>257</u>
<u>Jealousy &amp; Self-Justification.....</u>	<u>258</u>
<u>Jealousy &amp; the Laws of Divine Establishment.....</u>	<u>259</u>
<u>Jealousy &amp; Authority.....</u>	<u>260</u>
<u>Jealousy &amp; Conspiracy &amp; Revolution.....</u>	<u>260</u>
<u>Jealousy &amp; Murder.....</u>	<u>263</u>
<u>Jealousy &amp; Ambition.....</u>	<u>264</u>
<u>Jealousy &amp; Malice.....</u>	<u>265</u>
<u>Jealousy &amp; Revenge.....</u>	<u>266</u>
<u>Jealousy vs Unity.....</u>	<u>266</u>
<u>Unrealistic Expectation, an Enemy of Unity.....</u>	<u>267</u>
<u>Jealousy &amp; the Public Lie.....</u>	<u>267</u>
<u>Jealousy &amp; Human Viewpoint.....</u>	<u>268</u>
<u>Jealousy &amp; Religion.....</u>	<u>268</u>
<u>Religious Legalism results in Moral Degeneracy.....</u>	<u>268</u>
<u>Jealousy &amp; Anger.....</u>	<u>269</u>
<u>Jealousy &amp; Old Age.....</u>	<u>269</u>
<u>Jealousy &amp; Leadership.....</u>	<u>269</u>
<u>Jealousy &amp; Loyalty.....</u>	<u>271</u>
<u>Illustrations of Jealousy.....</u>	<u>271</u>
<u>Jealousy Invents Accusations.....</u>	<u>273</u>
<u>Results of Jealousy.....</u>	<u>273</u>
<u>Solutions to Jealousy.....</u>	<u>276</u>
<u>Gate #7 - The Arrogance of Bitterness.....</u>	<u>277</u>
<u>Bitterness in Marriage.....</u>	<u>279</u>
<u>Bitterness leading to Functional Arrogance.....</u>	<u>279</u>
<u>Characteristics of Bitterness.....</u>	<u>280</u>
<u>Panorama of Bitterness.....</u>	<u>280</u>
<u>The Functions of Bitterness.....</u>	<u>283</u>
<u>Seven Destructive Functions of Bitterness:.....</u>	<u>284</u>
<u>Bitter Jealousy.....</u>	<u>284</u>
<u>Gate #8 - The Arrogance of Self Pity.....</u>	<u>285</u>
<u>Self Pity &amp; The Woman.....</u>	<u>286</u>
<u>Gate #9 - The Arrogance of Self Righteousness.....</u>	<u>286</u>
<u>Self Righteous Arrogance and Power.....</u>	<u>292</u>
<u>Self Righteous Arrogance related to Impulsive Arrogance.....</u>	<u>293</u>
<u>Self Righteous Arrogance related to National Arrogance.....</u>	<u>294</u>
<u>Self Righteous Arrogance related to Salvation.....</u>	<u>297</u>

<b><u>Self Righteous Arrogance and Verbal Sins.....</u></b>	<b><u>304</u></b>
<u>Verbal Sins and the Mutual Admiration Society.....</u>	<u>305</u>
<b><u>Self Righteous Arrogance and The Law of Works.....</u></b>	<b><u>306</u></b>
<b><u>Self Righteous Arrogance and Weak Believers.....</u></b>	<b><u>309</u></b>
<b><u>Self Righteous Arrogance &amp; the Integrity of God.....</u></b>	<b><u>314</u></b>
<b><u>Self Righteous Arrogance &amp; Flexibility.....</u></b>	<b><u>315</u></b>
<b><u>Self Righteous Arrogance and Zealousness.....</u></b>	<b><u>316</u></b>
<b><u>Self Righteous Arrogance vs Imputed Absolute Righteousness.....</u></b>	<b><u>321</u></b>
<u>You Are What You Think.....</u>	<u>322</u>
<u>The Plan of God vs Self Righteousness.....</u>	<u>322</u>
<u>Arrogance &amp; Society.....</u>	<u>323</u>
<b><u>Arrogance of Lifestyle for Salvation.....</u></b>	<b><u>324</u></b>
<b><u>Self Righteous &amp; Blind Arrogance, Apostasy &amp; Self Pity.....</u></b>	<b><u>326</u></b>
<b><u>Gate #10 - The Arrogance of Approbation.....</u></b>	<b><u>328</u></b>
<b><u>Gate #11 - The Arrogance of Self Vindication.....</u></b>	<b><u>329</u></b>
<b><u>Gate #12 - The Arrogance of Fanaticism.....</u></b>	<b><u>330</u></b>
<b><u>Gate #13 - The Arrogance Skills.....</u></b>	<b><u>333</u></b>
<b><u>Arrogance Skills Defined.....</u></b>	<b><u>333</u></b>
<u>Self Justification.....</u>	<u>333</u>
<u>Self Deception.....</u>	<u>334</u>
<u>Self Absorption.....</u>	<u>334</u>
<b><u>Exploitation &amp; Blaming others for One's Problems.....</u></b>	<b><u>335</u></b>
<b><u>The Origin of Arrogance Skills.....</u></b>	<b><u>335</u></b>
<b><u>Loser Believer - Believing the Lie.....</u></b>	<b><u>336</u></b>
<b><u>The Threat of Perpetual Carnality.....</u></b>	<b><u>338</u></b>
<b><u>Arrogance Skills &amp; Spiritual Life Distractions.....</u></b>	<b><u>338</u></b>
<b><u>Cycling of the Arrogance Skills.....</u></b>	<b><u>339</u></b>
<b><u>Arrogance &amp; Stress in the Soul.....</u></b>	<b><u>339</u></b>
<u>Outside Pressures which contribute to Stress in the Soul.....</u>	<u>340</u>
<u>Categories of Adversity &amp; Prosperity Derived from Lust.....</u>	<u>341</u>
<b><u>Reaction, Distraction &amp; Injustice.....</u></b>	<b><u>343</u></b>
<b><u>Arrogance Skills &amp; Power.....</u></b>	<b><u>344</u></b>
<b><u>Arrogance Skills &amp; Maladaptive Defense Mechanisms.....</u></b>	<b><u>344</u></b>
<b><u>Mechanics of Arrogance &amp; Maladaptive Defense Mechanisms.....</u></b>	<b><u>345</u></b>
<u>Denial.....</u>	<u>345</u>
<u>Projection.....</u>	<u>345</u>
<u>Rationalization.....</u>	<u>345</u>
<u>Dissociation.....</u>	<u>345</u>
<u>Repressions.....</u>	<u>345</u>
<u>Pseudo Self Esteem.....</u>	<u>345</u>
<u>Autistic Fantasy.....</u>	<u>346</u>
<b><u>Arrogance Skills &amp; Activism.....</u></b>	<b><u>346</u></b>
<b><u>Arrogance Skills &amp; National Destruction.....</u></b>	<b><u>347</u></b>

<u>Arrogance Skills &amp; Christian Suffering.....</u>	<u>348</u>
<u>Arrogance Skills &amp; the Immaturity Hangover.....</u>	<u>350</u>
<u>Arrogance Skills and Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God.....</u>	<u>351</u>
<u>Arrogance Skills, Spiritual Maturity &amp; Solving Problems.....</u>	<u>353</u>
<u>Arrogance &amp; The Sophisticated Spiritual Life.....</u>	<u>356</u>
<u>Stages of the Spiritual Life.....</u>	<u>356</u>
<u>Arrogance Skills vs Virtue Love.....</u>	<u>356</u>
<u>Arrogance Skills and Hypersensitivity.....</u>	<u>358</u>
<u>Testing for Blessing in the Sophisticated Spiritual Life.....</u>	<u>359</u>
<u>Advanced Problem Solving Devices in the Sophisticated Spiritual Life.....</u>	<u>360</u>
<u>Blessing and Testing.....</u>	<u>360</u>
<u>The Cogs of Carnality Graphic.....</u>	<u>363</u>
<u>Gate #14 - The Arrogance of Condemnation.....</u>	<u>363</u>
<u>Gate #15 - The Arrogance of Misapplied Virtue.....</u>	<u>369</u>
<u>Virtue Reversal == Disaster.....</u>	<u>371</u>
<u>Humility as Virtue.....</u>	<u>371</u>
<u>The Virtue of Love.....</u>	<u>374</u>
<u>Virtue vs Cosmic Dynaspheres.....</u>	<u>375</u>
<u>Virtue Summary.....</u>	<u>376</u>
<u>Gate #16 - The Arrogance of False Perspective.....</u>	<u>377</u>
<u>Gate #17 - The Arrogance of Inflexibility.....</u>	<u>378</u>
<u>Gate #18 - The Arrogance of Intolerance.....</u>	<u>385</u>
<u>Gate #19 - The Arrogance of Rejection.....</u>	<u>386</u>
<u>Active Rejection.....</u>	<u>388</u>
<u>Passive rejection.....</u>	<u>388</u>
<u>Areas of Rejection.....</u>	<u>388</u>
<u>Causes of Rejection.....</u>	<u>389</u>
<u>Reasons for Rejection.....</u>	<u>389</u>
<u>MIS-Handling Rejection.....</u>	<u>390</u>
<u>The Solution to Rejection.....</u>	<u>390</u>
<u>The Breath of the Spiritual Life.....</u>	<u>392</u>
<u>Categories of Rejection:.....</u>	<u>392</u>
<u>Gate #20 - The Arrogance of Emotion.....</u>	<u>395</u>
<u>Emotional Revolt of the Soul &amp; Psychopathic Arrogance.....</u>	<u>398</u>
<u>Emotional Revolt as Irrational Arrogance.....</u>	<u>399</u>
<u>Results of Irrational Arrogance.....</u>	<u>400</u>
<u>Irrational Emotional Arrogance Distortions.....</u>	<u>402</u>
<u>Categories of Emotional Sinning.....</u>	<u>402</u>
<u>The Hysteria Category.....</u>	<u>402</u>
<u>The Dissociation Category.....</u>	<u>403</u>
<u>The Egocentric or Self Centered Category.....</u>	<u>403</u>
<u>The Reaction or Antagonism Category.....</u>	<u>404</u>
<u>The Guilt Category.....</u>	<u>405</u>



<u>Cowardice, Fear &amp; Emotional Arrogance.....</u>	<u>407</u>
<u>The Faith Rest Drill &amp; Emotional Arrogance.....</u>	<u>419</u>
<u>Humility &amp; Emotional Arrogance.....</u>	<u>420</u>
<u>Emotional Arrogance &amp; The Insignificant.....</u>	<u>421</u>
<u>Bible Doctrine &amp; Emotional Arrogance.....</u>	<u>421</u>
<u>Emotional Arrogance &amp; Revolution.....</u>	<u>422</u>
<u>Jealousy &amp; Emotional Arrogance.....</u>	<u>423</u>
<u>Emotional Arrogance &amp; Personal vs Impersonal Love.....</u>	<u>424</u>
<u>Gate #21 – The Arrogance of Hypersensitivity.....</u>	<u>427</u>
<u>Hypersensitivity &amp; Insensitivity as Non-virtuous Functions.....</u>	<u>430</u>
<u>Gate #22 – The Arrogance of Unhappiness.....</u>	<u>431</u>
<u>Happiness.....</u>	<u>431</u>
<u>Thinking &amp; Happiness.....</u>	<u>432</u>
<u>Categorical Happiness.....</u>	<u>435</u>
<u>6 Illusions of Happiness apart from Virtue and Values In Life.....</u>	<u>435</u>
<u>The Myths of the Arrogance of Unhappiness.....</u>	<u>436</u>
<u>Happiness for the Believer vs Unbeliever.....</u>	<u>436</u>
<u>Unhappy People.....</u>	<u>438</u>
<u>Erroneous Ideas as to what constitutes happiness in life.....</u>	<u>438</u>
<u>Unhappiness of The Free Spirit.....</u>	<u>439</u>
<u>Martyrdom of Unhappiness.....</u>	<u>440</u>
<u>Sublimations &amp; Unhappiness.....</u>	<u>441</u>
<u>Myths of Marriage &amp; Happiness.....</u>	<u>442</u>
<u>Unhappiness &amp; Control.....</u>	<u>445</u>
<u>Principles of the Arrogance of Unhappiness.....</u>	<u>445</u>
<u>Prosperity &amp; Unhappiness Arrogance.....</u>	<u>447</u>
<u>Happiness, Unhappiness &amp; the Client Nation.....</u>	<u>448</u>
<u>Bible Doctrine, Disaster &amp; Unhappiness.....</u>	<u>448</u>
<u>The Basis for True Happiness.....</u>	<u>449</u>
<u>Gate #23 – The Arrogance of Regret.....</u>	<u>451</u>
<u>Gate #24 – The Arrogance of Discouragement.....</u>	<u>456</u>
<u>Gate #25 – The Arrogance of Disenchantment / Disillusionment.....</u>	<u>456</u>
<u>The Feet of Clay Syndrome.....</u>	<u>459</u>
<u>Disorientation to Life.....</u>	<u>460</u>
<u>The Solution to Disillusion &amp; Disenchantment Arrogance.....</u>	<u>460</u>
<u>Gate #26 – The Arrogance of Guilt.....</u>	<u>461</u>
<u>Guilt vs Grace Thinking.....</u>	<u>465</u>
<u>Guilt &amp; Egocentricity.....</u>	<u>467</u>
<u>Guilt vs Prosperity.....</u>	<u>467</u>
<u>National Guilt.....</u>	<u>468</u>
<u>Guilt, Rebound &amp; Emotional Arrogance.....</u>	<u>468</u>
<u>Gate #27 – The Arrogance of Shame.....</u>	<u>471</u>
<u>Shame at the Judgment Seat of Jesus Christ.....</u>	<u>474</u>

<b><u>Avoiding Shame at the Judgment Seat of Jesus Christ.....</u></b>	<b><u>475</u></b>
<b><u>Gate #28 – The Arrogance of Lust.....</u></b>	<b><u>477</u></b>
<b><u>Gate #29 – The Arrogance of Unrealistic Expectation.....</u></b>	<b><u>478</u></b>
<b><u>Gate #30 – The Arrogance of Sincerity and Desire.....</u></b>	<b><u>480</u></b>
<b><u>Gate #31 – The Arrogance of Pseudo Love.....</u></b>	<b><u>481</u></b>
<b><u>True Love.....</u></b>	<b><u>482</u></b>
<b><u>Dishonor &amp; Love.....</u></b>	<b><u>487</u></b>
<b><u>Personal Love vs Virtue.....</u></b>	<b><u>488</u></b>
<b><u>Gate #32 – The Arrogance of Inordinate Grief.....</u></b>	<b><u>489</u></b>
<b><u>Death is God's Decision.....</u></b>	<b><u>490</u></b>
<b><u>Death &amp; Grace.....</u></b>	<b><u>491</u></b>
<b><u>Gate #33 – The Arrogance of Insecurity.....</u></b>	<b><u>494</u></b>
<b><u>Gate #34 – The Arrogance of Dominating Personality.....</u></b>	<b><u>495</u></b>
<b><u>Personality, Blind &amp; Institutional Arrogance Interlocking.....</u></b>	<b><u>497</u></b>
<b><u>Personality, Blind &amp; Conspiracy Arrogance Interlocking.....</u></b>	<b><u>498</u></b>
<b><u>Avoiding Personality Arrogance.....</u></b>	<b><u>498</u></b>
<b><u>Gate #35 – The Arrogance of Genetic, Ancestor Pride or Posterity Pride.....</u></b>	<b><u>499</u></b>
<b><u>Posterity Arrogance.....</u></b>	<b><u>499</u></b>
<b><u>Genetic Arrogance and RACE.....</u></b>	<b><u>500</u></b>
<b><u>Gate #36 – The Arrogance of Egocentricity.....</u></b>	<b><u>504</u></b>
<b><u>Egocentric Arrogance &amp; Conscience.....</u></b>	<b><u>509</u></b>
<b><u>Gate #37 – The Arrogance of Inordinate Ambition and Competition.....</u></b>	<b><u>510</u></b>
<b><u>Inordinate Ambition and Power Lust.....</u></b>	<b><u>512</u></b>
<b><u>Inordinate Ambition vs Virtue.....</u></b>	<b><u>513</u></b>
<b><u>Proper Orientation to Power and Success.....</u></b>	<b><u>514</u></b>
<b><u>Gate #38 – The Arrogance of the Demand Syndrome.....</u></b>	<b><u>515</u></b>
<b><u>Gate #39 – The Arrogance of Ingratitude.....</u></b>	<b><u>519</u></b>
<b><u>Gate #40 – The Arrogance of Pseudo Intellectualism.....</u></b>	<b><u>522</u></b>
<b><u>Pseudo Intellectuals &amp; Absolute Truth.....</u></b>	<b><u>526</u></b>
<b><u>Pseudo Intellectual Arrogance = Rational Arrogance.....</u></b>	<b><u>528</u></b>
<b><u>Pseudo Intellectuals &amp; Liberalism.....</u></b>	<b><u>530</u></b>
<b><u>Pseudo Intellectuals &amp; Emotion.....</u></b>	<b><u>532</u></b>
<b><u>Pseudo Intellectuals &amp; Stupidity.....</u></b>	<b><u>533</u></b>
<b><u>Pseudo Intellectuals &amp; Authority.....</u></b>	<b><u>534</u></b>
<b><u>Pseudo Intellectuals &amp; Security.....</u></b>	<b><u>535</u></b>
<b><u>Pseudo Intellectuals and National Arrogance.....</u></b>	<b><u>536</u></b>
<b><u>Pseudo Intellectuals &amp; Socialism.....</u></b>	<b><u>536</u></b>
<b><u>Pseudo Intellectuals &amp; The FOX.....</u></b>	<b><u>537</u></b>
<b><u>Gate #41 – The Arrogance Regarding Authority, The Satanic Syndrome.....</u></b>	<b><u>539</u></b>
<b><u>Origins of Authority Arrogance.....</u></b>	<b><u>540</u></b>
<b><u>Authority Arrogance Leading to Functional Arrogance.....</u></b>	<b><u>544</u></b>
<b><u>Responsibility under Authority.....</u></b>	<b><u>545</u></b>
<b><u>Manifestations of Authority Arrogance.....</u></b>	<b><u>549</u></b>

<b><u>Authority Arrogance vs Establishment functions.....</u></b>	<b><u>552</u></b>
<b><u>Legitimate vs Illegitimate Authority &amp; Government.....</u></b>	<b><u>553</u></b>
<b><u>Fear vs Authority Orientation.....</u></b>	<b><u>554</u></b>
<b><u>Ladies, Learning &amp; Arrogance.....</u></b>	<b><u>555</u></b>
<b><u>Authority Arrogance &amp; The Local Church.....</u></b>	<b><u>557</u></b>
<b><u>Respect for the Authority of the Pastor Teacher.....</u></b>	<b><u>563</u></b>
<u>Arrogance vs Authority of the Pastor Teacher.....</u>	<u>567</u>
<b><u>Arrogance Destroying Authority.....</u></b>	<b><u>573</u></b>
<u>Arrogance vs Responsibility.....</u>	<u>574</u>
<u>Arrogance vs Orientation to Life.....</u>	<u>574</u>
<u>Arrogance, Impudence &amp; God.....</u>	<u>576</u>
<u>Rejection of Authority &amp; National Destruction.....</u>	<u>577</u>
<b><u>Weak Believers, Emotion &amp; Authority Arrogance.....</u></b>	<b><u>582</u></b>
<b><u>Self Discipline &amp; Blessing vs Authority Arrogance.....</u></b>	<b><u>582</u></b>
<b><u>Authority Arrogance &amp; Hangups in the Soul.....</u></b>	<b><u>583</u></b>
<b><u>Family, Children, Parents &amp; Authority Arrogance.....</u></b>	<b><u>585</u></b>
<b><u>Pseudo Solutions vs True Solutions to Authority Arrogance.....</u></b>	<b><u>587</u></b>
<b><u>Ultimate Limitation on Power.....</u></b>	<b><u>591</u></b>
<b><u>Humor, Control &amp; Power.....</u></b>	<b><u>592</u></b>
<b><u>Gate #42 – The Arrogance of a False Scale of Values.....</u></b>	<b><u>593</u></b>
<b><u>Gate #43 – The Arrogance of Morality.....</u></b>	<b><u>593</u></b>
<u>Believers &amp; Unbelievers in Morality Arrogance.....</u>	<u>596</u>
<u>Morality Arrogance vs Laws of Divine Establishment.....</u>	<u>597</u>
<u>Interlocking of Morality Arrogance.....</u>	<u>598</u>
<u>Morality Arrogance in Government.....</u>	<u>599</u>
<u>Morality and the Christian Way of Life.....</u>	<u>599</u>
<u>Morality Exposed.....</u>	<u>600</u>
<u>True Morality &amp; Humility.....</u>	<u>601</u>
<u>True Morality.....</u>	<u>602</u>
<u>Pseudo Morality.....</u>	<u>603</u>
<u>The Protocol Plan of God, Morality &amp; Virtue.....</u>	<u>605</u>
<b><u>Gate #44 – The Arrogance Regarding Eternal Security.....</u></b>	<b><u>607</u></b>
<u>The Shepherd &amp; The Lamb.....</u>	<u>609</u>
<b><u>Gate #45 – The Arrogance Regarding Equality.....</u></b>	<b><u>609</u></b>
<u>Equality and Eternity.....</u>	<u>611</u>
<u>Equality Myth.....</u>	<u>612</u>
<u>Provision and Maintenance of Freedom.....</u>	<u>614</u>
<b><u>Gate #46 – The Arrogance of Inversion.....</u></b>	<b><u>615</u></b>
<u>The Inversion Defined.....</u>	<u>615</u>
<u>Arrogance of Inversion.....</u>	<u>617</u>
<u>Grace Support for Jew &amp; Gentile Believers.....</u>	<u>618</u>
<u>The Great Inversion.....</u>	<u>620</u>
<u>The Stumbling Stone and The Great Inversion.....</u>	<u>621</u>

Divine Discipline for the Inversion.....	622
Divine Discipline for the Arrogance of Inversion.....	624
<b>Gate #47 – The Arrogance of Evil Obsession.....</b>	<b>626</b>
Achtung Minden (Attention, Mines).....	626
The Pattern of Evil Obsession.....	627
Establishment & Spiritual Solutions to Evil Obsessions.....	628
True Solutions.....	629
<b>Gate #48 – The Arrogance Involving Psychopathic Disorders.....</b>	<b>629</b>
Terminology of Psychopathic Arrogance.....	631
Rational vs Irrational Arrogance.....	631
Psychopathic Arrogance & Love.....	631
Psychopathic Arrogance & Medicine.....	631
Characteristics of the Psychopathic Personality.....	632
The Result of Locked In Arrogance.....	636
Classifications of Psychopathic Arrogance.....	640
Psychopathic Arrogance & Reversionism.....	640
Causes & Recovery from Psychopathic Arrogance.....	641
<b>Introduction to Functional Arrogance.....</b>	<b>644</b>
<b>Gate #49 – The Arrogance Regarding Repentance or Rebound.....</b>	<b>644</b>
Neglect of Rebound.....	646
Rebound & Problem Solving.....	647
Rebound & Wrongdoing.....	648
Rebound & Arrogance.....	649
Rebound, Testing & Divine Discipline.....	650
<b>Gate #50 – The Arrogance of Blindness to Self.....</b>	<b>651</b>
Blind Arrogance & Self Righteousness.....	654
Requirements for Blind Arrogance.....	658
Blind Arrogance and the Woman.....	660
Blind Arrogance & Reversionism.....	661
Human Good & Blind Arrogance & Pride.....	663
Grace & Blind Arrogance.....	665
Blind Arrogance, Volition & the Sovereignty of God.....	666
Blind Arrogance & the Rebound Procedure.....	667
The First vs The Last & Blind Arrogance.....	667
Blind Arrogance & Mobs.....	668
Blind Arrogance & The Immature Believer.....	669
<b>Gate #51 – The Arrogance Regarding Impulsive Power Abuse.....</b>	<b>670</b>
Doing your Job as unto the Lord.....	675
Impulsive Arrogance & The Woman.....	676
Proper Use of Authority.....	678
Your Opinions & Authority.....	678
Unfairness in Authority.....	680
Impulsive Arrogance & The Vigilante.....	681

<b><u>Impulsive Arrogance &amp; Child Abuse.....</u></b>	<b><u>681</u></b>
<b><u>Destruction of Humility.....</u></b>	<b><u>682</u></b>
<b><u>Emotional Abuse of Children.....</u></b>	<b><u>682</u></b>
<b><u>Gate #52 - The Arrogance of Self Indulgence, Pleasure or Lasciviousness.....</u></b>	<b><u>683</u></b>
<b><u>Immoral Degeneracy &amp; Self Indulgent Arrogance.....</u></b>	<b><u>684</u></b>
<b><u>Gate #53 - The Arrogance of Alcoholism or Hangover Arrogance.....</u></b>	<b><u>685</u></b>
<b><u>Gate #54 - The Arrogance of Complaining.....</u></b>	<b><u>686</u></b>
<b><u>Weeping, Wailing &amp; Complaining.....</u></b>	<b><u>690</u></b>
<b><u>Characteristics of Complaining people.....</u></b>	<b><u>690</u></b>
<b><u>Mental Attitude Arrogance, Reversionism &amp; Complaining.....</u></b>	<b><u>691</u></b>
<b><u>Mental Attitude Jealousy &amp; Complaining.....</u></b>	<b><u>692</u></b>
<b><u>Complaining &amp; Bitterness.....</u></b>	<b><u>693</u></b>
<b><u>Complaining &amp; Psychotic Personality.....</u></b>	<b><u>693</u></b>
<b><u>Complaining &amp; old age.....</u></b>	<b><u>693</u></b>
<b><u>Childish Believers &amp; Complaining.....</u></b>	<b><u>694</u></b>
<b><u>Examples &amp; Results of Complaining Arrogance.....</u></b>	<b><u>695</u></b>
<b><u>Complaining, an Expression of Unbelief &amp; Lack of Faith.....</u></b>	<b><u>696</u></b>
<b><u>Complaining &amp; Authority.....</u></b>	<b><u>697</u></b>
<b><u>Complaining &amp; Manipulation.....</u></b>	<b><u>697</u></b>
<b><u>Complaining vs Teachability.....</u></b>	<b><u>698</u></b>
<b><u>Authority &amp; Complaining in or by Groups.....</u></b>	<b><u>698</u></b>
<b><u>Institutional Arrogance &amp; Complaining.....</u></b>	<b><u>699</u></b>
<b><u>Complaining &amp; The Military and Law Enforcement.....</u></b>	<b><u>701</u></b>
<b><u>Professionalism vs Complaining.....</u></b>	<b><u>702</u></b>
<b><u>Complaining &amp; Marriage.....</u></b>	<b><u>702</u></b>
<b><u>Complaining &amp; Academics.....</u></b>	<b><u>704</u></b>
<b><u>Complaining &amp; The Local Church.....</u></b>	<b><u>704</u></b>
<b><u>Cowardice &amp; Complaining.....</u></b>	<b><u>705</u></b>
<b><u>Complaining related to Personal Opinion.....</u></b>	<b><u>706</u></b>
<b><u>Complaining &amp; Revolution.....</u></b>	<b><u>707</u></b>
<b><u>National Complaining - The United States of America.....</u></b>	<b><u>708</u></b>
<b><u>Complaining &amp; Hypersensitivity.....</u></b>	<b><u>709</u></b>
<b><u>Complaining &amp; Emotional Revolt of the Soul.....</u></b>	<b><u>710</u></b>
<b><u>Complaining vs Christian FOCUS.....</u></b>	<b><u>712</u></b>
<b><u>Complaining &amp; Environment.....</u></b>	<b><u>712</u></b>
<b><u>Complaining vs Happiness.....</u></b>	<b><u>713</u></b>
<b><u>Infectious Complaining.....</u></b>	<b><u>714</u></b>
<b><u>Character of God vs Complaining Believers.....</u></b>	<b><u>715</u></b>
<b><u>Complaining vs the Purpose and Plan of God.....</u></b>	<b><u>716</u></b>
<b><u>Complaining &amp; Pressures when Witnessing.....</u></b>	<b><u>717</u></b>
<b><u>Complaining &amp; the Love of God.....</u></b>	<b><u>719</u></b>
<b><u>Complaining &amp; the Justice of God.....</u></b>	<b><u>719</u></b>
<b><u>Complaining vs Honor &amp; Integrity.....</u></b>	<b><u>720</u></b>



<b><u>Complaining in Adversity &amp; Disaster.....</u></b>	<b><u>721</u></b>
<u>Complaining in Economic Depression.....</u>	<u>723</u>
<u>Deliverance of the Lord in Adversity &amp; Disaster.....</u>	<u>724</u>
<b><u>Complaining vs Crisis preparation.....</u></b>	<b><u>725</u></b>
<u>Prayer for deliverance of a Nation in Crisis:.....</u>	<u>726</u>
<b><u>Complaining, Apostasy &amp; Self Induced Misery.....</u></b>	<b><u>727</u></b>
<b><u>Grace vs Complaining.....</u></b>	<b><u>728</u></b>
<u>Complaining vs Capacity for Life.....</u>	<u>731</u>
<b><u>Complaining &amp; Necessities.....</u></b>	<b><u>732</u></b>
<b><u>Solutions to Complaining.....</u></b>	<b><u>734</u></b>
<u>Fear, Worry and Complaining vs Solutions.....</u>	<u>736</u>
<u>Complaining vs The Faith Rest Drill (5 stages).....</u>	<u>737</u>
<u>The Faith Rest Drill (5 stages) &amp; Complaining Solutions.....</u>	<u>738</u>
<u>Whining &amp; Complaining in Rebound.....</u>	<u>739</u>
<u>Reversion Recovery vs Complaining.....</u>	<u>740</u>
<b><u>Gate #55 - The Arrogance of Retaliation and Revenge.....</u></b>	<b><u>741</u></b>
<b><u>Gate #56 - The Arrogance of Criminality.....</u></b>	<b><u>742</u></b>
<u>Origin of Criminal Arrogance.....</u>	<u>744</u>
<u>Criminality in the Believer.....</u>	<u>748</u>
<u>Criminals vs Arrogant Fundamentalist Christians.....</u>	<u>750</u>
<u>Criminality, Non-Systematic Evil &amp; Freedom.....</u>	<u>750</u>
<u>Psychology &amp; Criminality.....</u>	<u>751</u>
<u>Jews for the Preservation of Firearms Ownership Article 2018.....</u>	<u>751</u>
<u>Evangelism into Criminality.....</u>	<u>753</u>
<u>Restraint on Criminals.....</u>	<u>754</u>
<u>Criminal Arrogance &amp; Violence.....</u>	<u>756</u>
<b><u>Gate #57 - The Arrogance of Murder.....</u></b>	<b><u>757</u></b>
<b><u>Gate #58 - The Arrogance of Suicide.....</u></b>	<b><u>757</u></b>
<b><u>Gate #59 - The Arrogance of Seduction.....</u></b>	<b><u>758</u></b>
<b><u>Gate #60 - The Arrogance of Immorality - Sexual Arrogance.....</u></b>	<b><u>759</u></b>
<u>King David &amp; Sexual Arrogance.....</u>	<u>762</u>
<u>Sexual Arrogance &amp; God's Gift to the Opposite Sex.....</u>	<u>764</u>
<u>Sexual Arrogance &amp; Destruction of the Life.....</u>	<u>765</u>
<u>Sexual Arrogance &amp; Society.....</u>	<u>766</u>
<b><u>Gate #61 - The Arrogance of the Crusader.....</u></b>	<b><u>767</u></b>
<u>Crusader Arrogance and Fanaticism.....</u>	<u>768</u>
<u>Pivotism vs Activism.....</u>	<u>769</u>
<u>Activism Disaster &amp; Christian Nations.....</u>	<u>769</u>
<u>Reaction Leading to Crusader Arrogance.....</u>	<u>771</u>
<u>Crusader vs Criminal.....</u>	<u>771</u>
<u>Crusaders, Criminals, Revolution &amp; Terrorism.....</u>	<u>772</u>
<u>Crusaders, Criminals &amp; Manipulation of People.....</u>	<u>773</u>
<u>Crusaders == Criminals.....</u>	<u>774</u>

<b><u>Crusaders, Criminals &amp; Destruction of the Nation.....</u></b>	<b><u>775</u></b>
<b><u>Crusader Arrogance as Christian Activism.....</u></b>	<b><u>777</u></b>
<u>Christian Activism &amp; the Arrogance Skills.....</u>	<u>780</u>
<u>Christian Activism and Legislation.....</u>	<u>781</u>
<u>Christian Activism &amp; Legalism.....</u>	<u>781</u>
<b><u>Christian Activism &amp; Conspiracy.....</u></b>	<b><u>783</u></b>
<b><u>Christian Responsibilities vs Activism.....</u></b>	<b><u>783</u></b>
<b><u>Gate #62 – The Arrogance of Conspiracy.....</u></b>	<b><u>785</u></b>
<u>Conspiracy vs Humility.....</u>	<u>789</u>
<u>Anatomy of Conspiracy.....</u>	<u>790</u>
<u>The Conspiracy of Communism.....</u>	<u>791</u>
<u>Conspiracy &amp; Authority.....</u>	<u>793</u>
<u>Conspiracy &amp; Soul Slavery.....</u>	<u>794</u>
<u>Conspiracy &amp; Power Politics.....</u>	<u>796</u>
<u>Conspiracy Arrogance &amp; Authority Arrogance.....</u>	<u>797</u>
<u>Conspiracy Arrogance, Criminal Arrogance &amp; National Arrogance.....</u>	<u>799</u>
<b><u>Gate #63 – The Arrogance Regarding Institutions / Organizations.....</u></b>	<b><u>800</u></b>
<u>Categories in Institutional Arrogance.....</u>	<u>805</u>
<u>Institutional Arrogance &amp; the Woman.....</u>	<u>806</u>
<u>Institutional Arrogance &amp; Troublemakers.....</u>	<u>808</u>
<u>3 Parts to All Institutions.....</u>	<u>808</u>
<u>Institutional Arrogance &amp; Labor Unions.....</u>	<u>809</u>
<u>Politics &amp; Capacity for Leadership and Authority.....</u>	<u>812</u>
<u>Institutional Arrogance &amp; Leadership.....</u>	<u>812</u>
<u>Institutional Arrogance &amp; Military Leadership.....</u>	<u>820</u>
<u>Institutional Arrogance, Manliness &amp; Femininity.....</u>	<u>822</u>
<u>Leadership &amp; Morality.....</u>	<u>823</u>
<u>Institutional Arrogance &amp; The Unites States of America.....</u>	<u>823</u>
<u>Institutional Arrogance &amp; The Local Church.....</u>	<u>824</u>
<u>Institutional Arrogance &amp; Family.....</u>	<u>824</u>
<b><u>Gate #64 – The Arrogance of a Lust for Power.....</u></b>	<b><u>825</u></b>
<b><u>Gate #65 – The Arrogance of Revolution.....</u></b>	<b><u>826</u></b>
<u>The hard core revolutionist.....</u>	<u>828</u>
<b><u>Gate #66 – The Arrogance regarding Political Ideals (The Jacobin Mentality).....</u></b>	<b><u>829</u></b>
<b><u>Gate #67 – The Arrogance Regarding the National Entity (Ex 7:10-11:end).....</u></b>	<b><u>831</u></b>
<u>The Modus Operandi of a Client Nation.....</u>	<u>831</u>
<u>The United States of America &amp; Arrogance Today.....</u>	<u>833</u>
<u>Pivotism in the Client Nation:.....</u>	<u>834</u>
<u>Client Nation Arrogance vs Political Arrogance.....</u>	<u>839</u>
<u>Factors involved in National &amp; Client Nation Arrogance.....</u>	<u>842</u>
<u>FAKE News – The Lie.....</u>	<u>850</u>
<u>Universal Military Training.....</u>	<u>852</u>
<u>Disaster Survival.....</u>	<u>853</u>

<u>Arrogance &amp; Revolution vs Humility.....</u>	<u>856</u>
<u>Rejection of the Laws of Divine Establishment.....</u>	<u>857</u>
<u>Liberalism &amp; National Arrogance.....</u>	<u>859</u>
<u>Mass Arrogance.....</u>	<u>863</u>
<u>Real Degeneracy &amp; Mass Arrogance.....</u>	<u>865</u>
<u>Freedom &amp; National Arrogance.....</u>	<u>868</u>
<u>National Arrogance and Prosperity.....</u>	<u>874</u>
<u>National Arrogance and the Integrity of God.....</u>	<u>876</u>
<u>The Stages of Development of the Client Nation:.....</u>	<u>880</u>
<u>Proper Government.....</u>	<u>882</u>
<u>Government Function &amp; National Arrogance.....</u>	<u>886</u>
<u>Individual Integrity &amp; National Arrogance.....</u>	<u>894</u>
<u>National Integrity &amp; Its Leadership.....</u>	<u>896</u>
<u>5 Cycles of Divine Discipline &amp; National Arrogance.....</u>	<u>897</u>
<u>Divine Discipline for National Arrogance.....</u>	<u>897</u>
<u>Reasons for National Destruction.....</u>	<u>898</u>
<u>5 Cycles of Divine Discipline on the Client nation.....</u>	<u>905</u>
<u>1<sup>st</sup> Cycle.....</u>	<u>906</u>
<u>2<sup>nd</sup> Cycle.....</u>	<u>906</u>
<u>3<sup>rd</sup> Cycle.....</u>	<u>906</u>
<u>4<sup>th</sup> Cycle.....</u>	<u>906</u>
<u>5<sup>th</sup> Cycle.....</u>	<u>906</u>
<u>National Arrogance, Reversionism &amp; Pride.....</u>	<u>907</u>
<u>Preparation for the Crisis.....</u>	<u>909</u>
<u>Evil --&gt; Arrogance.....</u>	<u>913</u>
<u>National Arrogance &amp; Christian Values.....</u>	<u>915</u>
<u>Virtue, Honor, Integrity &amp; Client Nation Arrogance.....</u>	<u>921</u>
<u>Attitudes of People under National Arrogance.....</u>	<u>921</u>
<u>Degeneracy &amp; Divine Discipline.....</u>	<u>922</u>
<u>The LIES of Evil.....</u>	<u>924</u>
<u>Labor Union Attitudes.....</u>	<u>925</u>
<u>Slavery vs Freedom.....</u>	<u>925</u>
<u>Mental Attitude Arrogance.....</u>	<u>927</u>
<u>Impulsive Thinking &amp; Actions.....</u>	<u>927</u>
<u>Invincibility &amp; Client Nations.....</u>	<u>928</u>
<u>Liberalism &amp; Minorities.....</u>	<u>928</u>
<u>Bureaucratic Attitudes.....</u>	<u>931</u>
<u>Anti-Free Enterprise Attitudes.....</u>	<u>931</u>
<u>Tyrannical Attitudes.....</u>	<u>932</u>
<u>National Arrogance &amp; Public Demonstrations and Marches.....</u>	<u>933</u>
<u>National Arrogance and Abuse of Those Under Divine Discipline.....</u>	<u>934</u>
<u>National Arrogance and Organized Evil.....</u>	<u>935</u>
<u>Organized Systematic Evil persecutes Truth.....</u>	<u>936</u>

<u>The Power of Organized Systematic Evil is Government.....</u>	<u>937</u>
<u>National Arrogance Factors &amp; Solutions.....</u>	<u>937</u>
<u>Gate #68 – The Arrogance of Antisemitism.....</u>	<u>942</u>
<u>Antisemitism &amp; Salvation.....</u>	<u>945</u>
<u>Equation of Hope vs Antisemitism.....</u>	<u>946</u>
<u>Antisemitism &amp; Divine Discipline.....</u>	<u>947</u>
<u>Gate #69 – The Arrogance Involving Possessions.....</u>	<u>950</u>
<u>Gate #70 – Iconoclastic Arrogance.....</u>	<u>951</u>
<u>Principles involved in Iconoclastic Arrogance.....</u>	<u>954</u>
<u>Mental Attitude Sins &amp; Iconoclastic Arrogance.....</u>	<u>956</u>
<u>The Interlocking of Iconoclastic Arrogance.....</u>	<u>956</u>
<u>Self Righteous Arrogance.....</u>	<u>956</u>
<u>Authority &amp; Institutional Arrogance.....</u>	<u>956</u>
<u>Disillusion, Disenchantment &amp; Unhappiness Arrogance.....</u>	<u>957</u>
<u>Iconoclastic Arrogance &amp; Crusader Arrogance.....</u>	<u>957</u>
<u>Iconoclastic Arrogance &amp; Maladaptive Defense Mechanisms.....</u>	<u>958</u>
<u>Biography of the Aggressor.....</u>	<u>959</u>
<u>Iconoclastic Arrogance &amp; Reality.....</u>	<u>961</u>
<u>Results of Iconoclastic Arrogance.....</u>	<u>962</u>
<u>The Bad Combination.....</u>	<u>964</u>
<u>Prevention or Avoidance of Iconoclastic Arrogance.....</u>	<u>964</u>
<u>Gate #71 – The Arrogance Regarding Role Models.....</u>	<u>964</u>
<u>Gate #72 – The Arrogance Involving Christian Service.....</u>	<u>968</u>
<u>Christian Service Arrogance &amp; Cosmic Dynasphere I.....</u>	<u>969</u>
<u>Full Time Christian Service.....</u>	<u>970</u>
<u>Spiritual Gift Related.....</u>	<u>970</u>
<u>Local Church Related.....</u>	<u>971</u>
<u>Royal Priesthood Related.....</u>	<u>971</u>
<u>Royal Ambassadorship Related.....</u>	<u>971</u>
<u>Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institution Related.....</u>	<u>971</u>
<u>Succumbing to Christian Service Arrogance.....</u>	<u>973</u>
<u>Results of Christian Service Arrogance.....</u>	<u>975</u>
<u>Gate #73 – The Arrogance of Disregarding One's Limitations.....</u>	<u>976</u>
<u>Knowing Your Limitations.....</u>	<u>976</u>
<u>Illustrations of Limitation Arrogance.....</u>	<u>977</u>
<u>Gate #74 – The Arrogance of Personal Achievement.....</u>	<u>978</u>
<u>Gate #75 – The Arrogance of Pseudo Generosity.....</u>	<u>981</u>
<u>Gate #76 – The Arrogance of Martyrdom.....</u>	<u>983</u>
<u>Gate #77 – The Arrogance Regarding Personal Opinion.....</u>	<u>985</u>
<u>Personal Opinion Arrogance – Weak vs Strong.....</u>	<u>988</u>
<u>Personal Opinion Arrogance &amp; Arrogant Presumption.....</u>	<u>990</u>
<u>Gate #78 – The Arrogance Regarding Public Opinion.....</u>	<u>991</u>
<u>Gate #79 – The Arrogance of the Public LIE.....</u>	<u>992</u>

<b><u>Arrogance &amp; Living The LIE.....</u></b>	<b><u>994</u></b>
<b><u>Gate #80 – The Arrogance of Pseudo Spirituality.....</u></b>	<b><u>996</u></b>
<b><u>The Breath of the Spiritual Life.....</u></b>	<b><u>997</u></b>
<b><u>Spirituality vs Emotionalism.....</u></b>	<b><u>997</u></b>
<b><u>Distortions of Spirituality.....</u></b>	<b><u>998</u></b>
<b><u>Spirituality by Relativity.....</u></b>	<b><u>1000</u></b>
<b><u>Spirituality by Ecstatics.....</u></b>	<b><u>1000</u></b>
<b><u>Gate #81 – The Arrogance Regarding Prayer.....</u></b>	<b><u>1001</u></b>
<b><u>Malfunction of Prayer.....</u></b>	<b><u>1001</u></b>
<b><u>Gate #82 – The Arrogance of Idolatry.....</u></b>	<b><u>1002</u></b>
<b><u>Entrance into Idolatry.....</u></b>	<b><u>1003</u></b>
<b><u>Substitution &amp; Despondency in Idolatry.....</u></b>	<b><u>1010</u></b>
<b><u>Modern Idolatry.....</u></b>	<b><u>1012</u></b>
<b><u>Ritual vs Reality.....</u></b>	<b><u>1014</u></b>
<b><u>Idolatry &amp; Love.....</u></b>	<b><u>1014</u></b>
<b><u>Idolatry &amp; Emotion.....</u></b>	<b><u>1015</u></b>
<b><u>Idolatry &amp; Freedom.....</u></b>	<b><u>1016</u></b>
<b><u>Idolatry &amp; Psychosis.....</u></b>	<b><u>1018</u></b>
<b><u>Results of Idolatry.....</u></b>	<b><u>1018</u></b>
<b><u>Recovery from Idolatry.....</u></b>	<b><u>1022</u></b>
<b><u>Gate #83 – The Arrogance of Legalism.....</u></b>	<b><u>1023</u></b>
<b><u>Moral Degeneracy the Result of Legalism.....</u></b>	<b><u>1028</u></b>
<b><u>Gate #84 – The Arrogance of Religion.....</u></b>	<b><u>1030</u></b>
<b><u>Gate #85 – The Arrogance of Denominationalism.....</u></b>	<b><u>1036</u></b>
<b><u>Gate #86 – The Arrogance Involving Dormant Faculties.....</u></b>	<b><u>1039</u></b>
<b><u>Development, Effects and Dangers of Dormant Faculties.....</u></b>	<b><u>1040</u></b>
<b><u>The Grace of God vs Dormant Faculties.....</u></b>	<b><u>1045</u></b>
<b><u>Results of Dormant Faculty Development.....</u></b>	<b><u>1048</u></b>
<b><u>The Solution to Arrogance.....</u></b>	<b><u>1054</u></b>
<b><u>The Escape.....</u></b>	<b><u>1055</u></b>
<b><u>Recovery from Arrogance.....</u></b>	<b><u>1058</u></b>
<b><u>Orientation to the Christian Way of Life.....</u></b>	<b><u>1058</u></b>
<b><u>Solution to National Arrogance.....</u></b>	<b><u>1060</u></b>
<b><u>Conclusions.....</u></b>	<b><u>1063</u></b>
<b><u>The Fragmented Life.....</u></b>	<b><u>1065</u></b>
<b><u>Recovery from the fragmented life:.....</u></b>	<b><u>1066</u></b>
<b><u>Introduction to Arrogance Reference Material.....</u></b>	<b><u>1067</u></b>
<b><u>40 Divine Assets for the Spiritual Life.....</u></b>	<b><u>1067</u></b>
<b><u>39 Irrevocable Assets.....</u></b>	<b><u>1067</u></b>
<b><u>1 Revocable Asset.....</u></b>	<b><u>1070</u></b>
<b><u>The 10 Problem Solving Devices.....</u></b>	<b><u>1072</u></b>
<b><u>#1 – Rebound Procedure.....</u></b>	<b><u>1072</u></b>
<b><u>#2 – Filling of God the Holy Spirit.....</u></b>	<b><u>1072</u></b>



<b>#3 – Faith Rest Drill.....</b>	<b>1072</b>
<b>#4 – Grace Orientation.....</b>	<b>1072</b>
<b>#5 – Bible Doctrine Orientation.....</b>	<b>1072</b>
<b>#6 – Personal Sense of Destiny.....</b>	<b>1072</b>
<b>#7 – Personal Love for God.....</b>	<b>1072</b>
<b>#8 – Impersonal / Unconditional Love for Mankind.....</b>	<b>1073</b>
<b>#9 – Sharing the Happiness of God.....</b>	<b>1073</b>
<b>#10 – Occupation with the Person of The Lord Jesus, The Christ.....</b>	<b>1073</b>
<b>    Problem Solving Devices on the Forward Line of Troops.....</b>	<b>1073</b>
<b>    The Problem Solving Devices &amp; The Gratitude Gauge.....</b>	<b>1074</b>
<b>The Divine Dynasphere.....</b>	<b>1074</b>
<b>    Gate #1 – Filling of God the Holy Spirit.....</b>	<b>1074</b>
<b>    Gate #2 – Basic Christian Modus Operandi.....</b>	<b>1075</b>
<b>    Gate #3 – The Authority Envelope – Teachability.....</b>	<b>1075</b>
<b>    Gate #4 – Orientation Envelope.....</b>	<b>1075</b>
<b>    Gate #5 – Advanced Christian Modus Operandi – Basic Spiritual Momentum.....</b>	<b>1075</b>
<b>    Gate #6 – Integrity Envelope – of Virtue.....</b>	<b>1075</b>
<b>    Gate #7 – Testing Envelope.....</b>	<b>1076</b>
<b>    Gate #8 – Maturity Envelope – Execution of the Protocol Plan of God.....</b>	<b>1076</b>
<b>The Edification Complex of the Soul.....</b>	<b>1076</b>
<b>    Foundation.....</b>	<b>1077</b>
<b>    1<sup>st</sup> Floor.....</b>	<b>1077</b>
<b>    2<sup>nd</sup> Floor.....</b>	<b>1077</b>
<b>    3<sup>rd</sup> Floor.....</b>	<b>1077</b>
<b>    4<sup>th</sup> Floor.....</b>	<b>1077</b>
<b>    5<sup>th</sup> Floor.....</b>	<b>1077</b>
<b>    6<sup>th</sup> Floor.....</b>	<b>1078</b>
<b>    7<sup>th</sup> Floor.....</b>	<b>1078</b>
<b>    8<sup>th</sup> Floor.....</b>	<b>1078</b>
<b>Four Spiritual Mechanics of the Protocol Plan of God.....</b>	<b>1078</b>
<b>Grace Apparatus for Perception – Operation Z.....</b>	<b>1079</b>
<b>    4 Rs of Perception, Cognition, Incultation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine..</b>	<b>1079</b>
<b>    Malfunction of the Grace Apparatus for Perception.....</b>	<b>1080</b>
<b>    Grace Apparatus &amp; Operation Z.....</b>	<b>1081</b>
<b>Faith Rest Drill (5 stages).....</b>	<b>1081</b>
<b>    Stage #1 – Faith Perception.....</b>	<b>1081</b>
<b>    Stage #2 – Claiming Promises.....</b>	<b>1081</b>
<b>    Stage #3 – Adding Supportive Doctrinal Principles.....</b>	<b>1082</b>
<b>    Stage #4 – Forming Bible Doctrine Rationales.....</b>	<b>1082</b>
<b>    Stage #5 – Reaching Bible Doctrinal Conclusions.....</b>	<b>1082</b>
<b>Reversionism.....</b>	<b>1082</b>
<b>    Definition of Reversionism.....</b>	<b>1082</b>
<b>    Preliminary Negative Volition toward Bible Doctrine.....</b>	<b>1083</b>

<b><u>Reaction and Distraction.....</u></b>	<b><u>1083</u></b>
<b><u>Frantic Search for Happiness.....</u></b>	<b><u>1083</u></b>
<b><u>Operation Boomerang.....</u></b>	<b><u>1083</u></b>
<b><u>Emotional Revolt of the Soul.....</u></b>	<b><u>1083</u></b>
<b><u>Locked In Negative Volition.....</u></b>	<b><u>1083</u></b>
<b><u>Black Out of the Soul.....</u></b>	<b><u>1084</u></b>
<b><u>Scar Tissue of the Soul.....</u></b>	<b><u>1084</u></b>
<b><u>Reverse Process Reversionism.....</u></b>	<b><u>1084</u></b>
<b><u>The Equation of Hope.....</u></b>	<b><u>1085</u></b>
<b><u>The Equation of Despair.....</u></b>	<b><u>1086</u></b>
<b><u>10 Unique Factors of the Church Age.....</u></b>	<b><u>1087</u></b>
<b><u>National Debt.....</u></b>	<b><u>1089</u></b>
<b><u>The Cogs of Carnality.....</u></b>	<b><u>1090</u></b>
<b><u>8 Characteristics of the Plan of God.....</u></b>	<b><u>1091</u></b>
<b><u>Priorities of the Power System of God.....</u></b>	<b><u>1091</u></b>
<b><u>Mandates of the Power System of God.....</u></b>	<b><u>1092</u></b>
<b><u>Doctrinal Rationales.....</u></b>	<b><u>1093</u></b>
<b><u>Cosmic Dynasphere Comparison.....</u></b>	<b><u>1095</u></b>
<b><u>The 10 Characteristics of Spiritual Adulthood.....</u></b>	<b><u>1097</u></b>
<b><u>Human Soul Functions.....</u></b>	<b><u>1099</u></b>
<b><u>Passages Concerning Arrogance.....</u></b>	<b><u>1100</u></b>
<b><u>The Reluctant Sparrow.....</u></b>	<b><u>1181</u></b>
<b><u>Postulates of Divine Integrity.....</u></b>	<b><u>1182</u></b>
<b><u>Glossary.....</u></b>	<b><u>1186</u></b>

## Dedication

*The word of God is alive and powerful, sharper than any two-edged sword, piercing even to the dividing asunder of the soul and the spirit, and of the joints and the marrow, and is a critic of thoughts and intents of the heart. (Heb 4:12) All Scripture is God-breathed, and is profitable for doctrine, for reproof, for correction, for instruction in righteousness; that the man of God might be mature, thoroughly furnished unto all good works. (2Tim 3:16-17) Study to show thyself approved unto God, a workman that needeth not to be ashamed, rightly dividing the word of truth. (2Tim. 2:1)*

This compilation of doctrinal principles is dedicated to my pastor of some 40+ years, Col. R. B. Thieme Jr., who, in my humble opinion, is one of, if not the, foremost theologian of the 20<sup>th</sup> century and most likely many others as well. Without his consistent undaunted dogmatic teaching of Bible Doctrine this document would not have been possible and I would most likely NOT have a clue about the Christian Way of Life. In his physical presence, mental acuity, supreme dedication to the word of God and overriding dogmatic veracity in the presentation of the doctrines of the bible he has been a life changing inspiration to myself and literally hundreds of thousands of other believers throughout the world. I, and these others I am sure, look forward to the honor of standing in ranks before the Judgment Seat of Jesus Christ as representatives of the “Berachah Battalion” who have grown up in the Spiritual Life as a result of his phenomenal grace teaching.

I would like to give special thanks to Pastor Robert Lyon who has been a constant stimulus and encouragement to me, and a HUGE assistance in putting this and other materials together as a consolidation of bible doctrine to enable others to assimilate or review.

Also to my good friend Jeffrey D. Laughlin now Face to FACE with The Lord Jesus the Christ, for his support, review and proof reading of this document and constant stimulation to recall and review doctrinal principles.

Return to the [Table of Contents](#)

## Preface

Before a believer begins to study anything related to bible doctrine he must name or acknowledge his sins privately to God the Father in order to be forgiven those and all other sins, to be placed again into fellowship with God and under the teaching and guiding ministry of God the Holy Spirit. 1<sup>st</sup> John 1:9 states, “If we confess (name or cite) our (known) sins, He is faithful and justified to forgive us our (known) sins and to cleanse us from all unrighteousness (unknown sins).” This will put the believer into fellowship with God and under the Filling of God the Holy Spirit in a state of Genuine Humility and teachability and ready to learn Bible Doctrine. If you have never personally expressed faith alone in The Lord Jesus, The Christ alone the issue is NOT naming your sins. The issue is nonmeritorious faith alone in Christ alone. “He who believes in the Son has Eternal Life; But he who does not obey the command to believe in the Son shall not see life, but the wrath of God abides on him.” (John 3:36)

If we are totally objective we must admit to having delusions about some things in life at some time. For myself there is ONE thing in this life which I have no delusions about, Bible Doctrine. Were it not for the teaching ministry of Col. R. B. Thieme Jr. and his consistent clear, concise and DOGMATIC presentation of the doctrines of the bible I would know nothing of orthodox fundamental biblical doctrine and the Christian Way of Life. I have no delusion about my knowledge, calling or spiritual gift; and, recognize that I could not do what he and many other pastors have done, and continue to do, in the constant studying and teaching of doctrine to their congregations. Over the years I have learned innumerable principles from these studies by Pastor Thieme. One of the most important things I have learned has been that “One’s rate of learning MUST exceed one’s rate of FORGETTING” in order to advance in the Spiritual Life or to maintain your level of spiritual growth. This amplifies the necessity therefore of constant consistent Post Salvation Epistemological Rehabilitation through Perception, Cognition, Incultation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine and ultimately the application of it to life. It is my desire that this document be a source of consolidated doctrine to fulfill that very purpose.

This is a compilation from my notes on the principles directly derived from the lessons taught by Col. R. B. Thieme Jr., in the period from 1970 to the end of his ministry, in the studies involving the Life of David, Series #631, Psalm 37, Series #366, and the Epistles of 1<sup>st</sup>, 2<sup>nd</sup>, and 3<sup>rd</sup> John, Series #429, 431, and 433 respectively, the Book to the Ephesians and many other lessons as well. Within these lessons he delineated a system of failure which MUST, by all possible means, be avoided by the believer in his advance toward and residence in the status of Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God. This he named “The INTERLOCKING System of Arrogance”. In these studies the Colonel delineated 26 entrance points into this system of failure for the believer. In my review of many years of notes I have taken from the many lessons he had taught, I have been able to identify many more entry points into the Interlocking System of Arrogance therefore I have taken some liberty in segregating and included these in this document. Many of these lessons, having been taught many years prior to the time of my compiling this document, still, to this day, reflect a degrading condition which exists in societies in general in history and most emphatically in the society of the

United States today. All of these were taught after many years of Pastor Thieme serving in his ministry of Studying and Teaching Orthodox Fundamental Biblical Christian Doctrine according to an Isagogical, Exegetical and Categorical method. With this in mind be conscious of the fact that some of the terminology, doctrine and principles presented here will be, at best, obscure and possibly difficult for the new or infant believer. It took the Colonel many years to come to the point of being able to extract these doctrines and principles from the original languages of scripture so it should reasonably require some years of study by the believer under his type of ministry to be able to understand what is herein contained. To facilitate this understanding on the part of the reader I have linked segments of this document with others to enable the reader to review or recall concepts, principles and doctrines while reading. I have also included a Glossary of terms and sections of fundamental doctrinal principles which I believe will help in this endeavor.

As one would expect, I have entered some opinions and concepts of my own from what I have learned from my studies of Pastor Thieme's teaching of Bible Doctrine in later lessons, from later years and from life experiences and other current materials regarding ongoing historical and social trends. I have in addition not kept the numbering or organizational system of the Entrance Points of the Interlocking System of Arrogance identical to what the Colonel had listed. The effort here on my part has been to consolidate maximum principles of Arrogance in order to provide a place where believers might go to acquire or review concise but detailed concepts related to avoiding the Arrogance pitfall while living as a Christian. However, nothing contained herein is ever to be construed to have been originated by my personal abilities to extract doctrines from the scripture. Neither is this to be a substitute for consistent daily study under one's right Pastor Teacher in order to develop the momentum needed to reach and hold on to spiritual maturity, the ultimate objective of the Spiritual Life. I have taken the liberty of trying to only add pertinent examples of historical and social trends which I see occurring some time after these lessons elucidated them. If more details and reference passages are desired on the Arrogance Complex or how these principles were derived the original lessons can be ordered from [R. B. Thieme Jr. Bible Ministries](#), P.O. Box 460829, Houston Tx. 77056-8829, or by phoning 713-621-3740.

My objective in presenting this compilation of Bible Doctrine does not include nor am I concerned as to whether it is considered good or bad, liked or disliked as a message but whether God the Holy Spirit can use the doctrinal content in the life of YOU the believer reading it. I have nothing to prove to anyone in life and it is only getting the message through to the YOU, the reader, that is important to me so that there is something for God the Holy Spirit to use. I have, in fact, attempted to organize these principles into discrete segments or categories. However, the ARROGANCE COMPLEX is an INTERLOCKING SYSTEM of mental attitude indifference toward God coupled with the control of soul by the old sin nature resulting in Sin, the production of Human Good and spiritual destruction from the constant influence of EVIL (the plan and policy of Satan in ruling this world) on the soul of the believer. Please! Keep in mind that the Arrogance system of Satan is the fundamental means by which he controls the human population and rules this world and is all permeating in societies throughout the world. This manuscript as the 3<sup>rd</sup> Edition is an ongoing process of extracting



and delineating points of entry into the Interlocking System of Arrogance and their interaction with other areas of arrogance. However, these principles resist any attempt at separation into singular units being intricately interlocked into a system of rejection of God and distraction from the Christian Way of Life. What the believer studying arrogance must keep in mind is that once a person dangles his toe into the ocean of arrogance he will be instantly entangled by the tentacles of the Arrogance Monster and sucked into the system by interlocking with MANY other Arrogance areas. Also, the principles elucidated by Pastor Thieme in his studies of Arrogance were taught at varying times with different background context and they must be related to other parts of the complex with which they readily interact in order that their meaning in a particular situation is best understood and their propensity to move the believer deeper and deeper into this complex can be identified by the believer in order that he might avoid or recover from them. With this in mind understand that there will be duplication and repetition and one type of arrogance CANNOT be separated and individually studied without relating it's impact on and from, very often, several others. However, as the Colonel might have said on occasion: "REPETITION, REPETITION, REPETITION IS INVALUABLE SO GET USED TO IT AND ENJOY IT."

Dr. Frank P. Ferraro

**Additional Bible Doctrine Compilations Available:**

Spiritual Common Sense

Royal Family Honor Code

Propaganda, Brainwashing & Psychological Warfare

Flexibility & Essentials in the Christian Way of Life

To An Understanding of Grace

The Influence of Grace vs The Influence of Evil on the Soul

Counterinsurgency & War and the Christian

The Power System of God – The Divine Dynasphere

Working for God – How Good is GOOD ENOUGH!

Progression in the Spiritual Life

Other Short Compilations

## [Introduction](#)

### [Christianity & Christian Way of Life](#)

In the approach to the vast subject of Arrogance, the greatest potential failing of the Christian, there must be an approach based on understanding Creation. To subscribe to the “THEORY” of evolution is in fact IDIOTIC. Evolution basically says that given enough time, the chair you are sitting in, the table at which you eat your dinner, GIVEN ENOUGH TIME, can become YOU! The one who proposed the THEORY in fact did not subscribe to it and only published it because of peer pressure to do so. To study and comprehend the complexity of one’s environment, especially one’s own human body invariably will bring the open minded individual to the conclusion that these things could never have randomly occurred but require a higher intelligence to have brought them into being and set them all into motion. GOD!

### [The Creation and Fall of Man](#)

#### [Prehistoric Angelic Creation](#)

In the beginning without a beginning, Eternity Past, ([Gen 1:1](#)) God the Father, God the Son and God the Holy Spirit sat at the Deity Round Table and had a discussion about what they wanted to do in eternity. They decided to “CREATE”, and considering the status of this creation today we can honestly say “ONLY GOD KNOWS WHY”. Having agreed to create they divided the responsibilities for the creation among themselves. God the Father agreed to be the administrator and oversee the Plan which he devised for creation taking into consideration all events and potential events and outcomes and potential outcomes from his omniscience and presented this to God the Son and God the Holy Spirit. They unanimously agreed that it was a PERFECT plan and they decided to call it [GRACE](#). It contained all the structure, laws, policies and procedures for the creation they had decided to engage in. It was God the Father who was the “author” of the plan and God the Son agreed to be the executor of the plan and God the Holy Spirit agreed to empower and reveal the plan when needed. When the plan had been completed and agreed upon, the Creator, God the Son, (the Executor) spoke a word and Initiated Stage I of the Plan, Angelic Creation. This resulted in a myriad variety of angelic creatures instantly coming into being. ([John 8:44](#), [Job 38:4-7](#), [Ps 8:3](#)) The plan was not a random plan but contained detailed structure and organization providing varied levels of function for the angelic creatures. The pinnacle of this angelic creation was the most perfect creature in body and mind, a super genius of all genius’, Lucifer, son of the morning the bright morning star. ([Ez 28:14-17](#), [Is 14:12-14](#), [Is 45:4-7](#)) Stage 2 of the creation was to give these angelic creatures a place to live and again God the Son spoke a word and the universe was created and the angelic creatures given freedom to move about and live in it. ([Is 45:18](#), [Ez 28:12-18](#), [Rev 12:4](#)) Christians often consider the presentation of ideas like the “BIG BANG” theory of the beginning of the universe to be ANTI-Christian but in fact that is exactly how the universe was created, The Lord Jesus, The Christ, God the Son said “BE” and it was. BANG! At this time Lucifer was given the job of overseeing for God the functions of this angelic “society” and reporting to God in his throne room. Over a period of unknown duration this was the case however but as Lucifer went about his duties in angelic creation overseeing and

reporting to God he was INUNDATED with praise and adoration by other angelic creatures because of his relative perfection, intelligence, position of authority, physical beauty and ability. This attention stimulated Lucifer's PRIDE so that in Eternity Past he became involved in the first case of Arrogance and wanted to and thought he could be equal to God in doing what God did in controlling angelic creation. Lucifer began to think he could do his job without having to report to God and in fact could do the job as well as God in running angelic creation. I envision Lucifer in the throne room of God looking around to see if anyone was watching, looking at God's throne and walking around it touching it and then moving up onto the dais and imagining what it would be like to sit on that throne and control everything. Eventually his Prideful Arrogance led to Envy and the desire for that Power got the better of him and he slyly checked around again to be sure no one was watching and then slid right onto and sat on God's Throne. As he sat there and wiggled around feeling the exhilaration of being on God's throne his thoughts turned to greater and greater arrogance and forgetting his origins and place as a CREATURE he thought, I can run this creation just as good as God, "I will be like the most High God" ([Is 14:12-14](#), [Ez 28:12-18](#)) Lucifer being dissatisfied with only being the best, brightest, smartest, most powerful angel set about developing a system of to control what he wanted. This system uses ARROGANCE and now ANTAGONISTIC EMOTIONAL HATRED in 2 complex highly integrated, interacting and interlocking power systems or Dynaspheres to form his policies for controlling first Fallen Angels and now mankind.

### Satan's Strategic Offensive Action in Eternity Past

Satan's "Offensive Action" in Prehistoric Times in the Angelic Conflict ([Is 14:12-14](#)) was the result of Satan's thinking that he would dominate all creatures in existence in all of angelic creation. This occurred at the time of the beginning of his "REVOLUTION" and he was most likely also thinking he could be equal to God. He then, as a result of his solidly established arrogance and delusion, organized his plan to run the angelic creation, which is known by mankind as *Good and Evil*, in which he attempted to duplicate or counterfeit the policies and provisions of the GRACE Plan of God. Lucifer was so full of himself, so arrogant that he then went about the angelic creation for an unknown period soliciting members for his Mutual Admiration Society. He proposed to them that they function under his plan of EVIL to produce "Angelic" GOOD things in order to establish a perfect functional angelic society based on their efforts and achievements which Lucifer wanted to use to supplant the production of Divine Good of the Grace Policy under God's Plan and provisions. He did this for an unknown period until every single angelic creature created by God the Son had an opportunity to choose to follow him under his plan of Evil or stick with God under the Grace plan. Lucifer had established a headquarters for his plan of Evil in all places this very planet Earth. Basically he held parties here and never cleaned up the beer cans so it was a total mess at the point of God the Father calling together the Supreme Court of Heaven. At this point, God threw Lucifer and his organization off of the earth and packed it in ice to prevent their return there. ([Gen 1:2](#)) With God the Son and God the Holy Spirit present the Supreme Court of Heaven convened and a trial was begun indicting Lucifer and his followers because of his revolution, with ALL angelic creation in attendance observing the proceedings.

When the trial was convened, God presented the facts from his omniscience, there obviously

could be no defense possible against the omniscience of God, and then rendered the judgment of condemnation of the revolutionaries to the Lake of Fire. It was at this point in eternity past that the Lake of Fire was in fact created for Satan and his followers. In a STRIKING moment of LUCID CLARITY Lucifer realized he had made a big error and he did not have any desire to spend eternity confined to the Lake of Fire so he rendered an appeal to the Supreme Court of Heaven. In effect Lucifer impugned the perfection of the character of God by contending that in rendering the Judgment of the Lake of Fire for the rebels God had neglected to consider his LOVE attribute and only functioned in considering Lucifer's failures based on his attributes of perfect Righteousness and Justice. Lucifer was in fact saying that God could not be God if he condemned the rebels to the Lake of Fire because he had set aside his LOVE to function only within the confines of his Righteousness and Justice. Satan ignored the fact that the Love of God is the area of motivation and not the area of action of the Essence of God. He ignored the fact that the area of action of the Essence of God is based on the principle that what the Righteousness of God approves is only what the Essence of God can accept and what the Righteousness of God demands the Justice of God must execute.

In focusing on the "Love of God" Lucifer tried to ignore and confuse the issue that upon any creature violating the standards of God, his, and in fact all angelic and human contact would become, not the "Love" of God, but the other aspects of the [Integrity of God](#), (Graphic File Here) the Justice of God and the Righteousness of God. The Righteousness of God rejected the Arrogance of Satan and his indifference to God in the revolution of the Angelic Conflict therefore the Justice of God, in a JUDICIAL Decision from the Supreme Court of Heaven, immediately condemned him and all those who followed him to the Lake of Fire for all eternity. In reality, Lucifer had failed to realize or completely ignored the fact that when he entertained Arrogance and rebelled he TOOK HIMSELF OUT from under the provisions of the Love of God and PLACED HIMSELF directly under the function of the Justice of God based on the requirements or standards of the Righteousness of God. However, God in and under his established GRACE PLAN accepted the appeal of Lucifer. He did so in order to provide a clear demonstration to all creation that the Essence of God always functions together at all times and the Love of God and Justice of God and Righteousness of God all work in unison in providing for ALL of his creation. Lucifer did not understand that the Love of God was the MOTIVATION for the actions of God BUT that all actions from God had to be approved by the Righteousness of God and then could be executed by the Justice of God because these 2 areas of God's essence protect the consistency of his character. God, in granting the Angelic Conflict Appeal Trial, caused a situation which resulted in the need for witnesses to choose for the Plan of God vs the Plan of Satan in the same manner as what had occurred throughout the angelic creation. God, therefore, in agreeing to this appeal, set up a test situation with LOWER creatures for all angelic creation to observe. [This is YOU AND I in this life] ([Luke 15:7-10](#), [1Cor 4:9](#), [Eph 3:10](#), [1Pet 1:12](#), [1Tim 3:16](#), [1Tim 5:21](#)) The setting for the creation of test subjects was chosen as the former headquarters of the "Evil" party. This is the sole purpose of the creation of man and the development of Human History as the stage for producing these witnesses. ([Matt 19:4](#)) Therefore, in the Angelic Conflict Appeal Trial ALL witnesses are derived ONLY from members of the Human Race, therefore, the Angelic Conflict Appeal Trial is co-terminus with Human History. To be a proper witness and demonstrate the exact conditions of the Angelic Conflict

choices of Angelic Beings, MAN, though created lower and much less powerful than angels, has the 1 thing necessarily common between Angelic creatures and Humans that being FREE WILL, Volition.

### Restoration of the Earth & Creation of Man

Upon the acceptance of the Appeal of Lucifer in the Angelic Conflict Trail, the Trinity of God the Father, God the Son, and God the Holy Spirit moved ahead to clean up the earth and restore it from its frozen state preparing it for man. ([Gen 1:2](#), [Gen 1:3-31](#), [Job 26:13](#), [Ps 104:30](#)) God then set up a system called “TIME” as a linear progression of events and established cyclic periods on the earth and completed these preparations in 6 earth days. Then The Lord Jesus, The Christ culminated the restoration of the earth with the creation of Ish, Man and sometime later Ishah Woman (from Man) as the “helpmate” of man under a Divine Institution system called Marriage. ([Gen 1:26-27](#), [Is 43:7](#)) God stopped on the 6<sup>th</sup> day and “rested” BECAUSE HE WAS FINISHED AND THERE WAS NOTHING LEFT TO BE DONE. Therefore, Man was created originally and exists today as a test subject to demonstrate the true nature of the character of God toward his creation. Both Ish, (later called Adam) and Ishah, (later called Eve) were created directly from the hand of The Lord Jesus, The Christ as trichotomous beings with a physical Body, a non-physical Soul and a non-physical Human Spirit. Their souls gave them the ability to relate to each other and appreciate each other and their Human Spirits gave them the ability to relate to, have contact with and appreciate God. Ish and Ishah were created to demonstrate to Lucifer, the Fallen Angels AND the ALL the Elect Angels, that contention in the Appeal of Lucifer during the Angelic Conflict trial, that in condemning the fallen angels to the Lake of Fire the Righteousness of God and Justice of God did not consider the Love of God, WAS FALSE. Even today, Satan (meaning deceiver) successfully blinds mankind to the fact that mankind must adjust to God’s Righteousness and Justice not His love in order to become the BENEFICIARY of His Love. ([Is 14:13-14](#))

At the point of their creation, to resolve this Angelic Conflict, The Lord Jesus, The Christ gave to Ish and Ishah Biological Life for their physical bodies created, Soul Life to a format soul, and Spiritual or Spirit Life to their Human Spirit, resulting in what the bible calls Everlasting Life or Endless Life ([Gen 2:7](#)). The combining of Soul Life with the activated biological make up of their lifeless bodies resulted in Human Life for both. The Lord, from his LOVE, provided everything necessary for Ish and Ishah to live an UNENDING, or ENDLESS life on this earth in the Garden of Eden. This was to continue to be provided based on the requirement that they adhere to the prohibition to not engage in or partake of the Knowledge of “Good and Evil”, (the principles and production of Lucifer’s plan and policy to rule in God’s place represented by the “fruit” of the Tree of the Knowledge of Good and Evil). They were also given the Tree of Everlasting Lives whose “fruit” they could eat from in order that they would have immediate and constant APPRECIATION of what God had and continued to provide for them. They had ABSOLUTELY NO REASON to know anything about “Good and Evil” which IS the plan, policy and production of the Cosmic Dynasphere system of Satan (the **Interlocking System of Arrogance** and the **Interlocking System of Antagonistic Emotional Hatred**) to initially rule angelic creatures and, during this Angelic Conflict Appeal Trial extending the Angelic Conflict into Human History, Human Beings on earth.



Inevitably Ishah was targeted by Satan, first because she was under the authority of Ish, her husband and because she had become dissatisfied with her position and wanted to be smarter than Ish. She initially rejected the authority of Ish, then that of Bible Doctrine taught by The Lord Jesus, The Christ in the “cool evenings” in the garden and ultimately the authority of The Lord Jesus, The Christ, God himself. She therefore decided to violate the prohibition of God regarding the Tree of the Knowledge of Good and Evil having been deceived during conversations with her pet the Serpent, indwelt by Lucifer. He appealed to her developing Arrogance, by manipulating her into thinking that by doing so she would be smarter than Ish and as smart as God. She, as a result, adopted the totality of the Arrogance of the Plan of Satan. Then, when she had executed her decision to violate God’s Prohibition, Ish also rejected God’s prohibition and gave up his authority position in the Grace Plan of God, by choosing to FOLLOW Ishah instead of lead her, choosing her over the Plan of God and The Lord Jesus, The Christ in the garden. He thereby adopted her viewpoint and also accepted the Arrogance of the Plan of Satan. They both in effect had rejected EVERLASTING ENDLESS LIFE with God in the garden for something which they did not understand NOR had any need to understand. As a result their Human Spirit died and they were then isolated from God having lost their Everlasting Spirit Life. ([1Cor 15:21-22](#), [Rom 5:12](#)). Essentially they could no longer initiate any contact with God nor have any relationship with Him and the only contact God could have with them was based on judgment and condemnation from the Righteousness of God and Justice of God. However, as part of his GRACE plan, GOD under Grace provided for them and all subsequent human beings the OPPORTUNITY to regain the ability to Eternally Live with him and have a temporal and eternal relationship with him. This provision came to mankind first in the promise of a potential for Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God. Therefore, at the point of their rejection of the prohibition of God, His Justice had become the point of contact for them and all subsequent human beings as a direct result of their rejection of the Love Provisions and Grace of God in the Garden of Eden. ([Gen 3:15](#)) This is now a historical fact and includes the promise of a LIFE enabling the believer to live in ETERNITY with God, Everlasting Life.

### **Existence of man – Power Systems**

In this world man, for his continued existence, must depend on some invisible power system and Satan as the ruler of this world, being the genius of genii, has a power system for rulership of this world which is found in the Cosmic Dynaspheres originating from his own Arrogance. The principles of Evil involved in the system of the Cosmic Dynaspheres is too subtle and sophisticated, far too designing, contriving and skillfully oriented in subterfuge and scheming to be handled or overcome by believers or unbelievers minus Bible Doctrine Principles. Therefore, the believer should never divorce himself from his only source of strength in the Spiritual Life which is Metabolized Bible Doctrine accumulated by residence in the Power System of God the Divine Dynasphere and is designed to be saturating his soul. Since the functions of GRACE and EVIL are completely antithetical it is therefore obvious that Arrogance in any category automatically seeks to divorce the believer from this source of strength by distracting him from Perception, Cognition, Inculcation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine.

### Power System of Satan = Slavery of Man

If man rejects what God has provided he becomes a slave to what Satan provides, the Cosmic Dynaspheres. These power systems of Satan make the person, who is in fact a slave under them, think he is the greatest thing in the world, by trapping him within his own Arrogance, therefore, Arrogance blinds the minds of all who serve Satan. The believer must understand clearly that the greatest power in life outside of what God has provided for man is found in Arrogance, Cosmic Dynasphere I. It is a most attractive invisible power system, it is a killer, a devastating invisible power. In itself it inevitably leads to antagonism and animosity toward and complete rejection of God and the Plan of God, all while romanticizing self. This system builds up the one involved in it but when he is torn down because of his failures, he learns nothing from his own destruction but this instead intensifies the Arrogance involving self to avoid the reality of the failure.

Satan, as ruler of this world, has great power and administers his power through or by means of Cosmic Dynasphere I, the Interlocking System of Arrogance and Cosmic Dynasphere II, the Interlocking System of Antagonistic Emotional Hatred. These, along with the inevitable undesirable results of Sin and involvement in Reversionism, destroys the potential of the unbeliever and the function of the believer as a witness for the prosecution in the Angelic Conflict Appeal Trial. Satan has invented this system for administration of the world he rules and HIS absolute BEST solutions for any problems in life are always found in the Arrogance Complex. Arrogance as a complex includes the worst failures of mankind and attacks the soul directly and never is and can never be an isolated failure. The whole purpose and inevitable result of Arrogance is to divorce the individual from the reality found in Absolute Truth. This is an entire system of preoccupation with Self whereby one becomes totally subjective and then eventually antagonistic toward Bible Doctrine.

All 'EVIL' as Satan's plan and policy and all iniquity in the world is founded on Arrogance. The Plan and Policy of Satan known as EVIL, has a desired production which is Human Good but which inevitably results in SIN, violations of God's Standards and Crime as well, violations of common law based on the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions. When considering the Plan of Satan there are 2 categories of Evil:

- Motivational Evil == Motivational Arrogance + Motivational Emotional Antagonism
- Functional Evil == Functional Arrogance + Functional Emotional Antagonism

When there is persistent residence and function under the Plan of Satan, EVIL, Motivational Arrogance leads to Functional Arrogance which leads to Motivational Antagonism which leads to Functional Antagonism with the total destruction of the Spiritual Life of the believer and any potential for the Spiritual Life of the unbeliever.

### Power System of God = Freedom of Man

For a more comprehensive understanding of the Power System of God follow this link to the Divine Dynasphere the Power System of God. In order to have a basic understanding of the difference between the Power System of Satan and Power System of God consider that in the Plan of God there is only 1 power system and it is based on 2 categories of Grace which are

totally antithetical to EVIL:

- Motivational Grace == Motivational Virtue
- Functional Grace == Functional Virtue

Both of these can only be developed within the Power System of God the Divine Dynasphere.

Return to the [Table of Contents](#)

## Introduction to the Interlocking System of Arrogance

This 4<sup>th</sup> edition of the Interlocking System of Arrogance is the continuing process of elucidating principles related to Arrogance and has, so far, involved 10 plus years of attempted consolidation. This information concerning Arrogance is from the lessons taught by Pastor R. B. Thieme Jr. over the course of his ministry of some 53 years and it is an ONGOING process. It has been taken from notes I have accumulated from lessons I have studied for more than 40 years under his ministry. Still this accumulation of knowledge concerning the concepts and principles of Arrogance and the Christian Way of Life is NOT as yet complete and may never truly be completed by me. I have chosen with this 4<sup>th</sup> edition of the Interlocking System of Arrogance to divide it into 3 categorical segments in order to make clearer the relationships between the involved mechanics of entry into the Interlocking System of Arrogance. I have considered creating a 3 volume set but could not discern a way to keep the inter document hyperlinks functioning but this may still occur in the future as the volume of information concerning Arrogance continues to grow. The information contained in this volume regarding the Interlocking System of Arrogance can be studied on an individual subject basis, a categorical segment basis or read and studied in its entirety.

In consolidating this information I have been able to come to several conclusions with regard to the Arrogance Complex. These are based on the incredible number of different ways a person can become involved in Arrogance as a sin or distraction from the Christian Way of Life AND the fact that the Angelic Conflict itself started with Arrogance. Arrogance in all of its aspects is, if nothing else, SUBTLE. It is, many times, not obvious, not even to those who are saturated with it. It is not like the OVERT IMMORAL sins which scream in the face of normalcy. However, within the Interlocking System of Arrogance there is a system of Total Weakness where the individual, especially the believer, can enter and become entangled through many 'Gates' or entry processes.

In the ongoing study and consolidation of concepts of arrogance from the lessons of R. B. Thieme Jr. it is my general conclusion that there is no possible way on a day by day basis for anyone, especially the believer, to avoid contact or confrontation with or involvement in some level of Arrogance. Instead, the believer must rely on and consistently use the Rebound Procedure to avoid continuous entanglement by its destroying capabilities and to prevent it destroying his Spiritual Life, his capacities and spiritual advance. Arrogance is in fact the FOUNDATION of the entire plan and policy of Satan in ruling this world which starting in the Garden of Eden has been called "GOOD and EVIL". All human beings living in this world in all of Human History since the Graden, especially in this Church Age, are subjected to it constantly. It is imperative from the beginning that this principle is clearly understood; Arrogance is the FOUNDATION and UNDERLYING principle of the entire plan and policy of Satan to rule and control this world since the fall of Ishah (Eve) and Ish (Adam). This plan is the policies and principles of EVIL motivating the production of GOOD, Human Good.

All human beings are derived from the same lump of clay and ALL come into and go through the same system from birth to death, the Cosmic Dynaspheres of Satan. Each individual can either shape up as HONORABLE or degrade as DISHONORABLE and this depends on WHAT HE THINKS. The means of shaping the lump for both the unbeliever and the believer is the

divinely delegated system under the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions. The Honorable person uses his volition to live in the [Divine Dynasphere](#) as much as possible progressing through as many of the 8 “Gates” or levels as possible which for the believer is to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God. The process for the unbeliever involves functioning properly under the system of Authority Orientation derived from the [Laws of Divine Establishment](#) and Divine Institutions. The Dishonorable person uses his volition, his free will choices to live in the Cosmic Dynaspheres.

### **Degeneracy vs Sin**

Arrogance is Degeneracy and thus the foundation for being destroyed either by the reality of one’s circumstances or by the drive toward unreality, in which one’s circumstances are coated over with fantasizing. Arrogance is the pin which, when pulled from the grenade, blows up one’s life into a myriad of destructive fragments. Arrogance is a fragmented system of life which is inconsistent and therefore NO ONE can ever be consistent while entangled in the Interlocking System of Arrogance. Arrogance divorces the individual from the realities of life, personal, historical, and spiritual. Arrogant thinking results in irrationality to the point that locked-in involvement in Arrogance results in psychotic, neurotic, and psychopathic behavior. Arrogance very often produces inconsistencies of thinking and function which one cannot see in self. It produces wide emotional swings from involvement in Emotional Revolt of the Soul and therefore, Arrogance is totally unstable, inconsistent, and can never find reality. Arrogance by producing a false perspective of life, results in a drive toward happiness, which entangles with the Frantic Search for happiness in stage 2 of Reversionism, which is total unreality.

#### **▲ Sin**

- ▼ A volitional violation or transgression of or a falling away from the STANDARDS, CHARACTER or EXPRESSED Will of God. It is clearly described and defined in the Decalogue, the 10 commandments, as violations of Freedom and in Codex III of the Mosaic Law from the perspective of the principles of the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions. ALL sin is directed toward or against GOD alone.

#### **▲ Degeneracy**

- ▼ Taking an area of Sin or Human Good and forming it into a system for demanding rights or changes to the standards of a group or nation which to be legitimate must adhere to the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions. Therefore ALL aspects of Arrogance are Degeneracy while ALL involvement in reversionism is Apostasy and some Arrogance can be Sin, Apostasy and Degeneracy all at the same time.

### **Immoral vs Moral Degeneracy**

Immoral Degeneracy begins as a SIN but sin is not necessarily degeneracy; as an illustration, in the historical past in the United States of America, Homosexuals rarely made an issue of their SIN, it is just another sin, and in many ways it is not as bad as gossip, judging, etc., and in other ways much worse. The Degeneracy begins when Homosexuality becomes OVERT and BLATANT and organizes into a system to demand acceptance. Because this process of



organizing involves that which is sinful, this system can only be based on and functioning fully from the influence of EVIL thus it is a system of EVIL. When it becomes a political organization and demands rights from its position of SINFULNESS it creates IMMORAL DEGENERACY. Consider the last time there has been a protest march in any city where Heterosexual Adulterous Fornicators were demanding their rights! People who make an issue of their sins not only lack any kind of self esteem but their drive is to create systems of Degeneracy. There are also the prefect moral Self Righteous people who form organizations like the Moral Majority in the United States demanding their rights, albeit most often as a reaction to the overt Immoral Degeneracy. They want ALL the laws to be Christian laws and based on principles of the Christian Way of Life so that they can inevitably eradicate Immoral Degeneracy. They want abortion to be abolished and Christian prayer in the public schools and many other things which are NOT issues in the Christian Way of Life. THIS IS DEGENERACY and Christian social action through [Crusader Arrogance](#) and Christian activism is MORAL DEGENERACY. These people are basically saying, “I am right and BECAUSE I AM RIGHT, I am going to superimpose my norms and standards on the entire Human Race”. This also applies to those systems which want to impose their standards of function on others but are IMMORAL or based totally on EVIL as well like ALL Religions, Islam, Romanism, Hinduism, etc., along with political systems involving tyranny such as Socialism, Communism, tyrannical dictatorships, ETC. These concepts fail to recognize many biblical subjects or areas and are derived from involvement in the Interlocking System of Arrogance, Cosmic Dynasphere I, and not in any way from Spiritual Self Esteem, Spiritual Autonomy nor Spiritual Maturity in the Protocol Plan of God. The fact is that these individuals and their groups may be right about many things but many of these things belong ONLY to Christians and not to unbelievers. To make laws based on the principles of the Christian Way of Life makes criminals out of all unbelievers thus destroying the purpose of the existence of man to make HIS OWN DECISIONS regarding the Plan of God. To make laws based on someone’s fear or dislike of weapons makes criminals out of all people who choose to prepare themselves to defend their own persons and property. This is DEGENERACY and is based totally on the principles of EVIL. The [Dead Sea](#) is a memorial to Immoral Degeneracy while in America’s recent past Bombed Abortion Clinics are memorials to Moral Degeneracy. No one, especially Christians, have any RIGHT to destroy anyone else’s property and under the Laws of Divine Establishment and [Divine Institutions](#), PROPERTY and LIFE are sacred. Some of these morally degenerate people have distorted the principle of LIFE to mean it begins at conception and have no idea of the true nature of life and the reality of the imputation of life BY GOD at physical birth. Contradictions cannot ever exist in the Christian Way of Life and either the believer lives in the [Power System of God](#), the Divine Dynasphere and possesses Spiritual Self Esteem, Spiritual Autonomy and Spiritual Maturity or lives in the Power System of Satan, the Cosmic Dynaspheres and becomes either Morally or Immorally degenerate.

As a system of wrongdoing, involvement in the Interlocking System of Arrogance is therefore DEGENERACY. In the Immoral Degeneracy of the Interlocking System of Arrogance there is as one manifestation symptoms or syndromes of aberrant sexual activity:

- ▲ Homosexuality
- ▲ Bestiality

- ▲ Pederasty
- ▲ Incest
- ▲ Other abnormal sexual activities

These are OVERT manifestations of an individual's or nation's Immoral Degeneracy but are NOT the only considerations of Degeneracy. Degeneracy results from having the Interlocking System of Arrogance anchored in one's soul and these aberrant functions are only symptoms or manifestations of that Degeneracy. The people of Sodom and Gomorrah were declared to be DEGENERATE and their form of degeneracy was IN PART aberrant sexual practices including HOMOSEXUALITY. Therefore, Homosexuality is a symptom or syndrome of the degeneracy of the Interlocking System of Arrogance. Homosexuals today flaunt their sexual predispositions because their Arrogance brings them out into the public eye and they then demand special individual rights. The TRUE degeneracy is NOT in what they are choosing to do in their sinful sexual proclivities but in what is in their soul, the Arrogance by which they systematically DEMAND special treatment because of their sin.

The Interlocking System of Arrogance not only provides the basis for degeneracy but also a blindness of mentality so that people are generally unaware of how truly bad things are in their contemporary historical setting. One of the greatest functions resulting from degeneracy is socialism with its welfare state and as occurred in Nazi Germany, the first sign of it rising in society is the attempt at finding someone or some group to blame for all the wrongs in society. At that time in western Europe the antithesis of this socialism was the Jew. It was by this means that Hitler started his drive of antisemitism and as a result one of the most brilliant well organized nations in history was destroyed. Not, however, without first going through years of involvement in the Interlocking System of Arrogance from 1933 with the night of the long knives to 1945 when Hitler killed himself in a bunker. This demonstrates historically that no one ever survives antisemitism. Unfortunately, when the Jews went to Palestine after World War II they engaged in socialistic government because of where they had come from. The fact that Jews are in Palestine and people think this is a GREAT thing is wrong and in fact a part of EVIL as Satan tries to move them to Palestine BEFORE Christ regathers them at his 2<sup>nd</sup> advent thus bringing him victory in the Angelic Conflict Appeal Trial.

Any time the population of a nation enters into the Interlocking System of Arrogance it generally becomes vulnerable to all the entry gates so that there will be repetitive periods of national or historical disaster for them. This IS the degeneracy of the population, as a state of the soul, manifesting itself as toleration or acceptance of homosexuals, ascetics, lascivious individuals, glorification or protection of criminals, liberalism, and many other concepts, with groups or individuals totally in opposition to the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions. Therefore, once a believer becomes involved in the Interlocking System of Arrogance he begins to move down this road of degeneracy to complete degeneration. Degeneracy is NOT simply immorality but is the Mental Attitude of involvement in the Interlocking System of Arrogance. This is one of the greatest principles of explanation of what is WRONG with the Human Race and why it ultimately goes bad. From Sodom and Gomorrah to the United States of America in the 21<sup>st</sup> century, degeneracy results from function outside the Protocol Plan of God for the believer in The Lord Jesus, The Christ or in opposition to the

[Divine Institutions](#) and [Laws of Divine Establishment](#) for the both the believer and unbeliever. Therefore any entrance into the Interlocking System of Arrogance is the ignition for ALL Degeneracy. Once there is selfcenteredness and hypersensitivity about self with insensitivity about others then the degeneracy begins to show itself. This may manifest as power lust, immoral lust, monetary lust, approbation lust but whatever its manifestation, degeneracy destroys individuals and nations from within, one individual at a time. There has not ever been a nation historically which declined and was destroyed which did not first have maximum degeneracy from its involvement in the Interlocking System of Arrogance long before it was destroyed by an outside power. This is obvious when considering Rome, Assyria, Greece, and all the other nations which were once GREAT in history and then fell to nothing. All of these had the overt manifestations of Arrogance and total entanglement in the Interlocking System of Arrogance and degeneracy long before any outside nations destroyed them.

The people in the United States of America have moved, for perhaps about 100 years, deeper and deeper into the field of Degeneracy, which, again, is not simply immorality but is all aspects of involvement in the Interlocking System of Arrogance. The Interlocking System of Arrogance involves some 80 plus ways or “Gates” of entry, which will, when access is gained, interlock with any if not all of the other areas of Arrogance. One of the worst of these is considered to be [Psychopathic Arrogance](#) and this is the general Status Quo of a large number of people in the United States of America and a major contributor to American National Degeneracy. In the 1960s Jane Fonda, as a result of her catering to the communists in Vietnam, should have been shot as a traitor not made a heroine by the people of this nation. Today the toleration of youth gangs, moslems, homosexuals and mentally incompetent government officials is another blatant example of the degeneracy rampant in the United States of America. This is in part the result of the loss of the ‘voice’ and courage of the World War II generation who are almost totally gone. In World War II the United States of America had gallant people, both men and women who served and fought to ensure freedom but these are now almost completely gone along with their process of thinking and the basis for it. Therefore, the only answer to the degeneration in the United States of America is the advance and expansion of the pivot of mature believers in The Lord Jesus, The Christ to preserve this nation and bring America to the principle of success in the [Angelic Conflict](#).

### **[Power System of Satan = Slavery of Man](#)**

The power systems of Satan to control and rule this world include the Stages of [Reversionism](#) and the Cosmic Dynaspheres of which the Interlocking System of Arrogance is Cosmic Dynasphere I. Consider, What is Tyranny? A political function? Absolutely NOT! It is Arrogance and can be some sweet pleasant hard working Christian service person who is admired by many who wants only APPROBATION and POWER to CONTROL what others think, say and do and may use legalistic taboos and other Christians in order to do so.

The believer in Cosmic Dynasphere I the Interlocking System of Arrogance is NOT anti Bible Doctrine but he is making an issue only of self instead of the Absolute TRUTH of Bible Doctrine. This one involved with Arrogance is outside the Plan of God and functioning in the Plan of Satan. In Cosmic Dynasphere I the believer is neglecting and rejecting Bible Doctrine

and God while in Cosmic Dynasphere II he becomes the enemy of God being antagonistic to and overtly opposing Bible Doctrine and God. As a result of this fragmenting of his own life, the believer is ignorant of the Plan, Purpose and Will of God for his life. Therefore there are 5 areas in the life of the Christian of disastrous ignorance:

- ▲ The 40 Assets given at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God.
- ▲ The Mechanics of Execution of the Protocol Plan of God.
- ▲ The 10 unique characteristics of the Church Age.
- ▲ The 10 Problem Solving Devices.
- ▲ The entire realm of the Mystery Doctrines of the Church Age.

Any entrance into Cosmic Dynasphere I, the Interlocking System of Arrogance always is accompanied by entrance into the stages of [Reversionism](#). This is the result of some level of Negative Volition toward Bible Doctrine. The real tragedy is that God has provided so very much to protect the believer from this self fragmentation which comes from entanglement in the Interlocking System of Arrogance and results in his becoming a LOSER believer but the loser often rejects it all. The Loser is the believer who fragments his own life and NEVER does anything about it despite the availability of solutions provided by God for him. Therefore all failure in the Spiritual Life and entrance into reversionism and the Interlocking System of Arrogance is basically some level of Negative Volition toward Bible Doctrine. This results in malfunction of functioning under the [4 Spiritual Mechanics](#) and thus the development and deploying of the [10 Problem Solving Devices](#) of the Protocol Plan of God through Ignorance or neglect of Bible Doctrine. Self Fragmentation of the Spiritual Life is the ultimate failure in the Christian Way of Life and it results in IGNORANCE of the [Grace of God](#) and his provisions to enable complete execution of his Protocol Plan.

This is the result of a lack of consistent Post Salvation Epistemological Rehabilitation by Perception, Cognition, Incultation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine and its application to situations in life. However, Winner believers use the Grace provisions of God for advancement in their Spiritual Life and are motivated from right priorities to be consistent in Post Salvation Epistemological Rehabilitation and develop momentum for spiritual growth and advancement from Perception, Cognition, Incultation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine. Losers pull the pin of the Arrogance Grenade and fragment their own lives by entrance into and entanglement within the Interlocking System of Arrogance, Cosmic Dynasphere I. Their recovery from this fragmented life requires the consistent use of the [Rebound Procedure](#) as an Instant Reaction Force when they fail but because of their ignorance of Bible Doctrine they generally are NOT even aware of it's necessity. ([1John 1:9](#)) In the fragmented life the believer is easily deceived by False Doctrine and this thus becomes a life of Self Deception causing function under the 3 [Arrogance Skills](#). ([Eph 4:14](#)) The fragmented life is often characterized by:

- ▲ Sexual Arrogance – [Eph 4:19](#)
- ▲ Inordinate Anger [Eph 4:26](#)
  - ▼ Though one may become angry NEVER let sundown come when one is still angry which means NEVER let sundown come while one is in a fragmented state from anger.
- ▲ Christian Criminality [Eph 4:28](#)

This believer has a command or mandate from God to RECOVER as rapidly as possible from this fragmentation and disentangle himself from the Interlocking System of Arrogance. ([Eph 4:31](#))

The policy and plan for Satan's rulership of this world is the content of the Cosmic Dynaspheres, the DOCTRINE OF DEMONS, which are words put into sentences and paragraphs and infiltrated into the THINKING of the believer who then leaves the Power System of God, the Divine Dynasphere, and enters into the Power System of Satan, the Cosmic Dynaspheres. "Unprincipled" men are believers or unbelievers as Cosmic Dynasphere evangelists who persistently reside in the Cosmic Dynaspheres and try to DRAG the believer into that system with them. They enter into the Motivational Degeneracy of Motivational Arrogance from Mental Attitude Arrogance with its Mental Attitude Sins and function under the fragments of the Arrogance Grenade in the Functional Degeneracy of Functional Arrogance and eventually move from Arrogant indifference to Antagonistic Emotionalism in Cosmic Dynasphere II. They enter the system through some aspect of preoccupation with self and eventually, when their pet area of Arrogance is challenged, they react with ANTAGONISM to the doctrinal principles which are presented to refute their Arrogance and thus become antagonistic to Bible Doctrine and inevitably to God, His Plan, His Grace and The Lord Jesus, The Christ in Cosmic Dynasphere II. They have entered into ERROR by their entrance into the Cosmic Dynaspheres with some level of Negative Volition toward Bible Doctrine leading to the Motivational Degeneracy of Motivational Arrogance and then have moved deeply into preoccupation with self in the Functional Degeneracy of Functional Arrogance in the depths of the Arrogance complex. Inevitably persistent involvement in Functional Arrogance WILL result in becoming ANTI-Christ as a BELIEVER. Therefore, individuals involved in Communism and any level of Religion are human evangelists for the Cosmic Dynaspheres of Satan often believing that MAN Is MASS in motion without a soul or without true self determination or one who must earn his status before God. Obviously then Arrogance is deceitful, deceptive and underhanded and will trap within its interlocking system anyone who is naive or stupid enough to ignore the failings of his entrance into its functions. Arrogance was the basis for the fall of Satan and Arrogance was the basis for the Sin of Ishah (Eve) and subsequently of Ish (Adam). Therefore, Arrogance was the beginning of the downfall of the fallen angels and also of mankind in the garden. Arrogance permeates LIFE on this earth as a result of Adam relinquishing his rulership of the world to Satan in his Fall in the garden. This permeating influence occurs in more ways than are imaginable and will take the believer in The Lord Jesus, The Christ and remove him temporarily, and more often permanently, from the Plan of God for his life. In addition, Arrogance prevents the unbeliever from even understanding let alone fulfilling his purpose in this life of making a proper DECISION and entering into the Plan of God. Man has been designed by God for the purpose of demonstrating that God's Absolute Righteousness and Absolute Justice and Perfect LOVE, his perfect Holiness or Integrity, always functions in unison and cannot ever be in conflict with each other. Man is here to make a decision to Follow the Grace Plan of God or the Evil Plan of Satan, which plan is based entirely on Satan's Arrogance. The only way to become involved in the Grace Plan of God is through the expression of nonmeritorious Faith alone in the Substitutionary Spiritual Death of The Lord Jesus, The Christ alone. Arrogance prevents this in the unbeliever. The Believer is designed to receive blessing



from God but must first attain capacity for the blessings by advancing in the Spiritual Life to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God by means of consistent Perception, Cognition, Incultation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine. Arrogance distracts the believer from this purpose and function and thereby destroys his Spiritual Life.

Arrogance is not 1 sin or failure but a complex of sins and failures to which all human beings are vulnerable. It is the 1 complex of failure which covers both the Self Righteous Legalistic type and the Immoral Lascivious type as well. Therefore, Arrogance covers every aspect of failure a believer can have in his Spiritual Life. Arrogance is the underlying means by which Satan has parlayed his original sin and his rebellion of Eternity Past into a system which can trap every category of believer with NONE being excluded. Arrogance requires SELF evaluation never evaluation of others and Satan tries to exploit the failures of believers as recruitment ploys for his Plan, EVIL. Arrogance can be defined in terms of LUST or what one desires or wants in life. However, consider, what is the accumulation of material things or the approbation of people worth in the long run of life? NOTHING! The Arrogance System is said to be an interlocking system because it results in the interaction, interrelationship and interlocking of various levels or types of Arrogance resulting in the complete fragmentation of the life of the individual. Therefore, Arrogance is a group of distractions or sins INTERLOCKED into a system of Christian degeneracy. This invariably begins with Rejection of principles of bible doctrine designed by God to preserve and protect man or advance him in the Power System of God. It then moves into Mental Attitude distortions or Sins which result from the influence of the Evil of Satan's system of rulership for this world and extends then into verbal and overt sins, crime or Human Good production and other varied systems of degeneration in the Spiritual Life of the believer all related to Arrogance. It is logical that any Mental Attitude Sin is involved in Mental Attitude Arrogance and would allow the immediate entrance into the Interlocking System of Arrogance, Cosmic Dynasphere I. It is also obvious and logical that many other categories of Arrogance must begin with a change in Mental Attitude therefore the Quandary which exists of trying to categorize Arrogance as separate categories of failure in the Christian Way of Life when in ABSOLUTE FACT it is an INTERLOCKING AND INTERRELATED SYSTEM OF DEGENERACY. The Pin on the Arrogance grenade includes any and all Modus Operandi for the believer which involve total preoccupation with self with his exclusion from the Protocol Plan of God. The volition of the individual believer causing entrance into Cosmic Dynasphere I, the Interlocking System of Arrogance, results in FRAGMENTING the persons own life as a result of his CHOOSING his own FAILURES. All fragments of the Christian life result from the believer pulling the pin of his own Arrogance Grenade and are the involvement or entanglement in the Cosmic Dynaspheres and the Stages of [Reversionism](#). Entanglement in the Interlocking System of Arrogance results from such thinking as:

- ▲ Egoism
- ▲ Egotism
- ▲ SelfCenteredness
- ▲ Self Righteousness
- ▲ Self Pity
- ▲ and many more!

The believer who by engaging in Arrogant fragmentation of himself always blames someone else

even GOD for his situation. However, No One can cause the fragmentation of another believer's life only he can do it to himself! This very often results in 2 categories of Arrogant involvement which lock the believer into the Arrogance system which allow him to follow the lusts and trends of his Old Sin Nature:

- ▲ Self Righteous Arrogance leading to Religious Legalism and other Moral Degeneracy functions
- ▲ Lasciviousness Lawlessness leading to Sexual Arrogance and other Immoral Degeneracy functions

Arrogance is the ONLY System of Sin which has its own system of judgment, condemnation and misery, started by the one who enters into Arrogance. A prime example is saying or even thinking one is better or can do something better than other people, this is, in itself, punishment by inversion and he becomes his own worst enemy harboring the sins of the Interlocking System of Arrogance Complex. The believer must be able to recognize Arrogance in his life because it is the most devastating complex which is capable of totally destroying his life and he must avoid or remove himself from the complex as quickly as possible using the [Rebound Procedure](#) and consistent Perception, Cognition, Incultation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine. For the believer, blessing from God is NOT based on who or what he is or does at any time but God has to bless the believer because of His Faithfulness and not for any other reason. He does not expect the believer to be able to “live a good life” or “become respectable” or “rid himself of his obnoxious habits and gain some pride”. In Arrogance believers often think they cause themselves to make it to greatness and whatever blessing comes to them, they therefore feel they “DESERVE” and since they have become NICE people then as a NICE person, God must bless them. This is simply NOT SO and often the blessing believer's receive from God is in spite of their own Pride and Arrogance. Believer's cannot ever become perfect and sinless but God has provided, in his faithfulness, the means of instant recovery from any of one's failures ([1John 1:9](#)). However, He is also incredibly faithful in SPANKING His children when they are totally out of line. Fortunately, in the function of this aspect of his faithfulness, he never spansks to the point which the believer deserves else this would certainly result in his immediate death. He at times spansks some believers to the point of wishing they were dead but then faithfully removes the Divine Discipline so that they can start all over again under his plan.

The Interlocking System of Arrogance is the worst of all problems to catch up with the MATURE believer. This is a complex designed or modified for distortion of and distraction from the Plan and Purpose of God developed for mankind for the historical stage of the Angelic Conflict. Arrogance destroys all capacity and capabilities for life, and results in resentment of others, motivates self pity under pressure and self righteousness under prosperity, lives on flattery and causes the believer or unbeliever to only believe the LIE of the plan and policy of Satan, EVIL. There are a myriad of ways to enter into the Interlocking System of Arrogance and Arrogance involvement comes only from ignorance and often stupidity. To be wise in one's own estimation is to be Arrogant from one's own ignorance or complete stupidity. Unfortunately this is not the only source of Arrogance but one of many ways of entering into the Arrogance complex. Some people often assume that others who demonstrate great self

confidence are Arrogant, this is because these people are incredibly stupid in their self righteous judging of these others and are, in fact, the Arrogant ones. Contrary to popular opinion, the biggest snobs and most Arrogant people come from the ghettos and the scum of society, because they are ignorant and their Arrogance is therefore caused by that ignorance. Rejecting Bible Doctrine or any of the categories of Absolute Truth ultimately produces Black out of the Soul and Scar Tissue of the Soul from entrance into the stages of [Reversionism](#) and the Arrogance complex simultaneously. These people, believers and unbelievers, become simultaneously involved in the apostasy of Reversionism and the degeneracy of the Interlocking System of Arrogance. This is the underlying reason believers and unbelievers both come to believe the system of LIES found in the plan and policy of Satan. As a result of the individual's oscillation between Self Righteousness and Self Pity a strong guilt complex often develops and creates what is seen in the total Arrogance of the bleeding heart liberal. ([2Thes 2:11-12](#)) Ignorance of Bible Doctrine, or any aspect of Absolute Truth, inevitably produces Arrogance and once one enters into the Interlocking System of Arrogance the result is always degeneracy. The overriding concept in the Scripture is that the believer, as a member of the Royal Family of God, MUST, at all costs and in all situations, AVOID IGNORANCE OF BIBLE DOCTRINE because as the Thinking of God put into writing it IS the only solution to problems of life including Arrogance.

Many Christians are very Arrogant today being proud of what they have given up or of their social action solutions, good deeds, etc., demonstrating what they think is the purpose of the Christian Way of Life. If, as a believer or even as an unbeliever, one wants to give up something that is his business but Arrogance tries to superimpose the decision to give up that which one thinks may be hurting him, onto others. If one is miserable because he has given something up in life, then he wants others to be miserable and join him and therefore he tries to superimpose this attitude and decision on others. The removal of ignorance by the Perception, Cognition, Incultation & Metabolization of Bible Doctrine destroys Arrogance in the soul of the believer. This very often becomes an affront to the believer who has given up many things in life for his pseudo spiritual lifestyle and results in his rejection of Bible Doctrine out of hand. However, for the believer in [Reversionism](#) or locked into the Interlocking System of Arrogance, beginning to study doctrine is the beginning of the road to recovery. Cognizance and Conceit are mutually exclusive where Bible Doctrine is concerned. Ignorance of Bible Doctrine pertaining to Israel in the Church Age has very often caused believers to become Arrogant or 'wise' in their own estimation. This is what has occurred in the conservative moment in the United States of America, even back to the 1930s, with their involvement in [Antisemitism](#) and despite their lack of understanding anything about the Jew, they blame them for everything. ([Prov 3:7](#)).

In any aspect or area of life some people are better because of having pressures in life and some are not and the same occurs in the Spiritual Life. Those who remain and function as childish individuals LIVE a fragmented life within the Interlocking System of Arrogance. This is a tragic flaw for the individual who has ZERO knowledge or understanding of REALITY as a result of having NO interest in the Absolute Truth of Bible Doctrine. This is the believer who has been made Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God many years ago but has little if any

knowledge of the Spiritual Life and thus is childish, foolish and immature as a believer or is a spiritual moron or simply is a believer living a fragmented life in Cosmic Dynasphere I, the Interlocking System of Arrogance. Being carnal ([1Cor 3:1](#)) is something very few believers really understand. Most think of carnality as a few shocking sins like fornication, murder or theft whereas in reality involvement in the Interlocking System of Arrogance, Cosmic Dynasphere I, means that whatever the lusts or trends are in one's Old Sin Nature he will move in that direction when engaging in carnality. As a result of this there will be repercussions and results on down the line in one's life until he destroys himself as a result of using his own volition. This is the concept of what it means to be a believer "grieving God the Holy Spirit". The divine mandate to STOP grieving God the Holy Spirit means that Christians are already in Cosmic Dynasphere I, the Interlocking System of Arrogance and MUST STOP IT. This is the adult believer acting with the mentality of a child being irresponsible and disillusioned about everything. These are the believers who inevitably have moved into the stages of [Reversionism](#) and who are prime targets for 3 categories of Divine Discipline:

- ▲ Warning
- ▲ Intensive
- ▲ Dying

However, they are often KEPT alive by Logistical Grace support from God in order to provide People Testing for the advancing Believers. These believers are said to be AGITATED mentally or mentally unstable like a ship tossed here and there in a stormy sea. This mental instability results from a lack of the accumulation of Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of their Soul. They are therefore always disturbed and easily thrown into confusion by the stormy seas of the problems, difficulties, adversities, pressures, troubles, calamities, disasters, catastrophes, sorrows, and extremities of their LIFE. This results in the believer being constantly destabilized in adversities or great prosperity as a result of the lack of knowledge of the [Problem Solving Devices](#) and [Spiritual Skills](#). This believer who is living a fragmented life has failed to use the [rebound procedure](#) and thus failed in the consistent Perception, Cognition, Incultation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine and thus has failed in the essential development and deployment of the Problem Solving Devices.

Therefore, Arrogance is a corrupter of the soul as the basic Prideful sin of Satan himself and is a motivation for rejection of truth and entrance into Reversionism, therefore, it is a great distraction to the Perception, Cognition, Incultation, Metabolization and retaining of Bible Doctrine in the soul. Arrogance motivates the rejection of Absolute Truth and also distracts those who accept the Absolute Truths of Bible Doctrine thus it divorces the believer from both personal and historical reality. It destroys capacity for life, love and happiness and destroys the ability for perception by the rejection of authority including that of scripture and also the communicator of it. It results in irrationality, jealousy, pettiness, vindictiveness, implacability and motivates antithetical functions such as Self Pity under pressure and Self Righteousness under prosperity. Arrogance lives on flattery and always believes the Lie of Satan's System of EVIL. ([2Thes 2:11-12](#)) All Arrogance is related to the 'pride syndromes' of life which includes: ([Prov 11:2](#), [Prov 29:23](#))

- ▲ Legalism
- ▲ Guilt

- ▲ Cowardice
- ▲ Inadequacy
- ▲ jealousy
- ▲ Socialism
- ▲ Anti establishment functions

It is imperative that the believer in this Church Age understand clearly that the Plan of God goes on with or without him and if he fails individually, or collectively as a client nation, it does not hinder the Plan of God, but is incorporated into the plan and it simply means HE PERSONALLY LOSES BLESSING. Therefore, there is no such thing as the Plan of God depending on any single person or group ever. To choose to deviate from God's Grace plan and one's function under it is to become involved in Arrogance. God's plan depends ONLY on God and believers simply have the privilege of going along for a ride. Any believer thinking that the Plan of God depends on what he does or thinks or says is Arrogant and blasphemous and totally incompatible with the principles of [Grace](#). The Plan of God depends on God and He has simply given the believer the privilege, as members of his Royal Family, of being involved in it where his involvement means blessing for him as a believer. Failure to execute this plan does not mean failure of the Plan but, in reality, means the Plan of God will carry the believer along either for a fantastic ride in life or roll over top of him and flatten him under Divine Discipline. It is very simple to ignore or reject the principle and fact that the Plan of God, which was originated in Eternity Past by GOD, only depends on the character and Integrity of God. This plan is not only going to go right on despite what any believer does or doesn't do, but it is his total failure to not understand that nothing in the plan depends on him but that HE depends totally on it and God. Lacking this understanding will result in a great deal of Self Induced Misery and Divine Discipline as a result of his Arrogance.

Once in the Interlocking System of Arrogance no matter how one has entered, one or more of the Gates will become the story of one's life and until he breaks out he will experience a great deal of trouble and difficulty in his life. All degenerate individuals and societies live in the Interlocking System of Arrogance and are totally interlocked into that system. This is, in effect, rejection of the spiritual heritage of a society, such as has occurred in the United States of America, where the continued rejection of it develops into national destruction. It is not an exaggeration to say that almost every problem any person ever has is related to the Interlocking System of Arrogance. Vulnerability to distraction, failure, and ultimately involvement in Arrogance exists on planet earth as long as man has been and will be here and the only way to combat it is through Humility. Humility comes from the proper function of the [Rebound Procedure](#) and Perception, Cognition, Incultation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine under the Filling of God the Holy Spirit and the [Grace Apparatus for Perception](#). Humility can only be developed by consistent residence and function in God's Power System the [Divine Dynasphere](#). Arrogance is, in essence, the hydrogen bomb of the Spiritual Life. Arrogance produces what could be considered and, in fact, often is, insanity ([Rom 12:3](#)) whereas sanity is the standard of thinking from God found in Bible Doctrine. The Key to Prosperity of an individual, in a nation, family or any group is functioning under the Laws of Divine Establishment, Divine Institutions and having proper authority orientation. Arrogance is the corrupter of the soul and



the sign that the Old Sin Nature dominates the soul. As a complex of sin and failure it motivates the rejection of Bible Doctrine and is a distraction to the Spiritual Life resulting in the believer putting self above Bible Doctrine. Arrogance divorces the believer from reality both personal and historical. Arrogance + Stress in the Soul very often leads to psychological dissociation and split personality along with other mental and physical illness'. Arrogance Rejects authority and motivates emotional sins such as fear, worry, anxiety, guilt and even murder. It reproduces itself in jealousy, vindictiveness, implacability, revenge, holding a grudge, [Inordinate Competition and Ambition](#). Arrogance is parlayed into [Self Righteousness](#) and [Legalism](#) which always lifts itself above the Law. It exists in political opinions, such as trying to make a nation Christian by law. Therefore the truth of, "God makes war against the Arrogant believer but gives Grace to the humble believer".

Arrogance produces inconsistencies in the life which very often the believer cannot see in himself resulting in [Blind Arrogance](#). Wide emotional swings in [Emotional Arrogance](#) occur such as moving from Self Righteous Arrogance in prosperity to [Self Pity Arrogance](#) in Adversity. Therefore, all Arrogance is inconsistent and unstable. Arrogance is easily deceived and therefore vulnerable to flattery and being used by some to control others in [Conspiracy Arrogance](#). Arrogance is motivation for Inordinate Ambition and Competition and involvement in [Achievement Arrogance](#) and is very often plainly obvious in every organization. Arrogance is lust for ascendancy in life and this destroys the right priorities of the Protocol Plan of God and replaces them with a false [Scale of Values](#) and gives false goals to one's life with emphasis on self and people over God. Arrogance in emphasizing LUST for power results in conspiracy, [Revenge](#) and the motivation from [Bitterness](#) which all become tragic flaws which neutralize the beauty, genius, ability and potential of any individual. Arrogance results in the believer becoming involved in politics and political activism and making issues out of things like Abortion, Prayer in the Public School, etc., which are issues related to one's personal Freedom and Privacy only.

Believers in The Lord Jesus, The Christ serve God on this earth as Ambassadors for Christ. They cannot serve God and Wealth at the same time when wealth is not a result of focus on God and Spiritual Advance from Bible Doctrine. If they try to do this it results in Bible Doctrine taking a back seat priority, while wealth becomes the primary priority. Eventually this results in Bible Doctrine being forgotten with wealth being used for entertainment and fulfillment of all the Lusts of the Old Sin Nature. As a result there is a loss of perceptive reality as well as loss of the reality of the source of all blessings. Thus these believers only have remaining the reality of Reversionism and Degeneracy from the conversion of the outside pressure of prosperity into stress in the soul. This also results in the fragmentation of Self with Arrogance and Emotional Sins. As a result of the lack of the [Problem Solving Devices](#) and having ZERO Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul there is incredible Self Induced Misery. The only recourse for recovery of the believer is for him to function consistently under the [Rebound](#) procedure to break out of the Arrogance Complex.

Arrogance is therefore, one of the most binding and blinding subtle failures in life, bringing a strong man instant weakness, and taking a magnificent woman and totally destroying her

femininity. No one is destroyed by Arrogance alone, individually, because in their Arrogance they always take others with them. Arrogance is the first means by which people divorce themselves from reality. Arrogance is the manner in which people see self in an grandiose light and as they magnify themselves in their own thinking and emotion while they also tend to criticize and berate all others simultaneously. Eventually this becomes action in life and results in no capacity for life in any area. No matter how great a man is, add Arrogance to him and you have a weak male. Arrogance is destructive to the Spiritual Life with or without the development of [Scar Tissue of the Soul](#) and is the believer's worst enemy, turning his strengths to weakness. It is an insurgency system which destroys the line of communication with God and orientation to life in general. Inside the Interlocking System of Arrogance is total weakness and whether the believer has reached the stage of Spiritual Maturity as a Super – Grace recipient or is an Infant believer he is constantly vulnerable to involvement in the systems of Arrogance. General Custer died at the little bighorn because he was in a vulnerable spot, also the believer, when he enters the Interlocking System of Arrogance is in a vulnerable spot and without the effective use of the Rebound Procedure he will also be destroyed.

Along with all of this, involvement in the Interlocking System of Arrogance is also the single most destructive factor in human relationships. [James 4:6](#), [1Pet 5:5](#) are in the scripture so that believers will remember, “God makes war against the Arrogant believer but gives Grace to the humble”. Personal Love for another person, when outside of the [Integrity Envelope](#) of Virtue from [Personal Love for God](#) and [Impersonal Love for Mankind](#), combines Arrogance and Emotion to result in the irrational procedure of trying to solve a problem with another problem. As an example, when in reaction to her husband the woman, as a responder, MUST respond to someone else and in so doing she destroys herself. In this case Bible Doctrine is eliminated, her ability to respond is eliminated and Arrogance and Emotion take over and, as a result, her soul loses the capability for respect for her husband which is what her love must be based on. Therefore, a woman, as a responder, is subject to the rule which says: "When a woman is not responding she is REACTING" in one of 2 categories. Moral Reactions which result in Crusader Arrogance or Legalism, and Immoral Reactions which result in Sexual Lawlessness.

When Satan is finally bound and incarcerated for 1000 years he will finally see that with all his genius and unmitigated Arrogance he has completely and totally failed to control the world which he went through such intricate machinations to rule. Sabutai the great General of Genghis Khan gained the greatest portion of the world ever under one man in Human History but to control it required his great genius. When the Khan died and the empire was divided, within 100 years his sons and grandsons had lost most of it. To be the ruler of all and to control it all are 2 very different things. Satan demonstrates clearly that no matter how great a creature is in genius and ability when entangled in Arrogance he cannot ever control all that he rules or desires to rule.

No matter how strong a man is, he is weak when he allows any form of pride or Arrogance into his soul. In history we see that the strongest men who ever lived have become instantly weak when they allow Arrogance to take over their souls. The major problem for Satan is how

to take the strongest believer and make him weak and his solution is to work on and through any Arrogance in his soul. This was his ploy in the Garden first with Ishah and then with Ish. One means of initiating this destruction is to put pressure on the believer and allow that pressure to build into [Self Pity](#) which links or interlocks instantly with any Arrogance in the soul. All believers in this Plan of God, are all supported by [Logistical Grace](#) and as a member of the Royal Family of God the believer cannot ever get away from Logistical Grace no matter how far he may advance in the Spiritual Life or how far he may fall into failure in the Spiritual Life. Not in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God, when he is under Positive Volition to Bible Doctrine nor when there is total rejection of Bible Doctrine, not even in the warning, intensive and dying stages of divine discipline of [Reversionism](#) can the believer get out from under Logistical Grace. NO BELIEVER EVER EARNS OR DESERVES THIS Logistical Grace support and God keeps the believer here only because of HIS Integrity and to provide him opportunity to participate in his Grace Plan. The second he thinks he is left on this earth and will live to a ripe old age or that he has received some blessing because of something he has done, this is the seed of Arrogance which will totally destroy his spiritual life and any spiritual advance he may have had. Any human being who entertains any form of Arrogance is weak to the extent that the Arrogance has been permitted into his soul. The strongest believers become instantly weak because of Arrogance and the greatest of people become instant failures because of Arrogance. The believer is given ample warning from the bible regarding Arrogance so that he knows that once he entertains Arrogance he WILL become weak. Once he assumes that God has blessed him because of something he has done, this allows Arrogance to filter into the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul and it will ultimately destroy him. No believer, in fact, no human being is here because he earns or deserves anything from God. It is an awesome thing to study the failures of the GREAT believers of scripture which, in fact, are preserved as warnings to all believers in all generations. Such people as Moses, Elijah, Paul, David had all their greatest failures while they were actually in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God. This should clearly demonstrate that there are occupational hazards in being a mature believer. These scripture passages have warnings that no believer is as smart as the subtleties of Arrogance and Arrogance is the greatest weapon of Satan. When one thinks he is resisting it, it sneaks up behind him and strikes unexpectedly because Arrogance IS extremely subtle.

Any person in a state of Arrogance is easily deceived by any system of finesse. Arrogance destroys the ability to recognize the finesse of opposition and to counter it. Arrogance deprives the believer of the one system of countering a system of finesse because he fails to use the [Rebound Procedure](#). Therefore, there is no recovery of fellowship with God so necessary for this function, there is no ministry of the Holy Spirit to bring doctrine into the Human Spirit and the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul and then enable him to apply it to the situation. Arrogance is the only disease known to mankind which makes everyone sick except the one who has it. In the Interlocking System of Arrogance Mental Attitude Arrogance always overflows FROM and WITH EVIL Motivation and results in Bad Decisions, Sinful, Criminal and [Human Good](#) actions or production. Therefore, Arrogance can be a trigger mechanism allowing any developed frustration to release all the fury of the multitude of one's Mental Attitude Sins behind which is the influence of Evil and from which results the production of Sin, Crime or

Human Good efforts. This results in every facet of life becoming part of the function under and structure of Good and Evil which is Satan's policy and his plan of production for ruling this world. Human Good is always linked with and stimulates Arrogance to produce boasting, and is never acceptable to God. Boasting is, in fact, a verbal expression of a person's Arrogance. The Interlocking System of Arrogance is therefore, the total antithesis of Grace and total blindness to the Grace and Plan of God.

Arrogance also invariably destroys perceptive ability no matter how high the IQ or great the genius. Learning cannot occur without Humility therefore since Humility and Arrogance are mutually exclusive, Arrogance cannot learn because Arrogance rejects authority especially that found in scripture and Bible Doctrine. Arrogance destroys capability and resents ability in others therefore, the Interlocking System of Arrogance results in irrationality. The person who cannot stand to hear another person complimented without it bringing out his Arrogance in jealousy, bitterness, vindictiveness and implacability, is giving in to that type of sinning which will destroy himself. The person who gossips and attempts to destroy another, along with those who listen to the gossip, are all destroying themselves instead. No one can ever win in any area of life if he is a vindictive person, he will inevitably begin to criticize others and try to discredit them as a result of his Arrogance. This is true in all of the professions, in fact all areas of life. Many people live in a dream world and in some circles of society the advancing believer must be wary of compliments they direct to others or what compliments they receive from others.

It is so very important to heed the NEGATIVE commands of the New Testament Scripture Canon regarding the ministry of God the Holy Spirit. [Eph 4:30](#), "Grieve not God the Holy Spirit", since ignoring this can put the Believer into Cosmic Dynasphere I, the Arrogance Complex. [1Thes 5:19](#), "Quench Not God the Holy Spirit", since ignoring this can put the Believer into Cosmic Dynasphere II, the Antagonistic Emotional Hatred Complex. When a Believer grieves God the Holy Spirit and enters the Interlocking System of Arrogance he fights himself in Cosmic Dynasphere I. When he quenches God the Holy Spirit and enters the Interlocking System of Antagonistic Emotional Hatred, Cosmic Dynasphere II, he fights GOD and becomes the enemy of God, [James 4:4](#), [Phil 3:18](#), the enemy of the cross, [1John 2:18](#), and Anti-Christ.

Good principles have no strength if one is in Cosmic Dynasphere I, the Interlocking System of Arrogance. Nearly every sin or failing in life has an Arrogance component or connotation. It is just as easy for a mature believer to become influenced by and involved with Evil as it is for an unbeliever once they enter into this Arrogance complex. It is not surprising, therefore, that it is very easy to get into this complex but it is also easy to get out of it but difficult to remain OUT. However, once in the complex, people generally like it there and CHOOSE to stay. In this Arrogance complex the mature believer becomes susceptible to the principles in Evil he would not otherwise ever even consider. However, he will not lose any of his blessings from God even while in this system but the divine discipline he will receive is incredible, leading to the Sin Unto Death and loss of everything in his Spiritual Life if his Arrogance involvement continues and results in moving all the way through Reversionism. Once the

believer is in the Interlocking System of Arrogance his level of spiritual growth does not protect him and he is vulnerable to every type of Arrogance and failure in the Cosmic System. Exit from the Interlocking System of Arrogance is not difficult and only requires using the [Rebound Procedure](#), but because people like being in the system and because they have a tendency to exit and then fall right back into it, it is difficult to maintain one's exit from this system. Therefore, where ignorance or resistance to Bible Doctrine exists Arrogance is inevitable.

The believer can be at any level in his Spiritual Life, from [Spiritual Infancy](#) to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God, and still become involved in this system of Arrogance. The GREAT believers of the Scripture entered the Interlocking System of Arrogance via different gates of entry but once entered they became extremely vulnerable, interlocking with ALL parts of the system. When this occurs in general to a population in a nation, this is the basis of National Degeneracy and ultimately national destruction. The Interlocking System of Arrogance is often related to Sin and Reversionism but neither is required for a believer to be locked into the Interlocking System of Arrogance. Therefore, there are 3 categories of believers who fail in life:

- ▲ The Reversionist who goes through retrogressive stages to personal self destruction
- ▲ The Arrogant believer who enters into the Interlocking System of Arrogance and incredible Self Induced Misery and Divine Discipline
- ▲ The hopelessly Emotional believer who enters into the Interlocking System of Antagonistic Emotional Hatred and fights against God and all aspects of his GRACE and Plan.

At the point of David seeing and lusting for the exquisitely beautiful Bathsheba whom he observed while she was bathing (He already had 7 beautiful wives and many mistresses) he had already moved into the Interlocking System of Arrogance via [Sexual Arrogance](#). Once he was in the Interlocking System of Arrogance he became everything he should not have been AS A MATURE BELIEVER. He was a coward at this point, he committed murder, he committed rape, and the list goes on, AS AS MATURE BELIEVER. Apart from Old Sin Nature functions, in Arrogance all areas of Sin and Human Good are secondary being related to Pride and other aspects of the Motivational Arrogance of Mental Attitude Arrogance. Character Flaws are failures of character from involvement in Arrogance while Pseudo Flaws are areas where someone's personality flairs are mistaken for Arrogance. This was the case with General Douglas MacArthur and General George Patton. Hangups are parts of pride and other aspects of Arrogance being shown to the world and they hinder Perception, Cognition, Incultation & Metabolization of Bible Doctrine by rejection of the doctrine or the Pastor Teacher presenting it.

Arrogance is the thought based trigger mechanism converting some aspect of Evil into overt Sin, Crime or Human Good production. Arrogance + Frustration causes enhances the Motivational Arrogance of Mental Attitude Sins which move the believer deeper into the complex. This puts him under the strong influence of Evil so that every facet of his life, becomes Sinful, Criminal or Human Good production, as part of the structure of Evil, Satan's plan and policy to rule this world. Arrogance is never a single function and any challenge to thinking which depresses Arrogance forces it to compress in the soul and then when it is



released as a sudden expansion this explosion of the ‘Arrogance Grenade’, releases a chain reaction producing involvement in more of the categories of Arrogance, overt Sin, Crime or Human Good.

Both believer and unbeliever when in Cosmic Dynasphere I, the Interlocking System of Arrogance, think alike in compatibility with their Old Sin Nature trends and their mutual involvement in the Arrogance complex. One cannot be distinguished from the other. The Believer involved in Motivational Arrogance and Mental Attitude Arrogance cannot be distinguished from the unbeliever in the same status. This is clearly demonstrated by the situation of Lot vs the Homosexuals in Sodom. A Believer under [Crusader Arrogance](#) and using panaceas to try to solve man’s problems cannot be distinguished from an unbeliever who is also a crusader. The Believer in [Self Righteous Arrogance](#) involved with [Religion](#) cannot be distinguished from the unbeliever in this status, both having a moral facade.

### **Understanding the 2 Dynaspheres in the Power System of Satan**

Mankind as a lower creation of God has been specifically designed to resolve the Angelic Conflict Appeal Trial and therefore, to live under outside power systems and must in his life choose the Power System of God or the Power System of Satan. Under the principle that without honor, integrity and virtue no functions or achievements in any man’s lifetime can or will ever be successful or perpetuated, the Cosmic Dynaspheres still offers individuals:

Wealth without honor	Success without integrity	Sex without happiness
Approbation without achievement	Love without virtue	Promotion without ability

SEE: [Cosmic Dynaspheres Comparison](#) Graphic Chart

### **The Enemy – the Cosmic Dynaspheres**

The Enemy of the Spiritual Life of the believer, of God and of Bible Doctrine is found in the strategies of Satan to win the [Angelic Conflict](#) Appeal Trial. These strategies are executed by enticing believers and unbelievers to function under the principles and policies of the Cosmic Dynaspheres, the Power System of Satan.

### **Demon Influence**

The believer as a result of being indwelt by God the Holy Spirit cannot be indwelt by demons therefore true believers in The Lord Jesus the Christ cannot be demon possessed. However, the greatest attack on believers is “Demonization”, the transferring of the principles and policies of EVIL the Plan of Satan to rule this world by infiltration of the Doctrines of Demons into the soul of the believer. ([James 3:15-16](#)) These principles of Evil, the policies of the Plan of Satan in the Cosmic Dynaspheres as the Doctrines of Demons can be transferred to Believers in many ways. one which may be demon telepathy, but all of these require CONSENT from the believer. This Demon influence or the influence of Evil is a very GRADUAL thing for believers and never occurs suddenly. It generally begins with development of the WRONG priorities in life, losing track of the importance of Bible Doctrine as a means of spiritual growth and the perpetuation

of Divine Viewpoint on a daily basis. The believer must be reminded daily of some aspect of Divine Viewpoint to maintain stability while living in this world otherwise he will rationalize his position in life and begin to slip into Human Viewpoint. Upon moving into Human Viewpoint the believer then becomes involved in the Human Viewpoint rationales:

- ▲ Play the Game for success and promotion
- ▲ Get ahead no matter what it takes
  - ▼ This is NOT the legitimate principle of Working Hard to Get ahead which is the reality of life under the concept of Doing one's Job as UNTO THE LORD.
- ▲ Stimulation is happiness
- ▲ Sex is true Love

### Entrance into the Cosmic Dynaspheres

Initial entry into the Interlocking System of Arrogance, the Interlocking System of Antagonistic Emotional Hatred and Reversionism must be Arrogant Negative Volition, Antagonistic Negative Volition or the subtleties of simple Negative Volition toward Bible Doctrine principles in any way which solidly entangles the believer in the Power System of Satan. This is Negative Volition toward Absolute Truth, Bible Doctrine, the Gospel of The Lord Jesus the Christ, and / or the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions and results in entrance into the Motivational Arrogance of Mental Attitude Arrogance and Mental Attitude Sins. Negative Volition ultimately opens a vacuum in the soul so that ONLY the LIE from EVIL comes through and eventually saturates the structure of the soul. Hearing TRUTH, no matter how it is presented, and rejecting or being indifferent to it also results in entrance into Reversionism and progression down through the 8 stages into the realm of Black Out of the Soul and Scar Tissue of the Soul. This is where only the FALSEHOOD or LIE from Evil in the Cosmic Dynaspheres is absorbed and believed. With a total saturation of FALSE LIES from Evil there basically is then entrance into Cosmic Dynasphere II the Interlocking System of Antagonistic Emotional Hatred. When the believer consistently rejects Absolute Truth, even though he may know nothing about anything, he eventually, when challenged, becomes very combative, irritated and argumentative about the truth. This believer looks for any excuse to Argue down what he does not like and becomes obsessed with self having made self the umpire to determine Truth and fallacy in life. One cannot reject Truth without becoming involved in Mental Attitude Arrogance and Mental Attitude Sins therefore it takes Negative Volition Arrogance to become involved in Mental Attitude Arrogance or any other aspect of Arrogance. (James 3:14)

Once in the Cosmic Dynaspheres the mind of the believer is totally opened to the doctrines and principles of Evil from Satan. (Eph 4:17) Therefore, in order for the believer to enter into any level of the Cosmic Dynaspheres he has had to exercise some level of Negative Volition toward Bible Doctrine. This inevitably results in Scar Tissue of the Soul as part of reversionism opening the vacuum of the soul to suck in the LIES of the principles and policies of Evil provided by one's very own demon teacher. When the believer is under demon influence, the influence of Evil, from residing for long periods within the Cosmic Dynaspheres he becomes Double Minded and is constantly OFF BALANCE in his life. Demon Influence is Relative and there are degrees of Demon Influence which basically correspond to the level of Reversionism one is functioning in. The longer the believer stays in the Cosmic Dynaspheres without the use

of the [Rebound Procedure](#) the greater the degree of demon influence and the greater the saturation with the influence of Evil. Therefore, the MORE the believer's Priorities, Frame of Reference, and Norms and Standards will change. When demon influence and the resultant strong influence of Evil on the soul is persistent eventually every facet of the soul will be controlled and saturated with WRONG THINKING. ([1Cor 2:5](#), [Eph 4:27](#), [James 4:6-8](#))

These principles and functions, within the Cosmic Dynaspheres under the influence of Evil, are absolutely destructive and inevitably result in depression, anxiety, unhappiness, frustration, etc., all related to some level of Self Induced Misery. All this starts with THOUGHT and the great conflict in the Spiritual Life is in the area of Thinking and action only follows thinking or lack of it. Therefore, involvement in the Interlocking System of Arrogance is the basic failure for the believer. Arrogance is a system of thought which is abnormal and is in contrast to thinking as a system coming from Ego as a normal function in life. Arrogance is a basic system of failure and / or sin and can be both Motivational and Functional involvement with Evil, pushing the believer deeper into functions within the Cosmic Dynaspheres. There are 2 overall categorical systems of EVIL in the Cosmic Dynaspheres, Motivational Evil and Functional Evil. One result is [Motivational Arrogance](#) and [Functional Arrogance](#) when residing and functioning in the Interlocking System of Arrogance, Cosmic Dynasphere I. Another result is Motivational Antagonism and Functional Antagonism from residing and functioning in the Interlocking System of Antagonistic Emotional Hatred, Cosmic Dynasphere II. Motivational Arrogance as Mental Attitude Arrogance can be likened to a fragmentation grenade which when it detonates results in a myriad of destructive fragments entangling the individual in the entire system of the Interlocking System of Arrogance. Involvement in Mental Attitude Sin such as hatred is not only sin but a totally abnormal function within the Arrogance System. Here the one who says or thinks "I Hate You" is attaching to self an importance which he has no right to have. [Self Pity](#) is another such area and exemplifies the preoccupation with self which is the Modus Operandi of Cosmic Dynasphere I. Functional Arrogance results when one is involved in Arrogant production in his life which results in him generating only Sin, Crime or Human Good as a BELIEVER. All of this begins with LOSING one's priority of daily consistent Perception, Cognition, Incultation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine and each believer must evaluate himself in this area. Spiritual growth and maintaining one's status in the Spiritual Life requires daily Perception, Cognition, Incultation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine and this is not a system of [Fanaticism](#) but a systematic development of maximum [Metabolized Bible Doctrine](#) saturating the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.

Any involvement with Arrogance systems inevitably and gradually changes one's attitude toward TRUTH, Bible Doctrine. In Cosmic Dynasphere I the believer is preoccupied with self and NOT anti doctrine, not opposed to Bible Doctrine at all, even considering Bible Doctrine to be important. However, his priority of consistency in the Perception, Cognition, Incultation and Metabolization has been either changed or never existed because he is indifferent or apathetic to Bible Doctrine. This becomes the gateway to involvement in [Inordinate Competition and Ambition](#) and what we can call "playing the game" for advancement, promotion and success in life. By neglecting or rejecting the [Rebound Procedure](#), the means to exit Cosmic Dynasphere I and reenter the Divine Dynasphere, this believer will eventually and inevitably become

Antagonistic to Bible Doctrine entering Cosmic Dynasphere II. This occurs in a series of stages where he is moving from the Interlocking System of Arrogance into the Interlocking System of Antagonistic Emotional Hatred. This is what is called making bad decisions from a position of weakness and is generally unrecognized by the believer as it develops from and into a series of little problems in life which he is unable to cope with. If, or when, the believer begins to cope with these little problems using [Human Viewpoint](#) principles and not [Divine Viewpoint](#), by the time he resolves the problems he has become entrenched in Cosmic Dynasphere II. In the Interlocking System of Antagonistic Emotional Hatred he is now ANTAGONISTIC to God, Bible Doctrine and Grace. This inevitably brings on to the believer Intensive Divine Discipline for which there is nothing in the Cosmic Dynaspheres which can compensate for or cope with this level of Divine Discipline. This believer becomes very [Bitter](#) in Motivational Arrogance and invariably more antagonistic toward God. Eventually the final stage of Divine Discipline will come to him as Dying Divine Discipline in the [Sin Unto Death](#). However, this may not occur quickly because God may use this believer under the principles of Cosmic Dynasphere Evangelism to test advancing believers and bring weak believers into the Cosmic Dynasphere for this same result. This is the believer being used as the “aggressor” of the Cosmic Dynaspheres, who may be one’s FRIEND, these will try to convince other believers that consistent daily Perception, Cognition, Incultation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine is not an essential but can be relegated to a convenience.

### **Who Controls the Soul**

This is a system created by Satan himself, possessing a genius beyond human comprehension, where not a single person of this world has ever avoided being caught up in this system at some point in his life. The primary issue in the Spiritual Life of the believer in The Lord Jesus, The Christ is therefore, “Who controls the soul”? At Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God, God the Holy Spirit indwells the body of the believer to offset the genetic Old Sin Nature which is part of the cellular structure in the body thus preventing demon possession of the believer. Also, at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God, the believer is entered into the Divine Dynasphere by being given the Filling of God the Holy Spirit for controlling the soul. However, the Old Sin Nature manufactures in the genetic structure of the body lusts to stimulate an individual’s personal trends to activate his Area of Weakness or Area of Strength to produce TEMPTATIONS to produce Sin, Crime or Human Good which it throws up against the individual’s Volition. Here he must choose to or not to engage in the temptation production. When the believer accepts the temptation and engages in it to produce Sin he is then in the status quo of Carnality where his Old Sin Nature is given control of the soul. This also occurs when the Old Sin Nature produces temptation to engage in Crime, which is sin as violations of the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions. Consequently the control of the soul by the individual’s Old Sin Nature occurs because he permits it by his own volitional choices. Therefore, the believer’s decisions to sin transfers control of his Soul from God the Holy Spirit to the Old Sin Nature. When the soul is under the control of the Old Sin Nature the believer is now out of the [Power System of God](#), the Divine Dynasphere, and has moved himself into the Power System of Satan, the Cosmic Dynaspheres. The only mechanism for recovery from this status quo which has resulted from personal decisions is the personal DECISION to use the [Rebound Procedure](#) to place God the Holy Spirit back in control of the

soul.

### **Fallen Angels**

Fallen angels are under the command of Satan called the Prince of Demons, ([Matt 9:34](#), [Matt 12:24](#), [Mark 3:22](#)) and can be placed into 2 categories, those with Bodies and those which are disembodied spirits. Today in this Church Age the individual must deal ONLY with fallen angels which are disembodied spirits. Not having the indwelling of God the Holy Spirit the Unbeliever can be indwelt by these disembodied spirits IF he makes certain decisions or becomes involved in certain activities, but this requires VOLITIONAL choices on his part. These disembodied demons can also attack the soul of the unbeliever and believer alike. The attack on the soul by these disembodied demons results in the influence on or indoctrination of the soul with the principles and policies of the Plan of Satan, EVIL, in the form of the doctrines of demons. As a result the individual believer or unbeliever begins to THINK like the demons except that NO human is nearly as smart as any demon. However, in every case, ALL demon activity concerning human beings, is related to Man's Free Will, human consent. and persistent residence in the Cosmic Dynaspheres. The activities concerning human beings regarding Demons are related to involvement in 6 things:

- ▲ Idolatry: Demonism and the devil's communion table ([1Cor 10:20-21](#))
- ▲ Religion: Ecumenical Religion in the Tribulation will be the strongest example ([Rev 14](#))
- ▲ Necromancy
- ▲ Contacting the Dead
- ▲ Drug Addiction: (gr) Pharmakeia ([Gal 5:20](#))
- ▲ Human Sacrifice: Murder
- ▲ Any other form of consulting "spirits" through mediums

Therefore, the Cosmic Dynaspheres are the great destroyers in Human History and were it not for the Grace of God and truth of Bible Doctrine producing the insulation of the believer to demon influence the Human Race would already have destroyed itself LONG AGO. Fortunately, in every generation, there are some who choose for Bible Doctrine but this has been consistently DECLINING in the United States of America and today is at an ALL TIME historical low as clearly demonstrated by:

- ▲ Lack of Interest by people in Expository Bible Teaching Ministries of Pastor Teachers
- ▲ Idolatry in many forms in the United States
- ▲ Increases in Moslem populations who take over small towns and enter into Military, Law Enforcement and Politics functions
- ▲ Indian cults taking over small towns
- ▲ The influx of illegal aliens who bring their culture and religions and refuse true integration as American Citizens.

This is the undeniable result of believers being totally self absorbed and interested only in pleasure and self promotion. This will inevitably result in the LIGHT of Bible Doctrine being caused to MOVE somewhere else in the world as it has in the past moved from continent to continent. The only thing which can stop this development in the United States today is the



return to Daily consistent Perception, Cognition, Incultation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine with a daily review of Divine Viewpoint thinking processes.

### Arrogance a Primary Enemy of the Spiritual Life

Arrogance is Demon Influence, brainwashing and thought control of both believers and unbelievers. All demon influence begins with Arrogance and the believer must think a great deal of SELF, much more than normal, before Reversionistic Scar Tissue of the Soul opens the little door and allows demon influence to occur by the influx of the principles and policies of Evil. Therefore, it is clear that Demon Influence or the Influence of Evil is the transference of the principles of the policy of Satan, EVIL, as the Doctrines of Demons into the thinking of Believers. (1Tim 4:1) However, always remember that NO ONE ever comes under Demon Influence or the Influence of Evil in his soul without his personal CONSENT.

### The Consent of the Believer

The Old Sin Nature as part of the genetic structure of the human body resides in the cell structure of the body in conjunction with God the Holy Spirit who indwells the believer after his Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God. The temptations which result from activity of the Old Sin Nature always push against the individual's Volition, the guardian of his Soul. When these temptations breach the Gate of the Volition guarding the soul from personal consent they explode into the fragments of the Interlocking System of Arrogance, some 80+ Systems of Arrogance. Reality is that sooner or later the believer will use his own volition as human consent to pass one or more of these temptations into the Soul so that the Old Sin Nature then controls the soul and the believer enters into the Power System of Satan through any of the fragments of the Interlocking System of Arrogance. Therefore, the KEY to one being under Demon Influence is always Human Volitional consent.

### Manufacturing Losers

The Cosmic Dynasphere system is a factory for the manufacturing of Losers in the Human Race and a vehicle for the administration of Satan's Rulership of this world. The Cosmic Dynasphere System is a repository and classroom for incultation of Satanic Doctrine. It is a tactical trap for enslavement of the Human Race to Satan thus again a factory for the manufacturing of LOSERS. Loser Believers LIVE in the Cosmic Dynaspheres and are servants of Satan and students of Demon Doctrines, the Principles and Policies of Evil, thus enabling satanic doctrine and policy to infiltrate the Human Soul. Arrogance of life is a system of thinking and is what the LOSER carries within himself in order to produce Misery in his own life. Essentially What one thinks determines whether he is happy or not and happiness is not dependent on circumstances in one's life. By one's own thinking he carries happiness or misery with him wherever he goes.

Doctrine is, by definition, a system of teaching and demons have been tasked with teaching principles and policies of EVIL as doctrines of Demons in the classroom of the Cosmic Dynaspheres. For the individual human being, the primary way of getting into the Cosmic Dynaspheres is accepting Old Sin Nature temptation thus pulling the pin of the fragmentation grenade of the Interlocking System of Arrogance. Demon Influence, as a result of its invasion

of the Thinking of the Soul inevitably saturates the human personality with the principles of Evil for those who persist in residing in the Cosmic Dynaspheres. This will result in subtle but sometimes obvious personality changes with believers becoming depressed, developing a personality drag or lag, acting differently, and is the direct result of a breakdown of the spiritual aspect of their life. All aspects of Arrogance involve a systematic engagement in complete preoccupation with self way beyond normal self consciousness. It is a complex [Obsession](#) regarding self and is the major source of temptation and Cosmic Dynasphere Evangelism in the history of the Human Race with no group or classification of humans ever excluded from it. No HUMAN is ever excluded from this potential influence or involvement. However, the more clearly it is defined the easier it becomes to avoid involvement in it because all such involvement is VOLITIONAL.

Invariably, Demon Influence invades the believer's thinking and starts wherever or whenever he is at his best. All great attacks in life occur where one thinks, with what he thinks, and whether or not he even appears to be thinking. The existence of any attitude about anything in one's soul means HE THINKS and his thinking is based on a Frame of Reference and Norms and Standards developed in the soul, whether these are good or bad. Therefore, the Real Person is not the overt person seen by others but the real person is covered by the facade of a human body and the REAL person is, in fact, WHAT ONE THINKS. The real person is how he concentrates or fails to concentrate, his attitudes about life, self, others, God, ETC. Therefore Every person is more vulnerable, not in the physical body nor even in the Emotion of the Soul, but in the thinking processes of the soul. When a believer becomes involved in Arrogance, from any aspect of involvement in the Interlocking System of Arrogance, he must remember that HE himself is responsible for this involvement.

The Demons teach the Doctrines of Evil but they must have the believer in the classroom in order to teach him. The believer must therefore have chosen to be in the Interlocking System of Arrogance or Interlocking System of Antagonistic Emotional Hatred. No demon can teach principles of Evil to the believer residing in the [Divine Dynasphere](#). No one can ever get into the Cosmic Dynaspheres apart from his own volition becoming negative toward God or any aspect of his Grace Plan. As a result of Bible Doctrine, God, and His Grace Plan being rejected, any category or variety of Sin or Crime can be engaged in which puts the believer's soul under the control of the Old Sin Nature. Thus, Demon influence as thought invasion of the soul through the Interlocking System of Arrogance involving principles of Evil influencing the thinking, becomes Motivational or Functional Arrogance. Therefore, self destruction occurs for the individual as a result of this Arrogance in his life. The reality is that one cannot maltreat people individually or collectively and be irresponsible toward them from building up a system of Arrogance without paying for it as is clearly demonstrated in the trends of history. Therefore the truth of "Arrogance precedes Destruction and a LIFESTYLE of Arrogance comes before self destruction". ([Prov16:18](#)) All disasters in human history can be followed back to Arrogant Rulership, ([Is13:11](#)) just look at the United States of America in this 21<sup>st</sup> century and for many decades before this.

Failure in the development of Functional Virtue from Motivational Virtue in the [Divine](#)

Dynasphere results in development of Functional Evil from Motivational Evil of the Interlocking System of Arrogance and the potential of residence in the Interlocking System of Antagonistic Emotional Hatred. (Prov 29:23) If the individual cannot think in terms of TRUTH he will not be able to cope with life because Satan as ruler of this world in an ultra super genius at manufacturing the LIE. The LIE, as the principles and policy of EVIL, will get to the individual every time and become his motivator and the basis for his decisions in all aspects of his life. The resultant Bad Decisions from a position of weakness will cause a loss of control of one's life and loss of a Personal Sense of Destiny if the believer has acquired it. In addition, involvement in Arrogance divorces the individual from both the personal and historical realities of Life. This results from the fragmentation of the Arrogance grenade with the destructive impact this has on one's life. Arrogance rejects all authority both human and Divine and seeks ways to get around it and to destroy it. This same Arrogance destroys capacity for life and results in wide emotional swings with loss of capacity for living life and loss of closeness in relationships with those whom one loves. Arrogance motivates inconsistent Modus Operandi so that when under the outside pressures of adversity in life it results in involvement in Self Pity. While when under the pressures from prosperity this will result in involvement in Self Righteousness which is the basis for Fanaticism. Arrogant thinking is irrationality and this destroys all capacity for coping with adversity or prosperity in life. The real tragedy of the subtle involvement in Arrogance is that when believers attend Bible Doctrine studies they only hear what part of the Truth they want to hear in order to distort, ridicule or reject it. By this means the philosophy of Arrogance results in a false perspective in life where the Arrogant believer distorts, rejects or uses Bible Doctrine only for his own advantage or possibly only learns the vocabulary of Bible Doctrine in order to gain his own personal objectives and advancement. This believer inevitably will come under some pressure or adversity, especially some form of personal injustice and unfair treatment, so that when he depends on his emotions and these distortions his decision are always erroneous, his judgments poor, his attitudes wrong, and in effect he destroys himself.

Therefore, upon initial entry into the Interlocking System of Arrogance one is indifferent to Bible Doctrine, God and Grace. As he progresses deeper into the Interlocking System of Arrogance he sets self up as an expert on everything and especially on what the Pastor Teacher should be teaching or doing. This believer has made self into the expert and from this expertise he attacks the Pastor Teacher who has responsibility for communicating the message of Bible Doctrine and also attacks the message itself. This is without hatred or bitterness or venom which comes only with extended time residing in the Cosmic Dynaspheres and moving into Cosmic Dynasphere II. This ongoing development of an apathetic, indifferent attitude inevitably changes and lowers the priority of Bible Doctrine in his life. As the priority of Bible Doctrine is lowered he divorces self from more categories of Absolute Truth making greater distortions of it concerning:

- ▲ The Gospel of Christ – though he has already made Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God.
- ▲ The Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions – moving into becoming an inculcated liberal.
- ▲ The Total Realm of Bible Doctrine.

Once this process is begun a transition occurs from the truly spiritual Divine Viewpoint thought in the soul to the cosmic thinking of Human Viewpoint in one's life. He develops new erroneous Norms and Standards from EVIL and a whole rationale of Self Justification from involvement in the Arrogance Skills. In this situation Divine Discipline does not come quickly because the bad decisions he has made from a position of weakness bring incredible Self Induced Misery to this believer. However, once this believer gets into the pressures of Intensive Divine Discipline something occurs in his life which opens up the subconscious storage of all his flaws and failures to allow into the conscious mind to flow FEARS, ANXIETIES, TERRORS, INSOMNIA, etc. Thus begins the decline of the believer into Psychopathic Arrogance.

The Veracity of God is the attribute of God which means that GOD IS TRUTH and this is an eternal part of the divine character of God therefore God always makes WAR against that which is not true because it is absurd and this is what Arrogance truly is. When under demon influence residing in the Cosmic Dynaspheres GOD makes war against both believers and unbelievers involved in Arrogance or Antagonism. (1Pet 5:5-6) The strong delusion which comes to the individual with Scar Tissue of the Soul and Demon Influence in the Cosmic Dynaspheres is the basis for 90% of all unhappiness among believers. Under demon influence Arrogance produces IGNORANCE of TRUTH and if one has learned some truth it will be erased by persistent residence in the Cosmic Dynaspheres. Any Bible Doctrine which has been learned will be removed from the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul as the believer moves through the stages of reversionism into Black Out of the Soul and Scar Tissue of the Soul replacing Bible Doctrine with principles of EVIL. Usually, whatever Bible Doctrine is not removed will be distorted into systems of legalism, cultism and other various aspects of Evil and what is far worse today, Civil Disobedience and Christian Activism. Many Christians, under the influence of Evil, produce Sin, Crime or Human Good all which are most often ultimately destructive to society.

### A Clearer Understanding of Arrogance

(gr) KOSMOS means Organization and therefore the Cosmic Dynaspheres are Satan's Organizational system to CONTROL THE LIFE OF EVERY MEMBER OF THE HUMAN RACE ESPECIALLY THE BELIEVER. Therefore, Cosmic Dynasphere I, the Interlocking System of Arrogance is a part of Satan's policy and plan to control the Human Race by causing the individual to FOCUS totally on SELF. He uses it through the exploitation of individuals by means of their own Arrogance. Satan was the originator of Arrogance and it was his original failure and sin and the basis for his Plan of Evil to control the Angelic Creation and Rule in God's Place. It has a myriad of facets including Motivational and Functional aspects under Volitional Acceptance and involves a huge number of parts and means of entrance into the system. The emphasis overall in Arrogance is an abnormal preoccupation with self and clearly reflects Satan's philosophy and thinking in the initiation and function of the prehistoric Angelic Conflict. Therefore it is clear that the target of Cosmic Dynasphere I, the Interlocking System of Arrogance is SELF and when a believer becomes involved in it, it is SELF which he completely destroys. Therefore, Arrogance with its many manifestations brings to light the

people who often seem humble but are in fact saturated with Arrogance of one form or another.

No believer has ever been, nor ever will be, justified for being entangled in the Cosmic Dynaspheres or under persistent carnality and believers are commanded to STOP LOVING the Cosmic Dynaspheres referring to the Interlocking System of Arrogance specifically. (1John 2:15) People LOVE the Arrogance system and LOVE to distract and discredit other people in their Spiritual Life because of Jealousy as part of Mental Attitude Arrogance and HATRED which is Arrogance plus Emotion. People love to distract and discredit others because of personality conflicts which lead to vindictiveness and implacability all which are Arrogance. People think they are spiritual or holy and resent others who have a good time in life and are lighthearted and have a good sense of humor. The believer who loves being in the Cosmic Dynaspheres does not and cannot have Personal LOVE for or from God. This believer lacks Personal Love for God because he is not functioning within the Divine Dynasphere nor with the 10 Problem Solving Devices. Personal Love for God is a primary Motivational Virtue and the driving force behind the momentum of the Spiritual Life of every believer. (1John 2:13-15) The desire for stimulation, arising from the Lust patterns of the Old Sin Nature in the believer, replaces the true motivation of the Christian Way of Life of Personal Love for God with Motivational Arrogance. Therefore, the Arrogant Pattern of life can be MENTAL Arrogance, VERBAL Arrogance or OVERT Arrogance and even CRIMINAL Arrogance, ALL are systems of Arrogance in Cosmic Dynasphere I.

The concept of LIVE AND LET LIVE is a wonderful way to describe Grace Orientation in relationships with people and is the absolute antithesis of Arrogance. The believer who loves being involved in the Cosmic Dynaspheres receives ONLY the Impersonal or Unconditional Love which God has directed toward the entire Human Race. Once the believer becomes involved in Arrogance his life becomes a series of fragmented Modus Operandi. Motivational Arrogance is the primary source of the pins in the Grenade of Arrogance involving the many categories of Mental Attitude Arrogance and includes ALL Mental Attitude Sins. This is a STINKING Mental Attitude in the believer and unfortunately, about 85% of all believers, no matter how long they have been saved, fit directly into this category and have made NO Progress in the Spiritual Life. This Motivational Arrogance results in a fragmenting of the life of the believer by his becoming entangled in many if not all other aspects of Arrogance so that this fragmentation may include any of the myriad of gates of entry into the Interlocking System of Arrogance. These entry areas of Arrogance are all fragments of the Arrogance Grenade resulting from its explosion in the life of the believer who through his own volition enters into this Interlocking System of Arrogance, Cosmic Dynasphere I. The believer may or may not get hit with every fragment but will always become entangled or struck by SOME of them depending on the length of time he resides OUTSIDE of the Divine Dynasphere and within Cosmic Dynasphere I.

Arrogance is often defined in terms of LUSTS or what one wants or desires in life such as Recognition, Love, Admiration, Man or Woman, Money, Fame, Success, being well thought of, Power, etc. However, in reality of what value is the approbation of people or the accumulation of successes or material wealth in the long run in life? NONE! In whatever size



“POND”, group or organization, one finds oneself, inevitably LUST for power results. Today the “Ponds” of the Media and Political Parties use their FREEDOM to be conspiratorial in order to control this country but this also happens in many small Local Churches so that other people will think well of the conspirators. This is inevitably what happens wherever people are together and organized in some way.

It is vanity, pride, conceit as part of the Arrogance of the original sin of Satan, ([Is 14:12-14](#), [Ez 28:14-17](#)) by which every human being, having an Old Sin Nature, can have EVERYTHING possible in life, just like Satan did, and not be satisfied. The Woman in the garden was the object of Satan’s deception because she, having everything she could imagine, was dissatisfied in her Arrogance. The woman was deceived because she was not happy being SMART but wanted to be SMARTER THAN. She did not know what Good was nor what Evil was, and in fact did not need this knowledge, but she understood what “knowledge” meant and she believed the LIE of Satan when he said that she would be as smart as, in essence Equal To, God. The pin in her Arrogance Grenade was her Self Centered Jealous Arrogance just as it was in Satan and SHE PULLED THE PIN and ate from the Tree of the Knowledge of Good and Evil. She then presented the fruit to her Husband, who did not even have to walk across the street of the garden to get it. This was all part of a very complex conspiracy and it was much more destructive and degenerate for Adam to take the knowledge of Good and Evil from the hand of the woman. He looked at the first sinner now spiritually dead and he chose the woman OUT of the garden over GOD in the garden. Adam, chose the creature rather than the creator, and THIS IS WHERE Arrogance ENTERS INTO THE SOUL. Believers inevitably emphasize PEOPLE, especially SELF over GOD and this is the same tragedy as occurred for Adam in the Garden. The woman was deceived or tricked or deluded by Satan but the Man knew exactly what he was doing and made a volitional based choice for the creature and not for the creator.

In any organization, even legitimately good organizations, there can be Arrogant people who only want to get to the top and control others and be well thought of for what they do and THIS is involvement in Cosmic Dynasphere I. Living in the Cosmic Dynaspheres is “Vanity of Vanity all is Vanity says the man with the message” or “Emptiness of Emptinesses all is Emptiness says the man with the message”, Solomon the Son of David, King of Israel. The only way to avoid saturation with involvement and total entanglement in the Interlocking System of Arrogance, Cosmic Dynasphere I, is by advancing in the Spiritual Life, to Spiritual Adulthood and reaching the point of Basic Personal Love for God, [Problem Solving Device #7](#). The believer can develop some levels of Personal Love for God as he moves toward spiritual adulthood but [Advanced Personal Love for God](#), Occupation with the Person of The Lord Jesus, The Christ does not become a reality until he progresses and breaks into Spiritual Maturity.

### [The Purpose of the Interlocking System of Arrogance](#)

Part of the strategy of Satan as ruler of this world is to control believers and since most believers are not controlled by God the Holy Spirit nor Bible Doctrine it is easy for Satan, using influence from the principles of Evil found in the Cosmic Dynaspheres, to control them. This is invariably the expanded result of their own volitional entrance into the Cosmic Dynaspheres. There are a huge number of parts and means of entrance into the Interlocking System of

Arrogance and avoidance of them is what Paul was saying when he commanded that believers no longer be childish and destabilized as ships on heavy seas. In Cosmic Dynasphere I, as the believer emphasizes self in contrast to GOD, he causes this extremely complex and convoluted system of distraction to be directly aimed at himself preventing his spiritual growth and advancement. Cosmic Dynasphere II is Satan's propaganda and indoctrination system to educate and promote antagonism toward anything related to God where the emphasis is on ANTAGONISM and INTOLERANCE toward the plan, purpose and Will of God and all Christian personnel involved in its execution. This system is clearly demonstrated in the ideologies from Marxism or Communism to Religious Liberal Theology or Christian Activism with emphasis on Human Viewpoint thinking and psychological living which is directly in contrast to spiritual living and Divine Viewpoint thinking.

### **Arrogance & Power Systems**

Living in this world man must depend on some invisible power for his continued existence. There is the Power System of Satan and the Power System of God and the believer, as part of the Royal Family of God, should never divorce himself from his only source of true power in his Spiritual Life which based on Metabolized Bible Doctrine derived from consistent function under the Filling of God the Holy Spirit in the [Power System of God the Divine Dynasphere](#). It is therefore obvious that Arrogance in any category automatically seeks to divorce the believer from this source of strength by distracting him from Perception, Cognition, Inculcation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine. If man rejects what God has provided he becomes a slave to what Satan provides, the Cosmic Dynaspheres. These power systems of Satan make the person who is in fact a slave, think he is the greatest thing in the world, by trapping him within his own Arrogance, therefore, Arrogance blinds the minds of all who serve Satan. Therefore, the greatest power in life outside of what God has provided for man is Arrogance. It is a most attractive invisible power system, it is a killer, a devastating invisible power. In itself it inevitably leads to antagonism, animosity and rejection of God and the Plan of God and all while romanticizing self. This system builds up the one involved in it but when he is torn down from his failures, he learns nothing from his own destruction but instead intensifies the Arrogance of self to avoid the reality of the failure.

Satan was guilty of the Arrogance of Pride and Power Lust when he declared "I will be like the Most High God". Satan, as ruler of this world, has great power and administers his power through or by means of Cosmic Dynasphere I, the Interlocking System of Arrogance and Cosmic Dynasphere II, the Interlocking System of Antagonistic Emotional Hatred, along with the inevitable result of Reversionism which destroys the believer as a witness for the prosecution in the Angelic Conflict Appeal Trial. There is, as a momentum test for all believers, a DIRECT attack of the Cosmic Dynaspheres putting pressure on the believer moving from Spiritual Infancy toward and through Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God. The entrance gates of the Interlocking System of Arrogance are designed to interface with and disrupt responses to all the momentum tests provided by God for the accelerated advancement of the believer in the Spiritual Life. In other words the entrances into the Interlocking System of Arrogance all function to convert Old Sin Nature temptation into Evil Influence thinking which in turn is converted into Sin, Crime and / or Human Good production. These entrance gates all work

together and interlock with each other to function as major distractions from maintaining residence in the Divine Dynasphere, the Power System of God for the Christian Way of Life. The Arrogance system thus prevents successful traversing of the momentum testing designed to cause accelerated spiritual growth in the advancing believer. No matter how high one rises in the ranks of the Christian life he can always be tripped up by the Interlocking Systems of Arrogance. ([Rom 12:2-3](#), [1John 1:6](#))

Satan has invented this system for administration of the world he rules and HIS absolute BEST solutions for any problems in life are always found in the Arrogance Complex. Arrogance destroys and is totally antithetical to Virtue thus destroying both Personal and Impersonal Love in the human race. Arrogance as a complex includes the worst failures of mankind and attacks the soul directly and can never be and never is an isolated failure. Arrogance most often as a Mental Attitude Sin begins with a simple thought but by cultivating this Arrogant thinking and carrying it in the soul as a thought the individual ends up with total inability to think rationally. It is Arrogance carried in the soul, long enough and intensely enough, which results in total saturation with emotion to the point of temporarily or even permanently destroying any ability to think rationally. The whole purpose and inevitable result of Arrogance is to divorce the individual from the reality found in Absolute Truth. Satan became involved with the Arrogance of Pride and then manufactured an entire system of preoccupation with Self whereby one becomes totally subjective and then eventually antagonistic toward Bible Doctrine so that his [Self Pity](#) causes him to believe Bible Doctrine does NOT work. However, and on the contrary, the fact that a person is one who speaks his mind and is aggressive and self confident does NOT mean he is Arrogant and very often many people use self effacement as a disguise for Arrogance and neither is that Humility. Humility is one of the greatest things to be developed in the human being unless it is presented as the pseudo Humility of self effacement. This self effacement form of pseudo humility is where the person dresses sloppy and has no proper hygiene, is pitiful and is in fact totally Arrogant. Arrogance thinks in terms of superior and inferior but [Enforced and Genuine Humility](#) think in terms of respect for authority and capacity for love where TRUE LOVE thinks in terms of toleration, respect and support rather than competition. Therefore, Arrogant people think of self in terms of better than or worse than others.

### **Recognizing Entrance into the Interlocking System of Arrogance**

Believers begin to fail in the Spiritual Life from rejection of some small point or principle of Bible Doctrine not from diving into the Arrogance complex system as such. Rejection of Bible Doctrine is the quickest way to enter into the Lies of Satan's Strategies of distraction for the believer. It instantly involves the believer in the Apostasy of Reversionism and Degeneracy of the Interlocking System of Arrogance and if engaged in long and strongly enough moves him into the Antagonism of the Interlocking System of Antagonistic Emotional Hatred, Cosmic Dynasphere II. As part of Reversionism this builds [Scar Tissue of the Soul](#) and Scar Tissue of the Soul leads to destruction of the Spiritual Life. No matter how one enters the Interlocking System of Arrogance the number 1 problem is Mental Attitude Arrogance which is often simply called PRIDE. This is thinking that one is better than others because he can do somethings better than others but this thinking of being better than others in any area is simply Juvenile.

An underlying principle of life which must be considered at all times I call “Dr. Frank’s Postulate of Life” which says basically; “There is always someone better, smarter, stronger, more attractive than you are, therefore get your head out of your ass and face reality”. Once one gets into the Interlocking System of Arrogance the other areas or forms of Arrogance in the system amplify each other and draw him in progressively deeper. One may, in fact, get into the Interlocking System of Arrogance without even knowing he is in it through [Blind Arrogance](#). Once he is in he will become [Anti-Authority](#) and [Conspiratorial](#) and mumble, grumble and [Complain](#) always thinking he is better than others and wondering why people don’t understand how great he is.

### **Demon Influence & Demon Possession & Arrogance**

The unbeliever enters into the Cosmic Dynaspheres by being anti-establishment or anti-Divine Institutions and also as a result of certain categories of sin while the believer enters the Cosmic Dynaspheres also through neglect or subtle rejection of Bible Doctrine. This is the result of 1 of 2 primary mechanisms:

- **Demon Influence** – This is demon invasion of the thinking or thought patterns of the soul with the principles of EVIL.

Satan’s Attack on either the believer or unbeliever can be through demon influence only and this should clearly demonstrate the important fact that there can be no differentiation between believer and unbeliever when the believer has resided for any length of time in the Cosmic Dynaspheres. Demon influence results in the delusions of believers and pseudo theologians who think that one cannot commit certain shocking overt sins and still be a believer. This is totally false since a believer can commit any sin which is motivated through the area of weakness of his Old Sin Nature YET STILL HAVE ETERNAL SECURITY because this was irrevocably provided to him by GOD. Any consistent residence in Cosmic Dynasphere II, the Interlocking System of Antagonistic Emotional Hatred will put the unbeliever directly under demon influence. Demon Influence is extremely destructive because through it Satan can gain control of the thinking of both believer and unbeliever.

- **Demon Possession** – This is the demon invasion of the body of the unbeliever only.

This cannot occur in the believer because he is indwelt by God the Father, God the Son and God the Holy Spirit from the point of making Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God and no demon would even want to attempt take over the body of a believer with these provisions. This is also a very destructive thing for the Human Race and is one of the sources of various religions in the world and even today many of the world’s religions are still completely involved in demon possession. The FASTEST way to enter demon possession apart from the illicit use of drugs is PHALLIC IDOLATRY. This is disastrous and destructive for unbelievers involved because they can then become involved in any operation or function which SATAN wants them to be in. This is demonstrated by the functions involved in “FAITH Healing” since all Illness comes from Physiological disturbances, Mental disturbances OR Demon possession. The correction of illness resulting from Demon Possession is what occurs when the faith healer under Satan’s guidance tells the demon to leave the sick person so he can appear to have healed him.

### Fragmentation of the Spiritual Life & Arrogance

The Pin in the Arrogance grenade which will destroy the believer's Spiritual Life is every category of Arrogance in the Interlocking System of Arrogance, Cosmic Dynasphere I. However, once Motivational Arrogance begins from involvement in any aspect of Mental Attitude Arrogance all the motivation from Evil and abnormal Modus Operandi or behavior of the believer has a logical and doctrinal explanation. This Motivational Arrogance drives the Grace Policy of God away and causes the believer to become a disciple or servant of the Devil. The released fragments of this grenade shatter the believer's relationship with God and destroys his Spiritual Life. The fragments also destroy his interactions and relationships with people and they become the basis of a disorganized life in Reversionism and persistent Carnality with overwhelming entanglement in the Cosmic Dynaspheres. This believer becomes conscious of other individual's sins and failures but in Arrogance ignores or justifies, under the Arrogance Skills functions, his own sins. The primary principle is that the believer cannot be occupied with the sins and failures of other believers while ignoring his own sins and failures and at the same time execute the Protocol Plan of God. Self Righteous Arrogance prevails in this fragmented life and it results in that believer not using the Rebound Procedure. As a result his fragmentation occurs according to his Lust patterns driving his Old Sin Nature trends in the direction of the area of weakness or area so strength of his own Old Sin Nature for the production of temptation of Sin, Crime or Human Good. When the pin of one's Arrogance grenade is pulled and the grenade detonates it scatters the Arrogance complex in all directions throughout the soul of the believer. Arrogance involvement causes the believer to fail to take responsibility for his own volitional choices toward Arrogance and the resultant fragmenting of his own life making the true KEY to recovery the Rebound Procedure and VOLITIONAL choice to use it. Therefore, fragmentation caused by the detonation of one's personal Arrogance Grenade explains all the failures of the believer as a result of his involvement in all aspects of the Interlocking System of Arrogance. This inevitably results in the destruction of his Spiritual Life and many times destruction of their physical bodies as well, The fragmentation of the Arrogance grenade explains everything sinful, abnormal, hypocritical, criminal, every act of human good, all involvement in or motivation from Evil, all Moral and Immoral degeneracy in the life of the believer and is the inevitable interlocking with the Arrogance of False Perspective.

Therefore the Greatest danger to the Spiritual Life is entrance into the Interlocking System of Arrogance and the accompanying sins and failures, and into the Interlocking System of Antagonistic Emotional Hatred and the accompanying Emotional Complex Sins and resultant involvement in the Stages of Reversionism. It is ultimately the believer's failure to reside consistently in the Divine Dynasphere and failure to deploy the 10 Problem Solving Devices onto the Forward Line of Troops of the soul. SO! How does one know when he is entering into the Interlocking System of Arrogance?

- He sets aside normal things in life and focus' on self. No matter how smart a person is, he is never too smart for Arrogance and it is always smarter than he. Even a super genius like Satan falls to Arrogance. Also, dumb Arrogant person can win over a smart Arrogant person with FLATTERY. Flattery is the facade of pseudo love which inspires and motivates others through dishonesty, deceptiveness, lies and hypocrisy. The



greatness of any mature believer is his ability to think both in times of great prosperity or intense adversity. Arrogance succumbs to flattery and divorces one from reality and therefore all rational thought ceases in both prosperity and adversity for the Arrogant one. Arrogance very often originates in a person, who, as a leader in some great project, begins to gain recognition from others for doing something very well. This is the result of his lack of concentration on Bible Doctrine which results in following the path to the [Stages of Reversionism](#).

- He begins blaming others for personal failures in total Arrogance and this is clearly demonstrated by the response of Adam when under interrogation by the Lord after his fall. The principle of the reality of the fall of Adam and Ishah was the eating of the fruit of the Tree of the Knowledge of Good and Evil which resulted in the first spiritual death in man and then ultimately physical death and these were initiated and manifest through the function of Arrogance.

In short, Arrogance is the way of life when one is under the control of the Old Sin Nature. All sin, crime and human good results from the influence of Evil activating the Old Sin Nature by temptation titillating the volition of the soul of the person. The Interlocking System of Arrogance is derived from Evil and is therefore stronger than anything else in life with only 1 exception, that being Bible Doctrine. Arrogance is the biggest issue the believer will ever face and from it stems every concept in the whole realm of failure in execution of the Plan of God. In addition once a believers is involved in this Interlocking System of Arrogance both degeneracy and apostasy will stem from it as the result of Evil influence and motivation. ([Ps 25:8-9](#))

Involvement in the Interlocking System of Arrogance with a person becoming vulnerable to all the other functions of the Arrogance system is how criminals are made through Volition + Arrogance. This is demonstrated by David who as a believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God, entered into the interlocking system of Arrogance through [Sexual Arrogance](#) but once in he picked up [Criminal](#), [Conspiracy](#) and [Blind Arrogance](#) to name just a few. The only escape for the believer from this vulnerability to the Interlocking System of Arrogance is through the [Rebound Procedure](#) and then consistent focus on Perception, Cognition, Incultation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine. Once in the system, potentials for being a criminal, maniac, conspirator and everything truly involved with Evil are present and available there.

Vulnerability to failure in relationships with others is always through Arrogance. Once one accepts things in the framework of Arrogance he becomes a weak individual. It is inevitable that he will have some Arrogance hidden in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul. He can operate in the Christian Way of Life with this Arrogance because when he confesses known sins his unknown sins are also forgiven and thus the unknown or unrecognized Arrogance is also forgiven. REMEMBER, it is not removed but forgiven and he can by this function limp along in his Spiritual Life until the Arrogance comes out in the open, in which case he must be quick again to use the [Rebound Procedure](#). The believer must not allow the [Arrogance of Bitterness](#),

or other mental attitude sins which occur as a result of life in this world, to effect him but must keep his eyes on God and Bible Doctrine. The extent to which he holds mental attitude sins and Arrogance (the me, me, me syndrome) is the extent to which he cannot grow in the Spiritual Life. Courtesy is the overt demonstration of the absence of Self Centered Arrogance. Lack of courtesy, selfcenteredness, is the attitude which causes disruption and lack of order in the Local Church or any organization because the mind of the believer so involved is disordered. Any sins related to the Interlocking System of Arrogance (Arrogance sins) or the Interlocking System of Hatred (Emotional sins) will not have Divine Discipline punishment canceled. Therefore, one cannot ever get away from Arrogance if he continues to involve himself in selfcenteredness.

Paul used sarcasm and rhetorical questions to ask the believers in Corinth if they alone received Bible Doctrine. If there were no others, did they have it before anyone else or did they learn it with others at the same time. These believers were acting as if they had the right to change the doctrine they had learned and the protocol in which they were learning Bible Doctrine to whatever they decided it should be. Corinthian believers were seduced by the cultural philosophy of “eat drink and be merry for tomorrow we die”. They were being influenced to reject the doctrine of resurrection and to become reckless and promiscuous in life. Rejection of resurrection opens the door to [Self Righteous Arrogance](#) and / or Hedonistic [Pleasure Arrogance](#).

Long Life is valueless unless there is a factor of the highest quality and the quality factor depends on the values of the individual. Values developed in the Spiritual Life from [Metabolized Bible Doctrine](#) in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul result in a wonderful high quality life. Quality of Life must come from thought and for believers the thought must be from Metabolized Bible Doctrine circulating in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul. Emotion is only part of the life with regard to entertainment and in response to the thinking of the soul. What counts as one gets older and more spiritually mature is NOT how he feels each day but HOW HE THINKS EACH MINUTE. Proper questions to oneself should be:

- ▲ Do I have a maximum accumulation of Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul as the basis for my thinking?
- ▲ Do I have the [10 Problem Solving Devices](#) deployed and in use on the Forward Line of Troops of my soul?
- ▲ Do I have the Peace of God which surpasses all comprehension garrisoning my mind and thinking?
- ▲ Do I have VIRTUE and HUMILITY from consistent [Divine Dynasphere](#) Residence?

IF one's thinking is outside these guidelines then he is in the Interlocking System of Arrogance and most likely also functioning under the [Arrogance Skills](#) and totally deceiving self. If he has the spiritual lifestyle and lives in the Sophisticated Spiritual Life under the Protocol Plan of God he is never forsaken by God AND his descendants will be blessed as a result of association with the invisible hero which he is.

### [Polarized vs Self Fragmentation](#)

Polarized fragmentation is defined as the conflict between two categories of Spiritual Life failure: religious legalism vs lascivious lawless antinomianism. The Old Sin Nature is made up

of:

- ▲ Lust Patterns, desires to fulfill the needs of the body or mind
- ▲ Trends of malfunction
  - ▼ Toward Asceticism or Religious Legalism
  - ▼ Toward Lascivious Lawlessness or Antinomianism
- ▲ An Area of Strength
  - ▼ This results in TEMPTATION to produce the spiritually dead Human Good works of Christian service and Christian activism apart from GOD
- ▲ An Area of Weakness
  - ▼ This results in TEMPTATION to produce Sin as violations of the standards of God or Crime as violations of the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions set up by God

It is the Area of Weakness which results in the temptations to produce personal sin which is the source of self-fragmentation. When fragmentation is perpetuated in one's life:

- ▲ The trend toward Religious Legalism results in moral degeneracy.
- ▲ The trend toward Antinomianism results in immoral degeneracy.

The real problem for new Christians is that unless this believer learns Bible Doctrine quickly after salvation, they will slide into one of these two camps of legalism or antinomianism. Succumbing to their own Lust pattern stimulation of the Trends of their own Old Sin Nature resulting in production from the temptations of the Area of Weakness or Area of Strength, always requires the acceptance of these things by one's own volition. Upon pulling the pin of this Arrogance Grenade the Old Sin Nature, which resides in the cell structure of the body, instantly controls the soul. When a believer is under the control of the Old Sin Nature consent to temptation becomes almost automatic. This results in a constant ongoing conflict between God the Holy Spirit indwelling the believer's body and the Old Sin Nature as part of the cell structure of the body, as to who will control the soul. Volitional acceptance of any aspect of temptation results in entrance into the Interlocking System of Arrogance at some level which results in Self Fragmentation which when perpetuated results in Polarized Fragmentation.

### Self Fragmentation

This results in 2 categories of sin from his self determination:

- ▲ Sins of cognizance
  - ▼ The temptation from the Old Sin Nature are recognized as a temptation to sin, and volition decides to commit that sin.
- ▲ Sins of ignorance
  - ▼ The temptation from the Old Sin Nature is not recognized as a temptation to sin, but the believer wanted to do it and did it.

The believer is always held responsible for all of his decisions including BOTH categories of sin. Therefore, when the believer uses his own volition to commit Sin or Crime, or engage in Legalistic Human Good production, he fragments his own life. Self-fragmentation is carnality and is also living within the Cosmic Dynaspheres and entering into the Stages of Reversionism.

Self-fragmentation follows the lust patterns and the trends of the Old Sin Nature and these are solidified as the believer consistently remains out of fellowship, out from under the Filling of God the Holy Spirit and out of the Plan of God. Unchecked Religious Legalistic Fragmentation results in MORAL degeneracy while unchecked Lascivious Lawless Fragmentation results in IMMORAL degeneracy. This perpetuated Self-fragmentation results in the believer following a consistent function in the direction of the preferred trend of his Old Sin Nature and thereby Polarizing his Fragmentation.

### Polarized Fragmentation:

The two systems of Fragmentation react to each other resulting in Polarized conflict. This is illustrated by the sheltered environment of the fragmented legalist being shocked by the lascivious sins of fragmented antinomianism. In his shock, the legalist erroneously assumes that one cannot be a Christian and commit immoral sins, such as adultery, murder, drug addiction or homosexuality. Then the fragmented legalist, in his shock, proceeds to bully and tries to pull neutral believers, those who have not become polarized in their fragmentation, under his pattern of thinking and behavior. OR, the believer involved in antinomianism reacts to the self-righteousness of the religious legalist, and decides that if that is Christianity then he does not want any part of it.

### Polarized Fragmentation distorts Freedom and Authority

Morality is not a substitute for the Filling of God the Holy Spirit and residing inside the Divine Dynasphere for the believer. Freedom like Morality is not the monopoly of Christianity, but belongs to the entire human race. True morality is mandated for both believer and unbeliever alike, because true morality is the foundation for freedom, but it is NOT the foundation for the Christian way of life. The foundation for the Christian way of life is Virtue developed ONLY within the Divine Dynasphere and this is higher than morality. Believers who are involved in the Polarized Fragmentation of either pseudo Morality or Immorality always have difficulties with authority, because they have never understood what is correct and proper authority in life. The fact is that where there is freedom, there must be both authority and responsibility. Therefore, it is inevitable that those whose life is one of Polarized Fragmentation will move toward either anarchy or tyranny. In anarchy, such a believer is a law unto himself while in tyranny, he is a Religious Legalist and seeks to superimpose his false standards on believers and unbelievers and tries to coerce the government to follow his viewpoint.

Wherever there is antithetical polarization, there is always confusion, because neither represents the truth of the Grace Plan of God. In living a life of Polarized Fragmentation the concepts of legitimate freedom are distorted and abused. Temporal freedom, which is defined clearly in the

Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions, is provided for believer and unbeliever alike by God for their preservation and is observed in the LEGITIMATE governments of nations. Spiritual freedom only exists when the believer resides inside the Divine Dynasphere under the Filling of God the Holy Spirit. This is the believer's freedom to USE or NOT USE his volition under the Grace of God to execute the Purpose, Will and Plan of God his life.

### Solutions to Fragmentation

The believer can avoid coming under “The yoke of slavery” which is polarized legalism and by the development, deployment and utilization of the [10 Problem Solving Devices](#). The believer is to reside and function within the Divine Dynasphere and function as servants of God and thus avoid the polarization of the Old Sin Nature trends. ([1Pet 2:16](#)) Servants of God do not become involved under the influence of Evil in using their trend toward lascivious lawlessness and never advocate or function in civil disobedience or any violation of establishment principles.

### Illustration of Implosion, Explosion and Fragmentation

To Irritate means to incite impatience or anger, to cause to induce impatience or anger, to exasperate, to annoy to the point where self-control is lost. Irritation is therefore a good illustration of Implosion. When operating in the Protocol Plan of God, the Power System of God, the [Divine Dynasphere](#), the believer cannot be irritated by other people, only by himself. The object which causes irritation is always blamed for the irritation but actually, irritation is an emotional sin of Implosion, and one does it to self by pulling the pin of the Arrogance Grenade. In the Implosion stage of fragmentation as a result of post-salvation sinning, the believer inevitably blames his irritation on the object of his [Motivational Arrogance](#) of [Jealousy](#), [Bitterness](#), vindictiveness, implacability, anger, or Functional Arrogance of gossip, slander, maligning, or Judging. Therefore, in reality this is SELF Irritation and it inevitably combines the Implosion of Motivational Arrogance with the Explosion of Functional Arrogance resulting in total Fragmentation of one's life. When these are unchecked by use of the [Rebound Procedure](#) the believer will instantly move into the stages of [Reversionism](#) which if also unchecked results removal from this life under the [Sin Unto Death](#).

### How the Interlocking System of Arrogance Functions

Once the person enters the Interlocking System of Arrogance system it controls thoughts, decisions, motivations and actions just as it controlled Satan, who has become ruler of this world, and this explains all the distortions of life under his rulership. When one becomes bitter or reacts to life or becomes dissatisfied with life he must remember that the ruler of this world is inextricably entangled with the EVIL of his Interlocking System of Arrogance and that total Arrogance is bleeding over into one's life. Here is an example of how the Interlocking System of Arrogance works:



A person is promoted in an organization and receives a degree of authority. This authority is poorly handled by him and causes him to enter the Interlocking System of Arrogance through [Impulsive Arrogance](#). Impulsive Arrogance then interlocks with [Institutional Arrogance](#) and causes the subject to overestimate his worth in the organization. Added to this is a complex consisting of [Mental Attitude](#) Sins in Arrogance and these, as a trigger, have antithetical results when one is under pressure or in prosperity. Arrogance under pressure triggers Cowardice, Jealousy, Pettiness, Vindictiveness, Implacability and Dissatisfaction with the job or organization and ultimately with life. The promotion he received, therefore, can result in neglect or rejection of Bible Doctrine in the form of the Gospel or the [Laws of Divine Establishment](#) for the unbeliever. For the believer it can result in neglect or rejection of the whole realm of Bible Doctrine which results from interlocking with [Negative Volition Arrogance](#) which produces Black Out of the Soul and Scar Tissue of the Soul as a result of involvement in [Reversionism](#). In addition the interlocking of Impulsive and Institutional Arrogance with Mental Attitude Arrogance can result in [Conspiracy Arrogance](#) to overthrow all authority in the organization. If this conspiracy Arrogance results in using violence then [Criminal Arrogance](#) is added and if that person entertains megalomaniacal Self Centeredness then [Psychopathic Arrogance](#) is added to the list of his entangled involvements in the Interlocking System of Arrogance. In short, once a person succumbs to one form of Arrogance he is immediately under the influence of all of the Interlocking Systems of Arrogance. This is, in fact, why seemingly normal people lose all common sense, Divine Viewpoint and all rational thinking often overnight.

The Interlocking System of Arrogance invariably produces [Self Righteousness](#), [Self Pity](#), a [Guilt Complex](#), depression and the subjectivity of making an issue of self. When functioning objectively the believer can make an issue of self by the consistent use of the [Rebound Procedure](#) to recover his status in the Spiritual Life and move on. There is no objectivity in the soul of the person who has, through his own volition, succumbed to the Interlocking System of Arrogance because as a result, he becomes totally subjective. The Interlocking System of Arrogance will produce Cowardice in the soul and this will result in irrationality in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul. The Interlocking System of Arrogance causes the believer to lose touch with reality and as a result lose self control. The Interlocking System of Arrogance, Cosmic Dynasphere I and its opposition to the Rebound Procedure results from those in the Arrogance complex having no capacity for nor appreciation of the [Grace Policy of God](#) as long as they are under the influence of EVIL which is the basis for the Cosmic Dynaspheres. A Pastor Teacher may succumb to this when a people constantly tell him his messages are great and he believes it and comes to crave that [Approbation](#). This occurs if and when he forgets the ministry of God the Holy Spirit without which he could not teach anything involved with Bible Doctrine. The purpose of presenting the message of doctrine to a congregation is not whether it is good or bad, liked or disliked as a message but whether God the Holy Spirit can use the doctrinal content in the life of the believers hearing it. No Pastor Teacher nor any believer has to prove anything to anyone in life and especially not the Pastor Teacher whose job is only getting the message through to the people so that there is something for God the Holy Spirit to use and what the people think about the message is totally

inconsequential.

### **Arrogance vs Truth**

Rejection of truth in one of its 3 categories explains why a person can live in a client nation to God like the United States of America and be exposed to Absolute Truth as the Gospel of Christ, Bible Doctrine and the principles of the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions and still become a monster. This is what will always occur when there is rejection of Absolute Truth which thereby gains that person entrance into the Interlocking System of Arrogance. The Interlocking System of Arrogance creates a vacuum in the soul from this rejection of Truth as it combines with the processes of Reversionism which make the unbeliever vulnerable to Demon Possession and puts the believer directly under the influence of EVIL. To be paying for Arrogance and Reversionism by receiving Divine Discipline when one should be having a wonderful life in both prosperous times and in crises and adversity is TOTAL STUPIDITY. Too many believers walk into the Interlocking System of Arrogance unknowingly and as a result will be paying with Divine Discipline for all of their lives which totally ruins their life. The principles of Truth can bring a lifetime of great happiness but for those who take in the Truth of Bible Doctrine sporadically and have fallen into the Interlocking System of Arrogance their lives will be saturated with misery.

While the function of the Laws of Divine Establishment in the client nation to God operate as a restraint on Sin, Crime and Human Good, it is the ministry of God the Holy Spirit in restraining Sin, Reversionism and the Interlocking System of Arrogance which prevents UNRESTRAINED functions from EVIL in the world. With regard to the Interlocking System of Arrogance it becomes more and more apparent as Arrogance is analyzed and categorized, that Arrogance is the underlying BASE for all aspects of the Cosmic Dynaspheres and all functions of the Plan and Policy of Satan, EVIL. The American people have in the past and continue today to reject the ABSOLUTE TRUTH of the Laws of Divine Establishment, Divine Institutions and Bible Doctrine. Unfortunately, the ONLY SOLUTION for the problems which have resulted in this nation is acceptance of that very same Truth. At the time a person says no to Truth, the person enters into the Interlocking System of Arrogance through Negative Volition Arrogance and instantly interlocks with one of the many entry gates so that his Arrogance is rapidly intensified. Between the rejection of truth and the development and expansion of Arrogance people destroy themselves. Therefore, rejection of truth places the person into Reversionism which is apostasy and enters him into functions under the Interlocking System of Arrogance which is degeneracy. Wherever there is a client nation the people can destroy themselves and their nation simply by rejection of the 3 categories of Absolute Truth and these may be either people who are respectable and moral or not so respectable and totally immoral.

God has provided for us something more powerful than Arrogance and because much of Arrogance is Thought, whatever is greater than Arrogance must be in the realm of thought as well. ABSOLUTE TRUTH in 3 categories is the only thing greater than Arrogance.

- ▲ Laws of Divine Establishment for both believers and unbelievers to keep the human race from self destruction.
- ▲ The Gospel of The Lord Jesus, The Christ for the unbeliever to provide the

cancellation of eternal judgment after death.

- ▲ Bible Doctrine for the believer to provide for fulfillment of the Plan of God after Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God.

Televangelists are constantly demonstrating the Arrogance of 'holy roller' or emotional believers and apostasy in their functions of presenting Christianity. In reality, it is the quintessence of Human Arrogance for any person to think or imagine there is something that he can do to gain or lose the Salvation which GOD alone provides, He giving it on the basis of the Substitutionary Spiritual Death of The Lord Jesus, The Christ on the cross for all sin. ([Phil 3:13](#)) This is the rejection of the Truth of the Gospel and all of Bible Doctrine. Ironically the only means of escaping Arrogance and moving into the proper function of the Spiritual Life is through Perception, Cognition, Incultation & Metabolization of Bible Doctrine under the Filling of God the Holy Spirit and consistent use of the [Grace Apparatus for Perception](#). The Filling of God the Holy Spirit is the only mechanism under which the functions of the Spiritual Life operate and everything in the Spiritual Life depends on our use of the Grace Apparatus for Perception, Operation Z. Our primary objective in the Spiritual Life is gaining KNOWLEDGE, and the only people who obtain knowledge in the Spiritual Life are those who are under the principle of [Humility](#) and anyone who listens to the Word of God while under the influence of Arrogance is obtaining Nothing. The Filling of God the Holy Spirit produces the Humility necessary for Perception, Cognition, Incultation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine and without it there is no system of [Retaining Bible Doctrine](#) nor of applying Bible Doctrine. This is the thing which has up to this point in history preserved client nation United States of America and provided opportunity for evangelism and missionary functions abroad. If Arrogance is to be defeated it must be defeated on the battleground of what each individual American thinks.

There is never any positive progress in innovation or CHANGE without Truth and Innovation without Truth is always retrogressive and Innovation without a system is always destructive. Modern Art, Religious cults, Rock music, Weird Poetry, Keynesian Economics, Socialism, Communism, Welfare state functions, Redistribution of wealth, High Fashion in women's clothing, etc., are based on innovation without Truth. This is application without Truth and therefore absence of wisdom, thus the instability and eventual disaster which results from this always causes down trends in Human History. Innovation without Truth can be attempted application of Bible Doctrine without true cognizance of Bible Doctrine. Innovation imposed on others without their consent runs from Arrogance to Tyranny and includes such things as Liberal thinkers trying to ban guns of any kind from citizens. The Truth of this application is that every person has a right to defend themselves from both Tyranny and Crime. Socialism, communism, redistribution of wealth are innovations of Arrogance and result in Tyranny. Revolution and terrorism are prime examples of the disasters of innovation without truth. Innovation without Truth includes Homosexuality, Transgenderism, and Believers functioning in the Cosmic Dynaspheres of Satan. Many organizations which engage in innovation without Truth are brought together by their lust to kill and their resentment of society which they express by killing people, any people as in operations of Terrorism. However, historically, innovation based on truth is progress, solution and historical uptrend in a society which moves

a nation into prosperity.

In Cosmic Dynasphere I the Interlocking System of Arrogance the believer is not opposed to Bible Doctrine but when questioned about it will express a liking of Bible Doctrine and support of it. In essence these believers have become indifferent to the content and importance of Bible Doctrine because Arrogance leads to total preoccupation with self, things or others and thus destroys one's proper Norms and Standards. This believer does not see a need for daily Perception, Cognition, Incultation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine nor the need for line upon line and precept upon precept in the teaching and incultation of Bible Doctrine. In the Age of Israel when the message of Isaiah concerning Line upon Line teaching and comprehension of Bible Doctrine was ignored by the people they entered the Interlocking System of Arrogance and Reversionism and engaged in total preoccupation with Self and this totally changed their Norms and Standards and Scale of Values. These are the 'loser' believers who will be recognized in heaven as those who made no contribution to the support of their nation, have not executed the Protocol Plan of God for their lives, and will be observable in heaven in their Resurrection Bodies without the uniform of glory and without any significant decorations or rewards. They will not be on the honors list and not invited to the holy place in heaven during the tribulation and they will be peons in the millennium not ruling any cities or nations.

### **Principles of Arrogance**

Intelligent people should notice that the reason some smart people get outwitted is because they are proud of their intelligence and perspicacity and the worst thing which can happen to any person especially an intelligent person is involvement in the Interlocking System of Arrogance. Interlocking System of Arrogance involvement takes a genius and dulls the mentality turning him into a fool. The dumb person who is involved in the Interlocking System of Arrogance is insufferable while the intelligent individual involved in the Interlocking System of Arrogance is a fool. In the Interlocking System of Arrogance there exists the most basic Mental Attitude Sins interlocking with a complex of Arrogance systems which are the destroyers of ability, talent, intellect, wisdom, character, greatness and even morality. Satan is one of the greatest creatures ever coming from the hand of God and by the descriptions of his person it is understood that he is as perfect a creature as one can imagine, one of the most beautiful, intelligent and most talented ever to live. With all of this greatness, its potentials and eternal perpetuation, and while living in the presence of GOD, all of it was destroyed by one major factor which is the foundation for all spiritual failure and almost a synonym for the Old Sin Nature, Arrogance. If, and it is true, every individual has an Old Sin Nature, then at some time in life each person will have some involvement in Arrogance which he is either aware of or blind to. Therefore, to the extent to which one harbors or cherishes Arrogance in the soul, to that extent, they destroy their capacity for life, blessing and happiness.

Arrogance as an Interlocking System both exploits and abuses those under Divine Discipline. The Interlocking System of Arrogance has a tendency to bully and who is easier to bully than those individuals or groups under intensive Divine Discipline. Under Divine Discipline people have been robbed of any strength for retaliation by the nature and intensity of their Divine

Discipline. Arrogance divorces the believer from reality and causes him to participate in the mass cowardice of kicking or in some way abusing someone or some group when they are down. This is [Antisemitism](#)!

Instead of Happiness Satan's systems substitute sublimation where the illicit use of Drugs or inordinate consumption of Alcohol very often takes the place of the stimuli in life. This sublimation is often found in good deeds, kindness, altruism all which result in a myriad of variations of Evil which includes Sin, Crime, especially violence, and Human Good, all which take the place of stability in life and Divine Good production. Arrogance is a substitute for reality and without the Divine Dynasphere, Satan can and will lead the believer around by the nose making an ass of him for his entire life and he may only realize it, if at all, when dying the [Sin unto Death](#). Cosmic Dynasphere I, the Interlocking System of Arrogance makes offers of sublimations to all Believers which include:

- ▲ Wealth without Honor
- ▲ Success without Integrity
- ▲ Promotion without Ability or Achievement
- ▲ Sex without Love
- ▲ Fame without Virtue
- ▲ Authority without Leadership
- ▲ Lifestyle without Capacity
- ▲ Approbation without Happiness.

Satan is capable of accomplishing these for Believers in his Cosmic Dynaspheres and as a result, for the one inside the Cosmic Dynaspheres, there is a constant search for happiness among these categories of sublimation, while in God's Divine Dynasphere there are constant varying degrees of true happiness.

With Interlocking System of Arrogance involvement believers inevitably destroy everything they desire. Philosophy is a compilation of great wisdom which is destroyed by Arrogance. Arrogance destroys good lovers, great talent in entertainment and everything it touches it destroys, it is an absolute corrupter. In considering the Jews, they, as the greatest super race to exist in history, were destroyed by Arrogance and Jews as well as gentiles have been and continue to be destroyed by Arrogance alone. To this day, Jews, in their Arrogance, are blind to why gentiles are blessed while they remain under Divine Discipline. By this means and under these principles the answer to all the holocausts of the Jews in history is found in the great inversion. Arrogance corrupts and what is corrupted must be punished by God. This corrupting is a matter of volitional self determination but the punishment is a matter of divine sovereignty combined with justice. While Arrogance corrupts, the Righteousness of God condemns and the Justice of God punishes and even destroys. The very possibility of being Arrogant about anything in life should frighten to the core the advancing believer. There is nothing which corrupts all things in life and dulls all aspects of life more than Arrogance. Neither life in the world ruled by Satan, nor death should frighten the advancing believer BUT harboring even a microscopic bit of Arrogance should frighten every believer right to his core. To the extent one harbors Arrogance, to that extent, he is divorced from reality and will inevitably destroy himself spiritually. Arrogance is the great destroyer of the unbeliever as well



and whether believer or unbeliever, one can have perfect morality and righteousness but his involvement with Arrogance will still totally destroy him. Arrogance corrupts individual capacity and character and one cannot have even a friendship or relationship of any kind with other human beings while functioning in Arrogance. Arrogance is deadly in its destruction of one's life.

Arrogance and the resultant snobbishness it causes keeps believers off balance and disoriented to the Plan of God. TO BE OR NOT TO BE, is NOT the issue rather NOT TO BE SO AS TO BE is the issue when considering Arrogance. By not being Arrogant the believer removes the barrier preventing him from being what God wants him to be as part of the Royal Family of God under the [Royal Family Honor Code](#). The Arrogant believer is frequently [Inordinately Ambitious](#) and is incapable of genuine affection or of having a Relaxed Mental Attitude and therefore cannot fulfill the Royal Family Honor Code. Inordinate ambition is the believer trying to always prove something to or gain something from others. Arrogant people are poor lovers and poor achievers and generally disoriented to life. The Grace Mental Attitude from maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul avoids the pitfalls of Arrogance and disassociation from reality. Therefore, it is Bible Doctrine which always brings the believer back to reality and gives him dynamic thought as opposed to Arrogant opinion which is not dynamic in any way and extremely weak. The prerequisite for properly or correctly thinking with regard to interrelationship with people first demands correct thinking toward God. This correct thinking eliminates hangups, difficulties, Arrogance, inordinate ambition and all things destructive toward self. Correct thinking toward God is impossible without maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul. Therefore, the natural human trend toward Arrogance must be displaced by Metabolized Bible Doctrine and replaced by the function of the [Royal Family Honor Code](#).

### Part & Counter Part

[‘Pride’](#), which is often construed to be Arrogance is an isolated part of Arrogance and in the text of this book it will be considered to be a “part” to a “counter part” and is a no pressure sin in itself which when combined with its counter part produces pressure in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul. Involvement with personal PRIDE produces Cowardice, as a counter part and these are 2 sides of the same problem, part and counter part. Pride is the source of negative pressure and cowardice is the source of positive pressure. Pride will always show itself under pressure and if one cannot think under pressure he can blame this on whatever area of Arrogance is his personal distraction. ‘Pride’ can also produce [Jealousy](#) as a secondary counter part which is the expression of [Pettness](#) in Arrogance. Pride is again the negative part and Jealousy is the positive counter part. Anyone under the pressure of Jealousy or Cowardice with Pride never thinks clearly because ALL aspects of [Mental Attitude Arrogance](#) destroy clear thinking. All Arrogant people are totally different under pressure and may have their own individual pressure counter part. Therefore, whatever Arrogance one has in his life he also has a pressure counter part and when pressure is put on his Pride the counter part emerges. As long as there is no pressure on Pride it just rides along happy in the delusion of self importance.

As is often assumed, a person with good posture and confidence and who makes dogmatic statements is not necessarily 'Arrogant' but simply confident about what he knows and does. People who are superficially stupid always assign Arrogance to that which they don't understand and often assign Arrogance to those who have what they don't have or know what they don't understand. Believers cannot depend on anything in life which is superficial and superficialities must never interfere with Bible Doctrine. In overreacting to superficialities of life the believer creates in his own life Self Righteous Arrogance and this he must never allow in the Christian Way of Life. If one has Self Righteous Arrogance in his life he cannot continue momentum for growth in the Christian Life. There is no way to be Arrogant and Self Righteous and function or survive in the Christian Way of Life since he will become a major target for Divine Discipline from the Justice of God beginning at the moment Arrogance is found in his life up until he dies the Sin Unto Death as a result of his degradation into Reversionism. Many believers deceive self and call Arrogance spirituality and call Self Righteousness being a good Christian. This simply neutralizes any possibility of assigning the proper priority to Bible Doctrine so that it can be learned and applied to life. The principle we must function under it to never allow Nonessentials in life to interfere with consistent Perception, Cognition, Incultation & Metabolization of Bible Doctrine. However, the fact is that most believers are asleep from overemphasis on nonessentials in life so that Arrogance and stupidity are the next step for their progression.

Whenever the believer becomes passive with regard to Bible Doctrine this becomes a hangup which manifests itself as Arrogance. This means he becomes Arrogant about many other things and then finds someone he can bully or push around and take advantage of; a child, a wife, an employee etc. He becomes Arrogant and pushy and seems to be aggressive but this is a hollow shell for a moral coward. This believer is so weak and lacking in dedication that when he has people come to visit, instead of excusing self and coming to bible study he excuses self from study to appeal to them. Then, any little thing which comes along is considered more important than bible study and he attends only when it is convenient. The believer cannot live a life of convenience and have capacity for life and he cannot be passive about what counts in life and have capacity for life and without capacity for life he will never have blessing from God. In a crisis or disaster one cannot ever be passive but when one is passive about what counts in life, namely Bible Doctrine, he will be passive in every crisis and when passive in a crisis it will inevitably destroy him.

In contrast, courtesy must never be construed as weakness or cowardice this is a grave mistake of the weak. Weakness is being susceptible to flattery and is Arrogance in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul. Courtesy is not Arrogance nor weakness nor cowardice. Warrior peoples are physically very tough having to rely on physical ability and strength for their survival. These types of tough people must be well led by strong individuals since any Arrogance neutralizes their ability, talent and toughness. The weak cannot ever appreciate nor understand the truly strong. Superficial people tend to be superficial in their estimate of others and thus downgrade their strengths in Arrogance. Superficial people in their thinking obviously downgrade people who do not seem to be strong or powerful according to their physical attributes and by this, therefore, make a great mistake.

Everyone is a natural coward in some area and courage is the ability to concentrate in pressure situations despite any latent fear. Once the believer exchanges humility for Arrogance he becomes weak, vulnerable and vacillating and turns his courage into great cowardice. The verbalization of his hidden Arrogance emphasizes self pity and these people wallow in feeling sorry for self. They often learn [Self Pity](#) and [Self Righteousness](#) from their parents. The Arrogance of Self Pity glosses over the real facts and issues in circumstances in life and these people often are willing to suffer and die to just show others how wrong they are. This is an example of dying the [Sin Unto Death](#), the most horrible Divine Discipline in the Christian Life. Only the hidden Arrogance of self pity would ever desire such a death and this only occurs when people are saturated with self pity. The lack of Faith Rest functions means fear and fear results in failure to think under pressure which is cowardice whereas courage is the ability to think under pressure. Courage is reverse concentration on some aspect of Truth while fear is an emotional aberration and total lack of rational thought. Lack of Faith Rest Drill <sup>(5 stages)</sup>, functions means fear, self pity and irrationality leading to severe Divine Discipline including the Sin Unto Death and no one in his right mind would want to die the Sin Unto Death under this maximum Divine Discipline. ([Num 11:4-6](#))

As members of the Royal Family of God the believer must only follow the commands of God and never add his own ‘refinements’ to the Plan of God to confuse the issue and muddy up the water with Arrogant innovations. At some time in his life he most likely will decide to go with HIS own Self Righteousness in what amounts to a terrible decision. With his system of taboos and Self Righteous Arrogance becoming pseudo Christianity for him, he may not have been interested in Bible Doctrine as a system but used it, to some small degree, in covering his system with grease so his wheels of Self Righteous Arrogance would turn more easily. However, in this situation, his wheels will never turn since as a believer in The Lord Jesus, The Christ he is in the Plan of God and the wheels of the Plan of God are designed to only run on the Grace Righteousness of God which has been given to him at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God. Therefore, NO believer is ever commanded or authorized to reinvent the Plan of God by his own efforts. The whole Plan of God revolves only around the fact of Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God through faith alone in The Lord Jesus, The Christ alone and the receipt by the new believer of the imputation of the Absolute Righteousness of God. One cannot function in the Plan of God based on his own human efforts to reinvent the plan and thereby run it on his Self Righteousness, ability, talent, human effort works, social action or anything he can do using his own concepts, thoughts, actions and Modus Operandi. As a believer in The Lord Jesus, The Christ and member of the Royal Family of God, he must decide if he is going to use his personal system of Arrogance and Self Righteousness or the Grace System of God in the Christian Way of Life. If one chooses his own Self Righteous Arrogant system he is, in effect, trying to reinvent the Plan of God by inserting or superimposing his plan over the Plan of God. If one chooses the Righteousness of God, given at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God, to enable him to function in the Plan of God, then, and only then, it will be possible to advance to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God, receive unimaginable blessings and glorify God in time.

## **Arrogance & Crisis or Disaster**

The greatest wealth in the world is thought based on Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul. (**Rom 12:3**) As part of the Royal Family of God the believer must avoid the Interlocking System of Arrogance at all costs and think sanely being rational without illusion thus being able to use stage 2, 3 & 4 of the Faith Rest Drill <sup>(5 stages)</sup>. Arrogance is more powerful than Good Environment or even Perfect Environment or Discipline and under certain circumstances it is more powerful than the suffering one is enduring and Arrogant people can endure a great deal motivated strictly by their Arrogance. Arrogance is the power of the rulership system of Satan for controlling this world and the only thing more powerful than Arrogance is Divine Viewpoint thinking in the 3 categories of absolute truth. Arrogance with subjectivity produces weakness in a person and in the nation as well. Having a **Divine Viewpoint** Mental Attitude is impossible apart from learning Bible Doctrine. Without Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul the believer is POOR. It is Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Soul which is the basis for spiritual wealth and application to experience. What one thinks is what one really is and a thought can make or break one in life and often lack of thought, such as occurs with fear or cowardice, can break one as well. For the believer thinking can occur in 2 categories:

- ▲ **Divine Viewpoint** which comes from being ‘thought’ wealthy with maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul thus thinking in terms of Grace the plan and policy of God.
- ▲ **Human Viewpoint** which is the poverty of thinking in terms of the LIES of Evil, the plan and policy of Satan used to rule this world.

When in a crisis or disaster, one cannot ever go back to pick up the Bible Doctrine which is needed to handle the disaster which he has missed as a result of having been consistently negative to and distracted from that Bible Doctrine when it was presented. The problem with most believers is that the ‘Mind or Thinking of Christ’, Bible Doctrine (**1Cor 2:16**), is not the thinking of the believer and the ‘Ways of the Lord’ are not their ways. It is only the accumulation of Divine Viewpoint thoughts or Bible Doctrine which gives the believer ‘thinking’ wealth. (**Phil 2:5, 2Cor 10:4-6**) The Lord Jesus, The Christ has shared his thinking with us as Bible Doctrine which is found only in the content of the Canon of Scripture. Fulfilling the principle of obedience to the Lord there will be the accumulation of Metabolized Bible Doctrine into the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul. However, thinking can be one’s failure as well, (**Col 3:2**) and when one picks up wrong or false ideas such as Arrogance from EVIL he has lost his ability to handle crises.

No one can apply or use the Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of his Soul unless he can concentrate under pressure and only with focused concentration can he then apply Bible Doctrine to disaster, adversity, crisis or catastrophe. One can only learn to concentrate when placed under strict discipline, this is, for the believer, being under strict academic discipline in bible study. Metabolized Bible Doctrine without reverse concentration is doctrine which cannot ever be applied therefore, the believer MUST learn to concentrate. If one is too easily distracted during bible study this means when disaster comes he cannot be counted on and will inevitably fail. In disaster situations one can and should ONLY team up

with people who can concentrate under pressure. People in disaster will never make it if they cannot apply what they know through reverse concentration and without this ability they will remain totally divorced from the reality of the circumstances. Therefore, Arrogance divorces one from reality and produces [Inflexibility](#) as does the inability to concentrate on subjects which don't currently apply to or interest one at the time. Some people can make it in a crisis with less doctrine than others because they can concentrate better and think under pressure on the doctrine which they do possess in their soul. Therefore, the secret to courage is to be able to think under pressure or follow a system of protocol, for the Christian this is to follow the Protocol Plan of God.

In crisis and disaster there will always be a calm before the storm because PEOPLE ARE STUPID. People do not lack intelligence with low IQ but are stupid in the sense of being Arrogant. Arrogance eliminates wisdom and cancels intelligence and an Arrogant person makes himself a stupid person. Highly intelligent people often build Scar Tissue of the Soul by saying NO to Absolute Truth and as Scar Tissue of the Soul builds up Arrogance builds in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul. Even with the highest IQ in the world involvement in the Interlocking System of Arrogance results in stupidity and divorcement from reality. In difficult times of crisis or disaster, these people always try to look on the bright side of things saying 'everything is going to be alright' when in reality the roof is about to fall in and some disaster is about to crush them. During the calm before the storm the only preparation which exists for disaster is saturating the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul with Doctrinally based thought patterns. There is only one thing which is of value which one can take from this life into eternity and that is the thought content from [Metabolized Bible Doctrine](#) in the Stream of Consciousness of his Soul. The Metabolized Bible Doctrine which has been learned is more valuable than all the gold, silver or precious stones one can accumulate, more than any power and authority one may have, more than anything the world knows or has ever known. The believer must understand that he should collect Metabolized Bible Doctrine in his Stream of Consciousness of the Soul continuously and consistently because no one can ever steal Bible Doctrine from his Soul and further, when he dies he takes it with him into eternity. Therefore, preparation for disaster demands maximum concentration to accumulate maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine into the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul BEFORE THE DISASTER OCCURS. This is the Dynamic needed for Disaster and considering the Status Quo of the individual in the United States today, especially the average believer, the crises and coming disasters in this country are very real and will be exceedingly devastating. If one is perceptive and has enough Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul to properly assess contemporary history then the signs can be clearly seen in the daily news especially in the constant and obvious manipulation of news by the media sources. There are riots and mass shootings where there is total rejection of and opposition to authority and there is the mismanagement of government with idiotic policies which no one serving in government has the moral courage to oppose. It is clear with the economic system on the brink of collapse and society crumbling as one watches, that the people in general have no concept of the reality of any of this. This coming crisis in the United States of America, this disaster, is going to be devastating but the media and government keep saying that there is no real problem and life keeps moving on in a fog of pseudo reality ignoring the problems as they keep arising and



multiplying.

If a person cannot think when things are normal they must have a protocol or regimented system to force them into standard procedures. One learns to effectively and properly shoot firearms under normal conditions so that under crisis conditions he can shoot the exact same way. The person who does not concentrate on each fundamental of shooting on the range under normal conditions cannot do it under abnormal conditions of combat. When one has true accurate sight pictures on the range he will have true and accurate sight pictures in combat to kill the enemy. The use of bands or fields of fire will not ever work properly in combat. When one fights someone and they are really good he has to concentrate on their hands and feet and watch when each movement takes place. If he concentrates on what he has learned and applies it there will be no fear. The interesting thing about training is that it requires concentration to learn and develop good habits of performance and the only thing which makes training worthwhile is to do it exactly correct each time it is repeated. Practice makes PERMANENT and only Perfect practice makes Perfect performance. The same applies to the Christian Way of Life and the consistent Perception, Cognition, Incultation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine is essential for support in life and ultimately application during disaster.

### **Erroneous Evaluation of One's Life**

Entanglement in the Interlocking System of Arrogance inevitably leads to psychological depression. When one thinks HE is the greatest thing given to the world and then obviously fails, he becomes depressed and discouraged with [Self Pity](#) as only one of his irrational stages. The mental depression from this pressure of failure combined with his Arrogance can result in a prayer to God which can be something like “too much oh Lord, take my life”. The obvious meaning is that this person cannot see life in any real perspective and feels totally useless. When one is down in the dumps under mental depression, the worst thing he can do is to compare himself with others, this is Arrogance. Remember that self-pity is just as much Arrogance as [Self-Righteousness](#). Therefore, when one is down he must not compare self with others, dead or living, and should only ever compare self with the standards from Bible Doctrine; which are to be the only standard for the Christian Way of Life.

The first principle of erroneous evaluation of life is demonstrated by a believer giving orders to the Lord showing the world that he has totally lost perspective in life and has moved into blaspheme. Those believers who use IMPERATIVES with God are either Mature Believers on solid ground with him and know it or are on no ground at all and do not know it. From his sovereignty the Lord alone decides many things with regard to the believer especially when he will die. Thus in many believers Arrogance and Stupidity go together because Arrogance dulls the mentality. Arrogance always rejects authority and is self centered, and never gets beyond the periphery of one's little desires and activities and never relates them to anyone else or any authority and NEVER to God.

The worst sociopath is the Self Righteous sociopath but to abandon one's own Scale of Values and Norms and Standards based on personal Self Righteousness because of being obsessed and

preoccupied with OTHERS is a far more dangerous function than the mere Self Righteousness of one thinking self perfect. A person may be strong in human relationships but weak in other areas since people who are strong in 1 area of life are very susceptible to weakness in other areas because they assume that strength in one area means strength in all areas. A man may be strong in combat and weak in administration or vice versa. ONE CANNOT EVER TAKE HIS AREA OF STRENGTH AND MAKE IT THE BASIS OF HIS CONFIDENCE. If he excessively focus' on his area of strength it can and will cause Arrogance and one must never allow his strengths to be overbalanced and become weaknesses.

Arrogance always makes erroneous assumptions about self and then underrates those in the periphery. NEVER underrate other people no matter how humble or stupid they appear nor how hard they struggle. No 2 people are the same and never should one ever underrate people of humble circumstances because that is the greatest mistake in life. Sooner or later one of these underrated people come in on one's blind side and destroys him. Arrogance therefore. is a false view of self which destroys good judgment, rationality, logical thinking and common sense. Arrogance destroys Spiritual Common Sense and the believer cannot be Arrogant and have good common sense since they are mutually exclusive. Humility always recognizes the reality of life whereas involvement in the Interlocking System of Arrogance is always divorcement from reality. Development of common sense helps build great capacity for life and happiness and no one is BORN with common sense but must develop it which is most effectively accomplished through Metabolized Bible Doctrine or its extrapolations in the Laws of Divine Establishment. Being good at what one does in life, does not mean one is good at every thing in life. Arrogance assumes that being good in one field makes one an expert in all fields. Achieving great success in some field is another aspect of capacity for life as long as it is not done to show others how great one can be. Trying to achieve in order to show greatness is the total Arrogance of life in pushing oneself to reach a goal. To achieve one's goals because of enthusiasm in a given field is part of having great capacity for life. However, the danger of great success in one field of life is vulnerability to the Arrogance that such success automatically qualifies one to be successful in all fields. Arrogant people always assume that they can do things better than anyone else. In their field they often can and if there is humility with success an Arrogance problem never develops. The people who conclude that they can do things better than a leader have never faced the pressures and problems of leadership when making that conclusion

### Arrogance vs Grace

The believer does not advance the Plan of God but the Plan of God advances the believer. Believers in the Interlocking System of Arrogance are never advancing in the Plan of God therefore God in his Plan is obligated to discipline them as part of the Royal Family of God. The Plan of God does not depend on the believer but the believer depends on the Plan of God. God sustains all believers, even the failing and failed believers under Logistical Grace without exception. Therefore, the Plan of God supports the believer, good, bad or ugly but the believer does not support NOR benefit the Plan of God. Arrogance reverses this function of Grace so that blaspheme is sponsored in the name of Christianity. Arrogance overestimates the value of the individual believer and underestimates the Grace provision from God. Arrogance

emphasizes the SUBJECT of faith while Grace emphasizes the OBJECT of faith, the root in The Lord Jesus, The Christ. In [Matt 20:30-34](#) the blind men understood Grace and they first shouted “Kurios” emphasizing the DEITY of Christ and understanding Him as Son of God and said in effect, “GOD have mercy on us”. Then they shouted “Son of David” recognizing the HUMANITY of Christ and his Hypostatic Union knowing that he could heal them but THEY DID NOT SAY THAT THEY DESERVED TO BE HEALED. There was no attempt to ingratiate themselves to Christ on the basis of their talent or ability or in this case their bad fortune. They simply asked to be healed asking for Grace to be directed to them. This is reversed in Arrogance when the believer is residing outside of the Divine Dynasphere and residing in the Cosmic Dynaspheres where he then appeals to God BASED ON HIS STATUS!

### **Arrogance & Faith Rest**

God cannot use Arrogant people and whether they are mature or immature believers, in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God or [Reversionism](#), carnality or spirituality is never the issue but it is Arrogance in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul which is the true issue. God will not and cannot use these believers and they will never pass the first part of the testing of the [Faith Rest Drill \(5 Stages\)](#). Being in the Interlocking System of Arrogance is a great distraction to thinking in terms of Divine Viewpoint from the Metabolized Bible Doctrine within one’s Stream of Consciousness of the Soul. The believer cannot ‘order’ the Lord with regard to anything in life. However, He has given some very specific situations as to when and where the believer can make demands on him related to prayer and the Faith Rest Drill <sup>(5 Stages)</sup> functions under the proper conditions. However, dying is NOT one of these situations or conditions. Unequivocally, NO believer has the right to try to dictate the course of his life to the Lord. This can be a huge problem for the believer at various stages of Spiritual Growth and is demonstrated by the person who wants immediate fulfillment of spiritual advance or instant blessing from God.

When one is residing outside of the Interlocking System of Arrogance he is not vulnerable to the interlocking mechanics of the Arrogance Complex, only if or when he CHOOSES to enter does he become vulnerable. Once a person becomes enticed by and involved in Arrogance the Interlocking System of Arrogance entirely controls his thinking and actions. However, when residing inside the Interlocking System of Arrogance the believer CAN turn around and simply walk out by means of the [Rebound Procedure](#) but that only provides the fellowship with God of the Filling of God the Holy Spirit ([Gate #1 of the Divine Dynasphere](#)). Then, ONLY if the believer exercises all 5 stages of the Faith Rest Drill can he stay out of the Interlocking System of Arrogance. He must first function in [Faith Perception](#) consistently under the [Grace Apparatus for Perception](#), Operation Z, and the Filling of God the Holy Spirit. He must also use the [Spiritual Skills](#) and the mechanics of faith in claiming promises, adding doctrinal principles, developing doctrinal rationales and coming to doctrinal conclusions. All doctrinal rationales developed from Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul including the [Logistical Grace](#) rationale have obviously deserted the mentality of the one who demands things from the Lord. This always is the case when the Interlocking System of Arrogance starts to function in the life of any believer. All of the doctrinal rationales emphatically point to the fact that God is always on the side of the believer. The rationales

are designed for believers to take all or part of them and use them to recover from self-pity or the various introspective subjectivities of life which are related to the Arrogance complex. No one has ever, nor will ever, be great enough to be free from the possibility of entering the Interlocking System of Arrogance. From the Infant believer to the Advanced Maturity believer all are susceptible to the Interlocking System of Arrogance.

When a believer rationalizes in the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul instead of functioning under the [Faith Rest Drill \(5 stages\)](#) then [Human Viewpoint](#) thinking replaces [Divine Viewpoint](#) thinking and the Interlocking System of Arrogance functions within his soul continues unabated and unchanged. When he finds himself completely run down by life and picks himself up and looks around and realizes he is still alive and he has not earned nor deserved the right to this life, this is the starting point for the Logistical Grace rationale. He should then pick out what form of Logistical Grace has kept him alive as a result of the intervention of God and try to answer the question, 'why did God save my life and why am I still here'. The obvious answer is that God has a plan for his life and thus he must recognize the principle and necessity for [Rebound Adjustment to the Justice of God](#) and then keep moving forward in the Christian Way of Life. As long as a believer lives God intends for him to go back to the Logistical Grace rationale and the rebound procedure and understand the reality of his situation from the Divine Viewpoint. This is the true reality which breaks the Interlocking System of Arrogance. This and all reverse concentration malfunctions when under the influence of Arrogance inevitably involves selfcenteredness, self-pity and Self Righteousness and must be understood and then avoided or corrected with Rebound Adjustment to the Justice of God.

A lust for power and authority which one does not possess and that the Lord has not given is the worst situation ever to enter into. The Interlocking System of Arrogance will not only cause malfunction in the Faith Rest Drill (5 stages) but devastates and destroys it totally. It is Arrogance which makes an issue out of another person when the believer himself fails and is comparing self to these others whom he may think are better than he. When the believer has abandoned the second stage of the faith-rest drill, claiming the promises of God, because of involvement in the Interlocking System of Arrogance the result is selfcenteredness and [Egocentricity](#), resulting in so much preoccupation with self that his self-righteousness will manufacture [Paranoid FEAR](#). The Faith Rest Drill (5 stages) must be used consciously or subconsciously and consistently every day and the believer must be extremely wary lest he forget to use it. God is ***REQUIRED*** to provide all the needs in life for all believers whether they are advancing or retrogressing, succeeding in the Spiritual Life or failing in Reversionism. The Interlocking System of Arrogance also destroys reverse concentration on Metabolized Bible Doctrine already resident in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul so that the believer fails to recognize the simple application of Logistical Grace to his life. Because of the Interlocking System of Arrogance and its frequent interaction with the [Stages of Reversionism](#) believers will all at some point in life in general and their spiritual life, fail. From the worst reversionist to the greatest believer in [Advanced Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God](#) in the history of Israel or the Church, ALL BELIEVERS HAVE FAILED AND WILL FAIL. [Self-Pity](#) is what drives the believer to the state of trying to compare self with others but the fact is that one never

really knows who or what anyone else really is. The believer must not ever try to decide whether he is better than or worse than anyone else. This is self-righteousness making an issue of self under Self-Pity. Making an issue of self is always an indication of involvement in the Interlocking System of Arrogance. The Lord decides who is better or worse and based on his sovereign will administers the support of Logistical Grace as Divine Discipline or Divine provisions for one's life.

Preoccupation with self when under pressure is the most devastating type of Arrogance. It keeps the believer from being [Flexible](#), solving problems, making decisions and from [Thinking](#) under pressure and therefore short circuits the process of reverse concentration. Self-Pity therefore short circuits faith rest. In self pity one's occupation with self prevents him from claiming promises, using reverse concentration and coming to doctrinal conclusions. Self-Pity is an extension of Arrogant selfcenteredness and is a basic disorientation to life in general and the Plan of God for one's life specifically. Self-Pity, selfcenteredness or any other preoccupation with self results in total loss of one's scale of values whether dealing in the spiritual realm related to God or in the human realm related to the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions. You cannot have a system of priorities which is compatible with the Plan of God and also be under occupation with self as a part of the system of Arrogance. Self consciousness is legitimate, however, Arrogance is NOT. The Subjectivity of unbelief can only be remedied by the objectivity of Bible Doctrine and this requires consistent Post Salvation Epistemological Rehabilitation from Perception, Cognition, Inculcation & Metabolization of Bible Doctrine with concentration on Bible Doctrine so that there is something to be applied under pressure through the Faith Rest Drill.

Therefore, the [Faith Rest Drill](#) keeps the believer in touch with the reality of the Logistical Grace provision from God and the Plan of God for his life. It is easy, even for the mature believer, to lose perspective when under pressure and forget the promises and principles of Bible Doctrine so that preoccupation with self excludes [Occupation with the Person of The Lord Jesus, The Christ](#). Through maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul the mature believer, as a part of his Super – Grace Blessings, has deployed Problem Solving Device #10, Occupation with the Person of The Lord Jesus, The Christ into his soul. Therefore, one of the first characteristics of Spiritual Maturity is enhanced capacity for love in all 3 categories. In the self consciousness of the soul Occupation with the Person of The Lord Jesus, The Christ then overrides selfishness, Arrogance, and other potential road blocks for success in the Spiritual Life.

The 5 stages of the Faith Rest Drill must be a function which the believer engages in daily no matter how far he advances in his Spiritual Life and the Plan of God. He must use Metabolized Bible Doctrine constantly and daily and must consistently claim promises or make conclusions from the Bible Doctrine principles which comes to his thinking or think through Bible Doctrine rationales using a single one or many of them together. Attaining Spiritual Maturity does not warrant a vacation from the dynamics of the 5 stages of the Faith Rest Drill. If one lets up on the use of the Faith Rest Drill <sup>(5 Stages)</sup>, Arrogance will infiltrate and find one's weaknesses. This puts the believer quickly under the control of the Old Sin Nature through the



Interlocking System of Arrogance and the strategies of Satan under his policy of EVIL. Believers who cannot function under the Faith Rest Drill inevitably become Arrogant and may also become paralyzed with [Paranoid FEAR](#) where they often think and proclaim that the devil is after them. Once one enters into this state of cowardice, any thought under pressure becomes instant irrationality often bordering on insanity. Insanity is divorcement from reality and the coward is totally divorced from reality in his thinking. As the cowardly believer moves along in status quo cowardice he becomes more and more irrational and irrationality is the antithesis of reverse concentration which is the requisite process in the application of Metabolized Bible Doctrine to experience. When a believer has fallen into cowardice he has a hierarchy of concerns:

- ▲ **SELF** in selfcenteredness of Arrogance so that Arrogance under pressure results in either self pity or selfcenteredness
- ▲ **Children** who will be inordinately glorified and taken out of their proper category of importance when irrationality occurs.
- ▲ **Wealth** or financial security

A Logistical or Living Grace test is not a discipline or reprimand since reprimanding comes as a result of [Self Righteousness](#) and Self Righteousness comes from Arrogance. When facing Logistical Grace testing and pressure the believer must never try to find someone to blame for his situation. Moses at Kadesh Barnea during Meribah II failed in this application when he was to provide water for the Jews. Arrogance and Self Righteousness will always result in unkind applications and hysteria. Therefore, Grace NOT sin is always to be the issue. ([Phil 4:19](#)) God provides all our needs according to his riches and glory NOT according to our victory or success. This applies to both the worst and best believers who instead of using the Faith Rest Drill (5 stages) are guilty of Arrogant selfcenteredness, fear, panic and self pity but they WILL STILL receive Logistical Grace support from God. The believer must come to the place of total dependence on God in total helplessness and humility, the two prerequisites for [Grace Orientation](#). The believer will ALWAYS receive Logistical Grace support from the Justice of God and he must understand this. When God guarantees logistical support in time it does not matter whether the believer can see the source of that support or not but it does matter that he realize that God is the ultimate source. Therefore, as long as one has his focus on God he will never have Arrogance.

God has the answer to any problems of life which answers were designed in Eternity Past, a time so long ago that it is incomprehensible to the human mind. There never was a time when God did not have an answer to the problems and disasters one faces in life. However, these answers are not presented until there is proper function by the believer under the [Faith Rest Drill \(5 stages\)](#). The claiming of promises from God, which are now in writing for us, is designed to stabilize the thinking of the believer when under pressure in life. Once the thinking is stable, the believer MUST then reach into their Stream of Consciousness of the Soul and use reverse concentration to extract pertinent doctrinal principles of the Spiritual Life to reinforce those promises, especially concepts of Logistical Grace. The great test which most believers fail, whether they are mature or immature, reversionistic or advancing, is the Logistical Grace test which is the simplest of all divine testing. The Logic of Logistics for this

life is based in the fact that as a believer in The Lord Jesus, The Christ, as long as God wants one in this life, God is responsible to provide things which sustain life for him. Lacking water, food, clothing, transportation or lodging are Logistical Grace issues and these things MUST be provided by God himself. Without water or food believers would die, without proper clothing in extreme environments he would also die, and unless it is the time to leave this life and be with God himself, GOD is OBLIGATED to provide these things for every believer in the Royal Family of God. Knowing this principle and that as a believer with Positive Volition toward Bible Doctrine one is in the Plan of God and having confidence that because of His omniscience God knew about the problem in Eternity Past and that He set up this test, the believer should immediately recognize that GOD has already set up the solution. Any thinking apart from this is ARROGANCE.

When there is a lack of something which is designed to sustain life the believer is not under Divine Discipline. It is ALWAYS a test for the Faith Rest Drill <sup>(5 Stages)</sup> regarding the principles which he SHOULD KNOW regarding Logistical Grace support from God. Divine Discipline never involves removing something needed to sustain life. This Logistical Grace test is a preparation for something greater coming in the life of this believer. Every generation must be trained spiritually and learn to think under pressure and have both moral and battle courage. In situations when life sustaining provisions are lacking, believers having sinned currently or in the past think God is punishing them for their sins. This is a combination of many categories of Arrogance including vanity and **Pride**. In providing a Logistical Grace test for the believer God is trying to prepare them for what is to come in the future and it is most certainly NOT a punishment for sin. When things go wrong in life, for the believer under consistent Positive Volition, these are tests to prepare him for greater blessing and to put muscle on faith to teach the believer to think under pressure. This is what the combat testing of the United States Army for Airborne Rangers used to be like. When war is hot and real and when combat comes to light one should already be able to think under pressure. The believer must therefore develop the ability to think under pressure and have the moral courage to do whatever is needed in disaster and warfare situations.

The **Guilt Complex** is Arrogance Fusing Self Pity with Self Righteousness to produce a complex of sins which have behind them a saturation with Arrogance. In this case there is fusion with Self Pity merging into Self Righteousness. Self Righteousness says “God is punishing me”; Self Pity says “I feel sorry for ME being punished” and then “how can I make it up to God” and from this comes the guilt complex and then idiotic penance and **Crusader** functions. Sins may be mental, verbal, or overt and God WILL discipline the believer for these and any other things which take him OUT of the Plan of God. God however does not ever mix Divine Discipline with Logistical Grace testing. However, it often happens that many believers go into Logistical Grace testing without using rebound and with sins dangling all around them and when the believer enters into Logistical Grace testing out of fellowship and loaded down with sins as a result of not using rebound he will obviously come to the wrong conclusions about his pressures from the logistical testing. However, the thing which actually destroys this believer is the Guilt Complex wherein emerges the idiocies of trying to make up for his failures with God getting himself into some system where his Self Righteousness can be recovered. Therefore,

instead of solving this problem he intensifies the problem and as a result cannot recover. This believer may never get straightened out and may reject Bible Doctrine totally and use penance, the tongues movement involvement or some other system of Self Righteousness where he can tell God he will make up for his failings and THIS is total divorcement from Grace reality. As a result of these things which invariably divorce the believer from reality he will first become sociopathic and from this either psychotic or neurotic depending on the factors of his situation. It is very difficult to work one's way back out of this situation because this believer does not know what he must do and as a result depends on someone else to guide him. However, the FIRST recovery function must always be the use of the [Rebound Procedure](#) and then the subsequent relearning of every basic Bible Doctrine principle and reasserting the Faith Rest Drill (5 stages) functions and restoring reality to the thinking.

It all goes back to Arrogance which rejects authority and therefore Bible Doctrine and its teaching is rejected and as a result Arrogance is increased along with an increase in [Scar Tissue of the Soul](#) because of persistent [Negative Volition](#) toward Bible Doctrine. Then an unfortunate distortion occurs in the soul causing the believer to think Logistical Grace testing is Divine Discipline punishment. The very interesting paradoxical underlying principle in distinguishing Divine Discipline from Logistical Grace testing is that *God cannot punish a believer for being outside the Plan of God as a result of sin when his logistics are missing and he is DEAD!* If some sustaining logistical necessity is missing the believer will not survive and as a result God will not be able to punish him if he is dead because all Divine Discipline is restricted to LIFE IN TIME. Therefore, if God is going to punish with Divine Discipline then he has to keep the believer alive, therefore, he will first have to give logistical support and then the believer will be punished after he receives the support and the sustaining of Logistical Grace. This is a key part of the Logistical Grace Rationale.

Therefore, believers must be cognizant of the fact that Logistical Grace blessing continues in the life of every believer as long as he lives whether he is carnal or spiritual, mature or immature, Advancing or in Reversionism. The imputation of Logistical Grace support never depends on who or what the believer is but only on who and what God is and specifically on His Integrity. The Integrity of God is the basis for all blessing to believers through the Grace pipeline motivated by the Love of God, distributed from the Justice of God to the Righteousness of God imputed to every believer at Salvation. Therefore, believers are supported and sustained all of their life after Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God by Logistical Grace no matter their Status Quo as believers. Emphatically, however, this does not preclude becoming the recipient of Divine Discipline for failures in the Christian Way of Life which take the believer OUT of the Divine Dynasphere and plop him into the Cosmic Dynaspheres. Therefore, it is a logical conclusion that anytime a necessity of life is missing, this is a test for the Faith Rest Drill (5 stages) and not Divine Discipline which is only for failure to remain in and function under the Plan of God. The average believer is totally confused about this distinction because they are saturated with a [Guilt Complex](#) resulting from their real or imagined failures before God or man. This is the wealthy liberal trying to find solutions for all the problems of the downtrodden, it is the guilt ridden believer who has instability in his recovery of and use of doctrinal rationales. It takes volition to enter the Interlocking System of Arrogance and

therefore, it takes volition to walk out. The volition to walk out of the Interlocking System of Arrogance is expressed in terms of the Rebound procedure and then the use of the Faith Rest Drill <sup>(5 stages)</sup> where the believer can reach a doctrinal conclusions to gain control of the situation outside the Interlocking System of Arrogance.

The Faith Rest Drill <sup>(5 stages)</sup> is therefore designed to reduce the complexities and problems of life to the utmost simplicity. These complexities of life become simple not only by learning the instructions for recovery but by using faith and following them implicitly. This is the beauty of the military where recruits are only given simple instructions so everyone can follow them together. They give simple instructions and require the individual recruit to repeat following them until he can do them in his sleep without thinking. Following simple instructions from authority is therefore a cleanser of Arrogance from the soul. When a smart captain sees his company becoming Arrogant he takes them out for ½ a day for close order drill and he drills the Arrogance right out of them. When those under one's authority look at him with hate they are then again humble and have stopped thinking about self and only about him. Therefore the reality of life is that Divine Solutions to man's problems and complexities in life are ultimately designed to make things simple.

### **Arrogance, Prayer & Evil Influence**

Influence by evil explains why the prayers of believers are often NOT answered and it is the influence of Evil which is the most detrimental factor in the proper function of prayer. Carnality is also a great hindrance to prayer but the Rebound Procedure puts the believer back on praying ground provided he is not under the influence of Evil. However, Arrogance is the number one cause of ineffective prayer because Arrogance is the Original Basis for EVIL. (**Job 35:9-13**) If you pray when frightened, in a state of cowardice, in any aspect of Arrogance including Self Righteousness, Self Pity or Guilt Complex your prayers will not be heard. Mental Attitude Arrogance with its Mental Attitude Sins in the Interlocking System of Arrogance and degradation of the Spiritual Life in Reversionism destroy prayer effectiveness and are the greatest enemy of Prayer. (**Ps 66:18**) When the believer rejects Bible Doctrine repeatedly he enters into Reversionism and inevitably builds up Scar Tissue of the Soul and intensifies the Arrogance of his soul. As Arrogance intensifies he is ONLY able to believe the LIE of the many things which are part of the Cosmic Dynaspheres such as communism and liberalism. As Arrogance branches out it produces Self Righteousness in prosperity and Self Pity in adversity. When involved in Self Righteousness the believer has false superficial concepts about prayer and will judge others in their erroneous functions of prayer. When involved in self pity he will use prayer groups to unload his problems and try to get others to pray for him. These are an abuse and distortion of prayer and a lack of proper function for the use of the greatest weapon God has given to believers. There is nothing to compare to the cries for help of reversionistic believers and this is where there is blending of Sin with principles of Evil.

### **Arrogance is not Reversionism**

Arrogance is not **Reversionism** and even believers who have reached Advanced Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God can be in the Interlocking System of Arrogance without rejection of Bible Doctrine which is what moves one into Reversionism. There were truly great

believers, including Moses, Elijah, David, Paul, who had reached Advanced Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God but who failed as a result of their involvement in the Interlocking System of Arrogance. To get into Reversionism the key or entry point is [Negative Volition to Bible Doctrine](#). This can interlock with the Interlocking System of Arrogance through [Negative Volition Arrogance](#) but outside of this Arrogance is NOT Reversionism. The Stages of Reversionism are related to Negative Volition to Bible Doctrine which is Apostasy while the Interlocking System of Arrogance is TRUE degeneracy. Immorality is NOT degeneracy but only a manifestation of degeneracy. Neither Moses, Elijah, David nor Paul died the Sin Unto Death from being in the Interlocking System of Arrogance although they did terrible things and received incredible Divine Discipline. Moses made an issue out of sin instead of Grace and therefore [Impulsive Arrogance](#) is the manner in which he entered the Interlocking System of Arrogance. Once in the Interlocking System of Arrogance the failure was total and his Divine Discipline was to be kept out of the land but he was NOT executed by the Justice of God under the Sin Unto Death principle. Elijah also entered the Interlocking System of Arrogance by Impulsive Arrogance with abuse of his authority and went immediately into [Criminal Arrogance](#) and executed the 450 prophets of Baal. Elijah had become a casualty not by being in Reversionism and though he was the greatest and most mature believer in the land one little shot of Arrogance destroyed him. David entered the complex with [Sexual Arrogance](#) and then went to [Conspiratorial Arrogance](#) and then to Criminal Arrogance when he ordered the execution by abandonment in battle of Uriah the Hittite. Paul entered through [Religious Arrogance](#) when he entered the temple to take a vow in order to witness to Jews and as a result was ALMOST killed by the Jews. These greatest of all great believers were not in Reversionism and all remained under Positive Volition to Bible Doctrine. Believers who remain in Reversionism without any effort for recovery always die the Sin Unto Death. They leave this world by the most horrible means and prior to that all go through warning, intensive and finally end their life with [Dying Divine Discipline](#). The Mature believer who enters the Interlocking System of Arrogance never goes out of this world dying in this manner. The mature believer can be under Positive Volition the whole time they are under the influence of the Interlocking System of Arrogance. The Interlocking System of Arrogance can distract them from Bible Doctrine and this can be very difficult for the believer but NONE of these great believers entered Reversionism. However, the Divine Discipline resulting from involvement in the Interlocking System of Arrogance is equal to reversionistic Divine Discipline except for the termination of life by the Sin Unto Death. The principles of blessing for the mature believer continue unless, as a result of staying in the Interlocking System of Arrogance, they also come under Negative Volition toward Bible Doctrine. At this point the Interlocking System of Arrogance and Reversionism become 2 spiritual diseases racing to destroy that person.

One spiritual victory on does not guarantee victory the next day in any other adverse or pressure situation. At the peak of service to the Lord and of spiritual advance the believer is most susceptible to his greatest failures. Being successful in one situation does not mean he will be victorious in his Spiritual Life the next minute. He can make one decision in the midst of great pressure and have spiritual victory and immediately go rapidly to total defeat the next minute. Satan is an incredible counter attack genius. It is not muscle which makes the Spiritual Life successful but focus, concentration and self discipline. One's ability to think and



function in his soul is what counts in the Spiritual Life much more than whatever physical ability he might have or not have. His mental status is what is most important and one can observe that in the physical realm even cowardice can motivate extra ordinary physical effort. Motivation, momentum and fulfillment of the Plan of God for one's life is the primary issue in the life of the believer. The issue is doctrinal motivation, perceptive momentum, leading to fulfillment of the Purpose and Plan of God for one's life. The believer can quickly move from success in the Spiritual Life to failure, from courage in his function to total cowardice when involved in the Interlocking System of Arrogance.

### **Interlocking System of Arrogance & Reversionism**

Some believers have problems in life and recognize them from Metabolized Bible Doctrine in their Stream of Consciousness of the Soul and use the Rebound Procedure and the other **Problem Solving Devices** to solve them. Other believers have problems and do not even recognize them. This occurs because they are involved in the **Arrogance Skills**. This leads to a retrogressing status in the Spiritual Life resulting from his consistent Negative Volition toward Bible Doctrine as the believer moves through the **Stages of Reversionism**.

The Interlocking System of Arrogance is NOT Reversionism BUT it can lead to or interlock with Reversionism. Reversionistic believers never see the big picture when a controversy exists and are always involved in Pettiness, **Jealousy**, implacability and vindictiveness as part of **Mental Attitude Arrogance** and thus no solution is acceptable to them. This is the tenacity of Reversionism. Reversionists are always ungrateful and their lack of **Gratitude** expresses itself in running roughshod over and bullying others. Therefore, anything one does for a reversionist will never be appreciated. It is in fact most often resented because Reversionism harbors Mental Attitude Arrogance and great resentment. The reversionist does not have the power for appreciation nor the capacity for love which are supposed to go together in the soul. With capacity for love one has appreciation for others and what they do for him. If one has no capacity, no matter what people do for him, there is no appreciation for it. This is what is observed in spoiled children. Children are not spoiled by giving them things but by NOT training and disciplining them in their childhood and by allowing them in childhood to manifest and express the **Pettiness** of their Mental Attitude Sins and by permitting these to go unchecked. Children are never spoiled by receiving things but by the development of Mental Attitude Arrogance Including resentment, pettiness and Jealousy. Arrogance invariably blinds believers and one must realize that the only hope for any child is Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of their Soul as a foundational resource for the soul. When a people are saturated with Arrogance and harbor Jealousy and one tries to help them, they react in Arrogance with Jealousy and Hate for the help which has been offered and then will try to destroy him. As a result of trying to constantly help or bail out the poor, downtrodden in the United States and in fact throughout the world, those in charge of this nation have aroused Jealousy, Hatred and total antagonism from the entire world and have inspired the people in this country to revolution because of socialism. This is the total depravity of Man. It is man's self determination which has placed him into this total depravity and condemnation as a result of the decisions of Adam and Eve in the garden. This complete depravity as a result of possession of an Old Sin Nature, causes man to be totally dependent on God for solutions.

Arrogance cannot ever see this truth and always wants to help God solve problems or thinks it can impress God with personal solutions. Humility is always what orients man to Grace. Man's total depravity and condemnation must be understood before man can understand the Wisdom of God.

Reversionism is clearly manifest in the ones who make the worst decisions imaginable always assuming that they have made the best decisions. Only Divine Discipline can bring them to retrospection of the relative importance of these decisions. They will suffer disasters for which they should take the full responsibility and which are specifically provided to awaken them. However, the society in the United States of America today is preventing the people from taking responsibility for these terrible decisions they make. Once a person makes a really bad decision, thinking it is a good decision, it is amazing how they stick with it tenaciously because it is reinforced by EVIL influence in their Stream of Consciousness of the Soul. When one reaches the reversionistic stage of [Black Out of the Soul](#) they are so filled with the false doctrines and principles of Evil that they are certain they have made right decisions when they have in fact made ghastly errors. Such a reversionist is never sensitive to Divine Discipline designed to awaken him to his loss of momentum and his Reversionism and, therefore, there is no reversion recovery. Arrogance is not NECESSARILY Reversionism but Reversionism always involves the Interlocking System of Arrogance. In Reversionism once the believer begins to make decisions, which are for the most part bad decisions, he cannot stop. The believer in Reversionism creates his own disaster step by step without any outside help. The judgments delivered to the reversionist are brought on by the nature of his Reversionism and the decisions he has made.

### **Arrogance and Modern Man**

Arrogant People lie and deceive, are conspiratorial, hide behind a facade of hypocrisy and think they are better than any other believer and thus try to discredit these others and this is a tragic character flaw. The issue for every believer IS his personal relationship with GOD or LACK of it and not where he stands with or in comparison to his peers. Peer pressure is never an issue for the advancing believer and to make it an issue is to become SELF conscious and totally Arrogant being inordinately preoccupied with self. Therefore the fallacy of "Peer Pressure" problems is that they are not problems from peers but PROBLEMS OF Arrogance. Therefore, it is the use of the [10 Problem Solving Devices](#) which removes, for the believer, all concern about peers. Therefore, being overly conscious of peers is to lose the concept that all human beings of all ages can be wonderful friends and wonderful people but to only stick with or strictly support one's peers is STUPIDITY.

As an example, the entrance into Arrogance by the modern man has distorted the concept of the labor union, the Guild, originally designed to IMPROVE quality of work, into a system of power and authority which they have no right to wield. These people are miserable and their greatest misery occurs for them on Monday and Friday the beginning and end of their work week and also is the days, in the auto industry, of completion of the worst car to buy. There is no integrity in the majority of these workers because their unions or the government protects them and they do not need to have integrity in doing their jobs. When labor, management,

government or a student body have no integrity the nation is in great trouble, and this has been the Status Quo of the United States of America for many decades. Therefore, happiness is not found in the functions of labor, management, government or student activity but those involved in all of these today seek happiness other functions or their social life. This demonstrates that social life today is lawless without honor, integrity and effective thought. When even this pales and fails to bring enjoyment these people start looking for stimulation in crime, violence and revolution. Thus these people become totally animalistic, and may be the person who lives next door and their 'fun' is found in hurting other people. (See the "Purge" series of films) The animalism in society today is everywhere because 'society' on a global perspective has relatively shrunk and anyone can see, hear and learn anything anytime because of the improper rise of technology.

### Characteristics of the Arrogant Person

People who have a lifestyle of Arrogance have a FLAWED character. Humility only comes to individuals through consistent residence in the Divine Dynasphere and as a result of consistent Perception, Cognition, Incultation, Metabolization and Application of Bible Doctrine as the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institution for unbelievers and the entire realm of Bible Doctrine for Believers. Arrogant conspirators use Arrogant STUPID DUPES, who can be found everywhere in any walk of life. For the believer, if he fails to humble himself under the powerful hand of God he will SLIP easily into the degeneracy of the Cosmic Dynaspheres the Interlocking System of Arrogance and the Interlocking System of Antagonistic Emotional Hatred.

Arrogant people lie and deceive, Arrogant people are conspiratorial, Arrogant Believers hide behind a facade of hypocrisy. They think they are better than other believers and try to discredit the others. They disregard the issue for every believer which is his personal relationship with GOD but put emphasis on where he stands with or in comparison to his peers. Involvement in Cosmic Dynasphere I by believers is tantamount to a life of spiritual death ([Eph 2:2](#)), but believers are not spiritually dead having made Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God and received a regenerated Human Spirit. Therefore this Lifestyle of the KOSMOS, a reference to Satan's Cosmic Dynaspheres, has 3 categories of Motivation for the unbeliever as a result of:

- ▲ Psychological Living
- ▲ Demon Possession
- ▲ Demon Influence

When residing within the Cosmic Dynaspheres the Christian can do any SLIMY thing any unbeliever can do and very often do it to a greater intensity and this is the majority of Christians today. Religious Legalism including Christian Legalism is a means of using Arrogance to subvert or recruit others into the devil's system of conspiracies and for any believer to become involved in [Conspiracy](#) the only thing necessary is to become involved in Arrogance.

Emphasis must be placed on the individual's VOLITION as the means of entrance into the Cosmic Dynaspheres and into carnality because the individual personally chooses to PULL the pin and activate the Arrogance grenade detonating the grenade in his own soul. ([Prov 16:18](#)). In Arrogance the believer pulls this pin and enters Arrogance and carnality but always tries to

blame others and avoid responsibility for these decisions. This results in the individual being obnoxious and impossible to tolerate all of his life. Tragically many Christians in a lifestyle of Arrogance ([Blind Arrogance](#)) do not even know it. About 90% of all Christians are [LOSER Believers](#) because of this 1 subject and they do not lose their eternal salvation but because they fail to execute the Protocol Plan of God they have a life of great misery. This is the lifestyle of the Christian in imitation of the unbeliever. ([Prov 11:2](#), [Prov 29:23](#)) The issue for the believer is making decisions from a position of weakness or position of strength to engage in a lifestyle of Arrogance or a lifestyle of Humility. A Lifestyle of Arrogance always emphasizes people and things over God finding something obnoxious in others making them the villains therefore always blaming others for one's own failures and one's self fragmented life. Many of the people who THINK they are humble are the most Arrogant of all and are very often considered spiritual giants by those surrounding them. The whole idea that one is better in any way than any others and has no failures in his life or character must be ERASED from one's thinking.

### Anti Establishment Acceptance in Arrogant People

When people become Arrogant there will be an overall acceptance of things in their society which are totally anti-establishment such as:

- ▲ Homosexuality and other deviant sexual involvement
- ▲ Live ins vs Marriage
- ▲ Accepting Welfare and other Government Subsidies
- ▲ Anti Military attitudes
- ▲ Anti Law Enforcement attitudes
- ▲ Anti Capital Punishment attitudes
- ▲ Anti Free Enterprise attitudes

In these situations the people who have authority become irresponsible and are intimidated by these groups which in the overall society generally represent less than 1% of the citizens. This is also a result of mass Arrogance.

### Arrogance vs Humility

Some of the dangers of the Interlocking System of Arrogance include [Pseudo Morality](#), [Self Righteousness](#) and Social Engineering, everything which has occurred in the United States of America from at least the 1960's to the present day. This is the result of children being reared and growing into adulthood without developing enforced humility and lacking any [Authority Orientation](#). This results in these people having the idea that they are owed a living and that no one has the right to "put them down" or criticize them for any reason.

Humility is a system of thinking and way of Life. As a system of thinking Humility is freedom from both subjective and objective Arrogance related to Christian degeneracy in Satan's Cosmic Dynasphere I, the Interlocking System of Arrogance. Humility is recognition of and submission to Authority, and for the believer this is the Word of God and it occurs as a result developing Capacity for [Reciprocal Love for God](#) as motivational virtue and therefore Happiness in Life from eventually [Sharing the Happiness of God](#). For the believer in The Lord Jesus, The Christ, Arrogance must be avoided at all costs. Primary motivation in the Spiritual Life must come

from the [Motivational Virtues](#) developed as part of consistent residence in the Divine Dynasphere. Reciprocal Love for God is based on the fact that in Eternity Past when God developed his Plan and decided to create and knew he would have to put man in it, he did so from his LOVE and provided everything that believers would need to succeed, therefore He loved mankind first and believers are to reciprocate that love when they have accumulated a maximum level of Metabolized Bible Doctrine into the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of their Soul. When one has reciprocal love for God he will avoid all the aspects of Arrogance, however, pseudo love for God not based in Metabolized Bible Doctrine becomes a system of [Religious Arrogance](#). There can be no motivation for advancement in the Spiritual Life when the believer is involved in Arrogance. All promotions for the believer in the Spiritual Life are the result of the consistent functions of Post-salvation Epistemological Rehabilitation which is the result of consistent Perception, Cognition, Inculcation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine. God always promotes based on Motivation and Motivational Virtue includes Reciprocal Love so without Reciprocal Love, [Metabolized Bible Doctrine](#) runs astray, is distorted and becomes legalism and the believer is therefore not qualified for promotion. Without Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul, Reciprocal Love becomes silliness and [Emotionalism](#). Reciprocal Love for God gives us the motivation to keep on plugging with Bible Doctrine and to allow it to build up in our souls for the glorification of God.

Humility must never be defined in terms of Legalism, Self Effacement, or any other form of Subjective Arrogance especially the [Arrogance Skills](#) nor any other Arrogant motivation in life. This includes [Unrealistic Expectation Arrogance](#), [Role Model Arrogance](#), [Iconoclastic Arrogance](#), [Self Righteous Arrogance](#), [Crusader Arrogance](#), or any other part of the Cosmic Dynasphere I, the Interlocking System of Arrogance. Arrogance is an old sin nature production not related to social status nor income whereas Humility is the capacity for life, awareness of things outside self and recognizing God's blessings as Grace while Arrogance is lack of these attitudes. For the believer loss of humility results in the loss of the ability to live life. Humility is in no way related to financial depravity or self deprecation. The Humility mandated in [James 4:10](#) is Christian Virtue not hypocrisy. [Poise](#) is a synonym for Humility and is the expression of Humility or Grace Dependence under Pressure. Humility orients everything in life to the Grace of God, while Arrogance orients everything in life to SELF. [Bitterness](#) is a terrible sin of Arrogance and involves the believer in a terrible system of Evil. Bitterness is not the right of anyone no matter how much they have been wronged and it is [Emotional Arrogance](#). NO ONE ever learns anything without humility since learning REQUIRES submission to authority. Humility is a mental attitude which recognizes that God has provided everything which one will ever need and therefore one does not have to compete with others nor does he have to criticize other people for his self advancement. Humility is the Road to Blessing and Grace while Arrogance is the Road to misery and destruction. Promotion comes from God for the one who functions with Humility and never from Arrogance and Humility comes only as a result of Volitional functions and no one can ever force humility into another's soul and his thinking.

The major distractions for the believer in the church age are the sins of and involvement with



the Arrogance and Emotion systems. The Person who has developed and deployed [Impersonal Love for Mankind](#) always functions in Humility and no one involved with Arrogance or under human self esteem has Impersonal Love for Mankind. ([James 4:6](#), [1Pet 5:5](#)) The desire and ability to concentrate on what another person is saying is a sign of Grace Humility and Arrogance never concentrates on what others say because Arrogance does not listen. Therefore, Humility is one of the major keys to the Spiritual Life. Humility is Authority Orientation, Grace Orientation, Bible Doctrine Orientation and functioning under the [Problem Solving Devices](#) with consistent residence in the [Divine Dynasphere](#), all combined and functioning together. Humility is the capacity for the accurate function of the Problem Solving Devices deployed on the Forward Line of Troops of the SOUL which cannot be accomplished under Arrogance. The more the believer advances in the spiritual life the more sophisticated and complex will be the experiences he has and he may misjudge the experience if he is not founded or based in humility. Arrogant preoccupation with self excludes reality by adopting [Maladaptive Defense Mechanisms](#) instead of learning and using the 10 Problem Solving Devices of the Protocol Plan of God.

### [Arrogance & Age](#)

When an older man threatens the function of the Local Church then the Pastor Teacher should simply have him removed. Between members of the congregation there should be deference for age when there is a small problem arising. When a younger person is free from [Blind Arrogance](#) he can easily appeal to the older person because of being a Grace oriented person. There is no reason for young and old people not to get along in the Local Church if they simply have some respect for each other. There must be recognition of the principle of Respect for Age. Young men as Pastor Teachers must have great wisdom in dealing with older men who are under their authority. One of the very important characteristics of leadership and proper use of authority is thoughtfulness to those under one's command and authority. [Humility](#) and [Grace Orientation](#) provide younger people with objectivity toward older members of a congregation. It is at best shocking and at worst angering for older people to be ridiculed or criticized by younger people. Younger people should never speak up and be disrespectful to older people even if they may be wrong since this is a matter of thoughtfulness and courtesy beyond the pseudo 'loving the brethren' attitude. At some time a conflict may arise with an older man for some innocuous reason but the younger man in this situation must simply let the matter go and defer to the older man. This is where Grace comes into play and where the believer becomes smarter about life and grows up. When older age comes to one, in his sunset years, he desires, and has a right to, his tranquility and, if every believer will think back and remember, youth by nature is NOT peaceful nor tranquil and therefore it is a Grace function to demonstrate peace and tranquility toward those in their sunset years.

Thoughtfulness and courtesy toward older men helps keep them concentrating on bible teaching in the sunset years of their lives. Young people full of [Ambition](#) and Arrogance often distort their own perceived importance into a system of bullying and abusing of older people in the congregation. Unless the older man is just a total jackass he is entitled to a certain amount of respect and veneration simply because of his advanced years. This emphasizes the importance of a young Pastor Teacher establishing his authority by correct bible teaching rather than by

becoming ‘rank’ focused. This also provides Grace emphasis since God has provided the authority for the Pastor Teacher under the Grace system of the Spiritual Gift and through his accumulation of Metabolized Bible Doctrine. No Pastor Teacher ever earns nor deserves the authority given him by God therefore he must use that authority in a Grace oriented manner. Since the authority of the Pastor Teacher is the only pure authority in the world of Satan it should be guarded by Grace functions rather than by embarking on ego trips and getting focused on one’s own self importance. In the case of contemporaries of age in the congregation, if they have avoided Blind Arrogance and acquired some Metabolized Bible Doctrine in their Stream of Consciousness of the Soul then they will respect the privacy and individuality of every member of the Royal Family of God at all times. They will respect them without regard for their age, younger or older, and without any interference with their life, not causing them any harm, worry or concern.

### **Arrogance & Humor**

A sense of humor and capacity for life always go together and only the Religious Legalist is totally devoid of a sense of humor. The Divine Viewpoint very often is overpowering therefore the advancing believer should accept it as reality often through the use of humor and use this escape valve to allow him to take God’s blessing by degrees so that it will not hit him all at once. This is the principle that God can do exceedingly beyond what we can ask or even imagine. A sense of humor and laughter as its expression is a safety valve for handling the awesome thoughts arising in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul as a result of the accumulation of Bible Doctrine. This humor of the believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God is totally free from Arrogance. He never laughs at the expense of someone else but most often at self and the believer who can laugh at himself today will NOT cry tomorrow when under pressure. This demonstrates the Relaxed Mental Attitude and capacity for life of the mature believer from maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.

### **Arrogance & Rejection of Truth**

There is encouragement in the Spiritual Life for those who use the mechanics of Spiritual Growth namely the 2 Power options, [4 Spiritual Skills](#), [10 Problem Solving Devices](#), to move toward the 4 Spiritual objectives. In the Spiritual Life the [Filling of God the Holy Spirit + Operation Z](#) (the Grace Apparatus for Perception) results in [Bible Doctrine Orientation](#) and development and deployment of all of the Problem Solving Devices onto the Forward Line of Troops of the soul. It is the Filling of God the Holy Spirit + Operation Z + Problem Solving Devices which result in the formation and use of the Spiritual Skills which oppose the [Arrogance Skills](#).

The person in [Reversionism](#) or in the Interlocking System of Arrogance who has rejected truth and believed the LIES of the Cosmic Dynaspheres is the one who takes pleasure in “wickedness”. There are 2 SYSTEMS of wrongdoing or unrighteousness for the people in the client nation to God, the Degeneracy of the Interlocking System of Arrogance and the Apostasy of Reversionism both which are involved in rejection of Absolute Truths. This is not the individual wrongdoing related to Sin, Crime or Human Good from influence by Evil but these

are SYSTEMS of wrongdoing. Once a person rejects Absolute Truth he can only believe the Cosmic Dynasphere LIES and thus enter into a system of wrongdoing.

Ignorance cannot exist in the Protocol Plan of God for the Church. It can, however, coexist with Arrogance as in Blind Arrogance, Strong Delusion, etc. Ignorance of Bible Doctrine evades the reality of The Divine Plan, Will and Purpose for the life of the believer. Without the reality of Metabolized Bible Doctrine circulating in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul the believer inevitably enters into the cycling of the Arrogance Skills by interlocking with Maladaptive Defense Mechanisms in Self Deception and the Lust functions of the Old Sin Nature. (John 4:9-14, 1st John 5:5) The portfolio of Irrevocable Invisible Assets provided for the believer by God at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God is designed for the support of his own individual spiritual life and no one can live that life for him. Only Metabolized Bible Doctrine in one's own Stream of Consciousness of the Soul can provide the Problem Solving Devices and only with the Problem Solving Devices on the Forward Line of Troops of the Soul can he deal with life's pressures.

When one becomes involved in Negative Volition toward Bible Doctrine as part of the Degeneracy which is Arrogance involvement he also most often then enters the Stages of Reversionism which is Apostasy. He moves through the stages of reversionism and eventually builds the first layer of Scar Tissue of the Soul and the more Negative Volition he expresses the more he layers Scar Tissue over and over on itself in the soul. This prevents the PERCEPTION stage of the Faith Rest Drill (5 Stages) from operating at all, which, as a result, prevents the other 4 stages of Faith Rest from even being able to be engaged. While this occurs the Arrogance factors are intensifying in his life. When he is in a state of prosperity he is operating under Self Righteous Arrogance and when in adversity under Self Pity and under certain adversities these combine to introduce Shame leading to Regret resulting in Guilt Complex functions. Unless the believer remains focused on Bible Doctrine he will fall into the trap of the Interlocking System of Arrogance and most likely also enter into Reversionism. When Bible Doctrine is taught in a sequential categorical fashion and the believer misses parts of the sequence in the studies then ultimately a point of doctrine will not be understood and UNBELIEF will be expressed at that point. Lack of understanding is honesty and between not understanding and not believing Arrogance SLIPS INTO THE PICTURE. When the believer says to any doctrinal point that he does not believe it then he has moved into the Interlocking System of Arrogance and WILL believe the next LIE which comes along. In the Angelic Conflict, Satan has been and must continue to be demonstrated to be wrong and his concepts and principles of function false. His fall is based on Arrogance and the Interlocking System of Arrogance is the foundation for his policy and strategy for ruling this world and is very much permeating this country today which is supposed to be a CLIENT NATION to God, serving God and preserving, protecting and disseminating His Word.

### Arrogance & Divorcement from Reality

Arrogance divorces the believer from 3 categories of reality:

- ▲ Personal
- ▲ Historical

## ▲ Spiritual

Regarding Personal Reality, being able to evaluate self is not a bad thing and upon reaching the status of Spiritual Self Esteem it is a very good thing for the believer to engage in. This is the proper use of the MIRROR of the soul developed from consistent accumulation of Metabolized Bible Doctrine to reflect on WHO and WHAT one really is. However when it is irritating that someone is prettier or smarter or stronger or receives more approbation from people, then there has been a loss of personal reality. This loss is the beginning of involvement in [Psychopathic Arrogance](#).

Regarding Historical Reality, as a result of MASS Arrogance in a people or nation where all must understand HISTORY and what it can teach about human events, the fact is that MOST people involved in Arrogance do not and cannot truly understand history at all. Most people do not even understand freedom and how this nation was founded and how its failures have been corrected and can be corrected even today. A total lack of Historical reality today in the United States of America has allowed the media and government bureaucracies with their plethora of Marxist reporters and non-public servants to influence and propagandize the people into believing false concepts. This is demonstrated by the widespread concern over the Russian invasion of Ukraine and their threats of Nuclear War in 2022. Every person in this country who is afraid of nuclear war and thinks that the United States can go to Russia or China and make treaties with them or sanction them economically, and that these nations will stop their aggressiveness, IS IN A STATE OF HISTORICAL UNREALITY. There will always be Hot WARS and Cold WARS as JESUS said until he returns and if people think they can have peace or control EVIL in other nations by disarmament or by using economic pressure they are TOTALLY divorced from reality HISTORICALLY. Historical reality is found in scripture when the bible refers to this type of situation with a reference to the “STRONG MAN IN THE HOUSE”. This is the nation who is prepared to defend itself with a strong military and law enforcement system under an effective and HONORABLE judicial system. The system of taxation and function of the IRS in the United States is an affront to Freedom and is again Historical Unreality. Socialism is the greatest area of Historical Unreality in the world today and a clear and absolute function of EVIL. The only people in Russia, China, North Korea and Cuba or any communist nation or Islamic Nation who are happy are those who are in power and can do anything they want to do. Therefore the people in the United States of America, especially today, are saturated with historical unreality as they constantly push for more and more socialism. They do not understand that between socialism and communism the only difference is HOW those in control exercise their control, and communism uses VIOLENCE whereas socialism does not.

Regarding Spiritual Reality, there is total divorcement from the reality of the Spiritual Life of Christianity when the believer becomes a loser involved in the Cosmic Dynaspheres. True spiritual reality only comes to the believer in his execution of the Protocol Plan of God. The believer who is able to analyze his own life and recognize Arrogance and recover from it using the [Rebound Procedure](#) is the believer who has grown up spiritually with knowledge of Grace and The Lord Jesus, The Christ. This spiritual reality will balance out and realign the other 2

areas of unreality in that believer's life.

### **Arrogance and Application of Bible Doctrine**

Bible Doctrine is designed to keep the believer sane and give [Spiritual Common Sense](#) and orient the believer constantly to reality. Louis Talbot had one weakness as a Pastor Teacher, that was to allow the NUT BALLS, the mentally unstable, to run loose in his church but he was a good bible teacher. The teaching of Bible Doctrine does help idiots and unstable people but it is foremost designed to bring the believer around to the reality of the [Angelic Conflict](#). If a believer cannot come to recognize the reality of Bible Doctrine and quit trying to engage in the Arrogance of teaching the teachers of doctrine, when pressure occurs in his life, as it inevitably will, he will simply FALL APART emotionally and psychologically. This is basically because of his entanglement in the Interlocking System of Arrogance. In the Christian life the advancing positive believer will come into contact with these kinds of people and when he does he must recognize that he is faced with a very WEAK person who is saturated with Arrogance.

Metabolized Bible Doctrine, (gr) "Epignosis" doctrine, must not be allowed to remain as academic knowledge, (gr) "Gnosis", in the Left Lobe of the Soul but must be transferred by FAITH into the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul by means of the [Grace Apparatus for Perception](#). Bible Doctrine which remains in the Left Lobe and is not transferred as Epignosis to the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul because the individual rejects the authority of the doctrine and / or the right Pastor Teacher is USELESS to him. In addition these believers often get their focus on people, their attributes or actions, instead of the Bible Doctrine. As a result they do not have the Faith based Positive Volition nor the Filling of God the Holy Spirit to make the transfer of Gnosis to Epignosis for advance in the Spiritual Life with consistent spiritual growth. With unmetabolized Bible Doctrine in the Left Lobe the believer is not prepared for any conflict or adversity in life since this doctrine cannot be applied to situations of life. Bible Doctrine must be transferred to the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul through Faith Acceptance under Positive Volition and the Filling of God the Holy Spirit. Arrogance or Negative Volition will keep Bible Doctrine in the Left Lobe or completely out of the soul and this believer will easily be defeated by his own Old Sin Nature. With Bible Doctrine retained ONLY in the Left Lobe of the soul, he can become neurotic, Arrogant and blasphemous toward God eventuating in consistent and persistent suffering in his life and then dying the [Sin Unto Death](#) by committing suicide or as a result of some other horrendous means of dying.

One of the greatest solutions to the problems of life is to understand and have the Doctrine of Logistical Grace embedded as an Epignosis doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul and have the ability to apply it to experience. Having this potential, as all believers do, and failing to use it in reverse concentration because of known or unknown Arrogance is one of the greatest failings of believers. Arrogance is most likely the basis for most if not all sin and it is almost a synonym for the Old Sin Nature. This along with the fact that Arrogance destroys the potential, courage, talent and ability, both human and spiritual, of all people involved in it, should instill within every believer the desire to know as much as possible about Arrogance in order to avoid it. Because the average believer does not really understand how to even define



Arrogance there is almost a universal involvement by Christians in Arrogance which demonstrates that this a truly tragic time to be living in. Facts are always distorted by Arrogance when there is preoccupation with disaster. This is demonstrated by the universal FEAR involved with the Wuhan Virus debacle of 2019 which is STILL ongoing today and which has been added to with the threats of a new “avian virus”. Distraction results from a lack of concentration and a lack of concentration inevitably results in cowardice because cowardice is absence of thought under pressure. In contrast, courage for the believer is the ability to think under pressure using reverse concentration based on Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul. However, reverse concentration malfunctions as a result of all aspects of Arrogance especially self pity, self righteousness and selfcenteredness and therefore must be avoided at all costs.

**Guilt Complex** Arrogant Reaction is the basis for the liberal trying so hard to produce world peace and help the “downtrodden” in society. In considering Arrogance one must come to the conclusion that all members of the Human Race live life in 1 of 2 places, either in the Cosmic Dynaspheres, the Interlocking System of Arrogance or Interlocking System of Antagonistic Emotional Hatred or outside of it. If one is outside of Cosmic Dynasphere I, the Interlocking System of Arrogance he is out because of at least 1 if not all of these reasons:

- ▲ Organizational Humility
- ▲ Enforced Humility
- ▲ Genuine Humility

Enforced and Genuine Humility are developed in the **Authority Envelope** of the Divine Dynasphere and are the only means of the initial development of the foundation of Virtue which occurs when a person responds to authority and tries to do a good job even and especially when the authority is unfair. This is the visible demonstration of the influence of invisible Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the soul. This occurs for the believer with Positive Volition toward Bible Doctrine and for the unbeliever who functions under the doctrinal principles of the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions.

### **Categories of Failure of Bible Doctrine Application**

With regard to the application of Bible Doctrine to experience in life, the Categories of Failure usually come from the negative side and involve the Interlocking System of Arrogance and Interlocking System of Antagonistic Emotional Hatred and total Problem Solving Incompetence. There are 6 Principles of Failure in application of doctrine to life:

- ▲ Application without Truth is FALSE
- ▲ Application without Fact is FOLLY
- ▲ Application from Emotion is IRRATIONALITY
- ▲ Application from Arrogance is DISTORTION
- ▲ Application without Doctrine is DEGENERATION to the status of loser believer
- ▲ Application without Virtue is total Arrogance

Return to the **[Table of Contents](#)**



## Introduction to Motivational Arrogance

All functions in life, with only the exception of motor reflex actions, especially those in the Spiritual Life whether one resides in the Divine Dynasphere, the Power System of God, and or the Cosmic Dynaspheres, the Power System of Satan, begin with thinking. When considering failure in the Spiritual Life one must recognize that EVERY failure begins with thinking and making a decision which results in failure. Also, therefore, every success in the Spiritual Life must also begin with thinking. Success in the Spiritual Life begins with thinking in terms of Humility as basic virtue which builds and develops from the consistent Perception, Cognition, Incultation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine into more Advanced Virtue. Advanced Virtue in the Spiritual Life can be divided into 2 categories, Motivational Virtue and Functional Virtue where the Motivational Virtue is the THINKING processes directed toward GOD producing motivation which results in the FUNCTION of proper behavior and production in the Power System of God directed toward Mankind. Therefore, failures in the Spiritual Life, which means there is residence of this believer in the Cosmic Dynaspheres, also begins with Arrogance as Motivational Arrogance, the THINKING which drives the person to engage in production under Functional Arrogance. In this way, entering the Cosmic Dynaspheres by means of Mental Attitude Arrogance as Motivational Arrogance, one becomes hopelessly entangled in Functioning within the Arrogance Complex and then producing Human Good from his own efforts. For the believer this is the production in his life which is totally repugnant to God and totally devoid of all Spiritual value and which will be destroyed during his Evaluation for this Church Age at the Judgment Seat of Jesus Christ. Therefore, Motivational Arrogance is the THINKING which moves the believer OUT of the Plan of God and into the Plan of Satan and is basically every category imaginable of Mental Attitude Arrogance with all the Mental Attitude Sin.

Motivational Degeneracy or Motivational Arrogance is what one thinks while Functional Degeneracy or Functional Arrogance is what one does! Motivational Arrogance or Motivational Degeneracy is thinking derived from the principles and policies of Evil as is Functional Arrogance or Functional Degeneracy derived from the production aspects Evil as Human Good. Mental Attitude Arrogance with its Mental Attitude Sins is the primary source of this Motivational Degeneracy. Therefore, Motivational Degeneracy is initiated in the believer by some level of Negative Volition toward God, His Grace, Bible Doctrine and The Lord Jesus, The Christ. From this come the fragments of the Arrogance Grenade blowing into one's life, involving all the gates of the Interlocking System of Arrogance which can be considered Functional or Operational Degeneracy from Evil. Arrogance being the demonization of the Soul of the Believer, a system of thought which is abnormal, is in contrast to thinking as a system coming from Ego as a normal function in life. It is a basic system of failure and sin and is from Motivational Degeneracy as Mental Attitude Arrogance and Mental Attitude Sins derived from Evil which inevitably push the believer deeper into the Cosmic Dynaspheres. There are 2 systems of EVIL developed in the both of the Cosmic Dynaspheres:

- ▲ Motivational Degeneracy from functioning in Cosmic Dynasphere I under some aspect of Mental Attitude Arrogance and also in the enhancement of various levels of Mental Attitude Arrogance when this Arrogance is converted to Antagonistic Emotional Hatred in Cosmic Dynasphere II.
- ▲ Functional Degeneracy from functioning in the production or operational areas of both

the Interlocking System of Arrogance and the Interlocking System of Antagonistic Emotional Hatred in the production of Human Good.

Motivational Degeneracy derived from Evil can be likened to a fragmentation grenade with a myriad of Fragments. Mental Attitude Arrogance and all Mental Attitude Sins are fragments of the Arrogance Grenade and there should be considered also an Antagonism Grenade involving all Mental Attitude Sins of Antagonistic Emotional Hatred. Involvement in Mental Attitude Sins such as hatred are not only sins but an abnormal mental function under Arrogance or Antagonism. “I Hate You” means one has attached to self an importance which he has no right to have. Self Pity is another area and exemplifies the preoccupation with self which is the Modus Operandi of Cosmic Dynasphere I.

Therefore, the saturation of the LIE from Evil in the soul of the believer basically results in total entanglement into the Cosmic Dynaspheres. Therefore, Motivational Degeneracy, Motivational Arrogance from Evil drives the believer into an Operational or Functional Modus Vivendi which is Functional Arrogance or Functional Degeneracy of Cosmic Dynasphere I or the Functional Antagonism of Cosmic Dynasphere II. Therefore, for the believer, failure in the development of Functional Virtue in coordination with Motivational Virtue in the Divine Dynasphere results in Functional Degeneracy being developed as a result of Motivational Degeneracy from functioning consistently under the Mental Attitude Arrogance of Motivational Arrogance. ([1John 2:15-16](#)) Therefore, Arrogance as basic Motivation in human life is the foundation for the production of all categories of sin and human good as the result of the overwhelming influence of EVIL. It therefore involves both moral and immoral degeneracy.

Motivational Arrogance includes pride, jealousy, bitterness, hatred, vindictiveness, implacability, revenge motivation, self-pity, guilt reaction, and operation overthink, resentment, self-righteousness, hypersensitivity, guilt reaction, selfcenteredness, egotism, self-conceit, anything that is related to preoccupation with self to the point of abnormality. This Motivating Evil is thought directed primarily toward self which combines to form in the soul a total subjectivity. Therefore, Motivational Arrogance is the believer being entangled by his own volition and improper mental attitude; and the divine command is to now get out of it! As a result of involvement in Mental Attitude Arrogance with its mental attitude sins, believers inevitably get the wrong perspective on life. It is the perpetuation of the Mental Attitude Arrogance and Mental Attitude Sins over generations which is the most destructive factor in a national entity.

All Arrogance starts with thinking, moves into motivation, and from there moves into decisions resulting in actions. By definition, Motivational Arrogance is a complex of mental attitudes and sins, all of which are related to Arrogance or have their foundation in the basic concepts of Mental Attitude Arrogance. As an illustration, Pride (often the only thing considered when thinking of or discussing Arrogance) is defined as inordinate self-esteem, unreasonable conceit, preoccupation with self, insolence, rejection of authority, vanity, self-justification, an inflated concept of self, and the exaggeration of one's own self-importance. Vanity, pride, along with conceit was the original sin of the greatest genius creature of all time: Satan, Lucifer the Son of the Morning. [Is 14:12-14](#) and [Ez 28:14-17](#) reveal Satan's vanity of thought in his fall.

Therefore, it is Arrogance which is the original sin of the prehistoric angelic conflict, and became the MOTIVATION for the woman's original sin in the garden. This was the Arrogance which is the Motivational stimulation of a believer's lust for ascendancy in life which destroys right priorities of the Christian way of life and replaces them with a false Scale of Values and false Norms and Standards which bring false goals into his life. The Arrogant emphasis of a lust for power, drives toward Conspiracy, Revenge, Revolution, etc., from the motivation of Jealousy or Bitterness. This becomes a tragic flaw which neutralizes the beauty, genius, ability, and potential of anyone so involved.

I have again attempted the impossible in trying to separate the parts of the Interlocking System of Arrogance into the 2 major categories of Motivational Arrogance and Functional Arrogance. It is obvious that every aspect of production or function in life requires some level of THOUGHT to begin to engage in it. Remember that this is a study of the **INTERLOCKING** System of Arrogance and it cannot truly be separated or segmented BECAUSE it is constantly interlocking and interacting with many other categories of Arrogance once involvement is achieved. Consider a type of Arrogance such as REVENGE. This MUST have motivation generally from Jealousy or Hypersensitivity Arrogance which are part of Mental Attitude Arrogance but one is often said to have Revenge Motivation but in fact that would be referring back to another category of Mental Attitude Arrogance or Mental Attitude Sins as the Motivational Arrogance. Therefore, this Volume I concerning Motivational Arrogance is an attempt to put together the types of Arrogance which involved Mental Attitude Arrogance and Mental Attitude Sins as MOTIVATION in Cosmic Dynasphere I, separated from the activities involved in the Production under Functional Arrogance.

Return to the [Table of Contents](#)

### **Gate #1 – Angelic Arrogance**

Satan's mechanism of control in ruling this world is a system developed by his genius derived from his own personal failure in ARROGANCE. The system is EVIL and its operational categories are Cosmic Dynasphere I, the Interlocking System of Arrogance and Cosmic Dynasphere II, the Interlocking System of Antagonistic Emotional Hatred. Too much importance cannot be attached to the truth that Lucifer's first sin resulting from his Arrogance of Pride was a willful ambition against or in competition with God, from which he ultimately proposed the Cosmic Dynasphere systems for this world after God granted his appeal at the Angelic Conflict Trial. This is the norm or pattern of all functions and operations of life in this world since the fall of Adam and assumption of rulership of this world by Satan. All human beings, acting independently, who are not concerned to fulfill the divine purpose for them, are re-enacting this same sin complex, and their destiny is that of Satan and his fallen angels ([Rev 20:10-15](#)), unless they come under the saving grace of God.

This "Angelic Arrogance", although it is not a type of arrogance the individual human can become involved in, is in fact where arrogance had its beginning and is a pattern for all



defined human function in this world since it is now ruled by Satan. Angelic Arrogance began with the thinking of Lucifer with the negative volition of Lucifer toward the Plan of God creating a vacuum in his Arrogant being, and thereby the delusion of Evil was developed in his soul as a plan to rule in place of God. In this same manner, demon possession never occurs in any unbeliever before delusion possession occurs based on one's volitional choices. Therefore, Satan's thinking and policy of Evil is or results in STRONG DELUSION. ([Is 14:12-14](#))

Up to the point of Satan's Arrogance the angelic population had never had to face the Justice of God nor the Righteousness of God. Their primary point of contact had always been the Love of God. Therefore, after his fall, trial and condemnation, Satan's appeal of God's judgment on him and fallen angels focused on the Love of God being his point of contact until he had opposed God. In his arrogance SATAN refused to take the responsibility for taking himself out from under the Love of God and forcing the Righteousness of God and Justice of God to deal with him because of his revolution. Also, in his arrogance, Satan's appeal impugned the character of God saying that God could not be God if he placed all of the rebellious angels into the Lake of Fire. He inferred by this that to execute this discipline God would have to overlook his LOVE. However, if God had acquiesced to this contention it would require God to overlook the Justice of God and Righteousness of God as his own protective attributes. This would require God to place his Love above these other aspects of his essence. Neither Human nor Angelic creation in fact not even GOD can ever change his Essence or Character, not even the Love of God because of anything any creature can do or DOES NOT do. The Essence of God is the unchangeable and totally integrated Whole of God so that the Love of God is intricately and irreversibly interwoven with the Immutability, Eternity, Veracity, Righteousness, Justice and all other aspects of the Character of God. It is the Quintessence of ARROGANCE for any creature to assume that anything any creature can do can change the Love of God. This was the ultimate failing of Lucifer. For the believer, being good, honorable, virtuous, etc., does not get the Love of God to bless him. Being Bad, Sinful, Evil, etc., does not get the Love of God to curse him. God Blesses and Curses man based on the requirements of the Righteousness of God and execution by the Justice of God MOTIVATED by the Love of God as expressed through his POLICY for Humanity in History called GRACE. In other words one's failures cannot diminish the Love God has for him nor can his successes increase the Love God has for him. The Love of God for the believer is constant and God has established a policy under which he is to function in order to develop the capacity for his potential blessings from God. If the believer follows the policy and procedures of God's plan and advances in the Spiritual Life and the plan then he receives increased blessing motivated from the Love of God, approved by the Righteousness of God, provided through the Justice of God, according to the Grace Policy and Plan of God. If the believer rejects God's policy and procedures and reverts to a status similar to the unbeliever in his Spiritual Life functioning under the Plan of Satan, EVIL, then he receives increased discipline or punishment motivated from the Love of God, approved by the Righteousness of God, provided through the Justice of God according to the GRACE policy of God, as a result of his functioning OUTSIDE OF THE POLICY and PLAN OF GOD. A prime example of this function of the Love of God is that for all believers God is **REQUIRED** to provide blessing motivated by His Love according to the approval of His Righteousness and through His Justice in the form of [Logistical Grace](#) support

for life in time NO MATTER what the believer may think, say or do, good or bad, honorable, Arrogant or antagonistic. This is the **OBLIGATION** of God to take care of his family in this world ruled by Satan under the policy and plan of EVIL.

The profile of Satan, the Devil, shows us that he was one of the highest (not THE highest) of all angelic creatures and became the ruler of all fallen angels. He is a prehistoric super creature and one of the greatest creatures ever to be created by God. He has 3 falls or ultimate failures. (**Is 14, Ez 28, Rev 12, 20**) His first fall occurred before man leading to the Angelic Conflict and the creation of man. Ultimately, his final fall is at the end of Human History when he is placed into the Lake of Fire for all eternity. He has 2 advents to the Human Race. The first in Genesis 3 where he came to tempt the Human Race and the 2<sup>nd</sup> is his return to lead the final revolution of all of history, the Gog – Magog revolution. His original fall was based in Arrogance initiated through Pride, the original sin of all creation, and while he used arrogance as pride to appeal to the woman, the real appeal to the woman was opposition to the very basis of authority set up for the human race in marriage between the man and woman where the man is the authority in marriage. Therefore, inside the Interlocking System of Arrogance, as Motivational Arrogance, is the first sin committed by any creature, Satan's original sin of Pride. The first sin committed by a human creature was Rejection of Authority or Disobedience. Both are a result of ARROGANCE.

It was in fact the Original Arrogance of Satan which began the whole problem of arrogance in the Human Race. As a result of Satan taking rulership of the earth from Adam at his fall, arrogance became a part of the failing of the Human Race being an integral foundational part of the plan and policy of Satan to rule mankind called EVIL and GOOD. Thus, Angelic Arrogance (**Ez 28:14-17**) is the origin of all arrogance, both angelic and human since it is the policy of Satan in ruling this world which has insinuated arrogance into mankind. God in his GRACE PLAN offers to mankind something FREE which has no price, requires no payment of any kind and absolutely no effort on the part of man. This is the gospel of The Lord Jesus, The Christ, which is a manifestation of the PERFECT POWER of God. Satan, in his incredible Arrogance, has opposed such omniscient genius with EVIL, the accumulation of satanic Arrogance, which is found in both angels and man and rejects the gospel which God has provided free. Since the Gospel is Doctrine it is totally and completely opposed by Evil.

Because this world is under the rulership and Power System of Satan, from physical birth until physical death, man is inundated with the propaganda of Arrogance. Therefore, from birth ALL people are Arrogant since all people have an Old Sin Nature as a result of Adam's Fall in the garden and all people are constantly trained to be more arrogant. Arrogance is the most basic and common function of the Old Sin Nature. People can express Arrogant Pride of their own pseudo humility and can even be functioning under true humility for great periods of time but inevitably arrogance pops up in them at some time. This is clearly illustrated by the person who had the record for the greatest humility, MOSES, the most humble person in history but in Arrogance he did not follow the command of God and instead of speaking to the Rock for

Water for the People he STRUCK it a 2<sup>nd</sup> time with his staff. He was so aggravated by the people that he made an issue of SIN instead of GRACE. As a result MOSES was not permitted to enter the land with the Jews.

### **Angelic Arrogance and EVIL**

There is Evil influence constantly directed toward all humanity and it is from false doctrine which is both derived from Evil and is true insanity. ([Eccl 9:3](#)) Grace and Bible Doctrine represent the Omniscient genius of God in relationship to the Human Race whereas EVIL and its false doctrine represent the genius of Satan in relationship to the Human Race. Evil causes a distortion of Bible Doctrine, the Laws of Divine Establishment and the Divine Institutions all which came into being long before Evil. Evil as principles and policies comes in many forms including Religion, Legalism, Reversionism, Socialism, Political Internationalism, Brotherly Love, Social Security, Welfare, Governmental abuse of power, Government Interference with industry, Government curtailing the military, Government legislating against firearms, Government catering to ‘minorities’ which under the American constitution DO NOT EXIST. Over all else, attempts to abolish the problems of this world apart from God, Bible Doctrine, the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions is EVIL. This includes all systems of Christian function outside of the Local Church including denominations, service groups, etc. Therefore, the worst thing which can happen to any believer is to be under the influence of Evil from any source and thereby become subordinated to the EVIL plan and policy of Satan.

Return to the [Table of Contents](#)

### **Gate #2 – The Arrogance of Negative Volition**

Negative Volition toward Bible Doctrine, God, The Lord Jesus the Christ and Grace always result in entrance into some aspect of the cosmic systems of Satan. Negative Volition Arrogance begins as indifference, neglect or overt rejection of Bible Doctrine. This puts the believer instantly into the Interlocking System of Arrogance and begins his demise as he inevitably falls down through the levels of [Reversionism](#). Only after he reacts to any challenges to his function in arrogance does the believer convert his indifferent Negative Volition into Antagonistic Negative Volition and enter into the Interlocking System of Antagonistic Emotional Hatred. With this involvement in Cosmic Dynasphere II, ALL aspects of Arrogance now become antagonistic toward Bible Doctrine, God and his Grace Plan. Negative Volition occurs in 3 areas of the Cosmic Systems of Satan:

- ▲ Indifferent Negative Volition toward some aspect of Bible Doctrine
- ▲ Simultaneous Entrance through Negative Volition into the 8 stages of Reversionism
  - This begins as indifference or rejection putting the believer into the Interlocking System of Arrogance
  - This becomes more intensified when arrogance is challenged and the believer has erased Metabolized Bible Doctrine from his own soul having reached the later stages of Black Out of the Soul and Scar Tissue of the Soul in Reversionism.

▲ Antagonistic Negative Volition entering him into the Interlocking System of Antagonistic Emotional Hatred

- Every aspect of Arrogance is intensified as an antagonism toward God, Bible Doctrine, and his Grace Plan.

The key to function and advancement in the Christian Way of Life is the accumulation of maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine into the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul. Therefore, one of the biggest problems in the Christian Way of Life is the believer thinking that he does not have time for Bible Doctrine for whatever reason, thus not being consistent in Perception, Cognition, Incultation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine, not making it Priority #1 in his life.

Therefore, the most obvious and simple way to enter the Cosmic Systems of Satan including the Interlocking System of Arrogance is some level of the rejection of Absolute Truth. Inevitably, Negative Volition toward TRUTH opens a vacuum in the soul for information so that the LIE from EVIL comes through and saturates the structures and modifies the content of the soul. In addition, consistently hearing TRUTH, no matter how it is presented, and constantly rejecting it also results in entrance into [Reversionism](#) and progression down through the stages into the realm of Black Out of the Soul and Scar Tissue of the Soul where only FALSE Doctrine or the LIE from the Cosmic Dynaspheres can be absorbed and believed. When there is a saturation of the soul of the individual with the LIE from EVIL and this receives opposition from the TRUTH, this results in entrance into Cosmic Dynasphere II the Interlocking System of Antagonistic Emotional Hatred. When this believer consistently rejects Truth, though he may know nothing about anything, he becomes very combative, irritated and argumentative about the Truth when his belief in the LIE is challenged. He looks for any excuse to Argue down what he does not like and becomes obsessed with himself having made self the umpire to determine the validity of any Truth or Fallacy in life. This is the TROUBLE MAKER found in life because one cannot reject truth without becoming deeply involved in [Mental Attitude Arrogance](#) and Mental Attitude Sins. Therefore, it takes some aspect and level of Negative Volition Arrogance and initial [Motivational Arrogance](#) to become involved in Mental Attitude Arrogance or any other aspect of [Functional Arrogance](#). Then, when Negative Volition Arrogance or any other aspect of Arrogance in this believer is challenged by TRUTH in any form and he REACTS to this challenge, he then becomes ANTAGONISTIC in his Negative Volition toward ALL TRUTH. Then any aspect of his arrogance involvement now blends from indifference into antagonism with its focus on TRUTH as Bible Doctrine, God, The Lord Jesus, The Christ, and the GRACE Plan of God.

Therefore, Negative Volition Arrogance is the first and easiest way to enter Cosmic Dynasphere I, the Interlocking System of Arrogance and Reversionism. Therefore, the importance of understanding Bible Doctrine cannot be emphasized enough and sticking with the consistent Perception, Cognition, Incultation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine even when the believer reaches Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God because he MUST NEVER EVER neglect doctrine. Once the believer neglects Bible Doctrine in Spiritual Maturity he will slip instantly into the Interlocking System of Arrogance and once in this system he will parlay the inevitable influence from the principles of EVIL into Sin, Crime or Human Good. Once personal sin is

derived from a system of EVIL not only does he receive Divine Discipline for putting himself outside of the Plan of God, but so do all those closely associated with him and those who are loved ones in family, because this Divine Discipline for Negative Volition toward Bible Doctrine goes down for generations. This system is from the Justice of God because the believer proclaiming that he is Loving God is not enough to restrain the Interlocking System of Arrogance in his life and he obviously cannot love what one does not KNOW. It is integrity which restrains the Arrogance and the mature believer can be under Occupation with the Person of The Lord Jesus, The Christ and still let him down by falling into the Arrogance system as a result of Negative Volition as neglect of Bible Doctrine intake. At Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God the believer receive ½ of the Integrity of God as the imputed Righteousness of God. From that point it is his responsibility throughout his life as a believer to accumulate the other ½ of the Integrity of God the Justice of God. This can only occur as a result of consistent Perception, Cognition, Incultation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine which is the thinking or mind of Christ. ([1Cor 2:16](#))

The underlying principle is that one cannot apply Bible Doctrine that he has not learned because if he has not learned it he cannot remember it and therefore cannot apply it. If a believer has no [Authority Orientation](#) there will be a lack of the ability to concentrate under pressure. Failure to concentrate and recall Bible Doctrine under pressure infers that the believer failed to learn the Bible Doctrine as a result of lack of concentration while it was being taught. Application of Bible Doctrine under pressure demands the same concentration under the [Filling of God the Holy Spirit](#) as was used to assimilate that Bible Doctrine. Failure of recall of Doctrine implies alternatively that there is a malfunction under the [Faith Rest Drill \(5 stages\)](#) because of involvement in the Interlocking System of Arrogance or [Reversionism](#). It is the Interlocking System of Arrogance which makes the greatest contribution to malfunction of the Faith Rest Drill and malfunction in the later stages of the Faith Rest Drill (5 Stages) most often results when ignorance of Bible Doctrine exists.

Negative Volition Arrogance most often begins as a subtle involvement in Arrogance where the believer becomes preoccupied with himself and hedonistic seeking personal happiness above all bible doctrine standards. He begins to rationalize anything in life before Bible Doctrine but he is not antagonistic toward Bible Doctrine or God but consistently NEGLECTS the intake of Bible Doctrine when it is available. The key and reality of the Christian Way of Life is that Bible Doctrine must be so important to the believer that he never lets a day go by without the refreshment and challenge which comes from the intake of the Word of God. In order to be able to consistently think in terms of Truth the believer must be exposed to TRUTH every day of his life because living in this world ruled by Satan since the fall of Adam, he is constantly exposed to the LIES of the Cosmic Dynaspheres. There is a very subtle function within the Interlocking System of Arrogance which allows the believer who neglects or rejects Bible Doctrine to slip quietly into the thinking of Human Viewpoint derived from EVIL.

Therefore, the major problem in the Spiritual Life is that at some point believers begin to reject or resist Bible Doctrine teaching and therefore they ultimately begin to build up a [Black out of the Soul](#) which results in [Scar Tissue of the Soul](#) from prolonged involvement with the stages of



Reversionism. When Scar Tissue of the Soul is developed as the result of some level of Negative Volition toward the Truth it immediately ignites Arrogance. The first layer of Scar Tissue of the Soul occurs when the believer still understands the Bible Doctrine in view but they reject it. Each succeeding rejection of Bible Doctrine pulls them further into [Reversionism](#) and develops greater Black out of the Soul and additional Scar Tissue of the Soul. Ultimately the Scar Tissue of the Soul becomes so dense that Bible Doctrine cannot reach the Left Lobe of the Soul from the transfer by God the Holy Spirit of it from the Human Spirit. Since Bible Doctrine never gets to the Left Lobe of the Soul where it is understood clearly it cannot ever be involved with FAITH Perception and become metabolized into the Right Lobe of the Soul. The result is that the believer can only assimilate and believe the LIE of the plan and polity of Satan, EVIL. This ultimately produces slavery to the circumstances of Life. This is how liberalism is born and how people become divorced from reality and during this time there is a constant build up of Arrogance as they say no to Bible Doctrine or Truth in any category. This intensifies the Arrogance factors and it manifests as:

- ✧ [Self Righteousness](#) in prosperity.
- ✧ [Self Pity](#) in adversity or under pressure.
- ✧ A combination of these to form a [Guilt Complex](#).

This build up of Arrogance does very strange things to people and results in total divorcement from reality especially in the spiritual realm. The point is that what one rejects in prosperity he distorts in adversity. Those who reject Bible Doctrine from Negative Volition Arrogance or Entrance into [Reversionism](#), which is where the Interlocking System of Arrogance can merge into Reversionism and when it is strong enough provides entrance into the Interlocking System of Antagonistic Emotional Hatred, always believe the LIE from EVIL under pressure. When pressure comes from testing, especially dealing with [Logistical Grace](#), the reaction to this pressure is manifest as Self Pity. When the pressure is off and prosperity returns then the reaction to this prosperity pressure causes Arrogance to manifest itself in Self Righteousness. In oscillation between Self Pity and Self Righteousness there develops an incredibly unstable situation as far as one's Christian Life is concerned. It is by this means that the greatest failures which can come to the believer under Negative Volition to Bible Doctrine in [Y Radical](#) result in taking him into the 8 stages of Reversionism. ([2Thes 2:11-12](#)) This ultimately leads him to the [Sin Unto Death](#) or dying Divine Discipline. This was Pharaoh Amenhotep of the Exodus generation and will also be the Dictator of the Revived Roman Empire. He will have lived in an area where the gospel and Bible Doctrine will be taught in the Church Age in the last gentile client nation and will have heard and then rejected ALL levels of Absolute Truth. Rejection of Bible Doctrine in normal times results in believing the LIE from EVIL in times of adversity, catastrophe and disaster. The believer must have enough [Metabolized Bible Doctrine](#) in the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul in order to avoid the [Fear Panic Ploy](#) so he can think and get back to the [Faith Rest Drill \(5 stages\)](#). He must take the Bible Doctrine he has been taught in the past and through reverse concentration apply it to what is actually happening in order to resolve any problems or difficulties he may be experiencing. When under the Fear Panic Ploy doctrine learned is of no use to believers because they are operating under malfunctions of the Faith Rest Drill (5 stages).

There must be consistent desire and motivation to learn and understand the Word of God and the believer must be persistent and consistent in his drive to do so, this is what is called Positive Volition. People in Arrogance don't want to understand and they reject Bible Doctrine because they don't or cannot understand it and such people can be said to be living their life in a deep sleep. They become entrapped in the [Equation of Despair](#). The more Absolute Truth is taught and the more these people reject it the more Arrogant and enmeshed in the Interlocking System of Arrogance they become and the more they become susceptible to opening up, developing and functioning under [Dormant Faculties](#). This is the Arrogance observable in the United States of America everywhere and in everything seen today in American society. Believers MUST remain open minded about Bible Doctrine and drop the self centered ideas they might have in order to move from [Infancy to Adolescence](#) in the Spiritual Life and then with persistence to [Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God](#). In order for there to be national preservation and prosperity there must be Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God in all believers not self centered Arrogance distorting of Bible Doctrine.

### **Negative Volition & Free Will Decisions**

“The decisions one makes determines the life he lives”. The false rationale of Arrogance for the degenerate believers is always, “Why does God let this happen to me? It is all God's Fault”. The reality is that every individual is the product of his own decisions and God has given all FREE Will, Volition, to CHOOSE what he wants to do, therefore, he must take responsibility for every decision in life and NOT EVER try to pass the responsibility off onto others. Man has Free Will and is free to accept or reject the Absolute TRUTH made available by God for man whether he is a believer or an unbeliever. Absolute Truths occur in 3 categories:

- ▲ The Laws of Divine Establishment – for protection and preservation of both believers and unbelievers in Human History.
- ▲ The Gospel of Christ for Salvation – for Unbelievers
- ▲ The entire realm of Bible Doctrine – the Thinking of Christ ([1Cor 2:16](#)) for Believers

The believer must recognize that because he can make his own decisions about everything in life he is therefore the product of his own decisions and his primary purpose for existing at all is to CHOOSE for or against God, The Lord Jesus, The Christ, and ultimately the Absolute Truth of Bible Doctrine. He can either think in terms of Grace from Metabolized Bible Doctrine accumulated into the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of his Soul and develop a Divine Viewpoint system Frame of Reference and Norms and Standards for his life. OR he can think in terms of EVIL from the Influence of the LIES of the Doctrines of Demons in the Cosmic Dynaspheres accumulated into the Right Lobe of his Soul and develop a Human Viewpoint system Frame of Reference and Norms and Standards for his life. GOD does not coerce the volition of man, EVER. However, God does reward or punish free will choices under a system of Laws and Authority, the Laws of Divine Establishment & Divine Institutions, Category I Truths. For the believer only the system of God involves orientation to the Authority of, God, Bible Doctrine, and the one teaching the Bible Doctrine. This is the mechanic of shaping the soul of the believer, where he, as the lump of clay, comes against the GRINDING of divine

authority.

The designed function of the believer in the Spiritual Life is that one first learns a principle of Bible Doctrine from the Pastor Teacher and once he learns the principle then by functioning under the principle he VERIFIES the value of that principle in his own soul. There is a contingency factor involved in this function and it is determined in the privacy of the individual believer's soul where he alone can decide to learn and use the principle. This Contingency connotes DECISIONS as functions of the Volition of the believer. Good decisions inevitably create options for MORE and GREATER Decisions while Bad Decisions destroy options for any decisions. Good Decisions for the believer are made from a position of Strength while residing under the [Divine Dynasphere](#) while Bad Decisions are made from a position of Weakness residing under the Cosmic Dynaspheres. Therefore, ALL Good Decisions made from a position of strength relate to residence and function in the [Power System of God](#), the Divine Dynasphere. Then, ALL Bad Decisions from a position of weakness relate to residence and function in the Power System of Satan, the Cosmic Dynaspheres. If one can think OBJECTIVELY, it is awesome to realize that each individual is the cause of his own situation in life. The fact is that the average individual rarely ever addresses the FACT that it is HIS OWN personal decision to neglect or reject Bible Doctrine which results in his miserable status quo and which, in fact, is the cause of his client nation, Unites States of America, falling. The primary issue in the Christian Way of Life is that the individual believer must use Positive Volition not Negative Volition to consistently continue to execute and obey the mandates of God. The believer is to consistently use the system which God provided for him when he entered his plan, the operational Divine Dynasphere. Within this Power System of God the major factor is the provision of [Logistical Grace](#) to maintain the believer's life in the devil's world. This plus the techniques of "[Rebound](#)" and proper prayer with the power for execution coming through the ministry of God the Holy Spirit so that the difficulty of adhering to these mandates is MINIMIZED. Therefore, any intensification of the difficulty of this process of execution and of the individual's misery is caused ONLY by the believer's own Negative Volition toward Bible Doctrine. This produces the inevitable result of the production of a Human Viewpoint in life derived from EVIL, which he then follows for success, achievement and happiness which, unfortunately, cannot ever be permanent. When the believer functions under Positive Volition with Positive Decisions from a Position of Strength he eventually produces a [Personal Sense of Destiny](#) within the Divine Dynasphere. However, when he functions under Negative Volition with Negative Decisions from a Position of Weakness he produce instability and uncertainty within the Cosmic Dynaspheres.

The issue for the believer is always the same and is "WHO will control his soul". Who controls the soul depends entirely on one's personal decisions from the use of his personal volition. When the Lust Patterns of the Old Sin Nature stimulate the Trends of the Old Sin Nature to engage the Area of Weakness or Area of Strength of the Old Sin Nature to produce TEMPTATION for Sin, Crime or Human Good directed toward the volition of the soul and the believer passes the temptation into the soul it becomes the PRODUCTION from the influence of EVIL. Whether one succumbs to these temptations knowingly or unknowingly, he is still responsible for the DECISION and in making these bad decisions he therefore allows his Old Sin

Nature to control his soul. This is the status quo of Carnality and places the believers instantly into residence and function under the Power System of Satan. However, when he resists these temptations or uses the [Rebound Procedure](#) as an IRF (Instant Reaction Force) to recover from succumbing to temptation, he allows God the Holy Spirit to control his soul and is thus said to be Spiritual, under the Filling of God the Holy Spirit. This is a major issue in the Spiritual Life of the believer after Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God and it is an ongoing struggle as to WHO controls his soul. **Galatians Chapter 5** explains this constant inner conflict and antagonism between God the Holy Spirit and the Old Sin Nature for control of the believer's soul. Therefore, the primary function of the Volition of the believer after making Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God is to determine through personal decisions who controls the soul and the believer is therefore the product of his own decisions. When Negative Volition is the predominate attitude after Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God, where the believer started in the Divine Dynasphere, then this believer has moved himself OUTSIDE of the Divine Dynasphere the Power System of God and into the Cosmic Dynaspheres the Power System of Satan. When Positive Volition is the predominate attitude after Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God, where the believer started in and remains consistently in the Divine Dynasphere, this believer's soul remains under the control of God the Holy Spirit. Therefore, this believer is both indwelt by God the Holy Spirit and under the Filling of God the Holy Spirit, he is SPIRITUAL. It is the individual believer's personal DECISIONS therefore which determine where he lives and functions in his life, in the Divine Dynasphere or in the Cosmic Dynaspheres.

The new believer who has no interest in Bible Doctrine and no organization available to him at the point of salvation to provide Bible Doctrine for him, instantly enters into the Interlocking System of Arrogance the Satanic Power System and fragments his life prior to learning anything about the Christian Way of Life. This is the Fragmented believer who is ignorant of the Mystery Doctrine of the Church Age and has no concept of the unique Christian Way of Life for the believer in the Church Age. He is ignorant of the [Edification Complex of the Soul](#), the [Divine Dynasphere](#), the [10 Problem Solving Devices](#) and the [4 Mechanics of the Spiritual Life](#). He inevitably fails to execute the Protocol Plan of God and ultimately cannot be distinguished from the unbeliever. He is totally destabilized in his life, and not able to cope with either adversities and disasters nor with prosperity and success. He thus becomes a LOSER believer who has destroyed his own life with progression through the later stages of [Reversionism](#) to Emotional Revolt of the Soul, Black Out of the Soul, Scar Tissue of the Soul even into Reverse Process Reversionism where he is inevitably subjected to the finality of Divine Discipline as the [Sin Unto Death](#). However under his consistent Negative Volition he has destroyed his own Spiritual and temporal life and, LONG before Divine Discipline comes to him, he has provided himself with extremely INTENSIVE Self Induced Misery.

### **The Arrogance Grenade & Negative Volition Arrogance**

Negative Volition Arrogance always interlocks with [Mental Attitude Arrogance](#) which is the totality of [Motivational Arrogance](#). The pin on the arrogance grenade is loosened by initial involvement with Negative Volition Arrogance where the believer does not see the need for consistent intake of Bible Doctrine but does not dislike or reject it. This attitude interlocks

almost instantly with the Motivational Arrogance of Mental Attitude Arrogance and its Mental Attitude Sins thus pulling the pin on the grenade of arrogance resulting in it exploding and fragmenting both his temporal and spiritual life. This then interlocks with [Authority Arrogance](#) as a Functional Arrogance where the believer rejects the authority of a dogmatic pastor and thus the authority of the Bible Doctrine he teaches. As a result he is MOTIVATED from EVIL in Arrogance so that he begins to become involved in [Crusader Arrogance](#) to right the wrongs of this world as a result of having locked into some aspect of [Self Righteous Arrogance](#).

The Principle of the Arrogance Grenade is that involvement in ANY ASPECT of Arrogance results in a penetration by a myriad of fragments of the Arrogance Complex into one's life once any of the various activating pins are pulled. Within the Interlocking System of Arrogance any of the 80 plus categories of Arrogance, many overlapping and INTERLOCKING with others, are in fact pins which will activate the totality of Arrogance in the life of the believer. The most likely first fragment of the Arrogance Grenade is invariably Negative Volition Arrogance with its indifference to or rejection of Bible Doctrine which most often also instantly puts this believer into the 8 stages of [Reversionism](#) and eventually into the Interlocking System of Antagonistic Emotional Hatred, Cosmic Dynasphere II. Negative Volition Arrogance is a tragic fragment because it inevitably results in the believer having NO Metabolized Bible Doctrine in his Right Lobe to apply to situations in his life. This means that he has voluntarily thrown away the only system of stability and support for his Christian Way of Life. This may be from complete ignorance of Bible Doctrine as a result of never having been exposed to it or it may be from learning Bible Doctrine and entering a reversionistic attitude where any and eventually ALL Metabolized Bible Doctrine is ultimately ERASED from the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul because of his rejection of it as Absolute Truth. As a result there can be NO recall of Bible Doctrine and NO practical application of Bible Doctrine and NO understanding, development or deployment and use of the [10 Problem Solving Devices](#) nor building up of the [Edification Complex of the Soul](#) and NO residence in the power system of God, the [Divine Dynasphere](#). Thus, the believer picks up false teaching and false doctrines because a fragmented life is always drawn to false doctrine as a result of the development of [Black Out of the Soul](#) and Scar Tissue of the Soul from his rejection of Truth. ([1Tim 6:3-4](#)) This is pulling of the pin of the Arrogance Grenade where Negative Volition Arrogance rejects Bible Doctrine at the [Reception](#) stage of the [Grace Apparatus for Perception](#) by failing to expose self to Bible Doctrine teaching or by overtly rejecting what is taught when exposed to it. In addition, Negative Volition Arrogance rejects Bible Doctrine at the Retention stage of the Grace Apparatus for Perception, by rejection of the Bible Doctrine learned as academic knowledge or Gnosis, therefore, failing to accept or metabolize it by faith into the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul. Finally, Negative Volition Arrogance rejects Bible Doctrine at the Recall stage of the Grace Apparatus for Perception by failing to apply it to experience though the development, deployment and use of the 10 Problem Solving Devices of the Protocol Plan of God onto the Forward Line of Troops of the soul. This results in a total failure of the believer at the Resistance stage of the Grace Apparatus for Perception where he cannot bring any Bible Doctrine to bear to resist or reject the strategies of Satan laid out in EVIL and found in the Cosmic Dynaspheres. ([Eph 4:14](#))



### The 4 Rs of the Grace Apparatus for Perception

The principle of the 4 Rs of the Grace Apparatus for Perception is that one cannot forget what he did not know in the first place and if he cannot forget what he did not know he cannot remember or accept what he did not know thus he cannot make progress in the Spiritual Life and therefore has no resources with which to deal with the Cosmic Dynaspheres. Many Christians try to think through pressures and adversities in their life but they have nothing to think with because they have not stored up the Absolute Truth of Bible Doctrine in their Stream of Consciousness of the Soul and therefore cannot recall it to think with. What is the value of sitting and thinking about problems unless one has the solutions available from Metabolized Bible Doctrine to match the situation? Whether it involves adversity or prosperity, unless Truth is known it cannot be applied to resolve any situation in life. This is the status quo of believers in Negative Volition Arrogance.

In the Spiritual Life, all believers have equality of privilege and opportunity to learn Bible Doctrine and therefore have NO EXCUSE for not having it available to solve problems and pressures in life. The amazing thing is that being ignorant of Bible Doctrine the believer will not be able to handle any level of either prosperity or adversity in life. There are 3 Stages of Post Salvation Epistemological Rehabilitation in the Spiritual Life and 1 stage of passive opposition to Satan and all are related to cognition of Bible Doctrine under the [Grace Apparatus for Perception](#), Operation Z ministry of God the Holy Spirit.

#### Stage 1: Reception

The believer must learn Truth to be able to apply Truth therefore in order to engage in reception one must first find a “right” Pastor Teacher who teaches Bible Doctrine in an expository manner. This then includes consistent daily exposure to bible teaching by FACE TO FACE teaching with this Pastor Teacher or some non face to face system under his teaching in order that Perception, Cognition, Incultation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine can occur on a regular basis. The principle in Reception is that “the Rate of Learning MUST exceed the Rate of Forgetting” therefore, the believer must be consistently exposed to Bible Doctrine in order for this to occur. This will mean that the believer under such consistent Positive Volition toward Bible Doctrine is seeking the Truth and that the Perception, Cognition, Incultation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine will have Priority #1 in his life and nothing will ever take precedence over it. Reception requires concentration during bible study and avoiding all distractions so that there can be consistent residence and function within the [Divine Dynasphere](#) where God the Holy Spirit teaches the Human Spirit Bible Doctrine.

#### Stage 2: Retention

This involves the spiritual function of converting (gr) Gnosis, the academic understanding of knowledge concerning Bible Doctrine into (gr) Epignosis, Metabolized Bible Doctrine, which is accepted as Truth into the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul. This Metabolized Bible Doctrine is the only source which can provide spiritual growth and momentum in the Protocol Plan of God and is the only mechanism for executing the plan, purpose and Will of God for the believer’s life. This Metabolized Bible Doctrine is the only

means of altering or modifying the Right Lobe of the Soul with changes to the mentality, the Norms and Standards and Frame of Reference, etc., to enable Divine Viewpoint thinking to occur based on this Absolute Truth.

### **Stage 3: Recall**

This is the development of (gr) Sophia, Wisdom which is the application of Metabolized Bible Doctrine to the various multifarious experiences of this life. It is the practical use of Bible Doctrine which contributes to the functional and experiential spiritual growth of the believer including the understanding and fulfillment of the Grace Plan of God. This is the use of all of the promises, principles and rationales of Bible Doctrine to come to conclusions and solve one's problems by means of the **Faith Rest Drill** (5 stages). Thus to meet adversity as well as prosperity and have perfect inner happiness and stability in either situation.

### **Stage 4: Resistance**

Functioning effectively in the first 3 stages of the 4 R's of the **Grace Apparatus for Perception** results in the believer who has put on the **Full Armor from God (Eph 6:11)**. This enables him to resist the strategies of Satan to distract him from Post Salvation Epistemological Rehabilitation and Perception, Cognition, Incultation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine. This distraction would lead him directly into spiritual failure and residence and function in the Interlocking System of Arrogance and Interlocking System of Antagonistic Emotional Hatred driving him down through the 8 stages of Reversionism to an ignominious death under the Sin Unto Death Divine Discipline.

### **Negative Volition, Cosmic Dynaspheres vs Divine Dynasphere**

There are 4 areas of potential Negative Volition toward Bible Doctrine under the Power System of Satan:

- **Preliminary Negative Volition** – the entrance into the 8 stages of Reversionism and Apostasy of the Christian.
- **Locked in Negative Volition** – the interlocking of stage 5 of Reversionism with the Interlocking System of Arrogance and eventually with the Interlocking System of Antagonistic Emotional Hatred where antagonism toward Bible Doctrine and the Grace Plan of God is developed.
- **Negative Volition Arrogance** – Negative Volition in Cosmic Dynasphere 1
- **Negative Volition Hatred or Antagonism** – Negative Volition in Cosmic Dynasphere II

With residence in the Divine Dynasphere the believer is under the **Filling of God the Holy Spirit** however making a decision to Sin or commit Crime, using one's volition to accept and engage in the Area of Weakness aspects of Old Sin Nature temptation, puts the believer immediately into Cosmic Dynasphere I where he is grieving God the Holy Spirit (**Eph 4:30-32**). This may also put him into Cosmic Dynasphere II where he is said to be quenching God the Holy Spirit (**1Thes 5:19**). **Mental Attitude Arrogance**, along with **Negative Volition Arrogance** in Cosmic Dynasphere I provides many Pins of the Arrogance Grenade which when pulled causes the life of the believer to fragment and causes him to become involved in any aspect of the Interlocking System of Arrogance. **Negative Volition Arrogance** as resistance to or rejection of

Bible Doctrine from indifference or failure of exposure to Bible Doctrine results from [Self Centered or Egocentric Arrogance](#). Once in this situation the believer is involved in Neglect of Bible Doctrine based on distraction from Bible Doctrine by the enticements of the Interlocking System of Arrogance. *Negative Volition Antagonistic Hatred* as active antagonism toward Bible Doctrine resulting from persistent carnality, persistent Arrogance involvement and degrading function within the 8 stages of [Reversionism](#) to the point of Locked in Negative Volition, is the believer actually becoming ANTI Bible Doctrine and ANTI God. This is Rejection of Bible Doctrine based on antagonism toward the Truth from unrestrained sinning or arrogance involvement and being in a perpetual state of carnality. When involved in the locked in Arrogance of Negative Volition the believer listens to Bible Doctrine ONLY for the purpose of distorting it.

Negative Volition Arrogance rejects 2 principles in the process of effective bible teaching:

- The Authority vested in the Pastor Teacher and Bible Doctrine
- The Discipline which requires Silence and Concentration for inculcation

Silence is related to concentration and no one can be talking and listening at the same time. Bible Doctrine is the [Essential of the Christian Way of Life](#) and the believer in The Lord Jesus, The Christ without Bible Doctrine cannot be successful in the Spiritual Life and will have a miserable temporal Life. His life will be one of constant and intensive Self Induced Misery and when needed as a wake up call, Divine Discipline. Negative Volition toward Bible Doctrine inevitably results in bad decisions from a position of weakness which results in terrible misery and suffering from the Law of Volitional Responsibility. ([Gal 6:7](#)) One of the great secrets for success in any area of life is to be able to concentrate on what is important and to do this there must be a system of priorities established. The right priorities for the Spiritual Life require that Bible Doctrine be first. Arrogance rejects Bible Doctrine and so becomes a distractor to inculcation and application of Bible Doctrine therefore, Arrogance rejects the combination of 2 areas of Authority in the Spiritual Life:

- The Word of God or Bible Doctrine
- The Pastor Teacher

No matter how much of a loser the believer may be in time he will be part of the greatest victory of all time called the “rapture” of the church, the resurrection of all Church Age believers in the Royal Family of God. Many believers fail, despite all the Bible Doctrine which is available to them, as a result of neglect or rejection of it. Some having reached Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God, even then enter into the Interlocking System of Arrogance like David who was involved in sexual Arrogance and Cowardice even before Bathsheba. Negative Volition Arrogance emphasizes the Believers total subjectivity.

Being negative to either the communicator of Bible Doctrine or the Bible Doctrine itself inevitably results in rejection of the other. In each case there is lack of thought and concentration with distraction and, unfortunately, the great issue in life, the ability of the person to think, is destroyed. Individuals must have a vocabulary in order to think and thereby be able to form concepts and principles from that vocabulary but very often inculcation

of a technical vocabulary to think with is rejected out of hand. Unfortunately Arrogance always sprouts up where Authority is involved. The believer cannot be Arrogant and learn Bible Doctrine because he invariably must overlook the personality of the communicator and focus only on the content of that being communicated. Believers must constantly remind themselves that the message is important not the man who is presenting it. Very often people reject the content and / or the communicator because they become disillusioned with him or it. Negative Volition Arrogance when persistent invariably results in entrance into and the [5th Major Stage of Reversionism](#) causing a [Black out of the Soul](#) and thereby builds [Scar Tissue of the Soul](#) effectively preventing any Perception, Cognition, Incultation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine. Negative Volition toward Bible Doctrine intensifies the Arrogance factors in the soul and the intensification of Arrogance rejects the authority and spiritual gift of the communicator of Bible Doctrine. The combination of intensified Arrogance + Scar Tissue of the Soul causes the believer to only be able to believe the LIE of the Satanic Policies of EVIL. This results in acceptance of false doctrine from the LIE resulting in strong delusion ([2Thes 2:11](#)), along with slavery to circumstances of life and instability and oscillation between the results of Arrogant involvement during periods of prosperity and in adversity.

### **Rejection of Truth**

Arrogance and the Old Sin Nature are almost synonymous terms and Arrogance is the underlying foundation of almost all categories of sin. A person can be brilliant and continue to say no to Truth and thereby become stupid. One must have Truth in order to effectively think. The acceptance of the LIE of false doctrine results in any pressure in life causing [Self Pity](#) and any prosperity in life causing [Self Righteousness](#) which is total instability in life. When the believer is inconsistent in Perception, Cognition, Incultation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine and misses a part of a sequence of doctrinal studies, he will ultimately not understand some point of doctrine and express UNBELIEF toward that point. Inability to understand a principle or point of doctrine is honesty and between not understanding and not believing Arrogance invariably SLIPS INTO THE PICTURE. When anyone says to any doctrinal point or principle that he does not 'believe it' then he has moved into the Interlocking System of Arrogance and WILL believe the next LIE or principle of EVIL which comes his way. The only way to avoid this self destruction and involvement in the Interlocking System of Arrogance is to accumulate a maximum amount of Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul. The formation of a [Guilt Complex](#) from oscillation in the Spiritual Life between Self Righteousness and Self Pity relates directly to or coincides with the entrance into and function of the believer in Reversionism and links the degeneracy of Arrogance with the Apostasy of Reversionism. This is the place where the Interlocking System of Arrogance links with the degradation of the spiritual life in Reversionism. This person will have nothing of Bible Doctrine to apply to pressure and adversity in life and the inability to appreciate and enjoy the prosperity of life.

Those who believe the LIE from EVIL take pleasure in unrighteousness because believing the LIE motivates them to find pleasure in their unrighteousness. Therefore, their norms and standards are standards of UNRIGHTEOUSNESS because all standards are based on what a person believes. If he rejects Truth then he can ONLY believe the LIE and his norms and standards

are compatible with the LIE and are standards of Arrogant Degeneracy and Reversionistic Apostasy. In society being 'SCUM' is not a state of birth, financial status or environment but a state of MIND or THINKING. 'SCUM' may manifest itself in males who maintain LONG hair or wear EAR RINGS but forcefully cutting off their hair or ripping out the ear rings will not change their thinking nor their status as "SCUM". In order to resolve this kind of problem in an individual, Absolute Truth has to move into the soul of the individual and change things there. Therefore, the only way to change thinking is to present Truth in order that the person can use his OPTION of accepting or rejecting it. Very often people can be made to conform to imposed standards by applying pressure to them but this DOES NOT CHANGE THEIR THINKING. This is, in fact, a function of EVIL and it is accomplished by it in many cases and places. The best solution to correcting false norms and standards in an individual is to simply present the Truth of the Gospel of Christ and Bible Doctrine including the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions and allow God to stimulate them and the person to use their own volition to accept or reject it. Engaging in a crusade to make people change never works. For the people who have rejected Truth, believing the LIE from EVIL also destroys their capacity for LIFE in all categories. The [Crusader](#) wants to take away shocking pleasures from these individuals but when the pleasure is removed the LIE which was believed in the first place remains and has not changed.

"YOU SHALL KNOW THE Truth, BIBLE DOCTRINE, AND THE Truth, BIBLE DOCTRINE, SHALL MAKE YOU FREE". Everyone has a soul and everyone has an Old Sin Nature and everyone USES their Old Sin Nature functions freely and in many varied ways. So of what consequence is it when people think unkindly about one personally, SO WHAT! The thinking of the criminal, the obnoxious office member, uncooperative team member can only change when they come to believe Truth. Criminals must have their activities forcefully restrained but this does not change them and only their believing Truth can do this. ONLY Truth can change anyone and even then they can ONLY change by choosing Truth for themselves. By accepting Truth into the soul as a believer and reaching some semblance of maturity in the Spiritual Life this Truth in the soul forms proper Norms and Standards. Believers very often fail in relation to their Norms and Standards but if they have learned how to use the [REBOUND Procedure](#) after their failures they can continue to function under the Truth and move forward to learn MORE Truth. The only Truth which is of any help in life is the Truth that is BELIEVED and therefore there must be persistence in the Perception, Cognition, Incultation and METABOLIZATION or ACCEPTANCE of the Absolute Truths of Bible Doctrine in order to learn more and accept more. IF people could be FORCED to believe Truth there would be NO Angelic Conflict and mankind would not be here on this planet in the first place. The KEY and primary principle in Human History is FREEDOM to choose or reject TRUTH.

Those who believe the LIE derived from EVIL destroy all possibility for true happiness or prosperity because their pleasure is only in being WRONG. By believing the LIE from EVIL their pleasure is built on the LIE. This does not infer in any way that Christians do not have any FUN in life. The fact is that believers with maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul, as a result of having executed the Plan of God for their life, have ALL THE FUN IN LIFE. As a result of having the capacity for FUN,



they, in fact, have a monopoly on persistent fun and good times. A person can only have capacity for life, freedom, happiness, love and prosperity by believing Truth. The more Truth that is believed the more Truth he possesses and the more Truth he possesses the wealthier he becomes. Therefore, the Truth of Bible Doctrine when resident in the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul is the secret to LIFE for both believer and also for the unbeliever in the form of the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions. This Metabolized Doctrine which results from Positive Volition cannot ever be FORCED into the soul of others. Trying to force Truth onto another person is very often why personal witnessing fails when the believer tries to pressure the unbeliever with some emotional approach to salvation.

It is inevitable that the Interlocking System of Arrogance will overtake any believer who ignores or rejects Bible Doctrine. Inevitably [Black Out of the Soul](#) and [Scar Tissue of the Soul](#) resulting in the blinding of perception comes to all categories of people who persistently reject Absolute Truth especially Bible Doctrine and as a result have fallen into Reversionism. This causes the intelligent one to be just as much in error as the imbecile. The Stream of Consciousness of the Soul has self consciousness which is being aware of one's own existence. When this is tied to the Interlocking System of Arrogance in the general population, as it is today in the United States of America, there then is a great portion of the population who are totally divorced from reality. They become afflicted with insanity, psychoses, neuroses, sociopathic and psychotic behavior because self consciousness has been destroyed by the Interlocking System of Arrogance. In rejecting Truth and developing Scar Tissue of the Soul the only thing which survives in the Soul is [EMOTION](#). Self consciousness by becoming involved in the Interlocking System of Arrogance is thereby under the control of Emotion and totally divorced from reality. When people live by emotion in [Emotional Revolt of the Soul](#) they lose the ability to reason and lack ability to handle any pressure situation in life because there is NO THOUGHT in Emotion. Emotion controlling the soul results in the male becoming effeminate and the female becoming masculine. Therefore, both Insanity and [Criminality](#) originate from involvement in the Interlocking System of Arrogance with the resultant divorcement from reality. Degeneracy is not just some form of immorality but is in fact a disease of the soul involving Interlocking in the Arrogance System and rejection of Truth. Both the believer and unbeliever are susceptible to these destructive processes because even the unbeliever can, and very often today does, reject the Absolute Truth found in the form of the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions.

### **[Negative Volition, The Jews & The Big Blot Out](#)**

In general, all the Jewish people and all unbelievers are, in fact, blotting out of their minds and thinking the 1<sup>st</sup> advent of The Lord Jesus, The Christ because of Negative Volition at God Consciousness or Gospel hearing. By blotting out the 1<sup>st</sup> advent they set up a system of Arrogance which causes them to depend on Self Righteousness and human works righteousness in keeping the law or functioning under some system of legalism. The fact that gentiles can be and are saved is a constant confusion for Jews. The fact of reality is that only those who accept the Righteousness of God will be taken to heaven. When the Jew develops Self Righteousness as basis for being justified by God as a result of his keeping the tenets of the Mosaic Law, he also develops Arrogance. This Arrogance is based on the feeling that he is

totally superior to the gentiles, and although this is not without reason, it is carried into the realm of unreality by his [Self Righteous Arrogance](#). This Arrogance is so great that when he discovers that the gentile is going to heaven this only magnifies his Arrogance so that he may say something like “I would rather be in hell”. As a result of this he develops more Black out of the Soul and Scar Tissue of the Soul to contribute to his Big Blot Out of totally rejecting and erasing from his thinking the 1<sup>st</sup> advent of The Lord Jesus, The Christ. He fails to realize that all gentile races originate from the X radical of the [Equation of Hope Plan of God](#), while the Jewish race originated from the Z radical of the Equation of Hope. This is the true point of their race and their spiritual heritage which is their true superiority.

Arrogance, in its 80 plus categories, produces a special kind of Divine Discipline which is Divine Discipline by [Inversion](#). [Inversion Divine Discipline](#) always takes what you want and gives it to someone you do not like. This is a fantastically beautiful type of Divine Discipline and this is what people entangled in Arrogance get from God. The greatest inversion in history is the Negative Volition of the Jews under the Big Blot Out rejecting The Lord Jesus, The Christ. The Jew with his Self Righteousness is going to end in the Lake of Fire as a result of his being motivated by Arrogance. The humility of the gentile who instantly responded to the gospel of The Lord Jesus, The Christ results in him receiving the Righteousness of God. When the Arrogant Jew wakes up and realizes that the gentile has the Righteousness of God and he does not and the gentile is saved and he is not; instead of coming around to the proper orientation to Grace and having faith in The Lord Jesus, The Christ he instantly becomes jealous and more deeply entrenched in [Mental Attitude Arrogance](#). This is also the status of the individual who rejects the gospel of Christ or the believer who is persistent in his Negative Volition toward the necessity for consistent intake of Bible Doctrine.

The alertness of any nation is found in its thinking, a nation is alert through effective thought or non alert through lack of effective thought. The level of greatness of nations cannot exceed the greatness of the thinking or failure of thinking in its collective Mental Attitude. The nation which is saturated with Arrogance has national selfcenteredness and thus a state of insensibility with mass [Self Pity](#) fused with Self Righteousness for [Guilt Complex](#) functions. The state of mind of insensibility comes from [Scar Tissue of the Soul](#) and maximum Negative Volition toward Bible Doctrine and The Lord Jesus, The Christ in any dispensation of history. NO ONE CAN IGNORE CHRIST in history and GET AWAY WITH IT. Israel, nationally, has blindness of the soul and Scar Tissue of the Soul from their own free will negative decisions and the result is the Big Blot Out. This is clearly demonstrated by the persistent unbeliever and by the believer who has Negative Volition toward Bible Doctrine in this client nation United States of America today. The Negative Volition of the Jews persists today from their past and they still only have eyes for the purpose of NOT seeing the Truth of the 1<sup>st</sup> advent of The Lord Jesus, The Christ. Under their persistent Negative Volition the eyes and ears are not functioning in the Jews nor in any gentiles who function under Negative Volition at God Consciousness or Gospel hearing. For these there is no concentration and no reception of information regarding the Gospel and Bible Doctrine. The Big Blot Out continues from the Age of Israel and down through the change of dispensations for the Jews, into the Church Age, the dispensation of the Royal Family of God. The Jew says no over and over and thus believes ONLY the LIE from

EVIL which is today the functions and principles of welfare and socialism. Believing these lies from the intensification of his Arrogance he sets himself up for instability. Anyone who persistently functions to believe the LIE from EVIL along with intensification of Arrogance becomes unstable and vacillates between Self Pity and Self Righteousness combining them at times into Guilt reactions but always missing the point of Truth. For these people the greater the revelation of Truth the greater their resistance to it becomes and therefore the greater the Scar Tissue of the Soul and thus the more intensified is their Arrogance and Black Out of the Soul erasing any Truth which was in the soul. The eyes and ears of those individuals with a high IQ which would normally pick up correct information now will only pick up erroneous information because of Emotional Revolt of the Soul and Scar Tissue of the Soul. This combined with Arrogance makes the person highly unstable and susceptible to being destroyed by their own Modus Operandi.

The Big Blot Out is maximum Negative Volition by the Jews, who as unbelievers, break even the record of Negative Volition of Amenhotep II when confronted by Moses. The Big Blot Out is believing the LIE from EVIL as a result of Truth being unable to enter the soul to shed light on any subject because of life long built up Scar Tissue of the Soul. As a result, when anything false comes along it is accepted and is believed being sucked into the information vacuum created in the soul by Black Out of the Soul. Because of the Jews believing the LIE from EVIL combined with their Arrogance and the darkness and vacuum in the soul from [Black Out of the Soul](#), there results a complete lack of understanding of the terrible nature of the holocausts of history and their causes. Under this Big Blot Out the Jews may accept the Old Testament Scripture God of Israel but reject his first advent in Hypostatic Union as The Lord Jesus, The Christ, Their own Messiah.

Therefore, the same Arrogance and impudence of Amenhotep II is reproduced in the mind of every Jew who blots out the 1<sup>st</sup> advent of The Lord Jesus, The Christ, thereby remaining an unbeliever and making themselves subject to incredible Divine Discipline. Up to the point of borrowed time pharaoh said no and when God allowed him more time he still continued to say no and this would have continued no matter how long he would have lived. Paul challenges the unbeliever Jew and gentile in telling them all that there is no difference between them as unbelievers and the greatest arch villain of Israel, Amenhotep II. He is saying to the unbeliever especially the Jew that NO matter how long they have to live they would still do what Amenhotep II did and still say no, blotting out the 1<sup>st</sup> advent of Christ. Only the Jew who makes Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God through faith alone in The Lord Jesus, The Christ, the God of Israel, alone, will have and benefit from the great spiritual heritage and life that all Jews think and talk about. However Jews cannot have this heritage by keeping the law and building up morality or [Self Righteousness](#) or human effort good works righteousness in some system of legalism. Once the 1<sup>st</sup> advent is bypassed in the thinking, as the Jews have done, and continue to do, and is ignored, along with its implications, it is inevitable that Arrogance builds up. When this Arrogance builds up it increases the [Scar Tissue of the Soul](#) and the Jew returns to his culture and heritage and picks up the Mosaic Law and tries to keep these rules perfectly in order to further build up his self righteousness. He then demands God accept him into heaven and the millennium on the basis of his Self Righteousness.

Unfortunately for the Jew and all unbelievers God says NO because they have rejected the entire 1<sup>st</sup> advent of The Lord Jesus, The Christ from His incarnation to the ascension.

While  $X + Y + Z$  in the [Equation of Hope](#) equals the Plan of God,  $X - Y - Z$  equals [Black Out of the Soul](#) and [Scar Tissue of the Soul](#) as a result of consistent Negative Volition toward Bible Doctrine. The millions of neural circuits which print information into the brain are completely short circuited in Scar Tissue of the Soul. Because of persistent Negative Volition to the Truth and the resultant short circuited neural circuits from Scar Tissue of the Soul any Absolute Truth which had been stored in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul is then ERASED. Scar Tissue of the Soul also means loss of capacity for life, love, happiness, mental stability and blessing. Scar Tissue of the Soul has no pleasant memories so that Arrogance becomes bitterness, pettiness, implacability, vindictiveness and hatred. People with a maximum Scar Tissue of the Soul like Amenhotep II and the unbeliever Jews of history destroy themselves long before they are destroyed by historical disasters such as the holocausts. The holocausts are demonstrations that God must provide catharsis of persistent Negative Volition for the perpetuation of the Human Race and the ultimate resolution of the Angelic Conflict. Historical disaster is merely a divine vacuum cleaner to sweep away the dust so that future generations with their own free will can have a chance to use that volition freely and properly. This must occur because the contamination of Scar Tissue of the Soul is totally destructive to the perpetuation of freedom the absolute necessity in the history of the Human Race.

The Lord Jesus, The Christ is the God of Israel and the Integrity of God judges the Big Blot Out in both time and eternity. First in sequence is [Divine Discipline](#) judgment on those involved in the Big Blot Out. Such Divine Discipline demonstrates that Israel has heard and has understood what they have heard with regard to the Gospel, the Plan of God and Salvation and have totally rejected it as a result of persistent Negative Volition leading to Blackout of the Soul and Scar Tissue of the Soul. Having rejected the Gospel, which they clearly understood and understand from Codex II of the Mosaic Law, they came to believe the LIE from EVIL that there was no 1<sup>st</sup> advent of the Christ, the Messiah, and this, the Big Blot Out, results in maximum Scar Tissue of the Soul. The Big Blot Out is dramatized by the [Great Inversion](#) and is demonstrated in the Old Testament Scripture where the reversal of positions between Jew and gentile became the basis for punishing the Jew and blessing the gentile. No one can even be humanly mature until he takes responsibility for his own decisions, whether they are good or bad. This is what is lacking in people who are Arrogant from Negative Volition and jealous when they see others being blessed and want that blessing. God desires to bless Israel but the Point of Reference for all mankind is the Justice of God and God is always fair and even uses the jealousy of Israel to help turn things around for them.

In the Age of Israel the gentiles were dependent on Israel for normal evangelical mechanics whereby missionaries were to be sent to wherever there was Positive Volition at God Consciousness. Eventually the Jews did not send out missionaries falling into a state of apostasy under their Big Blot Out. However, there still were gentiles who had at God Consciousness Positive Volition and they could not progress with the knowledge from the needed missionary functions, knowing nothing about Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of

God. The Jews had all the information and the salvation heritage with Codex II, their history and all the prophet ministries. Yet, with this perfect spiritual heritage they were still persistent in declaring a resounding “NO” to the Plan of God and Gospel of Christ, building up phenomenal Scar Tissue of the Soul under the Big Blot Out. God would never let this gentile Positive Volition die without giving the opportunity for faith in The Lord Jesus, The Christ and then spiritual growth. Therefore, he used other means and circumstances to reach these people with the Gospel of Christ. Gentiles were thereby blessed from God entering into the [Equation of Hope](#) Plan of God while the Jews, who possess the phenomenal spiritual heritage for Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God were, and still now are, under Divine Discipline for rejection. As a result there was and is a cursing for the Jew and blessing for the gentile under momentum in the Plan of God. This inversion and Jewish apostasy caused the Jews to build up Arrogance and jealousy as small petty Mental Attitude Sins but the ultimate origin of this is Arrogance and this is not petty in its ramifications. Arrogance is the source of all [Jealousy](#) and of all heinous sinning starting with [Bitterness](#).

The Big Blot Out and failure of Jews to accept the reality of the Hypostatic Union of The Lord Jesus, The Christ does not abrogate and cancel the Plan of God for Israel. However, the Plan of God for Israel is LIMITED TO THOSE JEWS WHO MADE SALVATION ADJUSTMENT TO THE JUSTICE OF GOD DURING THE AGE OF ISRAEL THROUGH FAITH ALONE IN THE LORD JESUS, THE CHRIST AS HE WAS REVEALED. This is the same as the Plan of God for our client nation United States of America whose perpetuation depends on the attitude of the people toward Christ and Bible Doctrine. The Jew who accepts the Alpha Glory of Christ as God of Israel but rejects the Omega Glory of Christ as savior is excluded from the Plan of God for Israel. This is also true for the believers in The Lord Jesus, The Christ in the United States of America who have accepted ritual without reality in the form of:

- ✧ Religion
- ✧ Legalism
- ✧ Self Righteousness
- ✧ Arrogance
- ✧ Reversionism

It is not having a High or Low IQ which blinds the individual to Truth and allows the use of Negative Volition but Arrogance. No one can reject The Lord Jesus, The Christ as savior and get away with it whether Jew or gentile. Just because the Jew is under the 5<sup>th</sup> cycle of Divine Discipline does not mean that God has transferred Jewish blessing to the church. The believer must understand the 2 elections of scripture which include Israel and the Church and that God has not canceled Israels future blessing because of the insertion of the Church Age. This Church Age insertion simply emphasizes [Inversion](#) and reminds Israel that even though they are in the Plan of God when they reject the Plan of God, GOD can and certainly will still get along very well without them. This should also clearly remind the believer in this Church Age that he has no right to claim, in Arrogance, that God cannot get along without him. He should clearly know the fallacy of the concept that if he fails as a believer, the Plan of God may fail also, therefore, he must to do this good thing or act this socially proper way or that way to keep the Plan of God going. This is Arrogance and puts him in line for his own Inversion



Divine Discipline. The Jews had in the past, and continues to this day, to say no to the Doctrines of the Gospel of The Lord Jesus, The Christ over and over again resulting in a vacuum forming in the soul causing vast levels of EVIL to enter in. In their Arrogant darkness of soul, they say their thoughts are better than the thoughts of the Christ, the Messiah of the Old Testament Scripture, which are in fact Biblical Doctrine. ([1Cor 2:16](#))

Jews guilty of the Big Blot Out being punished by the Great Inversion experience one of the worst things ever to happen to a smart person, to have an inferior mentality outdo them in some way. This is what happens to Israel throughout every generation because of the Big Blot Out having as its underlying foundation Arrogance. It is extremely easy for the intelligent person to become Arrogant and smart people always face some temptation of that kind and are thus destined to live out their lives in inversion misery UNLESS they are wise enough to orient to reality and develop [Humility](#). Reality is that being smart does not really mean anything and it is only a vehicle to learn and being smart is nothing until it is converted to wisdom by learning and applying Absolute Truth without Arrogance involvement. The Jewish super race, having great intellect, talent and IQ, is constantly hampered by Arrogance. A great IQ and Intellect must function on the fuel of Truth and when this Truth is rejected then the Arrogance which causes this inevitably destroys that person and this is what the Big Blot Out has done and continues to do to the Jew.

[Jealousy](#) is a primary part of Motivational Arrogance and no one can allow self to become jealous for any reason in life. To the extent to which one is jealous about anything in life, he has entertained prior unreality which produces jealousy and this unreality is the overestimation of self in some way which is very often unknown to him. Arrogant people always find something about which to be jealous and Jewish Negative Volition and [Scar Tissue of the Soul](#) built up in their Big Blot Out results in jealousy about the Great Inversion. Therefore, Gentiles without client or priest nation status and without the spiritual heritage of the Jews, accepted the Substitutionary Spiritual Death of The Lord Jesus, The Christ thus making Jews with priest nation status very jealous. Then, when these gentiles followed their Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God with advance to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and received the promised Super – Grace blessings, this jealousy was expanded. The Jews could not have become jealous unless they first rejected Truth and engaged in some Arrogance. No one is ever jealous without [Pride](#) from involvement in Mental Attitude Arrogance. No one is ever jealous apart from [Abnormal Self Consciousness](#), therefore, it is, has been and always will be true that interlocking in the Arrogance Complex always accompanies Jealousy. Jewish involvement in the Interlocking System of Arrogance and their creation of the Big Blot Out in their souls came from their own Negative Volition to the gospel of The Lord Jesus, The Christ. The Jewish Big Blot Out results in their jealousy of theocratic inversion and resulted in Jewish antagonism toward the 1<sup>st</sup> advent of The Lord Jesus, The Christ. However, this does not mean that the blessing of the gospel has passed from Jew to gentile in the Church Age. The great spiritual heritage of the Jews is not in the rituals of Israel which merely illustrate Biblical Doctrines. However, in their Big Blot Out the Jews reject the Doctrines and accept the ritual. They scoop off the ritual which they still follow in Self Righteousness and reject the Doctrines behind the ritual. In contrast many gentiles believe the Doctrines and thereby received the Righteousness

of God at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God.

The spiritual heritage of Israel includes the Laws of Divine Establishment in Codex I & III of the Mosaic Law and the Gospel of The Lord Jesus, The Christ in Codex II and therefore is based in regeneration through faith in Christ the God of Israel and the only savior. While the Big Blot Out is related to Israel it is also pertinent for any gentile client nation to God and is why, in this client nation United States of America, there is now imminent historical disaster in the form of Divine Discipline from God, The Lord Jesus, The Christ who controls Human History. The Lord Jesus, The Christ, the God of Israel is found in the New Testament Scripture in [Rev 1:7-8](#), [Rev 21:6](#), [Rev 22:13](#) and is taken from the first and last letters of the Greek alphabet, Alpha and Omega. This expresses who and what Christ is. Alpha is The Lord Jesus, The Christ as eternal God the 2<sup>nd</sup> person of the trinity coequal with God the Father and God the Holy Spirit. Omega is The Lord Jesus, The Christ in Hypostatic Union as the God man being true man and true deity. The Big Blot Out is maximum Negative Volition toward the 1<sup>st</sup> advent of The Lord Jesus, The Christ, primarily in the Jew but also in any gentile unbeliever. Under the Big Blot Out the Jews accepted the Alpha glory of The Lord Jesus, The Christ as God of Israel and at the same time separated and rejected any other members of the trinity existing and thus became monotheistic. Many passages describe the Big Blot Out and the 2 best are [Is 29:9-14](#) and [Rom 11:8-10](#). Every failure of Israel from the Jews standing in line to die under the NAZI holocaust to submitting meekly to pressures which occur against them in history can be explained by their being under the Big Blot Out distortion and the resultant Divine Discipline.

There are 3 principles which allow us to understand the Jews and why client nations to God in the Church Age fail:

The Big Blot Out

The Interlocking System of Arrogance

[Reversionism](#) with Black out of the Soul & Scar Tissue of the Soul

The Big Blot Out started out with the total rejection of the first advent of The Lord Jesus, The Christ BEFORE he came in Hypostatic Union. The Interlocking System of Arrogance at times came first in the souls of the unbeliever Jews but at times was a result and part of the intensification of Negative Volition toward Bible Doctrine. Reversionistic Scar Tissue of the Soul is a result of rejection of the Truth of Codex II and the Truth of the writing of the prophets like [Is 53](#). The seal closing the book is Scar Tissue of the Soul and the Jew can read the words but does not understand their meaning. Lacking the ability to read and understand the words there cannot be the acquisition of the Truth. In the holocausts of history the smartest people in the history of the Human Race, the Jews, are removed and destroyed in situations such as demonstrated by the Nazis from 1932 to 1945 and in communist Russia under Stalin. The Alpha the Jews could understand, recognizing God as eternal and the source of all their being, and the Jews memorized their scriptures especially [Deut 6:4](#). The Jews rejected the final phrase of this passage forming it to reflect their monotheistic distorted viewpoint instead of the uniqueness of The Lord Jesus, The Christ, as the God of Israel becoming true humanity and son of David in Hypostatic Union. This is what disturbed them from the beginning of their nation and destroyed them and even though they memorize this passage they

reject the uniqueness of Jesus as The Christ.

It can be a very dangerous thing to live in a client or priest nation because in the client nation to God the gospel is presented frequently and the more the unbeliever hears it and says no to it and the more people who say no to it the more they accept the LIE from EVIL. In the client nation United States of America this is socialism, liberalism, big government, government regulation of industry, confiscation of personal property, etc., which today is the generally accepted LIE and it is ALL from EVIL. The oil companies and all large corporate businesses are the victims of Arrogance and liberalism and [Black Out of the Soul](#) and [Scar Tissue of the Soul](#) in the general population and especially in those in government service. It is very dangerous to live in a client nation because every rejection of Truth in the client nation results in Blackout of the Soul of the people involved and builds up more Scar Tissue of the Soul. To live in the wilderness where one never hears the gospel and the local chief has the most wealth and power and the Old Sin Nature of individuals functions but where one is not in a client nation to God, the danger is not nearly as great because there is less involvement under EVIL.

Anyone who tries to gain salvation by Self Righteous works or good deeds such as by keeping the law is saturated with Arrogance and considers himself a superior person possessing a heritage superior to all those around him. His motivation in life is to prove his superiority from his Arrogance by attempting to keep the law or some other system of legalism for salvation. As a result his [Egotistic Arrogance](#) he moves into [Self Righteousness](#) and anyone who can do anything better than he brings on his Jealousy. In this historical case the gentile did it better than the Jew without following all the rules of the Mosaic Law and simply expressed faith alone in The Lord Jesus, The Christ alone and thereby came away with the Righteousness of God. If the Jew recognizes this he becomes Jealous, bringing to him his first Divine Discipline from this inversion. The Jew in the Big Blot Out totally rejects The Lord Jesus, The Christ but, in his Arrogance, he thinks it is enough that he has the Torah and all the commandments and functions which he follows as best he can, however, all of this gets him nothing from God. Then the gentile comes along with faith alone in The Lord Jesus, The Christ alone and immediately gains the Absolute Righteousness of God and obvious overt blessings from God. What starts out in the Jew with Negative Volition and Arrogance becomes Jealousy and the combination of Jealousy plus Arrogance results in intense soul Divine Discipline.

### **Negative Volition, Gentiles both Believer & Unbeliever**

Historical disaster is tailor made to be addressed by Stages 3-5 of the [Faith Rest Drill \(5 stages\)](#) in the application of Bible Doctrine. Learning Bible Doctrine has 2 objectives, spiritual growth with advance to [Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God](#) thereby enabling the believer to receive Escrow Super – Grace blessings and the application of Bible Doctrine to experience. One cannot apply what he has not learned and if he has not learned it he cannot remember it and therefore cannot apply it. Application under pressure demands the same concentration under the [Filling of God the Holy Spirit](#) as was used to assimilate Bible Doctrine in the first place. Failure of [Recall](#) implies that the doctrine was not learned when taught or the believer malfunctioned under the Faith Rest Drill because of involvement in the Interlocking System of

Arrogance or [Reversionism](#). It is the Interlocking System of Arrogance which makes the largest contribution to malfunction of the Faith Rest Drill especially in any level of Recall of Metabolized Bible Doctrine. If a believer has no [Authority Orientation](#) there will be no ability to concentrate when learning Bible Doctrine and therefore none when under pressure to apply it. Malfunction of the Faith Rest Drill is what always results when ignorance exists. God will never permit any individual suffering, pressure or collective historical disaster without FIRST giving the chance to prepare for it with the inculcation of pertinent Bible Doctrine. The principles are:

- ✧ **Grace ALWAYS precedes Judgment.**
- ✧ **Bible Doctrine ALWAYS Precedes Disaster.**

Before any disaster strikes in life the believer will have the opportunity to accumulate the needed Bible Doctrine to handle it. He will be able to come through it as a result of [Sharing the Happiness of God](#) and being under Advanced Personal Love for God as [Occupation with the Person of The Lord Jesus, The Christ](#). He will have proper Historical Orientation and even Leadership Dynamics. Therefore, when the accurate presentation of Bible Doctrine is available the believer can fail to remember the doctrine under pressure for 2 reasons:

**Absence** – he was not there when it was taught as a result of Negative Volition from Interlocking System of Arrogance (degeneracy) or [Reversionism](#) (apostasy).

**Disinterest** – he was there but not concentrating or not focused on what was being taught therefore did not learn it or did not understand it.

This is very often what is seen in the ritual of attendance in church without the reality of concentration and this Ritual without Reality results in Bible Doctrine becoming MEANINGLESS. Perception and Application of Bible Doctrine is the only solution to adversity, pressure, catastrophe or disaster and therefore the importance of PRE-Disaster Bible Teaching, the Grace Interim. Obviously, Bible Doctrine inculcation is essential for the function of the Faith Rest Drill <sup>(5 stages)</sup> especially Stages 3-5 and especially in time of catastrophe or disaster. Reverse Concentration is what is required for the application of Bible Doctrine to personal suffering or collective disaster. It is also part of the ministry of God the Holy Spirit to give the ability to apply what has been learned under the [Filling of God the Holy Spirit](#), IF IT HAS BEEN LEARNED during Bible Doctrine teaching. No believer is prepared for disaster apart from the accumulation of Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul **PRIOR** to the disaster. God never permits suffering for blessing without first providing through [Logistical Grace](#) the needed doctrinal teaching for effective reverse concentration. Therefore, God never punishes or destroys the client nation without giving them the opportunity to accept Truth and Repent, ‘change their minds’. In other words, His Grace always precedes DISASTER and DIVINE DISCIPLINE. Believers in this Client Nation to God, United States of America, like the Thessalonian Believers who had received the needed Doctrine to understand and handle their suffering, failed to assimilate the doctrine and thus demonstrate gross spiritual failure as:

- ✧ Interlocking System of Arrogance involvement which is degeneracy.
- ✧ Reversionism from negative volition toward Bible Doctrine which is apostasy.

Whatever the form spiritual failure may be, whether honest rejection or simply neglect, the needed Bible Doctrine was and always will be taught prior to disaster. Necessary Bible Doctrine teaching which provides solutions to disaster always precedes historical or personal

disaster or testing.

The teaching of Bible Doctrine does not help idiots who reject it nor unstable people who distort it but it is foremost designed to bring the positive believer around to the reality of the Angelic Conflict. If a believer cannot come to the reality of Bible Doctrine and stop trying to engage in Arrogance and teach the teachers of doctrine then, when pressure occurs in life, he inevitably will FALL APART because of his saturated involvement in the Interlocking System of Arrogance. When these people are encountered it is clear that they are very WEAK persons saturated with Arrogance. God never punishes or destroys an individual or client nation without giving the opportunity individually or collectively to accept Truth or change their mind regarding it. One must never blame his own Negative Volition toward Bible Doctrine on others but only on self. Overreaction in any pressure situation is Arrogance and Arrogance is blindness to Bible Doctrine and Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul is the primary ESSENTIAL of life and only solution to pressure in life. Arrogance is destructive to concentration and concentration is necessary for effective Post Salvation Epistemological Rehabilitation through Perception, Cognition, Incultation & Metabolization of Bible Doctrine under Filling of God the Holy Spirit. Concentration is also the only means for application of Bible Doctrine to life also under the Filling of God the Holy Spirit. It is the epitome of Arrogance for a believer to neglect Bible Doctrine and then expect someone, like the Pastor Teacher, to spend his valuable time explaining what that believer has missed. NO ONE should ever sit and try to explain to some cluck what he should have gotten by spending his time learning doctrine when it was taught.

The story of the Rich Young Ruler is a story of the Arrogance of the physical seed of Abraham distorting the Truth of spiritual regeneration. When God administered the 5<sup>th</sup> cycle of Divine Discipline to Israel he removed the Arrogance of Israel as well as their past spiritual monopoly. The unbelieving Jew, even to this day, clings to the Mosaic Law and ritual of the past resulting in ritual without reality and no Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God. Ritual without reality produces Arrogance in many categories especially Self Righteousness along with the assumption that Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God can be accomplished by some human thought, motivation, word, action or function. This aspect of Self Righteousness deludes one into assuming he is doing the Will of God by all his human efforts. The spiritual heritage of Israel in the past focused attention on The Lord Jesus, The Christ as Jehovah Elohim the God of Israel. The unbeliever Jew, even to today, has accepted the superficialities of ritual without accepting the reality of faith in Christ as Messiah, the only savior. Therefore, the Self Righteous Jew in keeping the law is religious without being regenerate, as a result of lacking faith alone in Christ alone. These Self Righteous Jews try to keep the law for salvation but this Arrogance is inconsistent because it is not possible to keep the law yet the Jew still will not come to Faith in The Christ, who is the reality behind the ritual of the law.

One is never in control of his life unless he has options. The 6 Thinking Skills are basically Human IQ in life and must be converted to Spiritual IQ under Operation Z of the Grace Apparatus for Perception to gain spiritual momentum in the Plan of God. Options are decreased and destroyed when the believer is out of Fellowship with God, out from under the



Filling of God the Holy Spirit, in carnality or under the influence of EVIL and functioning in the production of Human Good. This takes the [Problem Solving Devices](#) off of the [Forward Line of Troops](#) of the soul and allows Stress to penetrate the soul where the Old Sin Nature then controls the soul. To increase options to recognize and function under the Protocol Plan of God it is necessary to develop the 10 Problem Solving Devices and deploy them onto the Forward Line of Troops of the SOUL. The greatest danger as hindrance of these efforts is involvement in the Interlocking System of Arrogance and the [Arrogance Skills](#), as well as having a lust for instant solutions. The Entanglement in the Interlocking System of Arrogance, the Interlocking System of Antagonistic Emotional Hatred, Ignorance of Bible Doctrine and Negative Volition toward Bible Doctrine all destroy Options in life for the believer.

Law of Volitional Responsibility tells us that all individual believers are totally responsible for everything they think, say and do and this responsibility is directly to God BECAUSE they are not members of the Royal Family of God. Whenever a believer sins, he will be disciplined as members of the Royal Family of God for putting himself out of the Plan of God, but he also will already have been under incredible self induced misery. ([Prov 3:12](#)) [Rev 3:14-20](#) documents believers who have advanced in the Spiritual Life and been given prosperity from God and who have passed the prosperity test and are not failing in any one of the 5 temporal Categories of their escrow blessing package. What very often occurs in failure of the advancing believer is that their Scale of Values changes from what has been developed based on Perception, Cognition, Incultation, Metabolization and Application of Bible Doctrine to other ideas developed from other areas as a result of influence from EVIL with Bible Doctrine being forgotten. This results initially in failure to be consistent with the intake of Bible Doctrine, then overt neglect and finally rejection of It. Some fall into involvement in the Arrogance System which allows the pressures of life to become stress in the soul. This then results in a dependence on temporal things, the details of life and other people, as solutions instead of the Metabolized Bible Doctrine which should be residing in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul. As a result whatever prosperity they may have takes over in their life as first priority instead of Metabolized Bible Doctrine controlling their life. If they lack prosperity the adversities of their life drive them to Reactions where they enter Reversionism and [Frantically Search](#) for some detail of life to bring them some level of happiness.

It is a marvelous blessing to break off friendship or any association with people who are so Arrogant, often involved in blind Arrogance, that they never see their stubbornness, intensity, implacability and lack of humor all of which are related to their incredible Arrogance. Life is too short to associate with these types and they are so full of themselves that the only person who would want to associate with them is someone twice as dumb as they are. People we know who are stubborn, Arrogant and self centered demonstrate that the more [Scar Tissue of the Soul](#) one builds the greater the Arrogance and the more this person is divorced from reality. The longer a person is divorced from reality the more [Mental Attitude Arrogance](#) they have and their [Jealousy](#), [Bitterness](#) and implacability pulls them into [Psychosis and Neurosis](#). Once people get away from reality under this system they drag with them anyone who wants to be their friend. By dragging these “friends” away from reality and the importance of reality they start a [Mutual Admiration Society](#) with its Arrogant and Inadequate relationships. This,

very rapidly, results in all the Arrogant ones becoming inadequate and vice versa and they all live in the dream world of personal self importance.

When too many believers in any area become totally divorced from reality and involved in religious legalism, having resisted or rejected Bible Doctrine, there will always be some sort of a disaster or catastrophe to kill them off. This is God, wiping them out under the [Sin Unto Death](#) Divine Discipline, removing their miserable persons from this life into a place far better for them and for the world as a whole. Very often, God has to remove believers of this type for the betterment of the DEVIL's world because they having resisted Bible Doctrine and become locked into the Cosmic Dynaspheres would cause the destruction of the Human Race. With their [Scar Tissue of the Soul](#) and [Blackout of the Soul](#) having accepted false systems and concepts from EVIL, their Arrogance grows beyond toleration and threatens the viability of the Human Race. It is a gross failing of any government to try to save these people in disaster situations instead of just preserving their freedom, privacy and property from criminality.

The origin of liberalism in this United States of America is based on people saying NO to the Truth so long that they can ONLY believe the LIE from EVIL. The more one accepts the LIE the more his IQ operates within the framework of the LIE. This is true for people of both Low and High IQ. This is why it is impossible to understand why government representatives think so stupidly and leave aware people wondering why they do not have enough common sense to realize what is True, beneficial and right and know that is wrong, detrimental and from EVIL. The Truth is that they do not know Truth from fallacy because they are blinded by the Degeneracy of Arrogance and by accumulated Scar Tissue of the Soul from the Apostasy of [Reversionism](#). The human mind was designed to think in terms of Truth and it was designed that way by God. When the human mind rejects the Truth it can ONLY believe the LIE and operate within that framework of the LIE which is derived from all aspects of EVIL. This is part of the system for the choice between GRACE and EVIL, the ultimate purpose of mankind.

Rejecting any doctrinal information as Absolute Truth is the cause of the individual or nation being subject to incredible and intensive Divine Discipline. When this occurs repeatedly the individual or nation is rejecting the Bible Doctrine and also the authority of the communicator so that when something derogatory or degrading is proclaimed about the communicator or positive members of the congregation which is a LIE, he will believe it. This always involves Arrogance and always is a rejection of authority and the principles in the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions which represent and reflect authority. Therefore, any “anti-establishment” attitude is Arrogance to the core as demonstrated by the hippies of the 60's and 70's in this country and the ‘black lives matter’ and ‘antifa’ movements of the early 21<sup>st</sup> century. The source of Arrogance is always rejection of some authority and it could start with rejection of parents or contemporaries or school authority and build into rejection of all authority except SELF. By saying no to authority, Bible Doctrine and other Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institution Truths, this person divorces self from reality by his own consistent negative attitude. As a result he then believes the LIE from EVIL such as ‘once you get on illicit drugs or smoke pot or down acid or speed you will have a better understanding of things in life’. This is the LIE millions of people believe today which has resulted in the

incredible drug problem and drug culture in the United States. Therefore, the whole principle of the degradation which occurs in Reversionism is extremely important in life. The more one says no to Truth in any of the 3 categories, the more he will be divorced from reality. The further one descends into Reversionism and builds Black Out of the Soul and Scar Tissue of the Soul the more the vacuum of the blacked out soul is filled with the LIE from EVIL as a basic motivator of life and the more likely it is that this person will always believe what is false.

### Negative Volition to Truth is Arrogance, Reversionism & Antagonism

Arrogance in the individual when in prosperity and its resultant Self Righteousness means Negative Volition to Bible Doctrine in times of prosperity. Arrogance in the individual when in adversity and its resultant Self Pity means Negative Volition to Bible Doctrine in times of adversity. **Therefore, all Negative Volition toward Bible Doctrine in all of the varying circumstances of life can be related to Arrogance.** This is the interaction and interlocking between Arrogant degeneracy, Reversionistic apostasy and Emotional antagonism. Therefore Arrogance, whether its manifestations occur in adversity or prosperity, produces strong Negative Volition. Although there may be other circumstances and attending difficulties in life all Negative Volition toward Bible Doctrine and the Grace Plan of God is therefore primarily a matter of Arrogance. Therefore, the vast majority of Negative Volition to Bible Doctrine is the direct result of some form of Arrogance. As a result, in the Arrogant individual, the greater the revelation and clear lucid presentation of the Truth of Bible Doctrine including the Gospel for the unbeliever, the greater the resistance to that Truth. Therefore, the communicator, the Pastor Teacher who makes Bible Doctrine lucid and perspicuous and the Evangelist who presents an accurate and lucid explanation of Salvation will have the greatest resistance to the Bible Doctrine he teaches. Thus the primary difference between Positive Volition and Negative Volition in the individual is HUMILITY and objectivity in contrast to Arrogance and subjectivity.

In the Status Quo of the individual which causes him to develop Scar Tissue of the Soul “the eyes don’t see and ears don’t hear” and once the perceptive system is shut down by Negative Volition not only does Arrogance resist doctrine but it falls back onto pseudo empiricism or false rationalism. This is the difference between a philosopher, a rationalist, who is anti-doctrine and a scientist, an empiricist, who is anti-doctrine and entertains theories which can make him pro-evolution. Once a believer rejects Bible Doctrine and the nonmeritorious means of perception of Bible Doctrine, Arrogance must select a system of perception which is compatible with whatever Arrogance is resident in the Stream of Consciousness of his Soul. The one’s available are Rationalism or Empiricism and this is the Arrogant philosopher or scientist. This is why the Pastor Teacher who is lucid in presentation of ‘existentialism’ or the ‘cultural’ aspects of Christianity in ancient times will have a very large congregation because he does not antagonize their Arrogance. Once you develop rationalism or empiricism you develop a shell for Arrogance thereby allowing the Interlocking System of Arrogance to crystallize into a life of tragedy, heartache and the distracting of others from the Spiritual Life. Arrogant people always assume that they are always right and the Pastor as the communicator and Bible Doctrine as the subject are from their perspective always wrong and to prove this they must gain converts to their system of thinking involving rationalism or empiricism. This is what makes a cult, an Arrogant rejection of Truth and acceptance of a system of perception involving

empiricism, rationalism or emotionalism. The more difficult the cult system is to comprehend the more acceptable it is to the Arrogant person and thus the Arrogant person divorces self from reality by this involvement, going from being sociopathic to neurotic to psychotic. This is why the “tongues” movement groups are not Christianity at all but are an empirical cult emphasizing their emotion, what they feel, over the Truth of Bible Doctrine. The pseudo Christian emphasis on brotherly love is the same emotional thing.

### **Negative Volition & Scar Tissue of the Soul**

When involvement in Reversionism persists long enough and Black Out of the Soul and Scar Tissue of the Soul occurs in the individual or the population in general, the restraint on Negative Volition is almost totally removed so that people ignore all warning signs that they are moving in the wrong direction in history. This is what occurred with the Jews standing in line to die under the Nazis and what I perceive as having occurred when people were standing in line in the United States of America 6 feet apart, with gloves and masks on, to get into Walmart to shop, during the fake news hype regarding the Wuhan CCP Virus of 2019-21. This in reality was the Design from EVIL, a part of the communist conspiracy, to overthrow the FREEDOM of this client nation to God. One part of the Interlocking System of Arrogance includes Depression and Discouragement which comes out of Self Pity involvement in a time of adversity.

The Arrogance factor involved in people's lives changes people and nice or pleasing people are changed or destroyed by it. Arrogance is stronger than anyone's personality and anyone with persistent Arrogance in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul can and eventually will be changed and possibly destroyed. What a person is, is what he thinks and if he thinks and functions primarily in Arrogance he WILL be changed. ([Prov 23:6-7](#)) Many generations in the United States have been propagandized by radio and television and in fact all the media, especially the entertainment media which has been used to propagandize the people with principles of Liberalism derived from EVIL. College professors are mixed up and confused because they are saturated with Arrogance having rejected Truth and built up [Scar Tissue of the Soul](#) and cannot believe Truth but only the LIE from the policy of EVIL. When one rejects Truth he not only builds up Scar Tissue of the Soul and simple [Mental Attitude Arrogance](#) but also a complex of attitudes which wait to respond or react to every situation. These attitudes respond to greater LIES from EVIL such as considering islam and communism to be good and beneficial and everyone should treat the moslems and communists nicely. This attitude however reacts to and totally rejects Absolute Truth in all 3 categories of the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions, the Gospel of Christ, and all of Bible Doctrine. This is believing the LIE which is in fact the policy structure of EVIL devised by Satan to rule this world under the Cosmic Dynaspheres. These people believe that signing treaties with communist countries or allowing refugees from islamic countries into the United States of America are NICE things to do and as a nice country the United States must do them. The whole time they fail to realize that the objective of both islam and communism is one of universal conquest and the methods they are using are much less expensive than overt war.

When a person says no again and again at God Consciousness, Gospel hearing, Bible Doctrine

presentation, any delineations of the Laws of Divine Establishment and the Divine Institutions and at any manifestation or representation of divine power they open up the (gr) ‘mataiotes’ or a vacuum in their soul. The more they reject God, the Gospel, Bible Doctrine or the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions the stronger the vacuum becomes and the more it sucks into the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul all the false doctrine and principles of EVIL in this world. This is the reason some believers become holy roller Pentecostals, some communists, some liberals, some just plain stupid, some religious and all totally saturated with EVIL. This occurs in an evolving pattern:

- ✧ Once a person rejects Absolute Truth it becomes vastly easier for them to accept error and falsehoods.
- ✧ The more easily they accept error the greater becomes their acceptance of error and the more it saturates the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
- ✧ The more error saturates the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul the easier it is to say no to the plan, will or purpose God may have for their life on this earth.
  - God keeps both the believer and unbeliever in this category alive so that as they continue to say no to Bible Doctrine and as a result they build up a greater rejection or calcification against all categories of Truth.
- ✧ The more these believers reject Truth the more they accept error and they think, talk and act like communists, socialists or holy rollers and are completely mixed up and confused ultimately destroying themselves.

These people who are consistent in their function under Negative Volition simply do not understand the greatest issue of life which is that ‘*what you are is what you think*’. Therefore, what one thinks is dependent on acceptance or resistance to and rejection of Absolute Truth in any of the 3 categories, especially Bible Doctrine for the believer in The Lord Jesus, The Christ. Whenever a believer resists any kind of accurate Bible Doctrine it develops a callous in his soul and as the callous grows and expands the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul becomes blind to that category of Truth. With persistence in this resistance to Bible Doctrine, they therefore become blind to any and all categories of Truth or applications of Truth to historical reality dealing with the subjects related to these Truths. This has become a far reaching trend today in American society and for Christians it often starts with rejection of the [Rebound Procedure](#) or any other category of Grace Truth and this inevitably leads to [Emotional Revolt of the Soul](#) even [Psychosis](#). Then as other Doctrinal principles are continuously rejected the believer moves deeper into the setting of apostate [Reversionism](#) where false doctrines presented will strengthen their [Blindness](#). Accepting false Doctrine or rejecting divine Truth will both build up callous in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul and result in blindness to many aspects of Truth from Bible Doctrine. The Jews, for instance, were clear on the Truth of the Laws of Divine Establishment in areas such as income tax, functions of authority, universal military training, functions of law and evidence but those parts of the Old Testament Scripture dealing with The Lord Jesus, The Christ they rejected and built up a callous there. They rejected Christ in the 1st advent and therefore reject the whole concept of Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God through faith alone in The Lord Jesus, The Christ alone in this dispensation of the Royal Family of God.



The ultimate factual result is that believers who reject Bible Doctrine are without a doubt the worst, most vicious, vile people on the face of the earth. There is nothing worse than a believer who rejects Bible Doctrine and has maximum Scar Tissue of the Soul resulting in his coming to only be able to believe the LIE from EVIL. A perfect example is demonstrated by the believers and unbelievers involved in distortions of the spiritual gift of Speaking in Tongues who reject Bible Doctrine. When one rejects Bible Doctrine he rejects the delegated authority of God and saying NO repeatedly results in entering the apostasy of Reversionism and degeneracy of Arrogance. The “LIE” encompasses every policy, principle and distortion from Satan found in his Cosmic Dynaspheres. The LIE, for the people involved in the tongues movement, is having an experience for salvation and for spirituality by speaking gibberish thus feeling emotionally stimulated. The true spiritual gift of Tongues was specifically designed to be used for 40 years, from AD 30 up to AD 70 only, to warn the Jews who lived in foreign lands, USING THEIR LOCAL LANGUAGES, of the coming of the 5<sup>th</sup> cycle of Divine Discipline to their nation with its total destruction. This gift was discontinued in AD 70 when the 5<sup>th</sup> cycle of Divine Discipline was administered to Israel and NO ONE has legitimately spoken in tongues for almost 2000 years. These people become involved in this distortion because they reject the Truth of Bible Doctrine and come to believe the LIE that how they feel is what determines their salvation or spiritual level. No matter how smart or dumb, rich or poor they are, with Arrogance and Scar Tissue of the Soul they believe the idiocy of this and many other LIES from the policy and plan of Satan. Once smart people with a higher IQ start believing a LIE from EVIL, IQ is no longer any value and common sense is discarded along with the ability to reason which results in their being divorced from reality.

Invariably, the less a person knows about Truth the more they are critical of it and this results in a greater build up of Scar Tissue of the Soul dragging them further into Reversionism. The more Scar Tissue of the Soul there is the greater the Arrogance of the person so that as a rule people who are always overtly critical are always interlocked into [Personal Opinion Arrogance](#). This Blindness to Truth in the soul of the believer or unbeliever is simply the Scar Tissue of the Soul, a later stage of Reversionism so that:

- The more one says no to God, the Gospel, Bible Doctrine or the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions, the more he is blinded to any Truth.
- The more one is blinded to Truth the greater becomes their Arrogance
- The more their Arrogance builds up the more they become divorced from reality.

God never brings to anyone greater Negative Volition but at times simply gives them more opportunity to say NO or YES but if they are totally divorced from reality they can only continue to say NO to all that God has for man. Saying no over and over again is what develops Scar Tissue, hardness, of the Right Lobe of the soul or [Inflexibility](#) and God, being a gentleman, never reaches in to adjust volition to be more or less Negative. God, having given man VOLITION to resolve the Angelic Conflict, NEVER tampers with anyone's volition but simply gives them greater opportunity to say no or change their own volition, when they exhibit consistent, persistent Negative Volition. Very few people have ever sassed God and lived but God, occasionally allowing this, uses it to evangelize the entire world, as he did with Amenhotep II. With regard to Absolute Truth:

- ✧ The more one says no to doctrinal Truth the more they become divorced from reality and thus the greater becomes the expression of their Arrogance.
- ✧ The greater one's expression of Arrogance and their disassociation from reality the more they move toward becoming psychotic.
- ✧ All psychotic people are totally Arrogant and their Arrogance is so great that they are totally divorced from reality and can only think of themselves and their own problems.

A person so blinded from a build up of Scar Tissue of the Soul has no sense of time except as it relates to themselves. These people are inflexible and totally out of touch with reality. Scar Tissue of the Soul always results in inflation, increase and expansion of human Arrogance so that:

- ✧ The more Scar Tissue of the Soul that develops from saying NO to God and resisting God the greater the Arrogance
- ✧ The greater the Arrogance the greater the Pettiness.
- ✧ The greater the pettiness the greater the superficiality.
- ✧ The greater the superficiality the more **IRRELEVANT** becomes the thinking of that individual.

Thus, their assuming that God does not know what he is doing is the greatest possible Arrogance and that he is unfair is even greater Arrogance adding vindictiveness and implacability to their picture of God, all which is incredible blaspheme.

The principle of Negative Volition leading to Scar Tissue of the Soul is clearly demonstrated when a person says 'NO' to the gospel, like the Jew who says no to something which he understood from the sacrifices and rituals of the Mosaic Law, and does this again and again so that all he has left is ritual without reality. He then no longer even understands those things which were perspicuous to him when they were first presented to him. This is the same thing which is occurring in the United States of America with regard to Freedom. Freedom is totally misunderstood by the people of this nation and freedom today in the United States of America is basically ritual without reality. This is what is demonstrated in the tongues movement where these people may have understood certain Bible Doctrines but have said no to them and consistently resisted Bible Doctrine. As a result of their Reversionism, as they built up a Blackout of the Soul and Scar Tissue of the Soul, they opened the door for uncontrolled emotion and this destroys their Spiritual Life. However, they will still be present face to face with the Lord in heaven after their death. It is an enormous tragedy for anyone with any potential, who has great perspicacity, to lose out in the Spiritual Life because of being self starved of the Truth. The Human Brain does not work properly without Oxygen or the Absolute Truth of Bible Doctrine including the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions. The fantastic result is that the more the Truth of Bible Doctrine resides in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul the greater the capacity for life a person will have.

There is nothing which can be done when others attack the believer who has strong Positive Volition toward Bible Doctrine, by their rejecting the Truth, especially when they are attacking the Pastor Teacher teaching the Truth of Bible Doctrine, as a result of their Arrogance. The believer under Positive Volition must simply ignore these attacks. He must set and live by the priorities developed through inculcation of Bible Doctrine placing its Absolute Truth first in his

life. Never should he join with anyone who attacks those who teach the Truth. These types should BEWARE for they will suffer incredible Divine Discipline and those being attacked will receive incredible divine blessing as a result. When one encounters people who are vicious and vindictive and want to malign those who teach Bible Doctrine or who are learning Bible Doctrine, he should avoid them by separation and NEVER get involved with any violence they may propose. Violence is not a problem solution and is of no use whatsoever and NEVER solves anything. Attacks regarding Truth are a soulish matter and it will never fix anything to engage in violence. These WILL be handled by the Supreme Court of Heaven and the positive believer involved must stay out of them for as soon as he involves himself in this antagonism he will share their Divine Discipline and life is far too short for this.

### Scar Tissue of the Soul & The Jew

No disaster can ever cancel either the present blessing to the Jewish remnant nor future blessing to restored Israel of the millennium and this answers the question of whether God has set aside his people; Definitely NOT! God is faithful and keeps his word and the faithfulness of God is based on the Integrity of God and which is composed of the Love of God, Righteousness of God and Justice of God. At the point of Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God, whether by Jew or gentile, the Righteousness of God is imputed to that believer. God has not set aside his people and still has a plan for the Jew but in this Church Age when the Jew accepts the Substitutionary Spiritual Death of The Lord Jesus, The Christ and makes Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God he becomes a member of the Royal Family of God as well. He also receives the Righteousness of God, that which Abraham, Isaac and Jacob had received at their salvation, ([Gen 15:6](#)) and God is therefore completely faithful. Divine judgment, no matter how devastating or wide spread, on degeneracy and apostasy never hinders blessing to the pivot of mature believers nor does this type of historical disaster hinder the momentum of their advance to [Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God](#) and beyond. Disaster very often makes acquiring a source of Bible Doctrine more difficult but for the believer with Positive Volition the message of Bible Doctrine will always be there to be learned for his spiritual growth to enable him to reach Spiritual Maturity or to go beyond it. Many times in Human History Jewish declension and apostasy have been so great that alarming segments of the world's Jewish population have been destroyed by Divine Discipline but this is not without their cognizance of divine nature and their having great opportunity to exercise Positive Volition toward the Plan of God. When these situations have occurred, those many Jews who died have said no to the Substitutionary Spiritual Death of The Lord Jesus, The Christ more times than Amenhotep II in the time of the exodus. When catastrophes occur such as the Nazi Holocaust or the Russian Executions, the Jews involved have had many chances to say YES to the Gospel of Christ but have consistently rejected all of the opportunities given them. Then, under the concept of the Scar Tissue of the Soul and intensification of Arrogance causing deep entanglement into the Interlocking System of Arrogance, these Jews have been removed. Historically gentiles also have suffered this way. In the Church Age both Jews and gentiles, at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God, become Royal Family of God and are neither Jew nor gentile any longer. This is a demonstration of the greatness of the Plan of God and provides an explanation for all the great tragedies to the Jews including those which occurred under the domination of socialism under Hitler or under Russian communism or the

tyrannical rulers of Spain or many other situations. Such disaster and destruction doesn't abrogate the Plan of God for TRUE Israel, that is those in the Age of Israel who have believed in Christ, nor does it hinder the future restoration of Israel at 2<sup>nd</sup> advent of Christ. Individual or collective Jewish failure cannot destroy the Jewish future, therefore, failure of Israel cannot hinder the Plan of God nor abrogate the future for Israel. In the Church Age God seeks through gentile believers those who are Jews and the Church Age is a reverse or Inversion of the processes of the Age of Israel where the Jews were missionaries to gentiles. Today many Jews in the world are the richest and most successful people of the world but their wealth and success cannot ever replace for them their spiritual heritage. This is their true wealth, which was and continues to be rejected, so that in their past this rejection has resulted in the 5<sup>th</sup> cycle of Divine Discipline administered to Israel for the last time in AD 70. Only when a Jew believes in The Lord Jesus, The Christ can he begin to understand and appreciate these words: (heb) Shamah Israel, Adanai Elohenu, Adanai Echod, "Hear, Listen and Concentrate Israel, The Lord is God, The Lord is UNIQUE". This is again a clear statement of the uniqueness of The Lord Jesus, The Christ, the God of Israel, the God / Man in Hypostatic Union at the 1<sup>st</sup> advent, totally rejected by the Jews. However, the Jews translate this to mean ONE instead of UNIQUE to reinforce their distorted ideas involved with their religion of Judaism which makes MONOTHEISM their focus rejecting the trinity of God.

When the racial Jew rejects The Lord Jesus, The Christ as savior he goes through a great deal more effort than the gentile does when he says NO to the gospel. First, he has all his spiritual heritage of the God of Abraham, Isaac and Jacob, and all the Old Testament Scripture documentation, then he hears the Gospel which indicates that his spiritual heritage is related to and fulfilled by The Lord Jesus, The Christ. In rejecting this he must use a great deal of Negative Volition Arrogance to do so and once he uses this level of Negative Volition as an unbeliever to reject Christ he locks himself into the Interlocking System of Arrogance and starts a slide down through Reversionism, interlocking with many of the other areas of the Arrogance System. This person, designed and selected by God, to become a blessing to himself and all mankind in his periphery, CANNOT have true happiness, blessing or prosperity in life. Once in the system of Arrogance he will be the passive Jew who lines up to die in some historical holocaust system which is the basis for removing him BECAUSE OF HIS NEGATIVE VOLITION TOWARD CHRIST AND DOCTRINE. This is yet another reason for the Jews not resisting their own destruction and succumbing to the Divine Discipline holocaust disasters.

### Negative Volition leading to Reversionism

When one stops taking responsibility for his own sins his thinking is no longer normal and he is no longer normal. Bitterness, malice, vindictiveness, vituperation, etc., is not normal because in all these and all other sinful situations the Old Sin Nature controls the soul and therefore the life. The believer therefore has 2 personalities, the personality which uses the mirror of the soul to self evaluate and correct personal dysfunctions and the one which rejects the evaluation of his soul mirror. When the Rebound Procedure is used, normalcy in the soul is reestablished but when rebound is rejected this can produce neurotic conditions which take the believer farther and farther from life's reality. Believers in the Royal Family of God must take responsibility for all their actions. They must remember that when they acquiesce to the

pressure from the Old Sin Nature to do something which is outside the realm of doctrinal Virtue and Values they must not cover it up with self righteous Arrogance. They must acknowledge it to God using the Rebound Procedure and return to normalcy. Without the rebound procedure a believer cannot be normal and will not live a normal life and will continue to find an excuse for his life so that his Self Justification, as a result, lies to him continuously whereby he eventually locks all sense of responsibility out of his life and decides he can do no wrong. Without Metabolized Bible Doctrine circulating in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul the believer tends to think of self in the terms of Locked in Arrogance. This invariably results in his DIVING HEAD FIRST into the 8 stages of Reversionism through some level of Negative Volition rejection or resistance to Bible Doctrine. The progression down in the Spiritual Life in reversionism leads to Black out of the Soul and Scar Tissue of the Soul resulting from Emotional Revolt of the Soul. This prevents previously learned Bible Doctrine from being usable because it is covered over with Scar Tissue of the Soul and eventually erased from the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul as the LIE from evil systematically replaces it. As a result he becomes like a person who has heard no Bible Doctrine ever.

In the development of or falling into Reversionism the beginning is a resistance to or rejection of some point of Absolute Truth especially Bible Doctrine for the believer. This causes a 'Reaction to Life' which involves discouragement, Disillusion, disenchantment, boredom, frustration and loneliness thus he develops a great instability in his life. In this stage, with Negative Volition, the believer meets with the Interlocking System of Arrogance as a means of being involved in both Reversionism and in the Arrogance complex. This reaction stage often involves the Interlocking System of Arrogance connecting with various mental, verbal and overt sins such as operation Vengeance or some reaction to the trends of contemporary history. The believer must avoid both, Reversionism and the Interlocking System of Arrogance from Negative Volition to Bible Doctrine which leads to involvement in any stage of the Arrogance Complex because as a believer in The Lord Jesus, The Christ he is here to MAKE CONTEMPORARY HISTORY not react to it. Ultimately when involved in Reversionism with a persistent Negative Volition toward Bible Doctrine there eventually occurs a Black Out of the Soul from lack of exposure to or acceptance of Bible Doctrine with the resultant infiltration of the false doctrines of demons labeled as the "LIE" from EVIL. Continued persistent Negative Volition toward Bible Doctrine and its Black Out of the Soul develops a callousness or hardening of the soul toward Truth called Scar Tissue of the Soul. Scar Tissue of the Soul as a blocking of both the Left Lobe of the Soul and Right Lobe of the Soul is the prevention of both inculcation and acceptance or metabolization of Bible Doctrine ultimately leading into deep entanglement in the various categories of the Interlocking System of Arrogance. When Bible Doctrine or any category of Truth is taught and Negative Volition rejects it then there is a subsequent build up of this Scar Tissue of the Soul. Every rejection of Absolute Truth in any category results in this building up of Scar Tissue of the Soul so that ultimately TRUTH cannot be understood and learned and therefore cannot be accepted or metabolized. In order for the individual to be able to continue to say no to Truth, Arrogance becomes a major issue and motivator. There is Arrogance in rejection of the Truth or the communicator of Truth and this is intensified until it becomes in time of prosperity Self Righteousness or in periods of adversity Self Pity. This is



another relationship or interlocking between the degeneracy of Arrogance and the apostasy of Reversionism.

Truth can be available from any area of life and rejection of it from any source causes one to build more Scar Tissue of the Soul. Legalism always takes a superficial approach to the Truths of sacred things such as the Eucharist, the original purpose of circumcision and the doctrines of the Mosaic Law. It skims off from the top those things which are acceptable to Arrogance and compatible with the function of legalism. Arrogance only ever accepts what appeals to Arrogance. Arrogance never accepts the true authority of the Mosaic Law, as in Codex I, the Decalogue, which demonstrates man's sinfulness and the necessity for his condemnation and, in fact, is not designed for mandated adherence. Arrogance believes that keeping these 'rules' of the Decalogue will give a permanent relationship with God. Arrogance looks at Codex II, the Spiritual Code, which is designed to demonstrate the Plan of God for salvation through faith in Christ and instead always uses human rather than divine ability to try to align with that plan. Arrogance relegates these Grace principles of doctrine to mere formalism and by so doing loses the significance of these doctrines including the Levitical offerings, the tabernacle furniture and the feasts in Codex II of the Mosaic Law. Christian and religious Legalism is one of the worst forms of Reversionism whereby one convinces himself, and is falsely certain in his Arrogance and pride, that he is absolutely right about everything regarding eternal salvation and spirituality apart from the Plan of God.

Whenever and for whatever reason the Rate of Learning of Bible Doctrine exceeds the Rate of Forgetting the Believer advances in the Spiritual Life under the Functions of the [Spiritual Skills](#) and deals with the [Problematic Battles](#) of Sin, Stress, Arrogance, Etc., in the soul properly. When the Rate of Forgetting, from rejection or neglect of Bible Doctrine, exceeds the Rate of Learning there is rapid decline in the Spiritual Life and entrance into Reversionism and the Interlocking System of Arrogance. The Arrogance of legalism cannot stand the Grace policy of God. Wherever legalism is found it is a distraction from the Spiritual Life for the Church Age and the Grace provisions of God for the Double column advance to the high ground of Maturity and Advanced Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and the resultant Pleroma Status with Maximum Glorification of God in time. The Double Column Advance combines Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul of the soul with [Reciprocal Love for God](#) as motivation. This motivation results from the (gr) 'Epignosis' Doctrinal Knowledge of the Love which God had for the Human Race in Eternity Past before man even existed motivating Him to provide a process for man's salvation and spiritual advance. Legalism lives in fear that Grace principles will somehow corrupt Believers where as, ironically, it is in fact legalism which corrupts Believers.

When the church age believer, makes Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God through faith alone in The Lord Jesus, The Christ alone he is ELECTED into the greatest plan in human history the Protocol Plan of God. The Final objective of this plan is the believer's growth to Advanced Spiritual Maturity with its Cognitive Invincibility and then his participating in and passing [Evidence Testing \(2 categories\)](#) resulting in Maximum Glorification of God. As in any other system of FREEDOM every believer has the opportunity to use their volition to become a

loser or a winner by virtue of their own decisions. When people excuse their bad decisions they get into a system of Arrogance and loose their objectivity about themselves. When the believer looses [Objectivity](#) as a result of Arrogance he has cracked the mirror of his soul and does not see himself in the light of the Metabolized Bible Doctrine in his Stream of Consciousness of the Soul. It is the function of the [10 Problem Solving Devices](#) to prevent Arrogance from overwhelming the soul and distorting the mirror of the soul. In the drive toward Maximum Glorification of God the [7 Categories of Momentum Testing](#) for the believer include Providential Preventative People, Thought, System, Disaster, Prosperity Testing and Evidence Testing regarding Relationship with God or People & Life. When the believer encounters People Testing at any level he must first deal with it using the [Faith Rest Drill \(5 stages\)](#), Problem Solving Device #3, for a while and that can take his mind off of the testing but only for a while. When he finally acquires the blessing of [Sharing the Happiness of God](#), Problem Solving Device #9, he can pass people testing and put it behind him. In addition Sharing the Happiness of God also passes the Thought Testing with regard to the unkind things others think and say about him such in their resentment, bitterness, jealousy, maligning, gossip, etc., and all of the myriad of failures possible in thought testing. System Testing occurs where organizational injustice causes the administrators of an organization to be conspired against by the labor and this brings the potential for the conspirators to gain the believer's support which, when this occurs, moves that believer into Status Quo [LOSER Believer](#). Unless the believer has acquired Problem Solving Device #9, Sharing the Happiness of God he cannot ever truly pass this test. Ultimately Disaster Testing can only truly be passed with the blessings which come from Sharing the Happiness of God and being at a level of cognitive invincibility in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God where he has developed advanced Personal Love for God as Occupation with the Person of The Lord Jesus, The Christ. So that when the believer passes these tests he is securely in the status of Spiritual Maturity. Upon reaching Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and receiving his 5 temporal categories of Super - Grace Escrow blessings he will inevitably experience Prosperity Testing which requires the application of the Advanced Problem Solving Devices in order to pass it. With persistence in Post Salvation Epistemological Rehabilitation he will continue [Progressing](#) from Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God with support from Logistical Grace and his Escrow Super – Grace blessings through the No Man's Land of Intermediate Spiritual Maturity toward Advanced Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God where he receives his Ultra Super – Grace blessings and where he is then subjected to Evidence Testing because of having attained the status of Invisible Hero. ([Phil 1:20-21](#))

One reason that the believer can become distracted in his function in the Spiritual Life is that IF he enters the Adult Spiritual Life with his own agenda, rejecting God's agenda, he is functioning within the [Arrogance Skills](#). When he functions through the Arrogance Skills he basically LIES to himself. When he LIES to himself he finds excuses for everything and goes through life with an impudence toward God which is reflected toward people. As a result of this he moves to functioning under the [Self Deception](#) Arrogance Skill. As a result of this level of function on his own agenda and ignoring God's Agenda he can have no happiness in life. The Negative Volition of the believer or unbeliever which moves him into the 8 stages of [Reversionism](#) also results in entrance into the Interlocking System of Arrogance and when

persistent enough into the Interlocking System of Antagonistic Emotional Hatred. This occurs along with other negative emotions, crowding out thought and as a result syndromes are developed from Reversionism including:

- ✧ Socialism
- ✧ Cowardice
- ✧ Inadequacy
- ✧ Guilt
- ✧ Legalism
- ✧ Anti Establishment-ism
- ✧ ETC.

Therefore the rejection of Absolute Truth which interlocks with the Mental Attitude of **Pride** leads to eventually and inevitably destroying freedom. So often quoted, by so many in academics who do not understand the ramifications of it, is this paraphrased principle; ‘You shall know the Truth and the Truth shall make you free’. This biblical phrase is, in fact, saying that **IF** you decide, maybe you will and maybe you will not, under Positive Volition, to accept Absolute Truth in the 3 categories of the Gospel, Bible Doctrine, and the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions, this will make you Free and preserve your FREEDOM. It is Negative Volition Arrogance which rejects Truth and the authority of the communicator of it or makes an issue of the personality of the communicator over the content of his message. Collective accepting of the LIE from EVIL, as a result of rejecting these Truths, is the overriding destructive factor which ultimately destroys client nation functions and calls for the Justice of God to execute the cycles of discipline on that nation. The problems which have faced the Jews in their history in Israel and in the United States of America today start with both believers and unbelievers believing these LIES from EVIL. All principles related to Absolute Truth are found in the Bible Doctrines of scripture which include the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions. Under the Laws of Divine Establishment there is the principle of Free Enterprise. Under Free Enterprise there is the concept that motivation for business is PROFIT. When a person goes from rags to riches under this principle, it motivates others to go into business and start small and face the problems and difficulties of being in business and generating an income then parlaying this into something bigger and making a profit small or big. This is part of an Absolute Truth and when a society or group says no to this and desires the greatest good for the greatest number in socialism and its welfare state functions, it builds COLLECTIVE Black out of the Soul resulting in COLLECTIVE Scar Tissue of the Soul. This collective increased Scar Tissue of the Soul opens a vacuum in the COLLECTIVE soul which brings in these LIES from EVIL. Arrogance + Believing the LIES of the Plan and Policy of Satan, results in the problems which exist today in government, bureaucracies, foreign & domestic policies and Americans departing from the true American way of life. This produces great instability in the nation and the individual which is demonstrated as:

- ✧ Self Righteousness in time of prosperity
- ✧ Conversion of Self Righteousness to Self Pity in time of adversity
- ✧ Oscillation as prosperity and adversity cycle forming a great instability in life resulting in Guilt.
- ✧ Slavery to details and circumstances of life

Therefore, Negative Volition Arrogance inevitably manifests itself as Self Righteousness and Self Pity oscillating and cycling while moving from Prosperity to Adversity and as a result producing total instability in life.

### **Arrogant Subjectivity in Perception of Bible Doctrine.**

Another personal tragic flaw involves Arrogant Subjectivity with overemphasis of one's personal problems when involved in Bible Study whether one is being taught in a congregation or sitting in front of a recording device. Saturation with and total focus on one's personal problems makes his interpretation of any passage of scripture fit into his personal problems and as a result the believer does not hear the actual interpretation nor can he therefore understand the proper application when it is presented. When the believer begins bible study with what he considers to be an insurmountable problem hanging over him, he is so full of subjectivity that he cannot assimilate the information being presented. Bible Doctrine is the **ESSENTIAL** of life and it DEMANDS Perception, Cognition, Incultation & Metabolization and absolute **INFLEXIBILITY** in determining the reality of life. EVERYTHING ELSE IN LIFE IS A DETAIL OF LIFE. (**Proverbs**) Attitude toward Bible Doctrine must be inflexible and what the bible says about any given thing must be the believer's reality. (**2Pet 1:12-21**) When there is a difference between what the bible says and what the believer is experiencing, the bible is right and his experience is wrong. Personal problems are 'nonessentials', **DETAILS** of life, which only demand application of Bible Doctrine and at the same time personal exercise of flexibility, pliancy, manageability therefore regulation, restraint and relentlessness during functions under the Grace Apparatus for Perception.

The believer must never get sloppy about his Post Salvation Epistemological Rehabilitation from Perception, Cognition, Incultation & Metabolization of Bible Doctrine or he will be sloppy in his thinking and fail the momentum tests of life as a result of failing to make the divine perception recovery system work for him. In almost every case without exception the only thing left to the believer after his failure is personal Arrogance, sin, emotion and **Reversionism** which can only be removed by the consistent intake of Bible Doctrine after proper and consistent function under the **Rebound Procedure**. Attitude toward Bible Doctrine on any given day will be what determines if a believer has advanced or retreated for that day in his Spiritual Life and when the day ends he will be either better or worse but NEVER the same. When the believer drifts off from concentration on the Bible Doctrine being taught, it is a loss for him and when he loses this concentration then all his talent, ability, good deeds, sweet personality, etc., are absolutely USELESS to him and are simply the characteristics of a loser. Women have a greater difficulty than men in concentrating when there is repetition of principles and information and women as responders are naturally more Arrogant than men (however as we readily know men also are immensely Arrogant in their own right) and theirs is almost a vicious Arrogance.

The believer must RESTRAIN self when listening to bible teaching and must never only tune into the bible teaching when something seems to be applicable to his problem nor when he can distort a scripture for personal reasons. He must listen to the interpretation, which is essential before the application, and he must not spend any time thinking about personal problems otherwise the **Grace Apparatus for Perception** will not function for his edification. When a

believer attends bible study and complains that “doctrine does not work”, the Grace Apparatus for Perception is not providing him with any saturation of Bible Doctrine into his soul because his focus and attention is on his personal problems and how to solve them and not the Bible Doctrine. His shortcoming is in his own lack of self discipline, self regulation, self restraint and ultimately a saturation with total Arrogance. This believer thinks that his personal problems are more important than anything in life and he is totally inflexible about them and as a result disassociated from reality, especially the reality of the function of the Grace Apparatus for Perception. Personal problems must not ever be a distraction to objectivity in approaching bible teaching whether bible study is accomplished in a local church or in front of a recording device. The reality of life is that everyone has personal problems but one must be flexible about his problems in order to accumulate the doctrine provided by God needed for his personal SOLUTIONS. Every believer will always have personal problems but he must remain totally flexible, pliable and know when to think about problems and when to ignore them. The person who trains himself to think only about his problems is involved in Selfcenteredness and [Egocentricity](#) even to the point of Megalomania. One of the most important aspects of having capacity for life is timing and knowing when to address problems in life and when to set them aside and concentrate on something more important.

If one’s focus is on his problems to the exclusion of all else he lacks self discipline which is provided under the [Filling of God the Holy Spirit](#) during the function of the Grace Apparatus for Perception. Moving out of problem focus and into the self disciplined doctrine focus is the reason for silent prayer and use of the Rebound Procedure before bible study begins. Therefore, under the principles of self discipline and [Authority Orientation](#) the believer must be REGULATED under the Filling of God the Holy Spirit to approach Bible Doctrine with objectivity and concentration. He must set aside personal subjectivity when under bible teaching in order to function under the Grace Apparatus for Perception and assimilate all the doctrinal information. No matter how beautiful the face or perfect the body when there is total subjectivity in a person they are not a truly beautiful person. The Filling of God the Holy Spirit restrains occupation with personal problems as a non essential during bible teaching and provides the self discipline needed to regulate focus onto Bible Doctrine to the exclusion of all else. ([Rom 12:2-3](#))

Objectivity or sanity means that when in bible study the believer must listen to the interpretation of any given passage and the principles elucidated to the exclusion of any other thought focus. When rational and without illusion, believers are flexible in the non-essentials and inflexible about the essentials of life. The proper process of Perception, Cognition, Inculcation and Metabolization under the Grace Apparatus for Perception allows rationalization and therefore the removal of the problem consideration but not the solving of the problem. Therefore, erroneous concentration on personal problems during bible study is inflexibility with regard to non-essentials. In fulfilling the function of the Grace Apparatus for Perception, Cognition, Inculcation & Metabolization of Bible Doctrine the believer must understand the interpretation of a passage of scripture in terms of grammar, syntax, exegesis, isogogics, and of course contextual application. Bible Doctrine was given to man for the purpose of providing and developing problem solutions and in fact will solve all personal problems but the believer



must first LEARN IT. Failure to set aside personal problems when under bible teaching results in the believer injecting Arrogance into the function of the Grace Apparatus for Perception and subjectivity in his approach to the word of God. Inflexibility toward the nonessentials divorces one from the reality of what any passage of scripture is actually teaching. The passage must be understood based on what it is actually teaching and not based on what one wants it to teach. Bible Doctrine is not designed for the convenience of the believer but for his edification and advance to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God. Correct interpretation of Bible Doctrine is essential while subjective distortion of Bible Doctrine to justify self or solve personal problems is nonessential. It becomes Arrogant presumption and Egocentric subjectivity to presume that every scripture is related to one's current personal problem. Consequently, instead of objectivity in approaching doctrinal teaching for the purpose of receiving the correct interpretation and application, believers often subjectively distort what is heard to relate it to their immediate problem so that their approach is subjective and they do not profit from the teaching at all. This tragic flaw neutralizes Positive Volition and hinders spiritual advance and produces both [Self Centered](#) and [Sociopathic Arrogance](#) tying directly into Reversionism. To be inflexible about the essentials of Bible Doctrine and flexible about the nonessentials of application of that doctrine the believer must comply with [2Cor 10:5](#). Therefore, the believer MUST function under a relentless motivation to objectively pursue Bible Doctrine constantly and consistently in order to move from the spiritual infancy of Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and thereby glorify God.

It is inevitable that in bible study believers will hear something with which they may violently disagree and are tempted to react to strongly in their soul. The poise and manners and ability to not react is the development of objectivity in life. One always hears things in life with which he does not agree and to react to them is the beginning of subjectivity. Often, despite being right in a disagreement, reaction can develop a subjectivity which destroys the ability to recognize, understand and appreciate the Truth. As subjectivity develops it is an entrance into the Interlocking System of Arrogance and there is a very close relationship between subjectivity and selfcenteredness. The reaction of thinking or saying "That is wrong or That is crazy" produces subjectivity and one may be right or wrong but in both cases he loses. He is a loser because he lacks the poise in his thinking to give something with which he disagrees an objective hearing or to approach it with a sense of humor. Once one learns to hear things which are foreign or contrary to his thinking or something of which he is suspicious or that which he outright rejects, but he maintains the ability to continue to listen and concentrate on it, this is objectivity which linked with poise will provide the opportunity for success in many areas of life. The believer especially must learn to listen to things with which he disagrees and without 'off hand' reaction in order that he might maintain the essentials of objectivity. One often fails in this, having too much subjectivity in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul, and he must not develop a habit of saying 'this is right' or 'this is wrong'. When he declares something is wrong in his Stream of Consciousness of the Soul and reacts violently by mouthing off to others, this, in effect, becomes [Institutional Arrogance](#). He must learn to keep his mouth shut recognizing there must be a good reason for the principle or policy he rejects and if there is not then that policy will die by itself but he must maintain his objectivity above all else. Failure in this area is what causes the destruction of leadership abilities in any organization.

Therefore, believers must learn from Bible Doctrine to not react when something is presented with which they disagree. Academically, even though disagreeing, one must always listen and give the subject a hearing. If the concepts are false they will die and being false one will know they are false after giving them a hearing. When one reacts after initially hearing only a part of a subject one does not agree with he can never have the whole picture of the subject, and this is true of anything and everything in life. The television program “Mash” is the best presentation of the liberalism of 1979 and the throw away lines there are better than any dialogue in any movie and the remarks they make on the way to the latrine are better than any current movie. “Mash” as humorous and entertaining as it actually is could not be enjoyed when a reaction is made to every line that one disagreed with. This reaction system is why many people will never make good leaders and why some never make it at all in life. Believers do not compromise doctrine when they hear things which are obviously wrong but ONLY when they react violently to the things they disagree with. If one constantly reacts in his soul to things he hears or observes, he is not hearing what is being said or why things are being done. It does not compromise doctrine, even if the things are absolutely wrong, when one is calm about them and gives them a complete hearing, this is objectivity in practice. Many times one will discover that he did not understand correctly the subject in the first place, in fact this very often happens when learning Bible Doctrine. When one becomes Arrogant he becomes universally very wrong because Arrogance takes everything personally and loses objectivity and produces a subjectivity which is [Hypersensitivity](#).

One never gets anywhere by overreacting to or renouncing the pleasant or even the adverse things in life but must simply recognize them for what they are and remember that they are no substitute for consistent intake of Bible Doctrine. One can enjoy these things or be nauseated by them but must never renounce life because he has been having too much enjoyment of life or because he has been under too much pressure and failed. The believer must have priorities in place to make sure that maintaining and increasing the inner residence of Bible Doctrine is Priority #1 and that this supersedes all other considerations in life. After any great failure in the Spiritual Life Bible Doctrine must be relearned from the beginning because entrance into and function down through the stages of reversionism ERASES Bible Doctrine from the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul. When Bible Doctrine is relearned after failure this is to ensure that it becomes the highest priority and that the focus of concentration on it is the order of the day for learning it. All superficialities of life are not to be discarded by the believer but recognized as superficialities and enjoyed when pleasant or avoided or tolerated when adverse. Some distraction of the past must be recognized as what it is, superficial, and not be renounced but avoided as a probable recurrent distraction. When there is overreaction to whatever causes distractions and they are renounced this builds up the Arrogance of legalism instead of spiritual momentum. The believer then becomes [Proud](#) of having given up something which distracts them from Bible Doctrine. There must never be overreaction to that which distracts from Bible Doctrine because it is Arrogance to “give up” things which distract from doctrine. In so doing the problem has been recognized but has been solved in the wrong way.

When something distracts from consistent intake of Bible Doctrine the blame must fall squarely

on the believer not the thing which distracts since putting blame on the distractor builds the greatest case of Arrogance imaginable. This Arrogance becomes apparent when the doctrine taught in repetition is ignored because the believer has “heard it before”. There is more pride and Self Righteousness in fundamental Christianity than almost any other group today and it comes from over reaction to and compensation for or attempted elimination of, failures or distractions. When the believer uses these processes to solve distractions he has made self the weakest person around since Arrogance is more vulnerable to involvement in producing Sin, Crime or Human Good from EVIL than anything else. The believer must be very careful in giving up things in life, whether sins or pleasures or even legalistic taboos because when one brand of a thing is set aside another brand of a similar failure is picked up and usually is worse. Overreaction is Arrogance and Arrogance is blindness to Bible Doctrine and Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul is the Essential of life. Arrogance is destructive to concentration and concentration is the essential means of Perception, Cognition, Inculcation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine under the Filling of God the Holy Spirit and the Grace Apparatus for Perception. In addition, Concentration is essential as the means of application of Bible Doctrine to life which also must occur under the Filling of God the Holy Spirit.

Until the believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God or Advanced Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God, like Elijah, understands that his Arrogance produces false information in his Stream of Consciousness of the Soul he will not be able to recover. Understanding the Truth as a mature believer with maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul, but, because of Arrogant subjectivity and hypersensitivity, making an issue of self instead of recognizing that whatever one’s purpose is in life, it is in fact GOD’s purpose, he thereby destroys himself. This demonstrates that even one who may be as great as Moses or Elijah can be leveled by Arrogance and subjectivity. It is not the individual believer, especially when under selfcenteredness, which preserves his nation, it is the entire collective pivot of mature believers. It is essential in every generation for a maximum number of believers to respond to Bible Doctrine and grow in Grace and enter the pivot because it is the pivot which is the key to the function of the client nation to God. When one reaches the pivot area of Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God he must avoid this danger of Arrogance. To the extent that disaster or prosperity becomes a major issue to the believer, to that extent, HE IS SUBJECTIVE and loses the application of bible doctrine. A major hindrance to growing in Grace in the Spiritual Life obviously then is involvement in the Interlocking System of Arrogance or the abuse of some type of Human Good Production assuming this will bring salvation, spiritual growth or blessing from God. Both human effort works and Self Righteousness compete with and exclude Grace provision as the principle of the Plan of God. Spiritual momentum and motivation is based on Grace while the degeneracy of Arrogance and the apostasy of Reversionism are based on human works or talent.

Divine principles from Bible Doctrine are the basis for true wealth in life and Bible Doctrine focus’ on the source, God, so that Logistical Grace and Super – Grace blessings do not become distractions to believers. The believer must identify security as the Integrity of God not the provisions from his integrity. In the process of engaging in Giving, there should be occupation

with the source not with the money or whatever is given. Once one comes to the point in life of saying “so be it” then he understands that Christ is the source and agent of all that he has. This is spiritual objectivity. Everything is for his purpose in time and eternity and Arrogance, as the underlying fundamental part of the plan and policy of Satan, is the major detractor from this principle. Therefore, involvement in Arrogance results FROM, and is designed to produce, rejection of or distraction from learning Bible Doctrine. As unusual as it may seem, an advancing believer can become so proud of what he has learned in Bible Study that he distorts it into a form of entry into the Interlocking Systems of Arrogance. Since Bible Doctrine cannot be applied with the [Faith Rest Drill \(5 stages\)](#) unless one actually has learned and knows doctrine, the secret of this doxology is to relate one’s life, function, motivation, thoughts, decisions and actions to the principle of Perception, Cognition, Incultation & Metabolization of Bible Doctrine. As a believer in The Lord Jesus, The Christ until one can objectively move to the formation and use of [Doctrinal Rationales](#) from the Metabolized Bible Doctrine accumulated in the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul in stage 5 of the Faith Rest Drill he has nothing to actually SOLVE problems with.

Return to the [Table of Contents](#)

### [Gate #3 – The Arrogance of Ignorance](#)

The Arrogance of Ignorance always motivates for violence and often totally destroys a good cause or right viewpoint. An illustration was John Brown the fanatic from Connecticut who was out to free slaves and went to Kansas and made raids on Missouri until he was finally destroyed. On one of his “famous” attacks in Kansas he murdered the blacks he was supposed to be helping to free. This man was totally preoccupied with himself and only related himself in arrogance to his crusade to change the world and free the slaves in his own way, by Violence. When one resorts to violence as a solution he inevitably destroys his own cause whether it is a right cause or a wrong cause.

This is not Negative Volition to Bible Doctrine but the RESULT of Negative Volition to Bible Doctrine. This is the Arrogance of living without the soul being saturated with the Absolute Truth of Bible Doctrine. The Arrogance of Ignorance corrupts power, authority, talent, success, promotion, genius, wealth, social life, sexual life, business life and spiritual life. It relates to client nation concepts and the history of peoples but is interlocked with every level of [Negative Volition Arrogance](#) which results in [Reversionism](#) and Strong Delusion. As the result of Negative Volition Arrogance it is therefore a contrast to the Christian Way of Life in that it is living life without Absolute Truth resulting from involvement in Reversionism or Negative Volition at God consciousness. Therefore, the Arrogance of Ignorance comes from failure in Reception, Retention or Recall of Bible Doctrine, thus failure to use the [Grace Apparatus for Perception](#), Operation Z. The Arrogance of Ignorance is the believer living his life in time without Bible Doctrine and without its application to his life. In the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul there are 2 kinds of accumulations of Bible Doctrine:

- (gr) [Epignosis](#) being moved by God the Holy Spirit into the Right Lobe when (gr) [Gnosis](#)

Bible Doctrine in the Left Lobe of the Soul is metabolized or accepted by faith.

- (gr) [Sophia](#) which is wisdom moving out of the Right Lobe in application to conditions and situations of one's life.

In the fragmented life if there is any epignosis in the soul of the believer it is buried by the influence of Evil in [Reversionism](#) and entanglement within the Interlocking System of Arrogance, and will eventually be ERASED totally from the Right Lobe of the soul and replaced by the principles and doctrines of EVIL. As a result there is and can be NO (gr) Sophia or wisdom for application to life. This inevitably results in the fragmented life becoming a disaster in itself where every conceivable aspect of life is destroyed. However, Absolute Truth is found in 3 categories:

- The Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions for all of mankind
  - Guaranteeing freedom in a nation
- The Gospel of The Lord Jesus, The Christ for the unbeliever
- The entire realm of Bible Doctrine from the Word of God for the believer
  - Guaranteeing advance and fulfillment of the Plan of God

The trend of the Arrogance of Ignorance explains much of African history and the problems of many pristine societies. This Arrogance of Ignorance, having been caused by Negative Volition at God Consciousness, results in one becoming involved with the LIE from EVIL, the policy of Satan for ruling this world. There is then continued function under this policy based on the Modus Operandi of strong delusion. This therefore includes rejection of free enterprise systems for proper economic function in a nation and all other divine establishment principles along with rejection of all the concepts and functions of the Divine Institutions. This is the Status Quo of the general population of the United States of America today.

The Arrogance of Ignorance results in 4 problems in the soul related to [Reversionism](#):

- [Black out of the Soul](#)
- [Scar Tissue of the Soul](#)
- Strong Delusion from locked in [Negative Volition](#) which is the peak of demon influence which results in neuroses, psychoses, psychopathic behavior, mental disturbances, moodiness, ETC.
- [Emotional Revolt of the Soul](#)

As one is degrading and destroying his life by moving down through the stages of Reversionism Black out of the Soul and Scar Tissue of the Soul are built up through rejection of Bible Doctrine, or any Absolute Truth, either deliberately or INADVERTENTLY. Accompanying this build up of Scar Tissue of the Soul is Arrogance where [Pride](#) increases in proportion to the level of Scar Tissue of the Soul. Arrogance is not necessarily Reversionism but Reversionism invariably leads directly into the Interlocking System of Arrogance. This Scar Tissue in the Soul begins in the Left Lobe of the Soul where it distorts the Frame of Reference and Norms and Standards to the point that when absolute truth is presented, one cannot comprehend its significance and thus cannot set it up for a decision to accept or reject it. Thus Absolute Truth is never able to be transferred to the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul where it can be integrated for the construction of Sophia, wisdom for application to situations and circumstances in life. This Scar Tissue of the Soul builds up sealing off the frame of



reference, memory center, vocabulary and categorical storage, norms and standards and thus emphasizes the Black Out of the Soul and creation of the Vacuum in the soul for information. This vacuum will allow only the LIE from Evil to penetrate the soul and the build up of these conditions ultimately results in the individual ONLY being able to believe the fallacy of the LIE. The Scar Tissue of the Soul also covers the self consciousness and results in the narcissus complex and slides over the volition causing constant wrong decisions and thereby allows the Old Sin Nature to continuously control the soul by feeding into the emotion which then mutinies in the soul in Emotional Revolt of the Soul. As a result of all of this interaction in the soul, Black Out of the Soul and Scar Tissue of the Soul constantly increase creating a stronger and stronger vacuum in the soul for the LIE, which when it is drawn into the soul ERASES any resident Bible Doctrine from the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul, all of which intensifies Arrogance. It causes the believer to pick one personally attractive entrance and move rapidly and gleefully into the Interlocking System of Arrogance even as a mature believer. A person may be under Positive Volition to Bible Doctrine and often still have great areas of Ignorance since this is inevitable and it will produce at some time a level of Arrogance called Blind Arrogance in contrast to deliberate rejection of Bible Doctrine which results in obvious vanity. Consistency and Persistence in the Perception, Cognition, Incultation & Metabolization of Bible Doctrine destroys the potential of Arrogance because it eradicates any spheres of Ignorance.

If, however, Arrogance is caused by rejecting or neglecting Bible Doctrine then it is deliberate and coincident with involvement in the apostasy of Reversionism. If Ignorance is the result of spiritual immaturity then it is inadvertent but still real and can result in blind Arrogance if the motivation for the intake of Bible Doctrine waivers. Arrogance is always involved when there is any function of comparing oneself to others. Since Jews are most often much smarter than gentiles, gentile believers often suffer from inferiority complex feelings which can only be assuaged by proving themselves better than Jews and this results in the Arrogance of Antisemitism. The Big Blot Out by Israel and Jewish Scar Tissue of the Soul results from rejection of The Lord Jesus, The Christ as savior. This Big Blot Out resulted in the 5<sup>th</sup> cycle of Divine Discipline for the Jews in AD 70. The Lord God of Israel has given the gentile believer in the Church Age the opportunity to fulfill the functions of a client nation which were taken from the Jews under this current 5<sup>th</sup> cycle of Divine Discipline. However, opportunity must never be converted to Arrogance and with promotion, success and new opportunities there is also greater responsibility and the believer must constantly beware of the creeping infiltration of Arrogance into the soul. Great opportunity often makes one vulnerable to Arrogance and when combined with Ignorance produces stronger Arrogance. In both cases believers must avoid this and in every case avoid Antisemitism which is devastating Arrogance which has been demonstrated in the politics and past policies of the United States of America and clearly demonstrated by the Obama administration.

As long as the mystery doctrines of the Church Age remain a mystery and believers remain ignorant of them Arrogance is inevitable. The United States of America has been and still is the most arrogant nation in the entire world. This has not always been true in American history. Americans have had opportunities for true greatness but the Arrogance factor has

caused a national decline to the point of being on the brink of self destruction and invasion. When Americans forget for even a moment the spiritual factor of this nation's heritage and life, individually and collectively, they will have a totally miserable time in life. If the believer loses track of spiritual values even for a day or two his capacity for life will leave him. Even though he may have advanced in the Spiritual Life because of consistent Perception, Cognition, Incultation & Metabolization of Bible Doctrine he must remember he is just as vulnerable to the degeneracy of Arrogance and apostasy of Reversionism as any other believer. The Status of Reversionism is extremely high today in Americans but the level of involvement in the Interlocking Systems of Arrogance is far greater and will do, for the advancing or mature believer, what the apostasy of Reversionism does for others and will result in that believer being totally disoriented to reality. Under these conditions all Divine Punishment and Divine Discipline is a memorial to the believer's Ignorance of Bible Doctrine and the destructive power of Arrogance in the believer. This, when combined with emotionalism, eliminates the accumulated knowledge of Bible Doctrine, the Thinking of Christ. ([1Cor 2:16](#)) In other words believers are supposed to LEARN from Divine Discipline that one cannot say he is right about things when he is wrong, this is Legalism, Arrogance and Emotionalism.

The Arrogance of Ignorance is also based on failure in following the transition in the temporal realm of authority in the home to functioning under freedom in life. In the spiritual realm it is failure to move from Ignorance at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God to invincible cognizance at Spiritual Maturity. The Arrogance of Ignorance is failure in either or both of these 2 areas since in both these transitions require moving from Ignorance to Cognizance. In the home the individual must learn the rules of Life from parents and in the Spiritual Life he must learn the principles of Bible Doctrine from his RIGHT Pastor Teacher. This transition requires the [Basic Virtues](#) resulting from function under Organized Humility, Enforced Humility and Genuine Humility in order to move smoothly through these transitions and enable him to engage in successful Perception, Cognition, Incultation, Metabolization of Bible Doctrine. This is the means to develop basic Virtue in the Spiritual Life. Failure to function in learning and applying Bible Doctrine or the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions is failure to make this transition.

The transition of going from Ignorance to Cognizance with regard to Bible Doctrine, the Divine Institutions, or the Laws of Divine Establishment requires, Motivation, Objectivity, Concentration and Self Discipline. Failure to make the transition from Ignorance at Salvation to Cognizance in the Spiritual Life results in the believer living without knowledge of Bible Doctrine and results in inevitable involvement in the Cosmic Dynaspheres and being subject to severe Divine Discipline. The Arrogance of Ignorance is the result of the interlocking of [Negative Volition](#) [Arrogance](#) and the Function of Pride in [Mental Attitude Arrogance](#) under strong delusion, Reversionism, and Scar Tissue of the Soul. The Arrogance of Ignorance is an incredibly corrupting influence and has the potential to destroy the believer's entire life. This can result in his equating self sacrifice with spirituality or with salvation and this is a truly serious Arrogance problem which is demonstrated when under pressure as [Self Pity](#) and self inflicted torture and when under prosperity or success in life as [Self Righteousness](#).

### Criminals, Crusaders & Arrogance of Ignorance

Living a LIE is living under the Modus Operandi of Strong Delusion in the Arrogance of Ignorance and is closely related to Crusader Arrogance. This is illustrated by any effort or function which tries to improve or white wash the devils world. The war between the states was caused by the Civil Rights movements of William Lloyd Garrison. He and Harriet Beecher Stowe brought on the current Civil Rights movement distortions as demonstrated today with the 'black lives matter' ideology. This Arrogance resulted in violence which combined with the Arrogance of Ignorance has resulted in the continual problems of pseudo racism today. The abolitionist movement against the Southern States was based totally on EVIL because most of the Slaves were already being freed. John Brown was a fanatic who was totally focused on using violence to free slaves, but when he was captured, a black man addressed him and told him he was wrong in what he was doing and Brown replied that he was doing this for him, and that black man then said "I am already free", then shot and killed Brown. Crusader Arrogance always inevitably results in violence. The civil rights movement begun in the 1960s is one of the greatest attacks on human freedom ever to be perpetrated and it does not help promote freedom nor rescue the downtrodden. It was and continues to be politically motivated arrogant exploitation of the downtrodden and the minorities. The Abolitionist movement before the 2<sup>nd</sup> War for Independence, the American War Between the States, included some of the most Evil based crusaders ever to live and some of the greatest criminals as well. William Loyd Garrison was a government servant who would tear up the United States Constitution during his arrogant speeches. Henry Ward Beecher and Harriet Beecher Stowe (Author of Uncle Toms Cabin) were among the greatest perpetrators of Sinful, Human Good and Criminal activity based totally on EVIL in their day.

The War Between the States was a wrong application of violence in the United States of America. It was violence used to solve a problem and violence NEVER solves any problem. Abraham Lincoln violated the Constitution of the United States by calling for violence to solve a FALSE problem perceiving as totally wrong anything involved with SLAVERY. He again violated the Constitution by issuing the emancipation proclamation which he did not have authority to do and, in fact, he had no authority to free slaves either. All this violated the constitution and consequently Lincoln did not mind violating the constitution again by calling up 50,000 volunteers to use more violence nor by blackmailing Indiana with federal tax payers funds to keep them in the union. He violated the constitution many times in many different ways and America has never to this day recovered from this. He did not consider the black man his equal (read the Lincoln Douglas Debates to see his attitude toward blacks) and he was one of the biggest hypocrites in history, he was truly a "politician" not by any stretch of the imagination a statesman. Lincoln tried to play God and tried to solve a problem only God can solve. The fact was that Manifest Destiny was the overruling concept in the war between the states and the United States of America needed to be consolidated from the Atlantic to the Pacific oceans and from the Rio Grand river to Glacier National Park as a client nation. Forced Slavery is not humanly right but it is only how one solves a problem which ultimately makes it right or wrong. Man attempts to solve problems result in inevitably creating other greater problems; God solves problems, PERIOD. Man is told to cope with problems while God tends to the solving them.

It is the judicial imputation of the Righteousness of God and real imputation of Eternal Life to the home of the regenerated Human Spirit which brands the new Christian as a SLAVE to The Lord Jesus, The Christ. While freedom is essential for function during the Angelic Conflict Appeal Trial, it is not necessary in the relationship of the believer with Christ. In fact, all great relationships in life include the concept of slavery, whether it is the believer's relationship with God or the woman in marriage or the individual in his chosen area of employment. This is where Arrogance becomes the basis for destroying capacity for life, including the Spiritual Life. Slavery is the basic concept of authority over others vested in one individual. The best parents follow this pattern in using their good judgment to teach children to orient to life. Such slavery means security and security means blessing and there is no real blessing in life unless there is security. Therefore, security and blessing cannot ever be associated with any accouterment of life but only with God as a result of being a slave to God and having his guaranteed security. Anything which can be seen as overt security in life can be lost in an instant thereby resulting in a loss of all associated blessing. Therefore, NO government nor governmental system can ever provide security or blessing to the individual citizen, EVER. Using freedom to make decisions for the Plan of God and Bible Doctrine results eradication of ignorance and blessing far greater than anything which one can imagine. Such slavery is the basis for God providing MORE than Ish, ADAM and Ishah, EVE lost in the garden. Such slavery requires a rigid schedule of learning Bible Doctrine under the function of the [Grace Apparatus for Perception](#) and the Filling of God the Holy Spirit. Therefore, clearly, the actions of Abraham Lincoln during the American 2<sup>nd</sup> War for Independence, were based on his personal ignorance and arrogance and both unconstitutional and anti-God.

The Arrogance of Ignorance + [Power Lust Arrogance](#) results in demanding rights which don't exist and distorting freedom. These demands are designed to give the arrogant ignorant crusader a free ride in life which is a total distortion of reality. Freedom demands Responsibility; Equality in life is a myth because there is NO semblance of equality anywhere in life. This is Strong Delusion, and a form of Christian Reversionism. The Arrogance of Ignorance rejects Absolute Truth in any category but especially the Absolute Truth of Bible Doctrine and this inevitably results in [Blackout of the Soul](#). The Arrogance of Ignorance when combined with Power Lust results in disaster for self and all who are related. Today the "civil rights" movement, as did the Abolitionist movement of the mid 1800s, includes both criminals and crusaders, both attracted to a cause which will benefit both INDIVIDUALLY. For the crusader it is Arrogance of Ignorance for the criminal it is the Arrogance of Power. Therefore, the civil rights movement of the 20<sup>th</sup> and 21<sup>st</sup> centuries reflect the abolitionist movement both which follow the inevitable road of the Arrogance of Ignorance which results in:

- ✧ Violence
- ✧ War
- ✧ Revolution

- overall Destruction of Freedom

### **The Doctrinal Side of the Arrogance of Ignorance**

God is infinite and is Absolute Truth and this Veracity is an essential and eternal part of his Essence. It is the application of Absolute Truth to one's own life which causes him to grow and advance in the Spiritual Life. God being TRUTH or Veracity means that the Arrogance of Ignorance totally rejects this principle and God. God is infinite and without boundary and limitation and unites within himself those perfections which belong to his character such as Veracity. Because this is true of GOD he cannot be complicated by the Arrogance of Ignorance and the resultant absurdities of the life of this type of believer. When the Arrogance Grenade is activated by pulling the pin of some aspect of Motivational Arrogance, the believer inevitably moves deeply into the Interlocking System of Arrogance. This believer must remember that GOD cannot be complicated by Ignorance nor ABSURDITY and therefore he has put himself under the horrible Divine Discipline of the fragmented life. However horrible that Divine Discipline may be the believer has not and cannot lose his salvation but he WILL have a miserable life. Because God is Veracity he cannot be complicated by Ignorance or absurdities but the life of every believer is constantly complicated by both Ignorance and absurdities. The believer's IQ is meaningless unless exploited in learning Bible Doctrine, the Laws of Divine Establishment and the Divine Institutions and no matter what level of IQ he possesses, if he is complicated in life by Ignorance he WILL BE complicated by absurdities and constantly relate his life to these areas. Therefore God makes war against the Arrogance of Ignorance and the absurdity of the Arrogance of Power. ([James 4:4](#), [1Pet 5:5](#))

God can therefore NOT accept the Absurdities of what man tries to insert into the Christian Way of Life. It is impossible for the believer to execute the Protocol Plan of God and glorify God apart from (gr) Epignosis and (gr) Sophia gained from the consistent Perception, Cognition, Incultation, Metabolization and Application of Bible Doctrine. Divine motivation is related to his own Glory and He pursues His Glory in the interest of his Absolute Truth. God is true to himself, both his essence and personality, therefore any revelation from God is TRUTH. This includes any of the facts about Himself, the Angelic Conflict, Human History, this dispensation of Human History the Church Age, the Protocol Plan of God for this Church Age, The [Irrevocable Assets](#) for the believer's Spiritual Life, Logistical Grace, Equality of privilege and opportunity for the believer, and much more which is revealed to mankind and classified as Bible Doctrine. Because GOD has revealed these things to mankind, the Believer can LEARN these TRUTHS but GOD IS TRUTH an all encompassing TRUTH and believers MUST receive this truth under Post Salvation Epistemological Rehabilitation, this is the only means to avoid the Arrogance of Ignorance.

God designed his Protocol Plan to function and be executed by means of the Absolute Truth of Metabolized Bible Doctrine residing in and functioning from the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul of the individual believer. This Metabolized Bible Doctrine is a wall of protection for the believer from:

- **Demon Influence** – the transfer of Satanic Propaganda and Human Viewpoint thinking and policy into the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul of the believer



through his living and functioning within the Cosmic Dynaspheres

- **Involvement in the Cosmic Dynaspheres**
- **Involvement in the 8 stages of Reversionism**

The Absolute Doctrinally based Truth of the Laws of Divine Establishment and the Divine Institutions does this for the unbeliever thereby protecting him from:

- **Demon Influence**
- **Demon Possession**

Therefore, believers, under the principle of rightly dividing the Word of God, must distinguish between the information about History which is not always true and the Absolute Truth of Bible Doctrine which is always true. These include all the recorded or preserved thoughts, motivations, decisions and actions of every human being mentioned in history, which, in fact, is mostly false and includes:

- Truth & Lies
- Failures & Successes
- Opposition to & Glorification of God
- Things Good & Bad
- Things Honorable & Dishonorable

However ONLY Bible Doctrine is the actual truth of history because it is the Veracity of God which reveals and therefore guarantees the truth of Bible Doctrine and the absolute accuracy of what is recorded in the bible as HISTORICAL. Therefore, historical facts are given in the bible accurately but are not always Bible Doctrines, however, the Bible Doctrines given in the scripture IS Absolute Truth. God does not condone false information or false doctrine but at times this IS recorded in the bible as INFORMATION and FACTS in history but only Bible Doctrine is TRUTH in history. The Arrogance of Ignorance is the means by which believers distort the doctrines and policies of God and thereby enter into the Interlocking System of Arrogance as a result of making hundreds of Negative Volition decisions against the truth. This believer thus lives his life under the LIE of EVIL, the policy of Satan, becoming a loser while still under the equal privilege and opportunity of the Plan of God.

### **Arrogance of Ignorance vs Divine Veracity**

Arrogance of Ignorance is the greatest enemy to the Veracity of God. God gives grace (what cannot be earned nor deserved) to the humble because the humble believer has learned Bible Doctrine and the humble unbeliever has learned the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions and abides by them. [Humility](#) is the status quo of the believer under the consistent Perception, Cognition, Inculcation, Metabolization & Application of all types of Bible Doctrine. The Arrogance of Ignorance is strong delusion, Reversionism with its Black out of the Soul and Scar Tissue of the Soul and is the result of [Negative Volition Arrogance](#). Also, the result of rejection of the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions is the Arrogance of Ignorance for both believer and unbeliever so involved.

God has infinite energy and power and infinity characterizes all that he is and does, the function of his integrity, his eternal truth and his policy of Grace. God is obviously motivated because of his divine essence and His motive is for His own glory and this is always related to Absolute Truth which means God is true to Himself, His essence and personality, which are

infinite and unchangeable. God's glory can only be advanced in the Human Race by FREEDOM. Arrogance is the enemy of freedom. Man often says he speaks the truth but God IS THE TRUTH. God does not hold the truth as being perceived or acquired He is the truth and He is eternal and his Veracity combines with his Immutability to make God infinitely consistent. In God every truth and all knowledge dwells in absolute perfection. The Arrogance of Ignorance combines with the [Arrogance of Power](#) to attack and destroy the truths of God in every category.

- ✧ The Laws of Divine Establishment – this attack is toward both authority and the principles of freedom.
- ✧ The Gospel of The Lord Jesus, The Christ – this attack occurs by the proposing of salvation by works or human efforts.
- ✧ Bible Doctrine – this attack comes through the distortions of the Plan of God and [Royal Family Honor Code](#).

The only cure for the Arrogance of Ignorance is the acceptance or metabolization of truth and this can start in any of 3 ways:

- ✧ Parents teaching establishment principles to children
- ✧ Accepting the gospel of The Lord Jesus, The Christ
- ✧ Temporal Adjustment to the Justice of God after salvation through learning the basic doctrines of God.

As a result of these principles, Humility becomes the greatest virtue in life fulfilling [James 4:6](#) and [1Pet 5:5](#). The Psalm of Prosperity through humility, **Ps 25**, teaches the incredible benefits of humility for the believer.

### **[Arrogance of Ignorance & Power --> Disaster](#)**

When ignorant and arrogant people seek to control and impose their thoughts and motivations on others this is the Arrogance of Ignorance complicated with the absurdity of the Arrogance of Power. Americans consistently elect people to the presidency and congress and all aspects of government who suffer from the Arrogance of Ignorance and then when they are in office they add to that the Arrogance of Power and this builds through their actions into national disaster. The Arrogance of Ignorance rejects Absolute Truth and the resultant Scar Tissue of the Soul and strong delusion incorporate all categories of the Interlocking System of Arrogance in the process and problem. The Arrogance of Ignorance combines with the Arrogance of Power to use violence to gain power and destroy freedom. This is the current drive of the Democratic Party to force the United States of America into a 1 party government. The disaster which occurs from this combination is what results in a loss of freedom for everyone even the perpetrators. The crusaders in America want to take away freedom for the “greater good” and the “greater good” is defined in terms of social, familial and national life levels of prosperity. The more choices made FOR the individual under the functions of [Crusader Arrogance](#) the more his own choices shrink and today this occurs and increases in the United States of America on a daily basis. The American system of electing people to government service is fine as long as the franchise for voting is limited to people who have demonstrated in life that they are responsible. This was the original intent of the founding fathers of the United States. If the voting franchise is extended to all in the population, as it has been today, it inevitably results in the Arrogance of Ignorance combining with the Arrogance of Power in the irresponsible

people who now can cause changes in the society for their personal benefit inevitably resulting in national disaster.

### **Arrogance of Ignorance, Power & Lucifer**

When the ignorant seek power the result is disaster for everyone. Power corrupts and absolute power corrupts absolutely. This is true because of Arrogance and any involvement in the Interlocking System of Arrogance is the corrupting factor in possession and use of power and authority. Before Human History Lucifer had great power as the anointed Cherub and the greatest of all angels but as a result of constantly receiving approbation for his functions and personal beauty Arrogance corrupted his power and resulted in the Angelic Conflict. Thus this Arrogance of Ignorance is a biographic sketch of Satan. Now that Satan is ruler of this world as a result of the fall of Adam, Arrogance still corrupts his power and he constantly abuses his authority. This corruption has spread throughout the world and is only opposed by Bible Doctrine. Because the Arrogance of Power corrupts in both angelic and human realms, humility is man's only protection against the corrupting influence of power, authority, fame or success. The epigram does not explain the problem since it is really Arrogance which corrupts power and then having power corrupts the individual. Arrogance corrupts power, authority, success, even physical beauty, mental genius, wealth, talent, social life, sexual life, business life, professional life and above all spiritual life. Arrogance corrupts and the Arrogance of Ignorance corrupts absolutely.

### **History & Arrogance of Ignorance**

The national council of churches reflects exactly what the abolitionist movement was in the years preceding the 2<sup>nd</sup> War for Independence. Civil war is a national admission that the nation cannot solve its problems apart from violence and it clearly says to the world that it is acceptable to set aside freedom and establishment and KILL those who disagree with you. If functions under the constitutional system set out originally by our forefathers in the United States of America had been continued, slavery would have been abolished while bringing the black man into society having a sense of responsibility. The reign of terror in the French revolution is another example of the Arrogance of Ignorance. The Arrogance of Ignorance creates terror and uses the resulting violence to gain power and is clearly seen in the analysis of the French, Russian, and Chinese revolutions and in Vietnam with the function of the Vietcong and in Cambodia under Pol Pot and today in the United States of America under the functions of democratic party politicians, "black lives matter" and "antifa". A good book for reference with regard to this concept is "War in the Shadows", by Robert B Asprey. If the Arrogance of Ignorance is combined with the Arrogance of Power this always produces national disaster.

God the Holy Spirit has caused to be written into scripture some facts of history which are based on Evil and are false concepts in order to teach TRUTH. The Arrogance of Ignorance and the Arrogance of Power demonstrate negative lessons. With regard to the facts of history and their causes, both Grace or Evil, the Omniscience of God has always known these facts and therefore the truths of history in 4 categories:

- Thoughts – Evil vs Grace

- Motivations – Evil vs Grace
- Decisions – Evil vs Grace
- Actions – Evil vs Grace

Some of these thoughts, motivations, decisions and actions are LIES formulated under the plan and policy of Satan, EVIL. Some of the people involved will be thinking and motivated to do things which are LIES, deceptions and sin. God knew all these things and in fact in all cases authorized them by placing them in his Divine Decree for certain situations. When God puts certain facts of history into scripture while others are left out, the ones included are related therefore to understanding and application of Bible Doctrine. The ones left out are inconsequential for spiritual growth. The omniscience of God fed all the FACTS of Human History into the divine decree. These facts include the realities of volition both good and bad, lies and truth, causes and results, honorable and dishonorable deeds, true and false motivations, etc. God, however, is truth and the source of truth and his veracity guarantees the genuineness of divine revelation in the canon of scripture from the book of Genesis to the book of Revelation. God always honors any truth in Human History. This explains the consistent deliverance of a client nation as a result of the existence of a pivot of mature believers. God always honors truth thus the pivot, which is composed of believers in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God with maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul, IE Absolute Truth, can deliver the client nation. This is also why unbelievers are greatly blessed when they observe the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions. Also as a result of this many nations are prospered for long periods of history because of establishment thinking, policy and Modus Operandi.

God also punishes Evil and its fallacies and this explains the 5 cycles of Divine Discipline to the degenerate client nation and all national disasters in general. Only divine truth, namely Bible Doctrine, can advance the believer in the Spiritual Life while the Arrogance of Ignorance hinders the believer from fulfilling the Plan of God. Therefore the Arrogance of Ignorance is any system of thought which hinders the believer from advancing in the Plan of God. As a result the Arrogance of Ignorance hinders the believer from glorification of God in time. God always must honor and vindicate his word and he honors and vindicates the believer who learns his word and applies it to life and Human History.

Return to the [Table of Contents](#)

#### **Gate #4 – The Mental Attitude Arrogance of Pride**

Pride, the Mental Attitude of Satan which caused his fall, not only a Mental Attitude Sin but a complete system of Human Viewpoint thinking which hinders or obfuscates objectivity so that through the Mental Attitude Arrogance of Pride the Cosmic Dynaspheres keep the believer off balance. The Mental Attitude Arrogance of Pride is not only exaggerated self-respect and conceit, but is a total preoccupation with self, which divorces the believer from the realities of life. However, it is the believer, above all others, who needs to face the realities of life! The

believer in Jesus Christ is given by God, the ability through Bible doctrine, to see things as they really are, and to avoid the head-in-the-sand attitude of overlooking contemporary historical trends. Thus Pride as a prime illustration of all aspects of Arrogance is a real or imagined sense of superiority which distorts life and the true perspective of human frailty, resulting in a presumptuous self-righteousness and a false sense of destiny. Mental Attitude Arrogance is a thinking error including a system of Sin from a saturation of Evil in the soul. Motivational Arrogance or Motivational Degeneracy is Mental Attitude Arrogance & total preoccupation with Self illustrated by:

▲ Jealousy

- This results from Mental Attitude Arrogance as a Mental Attitude Sin which is the fanaticism of Motivational Arrogance.

▲ Bitterness

- This results in making issue of self based on some real or imagined injustice.

▲ Vindictiveness, Implacability and Hatred.

- These are Mental Attitude Sins from a system of thinking based on Evil as Motivational Arrogance.

▲ Self Pity

- Is a Motivational Arrogance based on self centered thinking from Evil.

Arrogant people are most often satisfied with self but always make an issue of self as in Self Pity or Self Righteousness. To the extent they are satisfied with self in any area of life they are dissatisfied with others and in competition with the whole Human Race and themselves. Vanity and Conceit is the result of Arrogance and is the emptiness of Life after becoming involved in Arrogance. Arrogance is a great open wound in the soul which creates a vacuum which develops after the expression of Negative Volition toward God or Bible Doctrine, which pulls in all the LIES and corrupting ideas from the Cosmic Dynaspheres. No one can become arrogantly preoccupied with self without having a myriad of silly ideas and totally lacking proper priorities in life. The longer one lives under the Motivational Arrogance of Mental Attitude Arrogance the more he moves into unreality so that eventually these believers become entangled in Psychopathic Arrogance. The condition of many people who are psychotic has nothing to do with circumstances and pressures in life but with their total preoccupation with self. Preoccupation with self results in the believer becoming DULL and losing all the rivals for his self love along the way. As Self Righteous individuals they are looking down on others who they consider immoral individuals while in fact they themselves possess the worst category of failure in the Human Race, Motivational Arrogance from saturation of the soul with Evil.

Motivational Arrogance which is Mental Attitude Arrogance encompasses many aspects of Arrogant preoccupation with self which have been separated from Mental Attitude Arrogance as a category in this book because of the need to describe and understand them in greater detail. These include the Arrogance of:

▲ Jealousy

▲ Vindictiveness

▲ Revenge Motivation

▲ Bitterness

▲ Implacability

▲ Negative Volition



- ▲ Psychopathic
- ▲ Scale of Values
- ▲ Unhappiness
- ▲ Emotion
- ▲ Pseudo Intellectual
- ▲ Unrealistic Expectation
- ▲ Egocentric
- ▲ Grief
- ▲ Self Righteousness
- ▲ Self Vindication
- ▲ Hypersensitivity
- ▲ Regret
- ▲ Insecurity
- ▲ and possibly many other areas
- ▲ Personality
- ▲ Ignorance
- ▲ Disenchantment – Disillusion
- ▲ Pseudo Generosity
- ▲ Pseudo Love
- ▲ Evil Obsession
- ▲ Inflexibility
- ▲ Demand Syndrome
- ▲ Self Pity
- ▲ Condemnation
- ▲ Guilt
- ▲ Shame
- ▲ Transference

Therefore, when there is any discussion of the problems with regard to Motivational Arrogance and Mental Attitude Arrogance any or all of these areas of categorical arrogance must be considered and included.

Mental Attitude Arrogance is a thinking error and includes a system of Sin as a result of saturation of the thinking with the influence of Evil. The only real means of thinking in terms of sanity can be found by residence, function and momentum in the [Divine Dynasphere](#). Therefore in the Power System of Satan, Motivational Arrogance which is Motivational Degeneracy is derived from the influence of Evil by way of Mental Attitude Arrogance and total Preoccupation with Self. Some clear illustrations are found in Jealousy as a Mental Attitude Sin which results in a fanaticism of Motivational Degeneracy from Evil leading to many verbal and even overt sins to the point of physical violence even murder. Bitterness results in making a total issue of self. Vindictiveness, Implacability, Hatred are sins involving Emotion and a system of Thinking based on Evil as Motivational Degeneracy. Therefore Mental Attitude Arrogance is Motivational Arrogance or Motivational Degeneracy from Evil and is what one thinks.

Under system of religious legalism the individual very often gets away from the OBVIOUS overt sins and inevitably become personally involved in the more subtle sins (which are considered by God to be far worse) and become fanatics condemning the others who are involved in the overt sins. In the Unites States of America in this time period of our history they call themselves the “Moral Majority” when they are in reality the spiritually arrogant. As members of a legitimate society the individual should only be involved in the condemnation of crime and the overt sins involved with it. Apart from situations involving the violation of the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions NO ONE is given the right to condemn any other person.

Some people enhance their feelings of self importance when they can look down on and ridicule others, this is the Motivational Arrogance of Motivational Degeneracy from Evil and more than sin. This is in fact a terrible system of thinking under the influence of EVIL and once this begins in the believer his life will become miserable and remain so until his recovery or removal under the Sin Unto Death.

One cannot become obsessed with self without changing his priorities in life. When the believer moves from the Divine Dynasphere into Cosmic Dynasphere I under Motivational Arrogance of Mental Attitude Arrogance he has reduced or eliminated the priority of Bible Doctrine in his life. In this trend, the message of Bible Doctrine and messenger of Bible Doctrine are not rejected and there is no overt antagonism toward either, simply an indifference or lack of interest. This is the individual who eventually becomes critical of the message of Bible Doctrine and the one presenting Bible Doctrine thus setting self up as an expert on Bible Doctrine and what the Pastor Teacher should be teaching or doing. This begins without overt hatred or antagonism which comes only with time from residing in the Cosmic Dynaspheres. As one becomes more and more critical of the Pastor Teacher and his message on the few occasions one may in fact attend bible study, he then changes and lowers the priority of Bible Doctrine in his life. As this believer lowers the priority of Bible Doctrine he divorces self from more and more the absolute truth of Bible Doctrine with distortions invariably occurring concerning:

- ▲ The Gospel of Christ
  - ▼ Although he, himself, has made Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God through faith alone in The Lord Jesus, The Christ alone.
- ▲ The Laws of Divine Establishment
  - ▼ Becoming a fanatical inculcated crusading bleeding heart liberal.
- ▲ The entire realm of Bible Doctrine.
  - ▼ Distorting the principles of Bible Doctrine to suit concepts involved in religious legalistic taboo functions.

As these things occur he looks for new things to take the place in his priorities thus he develops a new or different Frame of Reference and new Norms and Standards and new friends and a totally new Modus Operandi in his life. This all occurs in the stages of involvement in the Interlocking System of Arrogance, Cosmic Dynasphere I. As he persists in residing and functioning under these principles of arrogance and when any of his pet areas or arrogance are challenged by TRUTH, he then completes this phase and moves into the ANTI stage of Cosmic Dynasphere II the Interlocking System of Antagonistic Emotional Hatred. This is the eventually the result of the interlocking between 2 aspects of the Interlocking System of Arrogance, Mental Attitude Arrogance and Negative Volition Arrogance and is simply a drop in the ocean regarding the ramifications of Arrogance Involvement on the LIFE of the Christian.

In the technical sense with regard to the Interlocking System of Arrogance when the singular terms “Arrogance” or “Pride” are used they refer to the Motivational Arrogance of “Mental Attitude Arrogance” which is the complex of Mental Attitude Sins including Pride which is the basic Mental Attitude Sin in creatures. (Is 14, Ez 28) Pride is a Mental Attitude Sin which begins with the temptations of Old Sin Nature under the influence of the emotion in its revolt

against the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul. It is an Arrogance in which a sense of superiority, real or imagined, distorts one's perspective of life resulting in an overbearing manner and grand assumptions of [Self Righteousness](#). This includes the Mental Attitude Sins of Vanity or empty Pride, it is the pomposity of vain glory with supercilious haughty contempt for others overestimating one's person, attainments, possessions and power coupled with an excessive desire for notice, attention, approval or praise from others. The Mental Attitude Sin of Pride is a major trigger from the Old Sin Nature and causes interlocking with many other Arrogance levels and activities. In addition, frustrated Pride is the trigger which releases the fury of all the mental, verbal and overt sins in life. On the other hand, Humility is [Authority Orientation](#) not the generally perceived self effacement which, in fact, has great Pride involved with it. ([Prov 11:2](#))

Believers who reject the TRUTHS of Bible Doctrine are always in a state of Arrogance as well as very often entering into the 8 stages of the apostasy of [Reversionism](#). It is true Arrogance for the believer to think he can get along without the daily spiritual food of Bible Doctrine which God has provided. Both the believer and unbeliever reversionist when producing slander are engaged in attempting the bullying of others. ([Rom 1:30](#), [James 4:4-7](#), [Prov 3:34](#), [1Pet 5:5-6](#)) In many professions highly qualified persons are put down or run down by the Arrogant less qualified individuals with whom they have to deal. This occurs almost any time one has contact with other people. God strongly opposes the Arrogant or PROUD persons. In the varied professions and social or business interactions in life there can be lifelong friendships and also lifelong enmities because of these interactions as a result of Pride and its counter parts. Pride can be a reaction to a person or event who wrongs one in reality or allegedly. If the believer reacts to these situations then he, himself, is full of Pride and is the loser in life. If one is in a state of being Prideful there is no right opposite person for him in this life. Therefore, once Pride is brought into any aspect of life it will ruin that life. The major cause of crime, is Pride as a production of Evil stimulating the Area of Weakness of the Old Sin Nature and the major factor in individual and collective adversities in life is also Pride.

God gives believers great varieties of undeserved suffering so that they can accelerate spiritual growth. The most important of these are the testings of the Mental Attitudes of the soul. The most destructive thing to the mental attitudes of the soul is succumbing to the influence of Evil which activates the Lust patterns of the Old Sin Nature to stimulate the trends of the Old Sin Nature driving the individual into an entanglement in the Interlocking System of Arrogance and the [Arrogance Skills](#) as a result of his accepting the temptations from the Area of Weakness or Area of Strength of the Old Sin Nature. The believer can destroy his proper and effective scale of values simply by failing to keep his focus on God and allowing his focus to drift to PEOPLE or THINGS and thus distort and destroy his Mental Attitude.

Discord and contention in any area of life is the result of rejection of authority in life. This rejection of authority by children is rejecting parents or teachers, by labor is rejecting the boss and especially by the wife is rejecting the husband. This is Arrogance and [Jealousy](#) which can be stronger than volition. This results from Mental Attitude Sin and when it occurs one cannot control his thinking under this Arrogance as a result of a total saturation with Mental Attitude

Sins. No 2 people get into the Interlocking System of Arrogance in the same way but once in all become the same. Pride is one of the easiest ways in and even being alone a person can become entangled in the Arrogance complex as a result of Pride. Laziness is directly related to Arrogance and there can be no laziness if the mind is properly motivated and when the mind ceases to be motivated very often that lack of motivation is the result of some level of Arrogance. With regard to the Pastor Teacher, involvement in the Interlocking System of Arrogance results in a mentally lazy Pastor. When there is a blindness of perception this removes all restraint from [Negative Volition](#) and as a result this blindness plus any Interlocking System of Arrogance involvement results in the fantastic tragedy of apostasy and degeneracy in the Mental Attitude of the individuals so involved.

Esprit DE Corps is Pride related to reality while Arrogance is Pride divorced from reality. Pride divorces people from reality both historically and personally. It destroys perception ability, rejects authority, results in irrationality and destroys the exploitation of personal abilities and God given talents. It demands flattery and attention as a result of its function. It is the greatest area of the Believer's disorientation to reality in the Spiritual Life. Believers generally do not think about the far reaching depths of these aspects of Arrogance but they justify their involvement in them based on some personal maltreatment either real or imagined. To become involved in the Arrogance of Pride, the believer must succumb to the influence of Evil which then results in Mental Attitude sin, the first motivation for function in Cosmic Dynasphere I, the Interlocking System of Arrogance. This may involve trying to resolve a personality conflict by trying to relate self to other things and to justify self in some way. In the Motivational Arrogance of Mental Attitude Arrogance the first thing the believer will lose is Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul. This is the invariable result of Rejection of Truth from the Laws of Divine Establishment, the Gospel of The Lord Jesus, The Christ or Bible Doctrine for the Church Age. Therefore, this results in entrance into the apostasy of [Reversionism](#) under some degree of Negative Volition to Bible Doctrine which produces [Blackout of the Soul](#) and [Scar Tissue of the Soul](#) and which can under the proper conditions cross into Cosmic Dynasphere II the Interlocking System of Antagonistic Emotional Hatred, the Complex of Emotional sin.

### **Mental Attitude Arrogance, Motivational Arrogance from Evil**

Failure to avoid the distractions resulting from Mental Attitude Arrogance obviously then enters the believer into residence and function within Cosmic Dynasphere I. This puts him under [Motivational Arrogance](#) or Motivational Evil from involvement in Mental Attitude Arrogance and Mental Attitude Sins or in fact any motivating area of Arrogance and is termed Grieving God the Holy Spirit. Cosmic Dynasphere I is therefore divided into Motivational Arrogance or Motivational Evil and [Functional Arrogance](#) or Functional Evil components. ([Is 14:12-14](#), [Ez 28:14-17](#)) All Cosmic Dynasphere I testing allowed by God in the Spiritual Life is Distraction Testing attempting to prevent one's spiritual advancement. All the aspects of Mental Attitude Arrogance and Mental Attitude Sins are functions of the believer under Motivational Arrogance or Motivational Evil including Negative Volition Arrogance which ultimately is preoccupation with self, loss of values, loss of personal identity, loss of spiritual advancement and any aspect of Spiritual Self Esteem, Spiritual Autonomy, or Spiritual Maturity. The remaining areas of

Arrogance are Functional Arrogance or Functional Evil. This is the direct result of APATHY and INDIFFERENCE toward Bible Doctrine. Motivational Evil with its Motivational Degeneracy derived from the Influence of Evil involving Mental Attitude Arrogance with its Mental Attitude Sins results from Arrogant Negative Volition toward Bible Doctrine, God, and Grace often in very subtle ways. ([Prov 29:23](#))

Motivational Arrogance as Mental Attitude Arrogance which includes all aspects of Emotional Arrogance is demonstrated by FEAR in the believer. Therefore, the principles involved in Motivational Arrogance or Motivational Evil are elucidated and illustrated by FEAR, Worry and Anxiety and include:

- The more one surrenders to Fear, Worry and Anxiety in his life the more fear, worry and anxiety he will have.
- The more he surrenders to FEAR the more things he will actually FEAR.
  - ◆ Every time one has fear or worry about anything he simply increases his capacity for FEAR, WORRY and ANXIETY in his life and destroys any capacity for happiness.
- To the extent he surrenders himself to fear worry or anxiety to that extent he increases the power of fear worry and anxiety in his life.
  - ◆ Thus instead of developing and maintaining Spiritual Self Esteem, Spiritual Autonomy or Spiritual Maturity he is moving in the opposite direction in Reversionism under [Emotional Revolt of the Soul](#).
- The more things which acquire the POWER to cause him fear the farther he will flee from Spiritual Self Esteem, Spiritual Autonomy or Spiritual Maturity and the secondary battery of Problem Solving Device, Motivational Virtue and Functional Virtue, ie. the Hope – Confidence battery, in his life.

Fear makes one herd bound and thus he will come to depend on others and fail to use his own intellect and his own priesthood under the functions of Spiritual Self Esteem, Spiritual Autonomy and Spiritual Maturity to address and handle his own problems. When anyone declares, in this Church Age, that he is a priest and the congregation is NOT, as often occurs in religion and legalism, the congregation inevitably depends on him and he often instills great fear in them in order to be able to control or “GUIDE” them. In the Church Age every believer is his own priest and believers can sit in a congregation being their own priest yet be frightened to death by someone who is trying to establish a system of fear to control them and get them to function the way he wants them to under his Arrogance. When the people in the congregation surrender to these myriad of religious fears they are ruled by FEAR and they are constantly caused to do things and make sacrifices in order to overcome their fear and thereby attempt to get to heaven. Fear like anger is not only a Mental Attitude sin but involves emotion and generates and is generated by Emotional Revolt of the Soul thus subverting any possibility of developing or maintaining Spiritual Self Esteem, Spiritual Autonomy or Spiritual Maturity. Fear is LACK OF THINKING or INABILITY TO THINK under pressure and in the Christian Way of Life it is essential that the believer THINK from the Metabolized Bible Doctrine content of his own soul in the privacy of his own priesthood in any pressure situation. Thinking under pressure the believer parlays the [Faith Rest Drill \(5 Stages\)](#) into the Hope –



Confidence Drill of using the [Motivational Virtue](#) of Confidence in God to deploy the [Functional Virtue](#) of Courage toward Man and the Circumstances of life as Problem Solving Device. This process includes using any of the other Motivational Virtue – Functional Virtue combinations to address the pressures in one's life, whether they are from adversity or prosperity. This process prevents the development of Motivational Arrogance or Motivational Evil and Functional Arrogance or Functional Evil in the Cosmic Dynaspheres.

Another illustration is the involvement in Motivational Arrogance or Motivational Evil as Mental Attitude Arrogance with its Mental Attitude Sin of hatred. This is not only sin but an abnormal function under Arrogance. "I Hate You" means the one hating has attached to self an importance which he has no right to have. [Self Pity](#) is another area and exemplifies the preoccupation with self which is the underlying Modus Operandi of all of Cosmic Dynasphere I. Thus all aspects of Motivational Arrogance or Motivational Evil are Mental Attitude Arrogance including Mental Attitude Sins and these develop into functions under the Interlocking System of Arrogance as Functional Arrogance or Functional Evil. ([James 3:14-16](#))

[Bitter Jealousy](#) as a Motivational Arrogance is a sign of a total lack of Spiritual Self Esteem, Spiritual Autonomy and Spiritual Maturity and is also a sign of carnality and deep Cosmic Dynasphere I entanglement and that one is spiritually and even mentally still a child. This is a sign that one cannot handle his own life and needs a keeper. [Jealousy](#) can flare and wane in the mentality but with BITTER Jealousy the [Bitterness](#) is directed toward self subjectively under the idea that he is being treated unjustly by another either realistically or in some imagined way. The Jealousy itself is directed OUTSIDE of self toward others whom he perceives as receiving the treatment he, himself, deserves, and the combination of these 2 destroys any function of his soul as a Royal Priest.

### **Mental Attitude Distortions**

Vanity, Pride, Conceit is the Arrogance of the original failure of Satan. ([Is 14:12-14](#), [Ez 28:14-17](#)) As a result of having an Old Sin Nature a believer can have everything just as Satan did and not be satisfied. The Woman in the garden was attacked by Satan because she, having everything she could imagine, was dissatisfied in her Arrogance. The woman was deceived because she was not happy being SMART but wanted to be SMARTER THAN. She did not know what Good was nor what Evil was but understood what knowledge meant and she believed what Satan said, THE LIE, that she could be as smart as God and therefore SMARTER THAN her husband Adam. The pin in her Arrogance Grenade was her Pride, dissatisfaction and ambition just as it was in Satan and SHE PULLED THE PIN and ate of the fruit from the Tree of the Knowledge of Good and Evil. She then handed the fruit to ADAM, who did not even have to walk across the street of the garden to get it. This was all part of a very complex conspiracy and it was a much greater decision of independence by Adam to take the knowledge of Good and Evil from the hand of the woman. He looked at the first sinner now spiritually dead and he had to choose the woman OUT of the garden or GOD in the garden. He chose the creature rather than the creator. This is one means by which Arrogance enters one's thoughts, decisions and leads to actions. Believers invariably emphasize PEOPLE over GOD and this is the same tragedy as occurred with Adam in the Garden. The woman was deceived,

tricked or deluded by Satan but the Man knew exactly what he was doing and made a volitional based choice for the creature and not for the creator. In any organization even good organizations there will be Arrogant people who only want to get to the top and control others and be well thought of for what they do and THIS is involvement in Cosmic Dynasphere I. Living in the Cosmic Dynaspheres is “Vanity of Vanity all is Vanity says the man with the message” or “Emptiness of Emptinesses all is Emptiness says the man with the message”, King Solomon.

### **Pride & It's Counterparts**

Pride is the most basic of all Motivational Arrogance and Mental Attitude Arrogance and Sin and is the quality or state of ELEVATED self esteem, LOFTY self respect, HIGH esteem of self based on some real or imagined superiority. Vanity is a synonym for Pride and is used to emphasize the emptiness of Pride. Pride is lofty self-respect, high esteem for one's self, where one always is making an issue out of self. Vanity is empty Pride in respect to one's person and merely means there is Pride without even having an excuse for being proud. Pride or Vanity is used with respect to ones own person, possessions, attainments, the way one looks and is coupled with an excessive desire for approbation, attention, notice or approval from others. Arrogance is often used as a synonym for Pride and other synonyms include haughtiness, vainglory even megalomania. Pride is a human sin and as such is one of the greatest enemies of having any true capacity for life and love. In the Human Race Pride always eliminates any sense of integrity, justice or fairness. Lacking a sense of justice the person is totally subjective and subjective people can have no true capacity for love and they can share no rivalry thus are always involved in narcissism. On the contrary, people with a good sense of justice will also have a good sense of humor. People without a sense of humor cannot relate humor to their own soul, their own person.

Categorically Pride is the basic mental attitude sin and Pride is the worst of the mental attitude sins because it always has a counterpart but it is not the most powerful Mental Attitude Sin which is [Jealousy](#) and very often these go together. ([1Tim 3:6](#); [1Tim 6:3-4](#)) Pride never stands alone, it is never an island, it becomes a part of a counterpart pair and is always joined or connected with some other sin. Pride as a sin manifests itself when there is no pressure on the individual, but as soon as there is pressure then up comes the counterpart, which may include Jealousy, cowardice, maligning, judging, vindictiveness, implacability, etc. All people entangled in the Interlocking System of Arrogance are totally different when they are under pressure because that is when their counterpart sins surface. Long before Satan's Pride showed up his approbation lust became his motivation leading to his fall. ([Is 14:12-14](#), [Ez 28:14-17](#)) As he moved around in heaven and the universe everyone was impressed with his beauty, accomplishments, station and intelligence. Satan was constantly hearing these expressions of his “impressiveness” long before his Pride ever showed up. However, the Arrogance of Pride was the original sin of Satan, but Pride is always combined with a counterpart, in this case it was approbation lust and these led to the development of the entire Arrogance Complex, the Interlocking System of Arrogance as Cosmic Dynasphere I designed to control angelic creation APART FROM GOD. When Pride is show in the expression of contempt it is superciliousness.

Pride is also closely related to personal reversionism and is not only a sin but is also a degrading spiritual condition. ([Ps 10:2-4](#)) Believers who reject Bible doctrine are in a state of Arrogance because they think that they can get along without the daily spiritual food which man has been designed to consume and which God has provided. The unbeliever in reversionism is described in [Rom 1:30](#) where he is said to be a slanderer. This is one verbal sin which is a counterpart to Pride. Possessing personal hangups results from one being extremely subjective and results in being easily offended by inconsequential things. The greater the subjectivity and sensitivity in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul the easier it is to offend this person in his soul. The more easily offended he is in his soul the greater the relationship between Pride and Jealousy. This combination results in being totally subjective, offended and focused totally inside of self so that one often cannot separate between his Pride and other aspects of the Interlocking System of Arrogance he may be involved with. In addition no one is ever involved with or influenced by Evil (the plan and policy of Satan) without a marriage between Pride and Jealousy. In this case when pressure is put on one the other shows itself and when both show up in the person he has become a true monster. Pride becoming a counterpart with many other Mental Attitude Sins leads to a weakness of the soul. Pride as a complex of sins and the worst Mental Attitude Sin has many scriptural warnings about avoiding Pride. ([1Tim 2:6](#), [1Tim 6:3-4](#), [2Tim 3:2](#))

Pride precedes destruction, ([Prov 16:18](#)) and it is even related to national Reversionism and National destruction. ([Lev 26:19](#)) There are five cycles of discipline in national reversionism and the second cycle of Divine Discipline is divine judgment against the economy of the nation. At this stage of Divine Discipline, Pride is mentioned as the most extensive characteristic of the people (Stop, Look, Listen, this has been the USA for DECADES). In this second cycle of Divine Discipline when there is a depression or recession with the economy disintegrating the chief national sin related to it is always the sin of Pride. (Lev 26:19). Very often the reason there is a depression or a recession is the result of government officials interfering with the economy. In their PRIDE, they think they can juggle interest rates to control inflation growth and failure of the economy and along with this they also grossly interfere with businesses. There is a divine law that says that in a legitimate economy in a legitimate national government system, which must be based on understanding and adherence to the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions, free enterprise must prevail. Therefore, wherever there is an economic recession or depression under free enterprise it is specifically to eliminate the unfit businesses and to improve the quality of services rendered in labor. ([2Chron 32:26](#)) There is a proper path which should be taken by Legitimate Government at all times, especially during economic pressures, and it comes in the form of [HUMILITY](#) in government. ([Is 9:9](#)) National Pride is also closely associated with the administration of the fifth cycle of Divine Discipline when there is to be destruction of the nation. ([Is 28:1-3](#), [Hos 7:10-14](#))

With Pride in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul, when pressure is put on that Pride, it compresses down into the soul and if the pressure is great enough and some trigger is activated in the soul, this inevitably explodes and causes many other Mental Attitude Sin fragments to surface including Jealousy, Bitterness, vindictiveness, implacability, etc. Jealousy inevitably is ineffective and with added Old Sin Nature temptation is converted to some level of additional

sin which puts the believer deeper into the Motivational Arrogance of Mental Attitude Arrogance and / or Functional Arrogance in Cosmic Dynasphere I. Once in this system all the other entry gates of the Interlocking System of Arrogance, sooner or later, appear very inviting. Therefore, once the believer is involved in Mental Attitude Arrogance he has invariably interlocked with Negative Volition Arrogance putting himself into the Apostasy of [Reversionism](#) and then into many of the other areas of both Motivational Arrogance and Functional Arrogance. Therefore, Pride is the basic Mental Attitude Sin and has many counterparts and motivations for functioning in life. ([Ps 10:2-4](#), [Prov 16:18](#)) When a person is free from Pride (Arrogance) he is a stable person. [Jealousy](#) is a Mental Attitude Sin of concentration totally on self with devotion to self to the exclusion of every other thing in life and is never apparent in a person until pressure is put on their Pride. This combination of Arrogant Pride and Jealousy is related to all the Mental Attitude Sins and is especially related to [Bitterness](#) as well. Pride often has as its counterpart [Hypersensitivity](#) with its totality of selfcenteredness. To the extent that this combined interlocking of Pride with other Mental Attitude Sins exists to that extent there can be no capacity for LOVE in any category.

Pride under pressure triggering Mental Attitude Sins causes the individual to enter into a situation where by they resist Bible Doctrine to the point of rejection thus strengthening the interlocking of Mental Attitude Arrogance with [Negative Volition Arrogance](#). Therefore Pride and Jealousy as a part of Motivational Arrogance and sin is closely related to entrance into [Reversionism](#). Reversionism always results from the believer being under some level of the influence of Evil. Therefore, Pride + Jealousy initiating rejection of Bible Doctrine characterizes Reversionism and motivates legalistic religious involvement and is the basis for destruction of capacity for Life in every category. Nothing destroys a relationship between a man and woman better than Jealousy added to Pride which has moved into the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul and destroyed the capacity for love. Therefore, Jealousy, which is related to the suppression of Pride, is part of a trigger producing both false motivation and discord. ([Phil 1:15](#))

Pride is the quality and basis for Conceit, and is a non-pressure Mental Attitude sin and occurs when there is no pressure on the individual. The individual who constantly complains about personal problems is Arrogant and has entered the Interlocking System of Arrogance through Pride. When Pride is functioning in the soul the result depends on whether there is pressure on the individual or NOT!

***No pressure***

- ✧ Haters of God
- ✧ Insolent
- ✧ Boastful
- ✧ Disobedient to Parents

***Pressure is on***

- Slanderers, Gossips, All Verbal sins
- Blindly Arrogant
- Liars, Inventors of Fallacies
- Violent or Criminal, All Overt sins

Believers often become involved in bleeding heart liberal functions because of this pressure / no pressure system of Arrogance. God is at war with Pride and the believer who is Prideful and Jealous and has become entangled in the Interlocking System of Arrogance is almost always in Reversionism from rejection or neglect of Bible Doctrine. However, consistent Positive Volition toward Bible Doctrine Insulates the soul against Pride and all Motivational Arrogance.

Therefore, Pride is a ‘no pressure’ manifestation of a type of Arrogance complex where without pressure Pride shows up and when pressure is put on the individual in any situation where the proud person is presented with the Truth, offend or criticized, unintentionally or intentionally, then one or more of the counterparts come to the forefront.

In the military environment in the barracks these types men display their Arrogance, but when they are on the battlefield their cowardice then shows itself. Most people don’t think or know they are Arrogant because they are involved in [Blind Arrogance](#), and if pressure is put on them their counterpart sins readily come to the surface. Therefore, these people being subjective always make an issue of self in their souls but never overtly since that would demonstrate their Pride to everyone. However, objective people are never Arrogant and one must always remember that Arrogance is not speaking your mind, saying what you believe or standing with poise and demeanor, but it is generally the person who calls others Arrogant. Understanding the reality of this Arrogance Complex will then enable the believer to always have something to confess or acknowledge to God when he functions under the rebound procedure and since Arrogance is the most devastating state a believer can enter he should make it a habit to ALWAYS confess or acknowledge his own personal Arrogance.

The Jews involved in Blind Arrogance would take credit for their own efforts which resulted in combat victory and then would fail in subsequent battles then had to be kept out of the Battle. Blind Arrogance makes a poor soldier, and a worse military leader and it frequently appears in men who are dying. For the one saturated with Pride, to the extent he carries this Mental Attitude Arrogance in his soul, to that extent he is a coward. The more Arrogance one has the bigger coward he is and cowards must be eliminated. This was the military policy of Israel from the Word of God. [Cowardice](#) only shows up under pressure and Mental Attitude Arrogance with its Mental Attitude sins always develop a strong cowardly trend in the individual. Therefore, Pride and Cowardice are 2 sides of the same coin. When under pressure the Arrogant one is cowardly, and without pressure the cowardly are just blindly Arrogant or Prideful. A coward swings from pride to cowardice in total instability. Pride and Jealousy are also 2 sides of the same coin. When the Arrogant person is not under pressure his Pride shows through but when he is under pressure Jealousy shows through. Therefore, both Jealousy and Cowardice are basically motivated by Pride along with other aspects of Mental Attitude Arrogance.

The Motivational Arrogance of Mental Attitude Arrogance is itself, therefore, a complex where the individual is a WEAK, person saturated with Evil and includes Mental Attitude Sins such as:

- ✧ **Pride** discussed in detail in this section
- ✧ **Jealousy** which is a monstrous sin and results in total preoccupation with itself. A jealous person cannot settle himself and have a normal relationship with others. It has a system of [self righteousness](#) by which it justifies itself in being jealous.
- ✧ **Bitterness** which is derived from and just as bad as Jealousy when Jealousy cannot bring the attention of some other to the jealous one.
- ✧ **Vindictiveness** which is created from the combination of Jealousy and Bitterness where the rejection of a Jealous person results in bitterness and then vindictiveness and



vindictiveness always results in implacability.

- **Implacability** is what vindictiveness feeds on and develops into Revenge Motivation.
- **Revenge Motivation** which is various combinations of Motivational Arrogance or Mental Attitude Arrogance devising ways to avenge any personal hurt and is then followed by Revenge Modus Operandi as an overt manifestation of one's Arrogance.
- **Revenge Modus Operandi** results in the Jealous person who has been rejected taking the devised means and methods of HURTING those who have rejected him and putting them into action. This results in many other Mental Attitude Sins and often Verbal sins and at times even Overt sins and violence.
- **Self Pity Arrogance** is directly related to conceit and is feeling sorry for self or for one's "plight in life".
- **Conceit or Egotism** is preoccupation with Self and is the person who has self pity which is fed by Jealousy. This person becomes vindictive and divisive and attempts to engage in ways to destroy those who reject him.
- **Inordinate Ambition** causes jealous, bitter and conceited persons to develop into a group of sorts but this usually does not last too long because any group requires a leader and these people cannot ever agree on who should be the leader.
- **Inordinate Competition** is the person competing in various areas of the Spiritual Life and in temporal life especially in Social Life under Category II and III love, Romance and Friendship.
- **Slander, Gossip, Maligning, Criticizing, Judging** are a whole sin group which operates in a single person. Very often these result in the person becoming religious.

In addition Motivational Arrogance of Mental Attitude Arrogance includes, Guilt, Operation Overthink, Subjectivity, Preoccupation with Self, Pettiness, Nit Picking, Exhibiting Cowardice and Being Dishonorable and all other aspects of Motivational Arrogance or Mental Attitude Arrogance.

When one examines his life and sees a counter part sin for Pride when pressure is applied to him then he knows he is in the Arrogance system. Pride often shows up as sweetness, loving everyone, a pseudo humble self effacing presentation of self, and these are great manifestations of entanglement in Arrogance. This idea of loving everyone permeates Christian fundamentalism and espouses that believers should love the communists, moslems and all criminals and this is a very dangerous form of Arrogance which sets aside the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions in the name of pseudo LOVE. Obviously then the biggest problem with many people is their overrated opinion of themselves, their Pride, and is why some become very hypersensitive when their problems or failings are addressed in bible study and they assume the analysis of these problems is personally directed only toward them. Bible Doctrine is obviously designed to be personal and it hits every believer very hard at one point or another in their spiritual advance. However, during bible study, in the local church, in a congregation, the pastor most likely knows nothing about an individual believer and even if he did he should never direct comments to them personally.

Life is too short to get into push-pull situations but this is what occurs when a person has

Prideful Arrogance in the soul with one of its innumerable counter parts. These counter part sins to Pride obviously come in 3 categories: ([2Tim 3:2](#))

**Mental** – Almost any of the Mental Attitude Sins are counter part to Pride when the pressure is on

**Verbal** – Ungratefulness, gossip, maligning, slander, judging, and all possible verbal sins.

**Overt** - (In the extreme situation) Disobedience to Parents, Violence, bullying, even murder. ([1John 2:15-16](#))

The believer is not to love this Evil influence from the world as ARROGANCE else he will have no capacity for life.

Pride is, very often, the basis for verbal sins including gossip, maligning, judging, etc., and causes these to emerge when others make the Prideful one feel inadequate. Being made to feel inadequate injures one's Pride and puts Pride under pressure and results in the injured person maligning, judging and gossiping and by engaging in these things, he ignores the principles of privacy in life. This is the same thing which occurs when overt sins of violence, hurting someone physically or even murder are engaged in, very often as the result of injured Pride. Most believers never break out of this cycle as a result of being too spiritually incompetent and lacking an understanding of the necessity for the [Rebound procedure](#) and for consistent function under the [Grace Apparatus for Perception](#). Often, the only way they attempt to break out of this cycle is to try to falsely destroy their Pride by making a public ass of themselves through self humiliation. This is one of the key reasons the Pentecostal holy rollers do what they do in getting in front of a group of people and pretend to become emotionally saturated in the Spiritual Life, acting like children and jumping around. These people are deliberately attacking their own Pride.

This is also why Asceticism enters the life. Asceticism and the fallacy of “speaking in tongues” does effectively destroy Pride because the individual now becomes proud of what they are doing differently than others. In one case abstinence or separation and in the other an emotional experience or a pseudo relationship with God. This is simply retraining Pride and making it stronger while setting up a new set of reactors resulting in totally losing touch with reality. This rebirth of Pride always occurs in this type of individual and it takes about 2 rebirths of Pride in order for that person to succumb to some form of mental illness, this being one of the main sources of the [psychoses](#). This often results in the believer oscillating between asceticism and promiscuity, from promiscuity to asceticism, from sweetness to destructiveness and conspiracy against others and back. Pride is therefore a very complex sin though it seems simple to talk about and is closely interlocked with entrance into personal Reversionism. ([Ps 10:2-4](#))

### **The Origin of Pride**

It is imperative to understand [Angelic Arrogance](#) in order to appreciate the origin of Pride. Pride is a BASIC Mental Attitude sin which began with Satan and this can be called ‘Antecedent Arrogance’. ([Is 14:14](#)) Pride was the original sin of Satan and the motive for his fall and thus it is the most basic aspect of Motivational Arrogance and Mental Attitude Sin. ([Is 14:12-14](#), [Ez 28:14-17](#)) It was the motivator also of Ish (Adam) and Ishah (Eve) in their

original sin. Once the believer learns sufficient Bible Doctrine and becomes Spiritually Self Sustaining he is able to resist the Interlocking System of Arrogance and thereby avoid succumbing to Pride. ([1Tim 6:3-4](#), [Prov 11:2](#), [Prov 29:23](#), [Job 33:16-17](#), [Is 13:11](#), [Ps 10:2-4](#)) Pride as the quality or state of conceit, inordinate self esteem and inordinate self consciousness of the soul, magnifies itself in irrationality away from reality into something the person is not. Vanity is EMPTY Pride, having no real reason for pride, in respect to one's person, attainments, possessions, coupled with [Approbation Lust](#). When Pride is carried to the extreme it leads to [Psychosis](#). Consider that of all the sins possible in the Human Race those which one will pay for the most under Divine Discipline are the Mental Attitude Sins. More believers are severely disciplined for Interlocking System of Arrogance involvement than any other activity and most of these are not even aware of their status and that they are a great pain in the neck for God. For most of these believers there has to be one real crisis or unusually tragic event to awaken them to their being given one more chance to straighten themselves out.

Motivational Arrogance of Mental Attitude Arrogance is a complex of failure caused by the influence of Evil on the soul. It is wrong thinking as a sin motivated by temptation from the area of weakness of the Old Sin Nature. All Mental Attitude Sins are related to the influence of Evil in some way since Evil is the policy of Satan, ie. his system of thinking, to rule this world APART from God. Since Pride as part of Mental Attitude Arrogance is a process of thought it blends with the Evil influence in the soul and is often the source of the production of Sin, Human Good or Crime derived from Evil, just as it was in the fall of Satan. Satan blended the Arrogance of his Prideful thoughts, which was his original sin of Pride, with its counterparts of [Ambition](#) and [Jealousy](#), into ideas to run creation APART FROM GOD, forming it into Evil as his policy and plan. Therefore, Motivational Arrogance as Mental Attitude Arrogance is a complex which is closely related to and results from the influence of satanic Evil on the soul of the believer in Cosmic Dynasphere I. Pride is, above all else, the antithesis of Grace and total blindness to the Grace Plan of God. Therefore, Satan originated the Arrogance which now permeates the human race and potentially destroys the Spiritual Life of the Believer, as is his intention.

In the origin of Evil as the plan and policy of Satan, there is Pride or Motivational Arrogance as Mental Attitude Arrogance resulting in the total abuse of his power and authority provided for him by God. His Arrogance led to his abuse of power which led to revolution which led to the evolving of Evil as his policy and plan for control of angelic creation. Thus the policy and plan called Evil, originated as Arrogance within Satan himself. Lucifer at some point thought under anti-authority concepts that he could do just what God did with regard to creation and the angelic realm. [Is 14:14](#), tells us that he thought or said "I will make myself like the most high". He therefore became known as 'Satan', the antagonist of God. He knew he could not be equal to God by whom he had been created, the only way he could be like the most high was to bring God down to his level. Therefore Lucifer set himself against the absolute authority of God and thus became the adversary of God. Therefore, Arrogance, as a corrupter of the believer's soul, can destroy the Christian Way of Life and lead the believer into the Legalistic syndrome, Cowardice Syndrome, Inadequacy Syndrome, and Socialist Syndrome and at times irrevocable entanglement in the Cosmic Dynaspheres, Satan's Power Systems. At times,

when a believer is full of Arrogance and has failed and is irrationally frightened, he may even ask God for death. This is divorcement from reality since he has run for his life in fear and then asks God to kill him. This inconsistency exists because the interlocking of Arrogance guarantees an inability to think and as the inability to think under pressure this brings on his cowardice.

### **Mental Attitude Arrogance as Motivational Arrogance**

One PIN of the Arrogance Grenade is Motivational Arrogance which is a complex of Mental Attitude Arrogance with its Mental Attitude Sins. This is a STINKING Mental Attitude in the believer and today about 85% of all believers, no matter how long they have been saved, fit into this category and have made absolutely NO Progress in the Spiritual Life. This motivational Arrogance results in a total fragmentation of the life of the believer by his becoming involved in many, if not all, other aspects of Arrogance. Motivational Arrogance as Mental Attitude Arrogance always resists Bible Doctrine in 2 categories:

- The Content of Bible Doctrine
  - This Arrogance is indifferent toward and disinterested in any subject which might be critical of or condemn the believer's Arrogance or expose the nature of his Vanity.
- The Communicator
  - This Arrogance enters into personality conflict with whomever is the Pastor Teacher teaching Bible Doctrine whether he is presenting it accurately or not.

Motivational Arrogance does not see the necessity for the daily Perception, Cognition, Incultation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine seeing it as a gross inconvenience. This Arrogance can and does listen to Bible Doctrine teaching but usually for the sole purpose of distorting it or justifying some erroneous course of personal action through that distortion. Therefore, Motivational Arrogance resists Bible Doctrine because it rejects the authority of both the Bible Doctrine and the Pastor Teacher teaching it and the idea of learning in silence with concentration is abhorrent to these people. ([1Tim 2:11-12](#)) This applies to both men and women and NO ONE can learn anything when they are talking. ([1Cor 14:35](#)) Silence in listening and concentrating on the teaching of Bible Doctrine is essential provided that it is not Arrogance and resentment or resistance to the Bible Doctrine.

### **Results of Mental Attitude Arrogance**

Any Mental Attitude Sin as a part of the Motivational Arrogance of Mental Attitude Arrogance will distract the believer and cloud his alertness so that Bible Doctrine cannot be applied. Mental Attitude Sins are carnality resulting from the influence of Evil on the soul, and also will destroy any effectiveness of prayer. With Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul, the soul is not cluttered up with Motivational Arrogance and Mental Attitude Sin and the believer will have freedom, alertness, wisdom, objectivity and initiative so that then when the right time comes the right action comes with it immediately.

Selfishness and Selfcenteredness are the twin facets of Pride. Selfishness destroys capacity for life, love and happiness and Selfcenteredness cannot cope with adversity nor establish correct solutions to the problems of life. If one thinks more of self than of Bible Doctrine then he will

think more of self than of those he allegedly “loves”. In this way selfishness and Pride are inseparably linked so that one thinks more of self than God, doctrine or others. An application of Pride is selfishness and often people, when they are very happy, become Prideful and very selfish desiring to perpetuate forever the circumstance which brought this happiness even at the expense of the whole Plan of God. It is almost inevitable that people in love will have a blind side of Arrogance and desire that their love moments would last forever which is a very selfish attitude.

Very often when people move up in one area of life they feel that there is nothing anyone can teach them in any area of life no matter the subject. People who have been great in a profession with great intellectual accomplishment often get to where they believe they know everything. These people often are extremely unteachable and the Arrogance of Pride is a major part of this problem. Because they are very knowledgeable in one subject they assume they are expert in every subject. However, being expert in one or even many fields does not ever mean that they cannot learn more in the spiritual field. This is how Arrogance displaces the principle of making Adjustment to the Justice of God and that Justice Demands Justice.

Pride is NOT normal self consciousness or confidence it is inordinate self esteem and disorientation to the Grace of God. The only time a believer can possess what is needed to glorify God on earth is in Phase II of the Christian Way of Life using that which God has provided for this purpose, but, in this Church Age, he is in an intensified hidden spiritual conflict. ([James 4:13-15](#)) Each and every day the Believer is commanded to avoid Motivational Arrogance with its Mental Attitude sins which inevitably result in incredible Self Induced Misery. ([Prov 17:1-8](#)) Pride produces this self induced misery so that when one enters into this stage of Arrogance he must rely on his own resources to support him, which are grossly inadequate for the task. The believer in this Church Age faces daily spiritual conflict in wildly varying degrees and in these situations also faces the Arrogance of Pride as a problem to be overcome. As Royal Family of God, believers are given incredible [divine resources](#) to face the daily problems present in the Intensified Stage of the Angelic Conflict Appeal Trial, all based on the Grace of God, BUT Pride will keep the believer from being able to use these provisions from Grace. It is usually very apparent when the Lord chooses to use a believer since he is usually the biggest jackass around and if the Lord takes him and makes a great hero or Divine Good producer of some sort using him, it is because that believer has been prepared by the Lord for it with [Humility](#). Therefore, the believer must never become Arrogant or Proud of himself when the Lord begins to use him.

### **ALL Pride is based in THOUGHT**

Pride is a Thought, this thought results in decisions, then these decisions result in Actions. When one cannot handle problems of thinking he allows the Old Sin Nature to gain control of his soul and enters into Cosmic Dynasphere I the Interlocking System of Arrogance. Most people who gossip, malign and Judge do so because of their own Mental Attitude of [Self Righteousness](#) as a result of their Motivational Arrogance of Mental Attitude Arrogance. People who judge others are Arrogant and Self Righteous and bogged down with the influence from Evil. By this means, Arrogant Pride makes one vulnerable to any function of the Old Sin



Nature for which there is not a natural or lawful restraint from police, judges, systems of discipline, etc. Arrogance takes the creature, the believer, and removes him from a rational and civilized attitude toward life and makes him a creature only restrained by fear of personal reprisal, ie. his being hurt in some way. This status can include all believers from [Spiritual Infancy](#) to Advanced Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God. Self Righteousness, interlocks with and, in fact, is an integral part of Pride and an easy means of vast entanglement in the Interlocking System of Arrogance. The fact is that the most predominant sin which results from Evil influence in the soul is Pride or Self Centered Arrogance. The overt production of Evil, when it influences and saturates the soul, can be Sin or Crime or Human Good, which is trying to solve man's problems by man's own efforts Apart From God. Evil as the plan and policy of Satan will infiltrate the soul of the believer or unbeliever who is under any level of Negative Volition to Bible Doctrine and / or the absolute truth of the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions. The result is that Evil, as a system of thought, when processed or accepted in the soul inevitably results in temptation from the Old Sin Nature which allows the production of Sin, Crime or Human Good. The production of Motivational Arrogance or any of the Mental Attitude Sins reflects overt satisfaction with SELF and dissatisfaction with all others, instantly and deeply entwining self into Cosmic Dynasphere I, the Interlocking System of Arrogance. The solution to this dissatisfaction with others is Perception, Cognition, Incultation, Metabolization and Application of Bible Doctrine and development and deployment of the [10 Problem Solving Devices](#) especially Grace Orientation and Impersonal / Unconditional Love for Mankind. Dissatisfaction with others invariably results in dissatisfaction with Bible Doctrine and therefore strengthened or enhanced [Negative Volition Arrogance](#) where Bible Doctrine is rejected or neglected and by this means entry is gained into the Apostasy of [Reversionism](#).

Pride is the Arrogance which develops and reinforces a sense of superiority in one's thinking. It is either a real superiority resulting from achievement or a false sense for which there is no achievement to back it up. Whether real or imagined it distorts the perspective of life and results in selfcenteredness which brings out an overbearing manner and a presumption called Self Righteousness. Pride being a system of thought causes all Mental Attitude Sins to have their root in it. Motivational Arrogance as Mental Attitude Arrogance therefore distorts, rejects and ridicules Absolute Truth but never accepts Truth. The principle is that the believer must be informed by Absolute Truth but never distracted from Absolute Truth. The human mind is always susceptible to this type of failure which results from distraction and entrance into this complex of Arrogance apart from the development of [Humility](#).

The Old Sin Nature by causing temptation to this involvement has the potential to corrupt the individual through inordinate Self Consciousness resulting in Vanity and Pride, and a Mentality saturated with Motivational Arrogance, Mental Attitude Sins, [Human Viewpoint](#) thinking and Sin, Crime or [Human Good](#) production resulting from the influence of Evil. Human Arrogance in competition with the Integrity of God is the source of Terrorism in the world and is manifest by the various systems Satan uses to control the world.

- ✧ **Socialism** which will destroy the Believers relationship with God through a mass narcissistic complex.
- ✧ **Communism** as an atheistic pseudo religious world domination ideology using violence to

control people and preserve itself.

- **Welfare State Functions** under humanism, socialistic redistribution of wealth, and terrorism.

These systems of Arrogance allow egocentricity to make demands on God for Equality, Civil Rights, Recognition, Power, and Wealth all without responsibility or the ability to attain any of them by one's own efforts.

### **Pride & Rejection of Authority**

Anyone who is saturated with Pride cannot handle any authority given to him in any situation. Pride, therefore, limits capacity to handle [authority](#) or function in leadership. Pride rejects the authority of bible doctrine and the Pastor Teacher and refuses to attend or does not concentrate during bible study, therefore, it results in malfunction of the [Grace Apparatus for Perception](#) for learning Bible Doctrine.

Pride always results in rejection of the systems of authority setup by God which include:

- [Laws of Divine Establishment](#) – This includes authority delegated to government so that freedom can be perpetuated in the Human Race during the Angelic Conflict Appeal Trial.
- [Divine Institutions](#) – Providing organization and structure in Human Life and Human History to enable the fulfillment of the purpose of Man in history to make decisions.
- **Spiritual Authority** – Starting with the Gospel of Christ and the realm of Bible Doctrine and then going down the line from the Pastor Teacher through the administration in the local church.

These systems provide the environment of freedom, in the nation or world in general, to choose for The Lord Jesus, The Christ or not, and for Bible Doctrine or not. Pride also rejects the freedom of others and any system of temporal authority, personal, civil or spiritual authority. It undermines the pastor or the law of the nation, rejecting the authority which has been delegated and exists there. Social authority when rejected can lead to ridicule and rejection of Law, Judicial functions, Law Enforcement or Military functions or can result in turning to a life of Crime, but this authority structure is in fact set up to be the basis for one entering into society as a functional part of it. This authority is delegated by God as well and includes:

- Husband over the wife
- Parents over children
- Limited government over the people
- And many other levels

Pride as part of Motivational Arrogance is the enemy of spiritual growth and is that which causes a believer to reject the authority of the communicator of Bible Doctrine, the spiritual gift of communication, and the actual doctrine which is communicated, which is in fact the Authority of God. This is the basic cause of one entering into [Reversionism](#) through the use of Negative Volition toward Bible Doctrine or any Absolute Truth. This Arrogance therefore distorts or destroys perceptive ability. One primary problem in the world today is not that people are ignorant but that people believe so much that is not true, the LIE of EVIL, the plan and policy of Satan. The combination of intensified Arrogance plus the rejection of the authority of Absolute Truth and thus the inevitable resultant [Black out of the Soul](#) and [Scar](#)

Tissue on the Soul as stages of Reversionism, causes that believer to ONLY be able to believe the LIE of False Doctrine and the Evil of the Satanic Policy. The results of this Arrogance and believing the LIE is characterized as strong delusion. (2Thes 2:11)

Pride in rejecting Spiritual Authority is basically saying, “I am more important than God” or “I am God” and therefore not subject to any authority. This sense of superiority distorts all perspective in life. People reject authority because they invariably react to the people who have the authority. Authority must be viewed as an organizational system not a person carrying authority. Standards of life and orientation to self must be set as the basis for social life with focus on the limited sense of that life. Therefore, when one has developed and is functioning under Humility and encounters a person in authority, deference is then applied to that person. People who have authority are those in a system or organization which must be respected. If one is full of Pride then he will react to the person in authority instead of respecting the system of that authority. When put into a position of authority one must always remember that the secret to running an organization with people who are involved in Arrogance is good discipline. Discipline is an imposed system of poise which allows the organization to function properly by overcoming individual Pride and Arrogance. In addition, one cannot ever use authority to become popular because being in authority is NEVER a popularity contest. Some individuals, when put into positions with authority having Arrogant people under them, often use their power to get the people to like them assuaging their approbation lust and Pride. When these things occur in any area of life in a society then it is inevitable that the 4 cycles of Divine Discipline must occur for that nation. This is why America is where it is today and why Americans are no longer representative of the American Way of Life.

Being rebuked by authority does not mean one is not loved and receiving discipline from adults does not mean a child is not loved. God may rebuke the believer with Divine Discipline but it does not mean he does not love him as a part of the Royal Family of God. Some believers when under pressure get their feelings hurt and their Pride injured, having entered into Arrogance as a result of persistent Negative Volition toward Bible Doctrine and then build Scar Tissue of the Soul and eventually they die the Sin Unto Death but even under the incredible Divine Discipline of the Sin Unto Death they still belong to God and He still loves them.

### **Pride & Rejection of Truth**

Pride is a basic disorientation to reality thus to life. (Ps 10:2-4) All Arrogance, especially the Self Centered Motivational Arrogance of Pride, is therefore a primary corrupter of the soul and motivates rejection of All Categories of Absolute Truth. Any form of Arrogance is therefore a distraction to spiritual growth which can only occur through Perception, Cognition, Incultation and Metabolization of the Absolute Truths of Bible Doctrine and this ONLY under a status of Humility. Therefore, the believer must never be distracted from Truth because the mind is helpless and useless without Truth and placing oneself above Truth is the epitome of Arrogance. The absolute concerning the human mind is that it cannot effectively cope with life apart from Absolute Truth.

Both believer and unbeliever can reject Truth and in this rejection it always involves Arrogance whether it is known or unknown. Therefore, Arrogance motivates rejection of the Truth and distracts those who have accepted Truth. Arrogance divorces the believer from reality both personal and historical and it destroys capacity for life, love, happiness, blessing etc. In one's life, to the extent that one lacks capacities for life, to that extent, Arrogance is involved. For the believer when there is a lack of the TRUTH of Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul it is most likely the result of some aspect of Arrogance being a distractor. Arrogance, especially Pride, rejects, ridicules and destroys Truth and therefore never accepts Truth nor approaches it with objectivity. Arrogance thrives on flattery and also causes both the believer and unbeliever to believe the LIE of EVIL as a result of having rejected Truth. Once the individual rejects any category of Truth it is like mixing sugar into the gasoline of a car. Liberalism, socialism, greatest good for greatest number, communism, welfare functions, man by his efforts seeking to solve his own problems are all sugar for the gasoline of the mind.

Thus, Pride ([1Sam 2:3](#)) is expressed so that when there is pressure put on Pride it results in conversations which involve verbal sins but the believer must be constantly aware that the omniscience of God has evaluated ALL human actions. Pride also rejects the principle that Jesus Christ controls history ([Dan 4:37](#)). Nebuchadnezzar recognized that when he was involved with Pride he had rejected this principle, and because of this he was caused to be grossly humbled. The principle of Pride related to Jesus Christ is given in the dissertation on blind arrogance. ([Matt 19:27-30](#), [Matt 20:30-34](#)). However, consistent Positive Volition toward Bible Doctrine insulates the soul against Pride. Do Good, Bleeding Heart, Liberals rejecting the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions and all Absolute Truth, are in the Cosmic Dynaspheres and function under the false thinking of their Arrogance which is highly detrimental to their soul because Pride always produces false or erroneous thinking, the expansion of the LIE from EVIL.

Pride, in short, destroys perceptive ability, rejects authority and any category of truth, results in irrationality and destroys personal capabilities resulting in the Proudful one resenting the capabilities of others. When one destroys his abilities, talents and potentials for greatness through Pride he always resents these talents existing in others. Pride never approaches Truth with reverence and the believer involved in Pride rejects the Truths of Bible Doctrine, especially the principles of [Eternal Security](#), and assumes his sins are greater than the Plan of God and he must WORK in order to be deserving of Heaven. Eternal Security is the one doctrine which the believer should CLING to especially when he falls into [Reversionism](#). Many believers actually hold onto this principle even up to the very end of Reversionism. They think they can do what they want in life and will never lose their salvation, which is true. However, for some believers, when the intensive Divine Discipline they receive becomes so painful and causes incredible misery then they think they possibly have LOST their salvation. It is Arrogance and rejection of the Truth of Bible Doctrine to say that you can commit any sin or get into any system of Evil that will cancel the Plan of God. Reality is that since God is perfect, so his plan, coming from him, is also perfect and therefore man, being imperfect, cannot ever have any input into this perfect plan and can only meekly follow it or be ROLLED over and crushed by it. Therefore, NO ONE CAN SIN SUCH A BAD SIN OR BECOME SO SATURATED WITH

EVIL THAT THEY CAN CANCEL HIS PLAN.

The Truth of the security of the believer's life is that he is born with 'LIFE SECURITY' having Soul Life imputed to the format soul at birth and the soul may go to the Lake of Fire with soul life in it and burn forever or it may alternatively go to heaven to be face to face, or in the presence of, God for eternity. NOTHING can take Soul Life from the Soul not even God. It is total absolute Prideful Arrogance to think there is some thing that one can do to remove that which God has imputed to his soul, namely, Soul Life. Therefore, this same principle also pertains to Eternal Life and Eternal Security. The believer who rejects Absolute Truth assumes, in his Pride, that his particular Modus Operandi, his personal efforts or functions for spirituality are the real thing and that his practices of human effort good works or his asceticism are greater than the Filling of God the Holy Spirit for spirituality. The believer who depends on emotion, which is a substitute for proper thought, is trapped in this pattern of Pride. Thought is the energy of objectivity and Pride destroys this objectivity allowing emotion to take over and this traps Prideful people under [Emotional Revolt of the Soul](#). Thus, the person saturated with Pride assumes his feelings or experiences are greater than any organization, system or Truth in life.

### **Pride & Fluctuation of Standards of Life**

When the historical and social climate in a nation results in a maximum number of people being involved in the Interlocking System of Arrogance one of the things which occurs outside the general functions leading to this collective degeneracy are wide fluctuations of the norms and standards in society. Standards of thinking are most often completely learned in the first 25 or 30 years of life. As long as one is developing vocabulary and his experiences are varying, his standards are still fluctuating. As long as standards fluctuate one cannot be humanly mature. Most people marry between ages 20 and 30 (if before that they are already losers), and if the marriage is successful this is purely the result of the Grace from God. Due to the retardation of thought and lack of vocabulary, the person whom one would love at age 20-30, one would laugh at upon reaching age 40. Some people even stay in a state of fluctuation of their standards all of their lives and actually never mature. Women develop more rapidly both mentally and physically than men and since they do not like bawdy language they develop more vocabulary with euphemisms to replace vulgarity. Today in the United States of America general involvement in the Interlocking System of Arrogance has pushed male human maturity almost to age 40. Therefore, males in an Arrogant nation fluctuate more in their standards until they reach or go beyond age 40. Most men would therefore do well to get married at or after age 40 since this is where they stabilize their thinking and their norms and standards.

The problem with collective national involvement in the Interlocking Systems of Arrogance in the 80's and more so now, is there is a general lack of response to Christian evangelism. In the United States there is an all time high in the number of Unbelievers and also Believers under Negative Volition to Bible Doctrine. The unbelievers are disoriented to the Laws of Divine Establishment, the Divine Institutions, the Gospel of The Lord Jesus, The Christ, and all aspects of authority and this all makes it impossible for them to grow up or Mature. These



people still make lifetime decisions which they have no intention of standing by. When a person does not take responsibility for their decisions they are Proudful and entangled in the Interlocking Systems of Arrogance. If a Right Man meets his Right Woman or vice versa and they are not mature at that time it will guarantee that their marriage is going to fail. Right Man + Pride or Right Woman + Pride == the marriage never succeeding as a result of instability in their norms and standards.

The most important thing for the believer to consider is whether he is thinking [Divine Viewpoint](#) as a result of Bible Doctrine in his Stream of Consciousness of the Soul or under the influence of Evil in the Cosmic Dynaspheres and therefore THINKING [Human Viewpoint](#) from Evil with a distorted Frame of Reference and a distorted set of norms and standards. Altruism is divorcement from reality as seen in the ongoing American foreign and domestic policies which are totally psychotic. Altruism is not love but it is the Arrogance of the welfare state and socialism and socialists and altruistic persons cannot ever have happiness. In altruism, the wealthy person will give all he has to some one who stimulates his Arrogance in his status of altruistic CONDITIONAL love. Very often such noble deeds are related to Social Action and [Self Righteous Arrogance](#) in prosperity as [Human Good](#) in [Reversionism](#). These deeds are not accomplished under the Filling of God the Holy Spirit nor motivated by Bible Doctrine or Spiritual Growth. The value of all the production in the Christian Way of Life by the believer is based on who controls the soul, how much spiritual growth is involved from Metabolized Bible Doctrine and what system of thought motivates the deed. As a result it is obvious that efforts toward or functions in social action, welfare state operations, communism, socialism, or revolution combined with Self Righteousness will confuse any believer. People much too often look at the deeds of man while God looks only at the thoughts. The Angelic Conflict and the Christian Way of Life are primarily functions involving what the believer thinks.

### **Pride & Alcoholism**

There is one kind of person who cannot ever handle alcoholic beverage and it has to do with his soul not his metabolism. This person cannot even drink in moderation because of the Arrogance of Pride in the soul preventing him from being able to handle any alcohol. Pressure on this person's Pride turns him to alcohol as a counter part to his Pride making him an alcoholic apart from metabolic addiction. Being an Arrogant person, even having a good metabolism for alcohol, he will wind up as an alcoholic because of soul dysfunction. Proud people never enjoy drinking and alcoholics never enjoy the drinking they are bound to. When one has a soul filled with Arrogance he cannot ever drink because his drinking will develop into problem drinking as a result of being without capacity for life and without sense or self discipline, therefore, it is inevitable that he will become an alcoholic. In order to properly deal with alcohol a person must have capacity for life, self discipline and self control in order to drink in moderation, a completely acceptable practice for the Christian. When one goes past drinking in moderation and into any level of drunkenness he has entered into that which is sin. People who have a counter part for Pride involving the sin of drunkenness have no self control and cannot function by drinking in moderation and have no control even over what they are drinking therefore they are the alcoholic.

## **Pride vs Ego**

There must be a distinction made with regard to common terms used with reference to Pride:

- **Ego** is man considered as the union of body and soul thus the self consciousness of soul, therefore, it is NOT Pride or Mental Attitude Arrogance.
- **Egocentric and Egocentricity** is selfcenteredness and depicts everything in relationship to self and therefore involves Pride.
- **Egoism** is excessive love or thought about self therefore Pride and can be operation overthink or the point at which the Arrogance of Pride begins and might even become a narcissus complex.
- **Egotism** is the conceit or practice of overemphasizing self, also Pride.
- **ID** is a technical word, an abbreviation for 'Idioplasm' and in psychoanalysis is considered the fundamental mass of an individual's life tendencies.

Pride is Mental Attitude Arrogance and the mental attitude sin of inordinate self esteem and is the antithesis of Humility. Pride is excessive delight in one's mentality, achievements, abilities or status in life. The Arrogance of Pride is an exorbitant overestimation of ones value or worth. This is a link between the mental attitude sin of Pride and [psychoses](#), therefore is basically unreality. Having total love of self is maximum egotistical Arrogance or maximum Pride but having great CONFIDENCE is a kind of love of self based on a full knowledge of what one is capable of doing, and what one desires to do in specific cases. This self confidence is not Arrogance but is a consideration and acceptance of facts related to ability. In the Spiritual Life designed and provided by God for the Royal Family of God in this Church Age Arrogant believers MUST be humbled by God, while humble believers are REQUIRED to be Blessed by God. ([1Pet 5:5-6](#)) Rapport with God, which requires knowledge about God, MUST precede any lasting relationship with people and very often believers who allege to have self esteem are simply involved in the Mental Attitude Arrogance of Pride. Arrogance Focus' attention on self and ignores any concept of knowing God, having or developing a relationship with God or functioning under his Plan.

In the varied situations of life Arrogance will show itself under pressure and if one cannot think under pressure he can blame it on Arrogance which results in personal distraction. A person with good posture, confidence who expresses dogmatic principles is not necessarily Arrogant but simply confident about what he knows, can do, and does. People who are superficially stupid always assign Arrogance to that which they don't understand and often assign Arrogance to that which they don't possess. The believer cannot depend on anything in life which is superficial and the superficialities of life must never interfere with the inculcation of the Absolute Truths of Bible Doctrine. In overreacting to superficialities of life believers create in their own lives [Self Righteous Arrogance](#) and this becomes part of their pseudo Christian Way of Life. Arrogance is subtle but also pervasive in life because it is the underlying foundation of Satan's plan and policy to rule this world since the transgression of Adam in the Garden. Many believers [Deceive Self](#) and call Arrogance spirituality and call Self Righteousness being a good Christian. This simply neutralizes any possibility of assigning the proper priority to Bible Doctrine so that it can be inculcated and then applied to situations and circumstances in life for solutions. The believer must NEVER allow the [Nonessentials](#) of life to interfere with consistent

Perception, Cognition, Incultation & Metabolization of Bible Doctrine. Most believers are asleep in life from overemphasis on nonessentials, involvement in Arrogance and perpetuating their own stupidity where the next step for them is their own destruction. The believer with true Humility knows what he is doing, is adaptable and flexible while the Arrogant person simply thinks he knows what he is doing and is totally inflexible about the nonessentials in life.

### **Pride & Emotional Revolt of the Soul**

Emotion and [Emotional Revolt of the Soul](#) are the bedfellows of Pride. Prideful people emote and enter the apostasy of Emotional Revolt of the Soul as part of their [Reversionism](#) and then live their life according to their emotions. This results in their being involved in all sorts of difficulties in life and in overestimating their value and not relating their true value to their integrity. This is also what occurs very often in marriage and in employment situations and if one overestimates his value in any area of life he will inevitably jump from job to job or wife to wife looking for a better situation. Military service uses a system of strict discipline to focus a person, train them and remove their reliance on emotion under Arrogance, and then only uses them for just a few years. However, the experience provided by military service will last a lifetime enabling the individual to see past his own emotions.

### **Pride & Guilt**

The ability to produce a guilt syndrome in another person is one of the strongest powers in life. People often manipulate others by nagging and producing guilt in them because they do not comply with their wishes or desires. The power of Pride to manipulate is almost beyond description. This is, in the United States of America, the [Tyranny of the Federal Government](#) and its bureaucracies. This manipulative power is very often expertly handled by the weakest people on earth, producing guilt in others. From 2019 to 2023 there had been the production of both fear and guilt in the citizens of this nation caused by the government propagandizing them to think that if they physically get too close to other people this would cause them harm or increase the chances of them dying from the CCP Wuhan Virus. In addition they have promulgated the idea that wearing a face covering will prevent the spread of this virus and protect others from getting it and therefore dying from it. Guilt as a complex of interlocking sinfulness can easily result from looking back at any former or contemplated sins or failures after having used the rebound procedure and this results in extreme entanglement in the Interlocking System of Arrogance from Guilt Reactions. Guilt in the Spiritual Life will destroy the Spiritual Life very quickly because it is not just another SIN but a complex of Arrogance Involvement and heinous sins.

### **Pride & Honor**

Arrogance always distorts HONOR into legalism. A lack of [Impersonal or Unconditional Love for Mankind](#), Problem Solving Device #8, enters one into the Motivational Arrogance of Mental Attitude Arrogance and destroys personal relationships. The [Integrity](#) which results in Impersonal Love for Mankind also allows the believer to be totally alone and yet Totally Happy. It is impossible for any Believer in this life to be happy without functioning under Impersonal Love, Honor and Integrity and no relationship in life works without these things. It is impossible to have integrity and / or honor without [Humility](#). Lacking Honor or Integrity

one cannot face disaster as a result of being involved in Arrogant Pride. These individuals are the ones who are always whining and Complaining in disaster. (Prov 11:2, Prov 29:23)

Sooner or later the Arrogant wickedness and lack of honor and integrity of those in other nations, the Russian and Chinese communists, moslems, Pakistanis, North Koreans etc., and that of the leaders in the democratic party WILL catch up with them. The Lord Jesus, The Christ controls human history and the Justice of God will right wrongs one way or another in HIS TIMING. Before God disciplines a person or nation there is always Pride or some other form of collective Arrogance permeating the people first and this invariably precedes National Destruction in the 5<sup>th</sup> cycle of Divine Discipline. The principle is that before any kind of a fall there is always Arrogance underlying it (Prov 16:18) and a lack of honor and integrity from the lack of the Absolute Truth of Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul. This applies individually and collectively to all people.

In employment situations something is owed to whomever trains the individual in any area. Therefore, changing jobs ONLY for better pay or a better situation is a Prideful person demonstrating that they have no character and no integrity and feel no loyalty to the person or group who trained them for their profession or occupation. Making the decision to change a job for better pay is to lose integrity and honor and gain Pride. The individual leaves behind his integrity along with his sense of value and honor when he leaves a company which has trained him ONLY to go to another position simply for better wages. This is the overestimation of one's personal worth to industry. No matter what pay one receives he owes responsibility to the ones who trained him. These principles apply to everything in life. Right or wrong companies to work for, right or wrong friends to associate with, etc.

### Pride vs Grace

The Battlefield of the Angelic Conflict is in the THINKING of the Soul. (James 4:6, 1Pet 5:5-6) Pride is a part of a system of power, the Cosmic Dynaspheres, which is greater than anything in life with the exception of Bible Doctrine and the Divine Dynasphere. If man can do even one meritorious thing in the Plan of God that plan is no longer perfect because man is imperfect. Man, therefore, cannot contribute to a perfect plan under the principle that imperfection cannot contribute to perfection. This is the basic concept of what is involved with Pride, it is imperfection trying to or thinking it can contribute to perfection. Therefore, as imperfect beings, humans can make no contribution to perfection but perfection must contribute to humans, THIS IS GRACE. This is the difference between the Divine Viewpoint of Grace and Human Viewpoint of Evil as systems of thinking. God can contribute to mankind through his Grace policy and plan but never can man contribute to him nor add to that plan. All religious legalism and Human Good production are always associated with the great Mental Attitude Sin of Pride and this Mental Attitude Arrogance is where Evil interacts in the involvement in Arrogance and Sin as the MOTIVATOR. Therefore, influence of EVIL is now, in effect, the Motivator of Arrogance in man. In the satanic revolution against God Arrogance was the motivator for the formation of Evil and at the fall of man in the garden the Arrogance developed in Ishah and Ish both, motivated their involvement with Evil and then their production of Human Good. God's Grace Plan and Policy, because it is a plan formulated by a

perfect God thus is a PERFECT plan, excludes all human merit, ability, [Human Good Production](#), [Legalism](#), [Self Righteousness](#) and all other aspects of Arrogance. Religious Legalism is the enemy of Grace because religion is Satan's greatest system of distraction from the Spiritual Life and Human Good is the production of the individual while under the Plan and Policy of Satan, EVIL. Therefore, there is no place for any aspect of Religious Legalism nor Human Good in the Plan of God. All Legalism and Human Good is associated with the greatest sin in creation, originating in Satan himself, Arrogant Pride and there is no place for this in the Plan of God. There are 4 areas in which Arrogance rejects Grace.

- ✧ The Pride of the believer who rejects the Bible Doctrine related to [Eternal Security](#).
  - To reject Eternal Security one must be the most fat headed Arrogant believer in history. This is having the idea that it all depends on 'ME' whereas in reality nothing depends on any believer but only on God.
- ✧ The Pride of the believer who succumbs to pressure or adversity.
  - He always thinks his suffering and adversities are greater than the Plan of God. He goes through life whining and [Complaining](#) about every little thing in life. This is Arrogance and any believer who constantly whines about life is in [Reversionism](#). ([2Cor 12:7-10](#))
- ✧ The Pride of [Human Viewpoint](#) thinking from Evil Influence which is also the Pride of Reversionism.
  - This believer assumes that his thinking, his [Opinions](#), are more important than Bible Doctrine and that what he thinks is more important than what the word of God says. He assumes with his persistent Negative Volition that his form of Reversionism is greater than Grace blessings from God. He assumes that his emotions and ecstatic experiences and functions under religious legalism are more effective than Bible Doctrine.
- ✧ The Pride of Pseudo Spirituality
  - This believer thinks his system of human efforts or deeds for spirituality are greater than the true function of God the Holy Spirit in the life. In Arrogance he becomes a Pentecostal holy roller or enters into a system of legalistic taboos, asceticism or some point program which impresses him and others while assuming it impresses God.

### **[Pride vs Humility](#)**

Pride rejecting the [Authority](#) of Bible Doctrine results in malfunction of the Grace Apparatus for Perception and is the motivation toward involvement in syndromes such as Religious Legalism, Guilt, Cowardice, Inadequacy, Socialism, etc., and it thereby releases the fury of mental, verbal and even overt sins in life. On the other hand, Humility is [Authority orientation](#) and is not the Self Effacement often found in Pride. No one ever dies the Sin Unto Death or enters into Intensive Divine Discipline apart from using his volition in making poor determinations from the basis of his own Pride. Every person can attain honor through development of the [3 categories of Humility](#), Organized Humility, [Enforced Humility](#) and [Genuine Humility](#). Both believers and unbelievers can attain honor in their function in organizations under Organized Humility, by means of systems of structured discipline under Enforced Humility or through personal initiative, incentive and motivation through self discipline under Genuine Humility. Most Divine Discipline in life is related to lack of Humility and involvement in the Interlocking



System of Arrogance. Pride as a corrupter of the soul, is a corrupter of thought and destroys or erases Truth from the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul thereby preventing the development of Humility.

Humility in the Spiritual Life is strength. For someone to voluntarily subject themselves to another person is true Humility. This divine strength with its attitude of Humility avoids [Bitterness](#) because of failed plans in one's life. Personal plans rarely work out the way one would like them to because they are HUMAN PLANS. The believer MUST be secure in the fact that he is in HIS, GOD'S, plan. This avoids Arrogance and selfcenteredness which are the greatest of weaknesses. No matter how great a believer may become spiritually he must not ever assume that the plan of God revolves around his successes or failures. That is just total human Arrogance! Humility is probably one of the greatest mental attitude systems that could ever be devised to enable the believer to stay on the positive side of the plan of God. Arrogant people cannot even subject themselves to official secular or civil leadership. True Humility is a Mental Attitude, a way of thinking and a way of life. As a way of thinking it is freedom from Arrogance and Human Viewpoint. Arrogance is an old sin nature problem not related to social status nor income. It always involves the loss or absence of Humility which in turn results in the loss of capacity for life and the ability to live life to the fullest. Human Viewpoint is the Mental Attitude which occurs when there is saturation of Evil, the plan and policy of Satan, within the soul and thinking of the believer or unbeliever as a result of neglect or rejection of Absolute Truth. Humility is the capacity for life, awareness of things outside self, recognition of God's blessings as coming from Grace, etc. Humility is never in any way related to financial depravity.

All systems of self elevation are Arrogance and legalism while Humility in the believer is Grace Orientation. The Greatest Humility in all of Human History was needed by The Lord Jesus, The Christ in His part in the Plan of God. By his demonstration and exhibition of Humility, submitting himself to the imputation, judgment and Substitutionary Spiritual Death payment for all human sins, believers can see the value placed by God the Father on Humility. One can easily see Arrogance constantly operating throughout this world, because Satan's fall and his ultimate rulership of earth as a result of Adam's Fall, are the result and demonstration of his absolute Arrogance, whereas the activities of The Lord Jesus, The Christ are absolute Divine Good and result from his total Humility. Satan's original sin was one of Prideful Arrogance and The Lord Jesus, The Christ demonstrated the opposite in His Humility during his Substitutionary Spiritual Death on the Cross for all human sin. Any participation in any aspect of Arrogance entangles the believer in Cosmic Dynasphere I, the Interlocking System of Arrogance, while operating under Humility moves him into and in fact is the result of his operating within the Divine Dynasphere and moving through the Plan of God to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God. Thus motivation and function in the Spiritual Life is intimately connected with the attitude of Humility. The Humility of Christ is the badge of victory over the Arrogance demonstrated by Satan and man. The Humility of Christ and any Humility developed and expressed in the Protocol Plan of God is an expression of Grace and Authority Orientation. [Grace Orientation](#) always results in Humility as the believer comes to recognize what God has done for him through Christ. The Lord Jesus, The Christ went to the cross despite the shame

involved in it, doing so under total Humility. In His Humility throughout his 33 years of life he stayed totally within the Plan of God. In Humility He won the strategic victory of the Angelic Conflict thus defeating and retaking what Satan had acquired as a result of total Arrogance. Arrogance caused the fall of Satan, the fallen angels, and also mankind while Humility provided salvation and retook the kingdom of both heaven and earth.

### **Pride & Pettiness**

In life it is often the ones who seem overtly humble who are the most Arrogant people. There are far more Arrogant people in the lower class poor of society than in the rich upper classes. Poor people often resent rich people mostly because of the Pettiness of the poor. It is acceptable to be POOR but it is very bad manners to be either rich or poor and PETTY. Adding **Jealousy** to pettiness causes the poor person to become completely enmeshed in Arrogance. Poor people all have Old Sin Natures and are therefore prone to being petty and jealous of those with wealth and they generally have a stronger tendency toward Pride in Arrogance than the wealthy. However, often both the poor and new rich tend to be Arrogant about their relative Status Quo in life. In the Royal Family of God the mature or maturing believer must never fall into the communist, satanic, Evil trap of resenting people who are truly wealthy or even apparently wealthy. However, for those who during their lifetime become very wealthy, this rapid acquisition of and possession of great financial wealth can also bring the real danger of Arrogance. Wealth, however, NEVER indicates in any fashion or under any circumstance SUPERIORITY and for wealth to be properly handled there must be ingrained Humility in the individual.

Pettiness is emphasizing something which is, in reality, of small importance or consequence and which has, invariably, been blown out of proportion by functioning under EVIL in Human Good Activism or **Crusader Arrogance**. An application for avoiding the Mental Attitude Sin of Pettiness is demonstrated where, while under the Prototype Spiritual Life for the Church Age, the Humanity of The Lord Jesus, The Christ magnified his word, Bible Doctrine, above his Person, Name and Reputation, so that under the Operational Spiritual Life of the Church Age the believer has the opportunity of magnifying Bible Doctrine above his own person. The believer cannot ever do this so long as he is petty. In fact, one sign of advancing in the Spiritual Life is the break off and separate from one's favorite area of personal Pettiness. Pettiness is always associated with mean spirited, spiteful persons, even Christians, who are filled with Arrogance and Emotional Sins in place of the Humility of the Spiritual Life from Bible Doctrine. Pettiness is therefore, the sponsor of the Interlocking System of Arrogance and the **Arrogance Skills**. Therefore, Pettiness, as Motivational Arrogance, is outside the boundaries of the Spiritual Life of the Church Age Believer. Pettiness inevitably involves **Jealousy** and **Bitterness**, which mostly hurts the one who is bitter and destroys any who retain it in their soul. Pettiness functions to bring the believer under Vindictiveness and all the Interlocking System of Arrogance Sins along with the Arrogance Skills of Self Justification, which is Lying about Self; Self Deception, which is lying to others and Self Absorption, which is lying about others.

The military type always has an attitude of the love of peace and friendship because he

understands the horrors of war where innocent and guilty both suffer from this organized violence. War is violence and violence always inevitably means both the innocent and guilty suffer. The Humility of the smart professional soldier is always prepared for war but avoids it in every situation as long as possible. Arrogance, however, causes implacability and this rejects both friendship and peace. In the 1970's the Russians were implacable toward the United States and America should never have made any treaty with them. Today the Arabic moslems and both the Chinese and Korean Communists are in the same status if not categorically worse. Negotiation with these types of people is useless and meaningless and negotiation without beating them into total submission is meaningless. Their Arrogance is rash and maltreatment and violence follows their message of comfort and peace. Petty people cannot ever understand the honorable motivation of great people because they are blinded by their own Arrogance. Jealousy and pettiness always live together, therefore, a Jealous person is always petty and filled with implacability.

### **Pride & Thanksgiving**

Blessing by association is part of the Super – Grace blessings for the believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and molds the believer into a pleasant memory for others. One should always remember how many times he has tried to impress someone else and failed totally and how these others ultimately became totally disgusted with him. It is a tragedy that believers don't realize that all their hangups regarding Arrogance and all attempts to impress others are the source of their failures with people. Arrogant people in addition to their true hangups in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul never have the true [Humility](#) of [Grace Orientation](#) needed to be grateful for anything. This is not sending out “thank you” notes or gushing over someone who gives one some small thing. This is true appreciation of others and being in a relationship with them. Therefore, thanksgiving is more than an attitude of gratitude but is a form of true Humility and an expression of honor. To be thoughtful of someone else and grateful for someone else are Mental Attitudes which erase the hangups of the soul and the things which make people so subjective, so boringly introspective and therefore real duds wherever they go. Thanksgiving is being alive and thankful for life without Arrogance and hangups and having gratitude as Humility. Thanksgiving is an act of rendering thanks and gratitude to God and an appreciation of others with whom one has a relationship. Thanksgiving should be a normal part of the Mental Attitude of the Royal Family of God. Thanksgiving and gratitude of soul are a part of the [Royal Family Honor Code](#) and the integrity of the Royal Family of God. The honor and integrity of the Royal Family of God is tied into Humility in its true sense as a Mental Attitude in contrast to Arrogance which is the underlying basis of the satanic package of Evil formed into the Cosmic Dynaspheres. ([Eph 5:20](#)) The father of Arrogance is Satan himself and he is the author of the plan and policy called Evil which is designed to strongly influencing believers being a source of infiltration into the soul which drives out any Absolute Truth of Bible Doctrine when they fall into [Reversionism](#). ([1Thes 5:18](#)) The believer who is totally divorced from the concepts of Grace and does not have [Metabolized Bible Doctrine](#) in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul will have a very difficult time being GRATEFUL to God for the PRESSURES and DIFFICULTIES of life.

There are many things which tie together in life and the principles of memory and thanksgiving

tie together in a person who is totally relaxed and has great capacity for life. This person is one who has maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul. With this he has the wonderful freedom of capacity for life with No hang ups, No Arrogance and No problem with approbation or other lust pattern nor any thinking of self in terms of self importance. Rather he is focused on thinking about God and who and what He is and what a fantastic plan He has provided. This is the normal Mental Attitude of the believer who has reached Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God.

Praise for God is the antithesis of Arrogance and therefore freedom from Arrogance and praise is thinking about someone else and being delighted by the glory of someone else. The believer must, at some point, become delighted over the promotion of The Lord Jesus, The Christ and, as a result of having maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of his Soul, come to love him. Because of this love the believer should be unable to keep himself from praising him genuinely from his soul. He is King of Kings and Lord of Lords with battlefield royalty and Church Age believers are his battlefield Royal Family. This is the same thanksgiving and gratefulness one must have when someone who is dearly loved has been promoted, successful, blessed and made happy. When one has this true attitude of praise and gratefulness toward the Lord it will overflow to the other members of the Royal Family of God. When one sees another believer who has received success or promotion beyond one's own level or has something he does not have in life he should be totally delighted to see them have it as part of their Super – Grace blessing package. Even their fantastic experiences when under dying Grace should be a source of delight for the observer. This should not produce Jealousy, as it often does in people with hangups who have no concept of the principles of capacity for life. There is, or at least should be, nothing more enjoyable in life than to see a believer who has been greatly blessed by Grace and to then praise God for these blessings and have gratitude for the blessings recognizing God as the source.

### **Pride & Psychology**

Pride is related to subjectivity and can be demonstrated by psychology as Character Flaws or Hangups.

#### **Character Flaws**

Flaws in one's character occur in 2 categories:

- Real Flaws resulting from a LACK of virtue.
  - ▲ Inherent Flaws resulting from volition acquiescing to the lust patterns and trends of the physical body as the result of the possession of the genetic Old Sin Nature causing one to function under the control of the Old Sin Nature.
  - ▲ Acquired Flaws resulting from volition acquiescing to environmental stimuli which feed the inactive lust patterns and trends of the Old Sin Nature again resulting in functioning under the control of the Old Sin Nature.
- Pseudo Flaws where flare as personality expression is mistaken for Arrogance or a Flaw
  - ▲ These have nothing to do with Cosmic Dynasphere Involvement.

Unfortunately very often in fundamental Christian social circles if a believer has any kind of personality flare he is instantly judged and condemned while in fact the one at fault is the one doing the judging. However, there is no such thing as an Inherent Flaw of Old Sin Nature

origin or Acquired Environmental Flaw, which cannot be solved by the proper function of human VOLITION. It is the VOLITION of the believer which succumbs to and accepts the temptations from the Old Sin Nature in both cases therefore it is ONLY volition which can solve or overcome these flaws. The indomitable will of the believer functioning consistently under the Filling of God the Holy Spirit with maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul can overcome any genetic inherent or environmental acquired flaw in life.

### **Physiological – Genetic Flaws**

Any time any suffering comes to the believer it is generally (not always) related to his own volitional self determination and his character flaws. It must be recognized that there are inherent physiological flaws in the physical body, which cause various illnesses and diseases to occur and from this can come terrible personal suffering. The individual has no control over these physiological genetic flaws. However, when this individual makes Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God he is no longer under the control of the flaws or weaknesses of the physiological genetic structure over which he has no control but he is under a new factor in the Plan of God. This new factor which comes into focus at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God is Logistical Grace, the Obligation of God to provide for those in his Royal Family. When considering believers living under Logistical Grace the first thing noticed is that many very weak, puny, people live a long time, much longer than their antecedents ever lived. This occurs, especially for consistently positive advancing believers, because in that longer time under Logistical Grace support they are able to advance to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and beyond and thus glorify God. This allows them to build the capacity to receive the phenomenal Escrow Super – Grace blessings from God for time, which overcome their Physiological Genetic Flaws and all things which physiologically make them uncomfortable. In addition their effective use of the opportunity to advance in the Spiritual Life also provides for them in Eternity a higher Status Quo than many healthy believers. All human beings are born unequal from the standpoint of physiology and health and some make bad decisions when they have health in their youth and then lose it early. GENERALLY speaking therefore, the individual brings on his own suffering with the only exception being the Physiological Genetic Flaws passed to him from his ancestors. At birth the Physiological Genetic Flaws one does not personally make decisions to have as weaknesses, potentially and in reality, cause his suffering. However, whatever those weaknesses or flaws may be, at the point of Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God, Logistical Grace support overcomes these flaws.

### **Hangups**

Hangups are obstacles in the normal life and related to involvement in Motivational Arrogance under Mental Attitude Arrogance and Scar Tissue of the Soul from **Reversionism**. These result in the person becoming snagged by abnormal subjectivity which is a pressure manifestation in Arrogant People with **Scar Tissue of the Soul** from reversionism who are involved in the Cosmic Dynaspheres and is indicative that they are losers in life. There are 2 categories of Hangups in life:

- Blind Hangups – resulting from Blind Arrogance, the expression of arrogance without personality identity.



● Known Hangups – resulting from one's self consciousness related to Pride.

Hangups of either kind often result when one has some level of power or authority which is challenged so that the challenge always causes some form of abnormal behavior. Pride, with its flaws and hangups, is the condition while the symptoms exhibited by those who are Proudful are [Jealousy](#), [Bitterness](#), vindictiveness, etc., the entire realm of Mental Attitude Arrogance and Mental Attitude Sin. In addition hangups add another dimension to the problems in the Spiritual Life related to teachability in that they hinder learning Bible Doctrine. Hangups reject the [Authority](#) of the Pastor Teacher and often simply cause failure to attend bible class or cause one to only come to bible class to criticize the Pastor Teacher and form [Conspiracies](#) against him. Whenever these believers do attend bible study the message content puts them under pressure. This pressure results in triggering the eruption or explosion of Evil in their soul from the detonation of the Arrogance Grenade which then totally fragments their entire life.

Therefore, all hangups are manifestations of Motivational Arrogance, from Pride or any Mental Attitude Arrogance. They are a part of Pride such that when Pride or Mental Attitude Arrogance is under pressure then the hangups or the real character flaws of a person appear. Pride always triggers other forms of Motivational Arrogance from Evil in the thinking processes when pressure is put on Pride. The hangups of the soul are areas where the person's Pride is vulnerable to attack and injury and these people are nice until one opposes with their subjective hangups. When Pride is injured or attacked then in comes the monster of the subjectivity of the hangup syndromes.

Pride as an expanded opinion of self and things related to self sits in the soul content with the expanded image it has created of self. Pride enjoys life under conditions similar to being high on some stimulant, and if no one offends or challenges or antagonizes this Proudful high, then the individual can enjoy life and is sweet and nice to be around. However, Arrogance, especially Pride, creates maximum hypersensitive spots in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul called HANGUPS. A hangup is an obstacle in the normal function of life related to Pride or Mental Attitude Arrogance. A hangup exists because of some area or form of subjectivity or abnormality in the soul. These hangups in the soul become a source of Pride stimulating the development of false motivation in life. Hangups are highly sensitive areas which exist on the periphery of Pride and highly vulnerable spots susceptible to being the source of injury to Pride. Having hangups in the soul surrounding one's Pride and [Blind Arrogance](#) protects the pseudo 'YOU' which is expanded in one's thinking and any contradiction to them is considered an attack on the PSEUDO EXPANDED 'YOU'. Hangups, therefore, protect Pride and keep it inflated and expanded. Hangups in the soul within the Arrogance complex are like a lot of floats on the water around the REAL PERSON. These are areas of sensitivity floating around in the water where Pride is vulnerable and as long as no one bothers them they remain floating. When any of these are challenged or attacked by Absolute Truths they then sink and as they submerge they come under greater and greater pressure and thereby a trigger is set. In this challenge Pride has been attacked and as a result of one of these hangups coming under pressure the process of compression in the soul starts.

This injury to Pride is what makes a person a monster and these people are nice until they are

attacked at their hangup points. This can be called frustrated Pride. In this situation the real person, the SELF, suddenly appears as insignificant in their own eyes and they totally resent whatever or whoever has caused the attack. This could include a person, principle or circumstance in life but whatever it is the expanded self is suddenly gone having been totally compressed and the real person appears totally insignificant to themselves. When Pride is attacked, challenged or Injured and is compressed and under pressure it also increases the overall pressure in the soul to the point of detonation. Therefore, anything which attacks or challenges Pride, compresses Pride, creates incredible internal pressure which must at some point expand violently so that when Pride is squeezed down until the pressure is maximum it must then explode. This is part of the Arrogance Grenade in the soul. Therefore, when these hangups, which produce false motivation, are reversed by the pressure on Pride a chain reaction of Motivational Arrogance of Mental Attitude Arrogance with Mental Attitude Sins occurs from the influence of Evil placing the reversionistic believer or the unbeliever directly under the command of and in slavery to Satan and the Cosmic Dynaspheres. When the believer has some system of hangups in one field in life these WILL overflow into other areas of his life as well. Therefore the sooner he gets enough Metabolized Bible Doctrine in his Stream of Consciousness of the Soul to cause him to relax the better it will be for him. No one can force self to be relaxed but it can and must be accomplished by consistent Perception, Cognition, Inculcation & Metabolization of Bible Doctrine. One cannot ever be truly relaxed as a person and have capacity for life, which is in fact total freedom from hangups, without reaching Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God from maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul. The believer should NEVER feel like he has to justify self to anyone and he cannot EVER allow Pride to RUN HIS LIFE.

Hangups in the soul also cause the individual to not properly orient to [Authority](#) and as a result he is not be able to hold a job; he blames other situations and people for this inability, while in reality it is his own Blind Arrogance, hidden Jealousy, rejection of authority, rejection of policy, REJECTION OF BIBLE DOCTRINE and often much more. The same thing which causes people to change jobs or churches, with their rejection of the authority in these areas, also causes them to move into a life of [crime](#).

### [Syndromes](#)

There is also the problem of a persistently indulged Flaw becoming a Hangup and that Hangup then becoming a Syndrome as one becomes more and more mired in the Cosmic Dynaspheres. Symptoms of Arrogant hangups are involvement in any level of Motivational Arrogance as Mental Attitude Arrogance with its Mental Attitude Sins derived from the Evil Policies of the Interlocking System of Arrogance. Therefore, the symptoms resulting from having hangups in one's soul are called Syndromes and Syndromes are symptoms typical of Pride or are the manifestations of the result of "pressures" being put on Pride. There are occasions when a proud person attends a church service of some kind and only looks for something to resent and this puts them under pressure so that their Pride is submerged and their hangups are revealed as the other side of that coin. This is a great enemy of momentum in the Divine Dynasphere, the Power System of God and a hindrance to fulfillment of the Plan of God. The syndromes which may exist include but are not limited to such things as:

- ▲ Legalistic Syndrome
- ▲ Guilt Syndrome
- ▲ Emotional Syndrome
- ▲ Fear Syndrome
- ▲ Cowardice Syndrome
- ▲ Inadequacy Syndrome
- ▲ Socialist Syndrome
- ▲ Liberal Syndrome
- ▲ Anti Establishment Syndrome
- ▲ Anti Antisemitism Syndrome
- ▲ Prejudice Syndrome
- ▲ ETC.

All these are directly related to the function of the believer within the Interlocking System of Arrogance. Believers who function under these syndromes have great difficulty in interactions with other Christians. These syndromes can all be solved by spiritual advance to Spiritual Adulthood and developing Spiritual Self Esteem, Spiritual Autonomy and Spiritual Maturity from consistent Post Salvation Epistemological Rehabilitation.

### **Mental Attitude Arrogance vs Relationship with God**

One of the greatest problems among Christians is **Blind Arrogance** and many fundamentalists involved in the Tongues or Pentecostal Holy Roller movements think that their principles and concepts are equivalent to law and that what they think is the absolute and they then try to superimpose this on all others around them. This is their refusal to live their life as unto the Lord and to allow others to do so as well, and they constantly try to relate self to other people and this is true Arrogance. The believer is commanded to only relate self to GOD not ever to people and fundamentalism in Christianity cannot and has not done this for a very long period of time. As Royal Family of God in this Church Age the job of the believer is to relate his life to God ONLY, and ONLY by means of Metabolized Bible Doctrine and he is never to relate to who or what any other people are or what they may think whether good, bad or indifferent. When one relates life to God he is thereby safe from the Influence of Evil from the Cosmic Dynaspheres but when he relates life to people he becomes more and more Arrogant, entangled deeply into the Interlocking System of Arrogance, Cosmic Dynasphere I. No one can relate their life to people without becoming saturated with all types of Arrogance especially discouragement which is both sinful and involvement in succumbing to Evil Influence. This idea of relating life to people is the satanic thought behind much of the mental therapy conducted by psychology in group therapy sessions which is getting into a group and trying to orient to life by orienting to the group. In this respect, group therapy sponsors Evil in the name of good and the name of healing and is in reality one of the functions of communism and their 'CELL' process of indoctrination and brain washing for compliance.

### **Pride, the Original Sin & the Woman**

Pride, was the motivation for and source of the Sin of the Woman, Ishah or Eve, but the Man, Ish or Adam, did not sin from Pride. Pride or Mental Arrogance always combines with some other failure or sin and a person not under pressure who is Arrogant always has many other

serious problems. These types cannot be trusted with subordinate levels of command or situations which demand self discipline and leadership ability nor with business deals. They do not make good partners in military or Law Enforcement, nor good subordinates in business and there is actually NO PLACE in life where they are helpful, especially when they are picking out a lifetime partner. When looking for a spouse the man must be very cautious of the Arrogant Woman. Women are much more prone to Arrogance than men because they are under the illusion from birth provided by their mothers or grandmothers that women are smarter than men, one of the biggest illusions of history. Some women are smarter than the men they marry but this is the result of either a bad mistake or wanting to marry someone whom could be dominated and controlled. Women are generally not smarter than men and never will be but are prouder than men and more prone to Pride and other areas of Arrogance. They don't have a "macho" demonstration of this, like some men, because they generally are more subtle in their Arrogance. However, never be fooled, the original failing of Pride in the Human Race began in the woman. She wanted to be smarter than Adam and as smart as God and this is why she ate from the Tree of the Knowledge of Good and Evil but then, in fact, only discovered her incredible stupidity not how smart she had become.

Involvement in the Interlocking System of Arrogance by mankind is a link directly with Evil which came into being as a result of Satan's Prideful Arrogance. Arrogance in mankind always is a part of Evil having been the source of the development of EVIL in the beginning and also meets with [Reversionism](#) at the point of [Negative Volition Arrogance](#). At any given stage of Reversionism as a result of entanglement in Arrogance, Evil is the influencing motivation. The original sin of Satan was Pride or Arrogance from which his policy of Evil was developed. When the woman, as first sinner of the Human Race, fell from Grace it was because of her Arrogant thinking that she could be as smart as God and thus smarter than her husband, Adam. Satan's original sin was Arrogance and therefore he knew how to tempt the woman who tended toward Arrogance as well. Satan did not try to tempt Adam because he was NOT Arrogant. Therefore, the ORIGINAL Pride in the Human Race had its beginning with the FEMALE. Although the woman was created very SMART, because she was Arrogant she became very stupid as a result of her Arrogance. HOWEVER, make no mistake, this is not an exclusive characteristic of the female and too many times to count, women have been able to wrap a male around their finger because the male was Saturated with Arrogance. Satan simply appealed to the Pride of the woman, which was a simple thing, to cause her to fall. He knew he could not appeal in this way to the Man but was sure that if he was able to get to the woman she would then get to the man and he would choose to follow her.

The human male, throughout history, has always retained greater objective sensitivity than the female and the male should instinctively always have and display good manners. The Woman has very great subjective sensitivity unless she is responding to her Right Man. Without having her Right Man there with her, Ishah should not be carrying on any conversation with the serpent and with this conversation Satan transferred his own weakness to the soul of the Woman and she came under [Blind Arrogance](#). The Woman's Soul thus overflowed with Pride and Ambition and was ready for revolt. Therefore, God, as The Lord Jesus, The Christ, had to come in Hypostatic Union as a MAN not as a woman because of this function of Female Pride.

In Arrogance Ishah manufactured Sin, the transgression of the mandate of God, in her Fall. The Woman was viciously Arrogant, while the man was STUPIDLY humble. The Woman had no pressure living in the Garden, until Satan put pressure on her Pride by deceiving her about the Tree of the Knowledge of Good and Evil. With the pressure of the potential for vastly increased knowledge from eating the Fruit of that Tree she developed the Ambition to be better than Adam and equal with God.

The principles of the Plan of Satan contained in Good and Evil are not only Satan's policy in ruling this world but his greatest weapon against the believer in the Angelic Conflict. When the [Reversionistic](#) believer seeks his own interests he becomes vulnerable to the lies and prevarications from the Pastor Teachers who never study to teach but are in fact con artists for Evil. These pastors give nice sermons on being good to your neighbors and being kind and doing good deeds or they preach about the greatness of the United Nations or gaining more brotherhood or helping the downtrodden or cutting down the military to give more to welfare. Both the pastors and the congregations who believe these things are in Reversionism. These reversionists are easily led astray by various categories of false doctrine and legalism because these things appeal to their Arrogance and Emotion deeply entangling them into the Cosmic Dynaspheres. Attempting to engage in changing one's life, personality or lifestyle is a major tenet of legalism and is based totally on Arrogance. This is again thinking that something which the believer can do, change his personality or habits to be more pleasing to others, will gain appreciation from GOD! Therefore, the believer who seeks his own interest in the Spiritual Life is vulnerable to the subtleties of Arrogance. The only protection he can have from Arrogance is maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul. In addition, the building up of the level of Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul is the only way some people will ever have a sense of humor, especially about themselves.

When a woman or child tries to break through the authority structures set up for them they are under the influence Evil and involved in terrible Arrogance. In the original temptation of the woman Satan used the Tree of the Knowledge of Good and Evil relating it to the woman's Prideful Arrogance. Satan wanted to get the woman involved in the subjectivity of Arrogant Pride so as to be able to deceive her and he did this by making her feel superior with his statements of [Gen 3:1-3](#). Under the pressure of the conversation with Satan, she could not think in terms of spiritual things therefore assumed that the properties of the tree itself were deadly and did not realize that death did not lie in the tree itself, but only in the *[Act of Disobedience to God](#)*. Pride always has some counterpart which is exposed when it is placed under pressure causing it to submerge and the counterpart as an antithesis of some category of [Virtue](#) or as some category of Mental Attitude Sin to pop up. In the Case of the woman, Satan, by encouraging her Arrogance, Pride, [Jealousy](#), [Ambition](#), etc., and challenging it, caused her to reject the authority of her right man, Bible Doctrine and God, thus allowing her pride counterparts to surface.

A woman always feels good if she is correcting someone and it is a magnificent thing to see, she very often has thus forgotten about sex and all the things which happen between a man



and woman in so doing. The woman, in the garden in conversation with the serpent, immediately got on to a stronger Pride function by correcting Satan in the serpent. Satan wanted her to be functioning under Pride and entangled in Arrogance because having used this method successfully with angelic creatures, he knew that all humans are deceiveable when under Arrogance. This is another very good reason to avoid Arrogance aside from the other spiritual implications. A person can be deceived so very quickly simply by their staying involved in Arrogance and this is the fastest way for the believer to allow someone to make a fool of him. In this way, God made a fool out of Satan based on this same principle. When she was present during the lectures in their bible classes with The Lord Jesus, The Christ “in the cool of the evening”, about the Tree of the Knowledge of Good and Evil, she was supposed to learn it’s uselessness in having a relationship with God and it’s being useful only to cause focus on and orientation to Grace. God said simply “DO NOT eat of this tree”. Being unable to think in terms of spiritual things, because she was not concentrating on what was taught, she thought the property of the tree was such that it was poisoned and if you touched or ate from the fruit you will die either way. In this manner, she added her ideas to Bible Doctrine based on her Arrogance.

The woman, at this point, was already under Negative Volition to God and was resisting Bible Doctrine and rejecting the authority of her husband Adam, Bible Doctrine and The Lord Jesus, The Christ. She should not have been talking to the serpent, ie. Satan, but should have first cleared this conversation with her husband Adam prior to engaging in it. She was, however, already breaking out from under the rule of her husband, who was the ruler of the world, and was going to believe what Satan said because she was already functioning under Arrogance and pleased teaching the serpent about the tree and to be able to learn something Adam did not know. Satan only had to keep fanning the fires of her Arrogance since a woman is actually 2 very different people, one, her true self, the other, under the influence of Evil in Arrogance. Under Arrogance a woman, and any person in fact, is vulnerable to anyone who can appeal to their Pride. Satan told her that God did not want her to eat from the Tree of the Knowledge of Good and Evil because He did not want her to be as smart as He is. This appealed to the Arrogance of the woman who in her thinking said, “How dare him, I am going to be smarter than Adam and as smart as God and I WILL eat from that tree”. All Satan had to do was get the woman leaning in the right direction and when she had strong enough Arrogance she would go ahead with it on her own. In a state of innocence in the garden, man needed to know Bible Doctrine to orient to Grace and the blessings he constantly received from God, but did not need knowledge of either Good or Evil which only existed to provide understanding and orientation to the plan and policy of Satan. As a result, ALL Human Good, as the production of Evil, the Policies and Plan of Satan, is dead to the Plan and Policy of God which is Grace. ([Gen 2:17](#), [Heb 6:1](#)) After Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God the Believer must change his mind about the benefits and greatness of Human Good Efforts or Dead Works derived from the principles of EVIL which are production ONLY in the plan and under the policies of Satan. There can be Human Good production which is beneficial to the Human Race but it only occurs as production based on adherence to the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions by the unbeliever or believer who is out of fellowship. However this Human Good based on the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions produced out from under the Filling of

God the Holy Spirit is of no spiritual value for the believer. Spiritual Death includes all the Evil that the unbeliever THINKS and all the Human Good which the unbeliever DOES and all the Evil and Human Good the reversionistic believer accomplishes based on the policies of EVIL. Thus the production of Human Good is linked with Arrogance to produce Boasting ([Eph 2:9](#), [Rom 4:2](#)) which always stimulates Arrogance.

### **Pride & False Motivation**

Arrogance is responsible for almost all false motivation in life. Many believers witness for Christ from pure Arrogance and many serve in both Christian and social organizations purely from Arrogance. Many professionals become saturated with Arrogance, the motivation, being from their inordinate ambition, is not to be professional and have excellence in their profession, but to move up in the field and gain greater approbation. They accomplish this at the expense or neglect of their organization, by false training or making the members of their organization miserable, whether it is a military organization or any other organization. People very often in their Arrogance are proud of their pseudo Humility and their “suffering” for God. However, the reality of the Christian Way of Life is that whatever ambitions or desires were present when they were an unbeliever, to the advancing believer God says “go for it”. God does not stifle or destroy the ambition of the believer but in his plan he divorces it from Arrogance. This is done so that ambition is something out in front of one’s life that he is driving to get but it is low keyed and merged into Bible Doctrine as he puts his life in the hands of the Lord and advances as a result of Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of his Soul. Being thereby motivated from Bible Doctrine to do a better job and work harder and longer hours doing whatever it takes to perform to one’s best the doctrinal motivation has put glorification of the Lord as the ultimate goal in this believer’s plan. So wherever the Lord takes the believer in life is where he belongs and he is therefore never disappointed when he is not at the same level as anyone else. When the believer passes a point of advance in the Christian Way of Life he then forgets about being better than anyone else in any field and never considers others to be “LUCKY” in what they have accomplished. As advancing or mature believers the primary function is focused on the Plan of God and there is never any gambling with the intake of Bible Doctrine but he is secure in the knowledge that he is in a precisely perfect and accurate plan.

False motivation in life always destroys good production. Good motivation can only exist from Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul. Arrogance produces false motivation and therefore no Christian Human Good Crusader production can ever glorify God but only the one involved in the production who therefore has the unfulfilled potential to do so. The unbeliever is almost constantly under the function or influence Evil and displaying Pride, or some other aspect of Arrogance, unless he has come to recognize and adhere to the principles and authority in the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions. Pride’s pressure resides in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul as a watch dog and is how Satan controls people and motivates people. When involved in any organization there is legitimate Esprit DE Corps but there can also be Pride in the organization and these are not synonyms. Pride always results in erroneously motivating the individual to pursue his own greatness while Esprit DE Corps motivates teamwork for the benefit of the organization.

Pride as the most basic Mental Attitude Sin immediately joins with some erroneous thought process from Evil. Satan's objective is to control every creature he can APART from any involvement with God and Evil is his method for accomplishing this. Satan's Arrogance arose because he was one of the most perfect creations of God and assumed he had the capacity to administer angelic creation just as good as God. As a result of this pattern there developed the relationship between his Arrogance and distorted Motivation thus producing his genius policy of Evil. Evil as Satan's genius policy represents the thinking of one of the smartest creatures ever to have lived and his intelligence is vastly beyond that of any human being. His plan and policy of Evil is in operation in all the functions on this earth since the fall of man and this policy of Evil is what all humans live from their birth to their physical death. However, God has provided safeguards for mankind against this policy in the form of Bible Doctrine and the functions of the Divine Institutions and the Laws of Divine Establishment. These principles of Christian and Establishment doctrine must be inculcated and metabolized into the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul and adhered to by mankind in order to be useful to protect and preserve the Human Race. Pride, therefore, is a sin of Motivational Arrogance which like all Mental Attitude Arrogance lines up with thinking under Evil, Satan's plan and policy for ruling this world and which therefore IS a system of thought based in Arrogance.

The greatest issue with Evil motivation is that most believers in [Reversionism](#) under the influence of Evil have the primary dysfunction of their soul being Pride or some other aspect of Motivational Arrogance as Mental Attitude Arrogance. Their Pride is always foremost with them and they always have Evil motivation and Pride blinds them to the Evil in their motivation. This then causes them to fail to see their [Human Viewpoint](#) perspective and irrationality and therefore they always distort their Evil motivation into something considered by mankind to be "good". The believer in [Advanced Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God](#) who has received his Ultra Super – Grace blessings is a constant challenge to any aspect of the Pride or Arrogance of anyone in his periphery. This is what begins the cycle of the challenging of Pride and it submerging and then exploding into a myriad of Mental Attitude Sins and these joining to activate greater Motivational Arrogance from Evil. These reversionistic believers all think they are doing good things in life while, in fact, they are functioning under Evil and totally [BLIND](#) to the actual result of all that they do. When the Old Sin Nature generates a temptation for Mental Attitude Sin and it is accepted by one's volition, this immediately draws strong motivation from Evil and this becomes a very strong system of false motivation in life. As a result it is an apparent absolute that:

- Mental Attitude Arrogance with Mental Attitude Sins + Influence of Evil == Strong False Motivation

Unfortunately this usually results in some very extensive [Human Good](#) activity which is the overt function or production of Evil. False motivation in the soul provides a tremendous stimulus to the nervous system and a great deal of nervous energy is generated and people become vigorous in DOING THINGS and it is all because of the nervous energy generated from this Evil motivation. When person's nervous energy generated is the result of false motivation then the nervous energy becomes totally involved in Human Good production and this human

good energy is therefore the individual functioning in the satanic plan. Therefore, the believer, in this way, makes self totally vulnerable to and a slave of Satan by means of his own Arrogance or Pride.

One of the greatest pressures to one's Arrogance is to have something which belongs to one, which he has built up in his soul contributing to his idea of personal greatness challenged by someone else or to have someone he loves or thinks he loves taken from him. This causes Pride to scoop down into the soul and bring up [Jealousy](#), Vindictiveness, Retaliation, etc. Jealousy becomes the strongest false motivator in this individual's life because Pride under pressure triggers it and while Pride is the basis for all pseudo or false motivation this motivation is not always manifest by Pride itself but may be manifest through one of the other counterparts to Pride. Jealousy has motivated many things in life and Jealousy is from Pride under pressure when Pride is offended, hurt or destroyed. This is one means of Satan controlling individuals and subverting the Plan of God whenever it is possible and this is where PSEUDO or FALSE MOTIVATION originates.

There is a principle to be considered regarding resistance to Bible Doctrine, when people resist Bible Doctrine they will inevitably get into some form of because they have in effect used their volition in a negative way to enter the Interlocking System of Arrogance by Negative Volition Arrogance and eventually will enter into Reversionism as well. This involvement in Arrogance will inevitably expand their distorted concept of SELF in one or more areas. This is a form of pseudo prosperity of the soul whereby they reject Bible Doctrine by resisting or neglecting it and this is the process of the self aggrandizement of Pride. When this is advanced and expanded it will eventually become a hangup in the soul or precursor of a [Hangup](#) or syndrome. This can be called the Resistance to Bible Doctrine Syndrome. Sooner or later the teaching of Bible Doctrine or even the idea of attending regular bible study classes, offends or challenges the Pride of the negative believer in some way or area of his thinking. When this occurs Pride undergoes the compression activity whereby it becomes a trigger mechanism starting the whole process of false motivation and disintegration of his Spiritual Life.

The area of weakness of the Old Sin Nature is the source of all temptation to sin including these Arrogant Mental Attitude Sins. Falling into Reversionism and succumbing to the influence of Evil merely inflames these temptations to Mental Attitude Sins to the point where they become a lifetime pattern producing false motivation, vengeance, the Pride or boasting of overshadowing other people, having hangups of all sorts in the soul with subjectivity and a variety of psychological dysfunctions. Almost every failure in life goes back to a combination of the fact that challenged Pride compresses and forms a strong pressure in the soul which when it explodes and triggers all sorts of Motivational Arrogance of Mental Attitude Arrogance with Mental Attitude Sins. Once these Mental Attitude Sins are released they merge together in a sphere of Evil and are related to Pride. ([1Tim 6:3-4](#)) This pressure placed on Pride with the release of Mental Attitude Sins then motivates Verbal and Overt Sins even causing [Emotional Revolt of the Soul](#) as a result of prolonged involvement in Reversionism. Therefore, as Pride explodes and releases these Mental Attitude Sins which bombard the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul they eventually alter the Frame of Reference and Scale of Values

and combine to put on the launch pad of the soul discord, gossip, maligning, Jealousy and retaliation in all forms against the attack on the initial area of sensitivity regarding Pride. This is the believer who leaves the Plan of God and policy of God and merges into and combines with EVIL, the policy and plan of Satan. All believers who put forward their areas of sensitivity under the function of Blind Arrogance always become the slaves of Satan. However, this is not a permanent status and it will be terminated by either their recovery from Reversionism and Arrogance or the Divine Discipline of the Sin Unto Death.

This is true of believers and unbelievers as well and these people may spend their entire lifetime trying to destroy the one who challenged their Pride. This is why people are attracted to and choose to function in a “Christian” system which has them working for God, witnessing, engaging in long prayer time, joining Christian organizations all which are or have functions which can restore their Pride and show others that they were wrong about them. This is where people get into Reversionism and don’t even know they are in Reversionism. These believers are sweet, pious and moral EXCEPT when you bring up that which challenges their Pride and this releases their Mental Attitude Sins motivated by Evil and this forms a lifetime of false motivation. This Christian monster causes dissension and strife in the name of the Lord. ([Phil 1:15](#)) They resist Bible Doctrine properly taught by their right Pastor Teacher as well as the authority of the Pastor Teacher and by this reaction produce strife and discord in the Local Church. As a result of the false motivation in their soul, legitimate functions such as witnessing, prayer, service in the Local Church become an operation of the production from Evil and many times a system of retaliation. This Evil is what causes the strife and discord which undermines the Pastor Teacher and his authority and ends with divisions in the Local Church. When these believers are reprimanded by the Pastor, their friends or associates, they gather their coterie of followers, their social clique, and lead them into a labyrinth of confusion and a maze of [Reversionism](#) from which recovery is almost hopeless since they have entered into a battling network of wrong turns.

True sensitivity and thoughtfulness of others is based on Grace thinking and [Grace Orientation](#) which produces it and insulates the believer from building hangups, [Inordinately Competing](#) with other believers and thinking of other believers in terms of Arrogance and Pride. The believer should not and cannot have the attitude of constantly competing with others nor have hangups in the soul carrying around Arrogance in the soul while crossing the “No Man’s Land” under Super – Grace B support. With these failings he will lose spiritual momentum every time and as a result end with neglect of Bible Doctrine and in Reversionism. Hypersensitive believers are totally subjective about themselves and totally insensitive to others and this is one true sign of their Arrogance. This is lack of thoughtfulness for others and they are the people who stand around and wait for someone in a group to speak with them and if no one does they claim the group or church is not friendly. Out of this comes the principle that ONE CANNOT BUILD HIS HAPPINESS ON HIS OWN ARROGANCE JUST AS ONE CANNOT BUILD HAPPINESS ON THE UNHAPPINESS OF OTHERS. When one is insensitive and thoughtless toward others he is building happiness on the unhappiness of others.

Beware of this type of person who cannot ever be satisfied and has a facade of sweetness



which is phony and who is a fraud under that facade. This hypersensitive type is like the carbide used to polish diamonds having a facade of piousness and sweetness over their Arrogance and insensitivity. This hypersensitive Arrogant person is going to be demanding as long as they live and are totally insensitive to the one to whom they make demands. This type of woman cannot properly handle children making servants out of them using motherhood to alienate the affections of the children. She disciplines them because they don't satisfy her [Hypersensitivity](#), and in addition she despises and disciplines her husband by pouting and nagging and making him miserable in every possible area of life because she is a hypersensitive Arrogant creature. However no one will ever recognize her as Arrogant because she is mealy mouthed and full of pious phrases. On the surface these people appear attractive but underneath their facade they are hard, cruel, Arrogant, selfish, implacable, vindictive and demanding and cannot ever be satisfied. Such a person, male or female is like a day laborer and must feel the fist of some strong man in authority. The Husbands of this type of woman cannot ever treat their wives in a nice sweet way because the minute he does he has a monster on his hands. This hard woman appears very fragile and attractive on the exterior and can destroy a powerful man with her pall of gloom and pouting and if he succumbs to this system he will become a weak pathetic person from the constant nagging of such a woman. She will constantly nag and put pressure on this man until he is a slave to her whims or until he breaks her down making life so miserable for her that she straightens up or they spend their entire married life fighting every day. Some men will have to constantly fight for their freedom and authority every day and the worst enemy they have in the world is the woman they married.

Therefore, Pride is an extremely strong Mental Attitude Sin ([1Tim 3:6](#)), and a person can build their whole life around trying to refute someone else who has injured their Pride. In our scientific based society this is why professors and researchers publish article after article in order to be able to place themselves above others. This is why pastors and church members think having or being a part of a large congregation is a great thing, it is for them an impressive thing, a status symbol. The size of any congregation has nothing to do with a man's ministry and God uses prepared men in every conceivable way. There are very large congregations which often act as the stimulus of false motivation for other pastors who become Jealous of the one who has such a large congregation following him. This Jealousy occurs because Pride is hurt by someone else having more people in their organization than they have. If one has hangups related to Pride, unless he grows up in the Spiritual Life and moves to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God or beyond, all of his life he will think he is motivated by God the Holy Spirit or Bible Doctrine but in fact is only being motivated by Arrogance. Some men talk about and devote their whole lives to serving God when in fact they actually are not and their Pride under pressure triggers this whole system of Arrogance. This system starts with Mental Attitude Sins such as Jealousy and implacability and from there goes into every aspect of motivation and function under Evil. These Mental Attitude Sins as Mental Attitude Arrogance develop from and move one deeper into the Evil principles and policies of Cosmic Dynasphere thinking, which is the whole system and policy of Satan. In this way complete ministries in the history of fundamentalism have had nothing more than pseudo motivation and Human Good production resulting from influence by absolute Evil.

The only hope for hypersensitive believers is a return to effective Post Salvation Epistemological Rehabilitation from consistent Perception, Cognition, Incultation & Metabolization of Bible Doctrine but to do so they must accept the authority of their right Pastor Teacher which they generally will not do. Consequently they live life making one wrong decision after another and live in the labyrinth of Reversionism for the rest of their lives until they exit under the Sin Unto Death. The correct decisions in life demanded for recovery are unthinkable to such Arrogance because this demands recognition of the authority of the HATED right Pastor Teacher and concentration on that very Bible Doctrine which condemns their thoughts and motivations. It is in fact the Proudful Arrogance of the reversionist which is put under pressure by accurate teaching of Bible Doctrine which begins the whole process of degradation and disintegration of their life.

### **Pride vs Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God**

The Motivational Arrogance of Mental Attitude Arrogance with its Mental Attitude Sins requires exclusive devotion and is therefore totally intolerant of rivalry. Consequently [Jealousy](#) is the basis for strong motivation and many of the syndromes, hangups and subjectivity in life, all these being directly related to Jealousy. There is Blind Arrogance where people are Arrogant and do not recognize it and therefore there is also HIDDEN Jealousy, a strong part of Mental Attitude Arrogance and where people don't face up to their arrogance tendencies and remove them from their thinking they inevitably have a miserable life. Obviously then, a person who can face and get rid of his Mental Attitude Arrogance and Mental Attitude Sins is a person who invariably has great capacity for life. Many believers are hindered in their advance to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God because of hangups developed in their soul where they try to prove or demonstrate something to the one they feel is their judge in life, the one who has challenged their Pride in some way. This forms a whole system of false motivation and a system of false capacity for life which hinders reaching, moving into and maintaining Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God. These people can listen to Bible Doctrine for a long time and be on a cycle of bible teaching which never covers this point and wonder why they are not making progress. Unfortunately, if one cannot look into his own soul and see the Blind Arrogance and hidden Jealousy residing there, he cannot remove them and therefore cannot make any progress in the Spiritual Life.

Pride in relationship to God is one of the most ghastly things ever, ([1Sam 2:3](#), [Job 33:16-17](#), [Prov 8:13](#), [Prov 11:2](#)) and the Christian Way of Life is not designed to tolerate these kinds of hangups in the soul. The beauty of moving ahead in the Spiritual Life to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God is that once the believer breaks through into Maturity there will remain NO appreciable hangups in the soul just the capacity to enjoy his Escrow Super – Grace blessings in the 5 temporal categories. As he starts across the [No Man's Land](#) of continued spiritual advance after Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God by using [Bravo Grace](#) provisions, he may develop some slight hypersensitivities, not necessarily Pride, but still areas where he is vulnerable to attack. However, as he comes under and utilizes Bravo Grace support, which results from the combination of Living or Logistical Grace and his Escrow Super – Grace blessings for time, which have merged into constant logistical support for this advancement, he will counter act this attack. For this very reason having reached Maturity

Adjustment to the Justice of God and then moving into the No Man's Land of [Intermediate Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God](#) it is so very easy to crash in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul and fail and even fall down through all the stages of [Reversionism](#). However, IF one is persistent and reaches Advanced Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and receives his Ultra Super – Grace blessings, he will then be totally free from any hangup of any kind and everyone else around him will be hung up about him and as a result will be attacking him. Because of this they will be being cursed for it and he will be receiving maximum blessing from it. The person who thinks that pushing ahead in the Spiritual Life to reach Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and beyond is ONLY to be able to receive the rewards of Super – Grace and Ultra – Super Grace is involved in the Interlocking System of Arrogance through Pride or Mental Attitude Arrogance and is in fact a stupid subjective disoriented individual functioning totally apart from the Plan of God.

Pride or Mental Attitude Arrogance is always frustrated by someone coming along who is in authority and who exercises that authority effectively or who has done what the Proudful individual is doing but much better. This can only be assuaged by the proudful believer attacking the one who pressures his Pride. If there is success in this attempt to ridicule, discredit or destroy this one who attacked his Pride then up comes greater Pride and the interlocking with more categories of Arrogance. Once a believer begins the move into the No Man's Land of Intermediate Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God their Mental Attitude and motivation will constantly be under fire from every Cosmic Dynasphere corner while they continue to advance across this No Man's Land of grossly intensified pressure. There is no greater test for Mental Attitude and Motivation than when a believer is crossing the No Man's Land of Intermediate Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God. However, once he reaches Advanced Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and receives his Ultra Super – Grace blessings there is no irresolvable difficulty of any sort for this believer. This is the most wonderful place in life where all pressures, opposition and attacks only bring GREATER blessing and happiness and result in GREATER suffering and misery from Divine Discipline for the attackers.

Pride very often also causes a complex to form in the soul of the believer causing him to lose contact with the reality of his Logistical Grace support. Any aspect of Pride along with a predilection to instigating Strife or Contention among others eliminates Logistical provision support for that believer while crossing the No Man's Land of Intermediate Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God. This believer having moved himself out of the Plan of God now fails and falls immediately into [Reversionism](#) and comes under the aspects of Divine Discipline in 3 categories which can eventually end with the Sin Unto Death if his status is not rectified. There is no way to cross No Man's Land with the delusions of Pride or any aspect of the Interlocking System of Arrogance in the soul since this divorces the believer from the reality of [Bravo Grace](#) as his lifeline. His failure to use Bravo Grace in crossing No Man's Land inevitably results in the systematic destruction of his Spiritual Life. A key part of using Bravo Grace is that the believer must have indomitable [Grace Orientation](#), Problem Solving Device #4, developed as an [Adolescent Believer](#). In fact, there never is a greater demand for Grace Orientation than when one is crossing the No Man's Land of Intermediate Maturity Adjustment

to the Justice of God and moving toward Advanced Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God. It becomes crystal clear then that orientation to Bravo Grace is the antithesis of Arrogance or Pride. The person with Grace Orientation is free from Pride but also has total self confidence, which is based on maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of his Soul and the Filling of God the Holy Spirit, and is not linked to Arrogance, therefore this believer has a completely Relaxed Mental Attitude. He does not try to prove himself better than anyone else and is not hung up on the ability or success of others and is not in competition with other believers with whom he serves and thereby he has the means of crossing No Man's Land successfully.

Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and its developed capacity for life is perpetuated by persistence in Post Salvation Epistemological Rehabilitation through the constant function under the [Grace Apparatus for Perception](#), Operation Z. When the wealthy believer, who has reached Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and received his temporal Escrow Super – Grace blessings, begins to neglect Bible Doctrine he inevitably becomes occupied with his wealth and riches. He becomes occupied with the BLESSINGS from God, instead of being under Occupation with the Source of those blessings, the Person of The Lord Jesus, The Christ. He becomes occupied with self and develops or strengthens the Arrogance of Pride, which he has been constantly warned of during his spiritual advance to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God. ([1Tim 6:17](#)) Love for the blessing, the source of blessing, causes the believer to continually enjoy all of his blessings. This Category I Love of The Lord Jesus, The Christ is the result of maximum [Metabolized Bible Doctrine](#) in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul. Enjoyment of one's Escrow Super – Grace blessings, received as a result of reaching Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God, is due to the capacity developed from acquiring maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul. Therefore the confidence of the believer must always be in the SOURCE of blessings in order to actually enjoy the content of the blessings.

Mental Attitude Arrogance and its Sins merge into a thought process directly from the influence of Evil and this inevitably slows down or terminates the spiritual advance of the individual until there is an actual challenge to this Evil Influence or until specific doctrines remove it from the soul and the believer becomes a truly relaxed person under the principle of Grace. Once the believer moves into Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God there can remain no hangups in the soul. All subjectivity of the soul must be replaced by objectivity and total Occupation with the Person of The Lord Jesus, The Christ. The believer cannot have capacity for love and be under Occupation with the Person of The Lord Jesus, The Christ under Category I love and retain inner hangups. If the believer has no capacity for loving Christ who is unseen, he obviously does not have capacity for loving those visible in Category II or Category III Love.

Rejecting the principles and mechanics of reaching Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God finds the believer in [Blind Arrogance](#) and functioning under the Motivational Arrogance of Mental Attitude Arrogance involving [Jealousy](#) and this is a result of rejecting doctrine and / or the teacher of Bible Doctrine. This is ultimately why believers become subjective, reactive and as a result of their moving into the Interlocking System of Antagonistic Emotional Hatred,

antagonistic to the teaching of Bible Doctrine. Pastors and others who teach false Bible Doctrine and do not concur with True Bible Doctrine, in their Arrogance become intensely involved with the false doctrine, think in their minds that true doctrine is wrong therefore for them it becomes wrong and this is Blind Arrogance. These people Pride themselves on knowing all there is to know about Bible Doctrine and when they hear a doctrine which they are not familiar with, this challenges their Pride eliciting a reaction from them. This forms a lifetime pattern of reaction and rejection of authority and develops all the possible hangups of life and invariably moves this believer into Cosmic Dynasphere II, the Interlocking System of Antagonistic Emotional Hatred. The detailed study of Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God is always a challenge to those who desire to be moving in that direction. However this also becomes a source or stimulation for reaction to those whose Pride is offended when they realize that they are NOT in nor moving toward Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God. This reaction is then directed against the communicator and the Bible Doctrine related to this subject. As a result this doctrine is perceived as being too technical or boring or offensive to their Pride in some way. This results in the development of a morbid obsession with refuting Bible Doctrines, especially when the Bible Doctrine becomes more complex. This morbid obsession is the result of a combination of many categories of the Motivational Arrogance of Mental Attitude Arrogance with its Mental Attitude Sins from and forming into thinking processes totally from Evil in the Stream of Consciousness of their Soul. By this mechanism they immediately set self up as an authority and enter into controversy with the Pastor Teacher, friends or anyone who follows the true Bible Doctrine.

### **Pride in Weak vs Strong Believers**

Pride is a subtle sin, equally as subtle as the originator of Pride which was Satan or Lucifer the son of the morning. Pride creeps into bed and seduces the sleeping non alert believer whether weak or strong by means of his **Tragic Flaws**. However, Pride manifests in different ways in the strong vs the weak believer because Arrogance as a problem to be dealt with in the Spiritual Life always has different manifestations in the weak vs the strong believer. For the weak believer, Pride is demonstrating by his judging others, and engaging in maligning and expressing bitterness through revenge and retaliation. For the strong believer Pride is seen in his intolerance of the weak believer because of his lack of **Doctrinal Orientation**. The weak believer has the **Arrogance of Ignorance** while the strong has the Pride of cognizance and **Achievement**. False standards are then used and combined with Arrogance by the weak believer to turn him into a spiritual tyrant or fascist bully while true standards from Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul are linked with Pride in the strong believer to vent sarcasm and intolerance toward the weak believer.

### **Pride vs Confidence**

Most believers have never stopped to really look at the comprehensive text book on Pride, the BIBLE, which has a great deal to teach about Pride and Arrogance whereas the study of Pride by psychology has about 1% of what is available to understand about it and Arrogance. There is, at times, a very fine line between true confidence as appropriate self confidence and sinful Pride as inordinate self confidence. The advancing believer will have a certain level of confidence in relationship to things of life, unfortunately, when he exhibits this in public those



who lack any confidence in themselves inevitably claim he is Arrogant and proud, but this simply demonstrates their stupidity and insecurity. There is an immense difference between Arrogance and having a strong character with confidence. Confidence with a strong character emphasizes Flexibility while Arrogance emphasizes and demonstrates stubbornness and Inflexibility. Neither stubbornness nor the Pride of inordinate self confidence is reflective of a strong character but only shows inflexibility and Arrogance. Furthermore, Arrogance + stupidity + inflexibility does NOT represent strong character either. Arrogance blinds one to reality so that Self Righteousness + any other Arrogance == total divorcement from reality. People who are divorced from reality but who are taken seriously by others are extremely destructive. They assume they are smart even brilliant and may very well be but their Arrogance renders them stupid. They are very often also paranoid, thinking they have many enemies when in fact no one knows them or cares about them. Inconsequential People who think they have many enemies and are paranoid have such intensified Arrogance that it causes them to be totally divorced from reality. Women tend to call men who are overbearing with them or simply smart about women, Arrogant or PROUD. This is a reaction to the true confidence in a man. A woman who RESPONDS to true confidence in a man sees stability and nobility in him not Pride or any other aspect of Arrogance. The fact is that many individuals, who are seen by others as Arrogant are not at all Arrogant but have great Poise, confidence and capacity for life. Women who have great capacity for life are often envied by other women and called proud or Arrogant but no one should ever judge another from what can be seen on the outside and in fact should never judge at all. The proudest people ever to be seen are often round shouldered, mealy mouthed, self effacing, pseudo humble people and their Arrogance is most vicious as demonstrated by their INORDINATE Competition.

### Mental Attitude Arrogance & Testing

When under pressure the believer should think in terms of the principles of Grace such as where the Logistical Grace rationale says, 'I am alive and therefore God has a plan for my life'. The basic purpose of pressure in the life is to test the believers understanding and reliance on the simple principles of Bible Doctrine beginning with Logistical Grace. "Eternal God is our refuge and underneath are the everlasting arms", is a promise given to every believer with regard to his logistical support. The believer must NEVER WORRY about anything since worry is fear, cowardice and Self Centered Arrogance. After Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God through faith alone in The Lord Jesus, The Christ, alone, ***GOD is totally responsible for and obligated to sustain the life of every believer on this earth with whatever is necessary for him to be able to advance in the Spiritual Life and execute the Protocol Plan of God.*** The believer will live as long as God has a purpose for his life in the Divine Plan and when that purpose is completed GOD alone will remove that believer to be with Him for eternity. Therefore, the pressures on the believer from Divine Testing always emphasize Grace while Divine Discipline only emphasizes FAILURE TO REMAIN IN THE PLAN OF GOD and the 2 can be differentiated by their tolerability.

People Testing occurs when people become a distraction to momentum through either personal love or hatred. The Reaction of the believer in LOVE testing is disillusion and bitterness followed by implacability and vindictiveness. The Reaction of the Believer to personality

conflict is hatred, revenge motivation, personal insensitivity, and the expression of all sorts of Arrogance in the form of hostile subjectivity. All reaction uses human volition to convert temptation to sin and entangle the Believer more deeply into Cosmic Dynasphere I, the Interlocking System of Arrogance or move him into Cosmic Dynasphere II, the Interlocking System of Antagonistic Emotional Hatred. The solution to people testing is [Impersonal or Unconditional Love for Mankind](#) under the mandates of the [Royal Family Honor Code](#). The Pastor Teacher is authorized and given authority in the local church to control the gossip, maligning and judging which can occur there as a reaction to people testing. The Pastor Teacher thus emphasizes the Privacy of the Royal Family of God and Impersonal or Unconditional Love for Mankind and by this eliminates or controls the Arrogance and selfcenteredness of his congregation preventing them from succumbing to people testing.

[Thought Testing](#) is generally related to some level of [Negative Volition](#) to Bible Doctrine where in the Interlocking System of Arrogance self is made the primary Arrogant issue and there is basic indifference to Bible Doctrine while in Cosmic Dynasphere II, the Interlocking System of Antagonistic Emotional Hatred, there is overt antagonism toward Bible Doctrine. In either case this Negative Volition also eventually places the believer into [Reversionism](#) where he has complete frustration in his Spiritual Life. Thought distraction is related to Arrogant preoccupation with self, Hypersensitivity or results from prejudice and [Inflexibility](#) in resisting Bible Doctrine teaching.

[System Testing](#) is related to [Authority](#) and [Institutional Arrogance](#) and is the inability of the believer to properly function in an organization.

[Disaster Testing](#) is generally related to the calamities, catastrophes, disasters and personal losses of Life.

There are many things which can keep the believer from advancing in the Spiritual Life. Some are reactions to personal, natural or historical disaster, others have to do with Arrogance, hypersensitivity, etc. Many believers claim they are doing their job as unto the Lord but in reality they only seek approbation and recognition having blatantly obvious known Arrogance or completely unknown Blind Arrogance. This hinders spiritual advance and many who think they are moving ahead in the Spiritual Life are in fact moving backward. The Mental Attitude of these believers carries them backward and the believer must be constantly aware of his Mental Attitude status in order to remain focused on the reality of his position and situation as a believer. While Advancing from Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God to Advanced Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God the greatest problem for all believers will be Mental Attitude testing since this is where the greatest Mental Attitude tests in all of life will occur. If this testing is failed it can throw the believer instantly out of Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and into deeply into Reversionism. The issue is that any time a believer moves into a high sphere of the Spiritual Life and glorification of The Lord Jesus, The Christ he must have the best possible Mental Attitude of his entire life. This necessary greatness of Mental Attitude is challenged in many ways of which Arrogance is the greatest but also where other distractions combine with Arrogance as well.

Undeserved Suffering is the mechanism directed to the believer to TEST his inculcation of Bible Doctrine and to eliminate the occupational hazard of Pride or Mental Attitude Arrogance. ([2Cor 11:24-33](#), [2Cor 12:7-10](#)) Undeserved Suffering in the Spiritual Life as testing for blessing begins as the believer moves from spiritual youth to the early stages of Spiritual Adulthood. It continues in progressive stages through spiritual adulthood with a rest period at the point of reaching Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God. The greatest testing of Undeserved Suffering occurs in the No Man's Land of Intermediate Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God as the believer is moving toward Advanced Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God. The believer moving toward Advanced Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God has to meet this test of Undeserved Suffering and pass it mentally, physically and spiritually. However, the greatest Undeserved Suffering is Mental Attitude testing and many fail in this area, falling from Maturity Adjustment to the Justice into Reversionism and becoming neurotic or psychotic. This type of testing is the greatest test of objectivity and many believers become totally distracted from true objectivity by their social life or business life or many other aspects of life, all which can destroy objectivity. As objectivity in life shrinks Arrogance increases and it is impossible to pass Undeserved Suffering testing at any level with growing Arrogance in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul. In fact it is the Undeserved Suffering testing which is designed to REMOVE a maximum concentration of Arrogance from the believer's soul.

### **Defense Mechanisms leading to Maladaptive Defense Mechanisms**

Unfortunately the Defense mechanisms often needed in childhood can form the basis for [Self Righteousness](#) and result in the child never quite growing up in his soul. This often results in entrance into the Interlocking System of Arrogance and function under the [Arrogance Skills](#) from reaction to injustice in life. This reaction results in [Black out of the Soul](#) and [Scar tissue of the Soul](#) and a deep involvement in Reversionism for the believer. Everyone faces injustice in life and it is much better to face injustice as a true mature adult than as a never grown up child. Plaintiff Function before the Supreme Court of Heaven requires that in any and all cases of injustice the believer must present the problem to God and allow the Supreme Court of Heaven to deal with the problem and by this means avoid involvement with the [Arrogance Skills](#), Arrogance Sins, and [Emotional Sins](#). The unbeliever understands in mental maturity that there is injustice in life and learns to deal with it on the basis of functioning under the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions. The Believer who has grown in the Spiritual Life understands that injustice is to be dealt with using the [Problem Solving Devices](#) which are developed as a result of consistent Post Salvation Epistemological Rehabilitation from daily Perception, Cognition, Inculcation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine and then deployed onto the Forward Line of Troops of the SOUL. The child, however, does not have this orientation to the world nor does he have the saturation of Metabolized Bible Doctrine which can produce the Forward Line of Troops of the soul to deal with injustice. Injustice perpetrated on the child often wipes out Faith and [Humility](#) and this sets the child back tremendously in his maturity development. If the Maladaptive Defense Mechanisms are added to the reaction of the child toward injustice, and these then persist into adulthood, it becomes extremely difficult for the adult-child, who was involved in injustice early in his life, to solve the problems arising from injustice and the persistent defense mechanisms because of a lack of faith and teachability.

Whether the individual has carried the fact of injustice with him for many years or has just discovered the possibility or reality of it after many years as a result of some form of recall, he must not react to the past problem. He must allow the Supreme Court of Heaven to judge it and HE MUST use the solutions which God has provided for the believer from Eternity Past in the [Problem Solving Devices](#). Human Solutions of any kind, even when the believer is not at fault at all, puts him straight into compound sinning and involvement in the Interlocking System of Arrogance and / or Interlocking System of Antagonistic Emotional Hatred. Human solutions to the problems of life produce Arrogance while divine solutions produce [Humility](#), happiness, contentment and tranquility. One cannot ever have true happiness with Arrogance in the soul. Tranquility means absence of Arrogance which results in inner happiness and stability in the soul. Poor manners in any individual are a strong sign of Arrogance and selfcenteredness. Good manners often indicate Humility, thoughtfulness of others and recognition of the fact that one does not have to share his burdens or failures with everyone else, EVER. This is unfortunately exactly the problem which arises as a result of public confessions in a local church and in group therapy under psychology and is total [Self Absorption](#) on the part of the one confessing. There is almost nothing worse for the Spiritual Life than Self Absorption and this increases as the believer moves through each of the 8 Stages of [Reversionism](#).

#### Forward Line of Troops in the Child

Parents are supposed to be the Forward Line of Troops for the soul of their children and if a child reacts with guilt, shame, etc., to situations in life, the result is that it is difficult if not very rare for the child to ever come to Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God. This child becomes very self centered after experiencing these difficult adverse situations in life and it becomes very difficult for that child to see REALITY or have OBJECTIVITY and there is a strong predilection to involvement in the Interlocking System of Arrogance.

#### Maladaptive Defense Mechanisms & Arrogance

Biblical terminology for the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul is (gr) 'Kardia' or (heb) 'Leb' and is always translated 'Heart' and refers to the conscious mind in the Right Lobe of the Soul. The subconscious is the location or collecting point or 'dump' for the Garbage from the conscious mind which includes the Emotional Sins, Arrogance sins, Trauma, etc. Both Emotional and Arrogance sins as well as major trauma can be repressed into the subconscious mind as garbage. In situations of trauma and abuse in childhood, the Child uses dissociation, repression, denial, etc., as Defense Mechanisms to repress these events and protect his mentality but in the adult these same defense mechanisms become Maladaptive and will destroy the person if they persist by causing excess garbage accumulated in the subconscious which then bleeds over into Stream of Consciousness of the Soul. Garbage in the subconscious which has been developed before Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God does not remain in the subconscious but persistently bleeds or leaks back into the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul. It is one's involvement in the Interlocking System of Arrogance which often acts as a catalyst to bring garbage from the subconscious back into the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul to conflict with Metabolized Bible Doctrine.

The defense mechanisms are functions to reduce, eliminate or alleviate the mental conflicts or stresses in the soul which cause anxiety, fear or primarily guilt in the child. One of the worst sin complexes and also the greatest builder of garbage in the subconscious is [Guilt](#). These defense mechanisms are designed to rid the child of any lack of self esteem or any impulsive behavior patterns or any focus on failures in his life. Old Garbage is what has occurred from childhood to Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God while new Garbage is what occurs from Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God to physical death.

The mechanics of this Maladaptive Defense process can follow a pattern similar to what occurs when one engages in [Bitterness](#). Bitterness, as an Arrogance sin, creates Garbage in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul and under its influence one blames others for his own faults. He suppresses all his own faults into the Subconscious in [Denial](#) which is tantamount in the computer vernacular to 'Garbage In'. Then when he encounters a difficulty in his life he blames others for these problems and he takes his own flaws or sins, which he does not recognize as being his, and [Projects](#) them onto others in his periphery, this is 'Garbage Out'. This becomes Judging, Maligning, and Gossiping about others. When one begins judging others he also builds up in his soul Guilt, [Jealousy](#), etc., and then he dumps this personal garbage onto some one else with projection. These Maladaptive Defense Mechanisms are not, by any means, substitutes for the [Problem Solving Devices](#) provided in the Protocol Plan of God. For the adult believer Garbage is accumulated in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul and originates as a result of his moving into and through the 8 Stages of [Reversionism](#) and is for him a post Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God experience.

Garbage in the soul is:

- ✧ Related to involvement in the Interlocking System of Arrogance.
- ✧ Related to involvement in the Interlocking System of Antagonistic Emotional Hatred.
- ✧ Related to acquiescing to the Lust Patterns of the Old Sin Nature including, power, approbation, social, pleasure, sexual, chemical, monetary, criminal, crusader, and is where rationalization enters with its flaws and imposes these onto others.
- ✧ Related to stress in the soul
- ✧ Related to stage 4 of Reversionism, [Emotional Revolt of the Soul](#)
- ✧ Related to stage 6 of Reversionism, [Blackout of the Soul](#)
- ✧ Related to stage 7 of Reversionism, [Scar Tissue of the Soul](#)
- ✧ Related to the Maladaptive Defense Mechanisms
- ✧ Related to the Old Sin Nature control of the Soul and the functions of the Essence of the Old Sin Nature with its, Lust patterns, Trends toward Self Righteous Arrogance and Legalism or Antinomianism, Lasciviousness and Malice and its Area of Weakness and Area of Strength generating temptation to throw against one's volition.

### **Maladaptive Defense Mechanisms**

Ignorance cannot exist in and is excluded from the Protocol Plan of God but ignorance coexists with Arrogance. Ignorance of Bible Doctrine evades the reality of God's Plan, Purpose and Will for the believer's Life. Without this reality he will when under pressure in life readily enter



into the Maladaptive Defense Mechanisms. The Interlocking System of Arrogance makes a believer, even one who has reached Advanced Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God, vulnerable to intimidation, selfcenteredness, fear, self pity and a distortion of facts in his own mind. When the facts of one's life are distorted with [Self Justification](#) and [Self Righteousness](#) recovery is extremely difficult if not impossible. The Interlocking System of Arrogance always destroys the spiritual priorities of the believer in time. Problem solutions for believers do not ever need Psychological solutions nor Maladaptive Defense Mechanisms. The Maladaptive Defense Mechanisms are the 4th and greatest battle of the soul and include:

### [Denial](#)

Which is a person burying in the subconscious mind some part of reality which is uncomfortable to them and this results in a false perception of reality related to the concepts of the Scripture, especially related to Hamartiology and the Mystery Doctrine of the Church Age which delineates the Protocol Plan of God. A primary function of the Old Sin Nature is involvement in Arrogance and one of the fastest ways to become entangled deeply into the Arrogance system is through Denial. This becomes a necessity for those people who always think that they must be good, self righteous, and can never be wrong, and therefore are very strong with regard to [Self Justification](#). This is a defense mechanism which occurs when customary feelings of a persons reality are lost and there are feelings substituted which are an unreality. This is loss of contact with the reality of life and loss of contact with the human race. It is a disorientation or rejection of reality related to one's own behavior. It is divorcement from the reality of the [Divine Institutions](#), the [Laws of Divine Establishment](#), the Attributes and Essence of God, especially the Integrity of God, therefore denial is the environment for Arrogance Skill #1, [Self Justification](#). ([Hosea 8:7](#), [Gal 6:3](#)) The individuals so effected stop caring about what others feel and are only concerned about how they feel. Denial destroys dependence on parents or siblings and replaces it with feelings of independence which are part of the [Arrogance skills](#). Projection, as a defense mechanism, results from this false perception of reality and a false perception of self and this person becomes blinded to their flaws and only see flaws in others. These people never take responsibility for bad decisions only for good ones. If this person succeeds in functioning under denial and enters into Self Justification he has basically become truly stupid as a result of actually lying to himself. The perceived flaws in others are, for the most part, his own failures which have been DENIED and thus Denial becomes and is directly tied into Projection. Denial is failure to recognize the true reality in life which is apparent to others. This therefore results in reacting to Life with the resultant accompanying irrationality. The believer is commanded to avoid reaction to people who cause difficulties for him. "Feed your enemy" is a command to enable the believer to avoid reacting to life which causes him to become flawed and hardened to life. When one reacts to life he becomes bitter, implacable, involved in Malice, Hatred, and other destructive Mental Attitude and Verbal Sins. Once a believer becomes involved in this area there will always be someone who will tell them they are great and right and will lie to them and agree with them with the result that their flaws build up in the soul and the lust pattern of the Old Sin Nature grows. Denial thus inevitably results in soul flaws and therefore, being divorced from reality when in any situation of Stress, this believer

looses his Scale of Values and develops very strong soul flaws.

### Projection

Is Transference Arrogance involving ascribing to another person ones own thoughts, motivations, attitudes, flaws, and failures. It is a direct result of involvement in Denial and results in and from the function in the 2<sup>nd</sup> Arrogance Skill, Self Deception. This is where one buries all his own bad decisions and falsely attributes to others all his sins, failures and flaws which accumulate as garbage in his Subconscious. (**James 3:14**) This is where the person develops extreme callousness of soul and takes personal failures and projects them onto individuals or groups where he thinks he has been maltreated. As a result he thereby sees in others the cause of all his problems.

### Rationalization

Is the development of self serving functions in the believer by his giving reassuring but incorrect and false definitions or explanations for his own motivations, behavior or relationships with others. As a result Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul is damaged or erased by his entering into functions of Denial, Projection, and Rationalization. Rationalization results in a self serving strengthening of the 1st Arrogance Skill, Self Justification which becomes his life and total focus and is an integral part of Arrogance Skill #3, Self Absorption. It results from damaged, distorted or destroyed Bible Doctrine in the soul caused by his function under the Maladaptive Defense Mechanisms.

### Dissociation

Is a person sustaining a temporary alteration of the integration functions of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul ie. their personal identity. Projection and Suppression are parts of its application and it is the major pipeline for moving things which cannot be dealt with in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul into the Subconscious. It is a reaction which is the result of engaging in Denial, Projection and Rationalization using the Arrogance Skills of Self Justification, Self Deception, and Self Absorption. It is a substitution for thoughts, feelings or behavior which are opposed to one's own accepted norms and standards. This results in and from the believers entrance into the 8 Stages of Reversionism. As a part of Self Deception it results in a person sustaining alterations to or covering up of the integrity functions of the integrative processes of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul for self awareness. This results in his moving away from normality and suppressing, damaging, even destroying Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of his Soul. In other words he makes his self awareness fit his self deception not that which is described under Bible Doctrine. This results in a complete loss of any Virtue or Scale of Values derived in any way from Bible Doctrine. As the Arrogance Skills blend with involvement in the 8 stages of Reversionism Self Absorption becomes the volatile vapor of cycling in Reversionism functions.

Various personalities emerge from Locked in Negative Volition toward God and Bible Doctrine. Lack of Grace orientation in the believer results in the cohesive soul eventually

splitting into many personalities when that believer has “Come short of the Grace of God”. The bitter personality includes in the bitter soul its contagious pollution of others. ([Heb 12:15](#))

In dissociation, the cohesiveness, integration, and unity of the soul is destroyed. In dissociation, certain aspects of the personality escape from the control of the individual. They become separate from the stream of consciousness and they function in opposition to the cohesive soul. Dissociation causes split personality and follows the pattern of the primary and secondary personality, the split personality in the psychotic believer. Believers ACQUIRE a split personality through Negative Volition to doctrine, they are not born with it. A normal personality is cohesive; it coordinates within the seven parts of the stream of consciousness. Dissociation causes a split off from the cohesive personality, and part of the personality splits off and forms a separate personality. In dissociation, that part of the personality which is the source of the stress may be eliminated by separation from normal consciousness. Dissociation is the split off from reality. By the time dissociation has completed its work in the soul as part of the stress factor, there are two or more personalities vying for control in the individual so afflicted. Dissociation is meaningful in the formation of some form of primary and secondary personality.

Dissociation often results from departure of thinking from any Metabolized Bible Doctrine which has accumulated in the soul's stream of consciousness. The reality of the Bible Doctrine which has been metabolized into the Right Lobe of the soul is destroyed so that the believer can only deal with the pressures of life through dissociation which is the beginning of the splitting of his personality. Outside pressures of stress are met with emotionalism and Mental Attitude Arrogance. The Old Sin Nature puts pressure on the volition of the soul with constant temptations and the believer makes decisions to react to this pressure with Arrogance or Emotional sinning. This causes the fragmentation of the spiritual life and when persistent over long periods splitting of the personality.

### Delusion

Is a false personal belief based on incorrect inference to external reality which is firmly sustained in the soul despite what the Bible teaches. Reality must come from Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul, accumulated by function under the [Grace Apparatus for Perception](#) and by consistently residing under the Filling of God the Holy Spirit and includes the development and use of the [10 Problem Solving Devices](#) to come to an understanding of Reality. Delusion is most likely the final step before the believer enters the Neurotic or Psychotic degeneration of his life and losing all of the Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.

### Autistic Fantasy

Is the ultimate function of the 3 [Arrogance Skills](#) and is extreme withdrawal into one's own fantasy world. It is a person substituting excessive daydreaming for the pursuit of social relationships which is much easier for him than direct social intercourse or the use of the [10 Problem Solving Devices](#) in personal relationships. This is avoidance of reality

and a totally false mechanism for dealing with problems after salvation. It is total Self Absorption and Self Centered Arrogance frozen in place, resulting in extreme withdrawal into fantasy, and divorcement from human relationships and normal social functions as a result of extreme day dreaming.

### Pseudo Self Esteem

Occurs when there is reversal of the cycle of the Arrogance skills and Self Justification arrives with the strong delusion that the believer is never wrong and never has to take responsibility for motivations, decisions or actions and is then able to assign all these to others.

### False Memory Syndrome

Is where the believer is under some type of mental or psychological treatment and is told that all his problems may be the result of something from his past such as child abuse, abandonment, being dropped on his head by mother, etc., and he seizes on that and then blames parents or other past situations for his present status quo and failures.

### Acting-Out

Is a person acting without reflection or regard for the negative consequences of his actions primarily to get his own way or focus attention on himself.

### Idealization

Is assigning to self and others qualities which they do not have which are idealistic. This includes Self Righteous Arrogance where one makes a role model out of self and Iconoclastic Arrogance where one makes a Role Model out of others.

### Intellectualization

Is engaging in an excess of abstract thinking to avoid the reality of realizing or experiencing disturbing things about self. It is reactionary thinking to avoid the discomfort of responsibility under the Law of Volitional Responsibility. The Law of Volitional Responsibility is designed to bring the believer back to reality with Self Induced Misery and very often, in addition, the Supreme Court of Heaven gets into the picture with Divine Discipline. There can be numerous other factors which bolster the failing of this believer due to his lack of use of the doctrine related to the Attributes and Essence of God.

### Isolation

Is a person who is unable to perceive or experience simultaneously the cognitive and effective components of an experience and as a result dumps the effects of the cognition into the Subconscious to avoid dealing with the reality of a trauma. This is what often occurs with regard to the components of previous spiritual advance when application of that information blocked or erased out from the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul where Metabolized Bible Doctrine was previously circulated and stored.

### Repression

Is the person being unable to be consciously aware of disturbing lusts, wishes, feelings, thoughts or experiences related to sin. As a Maladaptive Defense Mechanism and part of Self Deception it is where the believer fails to take responsibility for his own wrong decisions from the influence of Evil. (Rom 13:1-10) This is the basis for Christian Activism where believers become influenced by Evil for the production of Human Good and Sin up to and including murder.

### Suppression

Is where disturbing thoughts and feelings are intentionally blocked or not thought about.

### Reaction Formation

Is the believer in Reversionism substituting thoughts, feelings and behaviors which are opposed to the principles of Bible Doctrine which he has learned. Reaction to adversity including unfairness from people means that Arrogance has taken over one's life and has gone beyond his capacities thus is degrading and destroying his Spiritual Life. This hurts more Believers than any other problem today. One cannot spend his life in a state of reaction to people and circumstances or he WILL destroy his entire Spiritual Life. The tragedy of destroying the Spiritual Life by reaction is that it does not involve, people who seek to harm one or people who are antagonistic in any way to one, and never people in adverse circumstances. Without the Filling of God the Holy Spirit the believer cannot metabolize Bible Doctrine and without this in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul he cannot form and maintain the 10 Problem Solving Devices on the Forward Line of Troops of the Soul. Without the 10 Problem Solving Device on the Forward Line of Troops of the Soul he is Defeated, Destroyed, and Overwhelmed by people and circumstances in this life. Believers must be on the side of the Lord not just their own side in order that they are able to receive fantastic blessings and support from his Grace.

All of these adaptations give a false view of life and self where believers become locked into thinking of self only in terms of rightness and all others in their periphery in terms of wrongness. This whole system feeds soulish excrement into the subconscious and inevitably destroys the Spiritual Life. It involves a pattern of thinking and behavior which eventually completely reverses the pattern of function of the Arrogance Skills recycling them repeatedly. The believer starts this reversal with Self Absorption and then Deceives self by assuming his own rightness, and becomes totally involved in Justifying self and this results in anger reactions and that stimulates greater feelings of rightness and eventually he only wants to hurt those who have hurt him in malice or revenge.

These factors, either independently or collectively, result in total failure of the believer to execute the Protocol Plan of God. There are many more Maladaptive Defense Mechanisms not mentioned here. When the believer enters into the use of any of the Maladaptive Defense Mechanisms he begins with Denial which results in some level of Negative Volition toward Bible Doctrine as rejection or indifference to it resulting in Reaction and Distraction (Stage #1 of Reversionism) from normal explanations for situations and from Metabolized Bible Doctrine



in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul. Then he continues through Projection and Rationalization allowing the Old Sin Nature to Control his soul which results in the [Frantic Search for Happiness](#) (Stage #2 of Reversionism) through the Old Sin Nature's trends and lust patterns which inevitably results in [Operation Boomerang](#) (Stage #3 of Reversionism) which is an intensification of his reaction to life's situations and an intensification of the Frantic Search for happiness. Operation Boomerang eventuates in [Emotional Revolt of the Soul](#) (Stage #4 of Reversionism) from persistent Old Sin Nature control of the soul and where the total frustrations in life then engage in further use of the 3 [Arrogance Skills](#). If this is not cut off by the use of the [Rebound Procedure](#) and a return to consistent Perception, Cognition, Incultation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine but continues it will cause [Locked in Negative Volition](#) toward Bible Doctrine (Stage #5 of Reversionism) which is a rejection and results ultimately in an erasure of all prior learned Bible Doctrine. After entering Locked In Negative Volition the 7 compartments of Stream of Consciousness of the Soul are covered with a FOG obscuring the Absolute Truth of Bible Doctrine, which is in fact [Black Out of the Soul](#) (Stage #6 of Reversionism). This is followed by the building up of [Scar Tissue of the Soul](#) (Stage #7 of Reversionism) preventing the intake of Bible Doctrine and Metabolizing of Bible Doctrine, resulting in a vacuum building up in the soul which is only able to draw in the LIE or FALSE DOCTRINE of the Satanic plan and policy of EVIL, leading to [Reverse Process Reversionism](#) (Stage #8 of Reversionism). The Believer here substitutes all of the Arrogance Skills for the Spiritual Skills and abandons all Doctrinal principles for the rest of his life. He lives in total misery and ends his life with the greatest Divine Discipline imaginable in the Sin Unto Death. The Sin Unto Death results for a believer when God decides that this believer is no longer of any use in demonstrating a tactical victory in the Angelic Conflict, in effect he is useless as a witness for the prosecution in the Angelic Conflict Appeal Trial, and therefore God takes him out of this life with a final smack of Divine Discipline. Loser believers can often be ones who react and engage in the irrational aspects of Motivational Arrogance. Jealousy, Bitterness, hatred, malice, vindictiveness, implacability, are irrational aspects of the Motivational Arrogance of Mental Attitude Arrogance and its Mental Attitude Sins and can be combinations of functions in the Interlocking System of Arrogance and Interlocking System of Antagonistic Emotional Hatred as mechanisms of this reaction.

True Spiritual Dynamics require that the believer involves self in consistent Post Salvation Epistemological Rehabilitation from daily Perception, Cognition, Incultation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine and then apply that Bible Doctrine to self and NEVER involve self in applying or trying to apply doctrine to the Life of another person. Applying or attempting to apply Bible Doctrine to the life of another will in effect, place that believer into the Maladaptive Defense Mechanism pattern of Projection or Denial or some other part of the Interlocking System of Arrogance or Interlocking System of Antagonistic Emotional Hatred which are definitely not part of the Spiritual Life.

#### **The 4 Major Battles in the Soul of the believer** **Stress**

Stress in the Soul results from Old Sin Nature control of the Soul as a result of allowing the outside pressures of Life, which include adversity, prosperity or both, into the soul.

Resistance to these pressures penetrating the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul is by the use of Metabolized Bible Doctrine and the developed [10 Problem Solving Devices](#) under the Filling of God the Holy Spirit.

### Sin

Sin in the Soul results from losing the first battle so that when stress penetrates the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul then the Old Sin Nature is able to promote temptations which center around it's Lust Patterns, Trends and Area of Strength or Weakness where involvement occurs because of volitional acceptance of these by the soul.

### False Doctrine

In the Soul is the result of losing the first 2 Battles so that by maintaining sin in the Soul and allowing the Old Sin Nature to continue to control the soul the invariable result is Negative Volition toward Bible Doctrine and failure to maintain the Filling of God the Holy Spirit so that this believer moves into [Reversionism](#) and ultimately opens a vacuum in the soul which draws the LIE of FALSE doctrine from the satanic plan and policy of EVIL into the soul.

### Maladaptive Defense Mechanisms

This is the greatest battle of the soul between the Problem Solving Devices and Maladaptive Defense Mechanisms. The defense mechanisms which help the believer to survive in childhood will destroy him in adulthood. The believer must always see self in the light of the Word of God and he must be objective about situations in life because this gives him the readiness to start living the Spiritual Life again after some failure, adversity or disaster. Many of life's worst experiences are related to the vindictiveness and implacability of other believers toward one. If the believer carries antagonisms in the soul this becomes soul garbage and when one has been around garbage long enough it no longer smells at all bad and he gets used to wallowing in it. With minimal Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul [Bitterness](#) can be expressed in terms of [Activism](#) and / or Civil Disobedience as well as any other aspect of Arrogance. This causes Garbage instead of Metabolized Bible Doctrine to accumulate in the Right Lobe as a result of losing the conflict between the Cosmic Dynaspheres and the Protocol Plan of God, the Divine Dynasphere.

Involvement in the Satanic Arrogance and Antagonism complexes destroy the strength, integrity and [Virtue](#) of a people, both believer and unbeliever. Unbelievers in the rejection of [Authority](#) and principles of Establishment, convert Outside pressures of life into inside pressures of Stress in the soul. Believers in rejecting or neglecting Bible Doctrine come under Divine Discipline from God and Self Induced Misery and this also results in the increased outside pressures being converted to stress in the soul, as a result of totally lacking Bible Doctrine to stabilize themselves. The Law of Volitional Responsibility demands that the believer blame self for all shortcomings or failures in life without repression or denial.

It is the purpose of the believer to understand the whole realm of Bible Doctrine and then circulate that doctrine into and through the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul to build the [10](#)

**Problem Solving Devices** and deploy them on the Forward Line of Troops of the Soul to be victorious in the Battles of the Soul. God has designed the Christian Way of Life for the believer to SOLVE HIS OWN PROBLEMS in life and for him to win the Battles of the Soul, however, in order for him to accomplish this he must engage in consistent Post Salvation Epistemological Rehabilitation from daily Perception, Cognition, Incultation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine. Garbage deposited in the soul of the believer is developed in 2 Areas:

- The Stream of Consciousness of the Soul
- The Subconscious of the soul

Garbage in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul when it accumulates in specific areas of the soul causes the believer to begin to reject Doctrines as they are presented and this results in not Metabolizing Bible Doctrine because of the Garbage. Garbage in the Subconscious can occur early in life when children are traumatized in some way, or mistreated or abused by the person on whom the child thinks he can depend. This results in the child entering into the use of the Defense Mechanisms such as Denial, Repression, Dissociation, etc., which become Maladaptive when they persist into his adulthood. Denial, as an example, forces one to lose the perception of who and what he is, and to regain it he must hold self up to Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul and see, by self evaluation, who and what he truly is as a person. This is the function of the Mirror of Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Soul.

When a person has Garbage in the Stream of Consciousness and Subconscious of the Soul, Perception, Cognition, Incultation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine can occur but it runs into conflict in the Stream of Consciousness especially in the wisdom compartment where Bible Doctrine is supposed to be set up to be applied to experience. There is in fact conflict in all the compartments of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul and it requires a great deal of time and determined persistence to get this trash out of the soul and refill the compartments of the soul with Metabolized Bible Doctrine. Metabolized Bible Doctrine will clean out soul garbage but it takes time to do so and the believer will be given the time in life to accomplish it IF he has the Positive Volition to do so.

### **Maladaptive Defense Mechanisms & The Psychotic Christian**

The Psychotic Christian is a contradiction of the unique Spiritual Life of the Church Age and the Modus Operandi of the Royal Family of God. When a believer functions in Dissociation certain aspects or activities of personality escape the control of the Believer because they are separated from the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul where Metabolized Bible Doctrine is supposed to be located. Therefore they function in opposition to cohesion of the SOUL. Only Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul through it's force of cohesion produces an integration of the Christian personality so that there is One person and One Personality. As a result of Dissociation because of involvement in the Interlocking System of Arrogance and / or the Interlocking System of Antagonistic Emotional Hatred, certain mental processes move into the subconscious independently by Dissociation from the main stream of consciousness. The Subconscious then includes certain aspects of the persons life which are NOT an immediate part of the individuals conscious mind. This results because the Arrogant and Antagonism complexes will not permit the garbage of the Subconscious to surface in order

to be removed. Within the normal personality as these obstructing repressions are lifted or the subconscious garbage leaks into the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul and emerges into awareness, the result is that the primary personality of the Believer, which is acted upon by this enhanced stress in the soul under Old Sin Nature domination of the Soul, is disregarded or eliminated by dissociation. As a result there can be 4 concepts or results as Dissociation:

- ✧ Dissociation FROM the Cohesive Personality.
- ✧ Dissociation FROM the Integrative Personality.
- ✧ Dissociation FROM the Unified Personality.
- ✧ Dissociation FROM Reality and Normality.

Dissociation therefore results in a total loss or absence of Metabolized Bible Doctrine circulating in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul because of all of these results. The mechanics for the reality of this occurring are found in the 8 stages of [Reversionism](#). Therefore, dissociation follows the pattern of split personalities, alternating personalities, or primary vs secondary personalities.

### **Arrogance & Integrated vs Dissociative Personality**

Arrogance in any form including [Jealousy](#) and all other types of the Motivational Arrogance of Mental Attitude Arrogance cannot coexist in the soul with Filling of God the Holy Spirit, [Sharing the Happiness of God](#) or [Occupation with the Person of The Lord Jesus, The Christ](#). Sharing the Happiness of God is not only a defense to stress in the soul but also a defense against involvement in the Interlocking System of Arrogance, the Interlocking System of Antagonistic Emotional Hatred and the [Arrogance Skills](#). The believer must know what the problem is before he can know and use the solution. The Divine solution is the only solution the human solution is NO solution; this is the 'relative' conclusion of doctrine. Carnal Christians are contradictions in the Spiritual Life of the Church Age. The Interlocking System of Arrogance and Interlocking System of Antagonistic Emotional Hatred complexes plus Old Sin Nature control of the soul result in perpetuated carnality for any Believer so involved. Only Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul through its force of cohesion produces the magnetism and cohesion of soul which God ordained for this Spiritual Life to resolve the difficult situations in life.

A Combination of the Old Sin Nature control of the soul and stress in the soul without support from sufficient Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul results in a withdrawal from the conscious perceptive aspects of the Spiritual Life. This results in loss or erasure of Metabolized Bible Doctrine from the thinking and loss of objective reality. This loss of objective reality results in the substitution of involvement in the Interlocking System of Arrogance and / or the Interlocking System of Antagonistic Emotional Hatred which destroy the spiritual strength of the Soul. Therefore, there develops a necessity for the recognition of the solution which is found in submission to the authority of God the Father, God the Son, and God the Holy Spirit bringing [Humility](#) into the soul and the function of reciprocity. There is also a necessity to constantly and consistently keep short accounts with regard to sin by use of the [Rebound Procedure](#) for spiritual recovery. The believer must then keep moving forward in the Spiritual Life with consistent Perception, Cognition, Inculcation, Metabolization and Application of Bible Doctrine so that Humility may prevail and bring the believer under

Occupation with the Person of The Lord Jesus, The Christ. If the believer can function under these processes and conditions he need not worry about having a double soul or psychoses in the soul. However, failure to follow through with these solutions results in locked in Arrogance which is the greatest enemy of the believer. The believer is, therefore, mandated to avoid this double minded nature which comes from Arrogance and Emotional Antagonism saturating the soul.

The Integrated Cohesive Personality is described in terms of sanity, while the dissociative or multiple personality is described in terms of Arrogance or Illusion. Even though the Plan of God is perfect, it is designed for and implemented by IMPERFECT mankind therefore Arrogance can always result in a split personality and is therefore a contradiction to the Spiritual Life of the Church Age which is designed to result in an Integrated Cohesive Personality. The Interlocking System of Arrogance is a complex just as the Interlocking System of Antagonistic Emotional Hatred is a complex. Both of these result in fragmentation of the life of the Believer and always are combined with degrading of his Spiritual Life in [Reversionism](#), which is 8 sure steps to becoming a split personality and psychotic Believer. Therefore, in the Spiritual Life, especially in this Church Age, the Issue should always be Reciprocity over Personality

### **Solutions to Maladaptive Defense Mechanisms**

In the case of child abuse or any other injustice situation which is recalled to awareness in adult life, the abused person always has volition to choose whether or not to use the proper solutions for dealing with the abuse or injustice. Defense Mechanisms are temporary solutions at best, designed for the survival of the abused child only. The real culprit in this status is the Old Sin Nature's reaction to the abuses or injustices of life when awareness of the abuse occurs. This inevitably results in involvement in the Interlocking System of Arrogance, the Interlocking System of Antagonistic Emotional Hatred and functioning under the [Arrogance Skills](#). In addition, any stress in the soul becomes a lost battle along with any sin in the Soul. Therefore, believers must be very careful to avoid sinful involvement with the injustices of the past in life when awareness of them occurs.

The infant believer who rejects Bible Doctrine as the source of [Problem Solving Device](#) functions in the life always becomes a loser. This believer REACTS to life and injustice under 2 circumstances:

- The first case is where the child never loses cognizance of the abuse he has received and has reacted to it for many years. This is total preoccupation with self in Arrogance. This child uses the defense mechanisms to cope with the abuse in his life and these become Maladaptive as the child gets older. This results in failure to develop and deploy the Problem Solving Devices due to Suppression, Denial and the lack of intake and metabolization of Bible Doctrine.
- The second case is where the child used the defense mechanisms to seal the abuse in the subconscious and then later in adult life recalls it and reacts to it. This believer finds instant [Self Justification](#) for carnal or psychopathic behavior as a result of the recalling of past trauma. This self justification causes garbage accumulated in the subconscious to combine with Arrogance in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul and build a stone



wall against the function of Perception, Cognition, Incultation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine, [Scar Tissue of the Soul](#).

Reaction to child abuse is a continuous retrogressive problem during the life of the believer until the problem is recognized and Positive Volition to Bible Doctrine is able to clean out the Garbage from the subconscious and Stream of Consciousness of the Soul replacing it with [Divine Viewpoint](#) and Divine Solutions. Bible Doctrine must be metabolized and used to destroy the garbage of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul including any involvement in the Interlocking System of Arrogance and any function under the Arrogance Skills and any other false values of the SOUL. Unfortunately, very few people ever destroy the erroneous Scale of Values which they learn as a result of the circumstances of child abuse.

In the recovery from or solution to injustice of any kind, the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul of the advancing believer must have a doctrinal build up. This Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Right Lobe of the soul must not only deal with the issues resulting from the activities of the Old Sin Nature but must progressively clean out the garbage which has accumulated in the subconsciousness from any and all injustice suffered in the past. In addition Metabolized Bible Doctrine resulting in [Divine Viewpoint](#) must eliminate the saturation of [Human Viewpoint](#) thinking from the influence of Evil, the policy of Satan, from the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul. It takes time to clean out the Garbage accumulated in the Subconscious and the Trash in the Stream of Consciousness which has accumulated from involvement in Reversionism or reaction to injustice. This garbage and trash in the soul includes the Subjective Arrogance of [Self Absorption](#), [Emotional Revolt of the Soul](#), [Black Out of the Soul](#) and [Scar Tissue of the Soul](#) as parts of the stages of Reversionism, and the development of a false scale of values related to the Evil of satanic inspired Human Viewpoint thinking.

### **[Solution to Pride](#)**

Pride is very often a problem for those who become wealthy in their own lifetime. However, Pride is or can be a problem for any believer and may manifest itself in many different situations. Wealthy believers have this as an occupational hazard as a result of their swelling Pride from accumulating wealth just like poor believers can be proud about their abilities despite their circumstances. Positive volition toward Bible Doctrine insulates the soul from Pride. ([Matt 19:27-20:4](#)) In his famous speech Elihu in [Job 33:16-17](#) expresses that the function of the Grace Apparatus for Perception and Metabolized Bible Doctrine saturating the right lobe is the way in which God stops His discipline and protects from Mental Attitude Arrogance and the Pride complex. Therefore, the answer to Pride and all Mental Attitude Arrogance is Wisdom derived from persistent Post Salvation Epistemological Rehabilitation by Perception, Cognition, Incultation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine, which removes Pride. ([Prov 8:13](#); [Prov 11:2](#)) This is the only answer to breaking up the counter part sins in the Pride complex. ([Job 33:16-17](#)) Under the function of the [Grace Apparatus for Perception](#) God seals the instructions for believers with Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul in order to turn aside the Divine Discipline of the proud.

Even though, after Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God, God the Holy Spirit indwells the

body of the believer and, after carnality the use of the rebound procedure for restoring the Filling of God the Holy Spirit for controlling one's soul must be consistent. The Filling of God the Holy Spirit only works through Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul to produce solutions to the problems of Arrogance. God the Holy Spirit brings Doctrinal thought or Divine Viewpoint thinking into focus in the soul and it is this thought in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul, which eliminates the cobwebs of Pride and Arrogance. People who have a great many hangups are the cause of many bad marriages where people have married in Blind Arrogance. Soul rapport in marriage demands 2 souls totally CLEAR of Arrogance which can only result from Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God and consistent Temporal Adjustment to the Justice of God.

Return to the [Table of Contents](#)

### **Gate #5 – The Arrogance of Failure / Flaw Transference**

Transference Arrogance is taking one's own failures and flaws and transferring them to someone else. The most subtle and awful form of the [Self Righteous Arrogance](#) trends is Transference Arrogance. God often uses the stand alone [JESHURUN](#) believer to control human history. Joseph's Brothers assumed in Arrogance that once their father Jacob died Joseph would take revenge on them for selling him into slavery. This was Transference Arrogance and these brothers had tragic flaws which never left them and 10 of the 11 brothers were living fragmented lives. In Jealousy they pulled the pin of the Interlocking System of Arrogance grenade fragmenting their lives and sold Joseph into Slavery. Many years later when Joseph, whom they had sold into slavery, who had become Prime Minister of Egypt after Jacob their father Died, delivered them, they all assumed that Joseph was waiting for this to take his revenge. However, they were the ones with motivation for [Revenge](#) in their souls as a result of having totally fragmented their lives. They transferred to Joseph their flaws assuming that because they were motivated for revenge that Joseph was this way also. In their own minds and their own thinking they transferred their own Arrogance and motivations from Evil to Joseph but Joseph was NOT the same as his brothers. Joseph did not live under the principles and policies of the Cosmic Dynaspheres, he did not have a fragmented life, he did not fear RETALIATION for some real or imagined injustice. [1Pet 5:5](#) states clearly that "GOD makes War against the Arrogant but Gives GRACE to the Humble". The believer under Transference Arrogance pulls his own Arrogance grenade pin by assuming that because he fears or worries about something then the object of his antagonism is also afraid of and worries about the same things. Joseph however was not living in Cosmic Dynasphere I under the Interlocking System of Arrogance functions but functioned under [HUMILITY](#) and received phenomenal GRACE blessings from God even in slavery.

Evil is totally based on Arrogance having originated with Lucifer and his Arrogance, thinking he could be LIKE GOD, when he decided to revolt against God and this is the origin of this Policy and Plan of Satan. Transference Arrogance is the believer knowing his own sins, faults, failures and flaws and transferring them to others. Then he thinks ill of them for possessing these

flaws and slanders and maligns them under Transference Arrogance for failures they may not even have. The believer is to know his own **Limitations**, recognizing his own sins, flaws and faults but NOT EVER attempt to transfer or assign them to others in any way. The involvement in Transference Arrogance as a part of Motivational Arrogance begins to occur through **Mental Attitude Arrogance** and its associated sins. **Bitterness**, as an example, results for the believer in a permanently fragmented LIFE apart from the **10 Problem Solving Devices**. Any and all aspects of Mental Attitude Sin, Verbal Sin and Overt Sin can result from entrance into the Interlocking System of Arrogance by engaging in any level of Negative Volition Arrogance and then becoming involved in Transference Arrogance and assigning these personal flaws to others. So Transference Arrogance is living the exploded life which takes one's own flaws and transfers them to someone else thus making one's own life miserable, confused and horrible. The development of humility in one's life results in knowing self, admitting one's failures to self, and knowing one's own personal limitations and not becoming involved in transferring these to others nor involved in exceeding one's own limitations in Limitation Arrogance.

### **Projection**

This is the psychological term used for describing involvement in Transference Arrogance. It is defined as ascribing to another person one's own thoughts, attitudes, flaws, and failures and is where the transferor develops extreme callousness of soul and takes personal failures and projects them onto individuals or groups where he thinks he has been maltreated. As a result he thereby sees in others the cause of all his problems. This requires function under the 1<sup>st</sup> Arrogance Skill, **Self Justification** and results in involvement in and function under the 2<sup>nd</sup> Arrogance Skill, **Self Deception**. (**James 3:14**) These Arrogance Skills, in conjunction with **Denial**, are the Old Sin Nature's means of adjustment to failure in human relations. This is the believer taking his own flaws, sins and failures, which he may not even be consciously but only subconsciously aware of, and assigning them to any object which engages in personal antagonism toward him. This rids him of these inadequacies by assigning the flaws to another. He takes the failures from his subconscious and passes these failures onto others and bypasses his Stream of Consciousness of the Soul, except for the purpose of judging, maligning, vituperation, etc., directed toward these others. This creates a conflict in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul which blocks out **Metabolizing of Bible Doctrine** or destroys that which is already there. This is one of the great battles fought by the Believer in the Soul. **Projection** results in the believer having the same kind of soul as Pharaoh Amenhotep of Egypt often with multiple personality disorders and **Psychoses**. This is therefore, reinforced **Self Justification** where the believer attributes the flaws he has to others in his periphery thereby strengthening his Self Justification which results in Pseudo Self Esteem where all flaws and failures, real or imagined, are assigned to others.

Return to the **[Table of Contents](#)**

## Gate #6 – The Arrogance of Jealousy

Jealousy is a Mental Attitude Sin of concentration totally on self with devotion to self to the exclusion of every other thing in life. It is a total intolerance of any rivalry toward self and a chagrin or discontent toward blessing, success or achievement by someone else. It is strong resentment of the attractiveness of or great approbation directed toward any other. If one is inclined to be Jealous he IS Arrogant because if he was not Arrogant he would never become Jealous. Jealousy is part of the Motivational Arrogance of Mental Attitude Arrogance and is considering self more important than some rival in life. Jealousy is never apparent in a person until pressure is put on their Pride. The more Arrogance exists in one's life, the more he divorces self from reality in life thus the closer he gets to Psychosis. The more time one spends in Jealousy, which is, in fact, an abnormal neurosis or psychosis, the more he loses orientation to reality in his life. Jealousy is an unpleasant Mental Attitude Sin wherein a person is totally possessive of the one or ones closest to him. It is a manifestation of the worst of the 3 Arrogance Skills, Self Absorption. The Arrogantly Jealous person becomes very possessive of his territory or his lover and fears rivalry and losing his possessions or the other's affections, etc.

### Jealousy & Anthropopathisms

An anthropopathism is a human characteristic assigned to God in order to provide a basic understanding of a characteristic or attitude of God toward man in terms which man can understand and relate to. In the old English language Jealousy also had the connotation of ardent devotion such as when God would say, "I am Jealous of my people". Therefore, Jealousy in the old English language has two antithetical meanings, one is a mental attitude sin and the other is a synonym for love. Therefore, Jealousy is only legitimate when it is used as an anthropopathism assigned to God, who demands all of the Christian's attention and concentration when he reaches Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and beyond.

"I the Lord thy God am a Jealous God." Jealousy is a sin, and God does not sin. Jealousy in reference to God is an expression of possessiveness based upon the fact that God is free. Therefore, IF the believer is going to respond to God, he must be free to do so. God is possessive of that freedom. When God said, "No other gods beyond me," God is saying, "Beyond me there is nothing". This infers that God stands with His arms open, the believer has to be free to come, as it were, into His arms. Therefore, in order to maintain freedom, the Source of its origin, God, must be recognized. God's possessiveness is based on the fact that He has purchased every believer from the slave market of sin, and not incidentally, at great cost to him.

### Technical Definitions

The word for "Jealous" in the Hebrew means "to permit no rival.", The Noun, (gr) "zelos" = zeal, Jealousy, Envy, and in Rom 13:13, 1Cor 3:3, James 3:14, James 3:16 and in 2Cor 12:20 it is Envyings, in Gal 5:20 it is Jealousies and emulations, in Acts 5:17 it is indignation, in Acts 13:45 it is Envy, in 2Cor 11:2 it is used in "with a Jealousy of God". The verb (gr)

“zeloo” = akin to, to be Jealous, to burn with Jealousy, to seek or desire eagerly, it is “moved with Jealousy” in [Acts 7:9](#); [Acts 17:5](#), it is “moved with Envy” in [1Cor 13:4](#), it is “envieth (not)” in [James 4:2](#).

The Noun (gr) phthonos = “Envy,” is the feeling of displeasure produced by witnessing or hearing of the advantage or prosperity of others; ([Matt 27:18](#), [Mark 15:10](#), [Rom 1:29](#), [Gal 5:21](#), [Phil 1:15](#), [1Tim 6:4](#), [Titus 3:3](#), [1Pet 2:1](#)); in [James 4:5](#), where the question is rhetorical and strongly remonstrative, signifying that God the Holy Spirit, which was made to dwell in us as believers, was certainly not so bestowed that we should be guilty of “Envy”. (gr) Zelos which is “zeal or Jealousy” is translated “Envy” in [Acts 13:45](#), [Rom 13:13](#), [1Cor 3:3](#), [2Cor 12:20](#), [James 3:14](#), [James 3:16](#), is to be distinguished from (gr) phthonos and apart from the meanings “zeal” and “indignation” is always translated “Jealousy”. The distinction lies in this, that “Envy” desires to deprive another of what he has, “Jealousy” desires to have the same or the same sort of thing for oneself.

True Envy is one of the most insidious concepts from Evil that can afflict a civilization. Envy is not mere covetousness, not just a desire to steal or illegally obtain another person’s goods. Envy is that grinding resentment of another person’s advantages; it is the sin that cannot be placated and is, therefore, a destroyer. Jealousy or Covetousness in effect says: He’s got it; I want it; I’ll steal it; I’ll use it for myself. But Envy in effect says something far worse: He’s got it; I want it; I know that I can never get it; I’ll destroy it so that no one else can have it.

“Envies” means Jealousies, and every time there is a list of sins where Mental Attitude Sins are involved this is always prominent because it is very common and very dangerous. Jealousy is total disorientation to the Grace of God. Jealousy in unbelievers is disorientation to life and has as a background of true or pseudo inadequacy. It is always the button that starts an [Emotional Revolt of the Soul](#) and therefore, Jealousy has great power just as the FEAR, especially of death, has great power. “Envyings” the plural of (gr) zeloo means Jealousies. Jealousy is a great motivator for discord or emotional outbursts of anger; “backbiting or maligning” or to speak down or speak against someone. The Greek word for “Strife” means means discord which among believers in the local church is motivated by Jealousy, ie. operation sour grapes. ([2Cor 12:20](#))

The Verb (gr) parazeloo = “to provoke to Jealousy” is found in [Rom 10:19](#) and [Rom 11:11](#), of God’s dealings with Israel through his merciful dealings with Gentiles; in [Rom 11:14](#) it is “I



may provoke to Jealousy” with regard to the Apostle's evangelical ministry to Gentiles with a view to stirring his fellow nationalists to a sense of their need and responsibilities regarding the Gospel; in [1Cor 10:22](#) it is used of the provocation of God on the part of believers who compromise their Divine relationship by their involvement in the Cosmic Dynaspheres; in [Gal 5:20](#) it is used for Human Good efforts apart from God.

Mental Attitude Sins are considered by the scripture to be the worst sins of all, and high on the list of Mental Attitude Sins is Envy and Jealousy. Mental Attitude Sins always produce reaction toward people and not response to the Lord. Envy and Jealousy are terrible sins and ones that make the Envious or Jealous individual miserable and also makes its object miserable as well. Therefore it is Jealousy which represents a mental attitude sin as a function of Evil resulting eventually in depravity. Jealousy is a self-destructive Mental Attitude Sin, ([Job 5:2](#), [Prov 14:30](#)), and it is the strongest of the Mental Attitude Sins. ([Prov 27:3-4](#))

Jealousy is occupation with self to the exclusion of all else causing total divorcement from reality. It includes an overbearing manner and presumptive [Self Righteous Arrogance](#) with total subjectivity. It is a sin causing distraction, loss of concentration thus inevitable rejection of the Absolute Truth of Bible Doctrine. Jealousy is Motivational Arrogance as Mental Attitude Arrogance and a manifestation of complete arrogant inconsistency. Jealousy is irrational fear, suspicion, resentment derived from mistrust of another. It becomes obvious then that the state of Jealousy or Envy is a part of the Arrogance complex and also the Antagonism complex and is an Emotional Sin. Envy is always an attitude or feeling of discontent. It is Envy which is discontent with regard to another's advantages or successes or possessions or how they have mistreated one in his imagination or in reality.

### **Principles Related to the Doctrine of Jealousy**

Jealousy is a mental attitude sin which destroys one's norms and standards. Very often it is seeing another person's standard of living which is above one's own which develops a desire to have that same standard. However, because he does not have the financial background to maintain that standard, and still he tries to do so, this is the production of Jealousy. This is the old concept of KEEPING UP WITH THE JONES'S. Many people want to have THINGS in life because others have them and don't consider their other responsibilities in life, because of which they cannot maintain the desired higher standard of living. Some people cannot tolerate the success of others and they can't stand anyone getting more credit than they are getting for accomplishments, and consequently their Jealousy destroys any possibility of their having a relaxed mental attitude thus destroying possibility for friendships. In Category III, the love toward friends, the Jealous person wants them to be friends only with him and gets upset, Jealous, when they associate with other people. It was the Jealousy of the Pharisees directed toward The Lord Jesus the Christ which destroyed them under the 5th cycle of Divine Discipline in 70 AD. ([Matt 27:18](#); [Mark 15:10](#)) Jealousy can also be resentment of the physical

attractiveness of another person or the approbation which they receive.

Jealousy is a combination of Arrogance and Emotion and establishes self as the subject and another as the object. Self is always glorified and always right while the OTHER is always condemned and wrong. Therefore, jealousy results in domination and attempted control of another's life. The intense Self Justification from reversal of the [Arrogance Skills](#) allows the justification of jealousy and [Bitterness](#) and all sin and every influence of Evil in the life. What is worse, at the same time, the Spiritual Life of the Church Age is also destroyed for this believer. Jealousy destroys everything which is worthwhile in life, therefore, Jealousy like Bitterness is related to hatred. These are Twin Sins related to hatred. Since Jealousy and Bitterness are both Emotional sins and Mental Attitude Arrogance, they are therefore related to irrational hatred and resentment of others. Hatred is the motivation for revenge, anger is the mood beginning of jealousy, gossip is a sideline of jealousy, slander is a full blown event, and maligning is reaching the peak of non-violent revenge. Ultimately the capacity to love another person from whom love is desired is destroyed by Bitterness which leads to Jealousy which leads to vindictiveness where something is going to be done about the Bitterness as Revenge. Then there is the implacability which is being unable to see personal stupidity and back away or recover from it. Then Hatred again crops up and is now ready to go into action first by gossip which is lying about a person, then by slander which is creating a greater public lie trying to destroy the other person, then Maligning which is an even greater lie leading to Judging which with maligning leads to Revenge.

Jealousy and contentiousness always go together so that once a person becomes jealous about another then there is also contention with this other person and this very often keeps people from learning Bible Doctrine. Complaining about others is most often motivated by JEALOUSY and there cannot be Category II true or romantic love nor Category III love in friendship when jealousy exists. Jealousy is a motivator for Discord in ANY organization or group and between Jealousy and Discord in an organization or group there is always slander, maligning, judging and all the verbal sins. If one has a personal problem with verbal sins the sooner he finds out that this is his problem the sooner he will discover JEALOUSY in his soul. The sooner he discovers jealousy in his soul the sooner he can reach the solution. The longer he goes on in [Blind Arrogance](#) and [Ignorance Arrogance](#) the less likely he will ever understand why he does not have any friends and why he cannot function in any group effectively. There must never be allowed, in the assembly of the Royal Family of God, verbal sinning. The prevention or quelling of verbal sins will prevent discord from rising up in any organization especially the congregation of a local church. Every believer who desires to go to a local church has a right to do so without anyone judging, maligning or being jealous of them. There is absolutely no reason to tolerate people who cannot control their tongues and constantly engage in verbal sins. If a person gets to the place where they find it necessary to gossip or malign others they must be removed from the local church.

### [The Source or Causes of Jealousy](#)

Some people are born with an Old Sin Nature trend or tendency toward Jealousy, and it only takes environmental pressure to bring it out. Therefore, the basic source for all Mental Attitude

Sins including Jealousy is the area of weakness of the Old Sin Nature which produces the temptation to Jealousy and all Mental Attitude Sins and this results or emanates from the believer being involved in [Reversionism](#) and under the influence of Evil. ([1Tim 6:3-4](#)) Jealousy is the typical consistent sin of all reversionistic individuals ([Ps 12:4](#)) when they seek to emulate others and don't have the means of doing so. They lack capacity of soul, the background and / or the means to do so:

- ▲ In unbeliever reversionism as in [Rom 1:28-29](#)
- ▲ In believer reversionism as in [James 3:14-16](#)

### Characteristics of Jealousy

Jealousy and contentiousness always go together so that once a person becomes Jealous about another then he also develops various areas of contention with this other person as well. Therefore, Jealousy is a sin related to the antagonistic Negative Volition of the Interlocking System of Antagonistic Emotional Hatred. A Jealous person always attacks the object of his Jealousy and this always results in conflict. Whenever there is conflict in any organization or social setting always look for the fire of Jealousy as its origin. This contentiousness very often distracts believers from consistently learning Bible Doctrine. In addition traumatic experiences or involvement with obsessions can often also set up [Emotional Revolt of the Soul](#) and produce the Mental Attitude Arrogance with its Mental Attitude Sins of Bitterness, Jealousy, Vindictiveness, Implacability, etc.

Jealousy rejects Bible Doctrine thus characterizes reversionism. ([Acts 13:45](#)) Jealousy always causes social disturbances and attacks authority. ([Acts 17:5](#)) Jealousy of authority motivates those who don't have authority to resentment and involvement in other principles and practices from Evil. To the extent that anyone resents authority this person is entangled in the Interlocking System of Arrogance. ([Acts 7:9](#)) The Mutual Admiration Society is a combination of Arrogant and Inadequate individuals who form an organization or conspiracy where the weak attack the strong. This society represents the function of Evil in combination with Pseudo Love which holds the society together. This Evil combines in the pseudo love of opposites in personality for the expression of their mutual Jealousy, [Pride](#), Hatred, Bitterness, Implacability and Vindictiveness.

Jealousy also motivates one become involved in religion, the devil's Ace Trump card, for the deception and distraction of the Christian. Religion is unequivocally the absolute worst thing ever to happen to the Human Race and it deceives and distracts individuals from the Gospel of Christ and the Plan of God for the life of the believer. ([Mk 15:10](#)) Nearly all religious functions are based on Jealousy which produces in those people who become involved in religion, [Inordinate Competition](#). Religious Legalism ([Gal 3:15](#)) can only produce defeat and results in a mind that is filled with Hatred, Jealousy, antagonism Bitterness and frustration. This results in believers sniping at each other and scheming toward one another as a result of their insatiable Jealousy. The worst people in the world are believers out of fellowship, and the worst believers out of fellowship are the legalists; the persons with the phony facade of spirituality and the tabooistic concepts, proud of their behavior pattern and insanely Jealous of anyone who appears to perform under the same legalism better than they.

As a result of the incredible miraculous healings performed by the apostles there developed a huge paradox so that such genuine benevolence did not evoke universal praise for God and respect for the apostles, especially from the religious leaders in the nation Israel. Instead, these healings aroused Jealousy and enmity, primarily from the self-righteous Sadducees who considered demons, miracles, heaven, and hell as mere superstitions to be shrugged off or ridiculed. Yet here was something they could not refute; the apostles were not charlatans or magicians and the authority of the apostles was too obvious to be denied. Consequently the Sadducees “were filled with Jealousy” ([Acts 5:17](#)). Corrupted by the mental attitude sin of Jealousy, these sophisticated rationalists became irrational. In their opposition to the early Church they seized, abused, jailed even killed the apostles unjustly. ([Acts 5:18](#)) They ignored the Mosaic Law they so revered and were a prime example of malevolent self-righteous legalism blinded to the truth. There is nothing as illogical as reason distorted by Envy, Jealousy or Hatred. Legalism always attacks Grace; but Grace always triumphs. The apostles were delivered by an angel that very night ([Acts 5:19](#)) and continued to disseminate doctrine in Jerusalem. ([Acts 5:28](#))

Jealousy can cause the split of any organization and in fact was the cause of the split of the nation Israel into the northern and southern kingdoms. ([Is 11:13](#)) So great was the sin of Jealousy in Israel a special offering was designed for it in the Levitical code and it is the ONLY Levitical offering designed for 1 single sin. ([Num 5:14-18](#)) Jealousy is very often the primary basis for the destruction of Category II Love, romance or true love. ([SS 8:6-7](#)) “Othello” is a perfect example of this. In Category II, love toward a member of the opposite sex, the Jealous person can be so possessive they smother the other person’s love and destroy it. There cannot be Category II or III love of true romantic love or friendship when Jealousy exists. Jealous people are always making other people miserable.

As goes the Mental Attitude very often so goes the health of the individual. This is the basis for Psychosomatics where the soul has an effect on the health of the body. As the strongest Mental Attitude Sin Jealousy eventually destroys one’s health. ([Prov 27:3-4](#)) Therefore, there are in fact several things which can destroy one’s life:

- ▲ A huge bolder dropping on one and squashing him.
- ▲ Being buried in sand.
- ▲ A FOOLS Anger directed toward one is vastly more destructive to one’s life than both of these.
- ▲ A person who is always angry about everything is like sand pouring onto their own life and this destroys them slowly.
- ▲ Also uncontrollable Anger, which can be like a flood, which smashes one completely.
- ▲ However, Jealousy is far stronger even than any of these.

Jealousy never stands alone as a Mental Attitude Sin but always causes other Mental Attitude,

Verbal or even Overt sins even to the point of Murder. ([Ps 5:8-9](#)) Jealousy is related to the suppression of Pride, which is part of a trigger mechanism producing both false motivation and discord. ([Phil 1:15a](#)) Therefore, much of the discord among people is caused by Jealousy and if one looks long enough at someone with Jealousy he WILL find something to malign, this is DISCORD. Jealous persons are sowers of discord in every aspect of their lives and they always involve themselves in maligning others. ([1Tim 6:4](#)) Complaining about someone else is most often motivated by Jealousy which is the result of pettiness which is the little sister tagging along with Jealousy. Therefore, Jealousy removes all happiness from the believer since it results in intensive Self Induced Misery under the Law of Volitional Responsibility. Jealousy is the most cruel of all sins because it takes an ordinarily sweet person and turns him into a monster by changing his behavior pattern into one of Vindictiveness, maligning, judging, etc.

Jealousy is the most cruel mental attitude sin; it results in deep entanglement in the Interlocking System of Arrogance and very often involvement in the Interlocking System of Antagonistic Emotional Hatred. Therefore, Jealousy is not just a sin, it is moving toward insanity, becoming a psychopathic believer. As a result intensive Jealousy can also destroy the normal functions of the soul and is the explanation for some cases of neuroses and psychoses. ([Job 5:2](#), [Prov 14:30](#))

Jealousy motivates revenge as seen when his Brothers sold Joseph into slavery. ([Prov. 6:34](#), [Acts 7:9](#)) Therefore, Jealousy takes real or imagined wrongs out of the hands of the Lord for repayment and intrudes on the divine prerogative of judgment ([Deut 32:35](#), [Rom 12:19](#)). Inevitably, continuous Negative Volition toward the Gospel or Bible Doctrine manifests itself in Jealousy. ([Rom 1:28-29](#)) Jealousy, therefore, rejects the teaching of Bible doctrine, ([Acts 13:45](#), [Acts 17:5](#)) so that the absorption of false doctrine and the resultant apostasy produce more intensive Jealousy. ([1Tim 6:4](#)) More poor people are involved with Mental Attitude Arrogance than ever can be seen in the rich. When people are entangled in any area of Arrogance and involved with Jealousy and one tries to help them they react to this offered help from their Arrogance in Jealousy and hate him for it and then try to destroy him.

### **Jealousy & the Old Sin Nature**

The greatest Enemy to Spirituality is the thought pattern resulting from the Old Sin Nature controlling the soul. ([Rom 8:5](#)) Thinking according to the standard of the sin nature is living according to the standards of the Old Sin Nature based on one's Lust Patterns and the Trends. The genetic Old Sin Nature is described in scripture as having lust patterns, trends of function, an area of weakness and an area of strength. The lust patterns, the desires of the body, drive the individual's trends of function to activate either the Area of Strength or the Area of Weakness to generate temptation which it throws up against the individual's volition for



acceptance or rejection. The Area of Weakness is the source of temptation to commit sin or crime (sin basically as violation of the Laws of Divine Establishment). The Area of Strength is the source of temptation to commit Human Good production, human effort good deeds APART FROM GOD or the Plan of God. The initial temptation from the Area of Weakness logically must be involving some aspect of Mental Attitude Sin leading to or resulting from Mental Attitude Arrogance especially related to Jealousy, Pride and Bitterness. If these temptations are accepted it inevitably results in the development of Vindictiveness, Implacability, Hatred, Antagonism, etc., leading the believer into a complex of sinning all related to [Emotional Revolt of the Soul](#) as he moves deep into Reversionism. All people have their own Area of Weakness stimulated by their very own trends of function activated by their individual lust patterns and their reaction to outside stimuli in life may start with Jealousy or Bitterness or Self-Pity, but it moves inexorably into a compound series of failures when there is no self-restraint. This results in entanglement in Blind Arrogance, Implacability, and Maliciousness.

The problem with people in general is that they are polarized by their two trends, the trend toward Legalistic Self Righteousness and the trend toward Lascivious, Licentious Lawlessness. People are naturally self-righteous and being self-righteous they are usually moral and their sins are for the most part very subtle. They have sins related to Jealousy, [Pride](#) and [Inordinate Ambition and Inordinate Competition](#). Therefore they become very critical of those whose sins are in the licentious or lascivious lawless area. As a result, they spend their time actually judging and criticizing these people. These sins of the tongue are motivated and sponsored by the Motivational Arrogance of Mental Attitude Arrogance with its Mental Attitude Sins, especially Jealousy, Pride, Bitterness, Vindictiveness, Implacability, Hatred, etc. ([Ps 5:9](#)) Christians, generally, have the tendency to excuse the sins of the mind and think they are spiritual because they do not commit overt sins yet the scripture clearly states that the sins of the mind are the most devastating of all sin. ([Prov 6:16-19](#))

It can be what one says which destroys his relationship with God, because what he says is what he thinks. Words are formed in the mind, and so speaking is inevitably what one already has been thinking. And if he is thinking Envy and Jealousy then he is going to Malign, Judge and Gossip; and if he is thinking implacable hostility then he is going to Criticize and attempt to destroy another. If the Old Sin Nature controls the soul and the life then the person thinks only in terms of Envy, Jealousy, Hatred, Hostility, Pride, Legalism, etc. The believer must recognize clearly that one major difference between religion and Christianity is that religion always places the emphasis on the externals in life, the overt activities and functions, not what the believer is thinking.

When the sin nature is in control of the soul the believer develops a smug and pompous mental attitude. Being in Emotional Revolt of the Soul he is Jealous of those in his periphery who have or whom he imagines to have more in life than he has in any area. Jealousy develops into [Bitterness](#) and as a result of neglecting to use the [Rebound Procedure](#), his Bitterness turns to Anger, Hatred, and Implacable Vindictiveness. This believer thus begins a pattern of

Arrogance Skill functioning with Self-Justification, Self-Deception, and Self-Absorption. Once this patterns begins to function the believer can no longer be distinguished from the unbeliever. He is capable of functioning without any regret under malice, revenge motivation, vituperation, vilification, violence, even to the point of committing murder. The tragic thing is that even the most mature believers are susceptible to traveling this road to ruin if they neglect the consistent use of the Rebound Procedure.

The Saducees were strong for human freedom in Israel, they were strong advocates of the law, but they violated their own law in their Jealousy because, Jealousy leads to mental attitude murder which results in overt Murder where both are a violation of the law. As Saducees saturated with Jealousy and Envy they stooped to that which was contrary to their own standards. They want to destroy Christianity instead of allowing those who were Christians to worship according to the dictates of their own Bible Doctrines. They refused to stand on their own standards once they embraced their Jealousy.

When a believer is filled with Jealousy, Self Righteous Arrogance, Guilt, Self-Pity, Antagonism, Hatred, Bitterness, or Implacable Vindictiveness, he is not in control of his life. Involvement in Mental Attitude Arrogance with Mental Attitude Sins is a sign of having relinquished command of the soul to the Old Sin Nature, and by this succumbing to the devil's influence from Evil. When the Old Sin Nature takes over and controls the soul, the mind is filled with Jealousy (or any Mental Attitude Sin from Mental Attitude Arrogance), which pushes this believer into the 8 stages of Reversionism so that invariably emotion revolts in his soul. This starts wide emotional swings, Psychosis, Neurosis, and incredible Self Induced Misery.

### **Jealousy, Negative Volition & Reversionism**

Any rejection of principles of Bible Doctrine by the believer in some way as some level of Negative Volition toward Bible Doctrine can result from antagonism or personality conflicts with other individuals. This believer could attend bible study regularly yet still be negative to Bible Doctrine because he has some antagonisms with other believer and has become Jealous, bitter or competitive concerning someone in the congregation. This believer who is functioning under Negative Volition is in a certain motivational mental status which includes Disillusion, boredom, loneliness, Discouragement, Self-Pity, frustration, Bitterness, Jealousy, etc. For one reason or another one or more of these aspects of Motivational Arrogance as Mental Attitude Arrogance are in his life and form a Reactor Factor which is stage #1 of Reversionism. (Acts 13:45, Acts 17:5) In any given situation everyone responds positively but reacts negatively. These negative reactions result inevitably in a Frantic Search for Happiness as stage #2 of Reversionism. Stage #3 as the intensification of reversionism occurs when the Frantic Search for Happiness produces no positive results for the believer and results in Operation Boomerang in which the particular type of frantic search merely intensifies the original Reactor Factors without resolving any of the difficulty involved with the Reactor Factors. The frustration becomes greater frustration, the Bitterness becomes greater Bitterness, Jealousy becomes extreme Jealousy to the point of

being psychotic, and so on.

The 'root of Bitterness' draws an analogy between the root from Mental Attitude Arrogance and Mental Attitude Sins and the root which develops from a seed. The seed is dead and buried in the ground, illustrating SIN which has been confessed, acknowledged to God and has been permanently forgiven. ([1Cor 15:36](#)) The reaction arises if the believer begins to think about the sin after it is confessed so that the root of remembering the sin sprouts another mental attitude sin cluster of more Bitterness, Jealousy, Vindictiveness and Implacability and the devastating GUILT. This sprouting upward of reaction to a previously forgiven sin has 3 devastating results.

- ▲ The enhancement of the believer's potential for causing trouble for himself by relapsing into reversionism.
- ▲ The self-induced misery of involvement in reversionism.
- ▲ The potential for devastating Divine Discipline from God.

Therefore, by moving into reversionism this believer gets into operation overthink. His sin is blotted out, he is supposed to forget it, but he didn't because he is legalistic and reversionistic and in operation overthink. He begins to think about the other person against whom he has committed the sin, but only in a vicious way through Jealousy, Bitterness, Implacability, Antagonism, etc. So in operation overthink his Motivational Arrogance of Mental Attitude Arrogance starts to germinate and this begins his chain sinning resulting in interlocking with more mental attitude, verbal ([Psalm 5:8-9](#)) and even overt sins. In the backlash and the reaction of overthink he then sprouts these sin clusters.

All Mental Attitude Sins, as part of the Motivational Arrogance of Mental Attitude Arrogance, come in clusters and [Pride](#) is often the trigger that releases them. Under normal conditions Pride may not be evident, but pressure exposes the existence of the original sin by drawing out a corresponding counterpart sin or sins. The counterparts to Pride can either be mental sins, verbal sins ([Psalm 5:8-9](#)) or a composite of both. When the Pride is compressed by some criticism or overshadowing of the individual by another's success or popularity, out will pop Jealousy, Cowardice, Self-Pity, Vindictiveness, Pettiness, Maligning, Gossip, Judging or operation Vengeance as a reactor factor. Reaction creates a veritable "Pandora's box", a prolific source of troubles from Self Induced Misery and the potential for Divine Discipline in reversionism.

The reaction period, stage #1, of reversionism has both primary and secondary phases. [Disillusion](#) is often the initial challenge to confront the soul and basically is a reaction to people. Disillusion gives rise to personality [Hang-Ups](#) where the individual begins to assume that some other has let him down. If he reacts to these assumed circumstances, he becomes discouraged and withdraws from those who have disillusioned him or departs from the local church or group entirely. This is [Hypersensitivity](#) which totally lacks objectivity and result in leaving a void in his life and invariably leads to boredom or the inability to cope with loneliness. Unchecked, it activates secondary reactive factors including Frustration, [Self-Pity](#),

and many of the other accompanying Mental Attitude Sins including Jealousy, [Bitterness](#), Pride, Implacability, Vindictiveness, [Guilt Complex](#), etc. These trigger Operation Vengeance or the attempt of the believer to build his happiness on someone else's unhappiness through Gossip, Maligning, judging, etc. Thus when a believer starts to enter into reversionism he is plagued by Mental Attitude Arrogance and its Mental Attitude Sins and though he ordinarily is not Jealous he becomes Jealous.

Satan has in fact in this Church Age trained his sights on the Royal Family of God. From the fall of Adam in the garden to the ascension of The Lord Jesus the Christ all satanic attacks were against The Lord Jesus the Christ in attempts to prevent his 1<sup>st</sup> advent or prevent him going to the Cross to provide his Substitutionary Spiritual Death as payment for our sins. [Heb 12:3](#) explains that Satan's guns are now, in this Church Age, the intensified stage of the Angelic Conflict Appeal Trial, leveled against the believer's soul in an attempt to cause fainting in the soul, the fatigue of reversionism, with its incipient Reactor Factors. The believer must remain alert to all the dangers of involvement in the Cosmic Dynaspheres as he presses toward the high ground of Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God. When his victory is within his reach, then pressure begins to mount and the enemy intensifies his search for chinks in his spiritual armor. ([Eph 6:10-17](#)) He searches for what might cause the Reactor Factors of Discouragement, Despondency, Bitterness, Self-Pity, Jealousy, Vindictiveness, Implacability, Boredom, Loneliness, and by this involvement keep this believer from the Word of God. He seeks what is more attractive or important to the believer than Bible doctrine. He pushes to find what is his breaking point to separate him from Bible Doctrine. As these are discovered, Satan then exploits those frailties and potentials for production through Old Sin Nature control of the soul in an attempt to soften that believer's defenses and weaken his soul.

Loneliness is not a sin but it can produce a whole batch of sins when one reacts to it. There are within Mental Attitude Arrogance the Mental Attitude Sins like Jealousy, Bitterness, Vindictiveness, Implacability, all Antagonisms, which also double as Reactor Factors. Frustration is not a sin but as a reactor factor it can lead to sin. So some of these reactors are actually sins and some are not, but when one reacts to any of these situations he comes to the [Frantic Search for Happiness](#), and the Frantic Search for Happiness perpetuates carnality in the life on a very extensive basis. The Frantic Search for Happiness also leads to [Emotional Revolt of the Soul](#) which inevitably places soul control firmly in the hands of the Old Sin Nature. Once the emotion revolts it further intensifies whatever Reactor Factors are involved.

Reversionism cannot produce anything of value in the Plan of God. [James 3:14](#) clearly emphasizes that if one has bitter Jealousy and is always antagonistic and looking for a fight then he WILL have wide emotional swings and instability of soul. Jealousy or Envy is always encompassed in or accompanied by Bitterness and always produces contentiousness, looking for an overt fight or argument leading to clusters of Mental Attitude, verbal ([Psalm 5:8-9](#)) or overt sins. This results in wide emotional swings and total and complete instability of

soul. Therefore, Jealousy, which is the clear sign of involvement in reversionism, is also the motivator for it. Jealousy causes the reversionistic believer to quote and distort doctrine and scripture in such a way so as to discredit the pastor and his authority. This reversionist gains adherents from the congregation on the basis of his distortions of these doctrines. However, those who join with him are not aware of his motivation from Jealousy, they are only convinced because of his distorting of the doctrine. This brings on revolt or the challenge to the authority of the Pastor Teacher by the congregation and results in quarreling and fighting.

Upon reaching the ultimate and inevitable degradation of his Spiritual Life to the point of [Reverse Process Reversionism](#), the 8th and final stage of reversionism, the believer will be saturated with Envy and Jealousy, his [Lust](#) patterns will run rampant through his soul, he will Judge and even [Murder](#) without ever having or acquiring the authority he sought. However, if the desired authority is obtained through his Jealousy, Lusting or Killing, he still has nothing. Therefore, Jealousy is a sign of reversionism. ([Prov 3:34](#)) This is a warning to the believer because God KEEPS ON BEING the enemy of the proud, the arrogant, this is the reversionistic believer in enmity with God. Notice carefully that the reversionist is always described in terms of Mental Attitude Arrogance and Mental Attitude Sins including Jealousy and Pride.

There is a principle here, Jealousy takes things by violence and Murder takes things by violence, and that is why they have common counterpart aspects between them. Jealous people are very often violent in their Jealousy. In other words, Jealousy results in people trying to get something that they want by violence, and this is the believer in reversionism. He may Lust for something or someone and is Jealous because he is not able to acquire it or them. He may murder to keep others from acquiring what he Lusts for but even in this he is also not able to acquire either. A believer in reversionism wants self-gratification through some form of pleasure but the very thing that he seeks he destroys by his attempts through violence to acquire it. Therefore, Mental Violence is Jealousy; Overt Violence is Murder and they have much in common. ([James 4:2](#))

Therefore, the reversionistic believer wants certain things, and there are certain pleasures which he thinks will bring him happiness. Therefore, he aggressively pursues any means of acquiring these pleasures and invariably fails. However, if he gets what he is pursuing, there are two things that inevitably happen:

- ▲ By means of violence toward himself, he will lose what he has sought.
- ▲ Having obtained what he wants by violence, he in fact won't have anything.

This is the pattern of a believer in reversionism seeking happiness in stage 2 of the Frantic Search for Happiness. Anything acquired through actions resulting from Jealousy, Lust or Overt Violence these things are not worth having and will never bring happiness. No matter how hard one works or to what lengths one goes, whatever he obtains in reversionism or through reversionism is not worth having and can only bring misery. Therefore, believers are warned regarding Jealousy. ([Ps 27:4-6](#)) The person who is guilty of Envy or Jealousy is the most miserable but even the object of it often becomes miserable because he becomes the



object of [Revenge](#) tactics. So whatever capacity for love exists with this believer, it is destroyed by the destructive power of Jealousy or Envy. Therefore, reversionistic believers will be deeply entangled in Arrogance, some having [Blind Arrogance](#) with morbid obsessions about controversies. Reversionism thrives on pseudo controversies and likes to be involved in controversies and stir up controversy because of their Jealousy and they use Slander, Maligning or Implacability to provide them with a sense of victory in these controversies.

In the 6<sup>th</sup> stage of reversionism, [Blackout of the Soul](#), the believer is moving directly toward total Satanic influence from Evil and everything that is anti-God and anti-establishment. This is the direct result of persistent or [Locked In Negative Volition](#) toward Bible Doctrine regardless of how that Negative Volition is expressed. He thus becomes a bleeding heart liberal, a hippy of the 60s, or gets himself into some activity involving socialism, welfare, communism, etc. In this phase Blackout of the Soul leads to greater Pride, Bitterness, Jealousy, Vindictiveness, Implacability, etc., and is also the stage at which [Criminal](#) activity becomes quite extensive.

This Blackout of the Soul is the direct and accumulated result of all previous stages of reversionism. It is directly related to the opening of the vacuum into the left lobe as a result of consistent Negative Volition toward Bible Doctrine and is that which prevents the unbeliever from accepting the gospel of Christ and the believer from accepting the truths of Bible Doctrine. It results first from the Reactor Factors in the life which then result in a Frantic Search for Happiness which in turn causes Emotional Revolt of the Soul, which places greater emphasis on Negative Volition as apathy or indifference to Bible Doctrine with Bible Doctrine taking second place to everything else in life. This enhanced or Locked in Negative Volition causes a Black Out of the Soul where by any Light of Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul is systematically erased from the soul. This results in the opening of a vacuum in the soul for information which draws into the Left Lobe of the Soul the LIE of Evil as false doctrine and false principles from Evil ([1Tim 4:1](#); [2Tim 4:14](#)) the general condition which results is the development of Scar Tissue of the Soul which prevents any Truth from entering the Left Lobe of the Soul and being metabolized into the Right Lobe of the Soul.

This [Scar Tissue of the Soul](#), stage 7 of Reversionism, results from the accumulation of false information the LIE from Evil and prevents further intake of any TRUTHS and includes the concept of “hardening of the heart”. It is accumulated first on the left bank of the soul through Negative Volition toward the Gospel and / or Bible Doctrine thus preventing the comprehension of the Truth. The heart or right lobe then becomes “hardened” toward God, his Grace and Bible Doctrine, and the result is that the believer loses his capacity to love God IF he had it in the first place. This Negative Volition also results in entering into involvement in the Interlocking System of Arrogance and when any part of one’s Arrogance is challenged by truth the Negative Volition results in Antagonism, involvement in Cosmic Dynasphere II the Interlocking System of Antagonistic Emotional Hatred. Scar Tissue of the Soul must begin on the Left Lobe of the Soul before it can accumulate on the Right Lobe of the Soul. Therefore,

there are certain parts of Arrogance or Antagonism and their accompanying sins that will put scar tissue on the right lobe of the soul if one already has scar tissue on the left lobe. These sins include, but are not limited to, promiscuity or adultery ([Prov 6:32](#); [Eph 4:19](#); [Eph 5:3](#)), which hinder Category Two love; and involvement with Motivational Arrogance as Mental Attitude Arrogance with Mental Attitude Sins ([1John 2:9-11](#)), including Pride, Envy, Jealousy, Bitterness, Vindictiveness, Implacability, Hatred, Fear, Worry, Anxiety, etc. and these will hinder the development of any category of love.

### **Jealousy & Emotional Revolt of the Soul**

The Right Lobe of the Soul of the believer saturated with Bible Doctrine in the Frame of Reference initiates to the emotions and which then responds with appreciation for Bible Doctrine, for who and what Christ is, for what God has given him in this life. However, when the [Emotions Revolt](#) and become the initiators of function in the soul the emphasis becomes how one feels based on personal experience rather than on how one THINKS based on Absolute Truth. Then the Mental Attitude Sins derived from temptations from the Old Sin Nature hinder the capacity for life as well as for love. ([Prov 23:15-17](#)) The Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul should initiate Impersonal, Unconditional Love; but when the emotions revolt, Jealousy, Bitterness and Implacability come into play. When there is Mental Attitude Arrogance and Mental Attitude Sins, Jealousy or Envy backs up and seeps into the emotion. If Mental Attitude Sin is not handled promptly through the [Rebound Procedure](#) of [1John 1:9](#), they back up further, so that eventually Jealousy infiltrates the Right Lobe of the Soul, and this becomes the “deceitful heart,” or the “desperately wicked heart.” The Old Sin Nature in effect says, “Hey, emotion, don’t you get tired of being kicked around by the Right Lobe? Don’t you get tired of being a responder all the time? Arise and revolt!” So up from the Old Sin Nature comes the temptation to Jealousy; and once Jealousy is accepted and established in the emotions as a strong Motivational Arrogance or Mental Attitude Arrogance and Mental Attitude Sin there begins wide emotional swings resulting in this believer becoming frustrated and miserable, and in the extreme, neurotic or [Psychotic](#). This is the development of a sick soul with soul “Hatreds” that come from Jealousy. ([Ps 73:21-22](#)) Therefore, Jealousy is not only a part of Motivational Arrogance but also part or the initiator of negative emotion which blots out thinking. No believer can think or concentrate in order to apply Bible Doctrine under pressure when negative emotion dominates the soul. All negative emotions are produced by living in the Cosmic Dynaspheres, the Interlocking System of Arrogance and / or the Interlocking System of Antagonistic Emotional Hatred.

The [Emotional Arrogance](#) with its Emotional Complex of sins includes Bitter Jealousy, Fear, Worry, Anxiety, Hysteria, Anger, Hatred, Loathing, Malice, Tantrums, Irrational Violence, Murder, Egotistical Irrationality related to arrogant [Self-Righteousness](#), Insensitivity about self

but [Hypersensitivity](#) about the attitudes of others, Denial, Projection, [Self-Pity](#) and [Guilt](#). When emotion becomes one's god, he is fragmented and ripe for the emotional distractions of pseudo Christianity. ([Phil 3:18-19](#)) Such a believer's unrestrained or uncontrolled emotional pattern is the basis for all aspects of [Criminality](#) including violence and even Murder with complete and deep entanglement within the Interlocking System of Arrogance.

When the emotions revolt and Fear arises in the soul Fear cannot cope with any situation in life because FEAR as an emotional sin out of control prevents thinking. Fear can only increase weakness and cowardice, resulting in irrationality as a result of causing the inability to THINK in terms of Absolutes. Consequently fear opens the way to other aspects of Mental Attitude Arrogance and Mental Attitude Sins in every category. From fear comes many manifestations of Mental Attitude Arrogance and Jealousy results when one is afraid of losing someone, and it occurs when this other shows any favoritism toward anyone else. Fear as a Mental Attitude Sins is removed by spiritual advance to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God along with its Pride and Jealousy. Within the stability of the mature spiritual life the believer has no fear as to what anyone in mankind might say about him or do to him proportionate to his development of [Problem Solving Device #10](#), Occupation with the Person of The Lord Jesus, The Christ, Advanced Personal Love for God, which eliminates all fear and thus overrides all Mental Attitude Arrogance and Mental Attitude Sins. ([Prov 23:17](#))

When Emotional Revolt of the Soul occurs, which often results from engaging in Jealousy or Envy, it results in producing BAD EMOTION in many categories which include Vituperation (as gossip, slander, maligning, and judging), Vilification (which is the creation of a public lie about someone who is the object of Jealousy), Hatred, Vindictiveness, or Implacability. [Revenge](#) is also a potential, which itself includes Malice, (the lust to inflict injury or suffering on others), which can result in Violence and even [Murder](#).

### **Jealousy & The Cosmic Dynaspheres**

The cosmos is a vast order or system that Satan has devised and promoted, which conforms to his ideals, aims, and methods designed to prevent his eternal residence in the Lake of Fire. In Human History it is civilization functioning apart from God in which none of its promoters expect God to share in its functions, who assign to God no consideration in respect to their projects; nor do they ascribe any causality to Him. It is this SPHERE in Human History in which man lives. It is what man sees, what he employs and to the uncounted multitude it is all they ever know so long as they live on this earth. It is literally a cosmos diabolicus, the Policies and Plan of Satan.

### Jealousy & Interlocking System of Arrogance

Mental Attitude Arrogance includes all Mental Attitude Sins such as Pride, Jealousy, Bitterness, Vindictiveness, Implacability, Hatred, Self-Pity, Guilt, Operation Over-think, etc., because all Mental Attitude Sins are subjective preoccupation with self. Negative Volition Arrogance always interlocks with Mental Attitude Arrogance because the person who becomes negative to Bible Doctrine always becomes involved in Jealousy and other Mental Attitude Sins. The rejecting of the Truth of Bible doctrine communicated by one's own pastor-teacher comes from the rejection of the authority of the pastor and his doctrinal message as well and both are the cause AND result of Jealousy or other Mental Attitude Sins.

When there is rejection of the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions and the substitution of human viewpoint as solutions these individuals, therefore, become involved in the Satanic administration system under his rulership of this world. Instead of freedom there is a demand for Equality, but Equality can only be approached through coercion and slavery. Equality demands the full mobilization of Envy and Jealousy, and therefore to promote equality there must be taxation of the successful, confiscation of property, the nationalization of industry, all which are based on Evil, the Plan and Policies of Satan.

Jealousy, as one function of Mental Attitude Arrogance is a part of Motivational Arrogance. Jealousy is one of the basic reasons why people of great potential never realize their potential. Everything that is great in a person is destroyed by Jealousy. Jealousy in squeezing the greatness out of one is the destroyer of capacity for life, and a person who has any kind of a Jealousy problem will never have capacity for any level of happiness. Whatever Jealousy achieves Jealousy immediately loses. Jealous people are miserable people; Jealous people become the villains of life because Jealousy is one of the strongest areas of Motivational Arrogance. So when the bible says literally, "Do not be Jealous of Evil men" it merely indicates that Jealousy puts the individual involved on a par with those saturated with and totally functioning under the principles and policies of Evil. Whatever potential one might have and whatever he has attained in life is neutralized by Jealousy. So Jealousy is far greater than just a Mental Attitude Sin, it is the basis for the initiation and involvement in most Motivational Arrogance, driving to and entangling the believer in, the Cosmic Dynaspheres.

Jealous people always have unfulfilled desires and Jealousy gravitates to Jealousy; in other words, Jealousy produces the desire for association with Jealousy. Therefore Jealousy is a self-destroyer. Jealousy may appear to be innocuous on the surface but Jealousy is always the beginning of a life saturated with Evil from persistent residence in the Cosmic Dynaspheres. A

life lived under the principles of Evil cannot, by any stretch of the imagination, fulfill the plan of God, cannot function under the principles of leadership, and is a wasted life. This believer may destroy his life totally but cannot destroy his eternal salvation. His options and opportunities exist in time and inevitably Jealousy destroys all options so that a Jealous person becomes a dried up prune with a dried up soul.

This all starts as Motivational Arrogance which has many sides and many facets. For example, Jealousy is Arrogance or preoccupation with self. To the extent that people are Jealous, to that extent they become vulnerable to total entanglement in the Cosmic Dynaspheres. This does not mean that every Jealous person is going to be a convert to some Satanic religion but it does mean that this is a beginning of his own self destruction. There is a very close relationship between Jealousy and [Emotional Revolt of the Soul](#) and these totally stifle thinking so that Jealous people are never able to think rationally. Once one loses the ability to think rationally then he falls back on emotion, and emotion as the basis for function results in a total disorientation to reality. So we have Jealousy, and from the Jealousy there is always frustration and the frustration factor further destroys the ability to think and therefore there is [Bitterness](#) and more thus driving the individual further into [Reversionism](#) and deeper into entanglement in the Interlocking System of Arrogance.

Jealousy as a manifestation of Arrogance is a part of [Inordinate Ambition](#) and Inordinate Competition and is irrational in its resentment of others. ([Gal 5:25-26](#)) Jealousy is directed toward self as the subject and toward people as the object and is a major stumbling block in the attainment of Spiritual Self Esteem in Spiritual Adulthood. Jealousy is also a major contributor to [Self-Righteous Arrogance](#), and therefore, a major motivating factor in Christian Immoral Degeneracy. Jealousy is the handmaiden of [Religious Legalism](#) and as such is tyranny in its simplest form. Where Jealousy persists, it destroys human freedom because basic Jealousy does not permit people to love from their own volition; it demands love and attention. ([James 4:5-6](#))

As a contributor to [Emotional Revolt of the Soul](#), emotion based on Jealousy builds a wall in the soul that prevents the application of Bible Doctrine to life. This wall can be built by the various categories of emotional sin including Fear, Hatred, Self-Pity, Guilt and especially Jealousy. Being Jealous, as emotional or irrational Arrogance (James 4:5-6), will result in any of the following reactions involved with Jealousy:

- ▲ Bitterness
- ▲ Vindictiveness



- ▲ Implacability
- ▲ Inordinate ambition and competition
- ▲ Revenge
- ▲ Verbal sins
- ▲ Overt sins

A total focus on self is Arrogance and it comes from [Unrealistic Expectations](#) and from the overestimation of self. When one is not being treated the way he wants to be treated his eyes are focused on himself. He is frustrated because of his Jealousy and becomes Implacable making consistent bad decisions from a position of weakness as a result or residing in and functioning under the Cosmic Dynaspheres. The more he is preoccupied with self, the greater are his expectations and demands from people around him. His reaction, while residing in the Cosmic system, is inevitably Jealousy, Bitterness, Guilt, Vindictiveness, Implacability, Self-Pity, Hatred, Anger, and which are all encompassed as Revenge Motivation. With these things in one's soul as a believer, he is guaranteed to have a totally unhappy life.

### **Jealousy & Soul Fragmentation**

Fragmentation is defined as the action or process of breaking something into small parts or of something being broken up in this way. The believer who fragments his own life pulls the pin of the Arrogance Grenade through such categories of both Motivational Arrogance and Functional Arrogance as Envy, Jealousy, Bitterness, Hatred, Vindictiveness, Implacability, Self-Pity, Revenge, Inordinate Ambition, Inordinate Competition, resulting in Slander, Maligning, Gossip, and Judging. Fragmentation occurs in six categories:

- ▲ Self-fragmentation or personal fragmentation.
- ▲ Polarized fragmentation.
- ▲ Fragmentation as subjective preoccupation with self or others in Arrogance
  - ▼ Unrealistic Expectation is subjective preoccupation with self.
  - ▼ [Role Model Arrogance](#) is subjective preoccupation with others.
- ▲ Human relationship fragmentation.
- ▲ Emotional fragmentation
  - ▼ [Emotional Revolt of the Soul](#) with complexes of emotional sin including Fear, Worry, Anxiety, Anger, Hatred leading to Violence and even Murder.
- ▲ God relationship fragmentation.
  - ▼ Failure to learn and to use the [10 problem solving devices](#).

### **Implosion**

Implosion is defined as undergoing a catastrophic failure, to collapse or compress inward violently with great force as a result of external pressure. Thus to implode in the Spiritual Life means to succumb to the outside pressures of one's environment or the inside pressures of the

Old Sin Nature in one's life resulting in temptations to produce Sin, Crime or Human Good. Implosion is used here in a technical sense for succumbing to the Old Sin Nature's trend toward Religious Legalism and / or Self-Righteous Arrogance or its trend toward Antinomianism and Lascivious Lawlessness. Implosion which follows the trend toward religious legalism includes many heresies which result from Self-Righteous Arrogance such as salvation by human efforts or good deeds, spirituality by human efforts or good deeds, relativity regarding spiritual advancement, erroneous views about the Christian way of life and God's protocol plan, total lack of Grace Orientation, substituting taboos from distortion of Doctrine for divine mandates, erroneous views about the actual canon of Scripture, not accepting the principle of verbal plenary inspiration of Scripture, ETC. Therefore, Implosion is the first step toward moral or immoral degeneracy and is Internal Fragmentation which if unchecked by rebound and doctrinal orientation, becomes explosion. Implosion in the Spiritual Life is generally the result of Motivational Arrogance involving Mental Attitude Arrogance and its Mental Attitude Sins.

### Explosion

Explosion is defined as a very rapid increase, a breaking up or bursting into pieces violently often with a loud noise, or causing something to do this: to show something to be wrong; to react suddenly with a strong expression of violent emotion such as anger. Therefore, in the Spiritual Life, Explosion is the reaction of the individual to the pressures of life, internal and external and is external fragmentation. This is caused by the believer pulling the pin of the Arrogance Grenade initially by engaging in the Motivational Arrogance of Mental Attitude Arrogance and its Mental Attitude Sins which results in Functional Arrogance and uncompensated entanglement in the Interlocking System of Arrogance. Explosion usually results in polarized fragmentation. When it is unchecked by the use of the rebound procedure, explosion will lead the believer to either moral or immoral degeneracy and apostasy which cultivates a tyranny of Evil in his soul and life. The pin of the Arrogance Grenade involves any aspect of the Interlocking System of Arrogance but usually and logically begins with some level of Motivational Arrogance from Mental Attitude Arrogance which includes such Arrogance sins as Jealousy, Bitterness, Vindictiveness, Implacability, Self-Pity, Hypersensitivity, Hatred, Anger, Revenge, Slander, Maligning, Gossip, Judging, Inordinate Ambition and Competition which ultimately undermine love, affection, friendship, romance, and marriage.

Fragmentation generally results in the believer when there is failure to execute the protocol plan of God through consistent post-salvation epistemological rehabilitation. This results from failure to learn and to use one's own portfolio of invisible assets. Failure to advance in the Spiritual Life and develop a Personal Love for God and Occupation with the Person of The Lord Jesus, The Christ, the priority solution. Failure to understand and apply the unique

characteristics of the Church Age. Failure to comprehend the unique commissions of the Royal Family of God in this dispensation of the Church Age as Royal Priest and Royal Ambassador for Christ.

Life is always complicated by reaction when it involves self-fragmentation. When the believer is rejected by those whom he loves, respects, or admires, he reacts by pulling the pin of the Arrogance Grenade and fragging himself. Sometimes the believer is rejected because he is already living a fragmented life in the Cosmic Dynasphere system and deeply involved in the Interlocking System of Arrogance or Interlocking System of Antagonistic Emotional Hatred. Reaction to rejection leads to many of the problems that destroy any possibility of having an effective and functional spiritual life. Reaction is always the result of some outside pressure in life which demands the use of Problem Solving Devices which invariably this believer has not developed. Outside pressures in life are inevitable but reacting to them to produce stress in the soul of the believer is totally OPTIONAL. Stress in the soul from reaction to any level of rejection means complete malfunction of the spiritual life. Reaction can include anything from being emotionally hurt to engaging in Bitterness, Jealousy, Vindictiveness, Implacability, or being filled with Self-Pity inevitably resulting in self-fragmentation of the spiritual life.

### Illustration of Implosion and Explosion

Irritation, to irritate means to incite to impatience or anger, to cause to induce impatience or anger, to exasperate, to annoy, to antagonize to the point where self-control is lost. Therefore, irritation is a good illustration of implosion and under the Protocol Plan of God, the believer should not become ever irritated because of other people, only because of self and one's own failings. When one is irritated by some situation or some other person it is common to blame the object for the irritation. However, irritation is an emotional sin resulting from Implosion, and one does this to oneself and therefore Self-irritation is implosion. However, in the implosion or internal fragmentation stage of post-salvation sinning, the believer inevitably blames his irritation on the object of his Mental Attitude Arrogance and Mental Attitude Sins such as Jealousy, Bitterness, Vindictiveness, Implacability, Anger, Gossip, Slander, Maligning, or Judging. Under the mandates and priorities of the Protocol Plan of God the believer MUST take the responsibility for his own irritation, for his Mental Attitude Arrogance. Thus, Self-irritation, self-Jealousy, self-Bitterness, etc., is the personal decision of the believer to pull the pin of the Arrogance Grenade. He always does it to himself, although there is always an object for him cast blame onto and thus avoid taking responsibility for it. Self-irritation combines the function of implosion with the function of explosion, so that one totally fragments his own Spiritual Life by using his volition to initiate the Motivational Arrogance and then use this as momentum to move forward with it into Functional Arrogance. By allowing this process

to go unchecked by his failure to use the rebound procedure he inevitably ends deep in the stages of Reversionism and either the moral degeneracy or immoral degeneracy of the Interlocking System of Arrogance.

Cain as the eldest son was about to lose his status and inheritance potential because he was not acceptable to God. He was about to be disinherited but he could have still ruled over Abel by accepting Christ as savior. But Cain's continued failure to find acceptance with God eliminated this completely and therefore his brother, Able, would rule him, his brother would become the priest, and would retain all of the family heritage. Therefore, Cain determined that he had to eliminate his brother. So his reaction to being unacceptable to God resulted in and from Jealousy which led him to Hatred and this Hatred led to [Murder](#). Cain intended to be first regardless of the cost, even if it meant killing his brother. This is self fragmentation and self destruction.

Envy which is tantamount to but greater than Jealousy is a part of Motivational Arrogance and Mental Attitude Arrogance and is a Mental Attitude Sin. When one envies sinners, that means he has pulled the pin in the Arrogance Grenade and fragmented his own life, so that his emotions now dominate the right lobe of his soul. Jealousy or Envy as [Emotional Arrogance](#) and sin is totally irrational and cannot possess any aspect of real thought. It is strictly Arrogance and preoccupation with self. Therefore, the believer dominated by his emotion will regularly pull the pin of the Arrogance Grenade by engaging in any aspect of Motivational Arrogance as Mental Attitude Arrogance especially Jealousy, Bitterness, Hatred, etc. In other words he does this by being totally preoccupied with self to the exclusion of the plan, purpose, and will of God for his life. ([1Tim 6:3-4](#)) Every time the believer becomes angry, Jealous, Bitter, Vindictive or Implacable he surrenders his happiness to someone else. Therefore, the pin of the Arrogance Grenade, Motivational Arrogance, Mental Attitude Arrogance including Jealousy, is the basis for establishing an inherent flaw in one's life. Production under or from Evil is the result of the believer constantly living in a status of being flawed. Deeds, like crusading using civil disobedience, come from these flaws. However, if the believer makes decisions to maintain consistency in the Perception, Cognition, Incultation, Metabolization and Application of Bible Doctrine he will inevitably have faults but he will not develop inherent flaws. Therefore, Self-fragmentation as a substitute for human self-esteem is invariably caused by Motivational Arrogance, the Mental Attitude Arrogance of Bitterness, Jealousy, Vindictiveness, Implacability, Hatred, even Self-Pity, all motivation leading to Revenge.

### **Jealousy, Arrogance & Split Personality**

The Split Personality From the Standpoint of the Bible is the basis for being divorced from the reality of life. When one has Mental Attitude Sins including Jealousy in his soul, he has a split personality. There is no justification for any mental attitude sin no matter how one has, or thinks he has, been mistreated. Therefore when one's personality is split, it is split by sin in the life.

God's plan for creatures always starts with a cohesive, integrated, and unified soul, with no split in the personality. The unified personality of the unbeliever is formed by faith alone in Christ alone for Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God, and is maintained for the believer by consistent Perception, Cognition, Inculcation, Metabolization and Application of Bible Doctrine in Temporal Adjustment to the Justice of God. When the Old Sin Nature controls the soul the individual is one person, and when God the Holy Spirit controls the soul, he is another person. Satan used his own volition to become arrogant and to split his personality. This split caused the greatest spiritual warfare of all time. Ish (Adam) and Ishah (Eve) sinned and created for themselves split personalities. God created both Satan and mankind, Ish and Ishah, with unified souls. However, God also gave creatures volition so that they could make decisions some of which often split their soul. A split personality can be mended by the believer easily in the early stages by the consistent use of the rebound procedure, but in the advanced stages, that same one may want to see a psychiatrist. Therefore, every time one sins he splits his personality. This does not mean he is psychotic from the beginning, but if he becomes consistently entangled in the Interlocking System of Arrogance, generally the major reason why believers become psychotic, neurotic, and have personality dysfunctions, he is in grave trouble.

Therefore, involvement in the Interlocking System of Arrogance or Interlocking System of Antagonistic Emotional Hatred invariably results in or from a split personality. The Arrogance complex is a contradiction to the protocol plan of God. ([Prov 11:2](#), [Prov 16:18](#), [Prov 23:29](#), [Rom 12:3](#)) This lifestyle under Arrogance can easily convert one into the psychopathic believer and Rom 12:3 clearly says that one cannot be consistently arrogant and be sane at the same time. When one consistently thinks of self in terms of Arrogance, he is thinking in terms of Jealousy, Bitterness, Anger, Hatred, etc. As a split personality, one becomes two people, whatever he was by way of Bible doctrine and what he becomes by way of Mental Attitude Sins especially Jealousy. Therefore, if the believer harbors Jealousy and Bitterness in his soul, it is a guarantee of his having a split personality. His secondary personality will take him away from reality and into illusion and self destruction. The antithesis of this secondary personality is found based on the Humility developed in the Divine Dynasphere in the normal, integrated cohesive soul of the advancing believer. ([1Pet 5:5-6](#))

### **Jealousy & Lust**

Ananias and Sapphira ([Acts 5:1-10](#)) were making a most vicious attack on the church, and at this point they were the worst enemies of the church. They were starting into the game of king of the spiritual mountain; they were Jealous of Barnabas. Now Barnabas had entered into this unwittingly, he gave to the church as unto the Lord. He sought no approbation nor any ascendancy in the local church, he was simply giving from his prosperity as unto the Lord.



But because of the tremendous approbation that came his way which did not cause him to act superior, Ananias and Sapphira went absolutely crazy. In their Jealousy they entered into a transaction where they sold a valuable piece of property and were supposed to bring part of the profit and give it to the church just as Barnabas did. However, they were deceitful and contended that they were giving the whole of the profit but did, in fact, hold back part of the profit. This is the New Testament equivalent of Achan's sin. ([Josh 7:1](#)) Their problem, like Achan's problem, was [Lust](#), only in their case it was Approbation Lust in which they desired the praise of the Jerusalem church. The mental attitude which was behind this was Envy and Jealousy because their life and happiness revolved around possessing status symbols and receiving approbation from others. There was nothing wrong with keeping back part of the price of the sale. There is no regulation as to how much a believer should or should not give. The sin was in telling the lie resulting from the Envy and Jealousy, the mental attitude behind it. They were totally saturated with Jealousy. ([Acts 5:16](#)) Then being filled with Jealousy this led to inconsistency. ([Acts 5:17](#)) This all resulted from Jealousy being motivated by LUST for approbation and no one can be Jealous without being inconsistent with himself and his best motives.

### **Jealousy & Pride**

[Pride](#) is the most basic Mental Attitude Sin, and as such, it attracts and links with many other mental sins. For example, the arrogant person always sees someone who has more of what makes the arrogant person Proudful, such as beauty, personality, or ability. This causes Jealousy. These two mental sins always travel together. All Proudful people are Jealous and when pressure is put on their Pride it causes Jealousy to pop up. Invariably, this person will be [Petty](#) in the area of his Pride and Jealousy. If he is petty, he also becomes Vindictive and if he is Vindictive, he becomes Implacable toward those whom he is Jealous of. Pride, Jealousy, Pettiness, Vindictiveness, and Implacability generally always go together. Pride also becomes the counterpart to weaknesses of the soul resulting from Cowardice. People who are saturated with Pride are totally different when under pressure, the pressure acts as a sensitivity point hiding the Pride and bringing out the counterparts. Counterparts to Pride can fall into any of the various categories of Sin:

- ▲ Mental Attitude Sins such as Jealousy
- ▲ Verbal Sins such as Gossip and Maligning
- ▲ Overt Sins such as Vengeful Violence

Thus frustrated Pride is like nuclear fission and the chain reaction releases Jealousy and other categories of sins. This is generally the motivation for Retaliation, Revenge, Vengeance, motivation by reversionists to do good deeds, motivation to change occupations, and motivation to upstage someone in some area of function. Pride is in fact defined in terms of Jealousy. ([Jam 3:14-16](#)) No one is ever Jealous without prior involvement in Pride which is inordinate or abnormal self-consciousness. Since Pride is an unrealistic and expanded opinion of self it

resides in the soul under normal circumstances in a state of contentment with the expanded image it has created. But when normal circumstances give way to the pressures of life, then Pride cannot stand the suppression caused by this pressure. The suppression of Pride cocks the trigger which when released it produces Jealousy, and potentially all other aspects Mental Attitude Arrogance and Mental Attitude Sins. ([Prov 26:12](#)) These Mental Attitude Sins which originate from Pride OR Jealousy are actually the greatest hindrance to the Christian way of life. This kind of a person is worse than the fool who simply goes back to his pleasures, he becomes a trouble-maker in any organization or group he may reside in.

### **Jealousy & Bitterness**

Jealousy always leads to [Bitterness](#) and Bitterness is actually a mental attitude which results from Jealousy. This is called Bitter Jealousy in Jam 3:14, because Jealousy and Bitterness are two sides of the same coin. Jealousy most often comes first and results in Bitterness. Bitterness is refusal to take the responsibility that the Jealousy came from one's own volition. Bitter Jealousy combined with [Inordinate Ambition](#) is one voluntarily pulling the pin of the Arrogance Grenade which inevitably results in a Fragmented Life. (Jam 3:14-16) Malice then is the desire and the motivation of the fragmented believer to inflict suffering and injury on others. Thus Malice is motivated by Jealousy, Bitterness, Hatred, and other Mental Attitude Sins. Therefore, one cannot entertain Jealousy without inevitably flipping to the other side of the coin and engaging in Bitterness which invariably consolidates [Denial](#) and [Projection](#). The first result of Bitter Jealous reaction is Denial, the second result is Projection. Bitterness is therefore, a projection which comes from Jealousy. Most failures in marriage are a result of unresolved Mental Attitude Sins. Bitterness in marriage results in the rapid decline from spiritual adulthood to loser believer which destroys any possibility of a successful marriage. Bitterness in marriage means that Personal Love is outside of the integrity envelope and no one can have Jealousy and Bitterness and at the same time capacity for true love. ([Col 3:19](#))

When under [Unrealistic Expectations](#), the believer blames others for the consequences of his own Jealousy, Bitterness, and other Mental Attitude Sins, even though he uses his own volition to pull the pin of his Arrogance Grenade and totally fragment his life. The Arrogance of subjectivity, Pride, is constantly trying to change other people to conform to one's unrealistic expectations. Consequently, having unrealistic expectations causes the believer to never realize that he can only change himself and no one else. This results in the use of a double standard formulated by self-righteous Arrogance to express Jealousy, Envy, Bitterness and other Mental Attitude Sins and to justify these expressions of sin in self while condemning them in others. ([James 3:14-16](#)) Therefore, Bitter Jealousy and selfish ambition result in a total function under Mental Attitude Arrogance where the believer is preoccupied with self to the extent that he rejects Bible Doctrine that he has previously understood, metabolized, and even applied.

According to the Greek of the New Testament Scripture, Bitterness is a term which really refers to a cluster of Mental Attitude Sins. There first must be Jealousy or Pride and these then lead into the myriad of other Mental Attitude Sins and all of these work together to motivate Revenge Tactics which starts a war against someone under operation vengeance. Bitterness and Jealousy always have an object and when one expresses either of them toward an object he intensifies his sinning thus produces other categories of sin which in effect are all trying to build one's happiness on someone else's unhappiness.

### **Jealousy & Blind Arrogance**

**Blind Arrogance** is characterized by total ignorance of one's status in Arrogance. It is the inflation of a person's opinion of himself beyond his true status under Arrogant Pride which inevitably results in Jealousy. Under this thin veneer of Pride lurks a multiplicity of inner Mental Attitude Sins, as counterparts to this unrecognized Pride, especially Jealousy along with a variety of morbid obsessions. Once these latent antagonisms are brought to the surface, they are expressed as Verbal and even Overt Sins.

### **Jealousy & Hypersensitivity**

**Hypersensitivity** is best described as a subjective Arrogance related to self. It is a **Self-righteous Arrogance** toward others and often manifests itself in the Arrogance of **Religious Legalism** and the function of many of the Mental Attitude Sins, especially Jealousy, Bitterness, Hatred, etc. While one's Mental Attitude Arrogance is invisible inside the soul, hypersensitivity is one manifestation of the presence of that Arrogance. Hypersensitivity motivated by Jealousy or Pride along with Self Righteous Arrogance is manifest in Gossip, Maligning, Judging and many other Mental and Verbal Sins. Sensitivity with regard to others is legitimate; sensitivity with regard to self is not legitimate. Grace Orientation and Grace Function takes care of sensitivity toward others allowing one to avoid the Mental Attitude Sins related to others. Instead, there is gentleness, thoughtfulness of others, courtesy and good manners, which is the "meekness" of the relaxed mental attitude in action. Thus this subjective thinking of hypersensitivity has manifestations involving all aspects of Mental Attitude Arrogance and its Mental Attitude Sins.

### **Jealousy & Suffering**

Self induced misery invariably results from engaging in Mental Attitude Sins and most often Divine Discipline never gets to the believer because of the intensity of his own self induced misery. It is from the functions of one's own soul that he brings upon self much of the misery and suffering he will endure in this life. This is the principle of how to make oneself totally miserable without really trying. (**Eccl 9:4-8**) When Bible Doctrine is not first priority in the believer's life then he is never going to reach a point of having Occupation with the Person of The Lord Jesus, The Christ, advanced Personal Love for God, and therefore any disaster situation is going to bring total misery to him. He will be "filled with his own devices", referring to the various Mental Attitude Sins especially Fear, Envy, Jealousy, Pride, etc. These

Mental Attitude Sins result in his falling apart, panicking under any type of pressure in life thus succumbing to his own devices.

[1John 5:16b](#) explains that while one is dying, he can still sin and this is the type of sin which intensifies the suffering in dying. This is a reference to sinning when you are in the death shadowed valley ([Ps 23:4](#)). When going through this “valley of death”, there are certain sins that one can commit face-to-face with dying that are going to make the journey unimaginably miserable including: Jealousy, Bitterness, Self-Pity, Fear, etc. These believers are those who sow to the wind and reap the tornado in their death-shadowed valley. Thus one aspect of the sin “face-to-face with death” is the believer creating for himself his very own dying misery in the death-shadowed valley God has provided for him. This is fair and final discipline for the reversionist believer, it is painful, and terminates in his physical death.

### **Jealousy vs Love**

There are 2 categories of Love, Personal Conditional Selective Love and Impersonal, Unconditional Universal Love. In the Greek these are differentiated by 2 different words:

- ▲ (gr) Philos = Personal Conditional Selective Love where those who are loved are selectively chosen from among all people and who have a close personal or intimate relationship with the “lover”.
  - ▼ It is based on some aspect of personal attraction or rapport with the one loved.
  - ▼ Thus it emphasizes the merit or attractiveness of the object to the subject.
  - ▼ It is extremely conditional and based totally on the attributes of the object.
  - ▼ It has no built-in or inherent virtue.
- ▲ (gr) agapao = Mental Attitude love, Impersonal, Unconditional Universal Love where those loved include ALL PEOPLE.
  - ▼ It infers freedom from all Mental Attitude Arrogance and Mental Attitude Sins regarding those loved.
  - ▼ It displayed by the believer is unconditional because of the Grace orientation which results from Metabolized Bible Doctrine accumulated into and resident in his soul.
  - ▼ It emphasizes the virtue of the subject not the attractiveness of the object or LACK of it.
  - ▼ It is unconditional not at all dependent on any attribute of the object.

This Impersonal, Unconditional Love perpetuates its own honor, its own integrity, its own virtue in every stage of the spiritual life, and it does so without Retaliation, Revenge, Prejudice, Discrimination, Pride, Hatred, Self-Righteousness, Self-Pity, Jealousy, Implacability, Vindictiveness, Slander, Gossip, Maligning, Manipulation, and without Judging. Impersonal, Unconditional Love has to be accompanied by Grace Orientation and Bible Doctrine Orientation, [Problem Solving Devices](#) #4 + #5. Impersonal, Unconditional Love begins to function on a more or less regular basis once the believer reaches the point of Spiritual Self Esteem as he enters into the stages of [Spiritual Adulthood](#). There can be no Impersonal, Unconditional Love where there is Reaction, Frustration, Retaliation, Revenge, etc.

### Personal Love Vulnerabilities

Personal Love minus the virtue of Impersonal, Unconditional Love is the weakest and most unstable status quo in life. It is vulnerable to the entire realm of both the Interlocking System of Arrogance and the Interlocking System of Antagonistic Emotional Hatred. Personal Love is especially vulnerable to Pride and Hypersensitivity in the Arrogance Complex. Impersonal, Unconditional Love is totally free from entanglement in the Interlocking System of Arrogance at any level. There is a strength and a weakness in category #2 love, Personal Love. ([SS 8:6+7](#)). The strength is the actual love itself, and the weakness, the great enemy, is the Mental Attitude Sins which can accompany it which are perfectly illustrated by Jealousy.

Personal Love is a system of human attraction which is related to and emphasizes the object of that attraction and is not virtuous in itself, because any person without virtue can fall in love or have a friend. Because Personal Love has no inherent virtue, it often results in vulnerability to the tragic flaws of life related to the degeneracy of the Interlocking System of Arrogance and apostasy of [Reversionism](#). Therefore, Personal Love can motivate the production of such failings as Jealousy, Bitterness, Vindictiveness, Self-Pity, Anger, Slander, [Self-Justification](#), Revenge, etc. In addition, Personal Love complicates life by combining the problems of two people, which intensifies the outside pressures of life. The weakness of Personal Love is generally related to the attraction stage and the object must remain attractive for Personal Love to be perpetuated. Therefore, Personal Love based on attraction always fades because ATTRACTIVENESS always fades with age. Lack of reciprocation in Personal Love frustrates it and causes Bitterness, Disillusion, Reaction, and Self-Justification.

Personal Love is manufactured from a human viewpoint in the mentality of the soul from one's emotion, lust, vanity, or the pattern of Christian degeneracy involving Mental Attitude Arrogance such as Jealousy from involvement in the Interlocking System of Arrogance. The instability of Personal Love is the source of many difficulties and problems in life, most of which are self-induced, such as:

- ▲ Conflict and antagonisms
- ▲ Pride and Jealousy
- ▲ Guilt
- ▲ Self-Pity and Hypersensitivity
- ▲ Disorientation to life and reality
- ▲ Marital incompatibilities
- ▲ Personal Interaction Antagonisms
- ▲ Self Induced Misery



Therefore, Personal Love in romance can be the motivation for Jealousy, Vanity, Bitterness, Hatred, Self-Pity, Implacability, [Guilt](#), Revenge and any other aspect of Mental Attitude Arrogance and Mental Attitude Sin. Illustration: falling in love with a member of the opposite sex is most often a matter of libido. Being physically attracted to someone or being motivated by libido is totally devoid of virtue and tantamount to following one's lusts. Libido is all too often devoid of conscience, and is therefore TOTALLY minus virtue and integrity, without a sense of responsibility, and is selfish and self-serving. For this very reason, Personal Love in romance or marriage often has no stability and no perpetuation and is extremely susceptible to Jealousy or any of the aspects of Mental Attitude Arrogance as Motivational Arrogance.

Therefore, Personal Love minus Impersonal, Unconditional Love can result in interlocking with all the aspects of the Arrogance complex, all the irrationality of the emotional complex of sins especially Vanity, Jealousy, Bitterness and Hatred and everything that makes life miserable for others as well as for oneself. Weak believers, lacking sufficient Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul, are subject to all the failings involving Personal Love with Jealousy being a prime example. Pride plus Jealousy = Insecurity therefore, these people tend to be possessive in any group and in any social situation. They feel inadequate and threatened by any form of attractiveness or scintillating personality that challenges them, and especially when everyone in the group is paying attention to someone else. Consequently, in their subjective Arrogance they call attention to themselves in a negative way as an expression of possessiveness and control resulting from their obvious Jealousy. Mental Attitude Arrogance with the Mental Attitude Sins like Jealousy destroy capacity for love. This is perfectly illustrated by the Northern Kingdom of Israel Historically which never had the basis or capacity to love God because it was founded on Jealousy of the Southern Kingdom. A kingdom or nation founded on [Motivational Arrogance](#) or [Emotional Revolt of the Soul](#) will invariably and inevitably destroy itself. There can never be true friendship or category #3 Personal Love where Mental Attitude Arrogance and Mental Attitude Sins exist.

When one holds a grudge, Retaliates, seeks Revenge, expresses Jealousy, Hatred, Vindictiveness, Implacability, or any aspect of Motivational Arrogance or Functional Arrogance in reprisal for perceived injustice he has abandoned his standards of Impersonal, Unconditional Love for the lower, Evil standards of his antagonist. Discord and contention come from Mental Attitude Arrogance and Mental Attitude Sins resulting in one not being able to control his thinking, and when he cannot control his thinking he becomes Jealous or displays some other aspect of Mental Attitude Arrogance. If one is Jealous of someone else it is the result of a lack of Self-Discipline and Spiritual Self Esteem and this lack in his soul causes him to attack the object of his Jealousy instead of directing Impersonal, Unconditional Love toward that object.

### Impersonal, Unconditional Love Strengths

Impersonal, Unconditional Love is manufactured from the wisdom derived from maximum metabolized bible doctrine accumulated in the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul of the LOVER. When the believer is under the Filling of God the Holy Spirit the love which is produced in the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul is totally free from Jealousy and all aspects of Arrogance. Impersonal, Unconditional Love is the only perpetual debt for the Christian because he always has the means of paying through Metabolized Bible Doctrine, Spiritual Advance and the Filling of God the Holy Spirit. This debt of Impersonal, Unconditional Love, denotes the duty of love which is a responsibility on the part of all members of the Royal Family of God. This Impersonal, Unconditional Love always includes a Relaxed Mental Attitude, total lack of Arrogance directed toward another believer, therefore no Mental Attitude Arrogance of Jealousy, Bitterness, or any other Mental Attitude Sin.

There is a legitimate love which is Impersonal, Unconditional Love which is based on one's character, integrity, and Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul and the Filling of God the Holy Spirit but it does not mean one is required to pretend to be a sweet jackass and allow himself to be pushed around. This love is a Relaxed Mental Attitude with freedom from all Mental Attitude Arrogance and Mental Attitude Sins. This Impersonal, Unconditional Love is true love directed toward ALL people and it is also HONOR and INTEGRITY. This true love must have a sense of sacrifice and be devoid of selfishness which includes Jealousy and Pettiness and other reactionary Mental Attitude Sins lest one's capacity for love be destroyed.

### Jealousy & Category 2 Love, Romance

While true category #2 love is said to be as strong as death and cannot be quenched by any pressure of life, death does destroy pseudo category #2 love and its resultant Mental Attitude Sins. (Eccl 9:5-6). These people cannot go back and remember the difficulties of life on earth, they did not live well and died poorly, and were full of Mental Attitude Sins, and therefore could not, even if they found their right man or right woman, enjoy them because they didn't have the capacity for true Personal Love. They were filled with Jealousy, Bitterness, and all other Mental Attitude Sins. When one tries to build category #2 love on Mental Attitude Sins the only thing he has to look forward to is dying because in dying he gets away from the illusion that he can love someone under category #2 and at the same time entertain Mental Attitude Sins. These people now are dead and they missed their opportunity for true love in life. Happiness from True Category #2 Personal Love is available even to unbelievers, and unbelievers in time when they find the right woman or the right man, and when they have the capacity for true love, have wonderful happiness together. But death for the individuals who lack capacity for true love cuts off the possibility of them ever knowing how wonderful category #2 love can be. Therefore, the only chance of ever knowing the incredible nature of category #2 love is to be free from Mental Attitude Arrogance and the resultant Mental Attitude Sins. In addition there are certain functions in life, often motivated by Mental

Attitude Arrogance and Mental Attitude Sins, which can destroy the allotted time to have any category of love. These include promiscuity or drug addiction, which is the chemical destruction of the soul and which destroys capacity for all categories of love. ([Eccl 3:8](#))

Jealousy as the strongest of all Mental Attitude Sins [Pride being the worst] ([Prov 27:3-4](#)) always motivates a person to revenge tactics thus destroying capacity for Love in any category. ([Prov6:34](#)) Jealousy rejects Bible teaching and Bible doctrine ([Acts 13:45](#), [Acts 17:5](#)) driving the believer into Reversionism which is a spiritual maladjustment always characterized by Jealousy. ([Rom 1:28-29](#); [James 3:14-16](#)) This opens the believer's soul to false doctrine which then enhances his Jealousy. ([1Tim 6:4](#)). Jealousy is said to be "as cruel as the grave" because the grave robs one of his loved ones and Jealousy has the same level of cruelty, when it robs him of the one he loves the most in category #2. Thus it is plain that Jealousy can destroy with finality the love between a right man and a right woman. Jealousy causes the same type of bereavement as death, except that one becomes hardened in his soul rather than soft. When one loses a loved one through death, he is tender and compassionate. However, when one loses a loved one as a result of Jealousy, he becomes hard and cruel. The principle of Right man / Right woman is something God designed in eternity past; but Jealousy is something the individual does to himself and he can foul up any aspect of Love with Jealousy and totally destroy God's design.

Category #2 love can produce an exclusive and perfect happiness which is self-sustaining and partner-sustaining ([Prov 15:17](#)), and it is protective even in the absence of right man, right woman relationship. ([SS 1:13](#), [SS 2:4](#), [SS 4:6](#)). It also illustrates relationship between believers and the Lord, in Israel ([Jer 2 & 3](#), [Ez 16 & 23](#)), in the Church Age ([Eph 5:23-33](#)) and therefore this also can be destroyed by Mental Attitude Arrogance and Mental Attitude Sins. ([1John 5:18](#))

### Jealousy & Category 3 Love, Friendship

The illustration of Joseph and his brothers ([Acts 7:9](#)) demonstrates that Jealousy is a motivator that destroys category #3 Personal Love relationships. Category #3 love provides pleasant and relaxing environment ([Prov 10:12](#)), but there can be no true friendship where Mental Attitude Arrogance and Mental Attitude Sins exist. Mental Attitude Arrogance and Mental Attitude Sins such as Jealousy, drive the individual into [Reversionism](#) where he becomes susceptible to Emotional Revolt of the Soul leading to [Psychosis](#) which makes it impossible to have true friends. ([Rom 13:10](#))

### Personal Conditional Love vs Impersonal, Unconditional Love

True love must be sensitive to the object of love and any love which is possessive is no love at

all. When one becomes possessive and Jealous, inevitably he destroys the wonderful love he could have. Just as with everything in life, Love does not stand still and is either moving forward or backward so that those close to one are loved either more or less than before. Being possessive about loving strangles and smothers love and possessive lovers are like uncontrollable horses and this is a true tragedy.

Personal Love intensifies the difficulties in intimate human interaction resulting in Disillusion, the [Feet of Clay Syndrome](#), Jealousy, and Disappointment in the object of Personal Love. A man has many things to give a woman but if he is going to give from the ultimate source of himself he must start from what he is in his mind, with what he thinks. Therefore, in marriage, the husband must give from the ultimate source of his mental attitude. This means that no man can have the capabilities of being a good lover until he excludes from his mind such things as Jealousy, Envy, Pride, Hatred, [Egotism](#), Self-Pity, Childishness, etc. Therefore, it is absolutely imperative, as a basic development toward capacity for love, to be free from Mental Attitude Arrogance and Mental Attitude Sins because they are the destroyers of Grace and the capacity for love.

[Impersonal, Unconditional Love](#) is only a virtue when it is directed toward all mankind. Impersonal, Unconditional Love is only manufactured inside the Divine Dynasphere, the Power System of God, from Perception, Cognition, Incultation and Metabolization of Bible doctrine. But it isn't the perception that manufactures the Impersonal, Unconditional Love, the perception of doctrine manufactures the Personal Love toward God which motivates as Motivational Virtue the development of Impersonal, Unconditional Love. The principle is that Impersonal, Unconditional Love is not sustained by the object of love but by the doctrinal content in, the Integrity of, the soul of the LOVER. Impersonal, Unconditional Love functions whether the object person is attractive or not, therefore Impersonal, Unconditional Love does not depend on rapport with the object nor the attractiveness of the object fulfilling the Norms and Standards of the Lover. For this reason Impersonal, Unconditional Love is a virtue, and it is to be directed toward all mankind. It cannot be corrupted or deceived by flattery or emotion or approbation nor exploited by Arrogance. In other words, Impersonal, Unconditional Love is a relaxed mental attitude derived from spiritual momentum in the Divine Dynasphere. But more than that, it is the application of Metabolized Bible Doctrine to people in widely varying circumstances. Therefore, Impersonal, Unconditional Love becomes the antithesis of Mental Attitude Arrogance. Therefore, the object of Impersonal, Unconditional Love can be an enemy or a friend, a person who is unworthy or worthy, a person who is attractive or unattractive, a person who is virtuous or Evil. In addition, Impersonal, Unconditional Love functions consistently whether faced with animosity and antagonism on the one hand or love and

admiration on the other hand. Just having this stable base of Impersonal, Unconditional Love means that one has the ability not to be distracted in his Christian life functions by people.

With the initiation of Jealousy where one may have once said, “I love you”, now there comes the expression of various aspects of Evil; because Jealousy is simply Arrogance and Jealousy and all Mental Attitude Arrogance is simply Motivating Evil or Motivational Arrogance. Therefore, whether it is Jealousy, Bitterness, Vindictiveness, Implacability, Revenge or Hatred, where once there were the allegations of love, now there exists only Arrogant reaction. This is an excellent illustration of the fact that there is no virtue in Personal Love. The virtue resides only in Impersonal, Unconditional Love. Solving the problems of life related to people and circumstances demands the possession of virtue, for it is the virtue of Impersonal, Unconditional Love that forms the base for solving life’s problems. Virtue eliminates all Arrogance and is Motivational directed toward God which stimulates the development of Functional Virtue directed toward mankind including, as a primary aspect, Impersonal Unconditional Love for Mankind. Personal Love for God in one’s soul cannot co-exist with any aspect of Arrogance. To the extent that one entertains Jealousy or Bitterness, he has no respect for God. To the extent one enters into Mental Attitude Arrogance or Mental Attitude Sins he enters into irrationality and does not have respect for God. This, in itself, destroys any possibility of fulfilling the spiritual life and possessing capacity for Personal Love because these people are irrational people and cannot love.

### **Jealousy & Relationships**

Jealousy is related to and integrated with many aspects of Arrogance but basically it involves FEAR:

- ▲ Fear of losing another’s affection or love
- ▲ Fear of rivalry
- ▲ Fear of unfaithfulness
- ▲ Fear of being thought 2nd best
- ▲ Fear of being a “Have – Not”

This is the reason Jealousy is anti-freedom; Jealousy does not permit people to love from their own volition. Jealousy intrudes into the privacy of others and becomes destructive of human freedom and demands love and attention based on the Lover’s volition, not on the volition of loved one. Therefore, Jealousy is possessiveness which stifles the volition of another person; therefore, Jealousy is tyranny and anti-freedom.

There are three basic enemies or destroyers of marriage: Jealousy, Bitterness and Anger. These 3 represent all the emotional sins and all aspects of Motivational Arrogance. Involvement in



the Interlocking System of Arrogance is actually the greatest destroyer of marriage, not the “other man” or “other woman”. Adultery is a bonifide basis for divorce ([Matt 5:32](#), [Matt 19:9](#), [Luke 16:18](#)), because adultery destroys the compatibility between the husband and wife, both in the soul and in the body and it invariably also results in Jealousy which destroys the marriage relationship. As part of Mental Attitude Arrogance Jealousy is related to Hatred. Jealousy is irrational in its Hatred and resentment of others. Jealousy can be considered “mood” Arrogance; hence this individual is troubled by suspicion that a person’s love has been diverted to a rival. Jealousy as part of Motivational Arrogance becomes the motivator all aspects of Arrogance and Antagonism the 2 parts of the Cosmic Dynaspheres.

In [SS 8:6](#), the Mental Attitude Sin of Jealousy deprives one of capacity for true love. Mental Attitude Sins attack all forms of true love and destroy capacity for love in any category. In [1John 5:18](#), the believer is said to have the “right God”; he is “born again” into the Royal Family of God, but if he has Mental Attitude Sins, he will not appreciate God and not be able to develop a Personal Love for God.

Jealousy is the basis for [Inordinate Competition](#) in love, in family relationships, business relationships, social life, athletics, professional life, and in religious or spiritual life. Jealousy is discontentment with the blessings, successes, or status symbols of other people. It is resentment of the attractiveness or approbation that a person receives. It is total selfishness and is incapable of true love. Jealousy plus power and approbation lust produces strife, [Conspiracy](#) and [Revolution](#). Therefore, Jealousy is more than a mental attitude sin, it is a saturating Mental Attitude which demands exclusive devotion and is intolerant of rivalry; it motivates for and interlocks into a huge complex of Arrogance and Sin.

Whenever people are not treated or loved the way they want to be treated and loved by other people, they develop ingrained frustration. This frustration leads to an illegitimate move to another church, another job or another spouse and is based totally on false application. This frustration makes them emphasize relationships with people over relationship with God. Such people never stop searching; they’re always looking for that one individual, group, job or social life where they will be treated the way they want to be treated. As a result, their lives are very unstable. Virtue-Love is brought into focus at this point as Personal Love for God and Occupation with the Person of The Lord Jesus, The Christ, plus Impersonal Unconditional Love for Mankind, which takes up the slack for the frustrations and reactions of Arrogance, IF the individual has been consistent in his Post Salvation Epistemological Rehabilitation. This kind of frustration becomes a major motivation in the life of these people. People select their

relationships and associations based on the frustration of not being treated or loved the way they want. They select their local church, personal love relationships, social life, and occupation on the same basis. This results in tremendous instability in the life. It is only the [Functional Virtue](#) of Impersonal Unconditional Love for Mankind with its underlying [Impact Virtues](#) which can provide capacity for relationships with people under such categories as Christian fellowship, friendship, romance, and marriage. In all human relationships one must establish and function strictly under a principle related to privacy of the individual. One cannot change another person, the only person he can change is himself. One cannot and usually will not get fulfillment from any other person of his unrealistic or even realistic expectations. People possess and will always demonstrate some flaw or failure that will disappoint. The attempts at trying to change another person to align with one's own desire for treatment or love only intensifies the problems of that relationship and invariably NOTHING IS SOLVED. The Old Sin Nature solution to these things is to go out and find people who will treat one in the desired manner, and find people with whom one is compatible. However, this only intensifies his problem because he will always be disappointed by people until he attains Virtue Love with Personal Love for God and Impersonal Unconditional Love for Mankind. The believer must develop and deploy the [Advanced Problem Solving Devices](#) of a Personal Sense of Destiny, Sharing the Happiness of God and Occupation with the Person of The Lord Jesus, The Christ in order to establish and maintain proper relationships with people and avoid Jealousy and all Mental Attitude Arrogance and Functional Arrogance.

To pretend to be friendly and to have the Motivational Arrogance of Mental Attitude Arrogance is sheer unadulterated hypocrisy. One cannot build happiness on someone else's unhappiness, as in the case of the Jealousy, illustrated by the resultant maligning and accusation of Shadrach, Meschach and Abednigo. Like the problems in marriage, the problems in personality conflict are caused by Arrogance, which includes Jealousy and all other aspects of Mental Attitude Arrogance, along with many parts of Functional Arrogance. Therefore, when one is involved in personality conflict with another believer, he must evaluate his own life. The development and deploying of the Advanced Problem Solving Devices, will help the believer to avoid personality conflicts IF he applies them.

### **Jealousy & Stress**

Stress in the soul amplifies any involvement in the Interlocking System of Arrogance or the Interlocking System of Antagonistic Emotional Hatred with the Arrogance complex of sins and Emotional complex of sins. Jealousy becomes operational, motivated by increased stress in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul, and then manifests itself in many forms of Arrogance, Antagonism and Sin including. There are people who will do nice things for another but who

resent doing them. When the recipient recognizes the resentment and IF the givers Jealousy, Bitterness and other aspects of Mental Attitude Arrogance overflow to the recipient then IF he continues to associate with the giver over a long period of time the stress will cause the recipient to become just like the giver is. He will enter into and maintain his residence in the Interlocking System of Arrogance and Interlocking System of Antagonistic Emotional Hatred.

There is a strong point of doctrine relating to mental stress and physical health which says that the quickest way to lose one's good health is through engaging constantly in Mental Attitude Arrogance and its Mental Attitude Sins. ([Prov 14:30](#)) The positive believer who accumulates a maximum level of Bible Doctrine into his soul is going to have good health because the mind is free from those things that destroy health, Motivational Arrogance of Mental Attitude Arrogance and Mental Attitude Sins. These failings destroy health because the pressures of the mind overflow into the body and disrupt its physiological functions.

### **Jealousy & Psychosis**

Jealousy when it persists eventually leads to mental illness in the Jealous person. This Jealous person becomes critical, vindictive, implacable, petty, etc., involved deeply in Mental Attitude Arrogance and Mental Attitude Sins and as a result they destroy their own soul. The principle is that one cannot maintain residence and function under the principles of the Interlocking System of Arrogance or Interlocking System of Antagonistic Emotional Hatred and be sane at the same time. ([Rom 12:3](#))

It is possible for the believer to have 2 distinctly separate personalities, one legalistic and one antinomian following the both of the trends of the Old Sin Nature. It is also possible for the believer to develop 2 distinct personalities based on whether he is functioning in his soul under the control of God the Holy Spirit or the control of his Old Sin Nature. This is the believer who has a split personality and the believer like any other person who is plagued by mental illness may have as many as 100 personality states. "PERSONALITY" is defined in psychology as the function of the soul in thinking about one's environment and one's self in relationship to that environment. Therefore, [Dissociation](#) results in two or more personalities existing in one person where that person thinks of self in relationship to his environment in distinctly different ways. This is a pattern which develops over some period of time, frequently as the result of abuse in childhood. This creation of multiple personalities is a defense mechanism to retreat from the reality of abuse and neglect. The resultant prolonged Bitterness, Vindictiveness, Anger, Implacability, or Hatred which occurs in the soul opens the door to the outside pressures of adversity being converted into stress in the soul. This weakens the soul and is the beginning of the destruction for the believer of his spiritual life and development of Christian psychosis. Prolonged Old Sin Nature control of the soul also opens the door to stress in the soul and enters the believer into the stages of [Reversionism](#) which also leads to dissociative multiple personality disorder.

Psychopathic believers are characterized by the saturation with Motivational Arrogance with its Mental Attitude Arrogance and Mental Attitude Sins, and they express this especially their Jealousy, Hatred, fear and anxiety through Functional Arrogance and are constantly seeking Revenge. Some believers, whose function under Mental Attitude Arrogance within the Interlocking System of Arrogance is unchecked become prone to manic depressive or schizophrenic activity. In some cases, they become so frustrated and disoriented to reality they commit suicide. Suicide is a maximum expression of Mental Attitude Arrogance but it does not cancel the salvation of the believer. In pulling the pin of the Arrogance Grenade some believers will take their own lives motivated by their Motivational Arrogance of Mental Attitude Arrogance.

Psychiatry has developed a whole system of giving people a means of [Self-Justification](#) for their sociopathic and psychopathic behavior, but there is no real justification for any of this. All psychopathic behavior is a matter of one's own decisions. It can begin with Jealousy leading to Self-Pity when under pressure followed by the wide emotional swing to Self-Righteousness in prosperity. It is often the continuous swinging between these two areas of Arrogance which causes an intensification of Stress in the soul that results in some level of psychosis or neurosis.

Jealousy inevitably divorces the person from reality and leads to total stupidity, ignorance, and irrationality. Jealousy creates adversity and the person involved in Jealousy has already converted that adversity into stress in their soul which perpetuates Old Sin Nature control of the soul and frequently results in dissociation of the personality. In addition, the person who is the victim of Jealousy can also convert this outside pressure into stress in his soul. Jealousy desires love based on the [Demand Syndrome](#) and as such is one of the quickest ways to become a psychotic believer.

### [Jealousy & Self-Justification](#)

The process of involvement in the [Arrogance Skills](#) with Self-Justification removes the believer from reality and contributes to the status of the psychotic Christian. The function of Self-Justification includes the acquiescing to temptations from the Old Sin Nature initiated by the lust pattern. This is using Jealousy as justification for vilification, reaction to real or imagined wrongs with Hatred, Bitterness, Implacability, Self-Pity, Revenge, Unfaithfulness or Fornication even Murder. The more reactionary sins one accumulates in his soul, the greater the stress factor in the soul, and these two form a psychotic or neurotic believer. These functions of Self-Justification are involvement under the influence of Evil in the Arrogance Skills of the Interlocking System of Arrogance. They intensify the spiritual failures of the person who has been wronged, not the person who committed the wrong. The functions under Self-Justification divorce this believer from reality and result in a split personality from dissociation. Therefore, one can justify Mental Attitude Arrogance and Functional Arrogance by blaming someone else who from his perspective has been cruel, unkind, unfaithful, or hostile without a cause.

Sometimes this is imagined; sometimes it is a reality however, the resulting effect is the same. The only difference is that if one has not really been wronged but only thought that he was being under Hypersensitivity, then he has taken a second step in divorcing self from reality, which is one step closer to becoming a Christian psychotic.

### **Jealousy & the Laws of Divine Establishment**

The [Laws of Divine Establishment](#) are designed by God for both believer and unbeliever in order to protect and preserve the Human Race in this world now ruled by Satan. They are basic laws of freedom which permit Evangelism, Bible teaching, and Missionary activity. The Laws of Divine Establishment balance freedom and authority so that the axiom is, Freedom without Authority is anarchy; Authority without Freedom is tyranny. The unbeliever involved in anti-establishment functions or activities is described in [Rom 1:28-32](#) and [2Tim 3:2-7](#).

Authority Arrogance one of the greatest enemies of freedom, privacy, property, and life. Privacy is destroyed through verbal and overt sinning such as gossip, maligning, judging, which stems from Mental Attitude Sins such as Jealousy, Bitterness, Vindictiveness, and Hatred. Freedom is destroyed through the malfunction of the Divine Institutions in the attack of Arrogance on Authority. In addition, inequality is the greatest challenge in life and therefore, it boils down to the fact that Arrogance in whatever form it exists, fails to adjust to life and therefore Arrogance fails to adjust to inequality. Reality is that inequality in life is the normal status quo and should not present any problem in life for anyone. Inequality certainly DOES NOT demand nor require legislation to alleviate or correct it. As the NORM in the self-justification process of Human Life INEQUALITY must and should demand personal motivation from the individual. The Jealousy of those who have succeeded where one has not, results in Mental Attitude Arrogance with its Mental Attitude Sins, all which obviously are attitudes which allow one to be completely defeated by inequality.

Liberals and socialists put forth and promote the idea that great success in life and the existence of royalty are part of Evil; that members of the nobility should feel guilty about having privileges; that the thinking of aristocrats is Arrogance, greed, insensitivity to others and tyranny. But the opposite has been historically shown to be true. Socialism is Arrogance. Socialism refuses to admit the existence of the Old Sin Nature in every human being, and it champions sin, human good productions apart from God, and every imaginable aspect of Evil. As a means of gaining power for a few elite individuals, it encourages and foment the sins of Jealousy, Greed, and all other Mental Attitude Sins from Mental Attitude Arrogance and drives the masses of people to violence as those who arrogantly presume themselves to deserve something for nothing. To those who do not understand human freedom or appreciate the proper function of man's soul, socialism sounds good; equality and prosperity for all, ends which it has historically been shown to NEVER ACHIEVE!

Another anti-establishment concept which is hugely detrimental to any society is deeply



ingrained prejudice. Prejudice is a pattern of preconceived opinions excluding reason or fair discernment of facts. Prejudice is a manifestation of intensive Jealousy and Pettiness motivated by entanglement in all aspects of Mental Attitude Arrogance. Intolerant people are quick to believe hearsay, especially when it is damaging to others because this always makes them appear to be superior to these others and such prejudice, whether it is carefully ingrained or superficially acquired, is extremely difficult to overcome.

Stephen in speaking to the Sanhedrin, who, when they thought of Egypt thought in terms of slavery, but because of their Jealousy of Christ were in fact in slavery or bondage themselves to Evil and its Religion. As a result they failed to operate properly as a supreme court and administer justice as was clearly illustrated by the execution of The Lord Jesus the Christ and the martyrdom of Stephen. They were driven by their lust to maintain their supremacy as leaders of Israel even to the point of rejecting the Plan of God.

### Jealousy & Authority

Jealousy of authority ([Acts 7:9](#)) motivates the individual to function under the influence of Evil in Functional Arrogance. Joseph's brothers, because of their Jealousy of his authority, were motivated to sell him into slavery. Jealousy can and often does disrupt normal functions even splits organizations and Jealousy actually split the nation Israel which devolved into the northern and the southern kingdoms because of Jealousy ([Is 11:13](#)).

### Jealousy & Conspiracy & Revolution

Evil as the plan and policy of Satan is a reaction and antagonism to all aspects of Bible Doctrine including the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions. Impetus which comes from Evil for conspiracy and revolution results from involvement in Motivational Arrogance as Mental Attitude Arrogance and its accompanying Mental Attitude Sins and is very often driven by the Lust Patterns of the Old Sin Nature for power or approbation. ([Jude 11](#))

Therefore, Jealousy very often causes revolution. Again, it was the Jealousy of Ephraim which split the nation of Israel. ([Is 11:13](#)) When Jealousy, Hatred and all aspects of antagonism from Mental Attitude Arrogance are aroused it inspires [Revolution](#) often through Socialism as is occurring in the United States of America today. Jealousy is a dominate part of the Arrogance complex and the derived Guilt from Inordinate Ambition wants to conquer or control all those who are greater or more prosperous. This is what often results in [Conspiracy](#), Revolution and ultimately War. Therefore it is Jealousy from Mental Attitude Arrogance which initiates conspiracy.

Conspiratorial [Criminals](#) at all levels have never learned the most basic principle of life; If God does not promote one then he is not promoted and If God does not demote one then he is not demoted and NO ONE CAN DEMOTE HIM based on any aspect of conspiracy or revolution. The fact is that when God promotes a person there is nothing in this world that can demote him. Inevitably the attempts by individuals or groups to demote others is usually from Arrogant Jealousy. Trying to demote a person who has been promoted by God will invariably and inevitably bring incredible Divine Discipline to all those involved.

SINCERE Human Good is where man by his own efforts, mentality, power and authority seeks to solve the problems of life. This sincerity often drives people individually and in groups to conspiracy and revolution. ([Gen 49:6](#)) These people are called plotters and their secret plotting is always underhanded, always working secretly behind someone's back, and this is the expression of their Mental Attitude Arrogance involving Jealousy, Cruelty, Implacability and Hatred. They persist in attempting to make others completely miserable and work each other up into an irrational frenzy when they get together and talk about some supposed "bad" occurrences. Then, when the object of their focus walks into their periphery they both mentally and verbally completely destroy them with their irrationality.

There are 2 Factors are involved with Conspiracy Arrogance:

- ▲ A total sense of inadequacy
- ▲ A keen sense of competitiveness

In the competitiveness there is an attempt to compensate for the lack in one's inadequacy by criticizing, maligning or judging others. The people who try to improve self by engaging in this pattern of function inevitably become involved in conspiracy Arrogance. It is the Jealousy of others as Motivational Arrogance which impels them to criticize or malign these others or to attempt to destroy the one who has achieved greater than they have. This is the attempt of the inadequate to destroy the achievers in the Mutual Admiration Society which is a combination of Arrogant and Inadequate individuals. This is an organization where the weak attack the strong to destroy them. This is their function under Evil influence and motivation in combination with the Pseudo Love which holds them together. Thus, Evil influence makes strange bedfellows, combining in pseudo love as opposites in personality for the expression of their mutual Jealousy, Pride, Hatred, Bitterness, Implacability and Vindictiveness. People LOVE to discredit others because they are Jealous of them and they also love to discredit others because of personality conflicts driven by their Jealousy which leads to Vindictiveness and Implacability which also is Mental Attitude Arrogance.

The believer who puts himself under the influence of Evil by functioning persistently under [Negative Volition](#) toward Bible Doctrine and the Protocol Plan of God driving himself deeply into the Interlocking System of Arrogance and down through the stages of [Reversionism](#) when he reaches [Reverse Process Reversionism](#) is saturated with frustration which produces factions and antagonisms. These factions cause believers to attempt to establish themselves as an authority in some area. These believers often distort doctrine or Scripture to attack or discredit the authority or ministry of the pastor. On the basis of the Scriptures which they distort, they then gain others as adherents to their ideas, who are not aware of the motivation from

Jealousy behind the distorted principles of doctrine being used by them only to gain authority. The result is revolution in the congregation of a local church.

The Word of God does not ever justify revolution. ([Rom 13:1-7](#); [1Pet 2:13-14](#); [Num 16](#)) Revolution involves lawless uncontrolled mobs of people which can neither think nor achieve anything compatible with the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions. Revolution invariably results from the Apostasy of Reversionism and thus a lack of Bible doctrine, ([Is 1:3-5](#); [Is 59:13](#)), therefore, all Revolution is anti-God. ([Is 31:6](#)) Revolution is caused by a failure of proper function in the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul, ([Jer 5:23](#)) therefore, the revolutionist always suffers from an [Emotional Revolt of the Soul](#). Revolution, or any revolt against authority, always has a motivator driven by the lust pattern of the Old Sin Nature with Jealousy as a prime motivator. ([Is 11:13](#), [1Kings 12:19](#), [2Chron 10:19](#)) Therefore, it is only the accurate communication of Bible Doctrine which is designed to stop revolution. ([Ez 22:3-10](#)) Therefore, Heathenism is often the result of revolution, ([Rom 1:19-26](#)) where the revolution results in the degeneracy of involvement in the Interlocking System of Arrogance. ([Rom 1:27-32](#))

In summary regarding revolution, it is approbation and power lust from the Old Sin Nature which seeks to gain power by the destruction of authority, individual and collective rights, freedom, privacy and property. Jealousy is the motivator from Mental Attitude Arrogance and inevitably involves the degradation of the individual in Reversionism into Emotional Revolt of the Soul. Therefore, revolution is a brilliant Satanic device in the Angelic Conflict Appeal Trial to establish or maintain his cosmic kingdom and superimpose his will over human beings. The principle of revolution is therefore, the function of Reversionism derived from Approbation and Power lust implemented by Mental Attitude Arrogance and Mental Attitude Sin clusters as a result of Jealousy, and thereby destroys the freedom, rights, privacy, property and often even the life of individuals.

The French Revolution, for example, was a conflagration of trends from Evil that had crystallized in the long reign of Louis XIV. The Sun King, as he was called, destroyed the pivot of mature believers in France by revoking the Edict of Nantes and, furthermore, reduced the French aristocracy to sycophantic courtiers. The disappearance of a spiritual pivot and the absence of a vigorous aristocracy destabilized every level of society. As a result, unrestrained middle-class Jealousy incited lower-class violence. Ultimately, French society was destroyed in the Reign of Terror, and a new order was established under Napoleon Bonaparte. The Russian Revolution also vented the Evil that had built up for many years before overt violence broke out. Therefore, motivation for revolution is always from Evil and is derived from Motivational Arrogance of Mental Attitude Arrogance with Mental Attitude Sins such as Jealousy,

Vindictiveness, Implacability, etc., and this stems from the Lust pattern of the Old Sin Nature stimulating the trends of the Old Sin Nature resulting in temptation to revolt to assuage the power and / or approbation lust; OR it can be derived from Evil as a SINCERE desire to do good things to solve the problems of the Human Race.

### **Jealousy & Murder**

There is a very close relationship between the violence of **Murder** and the violence which occurs in the soul as reaction from Jealousy, Hatred, Bitterness, Vindictiveness, etc., and murder begins first as a Mental Attitude Sin derived from Jealousy + Hatred.

Every criminal is arrogant and totally **inflexible** about self and totally preoccupied with self to the exclusion of any form of law or any **Establishment** or **Divine Institution** principle. Therefore, Mental Attitude Arrogance is the motivation of the criminal personality. Remember the criminal is a walking Arrogance Grenade and he pulls the pin of his Arrogance and then keeps it out. Therefore his soul, personality and functions are constantly exploding and his pin is the Mental Attitude Arrogance involving Jealousy, Bitterness, Vindictiveness, Hatred, Self-Pity, etc. No argument, persuasion, reason, logic, or even punishment can modify the inflexible and subjective Arrogance of the criminal, for he rejects all authority in fear of entering the zero state and becoming a nothing.

Murder is crime as a violation of the Laws of Divine Establishment and a sin from **Emotional Revolt of the Soul** and Murder is related to sins that are emotional, Jealousy, Bitterness, Frustration, Vindictiveness, etc. The bible describes murder as “Hands that shed innocent blood” and thus indicates that Christians can and do commit homicide. The murderer weaves his way through a path involving Mental Attitude Arrogance and Mental Attitude Sins culminating in murder. (**Prov 6:17**) When a person has the **Lust** to kill they are completely disoriented to certain principles in life, and the lust to kill is always based on Mental Attitude Arrogance and Mental Attitude Sin especially Jealousy. When the lust pattern of the Old Sin Nature is frustrated and not assuaged, it intensifies the driving lust pushing the individual forcefully into a cycling in Reversionism under the **Frantic Search for Happiness** moving him deeply into reversionism to the point of **Reverse Process Reversionism**. The reversionist is in a constant state of frustration; he keeps on lusting and he does not have. So when he is constantly frustrated, he kills that which is frustrating him, he MURDERS! This is a maximum attempt under reversionism to assuage lusts by gaining the desired wealth or power or gratification of some other inordinate desire.

Murder, therefore, is the overt sin and crime driven by the strongest Mental Attitude Sin of Jealousy. Both are vicious sins derived from the strongest influence of Evil and anything one acquires based on Jealousy, Murder or any aspect of assuaging lust will never bring any level of true happiness. Therefore, Envy or Jealousy is a ghastly aspect of Mental Attitude Arrogance as Mental Attitude Sin and the religious leaders of Israel were so Jealous of Jesus Christ and they conspired to kill Him because of their Jealousy driven by their lust to maintain their

power and position in Israel. Therefore, in effect, Jealousy has two weapons of assassination, one is the tongue through verbal sins and the other is violence resulting in Murder. ([Matt 27:18](#)) Therefore, Murder is always preceded by Mental Attitude Arrogance and the Mental Attitude Sins especially Jealousy. ([Rom 1:29](#), [Gal 5:21](#))

### **Jealousy & Ambition**

If God doesn't promote the believer, HE IS NOT promoted, PERIOD. He can only be promoted through residence, function, and momentum inside the [Power System of God](#), the Protocol Plan of God, the Divine Dynasphere. [Inordinate Competition](#) can be found in social, sexual, and spiritual spheres of life and is a sign of Mental Attitude Arrogance involving Jealousy, Pride, Insecurity, etc. The inordinate competitor is insecure socially, sexually and spiritually. The believer MUST recognize that his promotion is in the hands of the Lord and is always based on Grace; it is a sovereign decision; and he must at all costs avoid seeking to promote himself. He also must consistently avoid the Mental Attitude Sin of Jealousy toward those whom God has promoted. The believer's only job is to be faithful to the Lord.

The principle of divine promotion is addressed in [Josh 3:7](#); [1Peter 5:5-6](#). John the Baptist said to the religious crowd that they were complaining about the type of success that Jesus is having but no one has this type of success unless it comes from heaven. He said that the source of this divine promotion is the sovereignty of God. If the ministry of Jesus is increasing and the ministry of John the Baptist is decreasing this is God's business, not John's, not the religious crowd's, and not that of John's disciples. John's job is to remain faithful and to be stabilized through Metabolized Bible Doctrine and oriented to Grace. Therefore, all promotions for believers come from reciprocity, Reciprocal Love for God motivation derived from the accumulation of maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul. Therefore the only believer who is ever promoted is one who is strongly Grace Oriented and God never promotes a believer functioning under any aspect of Mental Attitude Arrogance and its Mental Attitude Sins.

Where motivation for Christian service and good deeds includes any aspect of involvement in the Interlocking System of Arrogance driven by the lust pattern of the Old Sin Nature, the result is always "dead works", Human Good production under the driving principles of Evil. The believer must never attempt function in Christian service to produce in the Christian Way of Life until the advanced skills of the Christian way of life are developed as the [10 Problem Solving Devices](#) and he has reached advanced Spiritual Adulthood or [Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God](#). The principle of Christian Service is that Achievement belongs to God; happiness belongs to the believer. This principle is only true when the believer is functioning consistently within the Divine Dynasphere the [Power System of God](#), so that the believer living inside the Divine Dynasphere will have degrees of happiness compatible with his spiritual growth. But the believer living in the Cosmic Dynaspheres will be confused and bored,



basically miserable. Within the Cosmic Dynaspheres he will try to achieve by his own ability and by his own wiles, which inevitably results in temporary success but overall failure. He fails to recognize that if he advances in the Divine Dynasphere where God will promote him then he has really achieved and that this is permanent achievement. Achievement is like human life: they both belong to God and God will only give achievement when the believer advances to a point where his achievement is compatible with his capacity, so that his achievement will not make him miserable. ([Luke 14:11](#))

Self-Exaltation, Self-Promotion, includes all the facets of Mental Attitude Arrogance and drives the individual believer into [Christian Activism](#). Christian service performed from residing in the Cosmic Dynaspheres glorifies self, while the same Christian service performed while residing in the Divine Dynasphere glorifies God. So the difference is not what one does in his service, but where he resides when he is doing it and what is in control of his soul at that time, the Old Sin Nature or God the Holy Spirit.

### **Jealousy & Malice**

The term “malice” (gr) kakia often is translated “wickedness” is actually referring to a secondary mental attitude which is derived from Jealousy. Therefore, Jealousy leading to malice describes a systematic mental attitude antagonism toward another person. Jealousy is the motivation which causes a person to malign or gossip or vindictively criticize another person. Very often pressure put on one’s Pride results in Jealousy, which motivates lying and [Self Deception](#) and people who consistently lie are unstable and destructive to their own soul. Being a rejected person, one cannot become subjective about others without becoming subjective about self, and above all, about Bible doctrine. Subjective Arrogance grows under the pressure of rejection so that Bible doctrine is distorted to [Justify Self](#) under the Arrogance Skills. By this means this believer enters into a system of Malice which is the intense desire to hurt or inflict suffering on the apparent or real rejector, the object of one’s Jealousy.

There is some level of maligning which is first engaged as a Mental Attitude Sin and which then expresses itself as a Verbal Sin, which is deliberate, malice of forethought, and which has as its content either known facts, or facts not actually known, but in either case one is still willing out of Jealousy, Hatred or Bitterness to assassinate the character of another. Therefore, Malice is the function from the motivation and desire of the fragmented believer to inflict suffering on others. It is activated by the pins of the Arrogance Grenade being pulled initially as [Motivational Arrogance](#) and inevitably resulting in [Functional Arrogance](#). The believer has the mandate to utilize the [Problem Solving Devices](#), which are necessary to recover from the fragmented life and cease his involvement in Malice and recover from his Jealousy. ([Titus 3:3](#), [Eph 4:31](#))

### **Jealousy & Revenge**

The Mental Attitude Sins of Jealousy or Bitterness motivate overt **Revenge** tactics. In other words, one can start from different Mental Attitude Sins, which then lead to a series of activities whereby the Jealousy or Bitterness must be expressed and are often expressed in Revenge. Jealousy and Bitterness are therefore Motivation for Revenge and they always have an object and when either is expressed toward an object the sinning involved is vastly intensified. Under the intensification of these sins one then produces sins of Vengeance and various types of social sins. In effect, all of these expressions of Jealousy are designed to try to build happiness on someone else's unhappiness, an impossible effort at best.

### **Jealousy vs Unity**

Emphasis on people rather than on Bible doctrine, especially the mystery doctrine of the Church Age, has destroyed unity among members of the Royal Family of God, the body of Christ. Unity regarding the Christian Way of Life is defined in five different ways:

- ▲ It is the status of being combined with other believers to form a greater whole.
  - ▼ The Church Age believer has been combined with other believers through the Baptism of God the Holy Spirit at the moment of salvation placing each into union with Christ positionally and forming all into the Royal Family of God.
- ▲ It is the status of being harmonious with other members of the Royal Family of God.
- ▲ It is the state of being complete as part of the Royal Family of God.
  - ▼ This means execution of the Protocol Plan of God and becoming an invisible hero.
    - A maximum number of invisible heroes in the pivot of the nation not only changes the nation, but it also provides a tremendous amount of toleration among believers.
- ▲ It is complete accord among believers regarding divine viewpoint concerning the mystery doctrines of the Church Age.
  - ▼ This is NOT necessarily complete agreement about other aspects of life, but it does mean there is a general consensus about divine viewpoint in these areas among mature believers.
- ▲ It is complete unanimity among believers regarding mental attitudes, motivations, decisions, and actions related to the Protocol Plan of God.
  - ▼ This is the absence of prolonged fragmentation of the Spiritual Life, the general overall absence Motivational Arrogance and Functional Arrogance.

The two greatest enemies of unity among the members of the body of Christ which always bring fragmentation to the Spiritual Life are ignorance of Bible Doctrine and prolonged life in the Cosmic Dynaspheres especially the Interlocking System of Arrogance. Ignorance of Bible Doctrine is the cause, entanglement in the Interlocking System of Arrogance is the result. The ultimate result of ignorance of doctrine and Arrogance involvement is a life where the believer constantly "Grieves God the Holy Spirit".

### Unrealistic Expectation, an Enemy of Unity.

Unrealistic Expectations in life result in the frustration of people who are not treated the way they think they should be treated or loved the way they think they should be loved and inevitably results in fragmentation of the Spiritual Life. Unrealistic expectations causes three serious problems of focus which inevitably hinder the execution of the protocol plan of God:

- ▲ Eyes on self.
- ▲ Eyes on people.
- ▲ Eyes on things.

Unrealistic Expectations always react with a rash of sins related to the Arrogance complex, including Jealousy, Bitterness, and many other Mental Attitude Sins and Verbal Sins. Any time a believer reacts to people with Jealousy or Bitterness he immediately grants them control over his life. Then in an irrational attempt to regain control, he may vent his antagonisms in the revenge expressions of gossip, maligning, false accusation, or even physical violence. But by attacking the person to whom he has surrendered his happiness, the believer attacks his own happiness. Each antagonistic reaction carries him deeper into self-induced misery and more tightly entangles him in the Interlocking System of Arrogance.

### Jealousy & the Public Lie

The source of the public lie is involvement in the Interlocking System of Arrogance. The fact is that those who propagandize through the public lie are the most flawed people one will ever find in this life. The public lie is motivated by power and approbation lust from the Old Sin Nature and it brings a very strong lust to control others and invariably enters these people into Revenge. Vindictive and implacable people are always ready to believe anything they learn about someone they hate, despise, or someone they Jealously think is keeping them from controlling others. The primary protection one has against the public lie is not defending self but observing and functioning under Divine Viewpoint Doctrinal Principles. ([Isa 44:20](#)) In this verse “ashes” represents the result of the fire of Jealousy. The person who uses the public lie very often mixes a little Truth from Bible Doctrine with distortions of the doctrinal principles because of their Jealousy and they almost never recover and they usually die the Sin unto Death, final Divine Discipline, as a result.

In addition the reason for one believing the public lie is often found in the sins of the Arrogance complex including Jealousy, Bitterness, Hatred, etc. Therefore, there is Evil motivation and Sinful production in the origin of the public lie, and there is Evil motivation and Sinful production in believing the public lie. Many times the false accusations which are put forth in the public lie are based on hallucination or delusional mental activity and other mental and personality disorders. Many times the accusations are malicious rumors or deliberate manufacturing of the public lie to assuage Jealousy and express power or approbation

lust as revenge.

### **Jealousy & Human Viewpoint**

Adding to God's words at any time is looking at life from the human viewpoint. This is actually the involvement in **Motivational Arrogance** and its Mental Attitude Sins. Human viewpoint invariably brings into play sins involving Envy, Jealousy, Pride, and other Mental Attitude Arrogance with all of its Mental Attitude Sins. These are the motivators to add to the Word of God but, if one uses and relies on the Absolute Truths of Bible doctrine he ultimately eliminates these Mental Attitude Sins from his life. If the believer does not live his life according to the principles of Bible Doctrine then he lives by these LIES from the Cosmic Dynaspheres. This choice for every believer results in either inner happiness or self-induced misery.

### **Jealousy & Religion**

Once one is trapped in Cosmic Dynasphere I, the Interlocking System of Arrogance he loses the ability to think in terms of the Absolute Truths of Bible Doctrine. He cannot think in terms of virtue, in terms of things that are rational as far as the Word of God is concerned. Various types of flaws from Motivational Arrogance under Evil bring this about, including all of the Mental Attitude Sins. This Mental Attitude Arrogance and its Mental Attitude Sins are the ways in which religion expresses itself and often involves violence or the condoning of it and ALL of the various facets and aspects of the Interlocking System of Arrogance driven by Mental Attitude Arrogance especially Jealousy. This results in a loss of the ability to think rationally and once this occurs one has developed the ability to over extend his emotions beyond his thoughts resulting in **Emotional Revolt of the Soul** in Reversionism. At this particular point he also destroys the greatest principles involving his life and something he has often been attempting to store up in the Stream of Consciousness of his Soul, his inventory of Bible Doctrine. Once this inventory of ideas and principles is destroyed or erased from the soul, he is now open for new thoughts as a result the formation of a vacuum in the soul. These thoughts come in many forms with deep involvement in the Cosmic Dynaspheres and the stages of **Reversionism**. Arrogant persons, inevitably, in order to be satisfied with themselves, must find a new identity. They get involved in the Interlocking System of Arrogance in the first place because they have lost their identity, and this leads them into the **Functional Arrogance** of Religion which provides them with a false identity. Jealousy becomes the preoccupation of their life along with other Mental Attitude Arrogance and Mental Attitude Sins. One of the biggest systems for evangelization into religion is **Guilt** and **Self-Pity** and the "new" American culture is now lending itself to Self-Pity and extreme Guilt. Every person is constantly encouraged to feel sorry for self if they lack anything they desire and guilty if they have more than they need, thus they are encouraged to be TOTALLY preoccupied with self.

### **Religious Legalism results in Moral Degeneracy**

Arrogance involvement is Degeneracy and therefore Moral Degeneracy inevitably expresses itself in the various sins of the Arrogance Complex. These include the Motivational Arrogance sins

such as Jealousy, Bitterness, etc., while seeking to change others to conform to this pattern of legalism. Jezebel's organization was religious, therefore it had to have justifications from Evil, for self-indulgence, Arrogance involvement, sins including Jealousy, Hatred, Bitterness and Implacability. These things had to be justified in the religious system, just as islam today does the exact same thing. The moslems are involved in a religion which justifies their violence as a part of evangelizing into islam and serving their god. The simple reasoning is that there must be an underlying doctrine, a system of principles, no matter how false they may be, to justify unjust violence. One of the interesting things about terrorism at the present time is that many of the terrorists are anarchy groups who have no rhyme or reason for what they are doing. Others have an organized system of doctrines and they are the ones that seem to do the most destruction based on their personal orientation.

### **Jealousy & Anger**

In the New Testament Scripture Greek (gr) ORGE means anger, generally caused by Jealousy. Anger inevitably motivates Jealousy and cruelty. ([Prov 27:4](#)) A person can't be angry without being cruel and unfair and this type of sin complex is the result of the believer consistently living in the status of [Reversionism](#). It is this Arrogance which is generally motivated by other Mental Attitude and Emotional sins. Therefore, Anger is the other side of the coin of Jealousy. Criminal activity is generally the function of the person involved in some other area of Arrogance and uncontrollable Anger. Anger always adds wrong to wrong, sin to sin therefore, one of the manifestations of Jealousy is anger and this emotional anger is an expression of Emotional Revolt of the Soul. Considerations of Emotional Anger must also include soul turbulence, tantrums, and hysteria. Hysteria may or may not be sinful and sinful hysteria is a sin by association when it is caused by Jealousy, Bitterness, Vindictiveness, Hatred, Pride, etc.

### **Jealousy & Old Age**

One of the most wonderful periods in life is supposed to be old age. It is often the real and clear indication as to whether a person has used his time provided by God under Logistical Grace and accumulated maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine into his soul or not. The finest people in the world are the older people who have learned and actually understood Grace, lived by it, and used it. The worst people in the world are believers in their old age who are legalistic, self centered, vicious, implacable, and filled with Envy, Jealousy, Pride and the other things that destroy any of their remaining inner beauty.

### **Jealousy & Leadership**

[Prov 24:1](#) commands the believer to NOT become Jealous of men who are completely motivated by Evil. One cannot ever be a good leader and function based on Mental Attitude Arrogance with its Mental Attitude Sins. Therefore, one cannot be a good leader and be Jealous because it then leads to Pettiness which completely destroys any leadership ability one may have. So,



inevitably Jealousy results in a totally distorted view of reality and life.

Collective disaster in a society or nation is the product of collective bad decisions when the demand for power, exceeds the need for power, and thus the acquisition of power becomes the manifestation of Envy, Jealousy, and all Motivational Arrogance and promotes the antithesis of Leadership. Socialism and the redistribution of wealth is very popular today because it offers security instead of freedom and allows the rich to assuage their guilt for being rich. Also it gives those who have failed in life a chance to exercise and express the Motivational Arrogance of Jealousy toward others in the Functional Arrogance of Revenge. Disaster then occurs when these Arrogant individuals never see their own consistencies and inconsistencies, only the inconsistencies of others.

Those who are involved in Egotistical Arrogance or Inordinate Pride do not ever accept authority, they resent it in any form. They are invariably Jealous of authority and set up a barrage of Motivational Arrogance and Mental Attitude Sins against Authority that cause them to engage in Jealousy which leads to becoming completely unstable. These are the people who cannot tolerate anyone's authority but their own and they are the least capable of administering authority at any level. In fact one criteria for involvement in Arrogance systems, whether in angelic creation or human beings, is the lack of proper RESPONSE to authority. Arrogance is a heinous COMPLEX failure, the result of Evil motivation providing Evil thinking. When Pride is put under pressure, its counterparts inevitably rise to the surface including, Jealousy, Cowardice or some other aspect of Mental Attitude Arrogance and Mental Attitude Sin that has always lurked behind the facade of Pride. Under the influence of Evil, national arrogance in the United States has reached unprecedented proportions, as demonstrated by its citizens' almost total rejection of divinely constituted authority under the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institution. The police officer is despised, judges are no longer respected, the uniforms of the armed services are ridiculed. Criminals go unpunished, while labor unions are permitted to practice extortion against the owners of industry. Students riot on college campuses and demand rights totally incompatible with the academic processes. Pastors are turned into "beanbags", husbands are not revered by wives, and children do not respect the authority of their parents. This results from Pride motivating Jealousy of any and all authority and thus rejecting it, reacting to it instead of responding to it with humility. Strong leadership is needed in this nation but is impossible to develop under the current social status and because the very national existence depends on the reversal of this trend, the United States of America has reached a stage in which the only solution is the individual inculcation of Bible doctrine! This is the only thing which can bring about a response to leadership and acceptance of both Establishment and Divine Authority.

Good spiritual leadership recognizes that only Bible doctrine can change any person, and that all individual believers must take the responsibility for their own decisions regarding perception of doctrine or NOT. Through fulfillment of the divine rules for marriage, the husband becomes a leader with the full use of impersonal or virtue-love toward the wife. However, when the husband, having neglected or rejected principles of Bible Doctrine, becomes an arrogant

bureaucrat, a bully in marriage, he then seeks to impose his false standards on his wife. The principle he is lacking is that a husband cannot change his wife, he can only change himself. Thus in order to establish proper leadership and proper response to the leadership in marriage, each individual may have to modify their personal standards as they persist in learning Bible Doctrine and developing the Divine Viewpoint on life. Correct authority orientation and thus response to leadership demands that both husband and wife conform to God's rules and policies in marriage. The wife is under both the authority of her husband and Bible doctrine. If there is a conflict, then she must put the matter in the Lord's hands, while obeying her husband who must persist in the Perception, Cognition, Incultation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine in order to develop proper leadership functions in marriage. Men are generally hypersensitive when involved in arrogance this very often leading them directly into Jealousy. Leadership can never afford to be Jealous because Jealousy results in Inordinate Ambition and Competition, and the relaxed mental attitude necessary for proper leadership in the function of authority is then lost.

### Jealousy & Loyalty

One must never tamper with the loyalty and integrity of a person who is properly oriented to authority and the principles of Bible Doctrine. Jealousy makes one resent proper loyalty to another person or ideal, Envy makes one seek to destroy this loyalty and integrity. Trying to destroy loyalty and integrity in another person will bring onto this believer the intensified triple compound Divine Discipline. When considering directing one's loyalty always reject involvement in Mental Attitude Arrogance and always remember that, not everyone who opposes is the enemy and not everyone who is supportive is a friend.

### Illustrations of Jealousy

Jealousy is a Most Vicious Mental Attitude Sin. The Northern Kingdom of Israel was established as a result of a revolution, based on their Jealousy of Judah, the Southern Kingdom. ([2Sam 19:40-43](#)) The Mental Attitude Arrogance and Mental Attitude Sins which include Jealousy destroy capacity for love. The Northern Kingdom never had this basis and thus did not develop the capacity to love God because it was founded on Jealousy. A kingdom founded on Emotional Revolt of the Soul will inevitably destroy itself.

The 2<sup>nd</sup> and 3<sup>rd</sup> sons of Jacob, Simeon and Levi by the same mother, Leah ([Gen 49:5-7](#)) had the exact same pattern of life and the same mental attitude derived from Evil. They were cruel ([Gen 34:25-26](#)) demonstrated by the Shechem incident, and specifically where in their anger and their Hatred they sought to destroy a tribe that lived in the same area of the country. These two brothers had one thing in common. They were totally responsible for their own misery. When a believer fails to take the responsibility for his own actions he guarantees that he will be miserable for life. By avoiding responsibility for one's own actions he cannot come to the place of using the Rebound Procedure, he cannot get back in fellowship with the God, and therefore the blessing and the happiness that belongs to the believer as a monopoly of his

relationship with God eludes him constantly. This happiness is always just out of his grasp, he is always off-balance, always unstable, and consequently makes himself miserable without help from anyone else. These brothers were plotters, underhanded, always working behind someone's back, as an expression of their cruelty from a mental attitude of Jealousy, Implacability and Hatred. They were always trying to make someone else miserable. These brothers were egotistical and in their minds everyone else was always wrong and they were always right.

Jacob though vicious in his younger days, didn't want anything to do with his two sons, Simeon and Levi. Here is a father who will have nothing to do with two of his sons. He knew no good would ever come from their plotting and he avoided involvement with them. In their anger they killed a man and in their self-will, Egotism, Jealousy, Hatred and Implacable Vindictiveness they severed the tendons of all the oxen of the Schechemites to prevent them being used in agriculture. ([Gen 34:25-26](#)) This was a matter of Revenge as an expression of their mental attitude Jealousy.

[Dan 3:8-12](#) presents "Certain Chaldeans" who were of the priestly caste who served as advisers to the king. These men resented, were Jealous of, the fact that four of the highest offices in the land had been given to Jews who had been the hostages of captivity. They demonstrated their pettiness and Jealousy by seeking to rid the empire of these brilliant men. The believer must NEVER be foolish enough to retaliate against Jealous people; the Lord will always handle them; and the believer must not get in His way. ([1Sam 17:47](#), [Rom 12:19](#)) These Chaldeans were consumed with Jealousy, so they brought charges, malicious accusations, against these Jews. The Chaldean priests in their Jealousy were not merely attempting to accuse them; they wanted to see these Jews condemned to death. So they catered to the king, flattering him and spoke of "certain Jews" of implying that these men were of an inferior race. Ultimately the Jews in question were identified as those whom the king had appointed over the administration of the province of Babylon. The Chaldean priests implied that these Jews were unworthy of their high positions and perhaps Nebuchadnezzar had made a mistake and also implied that the accused were ungrateful for the appointment the king had conferred upon them. They had proven this by their disobedience to royal command. By the time of the "fiery furnace" in Daniel 3, Nebuchadnezzar's normal clear thinking had been obliterated by Jealousy motivating Rage and other Mental Attitude Sins.

Saul's Envy and Jealousy caused him to prejudge David without a right to do so. Following David's spectacular victory over Goliath, the young shepherd-warrior became a national hero. His tremendous popularity infuriated Saul. ([1Sam 18:6-9](#)) Driven by insane Jealousy and Hatred for David, King Saul had but one ambition to kill David, God's choice as the next monarch ([1Sam 18:10-12](#)).

The carnality of the Corinthian believers began with the mental attitude sin of Jealousy. vicious, rampant Jealousy among these believers spawned the "strife" which was Inordinate Competition and Ambition motivated by their unconfessed Jealousy. As a result, Paul describes a sin which the Bible condemns many times, Jealousy. Jealousy is a mental attitude sin that

produces a chain of sins and once this begins it results in dissension and fighting among believers. Because a person is Jealous, he may become Implacable and then seek Revenge. Such a person wants to hurt, to malign, to ostracize, to judge; he generates an attitude of total antagonism. Therefore a Mental Attitude of Jealousy never stands alone, but always leads to many other categories of sin.

Dr. William Cooke quotes the following from Plutarch: “It was a very ancient opinion, that there are certain wicked and malignant demons, who Envy, are Jealous of, “good men”, and endeavor to hinder them in the pursuit of Virtue, lest they should be partakers at least of greater happiness than they enjoy” (*Christian Theology*, 5th ed., p. 628). L. S. Chafer in his Systematic Theology states: “The fact that there is no redemption for himself or any other fallen angel, cannot but create an incredible magnitude of Jealousy and offense, and engender extreme Hatred on Satan’s part toward God and His saints, the believers who are set apart by Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God.” (paraphrased)

### Jealousy Invents Accusations

This is what occurred when the commissioners and satraps of the Chaldeans began accusations against Daniel regarding government affairs but they could find no grounds or evidence of corruption. (**Dan 6:4**) There were 2 causes for the dissatisfaction and Jealousy of these subordinates of Daniel, Daniel’s racial heritage and the accelerated promotion of Daniel ahead of these Persian noblemen. Their petty Jealousies were the inevitable result and they began trying to obtain any pretext for accusing Daniel. Jealous people are intense and relentless, they have no sense of humor and cannot relax. These Chaldean noblemen actively conspired to have Daniel removed from office. They put Daniel under constant surveillance in the hope of catching Daniel in some level of disloyalty to the King, Nebuchadnezzar. Daniel made no secret of his faith and he had proclaimed the Gospel message to many of these men and they knew that his first loyalty was to his God. They sought to have common law modified by a Royal Statute which had to be signed by the king personally and once ratified, the statute was irrevocable and applied to king and commoner alike. The new law established a prohibition against “petitions” to anyone but the King thus they could accuse Daniel of disloyalty because of his practice of praying three times a day.

### Results of Jealousy

Jealousy is a part of the Interlocking System of Arrogance as Motivational Arrogance and is closely related to Bitterness, Vindictiveness, Implacability, Inordinate Ambition and Inordinate Competition, and IS Revenge motivation leading to Functional Arrogance with both verbal and overt sins including Maligning, Gossip, Judging, Criticism, Nagging, Nitpicking, and other Verbal Sins and may even lead to Overt Sins toward the object of one’s Jealousy. All of this results from one’s failure to recognize the concept of privacy and that ONLY God has the right to criticize or discipline believers. Jealousy, as an emotional sin, has two directions:

- ▲ Arrogance toward self, subjective arrogance.
- ▲ Possessiveness of others, objective arrogance.

As Motivational Arrogance, Jealousy is and motivates sins of emotion

- ▲ Jealousy becomes irrational and motivates the hysterical category of emotional sins

including:

- ▼ fear of rivalry
- ▼ fear of losing someone's affection
- ▼ fear of unfaithfulness in some form
- ▼ worry
- ▼ anxiety
- ▼ panic
- ▼ consternation
- ▼ irrationality
- ▼ dissociation
- ▼ therefore, Jealousy becomes irrationality in its resentment and Hatred of others.

▲ Jealousy motivates the Hatred category of emotional sins and includes:

- ▼ uncontrollable anger
- ▼ implacable Hatred
- ▼ bitter resentment
- ▼ implacable Vindictiveness
- ▼ loathing
- ▼ animosity
- ▼ tantrums
- ▼ violence
- ▼ even murder.

▲ Jealousy motivates the self-centered category of emotional sins including:

- ▼ Self-Pity
- ▼ egotistical irrationality
- ▼ expressions of dissatisfaction
- ▼ gossip
- ▼ slander
- ▼ maligning
- ▼ vilification
- ▼ other forms of verbal sins
- ▼ Arrogant preoccupation with self
- ▼ irrationality
- ▼ implacability toward the object of Jealousy

▲ Jealousy motivates the reaction category of sin combining the emotional sins with the Arrogance complex and initiates a reaction factor called Guilt. In this motivation of the guilt category of emotional sins so that Jealousy results in irrationality where the person often regrets and feels guilty about the things he has done long in the past. This guilt is failure of the believer to recognize his own sins and failures in the right perspective that Jesus Christ was judged for ALL human sins on the Cross and that he is to accept responsibility for them and to acknowledge or name those sins to God the Father and by this means alone receive TOTAL forgiveness. A Guilt Complex is the worst sin of all and results when one is engaged in the function of perpetuating something that God has blotted out. It involves the Mental Attitude that the believer's sins are greater than God's capacity for Forgiveness.



Jealousy is a major factor in the function of self-righteousness and crusader arrogance, and therefore, a producer of [Religious Legalism](#) and thus Christian Moral Degeneracy. Cosmic panaceas demand a full mobilization of the Functional Arrogance within the Interlocking System of Arrogance along with Pride, and Jealousy, so that Self-Righteousness, Religious Legalism, [Personality Arrogance](#), [Authority Arrogance](#), and [Christian Service Arrogance](#) can be expressed through Crusader Arrogance. Therefore, Jealousy becomes both legalism and tyranny though possessiveness. Jealousy causes the believer to develop a facade of self-righteousness which he uses as a system of legalism. He develops a superior pseudo self-identity and then says that what he does is spirituality. He makes himself a role model for what Christianity should be and then tries force others to accept and follow his role model pseudo self-identity. Jealousy is, therefore, a major factor in the failure to execute the protocol plan of God for the Church. Jealousy is a Self-Justification system and entanglement in the [Arrogance Skills](#) and one cannot ever solve his own problems as long as he is justifying self. Jealousy and the Filling of God the Holy Spirit are OBVIOUSLY mutually exclusive and therefore, Jealousy keeps the believer from glorifying God. Eventually Jealousy becomes a contributing factor in Christian [Psychosis](#).

Hatred, Hostility and Jealousy often combine and / or lead one into the other. Perhaps at some time in the past you lied to a person. You confessed your fabrication, but you perpetuated the sin by Jealousy and Hatred of that person. When you allow a sin to nurture Jealousy, Jealousy becomes an even worse sin; and if it goes unchecked, you move under perpetual divine discipline. However, you will be disciplined for the current sin of Jealousy removing you from the Plan of God but not so much for the original sin of lying! Therefore, greatness in the individual and Jealousy never live together! The believer must ignore what others may have or may have achieved because it is totally inconsequential, it is one of many DETAILS of Life. In Jealousy, Hatred or Bitterness, one will follow one of these avenues which will put him on the road to a miserable life.

Verbal sins which result from Jealousy involve maligning, gossip and judging at a vicious level where the Jealous persons want to HURT the object of their Jealousy and will use any means at their disposal to do so. Verbal sins always indicate a motivation from Mental Attitude Arrogance and Mental Attitude Sins especially Jealousy and inevitably result in discord among believers. Prayer is not answered because of involvement in any sin, or crime and it is often Jealousy, and false motivation, which neutralize prayer. [Jam 4:2-3](#) is addressed to believers who engage in following their lust patterns and even commit murder because of Jealousy.

All Mental Attitude Sins break the chain of gracious response to any kindness with a reaction inserted so that the result is devastating to the Spiritual Life. This leads to Triple Compound Divine Discipline which is the worst type of self-induced punishment from God. This begins with the believer's decision to become involved in Mental Attitude Sins as motivation for sins of the tongue or overt sins. This motivation is from Mental Attitude Arrogance and may include Pride, Jealousy, Bitterness, Hatred, Vindictiveness, Implacability, Self-Pity, guilt syndrome, and revenge tactics.

[Matt 6:22-24](#) explains that it is possible for a believer, who is supposed to have inner beauty from maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul, to in fact have inner ugliness from Evil influence which involves Mental Attitude Arrogance and its Mental Attitude Sins. These believers start out being arrogantly indifferent to God and his plan and grace but systematically move themselves into a status of Antagonistic Hatred of Him. Therefore, the believer is either drawing upon the resources of Bible doctrine or he is drawing upon the resources of Mental Attitude Arrogance with mental attitude sinning as the result because mental attitude sinning is the Old Sin Nature's means of adjustment to life.

### [Solutions to Jealousy](#)

To avoid problems of Mental Attitude Arrogance and Mental Attitude Sins especially Jealousy the only mechanism available to the believer involves consistent Post Salvation Epistemological Rehabilitation from Perception, Cognition, Incultation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine and then applying it under Impersonal Unconditional Love for Mankind thus avoiding Mental Attitude Sins. This then allows one to also avoid all reactionary Verbal and Overt Sins and to respect the privacy of others and Mind his OWN business.

The courage derived from thought under pressure is the Modus Operandi of the 5 stages of the [Faith Rest Drill](#) where Claiming Promises from the bible results in setting aside negative emotion such as Jealousy, Fear, Cowardice, Hatred, Bitterness, Implacability, any and all Motivational Arrogance so that proper thought can continue. The promises of God are designed to give the believer some way of priming the pump in the soul in order to get rid of negative emotion in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul. This results in the reassertion of Divine Viewpoint thinking from Metabolized Bible Doctrine which must dominate his soul.

Virtue Love, (gr) 'Agape' is Mental Attitude Love and is freedom from Mental Attitude Arrogance and Mental Attitude Sins. Therefore there can be no Mental Attitude Arrogance when functioning under Mental Attitude Love which is Impersonal, Unconditional Love. Mental Attitude love must come first before emotional or (gr) 'philos' love because this Personal, Conditional Love makes one susceptible to of all sorts of negative emotion, especially Jealousy. Therefore, Personal love minus the virtue or Impersonal, Unconditional Love very often results in Jealousy. While, Impersonal, Unconditional Mental Attitude Love only comes from maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine saturating the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul and the consistent Filling of God the Holy Spirit as a result of consistent use of the Rebound Procedure. This Impersonal Unconditional Love is the only system to avoid Motivational Arrogance of Mental Attitude Arrogance with Mental Attitude Sins and therefore negative emotion in the soul. Evil motivation as Motivational Arrogance from Mental Attitude Arrogance and Mental Attitude Sins cannot coexist with Impersonal, Unconditional Love which is Motivational Virtue produced by the Filling of God the Holy Spirit. Impersonal, Unconditional Love is essential for the believer to be able to get a hearing in the supreme court of heaven when presenting his petitions of prayer. Impersonal, Unconditional Love is unconditional because of Grace orientation resulting from maximum Bible doctrine resident in the soul. Therefore, Impersonal, Unconditional Love perpetuates its own honor, its own integrity, its own Virtue in every stage

of development of the spiritual life, and it does so without any involvement in any facet of the Interlocking System of Arrogance. The development of Virtue earnestly begins at [Spiritual Self Esteem](#) where the believer no longer feels threatened by people who are better off or more prosperous in any area than he is. Under Spiritual Self Esteem one is never insecure in love and affection, and never feels threatened by others in any way which is the mental attitude which drives Jealousy, and therefore he never has the problems related to [Self-Pity](#). Spiritual Self Esteem combines with Impersonal, Unconditional Love to destroy any Jealousy which motivates the inordinate ambition and competition for someone's love, affection, or for their level of assumed greatness or prosperity in life. Spiritual Self Esteem subordinates emotion to intellect, so that objectivity and doctrinal perspective rule the believer's soul. Spiritual Self Esteem does not feel threatened by the Functional Arrogance from others as gossip, slander, maligning, or any forms of human antagonism including vituperation, vilification, Jealousy, Bitterness, Implacability, anger, Hatred, malice, revenge, etc.

Moving from Spiritual Self Esteem to Spiritual Autonomy further restrains Jealousy, possessiveness, defensiveness, and the inordinate desire to dominate others. Spiritual autonomy remains righteous without becoming self-righteous, and moral without entering into moralistic orgies of [Crusader Arrogance](#). Therefore, the believer in any level of Spiritual Adulthood does not seek to coerce or manipulate others. Being not possessive of those whom he loves he avoids the pitfall of Jealousy. He does not give expression to power lust but fully utilizes the privacy of his priesthood so that God is the primary focus of his life. Thus his Personal love for God motivates Impersonal, Unconditional Love for others.

The believer, in adhering to the command to separate from loved ones who reside in the Cosmic Dynaspheres follow the Lord's example of [Matt 10:36-38](#). This is not hurting or being spiteful or bitter toward family, friends or loved ones, but is switching from personal to Impersonal, Unconditional Love. By this function of mental separation the believer avoids ALL Motivational Arrogance and Functional Arrogance which potentially can destroy the believer's integrity and his Spiritual Life.

The advancing or mature believer has absolutely no cause for Jealousy since his own blessings are sufficient and perfectly timed for his maximum benefit. The principle is that the believer MUST concentrate on what he has, not on what he does not have. ([Matt 6:26-27](#), [Matt 6:34](#)).

Return to the [Table of Contents](#)

### **[Gate #7 – The Arrogance of Bitterness](#)**

Bitterness is one of the most powerful and worst sins of Arrogance and it often turns love into hatred, happiness into malice, producing the [Lust](#) to hurt or destroy another or [Self-Pity](#), blessing into cursing, etc. Bitterness blames God and / or Man for one's own bad decisions, flaws and failures in life. It is the fuel which runs the 3 [Arrogance Skills](#) in fact Bitterness reverses the flow of the Arrogance Skills and then justifies the believer's failure to use the

[Rebound Procedure](#) and in their reverse cycling the Arrogance Skills move the believer into Revenge Motivation and eventually into [Revenge Modus Operandi](#). Bitterness produces BAD [Emotion](#) and by this means contributes to a state of perpetual carnality so that it always produces a way for the believer to remain carnal. Bitterness destroys the [Unique Spiritual Life](#) of the Church age which was tested and proven by The Lord Jesus, The Christ while he was in his Hypostatic Union. Bitterness is, therefore, the most horrible venom of the soul. ([Num 21:6](#)) Bitterness fills the subconsciousness with Garbage and this then overflows back into the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul. Bitterness is one means of maintaining residence in Arrogance and is the greatest of the sins of Arrogance and Emotion combines and this Mental Attitude Arrogance as a [Mental Attitude Sin](#) is the quickest way to destroy the Spiritual Life. It contributes to the greatest [Battle of the Soul](#) and destroys the Spiritual Life with perpetual carnality. It becomes part of [Black Out of the Soul](#) and blots out any Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul which when lost results in problems and solutions being rationalized. Bitterness combines self induced misery with the spreading of that misery to others. It has great strength as it develops in the soul and builds incredible stress in the soul and eventually destroys the Spiritual Life by destroying all the Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.

The Will of God for the life of the believer is never to retain bitterness against anyone in life since this is Mental Attitude Arrogance and Mental Attitude Sin which feeds all the other aspects of Arrogance and will surely destroy him. If one has bitterness in his life at all he is a very Arrogant person and cannot be in fellowship with God under the Filling of God the Holy Spirit for any prolonged period of time. Therefore, if one is bitter he has no Spiritual Life, he is Arrogantly preoccupied with self, totally subjective and there is a strong possibility that he will become neurotic or [Psychotic](#). In the Christian Way of Life IF the believer does not have a good relationship with God he will not ever be able to have a relationship with other people not even fellow believers. Believers, therefore, must avoid the Motivational Arrogance of Mental Attitude Arrogance especially bitterness and vindictiveness. A person who lives with bitterness in the soul is not ready for anything in life. To analyze one's involvement with bitterness, the believer must constantly test himself to determine if HE HAS THE RIGHT to try to get even with another person or to be bitter toward them for what they have or might have done to him. Whenever one is in the situation of being a victim he always has a tendency to become self righteous and totally preoccupied with self and then become bitter and in his soul so that bitterness will push him to retaliation. When a believer is bitter in his soul he will always think of others in relationship to the flaw of HIS soul. Once bitterness sets in then the mental attitude shifts to the viewpoint that he has never been treated fairly in life in any situation, ever.

One is not spiritual because he treats people well but because he has harmonious rapport with God and this results in using [Impersonal Unconditional Love](#) to deal with people. If the believer succumbs to flattery he will become entangled in Arrogance and this will invariably lead to bitterness which will destroy his Spiritual Life when the [Rebound Procedure](#) for recovery is neglected. Bitterness is one of the greatest manifestations of Arrogance and takes every possible shortcut to [Self Absorption](#) and has no capacity for love allowing the 4 horsemen

of apostasy in [Reversionism](#) to overrun the soul destroying the Spiritual Life. As a result of Bible Doctrine being Rejected and having no exposure to Bible Doctrine the Rebound Procedure is forgotten and never used.

### **Bitterness in Marriage**

Marriages are destroyed by bitterness with love being replaced by hatred, and divorces are the function of bitterness which is derived Evil and the greatest sin of Arrogance, and this is what caused Satan to appeal his condemnation during the Angelic Conflict trial, which in fact, God graciously granted. This is what happens when a woman is disappointed with the husband or the husband is disappointed with the wife. It begins at varying times after marriage and it is easy to hide with the exception being the bitter one who gossips about the one they are bitter about. Bitterness destroys a marriage even if there is no divorce, it begins with whining and [Complaining](#) and once it is launched in the soul all love is pushed out of the soul. Bitterness launches anger which is an opening into [Emotional Revolt of the Soul](#). Bitter people NEVER take responsibility for the cause of their bitterness and from that point on will never take responsibility for their failures. Anger, as an emotional sin, is irrational and in this irrationality the only type of listening these people are capable of is that which reinforces their pseudo righteous indignation. Anger becomes wrath and this has its basis in an anger reaction based on bitterness which now includes hatred which when added to anger results in vindictive wrath. Clamor and slander are the logical results of wrath and it causes the building up of a house of cards of Arrogance where the slanderer sets himself up as perfect whereas in reality they are only in a much higher and less obvious echelon of sinning and failure. These all lead to Malice which as the lust to hurt someone, results in inflicting suffering and injury on the one toward whom they are bitter. Bitterness and Malice are competitive and cause more saturation in Arrogance than any other combination. The Only way to remove bitterness, malice, slander, etc., from one's soul is through the use of the Rebound Procedure as a believer and by making [Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God](#) through Faith alone in The Lord Jesus, The Christ alone as an unbeliever.

Bitterness can destroy any personal relationship. ([Col 3:19](#)) No Husband has a right to be bitter toward his wife because the Husband is the ruler over the Wife, he is the Head of the Family, he is the leader of the Household, he is responsible for the household and above all the man has made his own free will decision to marry the woman. Where bitterness exists there is no LOVE and where true love exists there can be no bitterness. The principle to be aware of is that people are no better in marriage than they are as individual people.

### **Bitterness leading to Functional Arrogance**

Verbal Sins including, Slander, Defamation, Vilification, Vituperation, Maligning, Judging, Gossip, etc., are all related to the Motivational Arrogance of Bitterness as parts of Functional Arrogance. The people who demonstrate these failings should be avoided at all costs because they are perpetually carnal and will bring to the positive believer great distraction and trouble. When the root of Bitterness springs up in the life it causes the believer to be distracted from Bible Doctrine and the Spiritual Life. [Emotional Sins](#) such as Fear, Worry, Anxiety, Panic, Jealousy, Vindictiveness, Implacability, Guilt, Anger, Hatred, Animosity, etc., are aspects of



Motivational Arrogance initiated by or derived from bitterness and MUST be immediately corrected by using the [Rebound Procedure](#). Emotional Sins contain [Arrogant-Self Righteousness](#) and [Egotistical](#) Irrationality resulting in the destructive verbal sins of Vituperation and Vilification which with Gossip, Slander & Maligning create the fabrication of the [Public Lie](#) to destroy someone who is disliked. Bitterness also leads to the destructive side of [Iconoclastic Arrogance](#). When this bitterness leads to the mistreatment of others it results in them also becoming bitter. Bitterness is like a weapon which always seeks out its target. Bitter people start out reacting to other people and ending up hating them. The first thing that bitterness causes is (gr) thumos, Boiling Anger and Irrationality which motivates Violence and [Revenge](#), which is a Sin of [Irrational Emotion](#) and this starts the believer down the road to a terrible life of Self Induced Misery.

### **Characteristics of Bitterness**

Bitter souls are self destructive in expression. ([Job 7:11](#))

Women are often bitter because they do not have what other women have. ([1Sam 1:10](#))

Fathers and mothers can become bitter when their children are fools. ([Prov 17:5](#))

Bitterness is self induced misery. ([Job 3:20](#))

Bitterness is the wrong reaction to divine discipline. ([Lam 3:15-20](#))

Bitterness turns love into hatred.

Bitterness turns happiness into malice (the lust to hurt or destroy another).

Bitterness turns blessing into cursing.

Bitterness blames God and man for one's own bad decision, flaws and failures.

Bitterness is the fuel which runs the 3 [Arrogance Skills](#).

Bitterness produces bad emotion and thus contributes to the status of perpetual carnality.

Bitterness then obviously destroys the Spiritual Life.

True love resides in the Soul not the body therefore, bitterness is the venom of the soul which destroys True Love for both God and Man. The real tragedy of Bitterness occurs when death becomes more important than the values of life.

### **Panorama of Bitterness**

If a believer is bitter and does not use the [Rebound Procedure](#) to recover he WILL become implacable. If he becomes implacable he WILL become involved in great Evil and involved and entangled in the 3 Arrogance Skills, [Self Justification](#), [Self Deception](#), and [Self Absorption](#) from least destructive to the worst. However, when the order of Arrogance Skills involvement is reversed it is far worse and vastly more destructive to his Spiritual Life and bitterness does this. Self Justification ignores and rejects Rebound and moves to Self Deception which never rebounds and is filled with bitterness and hatred therefore failing to take responsibility for all the Arrogance involved including irrationality and unreality. Rebound is NEVER considered as an option for this believer. This moves him into Self Absorption which freezes the Metabolized Bible Doctrine he had learned, at this point he has moved down through Reversionism to the beginning of [Blackout of the Soul](#). As a result of degrading his Spiritual Life in reversionism to this level, all previously learned Bible Doctrine is then systematically forgotten, erased, removed from the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul and in fact replaced with the LIE, principles

derived from EVIL. Self absorption takes the bitter attitude of being always right, which justifies all REACTIONS and this begins concentrated self deception. This believer takes the attitude and position that his bitterness is justified and that he can do nothing wrong. The totality of this Self Absorption results in the Justification of Self Absorption with intensification of it and solidification of the attitude of ALWAYS BEING RIGHT. Self deception then enters him into [Self Righteous Arrogance](#) which justifies doing almost any thing at any time. Malice and Vindictiveness are thereby justified by the concept of always being right. This leads to total self justification which in turn begins vilification, abuse, violence, even murder, totally and permanently changing this believer. By this means all Metabolized Bible Doctrine and Reciprocity of Love for God are lost to him. The malice from this pattern leads back into a recycling or reversal of the Arrogance Skills and also to motivating [Revenge](#), with vituperation and revenge Modus Operandi and vilification with violent and abusive behavior. All this is justified under Self Deception and Self Deception convinces the individual that he has the right to hatred, jealousy, implacability, vindictiveness, etc., which become the basis for self justification. Intense [Jealousy](#) becomes the motivation for all the incredible Evil that is done in the name of self justification. This is in fact a degrading emotional decline where if a believer becomes Bitter he will be angry, and if angry he will be vindictive, and if vindictive he will have a soul filled with motivation for Malice and Revenge and NO RECIPROCITY with God.

When the believer cycles through the Arrogance skills ([Eph 4:31](#)) he can first start with bitterness and then go to anger because he is RIGHT and the other person wrong. Then he moves into vindictiveness and tries to get back at that person by maligning them or engaging in any process of vindictiveness including violence. Then he moves directly into the Arrogance Skills and cycles forward through them and then reverses his involvement in them and cycles them backward. ([James 3:14](#)) When moving backward he engages again in hatred for the other person who has caused him some real or imagined injustice. Then he moves back into implacability toward them and then into jealousy if they are in any way successful and then back to bitterness. This all occurs as the result of the lack of function using the [Rebound Procedure](#) which is the only thing which can stop it. In bitterness when the believer engages in initiating strife in a group it infers that if he even hears the name of the person about whom he is bitter come up in conversation, he will maliciously criticize them from the excrement of his soul which is his bitterness. This is what occurs when [Inordinately Competitive](#) people criticize others and is in fact what some 90% or more of the Pastor Teachers are contaminated with.

Bitterness is complete self absorption, self centered [Arrogant Egocentricity](#), with no regard for the opinions or feelings of others and therefore is the Arrogance of egotism and self conceit, making self the center of all things. Self conceit is often rationalized into pseudo self esteem and this is the down side of assumed egotism, and is based on Arrogance in the soul and is not true self esteem, which must be based on Absolute Truth. Therefore locked in Arrogance is the status quo of assumed or pseudo self esteem. Consequently, Bitterness is not a solution to anything but the greatest failure of the Spiritual Life and the quintessence of Arrogance. Bitterness contradicts the Plan of God in any dispensation but especially the Protocol Plan of God of this Church age.

The only thing one can do to accomplish a right thing is to be doing things in a right way. Therefore, one cannot build his happiness on someone else's unhappiness and therefore he cannot build happiness based on bitterness which is the motivator for malice and Revenge Modus Operandi. This is some real or imagined outside pressure of adversity in life being converted to stress in the soul and resulting in Old Sin Nature control of the SOUL which can eventuate in perpetual carnality. When one becomes involved in Self Deceit we will eventually become totally involved with self and completely Self Absorbed. When a believer moves from Self Absorption back to Self Deception he does not notice the transition and therefore spends his entire life being wrong. In reversing the cycling of the Arrogance Skills he becomes totally locked into Arrogance. Bitterness first opens the path for the cycling of the Arrogance skills and once opened then bitterness often reverses the cycling pattern and moves back to establish the HABIT of self justification. When the reverse process has been set in motion and becomes well established, [Maladaptive Defense Mechanisms](#) begin to destroy the Spiritual Life. This believer will tell anyone who will listen how absolutely right he is and thereby develop a pattern of Human Viewpoint from self absorption so that he will believe that he is always right and others are always wrong.

Bitterness destroys everything in it's periphery and it initially results from failure to take responsibility for one's own decisions to Sin, engage in Crime or produce Human Good from the influence of Evil and for Arrogance Skill involvement in Self Justification. The Core of all aspects of involvement in the Interlocking System of Arrogance is FAILURE to TAKE RESPONSIBILITY for one's own bad decisions leading to sins or failures. This is the result of one's function under Self Justification which is the first Arrogance Skill and TAKING RESPONSIBILITY FOR ONE'S OWN ACTIONS is what Satan Leaves out in all his arguments with God. This is a form of thinking only of self alone without regard for the thoughts or feelings of others, therefore, failing to take responsibility for one's own decisions. Despite not using the [Faith Rest Drill \(5 stages\)](#), this believer, being guilty of Arrogance, selfcenteredness, fear, panic and [Self-Pity](#), will still receive logistical grace support from God. Many believers as they draw closer to death develop an increasing problem of Arrogance regarding Self-Pity, and this Arrogance produces bitterness when there is no apparent improvement in whatever condition they are suffering from which is leading them to Death. These believers often operate for years in the realm of Self Righteousness, so that their Self-Pity amalgamates with Self Righteousness to produce a [Guilt Complex](#) related to their lifestyle.

For these believers lack of the use of the [Rebound Procedure](#) is the cause of locked in Arrogance. When people begin to think that whatever they do is more important than anything else and that they are never wrong this leads to violence and abuse in every aspect of society. This always leads to the emotional decline of the person in relation to his bitterness. In the reversal of functions under the Arrogance Skills he justifies three things which are wrong, therefore classified as 'wrongdoing':

- ✧ Grieving God the Holy Spirit ([Eph 4:30-32](#))
- ✧ Quenching God the Holy Spirit ([1Thes 5:19](#))
- ✧ Lying to God the Holy Spirit ([Acts 5:1-10](#))

This, therefore, becomes a way of life for the Believer who is locked into the [Arrogance Skills](#). As a result his Bitterness connects Cosmic Dynasphere II, the Interlocking System of Antagonistic Emotional Hatred with the Interlocking System of Arrogance. The principle of Quenching of God the Holy Spirit ([1Thes 5:19](#)) is too much Arrogance associated with learning along with ‘operation over think’, or speculation beyond what the scripture teaches and then false or wrong application of Bible Doctrine. What God wants us to know in this dispensation is only what is in writing in the Canon of Scripture. What God does not want us to know isn’t there and it isn’t there because, if it were, it would get us into constant trouble. Quenching of God the Holy Spirit is tantamount to Arrogance and selfcenteredness about scripture leading to a dogmatic stand on principles of false doctrine which is an extension of operation over think related to doctrinal distortions and doctrinal controversy. Quenching of God the Holy Spirit is the believer saturated with Arrogance moving into and functioning under the Interlocking System of Antagonistic Emotional Hatred where he is now antagonistic to God, Bible Doctrine, the Grace of God and the Plan of God.

When the believer reaches the point of engaging in malice and vituperation he has entered a position of extreme [Legalism](#) and will never be able to get back to Bible Doctrine unless he starts with Rebound and then consistently functions under the [Grace Apparatus for Perception](#) for Perception, Cognition, Incultation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine. It is essential for him to get Metabolized Bible Doctrine back circulating in the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul. The whole system of soul destruction from involvement with bitterness and the Arrogance Skills is then reinforced by one’s operation under the [Maladaptive Defense Mechanisms](#).

### **The Functions of Bitterness**

Bitterness turns good emotion into bad emotion or just produces bad emotion and perpetuates carnality. More than any aspect of Arrogance Bitterness contradicts the Protocol Plan of God for the Church. [1John 5:16-17](#) describes the Sin unto death and the believer is commanded NOT to pray for the person under the SIN unto death because a person under this discipline is a BITTER PERSON. Bitterness leads to Malice, Slander and / or Jealousy motivated by Anger and destroys all those in its periphery. ([Heb 12:14](#)) A Bitter person lies to himself daily and believes all that he thinks and says and justifies these things constantly. ([1Cor 2:16](#), [Rom 8:5](#))

Bitterness is self induced misery for the believer and is related to divine discipline for the individual and the nation so that when the administration of the cycles of Divine Discipline occur in a nation, it results in bitterness in immature believers. Bitterness motivates the [Public Lie](#) by stimulating the soul and combining with and motivating Revenge. Bitterness produces a harshness, callousness or [Scar Tissue of the Soul](#) thus interlocking with reversionism and is motivated by malice and seeking revenge which can result in the rankling resentment of hatred. Only the consistent use of the Rebound Procedure can break this destructive cycle. Bitterness has no objectivity of soul, it is only involved in self serving self justification. Bitterness attacks its object when it is strong with vituperation, vilification, etc., any aspect of Functional Arrogance. Bitterness totally abandons any thought of being a plaintiff before the Supreme Court of Heaven and it is an irrational sin and very hard to deal with because it is extremely

deceptive.

### Seven Destructive Functions of Bitterness:

- ✧ Turns Love into Hatred wiping out capacity for true love.
- ✧ Turns Happiness into Malice attempting to destroy others by vilification and vituperation.
- ✧ Turns Blessing into cursing.
- ✧ Blames God and / or Man for all personal bad decisions.
- ✧ Is the fuel to run the Arrogance Skills
- ✧ Produces Bad Emotion and contributes to perpetual Carnality.
- ✧ Destroys the Spiritual Life

Bitterness is a rancid emission from the Stream of Consciousness, thus Bitterness is excrement of the soul. It will cover up and eventually destroy or erase any Bible Doctrine in the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul. Bitterness will then spill over from the Stream of Consciousness and fester as Garbage in the Subconscious. Bitterness is contagious and always results in one believer infecting another believer and then maligning others from the standpoint of being right. NO BELIEVER can afford this contamination of soul because a bitter person always lies to himself and thereby contaminates the whole family or group he is involved with. As a result of the bitter person lying to himself he is never able to tell the truth about anything concerning self. The root of bitterness is out of sight, it is in the soul and is not seen, one can even like a person who has it but at some point something will cause the bitterness to come up exposing itself, and then if that one goes along he will be contaminated with the same bitterness.

### Bitter Jealousy

Bitterness combined with Jealousy creates a “childish” person in the realm of the Spiritual Life. This creates a LOSER Believer and it can start with either bitterness or jealousy. Pulling this pin of the Arrogance Grenade results in fragmentation of that believer’s life and the fragmented believer is totally inconsistent and unstable and oscillates between stimulation in good times and discontentment under pressures in life. Bitterness is a fragment of the Arrogance grenade giving the potential for chain sinning and falling deeply down through the stages of reversionism. ([Heb 12:15](#)) Believers fall short of the Grace of God by pulling the pin of their Arrogance grenade with involvement in Bitterness which then fragments their life but also defiles everyone in their periphery. [Eph 4:31](#) is a concise description of this fragmented life. This fragmented life NEVER uses the standard of thinking from [Metabolized Bible Doctrine](#) in the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.

The concept of blind love explains bitterness and the entanglement within the arrogance skills which results. When one is frustrated because of always keeping his focus on a few superficial things he admires in others, it is inevitable that he will fail in his spiritual life because he will eventually react with bitterness toward some failure or flaw he perceives in them. Anger from Bitterness minus rebound plus vindictiveness drives one into the Functional Arrogance of Revenge as an unforgiving function of Malice. The hatred involved in self-deception is so great that it often resembles insanity and is irrationality and hostility toward the object of bitterness.



Bitterness can become ruthless, giving no forgiveness then Jealousy and Bitterness interlock to form the strongest forms of Self Justification, Self Deception and Self Absorption in the Arrogance Skills.

Return to the [Table of Contents](#)

### **Gate #8 – The Arrogance of Self Pity**

There are 2 strong trends toward Arrogance in the individual's soul, 1 is Self Pity and the other, its antithesis, is [Self Righteousness](#). Everything which causes pressure in the life of a Self Righteous person arouses the ire of their Self Righteousness and causes them to produce all forms of antagonism, mental, verbal and overt. These same pressures develop in other Arrogant people Self Pity and maximum subjectivity. Both Self Righteousness and Self Pity, while being antithetical, have one principle in common, they take a person totally away from reality with total disorientation to reality. Elijah said to God in his Self Pity "I alone" and left the area where he was supposed to be to hide and die. This is Arrogance and Self Pity. If one entertains a trend toward Self Pity he may feel he is the only one left, he may feel very sorry for himself and come to the place of being totally divorced from reality resulting in total inability to cope with life. Elijah, as a mature believer who was also a great prophet, came to this place in his life and even he, as a great man, failed because of Arrogance and Self Pity where he made an issue of himself.

The believer must relate Bible Doctrine to his personal situations and personal failures but he is not to become a whiner and [Complainer](#) feeling sorry for himself and he must not focus on Self Pity. Relating to life and friends or enemies with Self Pity is NOT the proper orientation for the believer growing in the Spiritual Life. To the extent that one spends time in Self Pity, to that extent, Satan succeeds in his tactical victory and the believer fails in his. Self Pity lines up with Satan's Modus Vivendi because he is the most Arrogant of all creatures ever created by God and the source of all Arrogance and Self Pity is one of the greatest fields for the function of [Pride](#).

Believers today generally have no respect for anything except themselves and that is a false orientation, a disorientation to reality and deep entanglement in Arrogance. The most miserable life possible on earth belongs to the Believer who rejects the doctrines of the bible. When this occurs and results in involved in Arrogance very often the thing that shows is not the various aspects of the Interlocking System of Arrogance but the results of entanglement in Arrogance which is a Self-Pity that has lost all capacity for life. This is the Self Pity often seen when there is [Inordinate Grief](#) from the loss of a loved one. This Self-Pity is totally divorced from the reality of the Plan of God as well as having total inability, even in a mature believer, to use reverse concentration to apply Bible Doctrine to experience. Therefore, Arrogance under pressure not only results in Self-Pity but also an erroneous evaluation of oneself. Attaining spiritual maturity does not warrant a vacation from the dynamics of the [Faith Rest Drill \(5](#)

stages). For if the believer fails to be consistent in his faith-rest drill functions Arrogance, of one form or another, infiltrates the soul like an opportunist probing for a weakness. And the next thing which occurs is this believer is completely under the control of the Interlocking Systems of Arrogance and his Old Sin Nature thus being a SLAVE to Satan.

### **Self Pity & The Woman**

Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul, the source of the woman's inner beauty, is also the source of her drive to keep going when mentally and physically exhausted. Mental and physical exhaustion often results in Self Pity and when this occurs it opens wide the doors into every aspect of Arrogance. Self Pity in the woman, who is a responder, results in her always being inclined, when something is going wrong, to feel sorry for self. This is the inner ugliness of being depressed and full of Self Pity. When this is avoided by the ladies it is an avoidance of Arrogance. When a woman begins to feel sorry for herself she assumes she is the expert on life but not only her life but the life of everyone in her periphery. The woman wallowing in Self Pity, in her Arrogance, becomes bitter, vindictive, implacable, engaging in revenge and will hurt those who hurt her with maligning, judging, and if she is very intelligent she will even develop long range revenge tactics. This woman will be a failure and her dying will be miserable, horrible and disastrous for her.

Return to the [Table of Contents](#)

### **Gate #9 – The Arrogance of Self Righteousness**

Arrogant Self Righteous people are always hypersensitive and one cannot be Arrogantly Self Righteous without having a thin skin and making an issue of self at all times. The believer must never be hypersensitive so that whenever someone says something derogatory to or about him, he never takes it as an insult because that is [Hypersensitivity Arrogance](#). Believers who are hypersensitive are so disoriented to reality that when anything goes wrong in their life they relate it to their personal sins. These are also those believers who think that if they fail the Plan of God fails also. Selfcenteredness causes these people to be preoccupied with their own self importance. As long as everything is going well through their [Logistical Grace](#) provision from God there will be no maligning nor display of hostility toward others. For this type of believer any and every innocent statement has a sinister meaning and is regarded as a conspiracy against them and these believers all have this subjectivity based on their own Self Righteous Arrogance and vanity. This results in no capacity for love and lack of ability to maintain friendships. Under these conditions when disaster strikes a sweet person becomes a raging monster impugning anyone around them as the cause of their suffering.

When such a person is so self willed this can quickly become neurosis or [Psychosis](#) and it starts in childhood and is developed more as life progresses. Even when there exists great ability and talent there is a loss of all the potentialities in life because of this Arrogance. This results from development of [Scar Tissue of the Soul](#) because of consistent rejection of truth but more than that it is the result of deep involvement in the Interlocking System of Arrogance which is where

insensitivity toward others is developed. Self Righteous Arrogant people can only think about self not about anyone else in life.

Very often people who are overtly very nice are filled with Self Righteous Arrogance therefore are totally motivated to help their fellow man, but only to establish their own greatness. Self Righteous Arrogance is Motivational Degeneracy, Motivational Arrogance, derived from the principles of Evil and is the Arrogant pattern of life resulting from consistent resident in Cosmic Dynasphere I. Self righteous people whether believer or unbeliever are always quick to judge others and always hasty to reach false conclusions. God is fair but any time one JUDGES another person he is being UNFAIR. Nice people, kindly, loving, hearts and flowers people who want to help everyone, lose their facade of sweetness and light when confronted by the truth of the Gospel of Christ and Bible Doctrine. THEREFORE, the advancing believer must beware of NICE people. Under the surface of the NICE facade is always found a very active Old Sin Nature with its own personal flaws. These people with their hypersensitivities are just whitewashed Old Sin Natures and the facade peels off very easily under pressure from Bible Doctrine. To avoid Self Righteous Arrogance in self, one must be very careful about judging others because of what they have or what he imagines they have done to him. Self Righteous Arrogance in people causes them to be unable to be accurate in their perceptions and therefore they are never correct in their evaluations of others.

Almost any involvement in the Interlocking System of Arrogance always produces an interlocking with Self Righteous Arrogance which is one of its most commonly discerned manifestations. Self Righteous Arrogance can be considered as Righteous Indignation out of control. This is the attempted super imposition of one's standards on others without their consent and is an interlocking with Crusader and Legalistic Arrogance. This is a conservative reacting against the government's inability to control Crime and the results of the collective Influence of Evil on the population and then taking the law into his own hands for his idea of justice as Revenge or Retaliation. Self Righteous Assumption and Self Righteousness are Arrogant rationalism and the fantasy of comparing one's strengths with someone else's weaknesses. Another absolute principle is that one cannot ever build righteousness on another's unrighteousness. From Paul's Jerusalem Reversionism the believer should learn that rationalism calls forth dormant Arrogance in the life. Paul as a believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God was free from Arrogance at this time. However, by rationalizing he opened the door for the Arrogance of his former self the Pharisee to come back and he was not even able to ride on the spiritual impetus from his own parishioners but failed as a result of his own Arrogance. The Self Righteous Arrogant person, unable to compete with God, seeks to justify his unrighteousness by contending that it promotes, sponsors or helps the Righteousness of God. However, NO system of Self Righteous Arrogance is acceptable to the Righteousness of God. Asceticism is such a system and is totally unacceptable to God. Therefore, one cannot be thankful for the Righteousness of God as long as he cherishes some illusion of Self Righteousness. He cannot be thankful for the Justice of God until he understands that there is more power in the Justice of God than there is in the Love of God for the believer in The Lord Jesus, The Christ. The believer's relationship with the Justice of God depends entirely on the verbalization of this understanding. It is blasphemous to assume that human unrighteousness

promotes anything from God. The Integrity of God, which is composed of the Love, Righteousness and Justice of God, has always existed from Eternity Past long before there was any pseudo righteousness or unrighteousness in the Human Race. Therefore, the righteousness of man cannot, by any stretch of the imagination, promote the Integrity of God which is ETERNAL and PERFECT. The only way for one to assume this is to be totally entrenched in the Interlocking System of Arrogance, full of [Pride](#) and personal Self Righteousness. Man demonstrates his incredible Arrogance when he tries to read himself into the picture regarding the successful function of the Plan of God and he forgets the perfection and eternity of God. Neither man's Self Righteousness nor his unrighteousness can add anything to or subtract anything from the Righteousness of God as part of the Integrity of God.

When involved in Self Righteous Arrogance the greatest stumbling block is that what is true or not true does not make any difference to a Self Righteous person. "I am Self Righteous don't confuse me with facts" is their motto. A Self Righteous person is not interested in Absolute Truth nor what is true and what is false in any situation but only on superimposing their standards on others. The Self Righteous person has standards and everyone must conform to their standards or be badgered to death. The building up of one's self righteousness based on another's unrighteousness and then maintaining it from involvement in Arrogance rather than functioning under Divine Establishment [Integrity](#) is no substitute for any aspect of the Spiritual Life. Such Self Righteousness feeds Pride, inflates the Ego and gives momentum to every aspect of Arrogance leading, inevitably, to the varied productions from this Evil. Life is very difficult for the person who has been building up his personal Self Righteousness on the immorality and unrighteousness of others, along with distorting the [Laws of Divine Establishment](#). He makes favorable comparisons between his Self Righteousness and the unrighteousness of others, to be informed by that comparison that he is better than the immoral man. However, even though he is impressed with his own righteousness, GOD IS NOT IMPRESSED AT ALL WITH HIM.

People are starving for attention and it takes very little to set them off into a system of Self Righteous Arrogance. Boasting is Self Righteousness so that the production of this Self Righteousness generally is [Human Good](#) motivated by the influence of Evil. Being involved in the Interlocking System of Arrogance is, in and of itself, also blasphemous toward the Integrity of God. The Righteousness of God and man's Self Righteousness are absolutely mutually exclusive. There is no place in any of the Adjustments to the Justice of God for man's Self Righteousness, pleasing personality, self effacement, human effort or any other aspect of human ability or function. In addition to these abuses with regard to making [Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God](#), [Rebound Adjustment to the Justice of God](#) is also abused in the same manner. In distortion of the rebound procedure, people want to promise God they will never commit their sins again or they go through some system of penance to PAY for their transgressions, or they stand up and confess sins to the world, or various other systems of trying to EARN forgiveness. None of these is efficacious in obtaining forgiveness for one's sins from God. The principle involved in the rebound procedure is that The Lord Jesus the Christ died a Substitutionary Spiritual Death for ALL sins and naming or acknowledging one's sins to God is simply taking responsibility for them and acknowledging the Grace provision of Christ in paying for them.

The axiom is that 'Arrogant people are totally Self Centered and Self Centered people are incapable of having capacity for life'. In fact, giving Arrogant people all the accouterments of life makes them totally miserable. The self centered believer wants to hear the praise of man even more so than the praise of God. God is not in the business of praising man but His desire is to bless man from His justice. However, this cannot occur when there is involvement in the Interlocking System of Arrogance. Thus, Boasting as an Arrogant Expression + Self Righteousness + Human Good Production is a sign of total Maladjustment to the Justice of God and ignorance of the Integrity of God. Ignorance, in and of itself, generally is a disaster and ignorance in the believer regarding the Integrity of God is the intensification of disaster. Self Righteousness directed toward God is the blaspheme of assuming that the Righteousness of God is not 'good' enough. In this case man's Self Righteousness tries to help God while in fact it is totally incapable of even being acceptable to God in any way. One result of sinfulness is one's Self Righteousness seeking to justify his unrighteousness as promoting and glorifying divine righteousness and this is Legalism. Many people even become angry with God for things which happen to them in life because they cannot compete with Him.

The Arrogance of Self Righteousness blinds the unbeliever to the Grace of God. ([2Cor 4:4](#)) Self Righteousness is in effect the attempted superimposition of human standards over divine standards and human plans over the Divine Decree. Therefore entertaining Self Righteousness is an Arrogant blaspheme against the character and Plan of God. It is a self centered negative attitude excluding everything and everyone that does not comply with one's Arrogant ideas. People involved in Self Righteousness never admit they are wrong about anything and always find excuses for their wrong thoughts, words and actions. Everyone in their periphery is always wrong and they always blame others in order to promote their own Self Righteousness. They will always pass the responsibility for their Human Viewpoint thinking derived from evil, their failed decisions or their antagonistic words onto others or they will say they were only joking or making light of a situation. The Self Righteous person believes that he has been so good for so long that God will surely bless him in a special way. The Arrogance of Self Righteousness is also always found accompanying the [Martyrdom Complex](#).

All human beings, as a result of being born with a genetic Old Sin Nature, will inevitably sin personally. However, dishonor has to be cultivated in one's life and it is developed through consistent Negative Volition toward the Absolute Truth of Bible Doctrine, the Divine Institutions or the Laws of Divine Establishment and it is worse than many sins and is actually Self Righteousness. This, as with all Arrogance, is directly connected to the sin of the greatest angelic creature as a result of his Arrogance. Pride is what is behind Self Righteousness and human effort good deed works righteousness and this is dishonor. Honor is the Righteousness of God imputed at salvation by Grace as a result of faith alone in The Lord Jesus, The Christ alone. Human effort works righteousness is acquired by and functions through some system of legalism attempting to produce salvation or spirituality by one's own human efforts or by adherence to some system of morality, etc.

The moral or Self Righteous person was born with the same Old Sin Nature and the same



imputation of Adam's Original Sin as any other person, moral or immoral. The moral Self Righteous man is just as Guilty before God as the immoral one, BASED ON HIS POSSESSION OF THE GENETIC OLD SIN NATURE. The Self Righteous moral man has incredible Arrogance and Pride regarding his achievements expressing itself in Judging, Maligning, and Gossiping about others. This Self Righteous man does not want to deal with the Justice of God and only makes comparisons, favorable to himself, comparing with the immoral man. This allows him to rationalize self into a state of having presumed security as a result of his Arrogance by saying "I am better than these immoral others". This was the daily expression used by the Pharisees in Israel. By making comparable rationalizations of his morality against immorality he comes to the blasphemy of judgment presenting his own Self Righteousness as the basis for setting self up as the judge. He assumes that he is the one who should form opinions about others, this is from pure Arrogance directly derived from Evil. Therefore, Self Righteousness in the Norms and Standards of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul plus Pride is what makes this person a self appointed judge. Self Righteous people often pick on people perceived as being helpless. These Self Righteous people in the name of doing their duty will, in any way possible, try to destroy others who are not in line with their own Self Righteous Arrogance. Judging others also reflects their degradation down through the stages of [Reversionism](#) especially Legalistic Reversionism. In addition, the Self Righteous type has [Inordinate Ambition](#) which demands the use of personal Arrogance related to his Self Righteous or Legalistic Modus Vivendi.

From the area of weakness of the Old Sin Nature man is tempted to produce Personal Sin while from the area of strength he is tempted to produce Self Righteous Human Good. The Justice of God judges and condemns both sinfulness, which is a manifestation of spiritual death, and Self Righteousness as a manifestation of involvement in the Interlocking System of Arrogance. Furthermore, Self Righteousness is a total lack of [Integrity](#) and is the reason there is no integrity in legalism where instead believers are saturated with Arrogance. Lacking integrity but possessing Arrogance, Self Righteous persons judge each other by the use of Slander, Maligning, Gossip and unfounded criticism all as a result of Evil saturating their soul. The Self Righteous believer regards himself as a favorite of the PARTIAL God, as a result of his conformity to the Evil forms of [Religion](#) which in the case of the Jews was adherence only to the prohibitions of the Mosaic Law. The Mosaic Law is perfect and has great spiritual value within the context of its proper use. However, it also is a vehicle for the Arrogant to pick up a set of false norms to strengthen his Self Righteousness by distorting it. Inwardly the Self Righteous person is sinful, saturated with the influence of Evil, vicious and despises the real manifestation of God in Bible Doctrine, the God of Grace.

Divine judgment inevitably always falls on those who are maladjusted to the Justice of God, many times through gossip and maligning of others. There is no profit to the believer who is saturated with Evil and is maladjusted to the Justice of God and is lacking Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul. ([2Pet 2:22](#)) To be the kind of fool described in v22 there must be inordinate [Pride](#) and extensive involvement in the Interlocking System of Arrogance and [Reversionism](#). The Self Righteous unbeliever is one of the most Arrogant persons on this earth and this is only exceeded by the Self Righteous Arrogance of the believer in Reversionism. Self Righteous Arrogance is one of the most awful things with which

a member of the Human Race can be infected and it is a totally contagious condition. In order to not be ostracized, shunned or ill thought of, people will change their thinking, attitudes, language, dress and appearance, in order to be able to join into the Self Righteous Arrogant crowd.

If one is Arrogant and Self Righteous he lives in a world of fantasy and when this world collapses and he does not have the Integrity of God and has not engaged in consistent [Temporal Adjustment to the Justice of God](#) through Perception, Cognition, Incultation & Metabolization of Bible Doctrine as something to fall back on, he WILL collapse and mentally fall to pieces. When dealing with Arrogant Self Righteousness, Maladjustment to the Justice of God and blaspheme toward divine integrity, is never tolerated nor is racial or national Pride acceptable to God when linked in this way. Self Righteous Jews or many Americans in our time who are Maladjusted to the Justice of God are Arrogant in this way. This is the Arrogant American tourist traveling in Europe or Asia today. This is the melanoderm in this nation thinking that only “black lives matter”.

Arrogance is cognizant of personal Self Righteousness but ignorant of the imputation of the Righteousness of God as basis for His justification of the believer. Arrogance is very often strongly aware in all situations but this is subjective awareness and results in the Arrogant one being only aware of their own personal attributes and situation. This selfcenteredness is always sponsored by Arrogance where everything is related only to self and therefore is the worst part of human subjectivity. Arrogant people, therefore, have great areas of awareness with regard to self and they respond to this awareness in a way which appears to be objective but is in reality simply subjectivity building pseudo objectivity. This is why Arrogant people have no capacity for life because their entire life is selfcenteredness based on Arrogance. Distraction of the believer from consistent intake of Bible Doctrine results in selfcenteredness and when these people face strong adversity selfcenteredness is converted to [Self Pity](#) and this demonstrates their lack of capacity for life. However, as soon as the pressure is relieved their Self Righteousness is back again. It is amazing how fast an irrational person can make the transition from Self Pity to Self Righteousness and how fast they can return to Self Pity. One of the worst situations in life is to enter into category II or III relationships in which the individuals one is involved with are full of Arrogance. This type of relationship results in one doing all the giving and receiving nothing. Many individuals will build up a system of Self Righteousness and are very aware when people admire their Self Righteousness and how they adhere to systems of morality or some other system of legalism. Being very cognizant of admiration, when it is not forthcoming, they tend toward asceticism using this to attract the attention they desire.

Self Righteousness can be ecclesiastical, political, or social. Political Self Righteousness is seen in situations such as Watergate, or systems such as Socialism, Encroaching Environmentalism related to business, etc. Social Self Righteous people are the worst to be around and they totally lack a sense of humor. The relationship between God and man is distorted and destroyed by the presence of any Arrogance including Self Righteousness in man regardless of its source. Believers are not exempt from this and some of the worst cases of Arrogant Self

Righteousness belong to believers. [Humility](#) developed in man orients him to the Righteousness of God while the Arrogance of man orients him to his own Self Righteousness. Expressing Faith alone in Christ is the only true act of humility for the unbeliever to combat Self Righteous Arrogance. Self Righteousness can be so self centered and so Arrogant as to reject the Righteousness of God offered to man through simple faith in the Substitutionary Spiritual Death of The Lord Jesus, The Christ for All of man's failures as sin.

### **[Self Righteous Arrogance and Power](#)**

Self Righteous Arrogance has more power than [Criminal Arrogance](#) and the Self Righteous person in a Local Church, business, social group or profession always has more power and causes more disruption than the criminal does in criminal arrogance. Self Righteous Arrogance is morality without virtue thus the importance of the priority of Virtue First in the Plan of God. Morality minus virtue leads to Self Righteous Arrogance and is the path which leads to the Organized Systematic Evil of Religion and Legalism very often the means by which dictators rise to power.

Self Righteous Arrogance is one of the greatest manifestations of personal inadequacy thus is one of the greatest manifestations of Arrogance. Self Righteous Arrogance divorces the believer from reality and this often results in Self Righteousness under prosperity and in good times but becoming psychotic in the future when things turn bad and the believer switches to Self Pity Arrogance and cannot handle the bad times. Therefore, the believer involved in Cosmic Dynasphere I, the Interlocking System of Arrogance, where he is preoccupied with self, will look into himself until he finds something which pleases him and this will cause his Self Righteous Arrogance to rise up and crusade for changes which complement what pleases him in Self Righteousness. The Self Righteous individual reacts to any situation or condition which they think is unjust or unfair and although there is always some area in which they themselves have failed, these are ignored because, as an Arrogant person, they are ignoring reality. This is what pushes the Self Righteous believer into [Crusader Arrogance](#).

This is the function of Self Righteous Arrogance in opposition to the Grace Policy of God where the standards of God for Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and being a winner believer by executing the Plan of God are all set aside because of [Locked in Rejection](#) of his Plan. The Self Righteousness of this individual then devises his own system that involves spiritual achievement coming through some system of Human Effort Works. Therefore, Self Righteous Arrogance entangled with Blind Arrogance sets aside the priority in the Plan of God of Virtue First, developed in the Authority Envelope and Integrity Envelope of the Divine Dynasphere. In addition the whole concept of the importance of THOUGHT in the system of God is set aside and this believer will now become a great WORKER to help God and thus a wonderful person. This person becomes so divorced from reality that he becomes irrational and the inevitable malfunction of his Self Righteousness will eventually cause him to do something which will totally SHOCK himself. When this occurs, because he lacks Bible Doctrine and thus cannot use the Rebound Procedure to recover into the System of God, he therefore, cannot come back to Bible Doctrine. Thus he begins to rationalize the fragments of the arrogance grenade permeating his life, in a weak attempt to try to heal himself which only pushes him further

away from REALITY. Eventually some emotional experience will put this believer back up on his self created Self Righteous pedestal claiming the Plan of God succeeds or fails on the basis of what he does.

The reality is that a Self Righteous believer can be moral and also be right or wrong, so that whether one is truly right or wrong while being moral is only determined by whether he is functioning under the principles of the Cosmic Dynaspheres or the Divine Dynasphere. Morality in the Divine Dynasphere is Virtue Morality while Morality in the Cosmic Dynasphere is Arrogant or Evil Morality. Therefore, Self Righteous Arrogance is Motivational Arrogance or Motivational Degeneracy derived from the principles of Evil. In their Arrogant Morality these believers react to the failure of other believers whose sins are more overt and less sophisticated than theirs. They consider that these other believer may have believed in The Lord Jesus, The Christ but are not truly Christian because they:

- ▲ Did not make a commitment
- ▲ Did not enter into Lordship
- ▲ Were not baptized
- ▲ Have committed a shocking sin
- ▲ or some other overt expression or function.

In fact in the early precanon Church Age those who were not circumcised were often not considered believers, Christians. This is an entire system of compounding the mechanics of Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God with all sorts of heresies by trying to ADD human efforts to Salvation which in fact nullifies it.

### **Self Righteous Arrogance related to Impulsive Arrogance**

The Interlocking System of Arrogance relates Impulsive Arrogance to Self Righteous Reactions. Self Righteous Reactions are a part of Self Righteousness in prosperity under Negative Volition but are also a manifestation of Arrogance where the believer has been awarded a great deal of power and authority. Self Righteousness is always in opposition to Grace. It is most likely that Saul of Tarsus, who was saved on the Damascus road, did not have any friends, having broken all personal barriers as a result of his Self Righteousness. Self Righteous people are not at all popular and do not attract friends and in fact they are repulsive to most normal people. The level of Self Righteousness in Saul of Tarsus is one of the things which made him the worst sinner in history. To have righteousness in the sense of having strong integrity and honor is wonderful but to have Self Righteousness from pseudo integrity and dishonor is terrible and the only thing worse is flaunting it. Self Righteousness interlocking with other categories of Arrogance can only be classified as indefatigably insufferable. Self Righteous Arrogance, therefore, is a Self Righteous reaction or a righteous indignation OUT OF CONTROL illustrated by:

A Conservative who reacts to the failure of the liberal government to control production from Evil or Crime and takes the law into his own hands. Taking the law into one's own hands is the Self Righteous reaction. This is what Elijah did in ordering the execution of the 450 prophets of Baal on Mt Carmel. (1Kings 18:40)

Today this is the righteous indignation of the law abiding citizen who is very moral and self righteous and has Laws of Divine Establishment norms and standards in his soul and with these + Arrogance reacts to the unfair system of income tax and therefore cheats on his income tax putting himself into Self Righteous Reaction. This is also the same flaw seen in the one who decides to NOT pay their taxes. This person does not understand “Render unto Caesar that which is Caesar’s”. ([Matt 22:21](#))

Contradiction of the Righteousness of God comes from Self Righteous Arrogance in the Believer, and this is the Arrogance of the [Activist](#) in “helping” God with his universal condemnation of others. When the person in command, the one who has the authority in a group or organization, has one ounce of Arrogance it can very easily be fanned into GREAT Arrogance and then manifests itself in Self Righteousness. A leader cannot ever have personal feelings about those under his command else it will manifest in the Arrogance of Self Righteousness. America is a nation of Self Righteous, Arrogant, prissy people focused on pseudo personal love while in fact the people today have no idea what love is really about. Liberalism emphasizes pseudo personal LOVE while conservatism emphasizes [INTEGRITY](#) which it acquires from following the Laws of Divine Establishment, the Divine Institutions and Bible Doctrine. The United States of America is composed generally of liberals who want to love everyone and help minorities and stick their noses into everyone else’s business but reject the integrity fostered by the Laws of Divine Establishment and the Divine Institutions.

### **Self Righteous Arrogance related to National Arrogance**

The Self Righteousness of both unbeliever and believer is the ultimate cause of national disaster in history. Today, in the United States of America, Americans have lost patriotic Pride and have been developing, from the time of Franklin Roosevelt, a [National Arrogance](#). This national Arrogance is clearly seen in the scum of society, whom are socially tolerated and supported by the government, and also in the regulatory bureaucracies of government, which constantly try to tell big business how to run itself and as a result have been destroying American free enterprise for many decades. In addition to these dregs of society there is labor controlled by criminal unions trying to run business and demanding wages, work conditions and security greatly beyond what they are worth.

National Arrogance truly began with the BLACKMAIL of the individual states by the Federal Government at the time of the 2<sup>nd</sup> War for Independence, the War between the States. The 55 mph maximum highway speed limits of the recent past or the judicial system requiring minorities as labor to complete construction of any government project contract IS blackmail of the states by the Federal Government. This starts with [EGOTISM](#) in the people based on personal and pious Self Righteousness and [Guilt](#) which arises from total misinterpretation of American history. This had been clearly revealed by the speeches of Jimmy Carter. American history has, since the formation and signing of the Declaration of Independence and Constitution, always been distrust of Central or Federal government and the constitution was written specifically with that in mind. All authority in this constitutional governmental system was written into the sovereign states and the federal government was to be the servant of the people and not the Tyrannical Blackmailer of the people. When this blackmail occurred it was



and still is as a result of federal funds offered or being withheld from states for considerations which the federal government wants implemented. These FUNDS are in fact taxpayer monies NOT FEDERAL MONIES. Communism in Russia, China, and other areas of the world along with moslems throughout the world even today continue to blackmail the United States of America into extreme weakness and many, many millions of people in the world have been enslaved as a result of America's capitulation. Many peoples and nations are learning from and practicing the blackmail principles found in the government of the United States of America and America has led people into a period of history where there is NO honor and NO integrity among people nor nations and only a saturation of [Reversionism](#). All this continued blackmail by the Federal Government would be impossible except for the fact that every person in the government today, the judges, the senate and congress, the president, and above all those in the bureaucracies, are all functioning within the Interlocking System of Arrogance. Every person in the government thinks that in their realm they are GOD. They think they speak as the voice of God. The only other time in history when this level of Self Righteous Arrogance has existed in any nation was in the few generations before the fall of the Roman Empire. The people of the United States of America have come to think of themselves in terms of spiritual narcissism. This has occurred as a result of the influence of [Religion](#) from the national council of churches and liberalism, where every liberal thinks he has the absolute panacea solution for the problems of the human condition. Therefore, every principle of freedom, privacy and free enterprise has been set aside. Labor is constantly blackmailing the federal government and the federal government is blackmailing the states and the states blackmail various groups within their jurisdiction and as a result there is a [Criminal Arrogance](#) started by the Self Righteousness in the people. It includes the Arrogance of the liberal in thinking that shutting down a business and destroying free enterprise is somehow related to solving a problem as one or more of his pet panaceas and that this is right and good and God certainly approves. The news media is also in the blackmailing business and thinking they have the power of God they ignore news and do not present truth and facts but present their own distortions rather than actually fulfilling the responsibility of the 4th estate and telling it like it is and letting the people decide what to do about it. This also applies to individual men and women who think they are the ultimate gift to the opposite sex. At every level of society there is such a saturation of Self Righteous Arrogance that it is almost beyond belief and today, in the early 21<sup>st</sup> century, America is in the midst of the disasters perceived and outlined in the biblical studies presented in the 1970-80 period by R. B. Thieme Jr. Everywhere and in every venue fundamental Christians, Politicians, EVERYONE, including and especially young people, are totally Arrogant.

The United States of America as a client nation to God in this early 21<sup>st</sup> century is facing the imminent disaster of the [5th cycle of Divine Discipline](#) in part as a result of the saturation of Self Righteous Arrogance in the people. There has been a false confidence from the 1960s to the present as to the place in history and the indestructibility of the United States. Under proper governmental function, based on adherence to the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions, people are to have protection of the rights to life, volitional choice, privacy and property and be able to follow their own direction and desires in freedom. People are not by any stretch of the imagination born [EQUAL](#) nor are they equal in any aspect of life. The

American constitution is designed to guarantee protection of the divinely given freedom and rights and government legislation is not designed to, and in fact cannot, solve any of the problems of human living. The true purpose of government is to protect individuals and businesses or groups from infringements on FREEDOM which is what crime is. Legislation is supposed to guarantee one's freedom to function in any way desired as long as it does not interfere with another's freedom to do the same. Prior to the beginning of World War II the United States did not choose to help the nation of Hungary when it begged for help to prevent communism taking over. Now from the 1970's to the present America continually interferes with other nations without any request at all. The government has interfered with big business such as General Motors and the major Oil Companies to the point of taking over the industry totally in some cases or regulating them into failure. America is saturated with Self Righteous Arrogance and this is a liberal function which is clearly leading to national destruction. The total absolute Arrogance in the American people has caused the government to give to Russia, China and Middle Eastern moslem countries food and technical help in building vehicles and developing industry for THEIR prosperity. Americans have persisted in this Arrogance from the mid 1900's to the present and will be destroyed as a result of it. It is an incontestable fact that when people become Arrogant they become blind to reality. The average citizen in the United States of America thinks that as a nation America is God's gift to the world. The reality is that America cannot even begin to handle her own affairs but still, in her Self Righteous Arrogance, tells other nations how to handle theirs so that the world can be changed. Americans have learned from the communists how to blackmail smaller nations and extort them to the point of controlling them and the small nations have learned this from America and use it to control the United States.

When believers enter Reversionism in large numbers this results in the status quo of Collective APOSTASY in the nation. As a result then Self Righteous Arrogance prevails as part of Evil and when it occurs in the client nation to God, the client nation is ruined. Negative Volition toward Bible Doctrine also destroys the client nation and believers in the United States of America have become totally Arrogant and Self Righteous and are on the verge of self destruction as a result of all of this. Any time liberalism, in its broad ramifications, is entertained and followed by the citizens of a nation, the people are saturated with Self Righteous Arrogance and they and their government assume they can fill the role of God. ([Hos 4:1-6](#)) The survival of any [Client Nation](#) to God is totally based on the attitude of the people toward Bible Doctrine. There is a difference between being authorized as a priesthood for spiritual things in a nation and the authorization of a nation as God's priest or client nation to protect and disseminate his doctrines, and the latter has been the Status Quo of the United States of America since its birth. Unfortunately, the United States is and continues to be FAILING in its responsibility to God.

All forms of Arrogance will always display to some degree some selfcenteredness and subjectivity. The Arrogant person will take things as personal affronts which are not personal and may hear a bible message and think the Pastor Teacher is talking about him personally. This is subjectivity and incredible Arrogance and is the manifestation of one who is locked into the Interlocking System of Arrogance, thinking he is the most important thing for God in this

world. His whole life is based around being with or finding those who recognize him as the most important person in the world and those who do not are his enemies. This is the relationship between Criminal Arrogance and [Psychopathic Arrogance](#). All insane people are subjectively self centered and totally insensitive about other people. You can determine your own normalcy vs insanity by evaluating your concern for others. This type of Arrogance under pressure can result in committing crimes, going insane, becoming part of a conspiracy, revolting against some authority, being a poor or monstrous lover and trying to always prove something to others. Insane altruism as a part of Self Righteous Arrogance is [Human Good](#) production carried to the maximum and these are abnormal people having their Human Good expanded as a result of gross influence from Evil thereby engaging them in the production of crime. This altruism is the idea of wanting the government to provide food, shelter, clothing and other accouterments for the scum or RIF RAF in society. There are no true racial issues in the United States of America and insane altruistic people must always create a problem related to race and then solve it through their own Arrogance. By doing this they compound the problems of the nation and today this is demonstrated by the overt racism among the people promoted in the media and press. This type likes to find some down trodden or seemingly abused group, including criminals, homosexuals, Hispanics, blacks and especially today Illegal Immigrants and do something big for them saying that they should have special rights. This has resulted in the hamstringing of the courts with the proclaimed of rights to criminals. Think back to the principle of criminality, it is an INDIVIDUAL using his own volition to set himself outside of the RULES, the LAWS of society. So what are his rights? America used to have a few innocents who were unfortunately tried and convicted for crimes they had not committed but today thousands and thousands who are Guilty are released with only short liberal sentences and in effect no real punishment for their voluntary actions in crime. This is where the vast majority of crime in the nation comes from. This is the result of leniency of the judicial system toward criminals and the cause of ILLEGAL aliens non-citizens freely committing crimes and being allowed into every aspect and position in this country. This is the function of OSHA, EPA, BATFE, HEW, IRS and many other departments and bureaucracies in the government. This is even much of the legitimate government trying to make rules or laws to correct difficulties in society, including the judges in courts INTERPRETING constitutional law instead of simply enforcing it. This is the saving of society from pollutants by closing “bad” industries demonstrated by the closing of the last LEAD smelter in the United States of America because of the dangers of lead poisoning and this is INSANE Altruism. This is the closing of nuclear plants to protect the environment from radiation resulting from POTENTIAL melt downs. This is Obama preventing the keystone pipeline from going through the United States of America to protect the environment. One of the worst things about the Interlocking System of Arrogance is that it keeps the believer from recognizing his own failures and then using the [Rebound Procedure](#) to recover. As a result of taking too much time between rebound functions life becomes truly complicated and when this status is universal in the client nation, national disaster inevitably results.

### **Self Righteous Arrogance related to Salvation**

One of the most common systems of establishing personal Self Righteousness is to say NO to the gospel of The Lord Jesus, The Christ. This is rejection of the Substitutionary Spiritual

Death of Christ on the cross providing the potential for [Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God](#). When a person says no to this he MUST link his Self Righteousness with some other system to justify his existence. Man inevitably does this through [Morality](#) or [Legalism](#) and the Jew naturally does this by trying to keep the Mosaic Law. In the United States of America people are loving the unlovely and trying to be nice to the down trodden and they try to appease blacks, Hispanics, illegals and moslems and any of the less fortunate in the world in general. America is and has been for a long time on a mad jag of Human Good Production and this is the Arrogance of seeking to establish personal collective Self Righteousness. Unfortunately the recognition of and function under the imputed Righteousness of God received at the point of Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God can only be established for the believer by his daily Perception, Cognition, Incultation & Metabolization of Bible Doctrine, which is generally rejected today. In contrast, human Self Righteousness, being Motivational Arrogance, seeks and establishes systems of morality or spirituality by personal good deeds or adherence to taboos and both legitimate or illegitimate human effort works.

No one, including the Jew can possess the Righteousness of God without faith alone in Substitutionary Spiritual Death of The Lord Jesus, The Christ alone. For either Jew or gentile to try to substitute Self Righteousness through keeping the law or some other legalistic system, for the imputation of the Righteousness of God becomes the quintessence of blasphemy and [Blind Arrogance](#) by which they entangle themselves deeply in the Interlocking System of Arrogance. There is a historical trend of Jewish rejection of The Lord Jesus, The Christ in this Church Age dispensation where the majority of Jews will reject Christ as Messiah, Savior. These unbeliever Jews follow the pattern of the [Big Blot Out](#) and will have no participation in the covenant blessings from God for Israel. They understand but reject the gospel which results in [Reversionism](#) with maximum Scar Tissue of the Soul, and in their rejection they often move into the Interlocking System of Antagonistic Emotional Hatred and become totally antagonistic toward Christianity. This is not unusual in the United States of America in the Church Age and generally Jewish Christians are not tolerated and their families very often regard them as dead.

The Jews continue to ignore the Righteousness of God provided through Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God by faith alone in Christ and continually try to gain salvation by MORALITY. Morality is not the Christian Way of Life, however, it is included in the Christian Way of Life along with God the Holy Spirit using the Protocol Plan of God to create [Virtue](#) in the believer. As far as Righteousness is concerned Christ is the termination of any system of human Self Righteousness since faith in Christ results in the imputation of the Righteousness of God as a result of [Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God](#). 2 of the [40 assets](#) given us at Salvation by God include the imputed Absolute Righteousness of God the Father and sharing the Absolute Righteousness of Christ as a result of the [Baptism of God the Holy Spirit](#) placing us into positional union with Christ. Obviously no system of Human Self Righteousness can compete with the Absolute Righteousness of God. In a nutshell, Law Observance righteousness is no substitute for Faith righteousness. ([Gal 2:16](#))

Obviously then, God is not impressed with any human Self Righteousness ([Is 64:6](#)) and here Isaiah explains that human Self Righteousness in any form is like Filthy Menstrual Rags in

God's sight. God is impressed ONLY with the Substitutionary Spiritual Death of The Lord Jesus, The Christ on the cross under the principle of Propitiation. God, being satisfied with the Substitutionary Spiritual Death of Christ, therefore, imputes his own Absolute Righteousness to anyone who expresses faith alone in The Lord Jesus, The Christ alone. Faith in Christ is the end of Self Righteousness because human Self Righteousness cannot improve on the perfect imputed Absolute Righteousness of God for man. After Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God only God the Holy Spirit controlling the life of the believer can produce the Virtue Righteousness of the Protocol Plan of God. (Gal 5:18, Eph 5:16) Therefore, the absolute dogmatic principle is that the imputation of Absolute Righteousness at the instant of making Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God through faith alone in Christ alone replaces any system of human Self Righteousness or pseudo spirituality or any Arrogance from legalism. The perfection of the Plan of God is clearly demonstrated by the FACT that there is nothing which man can do to gain salvation and nothing man can do to LOSE it. No sin can ever nullify Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God and it is BLIND Arrogance to assume any sin can cancel salvation. Sin, the Apostasy of Reversionism, the Degeneracy of Arrogance, the Antagonism of Emotionalism, Human Effort Good Deeds all from Evil cannot, even all together, cancel the Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God of any believer. In addition no individual can establish 2 conflicting system of righteousness in his life and he will either accept his own Self Righteousness or the Righteousness of God in Christ. For the unbeliever the conflict is between Salvation by human effort good deed works or salvation by Grace through Faith in Christ. After Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God the conflict for the believer is between legalistic pseudo spirituality by Self Righteous Human Good works or true Spirituality by Grace.

Saving Grace == instantaneous Adjustment to the Justice of God through faith alone in the Substitutionary Spiritual Death of The Lord Jesus, The Christ alone. People always want or need to take the doctrine of the gospel and add feelings, actions or doing something such as repentance or penance in order to believe they have EARNED their place in God's plan and thus DESERVE it. This is true Arrogance in this person and Arrogance wants to make a process out of salvation and share a part of the action and part of the credit and recognition, but this salvation GIFT is given to man by the Grace policy of the Grace Plan of God. The plan and policy of Grace from God is in actuality everything that the believer can receive from God which he CANNOT EARN and DOES NOT DESERVE. Arrogance always takes something which is right and perfect and, by adding to it, destroys it, resulting in, in the case of the gospel, NO SALVATION. There is and can be no credit for anyone in Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God so that when one tries to gain credit for his efforts in salvation he fails in this Adjustment to the Justice of God.

The Arrogant Self Righteous Pastor Teacher's delusion is seen in the Arrogant emphasis on superficialities such as rituals or taboos and when they approach the bible with Arrogance instead of humility or with Self Righteousness instead of objectivity they can only scrape superficialities off of it. The primary purpose of the Mosaic Law is **condemnation** but the Legalistic pastor teacher, in Arrogance, turns this into **commendation**. The Mosaic Law reveals how to Adjust to the Justice of God but the legalistic Self Righteous believer rejects this means



and the gospel and bible doctrine, distorting the law and its content into a system of Self Righteous Arrogance totally derived from the principles of Evil. It is, therefore, obviously possible to take something true, good and wonderful and distort it under Evil resulting in Self Righteous Arrogance in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul. All Self Righteous Arrogant people emphasize what they can do while minimizing what they fail to be able to do. The primary key to witnessing to the Self Righteous person is to first get him to stop judging others and start judging himself. The Self Righteous unbeliever will emphasize overt sins in which he does not participate such as stealing, fornication and idolatry, to the almost complete exclusion of other categories of and commandments dealing with sin. The emphatic inconsistency of Self Righteousness also misinterprets reality, and while being blind to their own sins they are acutely alert to the sins of others. The ironic thing about this Legalism is that these unbelievers, and often believers, emphasize keeping the law and being overtly moral but totally fail to do so themselves. ([Rom 2:22-24](#))

When a person rejects God at God Consciousness or The Lord Jesus, The Christ at gospel hearing it results in a vacuum created in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul which needs information and therefore sucks in all forms of the principles of Evil and the false doctrines from Satan's Cosmic Dynaspheres. The fact is that after consistent rejection of [Absolute Truth](#) the individual is then only capable of believing the Lie of false doctrine and Evil. This same thing occurs in the believer who develops a system like the unbeliever of Self Righteousness which can in no possible way compare to the Absolute Righteousness of God. This is the reason that both believers and unbelievers think their [Personal Opinion](#) has any true value and is so very important. This is why Americans think that [Public Opinion](#), especially today, is so important and that everyone needs to know what the man on the street thinks. There NEVER was a nation in Human History which depended for blessing, prosperity and greatness on what the man on the street thinks. The “Man on the Street” is the sum total of idiocy and Arrogance and it should NEVER EVER be what the man on the street thinks but only what responsible people think and especially what believers with Maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul think about any situation. The only truly important thing in life is what the word of God says about any situation or circumstance since this is the Thinking of Christ. ([1Cor 2:16](#)) Self Righteousness is as Motivational Arrogance is blind to Absolute Truth. As a result, in the individual, Self Righteous Arrogance decides what is right and what is wrong and totally rejects all [Authority](#) outside of oneself. Theology and Bible Doctrine are systematic, logical, rational and categorical and everything of Bible Doctrine should fall into its proper place. When these principles are in place in one's Stream of Consciousness of the Soul as a mature believer, having shed all Self Righteousness, then he is functioning in the Protocol Plan of God. As the believer grows up in the Spiritual Life he becomes more and more particular about what he will believe or accept from life and from the Opinions of others. When believers advance in the Spiritual Life to [Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God](#) or beyond, they are extreme in their thinking and particularly exclusive in their associations. If one comes to the bible with Arrogance he goes away thinking about how good he is but if he comes to the bible with [Humility](#) he goes away understanding how great God is. Arrogance always distorts concepts and principles from Bible Doctrine into Self Righteousness and this backed up by gross entanglement in other aspects of the Interlocking System of

Arrogance is the most devastating thing in the Spiritual Life.

Rejection of The Lord Jesus, The Christ often results in the unbeliever using some human effort system as an instrument of Self Righteousness and an expression of human Arrogance for pseudo salvation or pseudo spirituality. The greatest problems in life and the greatest sins in life are related to and associated with Arrogance and are often hidden and not obvious to the one using them. Arrogance keeps more people out of heaven than anything else in the life of man. This is true especially where Self Righteousness becomes the basis for engaging in some pseudo system of Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God. The assumption that God will save a person because he is good, sweet, kind and helpful to the helpless is part of a phenomenal system of Arrogance related to Human Good production motivated by principles of Evil.

Therefore, Arrogance approves of human effort works performed by oneself and rejects the work of God called Grace, the Substitutionary Spiritual Death of Christ for ALL sin. Arrogance helps create the vacuum of the soul which sucks in every false doctrine and principle of Evil, accepting false as true and making true, false. It is inevitable that rejection of the Righteousness of God imputed to the new believer as a result of his faith alone in The Lord Jesus, The Christ alone will be replaced with Arrogant Self Righteousness. Rejection of Christ as savior always leads to the establishing of some form of Self Righteousness and this is historically simple for the Jews who consistently engage in distortions of the Mosaic Law. The continuous attempt to establish personal Self Righteousness is constant today from both Jews and Gentiles and especially “religious” individuals under Negative Volition toward Bible Doctrine. This also applies to believers under Negative Volition toward Bible Doctrine who want to establish their own Self Righteousness from involvement in some system of legalism. Every believer who fails in the Christian Way of Life fails because he seeks to establish his own Self Righteousness and make an issue out of his own life and this is involvement in the Interlocking System of Arrogance. Every believer fails in a myriad of various ways in life and they also have a pet area of ‘holiness’ which they consider successes and when they allow these to become the overriding issue in their life they thereby seek to establish their own righteousness through it. This is the greatest blasphemy a believer can engage in, seeking to establish personal Self Righteousness in this life while already possessing the Absolute Righteousness from God. This is the case with believers who are totally disinterested in Bible Doctrine and totally satisfied with their own lives and have, as a result, established their own Self Righteousness. They live a LIE from involvement under Evil and a blasphemy from every breath they take and every moment they live. This includes any believers involved in the “tongues movement”, the emotional Christians, all who are suffering from the worst kind of Arrogance, that of establishing their own Self Righteousness. Believers who choose to live ascetically have every right to do so but when they advertise it and thus seek approbation as a result of living this way and use it to establish their own Self Righteousness they have failed miserably in the Spiritual Life. When they decide that they are God’s gift to the world and have found the secret to Christian living and then seek to superimpose this system on others either subtly or sometimes obviously through the bullying of [Legalism](#) or [Crusaderism](#), this becomes a simple system of Self Righteous Arrogance.

**Justification** of the new believer is a demonstration of the magnificence of the function of the Integrity of God at the point of the unbeliever making Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God. It was necessary to provide for man a receptacle for blessing from the Justice of God since man with his genetic Old Sin Nature does not qualify for any contact with God. The foundation of the believer's ability to receive blessing from God is justification which results from the judicial imputation of the Righteousness of God to each new believer at Salvation. Justification eliminates any need for or the purpose for human Arrogance. Boasting is an expression of Self Righteous Arrogance where a system of Self Righteousness, human works or having a pleasing personality, has attempted to intrude the efforts of man into the Plan of God. After receiving the Righteousness of God at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God many believers immediately become involved in a system of righteousness which is blasphemous to God. These systems are with the believer developing the illusion that God is impressed with what they think, say or do and this is very often because people around them are impressed with these things. These systems include **Human Good** efforts or works, Legalism, asceticism, tithing, overt or competitive witnessing, speaking gibberish as pseudo tongues, etc. God is only impressed with his own Divine Essence particularly his Absolute Righteousness and Absolute Justice. The real question is who does this believer think he is when he tries to set up a system which competes with the process of the imputation of the Absolute Righteousness of God to him at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God.

The only believers who glorify God in time and eternity are those who receive the imputation of blessing in time and who also will receive it in eternity. One can work oneself to death in life doing legitimate or illegitimate things, assuming or proclaiming that they are for God. However, these make no difference whatsoever to God and this one does not glorify God in any way by what he does BUT he is enhancing his Arrogant Self Righteousness and helping to improve the **Devil's World**. The reality of the Christian Way of Life is that God does not give a RATS ASS what the believer does EXCEPT in 2 areas. God expects and demands consistent use of the Rebound Procedure and consistent Post Salvation Epistemological Rehabilitation from Perception, Cognition, Inculcation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine. Arrogance is the origin of **Inflexibility**, Self Righteousness, **Cowardice** and **Pseudo Intellectuality**. Neglect of Bible Doctrine as a result of Self Righteous Arrogance results in cowardice and this results in this person being dead while alive.

At Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God the new believer receives **39 Irrevocable Assets** including the Righteousness of God and as a result of this he, in effect, renounces any system of Self Righteousness and any motivation from Arrogance for Self Righteousness. Unfortunately, most believers, immediately after Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God, become involved in some system of morality or doing good deeds and return to their Self Righteousness. They therefore, switch directly into Arrogance and thereby build up their own Self Righteousness ending by moving consistently down through the stages of **Reversionism** and ultimately leaving this life NOT glorifying God but under the extreme Divine Discipline of the **Sin Unto Death**. This is total inconsistency in the potential set up for the Christian Way of Life and why the book of Romans must be understood as quickly as possible after Salvation Adjustment to the

Justice of God. The cause for this is most likely what errors occur during evangelism or witnessing. Here, the one presenting the gospel of The Lord Jesus, The Christ erroneously brings into the picture sin, morality and other inconsequential things such as giving, doing good, loving the brethren, etc. Thereby totally distorting or obscuring the case for salvation. Self Righteousness includes any form of good deed or human effort righteousness for salvation and any form of good deed or human effort works for spirituality and is a major part of Motivational Arrogance. Self Righteousness is Motivational Arrogance and [Negative Volition](#) is the momentum for Self Righteousness resulting in a disorientation to reality as the result of this Self Righteousness. This is true for both false systems which function in the Christian Way of Life where both pseudo salvation and pseudo spirituality occur as a result of the good deeds or human effort works of the individual. Arrogance says it is what “I” do which counts for salvation and spirituality and thus Grace as the policy of God is totally rejected. The superficial and Legalistic Jew invents his own pivot for the Plan of God and tries to make the Plan of God move around his own Arrogance rather than seeing that the Plan of God moves ONLY around the Integrity of God. No one can substitute Self Righteousness for the Righteousness of God and even gentiles saved in the Old Testament Scripture times did not seek salvation based on their own Self Righteousness and did not try to be saved by pursuing their own Self Righteousness.

The many categories of Salvation by works all originate from human Arrogance and ignorance of Bible Doctrine. The Jews have the Mosaic Law and it's works, in the form of rituals, are often used today for salvation by both Jews and Gentiles. In addition there are psychological, verbal, corporate, religious, behavioral and emotional works to name but a few current systems. Self Righteous Arrogance is one of the greatest disasters in the history of the Church Age and it is basically boasting with regard to one's own accomplishments which is blasphemy against the Integrity of God. No human by thinking or planning can ever come up with anything which will rival the function of the Integrity of God directed toward man. Consider that Man at BIRTH is DEAD to God, cannot approach God, just like physically dead people cannot approach living people, yet GOD in his perfection and through his integrity found a way for man to regain relationship with him without compromise to His perfect character. Divine Good and Human Good are, therefore, mutually exclusive and the Work of God in Grace eliminates any system of human works and legalism under EVIL. Human Good or man's efforts to solve man's problems must always have a link and since it is not linked to the Integrity of God it must be linked to man through Satan's policy of Evil. Human Good based on Evil is linked to man through his Arrogance and as a result is the means of expressing Self Righteousness in boasting. Man is stimulated into pseudo happiness by boasting of his production but his Human Good is never acceptable to God whether it is legitimate Human Good based on the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions or illegitimate Human Good based on Evil. ([Eph 2:9](#))

The Mosaic Law rituals like any other ritual system, when used as an instrument for Adjustment to the Justice of God produces Arrogance motivating a system of Self Righteousness. There is no place in Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God for man's Self Righteousness or his human efforts or works righteousness from any source including the Mosaic Law. There is no place in the [Rebound Procedure](#) nor in the means of reaching [Maturity Adjustment to the](#)

Justice of God for mans Self Righteousness nor his works righteousness. Self Righteousness directed toward God is the blasphemous function of legalism presupposing that the imputation of God's Absolute Righteousness at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God ***was not sufficient*** and man must add his efforts and works righteousness in order to achieve and deserve salvation. Legalism is man trying to help God whereas God does not need help and everything that is necessary for salvation depends on God never on any human participation.

Man in his Arrogance, being ignorant of the Righteousness of God and Justice of God, has as his only alternative Divine Discipline. Self Righteousness is totally excluded from any phase of the Plan of God. Self Righteousness brings cursing from the Justice of God in the form of Divine Discipline while the imputed Righteousness of God is the recipient of all blessing from the Justice of God. Distortions of the Mosaic Law produce a Self Righteousness which is hostile to the imputed Righteousness of God. There is nothing man can do, individually or collectively by his efforts, in success or in failure, to destroy, abrogate or compromise the Integrity of God. Understanding this removes the potential for Arrogance and makes it clear that nothing in the Plan of God depends on any one but only on who and what the Lord is. In addition, man's Self Righteousness does not glorify God but, in fact, it is the Righteousness of God which Justifies man when God imputes it to the believer at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God, AND THIS GLORIFIES GOD and provides the potential for God to Glorify Man. The inevitable conflict in the Christian Way of Life is based on the fact that after receiving the Righteousness of God at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God the believer must choose between Positive Volition to the Plan of God and use of the Righteousness of God as his base of function or Negative Volition and become Self Righteous. Self Righteousness is like a foundation built on sand and the Righteousness of God in us is like a foundation build on solid rock. When one tries to make the Plan of God function around Self Righteousness this is Legalism, Arrogance and man by his efforts trying to gain approbation or blessing from the Justice of God. This is exemplified by the concept that the Christian should tithe 10% of his money to the church, or he should make every effort toward changing his personality to be more moral or pleasing, etc. The Integrity of God gains nothing from the righteousness of man but man gains everything from the Integrity of God so that when God imputes to man His Absolute Righteousness at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God this is all the potential he needs for this life.

### **Self Righteous Arrogance and Verbal Sins**

Self Righteous people have rejected the Grace standards presented through Bible Doctrine and as a result are Reversionistic, influenced by Evil and operate under a double standard of existence and function. (Ps 12:2) Self Righteousness is the source of slander which sets up a double standard of evaluation. On the one hand there is self vindication and on the other slander and maligning of others. These people in Self Righteous Arrogance function under the concept that it is their duty to destroy the ones in their periphery they consider to be below their standards. The quintessence of operating under Evil is the Self Righteous Arrogant Legalistic believer whose Arrogance assumes the prerogative of Christ as Judge of the Supreme Court of Heaven when judging others. It is neither the duty nor prerogative of the believer to assume the role of the judge in evaluation of others. It is the responsibility of every believer



to judge and evaluate HIS OWN LIFE in the light of Bible Doctrine and from the perspective of the Integrity of God. Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul produces the true standards of Grace Righteousness which avoid both mental and verbal sins.

### Verbal Sins and the Mutual Admiration Society

As a result of Guilt reactions and development of the Guilt complex the believer is susceptible to becoming RELIGIOUS and as they move through the stages of Reversionism this is frequently the result. This is clearly observable in many of the American governmental representatives and presidents who catered to the communists and more recently also to the moslems and declared that these people are all for world peace. With the religious person there is always Self Righteous Arrogance involved. This is a moral degeneracy from involvement in the Interlocking System of Arrogance and it brings a readiness and willingness to listen to false teachers who always possess a phony facade (Rom 16:18), are involved in human public relations systems and legalism (Gal 4:17-18, 2Tim 3:5-7) and are always appealing to Pride and all aspects of Arrogance and start mutual admiration societies (2Cor 10:12)

For the Arrogant person, when his circumstances change from pressure to prosperity Self Pity is immediately parlayed into self righteousness because Arrogance holds the reins of his soul. The person who feels sorry for himself under pressure is the same person jumping up in bible school or church mouthing off his Self Righteous imprecations. A person who is Self Righteous in church, under pressure is a baby and has a core of Arrogance. Self Righteousness has 2 primary aspects:

- It always builds up self and runs down others.
- It is always trying to prove something to others.

Therefore, under the functions of Self Righteousness, in order to prove how good one is he must criticize those in his periphery by maligning and ridiculing them in some way. Self Righteousness always tries to build a Mutual Admiration Society. This Mutual Admiration Society is a distraction from Bible Doctrine with a Modus Operandi totally derived from Evil as opposed to the proper functions of the believer which are to be derived from the Royal Family Honor Code. Self Righteousness builds up and perpetuates Arrogance by maligning and judging other people and is a major Royal Family Honor Code violation. This is an easy way for an individual to function because everyone has his own areas of “holiness” and of “weakness”. To form or become part of the Mutual Admiration Society, all one needs to do is find who is holy where he is holy and who is weak where he is strong. He then consigns all the weak people to his maligning vituperation and at the same time he finds the chosen few who are worthy to be in the same category he is in, being righteous to an acceptable level similar to him.

Everyone likes to be complimented and both the men and women who are susceptible to flattery show uncontrolled Arrogance. The Mutual Admiration Society includes both the Arrogant and Inadequate individuals. The Arrogant one is full of Self Righteous Arrogance, is fat headed or Egotistical, strongly Opinionated, and is the initiator of the construction of the Mutual Admiration Society. The Inadequate one is insecure, susceptible to flattery, without opinions, receives and responds to flattery from the Arrogant one in becoming part of the

Mutual Admiration Society. No Mutual Admiration Society can ever stay together very long because the Arrogant one does not really like the Inadequate one since he considers him to be stupid. In addition, the Inadequate one soon discovers that the Arrogant one is way too Arrogant to continue to associate with. These individuals are opposites and when they attract there is something wrong, false, abnormal and based on Evil in the process. The Mutual Admiration Society must have a target to oppose and the target is someone who is strong and in authority over them or has mutually offended or wronged them. The Mutual Admiration Society is where the weak Arrogant and Inadequate attack the strong one in authority and it represents a function of Evil and the concept of pseudo love and Arrogant attraction between them. When an Arrogant person needs followers he picks weak people to draw to him. Coincidentally weak people need a strong person to follow and are attracted to an Arrogant person who flatters them. If they are going to stay together they select a target who is one which is not liked by the Arrogant one and who makes the Inadequate one feel MORE Inadequate. This Inadequate one is therefore the victim of the cobra strike of slander when he listens to and believes the gossip about the target. In reality the victim here is not the one being slandered but the one listening to the gossip. The one being slandered does not even receive the venom or the result of the slander. The principle is that gossips never talk to themselves and they have to have someone to listen to their slander. The venom does not enter the one being slandered but bores into the ones who listen to the slander or gossip. When one has to listen to gossip and maligning in order to feel superior or even good about self he is a miserable person. The Justice of God protects the ones being slandered but when one listens to gossip his soul is filled with poison and it does not hurt the one who is being gossiped about but hurts he who listens to it. When the believer is under Positive Volition to gossip, maligning, judging and slander he carries poison in his Stream of Consciousness of the Soul which may totally destroy his capacity for life.

### **Self Righteous Arrogance and The Law of Works**

Man's Self Righteous Arrogance does not glorify God but, to the contrary, the Integrity of God condemns the Self Righteousness of man. There is no point in either Angelic or Human History where the Integrity of God is compromised or gains anything from the personality, Self Righteousness or systems of creature effort works of any creature especially man. Therefore the believer involved in the Interlocking System of Arrogance is an eclectic Christian entrepreneur. Man often concludes as a result of his involvement in the Interlocking System of Arrogance and his Self Righteousness and boasting that he has done something to please God or that he has made God fall in love with him and this is certainly an erroneous viewpoint. Under the Law of Works or the Principle of Works, man strives for a status which makes him attractive or pleasing to God. Very often, even today, the Mosaic Law is used as the vehicle for these works. This striving of Self Righteousness eliminates the principle of faith as a result of having rejected the necessity to adjust to the Integrity of God. The provisions for man from the Integrity of God are Grace provisions which are totally and completely compatible with the Essence of God. The Self Righteousness of man is part of the Law of Works or can be considered 'works righteousness' which produces boasting as a system of blaspheme toward the perfect Integrity of God.

The mind or Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul of the unbeliever, instead of receiving the message of faith, in Arrogance receives instead the false doctrine of works or Self Righteousness as the means for salvation by keeping the law or some other system of [Legalism](#). This Arrogance and the human effort works of Self Righteousness completely blots out the 1<sup>st</sup> advent of The Lord Jesus, The Christ. With false Doctrine in the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul it is not possible for the mind to express in words or sentences faith alone in The Lord Jesus, The Christ, to God the Father. Instead the mouth expresses the Arrogance and Self Righteousness of the mind for the pseudo salvation by works in keeping the law. If the mouth is not talking about the imputed Righteousness of God it will be talking about the Self Righteousness of keeping the law or some other legalistic morality system as had occurred with the Rich Young Ruler. ([Matt 19:16-26](#))

To seek salvation by any system of human effort works is the quintessence of Arrogance and the presence of Arrogance indicates rejection of the truth needed for [Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God](#) through faith ALONE in The Lord Jesus, The Christ, alone. Rejection of the gospel or Negative Volition at God Consciousness eventually results in [Black out of the Soul](#) and inevitably [Scar Tissue of the Soul](#). This then builds up over time along with Arrogance and then the LIE from EVIL comes along as salvation by works and this is what is believed. The Jews in their phenomenal genius and incredible racial spiritual heritage set aside both and believed the LIE having said no to the truth and as a result built up Arrogance to the point of believing salvation was to occur by their efforts at keeping the Mosaic Law. It is a certainty that salvation by human efforts of any kind is human Arrogance and when these people, collectively in a nation, are put under the cycles of Divine Discipline, some of which are incredibly horrible, this is designed to break that Arrogance. Under this pressure of the 5 cycles of Divine Discipline when there is Arrogance the nation may vacillate between times of great adversity and some slight prosperity which causes collective cycling between [Self Pity](#) and Self Righteousness. As the cycles increase in intensity the stability of the people can be totally knocked out and they are left in a state of helplessness. This IS CURRENTLY the Statue Quo of the United States of America. Helplessness is not humility and the poor are often helpless but they are not humble although they may be poorly dressed or physically emaciated. The poor, in fact, are usually extremely Arrogant. Being helpless is not humility but it can put one onto the way to humility if he thinks properly and understands that helplessness is designed to emphasize who and what The Lord Jesus, The Christ is. Once one has emphasized who and what Christ is then, through accumulation of Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul, comes [Humility](#). People very often feel sorry for the poor when they see their expressions of Self Pity and think they are humble people but Self Pity is a category of Arrogance. The idea that rich are Arrogant and the poor are humble is one of the biggest lies of history as is the concept that Self Righteous people are humble and, unfortunately, both are Arrogant.

Many 'Christian' and 'religious' organizations propose that the human effort works performed by individuals are the basis for all the blessing they receive from God. Believers are designed to only must sit and take in Bible Doctrine consistently to the point of Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God for their production to be valid Divine Good but even then this production

is not ever the basis for spiritual advance nor for blessing from God. The believer MUST remember that all human good works or efforts or what is termed ‘energy of the flesh’ will burn at the point of the resurrection evaluations of all believers from all dispensations. This will occur at the Judgment Seat of The Lord Jesus, The Christ for the Church Age believers because it is totally a production while residing and functioning under EVIL the Plan and Policy of Satan. In reality all of this ‘[Legalism](#)’ will be totally nonexistent in heaven and, in fact, must be removed before any believer enters eternity to live with God. The accumulated Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul is responsible for scraping all the legalism and Self Righteous Arrogance off of believers before allowing them into heaven.

Legalism and Legalistic believers, in their unmitigated Arrogance, try to tell God how to run his business but, unfortunately for them, he does not consult man on this subject. These are self appointed counselors because of their involvement in the Interlocking Systems of Arrogance and in their Self Righteous Arrogance they assume their counsel is desired by everyone including God. Human Privacy is thereby destroyed and so is freedom and when this occurs uncoerced volition along with privacy, property and freedom are ultimately destroyed together. This then destroys the basis for all human prosperity. Until one receives any semblance or degree of authority from God he remains nothing and the only thing that can be added to nothing to make it something is the thinking of God. ([1Cor 2:16](#)) Since man is nothing, knows nothing and has nothing before Grace found and regenerated him at [Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God](#), it follows that no creature has ever advised or given counsel to God. It is Arrogance to think otherwise and this counseling toward God is manifest in gossip, maligning and judging others and these kinds of people, even believers, have very often taken it on themselves to try to tell God how to run his business, who to discipline and how to discipline them. They seek to take vengeance and often some form of [Revenge](#) by hurting or destroying another without any authorization for these actions and this is total Arrogance. This is the basis for the formation of the Mutual Admiration Society and for their complete entanglement in the Interlocking Systems of Arrogance.

The Grace principle of [Justification](#) by faith eliminates all boasting, Self Righteousness and the entire system of human good works which has been operational from after the fall in the garden to the present time. Boasting, as an integral part of Self Righteous Arrogance, erroneously concludes there will be divine approbation for the one boasting for any system of Self Righteousness or works righteousness he has engaged in. The Law of Faith recognizes that God only loves his righteousness, never human works, human Arrogance, human personality or human righteousness, and only his plan not man’s plans, only his works not the works of man. The proper response to the Plan of God and entrance into a relationship with God, is based on adjustment to HIS Integrity alone. At the point of Faith alone in The Lord Jesus, The Christ alone the individual has made his first Adjustment to the Justice of God where all the needed accouterments for salvation ARE PROVIDED WITHOUT HIS HELP by the Integrity of God.

The Integrity of God, as an integral part of the perfection of the Essence of God, is not maintained by the Self Righteousness of Man and many People think that if they sin or do

something wrong that God is disappointed or disgraced. Many think they can dishonor the Lord but don't realize that it is impossible to dishonor, disappoint or disgrace the Lord since he is not subject to these. Legalistic people invariably think in this manner and as a result cannot ever glorify God in any way. People can only dishonor themselves by their thoughts, motivations, decisions, words or actions. Morality as an essential to protect human society from self destruction is NOT MEANINGFUL in consideration with regard to failure before God. It is blasphemous to assume that either human Self Righteousness or human unrighteousness can have any effect on the Integrity of God. Man is not and cannot ever, under any circumstance, be promoters or demoters of GOD. This is an ingrained Arrogance in much of fundamental Christianity. The Integrity of God does not ever stand or fall based on one's thoughts, motivations, decisions, words or actions. ONLY what one thinks, says or does, when this depends totally on the Integrity of God, becomes at all meaningful to God and God on this basis alone promotes him. I like to say that God does not give a RATS ASS what the individual believer does, it has all been considered and adjusted for in Eternity Past when the Plan and the Divine Decree were set up. The only exception is that the believer is required to be absolutely consistent in the use of the [Rebound Procedure](#) to take responsibility for his own failures AND to be consistent in Post Salvation Epistemological Rehabilitation by Perception, Cognition, Incultation, Metabolization and Application of Bible Doctrine.

[Rom 9:30](#) emphasizes man's freedom of choice both the nonmeritorious expression of volitional in faith and meritorious expression of free will in availing oneself of expository Bible Doctrinal teaching. Man is a free agent and must choose between the Righteousness of God and his own self righteousness. Self Righteousness will carry the person to hell and the Righteousness of God will carry him to heaven. Ultimately, the issue is Evil vs Grace, the Plan of Satan vs the Plan of God. The one choosing Self Righteousness does so as a result of Evil motivation becoming involved in Motivational Arrogance while the one choosing the Righteousness of God does so as a result of Grace motivation becoming involved in Motivational Virtue. When a person has heard the gospel and rejected it he has Arrogance in his soul no matter what system or facade of humility he chooses to use. From this Arrogance comes the desire to accept such Evil as socialism and from socialism emerges the ability to find something nice and good about communism. This is why nice, good, kind people are supportive of socialism and communism and want to help and support the 3<sup>rd</sup> world nations. Built up Arrogance in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul results in the big bubble of disoriented reality in their soul.

### **Self Righteous Arrogance and Weak Believers**

The Weak Believer is **Flexible** regarding doctrine and Inflexible regarding applications of doctrine to life while the Strong Believer is flexible regarding applications of Bible Doctrine to life but is inflexible with regard to the principles of Bible Doctrine. The greatest kind of Arrogance comes from inflexibility in the application of principle or bible doctrine with regard to **Non-essential** opinions or ideas. Inflexibility regarding non-essentials is characterized by Arrogance in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul and total absence of any sense of humor. Arrogance of the soul is a terrible weakness and fails to recognize that individually no one can or will ever be perfect in life nor will anyone ever be free of sin or failure. It is the idea that one thinks he is or can be sinless or perfect which occurs when he has entered into some **Non-**



essential function and related it to salvation or spirituality.

People in every walk of life try to establish their own Self Righteousness because Arrogance is the most basic, awful and most beautifully disguised system of [Self Deception](#) and sin. Arrogance is, in fact, the underlying base, the foundation as it were, of the entire Plan and Policy of Satan to rule this world. It is possible to be under either Positive or [Negative Volition](#) to Bible Doctrine and still be building personal Self Righteousness. To function and advance in the Plan of God one can only be under Positive Volition to Bible Doctrine and build on the Righteousness of God and this is only a matter of cognizance vs ignorance. Weak believers are ignorant of Bible Doctrine because of their Negative Volition as rejection or indifference to Bible Doctrine and have emotion as their criterion for life. They are totally Arrogant and reject all authority except their own. They have abused Grace and distorted the Plan of God with involvement in antinomianism or Legalism. Being Arrogant people they are Guilty of [Mental Attitude Sins](#) and use Verbal Sins to malign, judge and attempt to destroy others. This type of weak believer is a [Reversionist](#) living life in some stage of Reversionism being implacable and vindictive and always carrying a grudge and seeking revenge for real or imagined personal affronts or wrongdoings. He is ignorant of the [Royal Family Honor Code](#) and the structure of the Plan of God including the imputations and objectives of [Logistical Grace](#) in keeping him alive in this life. Being ignorant of Bible Doctrine he is constantly positive toward anything which confuses doctrinal principles and issues. The weak believer is dogmatic about taboos and generally legalistic, usually practicing some sort of asceticism with either a misapplication of Bible Doctrine or no Bible Doctrine to apply. They are influenced by [Personal Opinion](#), secular ethics, Arrogance and Self Righteousness rather than Bible Doctrine and have become a source of strife to all in their periphery as a result of this.

When Bible Doctrine becomes secondary to secular morality and the background conventions of ethics the result is Arrogance in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul and asceticism as the Modus Vivendi. The resulting controversy and strife in the local church makes Doctrinal teaching impossible because this strife creates an environment for overall rejection of Bible Doctrine. These are the people who only listen to Bible Doctrine taught in order to gain a point for their side of a controversy or argument. The subjective Self Righteous Arrogant conscience of the weak believer possesses Legalistic and Reversionistic standards which are not ever the issue in relationship with the Lord or fellowship with other believers. Weak believers have deficiencies of Bible Doctrine which they try to make up for with Arrogance by taking their own personal taboos, which under privacy they have a personal right to, but under entanglement in Arrogance they try to superimpose these on others. This Self Righteous [Hypersensitive](#) person is truly Arrogant and having taboos in his thinking means others should leave him alone to do what he wants. However, his incredible Arrogance tries to superimpose on all believers his ideas instead of allowing others to exercise their own free will choices.

However, the occupational hazard for the mature or strong believer, therefore, is Self Righteous Arrogance related to his superior knowledge of Bible Doctrine. After making hundreds of correct flexible applications of Bible Doctrine he finally succumbs to spiritual snobbishness and Self Righteous Arrogance and looks with disdain on the weak believer. He regards with

contempt the weak believer who is saturated with legalistic taboos or antinomian hangups. While the weak believer is a spiritual bully, the strong believer, in his Arrogance, regards with great contempt this antagonist. The problem with both is [Pride](#), but also, each has Arrogance in a different sphere. The Arrogance of the weak believer is his legalism and Pride of accomplishment in the field of taboos which compels him to judge the lack of these in the strong believer. This weak legalistic believer is the worst bully, being Self Righteous, petty, Arrogant, implacable and [Inflexible](#). The weak believer judges, maligns and vindictively criticizes the mature believer who must not ever lower himself to the legalistic standards of the weak believer by retaliation. Self Righteous Arrogance and [Jealousy](#) are the source of the implacability of the weak believer toward the strong mature believer. The underlying problem with both is Self Righteous Arrogance with contempt on the part of the strong and judging on the part of the weak.

Evil, which is a sphere of principles and a process of thinking, is related to and motivation for all Verbal Sins and Overt Sins so that all Self Righteous people have either rejected or distorted the Grace standards of Bible Doctrine, including the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions, and thus are Reversionistic and totally under the influence of Evil. These Self Righteous people always have a double standard of Self Vindication or [Self Justification](#) while slandering and judging others. Therefore, the quintessence of functioning under the principles of Evil is the Self Righteous legalistic believer thinking that in his Arrogance he can assume the prerogative of replacing Christ as judge in the Supreme Court of Heaven. ([Rom 2:1](#), [Rom 14:4](#), [Rom 14:10](#)) It is the responsibility of all believers to evaluate and judge one's OWN life in the light of Bible Doctrine and this produces true norms and standards and a true Frame of Reference in the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul. To the Self Righteousness legalistic believer Guilty of slander, maligning and judging [Rom 14:4](#) & [Rom 14:10](#) are very pertinent. The Lord does not need man's help and counsel in handling the failures or successes of others and it is not the believer's duty to judge others since each believer must only live his own personal life as unto the Lord, not everyone else's. The Lord has not called the believer to judge others and He most certainly can handle this function without such assistance. ([Rom 11:33-34](#)) It is the quintessence of Arrogance and the epitome of blaspheme for the weak believer to judge other believers. It is therefore, Self Righteous Arrogance to indulge in verbal sins which imply self vindication while maligning others. It violates scripture and the doctrine of hamartiology (sin) to suggest by verbal sins that one is sinless, without blame and perfect while the object of his judging is the antithesis. ([1John 1:8](#)) These people are reversionistic and weak and their verbal sins inevitably lead to blaspheme and presumption and are an overt sign of their weakness.

The observation of or adherence to [Legalistic](#) taboos or functioning in asceticism in any aspect of life becomes a substitute for Bible Doctrine with the weak believer and for them Bible Doctrine does not have first Priority in life but is incidental. If Bible Doctrine agrees with a taboo then it is considered fine but if it disagrees then the teacher of that doctrine does not know what he is talking about. This reflects the Arrogant subjectivity of the weak believer who assumes and alleges that his standards are God's standards and as a result seeks to superimpose his legalism on the strong believer and in fact by attacking the strong believer he

seeks to superimpose his standards on GOD. The weak believer, at times not consciously, always sets self up as judge and jury of all servants of the Lord as if he were the Lord himself. In Arrogance he assumes that he is the personal representative of God to make sure that all believers conform to the standards he has from his pet taboos of legalism or his antinomianism. His general lack of Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul results in the establishment of false standards which are used with Self Righteous Arrogance to make a life time habit of sinfulness in judging other believers. This is a blatant violation of the [Royal Family Honor Code](#).

The weak believer converts environmental influence and [Non-essential](#) opinions into rigid orthodoxy. He takes the non essentials and becomes inflexible regarding them while being totally flexible about all things of Bible Doctrine. He substitutes non-essentials and taboos for Bible Doctrine and labels others apostate when they do not comply or follow them. He has no right to any [Inflexible](#) attitude which may in fact be a part of an age old taboo most likely having its roots within oriental cults of the ancient east. Weak believers cannot distinguish between non-essential [Opinions](#) and Essentials regarding doctrine and therefore their standards and taboos are part of their Self Righteous paraphernalia. With a little Self Righteous Arrogance they are able to take the most petty things imaginable and convert them into orthodoxy. They always seem to forget that God accepted ALL humans with a variety of erroneous and inaccurate opinions, misguided zeal and stupid sincerity and provided for ALL human beings a potential for [Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God](#) and Eternal Life with him.

The weak believer inevitably also has hidden Arrogance in many fields and he sets self up as an expert in these fields having succumbed to the Motivational Arrogance of Mental Attitude Arrogance with its [Jealousy](#), vindictiveness, hatred, [Guilt](#), etc., and as a result gossips and maligns others in his periphery and in that respect is sociopathic. He thinks the Christian Way of Life is some system of morality or asceticism. This is the [Negative Volition](#) believer who moves from Divine Discipline to Divine Discipline throughout his life until he reaches the Sin Unto Death. In contrast the Positive Volition believer continues to move out of his personal weaknesses eventually to [Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God](#).

The Old Sin Nature has as one of its component areas the trend toward Self Righteous Arrogance or [Legalism](#). This is in part the basis for Moral Degeneracy in the believer and the production of Human Good under the influence of the Evil of the Cosmic Dynaspheres. This results in fragmentation of the life and involvement of the susceptible individual with:

- ✧ Legalism
- ✧ Personality Arrogance
- ✧ Morality Arrogance
- ✧ Authority Arrogance
- ✧ Crusader Arrogance
- ✧ Christian Service Arrogance
- ✧ Transference Arrogance
- ✧ Impulsive Arrogance

- Institutional Arrogance
- Conspiracy Arrogance
- Christian Activism
- Social Engineering
- Civil Disobedience
- even REVOLUTION.

Self Righteous Arrogance establishes in the soul of the believer false standards which are not Grace Orientated and NOT related to Virtue. Morality under the Laws of Divine Establishment belongs to the entire Human Race and is the only thing the unbeliever has going for him. Virtue is the result of the ministry of God the Holy Spirit during the consistent Perception, Cognition, Inculcation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine resulting in spiritual growth. This is the monopoly of the Protocol Plan of God and the believer's life and function within the Divine Dynasphere. The potential for true virtue exists for believers only and is in the development of the Spiritual Skills, Edification Complex of the Soul, Divine Dynasphere and especially the Problem Solving Devices. Self Righteous Arrogance produces a bully, a domineering person, who assumes he is never wrong in any human interaction. He is in a constant state of correcting others on mostly petty things and not giving them the chance for freedom and the inculcation of Bible Doctrine on their own basis to allow them to grow in Grace in their own time. However, this does NOT apply to parents related to children but people in a social periphery always correcting others with regard to petty little things which do not actually really matter. This domination is based on the fact that they are shocked in their Self Righteous Arrogance if one is even slightly wrong on something he says or does. Many of these bullies are disguised in Christian circles and accepted as great Christians and wonderful people and often are people others want to emulate. This results in the blind leading the blind and is the Self Righteous Arrogant believer leading a fragmented life while leading others into a fragmented life. Motivation for Emulation is to come through Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of one's own Soul and NEVER from the functions or appearance of other people. This is Personality Arrogance motivated by Self Righteous Arrogance rejecting privacy and attempting to force one's opinions and standards on everyone in his periphery. People have a right to fail and make their own mistakes before the Lord and correction should come from the teaching of Bible Doctrine which allows the individual to make his own corrections in his own life or correction can come through the HURT from Divine Discipline which is designed to wake the believer up to his failures.

Thus from Arrogance comes presumption and from presumption comes presumptuous Self Righteousness and a false sense of destiny. A false sense of destiny means the believer will never execute the plan or purpose of God for his life. The interaction with and involvement in the Motivational Arrogance of Mental Attitude Arrogance results in the MOST BASIC motivational sins of human life and the foundation for all the fragments in the life of the believer. It is inevitable that once the believer pulls the pin of the Arrogance Grenade that he will become interlocked with both Self Righteous Arrogance and other areas of Motivational Arrogance as Mental Attitude Arrogance. This is the person who considers himself righteous in his own estimation with his Arrogant reliance on this assumed righteousness. It is, therefore,

the Arrogant conviction that one's own righteousness is superior to that of others and this results in the conclusion that one's own righteousness is so great that intolerance of others becomes the acceptable Modus Operandi of their Blind Arrogance. This is not the Spiritual Self Esteem reached by the positive believer when moving into Spiritual Adulthood, which produces a non-destructive righteousness toward others.

### Self Righteous Arrogance & the Integrity of God

The problem for the Human Race is that man is under spiritual death from birth because of the possession of a genetically passed down Old Sin Nature and the imputation of Adam's Original Sin to it, NOT because of his personal sins which, in fact, are a result of this birth time condemnation and the functioning of his Old Sin Nature. Man actually demonstrates that he is under condemnation from God by committing personal sins. Therefore, one of the greatest problems of life is human Self Righteous Arrogance which is the Arrogance of saying "I will do it myself because I have a better way". In addition, to compounding the problem, the perfection of God cannot in any way go along with human Self Righteousness, because, He has Perfect Absolute Righteousness.

The imputation of the Righteousness of God to the new believer at the point of his making Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God eliminates the necessity for any Self Righteousness in the Christian Way of Life. It is impossible for both the imputed Righteousness of God and the Self Righteousness of the Arrogant believer to function simultaneously. The Justice of God can only recognize and bless the Absolute Righteousness of God. There is no place for the Justice of God to even recognize the Self Righteousness of Man except in the realm of providing Grace Divine Discipline. The principle which must be learned and maintained in the soul is that ONLY Right + Right == Right and nothing else. Self Righteousness is excluded because it is Right + Wrong and this always == Wrong. The Self Righteousness of a person functions in all 3 areas as expressions of the Old Sin Nature:

- ✧ Sin == Violations of the character or the fundamental laws or rules of God for mankind as a result of motivation from Evil stimulating the lust patterns of the Old Sin Nature thus activating the trends of the Old Sin Nature to stimulate the Area of Weakness to produce Sin temptation.
- ✧ Human Good == The motivation from Evil stimulating the lust patterns of the Old Sin Nature which activate the trends of the Old Sin Nature to stimulate the Area of Strength to produce temptation to engage in Self Righteous Arrogant Crusading to solve the problems of the world by man's effort usurping the sole prerogative of God to solve problems.
- ✧ Crime == The motivation from Evil stimulating the lust patterns of the Old Sin Nature which activate the trends of the Old Sin Nature to stimulate the Area of Weakness to produce temptations to engage in violations of common law, the Laws of Divine Establishment or the Divine Institutions designed for man's protection and preservation, which can be either Sinful or Production of prohibited Human Good motivated by Evil.

All three of these are produced by the influence of Evil which is the sum total of the principles of the plan and policy of Satan to rule mankind including such systems as socialism, welfare, redistribution of wealth, big government and all levels of the destruction of freedom which



produce Human Good activities.

Moreover, Self Righteousness + Sincerity guarantees the concentration of Evil in the life of the one involved. However, this lack of integrity in mankind does not cancel the Integrity of God. Even man, who has cultivated and acquired great integrity and legitimate morality, is still not good enough for the Integrity of God. The self made man the Self Righteous person who acquires integrity through his own work, activities, plans and Self Righteousness is still not acceptable to God. He is, however, totally acceptable to man and this is the key to Arrogance in humanity.

Self Righteousness rejects the Plan of God for both Jews and Christians. Human Self Righteousness is an Arrogant rationalization and is the fantasy of comparing one's strength against the weakness of another. Righteousness cannot be built on unrighteousness, therefore, [Justification](#) can and must only be built on the imputation of the Righteousness of God to the believer. Everything God does to bless the believer is based totally on the foundation of the imputation of Absolute Righteousness to man at his Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God and is most certainly not based on any Self Righteous system he develops. Self Righteousness is absolutely the wrong means of attempted function under the Plan of God and the Self Righteous Christian is simply trying to compete with God and this is blasphemous Arrogance.

Irrelevance becomes irreverence by the blasphemous maligning of the character of God as in [Rom 9:19-21](#). The believer with [Scar Tissue of the Soul](#) always finds fault with God and becomes critical of the policies of God. As Negative Volition toward Bible Doctrine builds up in the believer, [Black out of the Soul](#), then Scar Tissue of the Soul increases. As Scar Tissue of the Soul builds up it squeezes out or ERASES Bible Doctrine from the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul and replaces it with Cosmic Dynasphere false doctrine derived from Evil which produces Arrogance. The Greater the Scar Tissue of the Soul the greater the Arrogance of the individual involved. All one has to do is engage in a little Arrogance to find fault with God and with Scar Tissue of the Soul there quickly builds maximum Arrogance and Arrogance is blind to the truth of Bible Doctrine. Self Righteousness and Legalism result in the distortion of Bible Doctrine and as a result denial of the reality of the spiritual heritage for the believer in the Church Age, denial of the principles of Faith in Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God and in spirituality without human effort works.

### **Self Righteous Arrogance & Flexibility**

In the failure of application of Bible Doctrine to produce Flexibility with regard to Non-essentials in life, a lucid example is the principle that too often the Arrogance of the man makes inordinate demands on the woman. He may, in being Self Righteous, be too hasty to correct the woman for some inconsequential shortcoming or he is Self Righteous with the woman over some trivial thing such as procedures or precedents in society life. Men involved in Arrogance are always too inflexible where women are concerned and this is a combination of their selfcenteredness, and self righteousness. Involvement in the Interlocking System of Arrogance with Self Righteousness plus a little knowledge can make an inflexible pompous jackass out of almost anyone. Just as flexibility in social life and manners demand that one

must think about other people so does any position of leadership require that one know and understand the people under him and that bending some rules does not always result in total disaster. The believer will never have flexibility with strength, the true manifestation of strength, and greatness as long as he is full of Self Righteousness and small bits of knowledge. He can be just as Arrogant as any Legalist and in this way can distract anyone from their relationship with God even destroy it.

It is Positive Volition toward Bible Doctrine which IS and MUST BECOME the great issue in life and this must be a free will choice. The believer MUST also choose whether, under Positive Volition to Bible Doctrine, he will build his life on the Righteousness of God imputed at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God or if he will select some form of Self Righteousness under Negative Volition toward Bible Doctrine and the Plan of God. He must choose whether he will live out of step with the Plan of God and disoriented to reality and life as a result of being Inflexible with regard to Non-Essentials and Flexible with regard to the Essentials, which ONLY include the principles of Bible Doctrine. This operation, based on some system of Self Righteousness, develops, along with involvement in the Interlocking System of Arrogance, an attempt to try to dictate to God what His plan should be.

Self Righteous people invariably have no sense of humor and are inherently inflexible about little things. Whenever a story is a little 'off color', because they are so inflexible and have no sense of humor, they are offended by it. To have a sense of humor one must have concentration, wit and flexibility but under the influence of Arrogance the self righteous person takes himself too seriously. Flexibility and a sense of humor always travel together. What occurs in Arrogance by trying to establish personal Self Righteousness, when disaster comes, results in the only thing available to fall back on being the Arrogance which started the movement down this path under Evil. Once on the path into saturation with Evil, which is motivated by Arrogance, one cannot handle instant disaster, adversity or catastrophe when it does come.

### **Self Righteous Arrogance and Zealousness**

The Self Righteousness of the unbeliever often results in a pseudo zeal for God which is in reality antagonism toward the Plan of God. True zeal for God cannot exist apart from Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul. True zeal for God is the motivation and momentum from Metabolized Bible Doctrine resulting from the daily function under the Grace Apparatus for Perception. Whereas, Religious zeal results from an ignorance of Bible Doctrine. Religious zeal for God is a tyrant while Bible Doctrine based zeal for God is Grace Motivation and Modus Operandi. True zeal is, therefore, the momentum and motivation of the believer functioning in the Grace Plan of God. Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul as (gr) Epignosis doctrine brings an understanding of the Grace Plan of God and as a result perpetuates momentum in spiritual advance through that understanding. There is therefore, an obvious conflict between Self Righteousness and imputed Absolute Righteousness and therefore between ignorant zeal and cognizant zeal, Arrogant zeal and Humble zeal. In the believer the imputation of the Righteousness of God at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God has the potential for Humility Orientation. In the believer or

unbeliever under Negative Volition, the development of Self Righteousness results in Arrogant [Inflexibility](#), [Legalism](#) and mental blindness to Bible Doctrine. Mental blindness to Bible Doctrine results in ignorance of Bible Doctrine no matter how high the individual's IQ may be. Therefore the function of Self Righteousness is Arrogance resulting in neglect, rejection, resistance or indifference to Bible Doctrine.

Zeal can be a disaster unless connected with correct and accurate thought based on Bible Doctrine. This ignorant, Arrogant zeal for God is related to rejection of The Lord Jesus, The Christ as savior along with the Arrogance of Self Righteousness rejecting the Plan of God and substituting one's own ideas of what the basis of Salvation should be. This zeal is specifically religious and religious zeal is simply Arrogance plus Self Righteousness focused on God but substituting one's own taboos and rituals for the real Plan of God. This motivates, from the beginning of mankind to the present day, man seeking salvation through some system of Self Righteous good deeds such as the Jews attempting to keep the Mosaic Law. ([Rom 9:31-32](#)) The Self Righteousness obtained through keeping the Mosaic Law is no substitute for the imputed Absolute Righteousness of God gained by faith alone in The Lord Jesus, The Christ alone. When a person depends on personal Self Righteousness for relationship with God he has a huge area of Arrogance in his soul and is involved in perpetual sinning. The facts surrounding salvation and the Grace Plan of God are that Righteousness manufactured from religious zeal and human Arrogance cannot ever replace the possession of the perfect and eternal Righteousness of God which comes through faith alone in The Lord Jesus, The Christ alone.

This type of Self Righteousness has an area of awareness and it is from this area that one is [Self Justified](#) in being critical of others. Self Righteous people are always [Competitive](#) with others on an erroneous basis. They have the vocabulary of humility by which they disguise their Arrogance but behind this vocabulary is one who is competing for top place in the religious circle. Arrogance therefore, breeds false or pseudo zeal and Self Righteousness and all Self Righteousness results in [Human Effort Works Righteousness](#) motivated by EVIL. No one can be saved through human effort good deed works nor Self Righteousness but only through faith ALONE in The Lord Jesus, The Christ alone. ([John 3:16](#), [John 3:18](#)) This is the only mechanism which results in the imputation to the believer of the Righteousness of God, which is the only righteousness acceptable to God. Arrogance is amplified into zeal and zeal manufactured from Self Righteousness or Human Effort Works Righteousness is always in direct conflict with the Grace policy of God. Therefore, Arrogant Self Righteousness is always [Disassociated](#) from and disoriented to the Grace Plan of God.

Only the possession of the Absolute Righteousness of God is compatible with the Grace policy of God. As a result God cannot bless Self Righteousness since it is a negative righteousness. In the Integrity of God the Love of God motivates the Justice of God to bless what the Righteousness of God has accepted. The perfection of the Absolute Righteousness of God cannot accept the Relative Self Righteousness of Man. The principle is that what the Righteousness of God demands the Justice of God must execute. Therefore, the Justice of God can only bless the Righteousness of God which He imputed into the soul of each believer at [Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God](#). Arrogance is aware of its own Self Righteousness

but ignorant of the imputed Righteousness of God and its implications. The righteousness manufactured from Religious zeal + entanglement in Arrogance cannot ever replace the Absolute Righteousness and Eternal Life acquired by the believer through faith alone in The Lord Jesus, The Christ alone. There is absolutely no substitute for faith in the Substitutionary Spiritual Death of Christ and only through this mechanism can one receive the Righteousness of God. Righteousness manufactured within the Interlocking Systems of Arrogance is, therefore, no substitute for the Righteousness of God and will never replace it nor grant the possessor Eternal Life. The imputation of the Righteousness of God at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God results in [Humility](#) and Grace Orientation while the development of Arrogant Self Righteousness results in inflexible Legalism and total blindness to Bible Doctrine.

When people make an issue of their zeal they make an issue of their Arrogance. The zealous person is the Arrogant person and [Grace Oriented](#) believers are not zealous. Grace oriented people do not have to run around and prove anything to anyone with zealousness. They know reality related to the Plan of God and having Grace Orientation produces a Humility of thought in the soul which knocks out Self Righteous Arrogance and stupidity which the Chinese communists called “Gung Ho”. The bible does not approve of nor authorize “Gung Ho” just as it does not go for communism in any form. Therefore, Bible school zeal is Arrogance and Self Righteousness and totally out of line with the plan and purpose of God. When the believer is well disciplined and Grace Orientated and under Grace discipline then he will align with the Plan of God and Will of God. A perfect illustration is Elijah who was obviously out of line thinking HE WAS THE ONLY ONE DOING THINGS FOR GOD. When the believer starts to believe any aspect of the LIE from Evil, the Plan of Satan, he switches instantly and totally to functioning in Arrogance. Once a believer becomes Self Righteous he becomes [Inflexible about Non-Essentials](#) in life and this is what “Gung Ho” actually is. People inflexible about non-essentials never come around to taking a courageous and totally inflexible stand for essentials. The Essentials of Life are contained in the entire realm of Bible Doctrine including the [Laws of Divine Establishment](#) and [Divine Institutions](#). It is very easy when one has attempted to serve the Lord in sacrificial ways to immediately become “Gung Ho” in the sense of [inflexible non-essential Arrogance](#). During World War II the Germans had this problem when “Gung HO” infiltrated the officer corps and they stopped thinking and also the Russians in their infantry were in this situation in the 70’s and may still be there. The American soldier in World War II did not have this problem and when they were in a jam they used thought and flexibility from their thought without Arrogance. In this period in the United States of America from the 1970s on the people have been consistently losing flexibility. The American government started turning the people into communist automatons by making them stand in line for gas and coupons and recently requiring they wear masks and stay 6’ away from each other when out of their homes and to stay in their homes and not even go to work and close their businesses and other such things. By making the American stand in line for what the government gives causes the individual to lose his flexibility and replaces this lost flexibility with Self Righteousness. **When a person or a people lose their flexibility they lose the ability to resist.** The only thing going for America now is Bible Doctrine and it is by and large universally REJECTED.

The system in much of the American military from the 1970’s has also been “Gung Ho” and

this is not a system of good discipline. Lou Diamond was a marine who was not able to be made “Gung Ho” and he was totally fantastic in combat and he never lost his flexibility even though coming through the same system of discipline. The poor military training system did not make him Self Righteous. Therefore, God must help a Christian or private citizen when they avoid the pitfalls of Self Righteous Arrogance. Self Righteousness destroys flexibility and the one thing which characterized the American people up through the 1930’s was incredible flexibility and if they had to stand in line then they did it humorously but when gas rationing started there was no humor in the lines. Now in the early 21<sup>st</sup> century, Americans having to wear masks in public buildings and stand 6’ apart from other people bring violence onto the person who refuses to do so possessing a total lack of humor. This is based almost totally on an inordinate emotional function under FEAR. To the extent that one is Arrogant and Self Righteous, to that extent they are immediately vindictive and implacable. People who are properly motivated and motivated by flexibility are incredible in what they can do. This is demonstrated by the function of the teachers in the prep school of Berachah church and their innovative ways of presenting the truths of Bible Doctrine to children. You cannot be Self Righteous or inflexible and get the job done when teaching children in any area. When teaching in any area, each teacher must have the leeway to teach within the framework of his communication ability, his imagination and his ideas regarding training aids, but must never teach false information. One cannot develop inflexible systems that shut the innovative nature of these people down so that their abilities to teach are lost through an inflexible system. There must be the maintenance of good discipline in all teaching situations but it must not destroy flexibility. This is CLEARLY demonstrated in the Clint Eastwood movie “Heartbreak Ridge” and his admonition to his wayward men to “Improvise, Overcome, Adapt”. This is flexibility, this IS the AMERICAN WAY!!!

In any area of life especially the military, especially in combat training and functions, there must be discipline and that discipline must be strong but it MUST allow flexibility. It is possible to have discipline and flexibility in any area by training people to think while they are being disciplined and to have them accept discipline but never shut down their thinking. This is what made the United States of America great and what took 10 million young men, a whole generation, and turned them into soldiers overnight though they had never seen a weapon and had no military experience and knew nothing about military functions, the manual of arms nor close order drill. Overnight they became not only citizen soldiers but great soldiers and it was done with good discipline which preserved flexibility. There were a few martinets who had their barracks always clean and whose men never offended anyone and this is what occurs in Christianity when believers become Arrogant. This is where the worst believers can be found, in Self Righteousness in Christianity, which is Arrogance and inflexibility with regard to Non-Essentials. A Self Righteous person is a martinet and has a standard which must be followed by all those under his command or authority. This person sees others who are not as strict as he is in his self discipline and in his self demanded performance as being not as good in any way as he is because they don’t function up to his standards of extreme discipline. When one becomes too “Gung Ho” in his thinking he will find it impossible to work in any civilian organization and to work on any team. As a result of this inflexibility about non-essentials a lot of things in life will never come his way and the failure of that to occur is, in his eyes, all



someone else's fault. The difficulty begins when one becomes overly enthusiastic, which he has a right to be and should be, but allows his enthusiasm to trigger a system of Arrogance. One cannot be a leader and allow his enthusiasm to trigger Arrogance so that his standards, when wrong, become unchangeable and as a result he looks down on everyone and treats them as his inferiors. This includes developing this attitude toward those who he is subordinate to, along with those at his level, who don't have his "good standards" so that in effect he desires and tries to superimpose his standards on everyone in life. This is the destruction of freedom, the very thing for which one must fight in the military and for which one lives as a primary priority.

The Jews with Negative Volition toward the Gospel of Christ have blotted Christ out of their minds through a system of thinking in terms from Arrogance. Arrogance tendencies may be hidden or not but always result from some level of [Negative Volition](#) toward the gospel or Bible Doctrine. To the extent that a believer is Self Righteous in prosperity and full of [Self Pity](#) in disaster, to that extent, he is Arrogant no matter how humble he may THINK he is. In addition, slavery to the details and circumstances of life and the resultant instability are derived from Self Righteousness in prosperity and Self Pity in times of adversity and the inevitable oscillation between these two. Any slight sign of Self Pity means this believer is an Arrogant slob and any slight sign of Self Righteousness means he is a fat headed, [Egotistical](#), Arrogant slob. As a result of the Jews, who reject the 1<sup>st</sup> advent of Christ and the means of making Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God through faith alone in The Lord Jesus, The Christ alone, building up [Black out of the Soul](#) and layers of [Scar Tissue of the Soul](#), they prefer their own human effort works or Self Righteousness because Arrogance. Their thinking focus' on what is received MUST be deserved or earned, and they always prefers Self Righteousness to the Righteousness of God. This is the same thing which occurs today for many unbelievers and is also why some Christians spend so much time building up their Self Righteousness. Isaiah recognized that in every generation there would be Jews who blasphemously would reject The Lord Jesus, The Christ by blotting out the 1<sup>st</sup> advent. They would, did and continue to do so from Arrogance and in doing so and blotting this out and its significance they accept some part of the Mosaic Law which caters to their own Self Righteousness. In essence they reject Codex II of the Mosaic Law, teaching salvation and the 1<sup>st</sup> advent and go to Codex I, the Decalogue, and Codex III, the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions, for their road to salvation. ([1Pet 2:6-8](#), [Is 28:16](#))

By defending the Self Righteousness of keeping the law or some other system of morality the unbeliever and the Jew have rejected the imputation of the Righteousness of God which only occurs as a result of faith in The Lord Jesus, The Christ. In their Arrogance they have established an imaginary orthodoxy which does not exist in the Plan of God but only in their Arrogant imagination derived from the strong influence of Evil on their thinking. Since Jesus Christ is the source of the imputation of the Righteousness of God they have excluded him from their imaginary system of orthodoxy and thus have maligned him with the blaspheme of rejection. This is seen under concept of the Big Blot Out started during the Hypostatic Union of Christ. This Arrogant Self Righteousness derived from the Mosaic Law is what motivated Jewish participation in the crucifixion of The Lord Jesus, The Christ. This Big Blot Out system

is the underlying basis for all the great persecutions of Jews throughout history. Such Arrogance and Self Righteousness is also the basis for the Jewish persecution of Christianity in the time of Saul of Tarsus. The Lord Jesus, The Christ prophesied that the Jews who stood on Self Righteousness rejecting the Righteousness of God would excommunicate Christian Jews from the synagogue and they would think they were offering a service to God by killing Christians. ([John 16:2](#)) Where Arrogance exists there is always Self Righteousness which is divorced from reality and gathers momentum through zeal to destroy those who know and witness and communicate the truths of God.

### **Self Righteous Arrogance vs Imputed Absolute Righteousness**

Without the Righteousness of God imputed to the new believer there could be no Salvation, no Logistical Grace blessings, no Super – Grace nor Ultra Super – Grace blessing in time and no Surpassing – Grace blessings for eternity. The Righteousness of God cannot be imputed to anyone without his expression of faith alone in The Lord Jesus, The Christ alone. No one can try to keep the rules or rituals of the Mosaic Law or engage in any other human effort works or Self Righteousness and also receive the Righteousness of God. Self Righteousness is always rejected by God and is the manifestation of both known and [Blind Arrogance](#).

There is no sense to developing Self Righteousness in the Christian Way of Life to compete with the Righteousness of God imputed at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God. When the believer perceives that he is developing Self Righteousness this is an indication of the level of Arrogance in his life. The greatest subjective enemy of the believer is the Interlocking System of Arrogance and to the extent he uses some system of Self Righteousness to that extent he IS entangled in this Arrogance. All systems of Self Righteousness are Motivational Arrogance, blaspheme and a denial of the divine policy of Grace. Self Righteousness is produced by volition involved in some system of [Morality](#) or [Religion](#) related to Arrogance apart from divine sponsorship. There is a place for legitimate morality in Christianity as a part of the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions but never as a system of Self Righteousness. Most moral people are stuck on their own Self Righteousness and pseudo purity and are prideful, vain and critical of others and their Arrogance is abominable. They base their Self Righteous Arrogance on being better than others when, in fact, all believers have the same imputed Righteousness of God and He is obligated to bless them all under his system of Logistical Grace because of his Absolute Righteousness not their Arrogance involvement nor their Self Righteousness. The Interlocking System of Arrogance sets up one's own Self Righteousness which inevitably blasphemes and rejects the purpose and Plan of God related to the Righteousness of God. At Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God the Righteousness of God is imputed to the new believer ***for the explicit purpose of enabling him to carry out the execution of the Protocol Plan of God for his life.*** The believer must NEVER try to create a system of Self Righteousness competing with the Righteousness of God. For the believer to establish Self Righteousness in his life is the [Arrogance of Legalism](#). For the believer to rely on imputed Absolute Righteousness is the [Humility](#) of [Grace Orientation](#) from inculcated and [Metabolized Bible Doctrine](#).

### You Are What You Think

The power of thought exceeds the power of deed and deeds only have merit as they relate to proper thought. Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul is the thought which motivates compliance with the Plan of God and produces Grace Orientation to life. Grace excludes all systems of Self Righteousness as a basis for merit or blessing from God. The believer can only build the Edification Complex of the Soul, his spiritual life and spiritual advance on the foundation of imputed Absolute Righteousness and this building results from consistent Perception, Cognition, Inculcation & Metabolization of Bible Doctrine, a totally Grace process. In the conflict of Self Righteousness with the Righteousness of God there is actually no contest and it is only the Arrogance of either believer or unbeliever trying to be saved or receive blessing from God by some system of their own efforts, which thinks that this is a proper function. People are constantly trying to be saved by a multitude of varying efforts but only human Arrogance erroneously concludes that this Self Righteousness, from observing some system of morality, taboo or religious system, such as trying to fulfill the Mosaic Law requirements, can provide salvation. The Plan of God and Grace Policy not only excludes Self Righteousness but provides a proper substitute for it with the imputed perfect Righteousness of God where there cannot be competition. The Righteousness of God precedes the existence of Human History and will exist long after Human History is completed and because of God's Immutability the Righteousness of God will NEVER change nor fail. One of the greatest failures of the Self Righteousness of man is Blind Arrogance which results in a perpetual state of sinning. The blindness of Israel was and is the Blind Arrogance that assumes that self achievement can impress God. Self Righteousness because of baptism, circumcision, emotional experiences, giving up things, separation from "worldliness", following taboos, is a daily problem for everyone and as soon as one thinks he has overcome Self Righteousness, BANG!, he gets Self Righteous about the Self Righteousness he has defeated. It is a never ending battle to be constantly aware of Self Righteousness especially when it is a manifestation of blind Arrogance.

### The Plan of God vs Self Righteousness

The Plan of God cannot be stopped, deterred, deviated or derailed in any way and nothing in the Plan of God depends on any individual but only on the divine policy of Grace. No system of human effort works or Self Righteousness can obtain Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God nor raise the believer's level of spirituality. Whether it involves keeping the Mosaic Law or church baptism or any other system or program the only righteousness which Justifies is the Righteousness of God imputed at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God through faith alone in The Lord Jesus, The Christ alone. There is no substitute for the Righteousness of God imputed to the new believer and it sets up a secure, encapsulated pipeline for Logistical and all other Grace support and provisions from the Justice of God for the entire life of the believer. Substitute seeking only adds Scar Tissue of the Soul while sponsoring sinful Arrogance, selfcenteredness and human Self Righteousness which always competes with divine Absolute Righteousness.

In addition when there is built up Scar Tissue of the Soul there is intensification of Arrogance which occurs when Absolute Truth is rejected. The causes a 2 fold historically, individual and

spiritual result:

- The person involved comes to be only able to believe the LIE of the Evil plan and policy of Satan which today is manifest by the Human Good production found in welfare, socialism, communism and social action supported by believers.
- At the same time Arrogance strongly manifests itself in those who believe the LIE and emphasizes the selfcenteredness in their soul.

Self Righteousness is one of the greatest hindrances to the learning of Bible Doctrine and to spiritual growth. It is absolutely impossible for a Self Righteous person to grow spiritually and understand the Plan of God. This Self Righteousness exists in bible schools and local churches which do not expositively teach Bible Doctrine and in the United States of America today there is total Self Righteousness on the streets with gangsters, prostitutes and bar tenders who are all Self Righteous and it is also in government and the bureaucracies there. The only excuse and possible justification for the existence of bureaucracies comes from Self Righteousness linked to some [Crusade](#). [Self Pity](#) and Self Righteousness fuse in time of historical pressure or disaster to form a [Guilt](#) complex. This explains why the great composer Leonard Bernstein held a cocktail party for the black panthers. Wealthy people who have a Guilt complex have fused the Motivational Arrogance of their Self Pity and Self Righteousness and behind this is incredible entanglement in Arrogance.

### [Arrogance & Society](#)

Arrogance is found in very strange places in modern societies. It is found in the gutter as much as in the front pews of any church, it is everywhere and can be anywhere at any time. Arrogance is not necessarily a sin but a whole system of weaknesses including sin. The intensification of Arrogance under prosperity always produces Self Righteousness. When people engage in Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God by faith alone in The Lord Jesus, The Christ alone and join some church and then clean up their overt behavior under pressure from this local church they become very Self Righteous and very often whole nations do this. The United States of America is and has been very Self Righteous because of her prosperity and this prosperity was acquired, not from Self Righteousness but as a result of Free Enterprise as a function under the Laws of Divine Establishment. In the past 6-7 decades of recent history America has been systematically destroying this hard won prosperity because of the Self Righteous Arrogance of those in government. As a result people now hate anything which is successful and there is constant talk about redistribution of wealth, helping the poor downtrodden, giving government handouts to illegal alien residents but it is only the existence of Free Enterprise which provides prosperity for any nation. People now have 2 cars in all garages and as a result of this great prosperity the people imagine that their thinking is surely right about everything. On the other side of this thinking comes the Guilt which says that since people have 2 cars 1 of them should go to the 3<sup>rd</sup> world countries for those poor people there. This is epitomized by the Arrogance of the individuals in the entertainment industry who render their opinions and think they are totally right and justified in doing so because of their material prosperity, while they spend their entire lives [PRETENDING](#) to be someone or something they are not. Although this is extremely idiotic thinking, Self Righteousness is too blind to see the truth of it. Some Self Righteous Arrogant people want to tell others what they should wear or how they should dress and others want cars to not use certain types of fuel and

others question why anyone needs guns and the truth is that none of these things are any of their damned business. These people are so Self Righteous that they think they know what is better for everyone and then try to tell everyone what to do in all areas of their lives. God does not now nor has he ever liked Self Righteousness in a believer. Absolute Righteousness and true Spirituality and Self Righteousness with pseudo spirituality are not even remotely the same and Absolute Righteousness emphasizes that which is imputed at salvation to the soul and Self Righteousness emphasizes the overt activities of an individual in life.

When someone is envious of another's talent and desires to degrade this person they must do so very subtly, being clever and innocuous in their efforts. This is the way to get at someone and it happens every day when people, moslems, peace niks, etc., reduce The Lord Jesus, The Christ to the level of a teacher or religious man and is totally based on EVIL. Their effort is directed to putting The Lord Jesus, The Christ at the same level of the common man because in their minds all people are equal and all are the same. This can be applied to the Jew where no one is equal to the Jew today, nor in the past, nor ever, the Jew is superior to every other race and those who envy him are those who degrade him and persecute him such as occurred under Ferdinand and Isabella in Spain and in Hitler's Nazis in Germany, etc. Everywhere one can turn, today especially, there are those who wish to take a great person and make them look like a jackass. This is clearly the concerted effort of the democratic party over almost a decade so far with their persecution of President Donald Trump. The believer must recognize others who have talent, ability or knowledge which he does not have and he must understand how to overcome them if and when needed. The Jews have a high IQ but their mental blindness to the true doctrines of the Old Testament Scripture results in what can be called the Big Blot Out. In Arrogance the Jews have establish an imaginary orthodoxy which does not exist in the Plan of God but only in their Evil influenced and vain imaginations. By rejection of The Lord Jesus, The Christ, *the God of Israel* and their only savior, the Jews have excluded him from their imaginary orthodoxy so that every rabbi thinks he is as good as Christ, the prophet. Arrogance and Self Righteousness in Israel is totally divorced from reality, as it always is, consequently the Jews distort what they consider the service of God as in [John 16:2](#) where they excommunicate from the synagogue those who accept Christ. Moslems think when they kill Jews and Christians today that they are also offering service to God. This, like all types of [Religion](#) and [Legalism](#), is based on Self Righteousness while all [Grace Orientation](#) and Grace function is based on the imputed Absolute Righteousness from God which only comes from faith in The Lord Jesus, The Christ alone. ([Rom 10:3](#))

### **Arrogance of Lifestyle for Salvation**

The function of the Jew in trying to keep the Mosaic Law is referring to the LIFESTYLE of the Jews and Lifestyle is not ever a means of Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God. ([Eph 2:8-9](#)) Keeping the Mosaic Law did not, does not and cannot provide [Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God](#) for the Jew or anyone else. Keeping the Mosaic Law produces moral Self Righteous Arrogance and Legalism not salvation. ([Rom 3:20](#), [Rom 3:28](#), [Matt 5:17](#), [Gal 3:24](#)) Only human Arrogance can erroneously conclude that any human effort within some system of religion or morality can result in Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God. In the Theocentric dispensations of the Old Testament Scripture times NO ONE was saved by their



own human efforts or works righteousness or keeping the Mosaic Law or any other system of morality. This means that the policy of the Grace of God excludes, in every dispensation, Salvation by any system of human efforts or Self Righteousness. The Jewish unbeliever in the Age of Israel was blinded by Arrogant self achievement and the Self Righteous Arrogance resulting from his keeping the Mosaic Law and this is still a problem for Jews today. No lifestyle, including semi perfection in morality, can open the gates of heaven for Eternal Life. Doing is a lifestyle but Faith, Thinking, directed nonmeritoriously toward The Lord Jesus, The Christ is the means of eternal salvation and the morality of lifestyle must never be confused with eternal salvation. The failure of Israel is the same failure of all Self Righteous Arrogant people in choosing the WRONG righteousness. In Arrogance they choose personal righteousness and in salvation one must choose the Righteousness of God above all else.

There is nothing wrong with morality but there is nothing RIGHT with Arrogance in morality. Contrary to popular opinion where morality exists without Arrogance, freedom and privacy exist with self determination. Morality is and should be a LIFESTYLE in a client nation and does not refer to any system or means of salvation. Arrogance in distorting lifestyle into a way of salvation sets up the principle of competition between human Self Righteousness vs the Righteousness of God. While morality sponsors human freedom, to the believer it is neither salvation nor spirituality in itself. Hell will assuredly be filled with very moral people whose satisfaction with their own moral good deeds or Self Righteousness motivated them in Arrogance to reject the offer of God's Absolute Righteousness through faith alone in The Lord Jesus, The Christ alone. However, most immoral town drunks may wind up in heaven if they were caught drunk in church and expressed faith alone in The Lord Jesus, The Christ alone. Morality provides freedom which is the environment for evangelism and therefore nonmeritorious decisions which are the sole basis for salvation.

The means of Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God is through faith in The Lord Jesus, The Christ and his Substitutionary Spiritual Death for all human sin on the cross but what the Jews did was take their own efforts, under a system of morality which was based on their Arrogance, and thereby set up their own Self Righteousness in opposition to the Absolute Righteousness of God and this is and has always been their major blind spot. Arrogance distorts lifestyle into a system of moral Human Good deed efforts and the believer must remember Eph 2:8-9. The failure of the Jews was improper function of will or volition rather than inability of Self Righteousness which was the cover for their inadequacy. The most Arrogant people in the world are Inadequate people. The ones who think they are ugly or poor and thus they cover their inadequacy with Arrogance. Since 1440 BC, for over 3000 years, the Jews have been covering their inadequacy with Arrogance. Jewish Arrogance rejects the gospel and substitutes personal Self Righteousness from attempts at adherence to the rituals and prohibitions of the Mosaic Law. The principle here is that NO ONE can ignore The Lord Jesus, The Christ and get away with it. The unbeliever always ignores Christ whether he is Jew or gentile. Therefore, the true reason that throughout the history of man the Jews have been periodically en mass destroyed and are constantly blamed for all the problems of mankind is the mentality which has resulted in this Big Blot Out. This applies to gentiles as well and the average believer today, and for a very long time in history, is so full of his own Arrogance,

self importance, emotion, morality and Human Good ideas, that he has no clue as to who The Lord Jesus, The Christ really is and what salvation is about. To this average believer today Christ is not real at all and will never be real until they are in a hopeless mess, deep in [Reversionism](#), facing the [Sin Unto Death](#) and only then they may think of Jesus Christ again.

This Big Blot Out by the Jews still exists today and periodically causes the disasters of the holocausts in history. Such Arrogance is blasphemous and disastrous and has resulted from their having blotted out the 1<sup>st</sup> advent and set aside the principle that one cannot ignore The Lord Jesus, The Christ and get away with it. In their false system of Self Righteous Arrogance only the person who attempts to be saved by the Self Righteousness of keeping the Mosaic Law or some other system of religion or morality shall go up to heaven. The Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul, the source of faith, is also the source of the rationalization as to who should go to heaven. This rationalization in the Frame of Reference comes from Arrogance. This Arrogance in the Right Lobe rationalizes saying “My thoughts are better than divine revelation” thus Arrogance rejects faith and rationalizes. Rationalization thereby produces human Self Righteousness and the Legalism involved with keeping the Mosaic Law, whereas faith produces the imputation of the Righteousness of God. Arrogance finds or devises some thing which must be done for salvation such as adhering to some taboo system, or some system of morality or religion or some pattern of Self Righteousness etc. The reason many people have not acquired salvation is that they choose Rationalization from Arrogance above Faith from [Humility](#).

Arrogance always emphasizes the ritual while Grace always emphasizes the reality. The Jew represents a facsimile of the individual's soul in today and just as the Jew has blotted out the cross and the 1<sup>st</sup> advent of Christ so the unbeliever, in his Arrogance, rejects the cross with Negative Volition and in Arrogance sets up a system of [Human Good](#) works or Self Righteousness for salvation.

• Arrogance + Human Effort Works == pseudo salvation

Arrogance is also the way that liberalism is born, then comes rationalization and then Self Righteousness. The unbeliever Jew denies the efficacy of redemption resulting from the Substitutionary Spiritual Death of Christ by blotting out the 1<sup>st</sup> advent with Arrogance and rationalism in his Right Lobe.

### **Self Righteous & Blind Arrogance, Apostasy & Self Pity**

Hidden or [Blind Arrogance](#) is the source of most sins and 90% of all problems for the believer. A person who faces life and becomes discouraged has a basic problem of Arrogance since they would never be discouraged unless they think of self as greater in some way than they really are. People constantly make an issue of self rather than seeing the true issues of life. When involved in Arrogance one destroys his IQ and thus becomes stupid because this he is guided by the acceptance of information, either TRUE or FALSE, only on the basis of his Arrogance. If the one who provides the information does not personally please them or has not made obeisance to them in some subtle way, whether the information is correct or not is not the issue. These people are simply resentful and this comes from Arrogance. In England in 1979 ministers had to word their messages in a certain way so as not to offend the sensitivities of

anyone. This resistance to Bible Doctrine in England was the resistance to plain speaking and is the cult of vanity and Arrogance. This exists now in the United States of America and is continuing today with “politically correct” speech which aims to prevent offending anyone. Because truth is resisted by one, no matter how smart a person he is, this makes him immediately stupid. Because of vanity when people feel that the communicator of information is speaking down to them, even if the speaker is 100% correct, in their view from their Arrogance they consider the speaker 100% wrong. Truth may, in addition, disagree with pet ideas or offend one when a person is in a state of [Self Pity](#) and this becomes another basis for rejection of the truth.

It is very easy to parlay Self Pity into mental confusion and by this confusion become resentful of the truth or to take it subjectively instead of objectively. It is the ministry of God the Holy Spirit to cause the believer to be objective in the Perception, Cognition, Inculcation and Metabolization of whatever Bible Doctrine is taught so that it is taken as the Word of God, from God, in such a way so as to correct, change, enlighten, motivate and provide what is needed for the believer to orient properly to life. Having in past times had a good sense of humor and been able to have a good laugh now and again once a person takes himself too seriously, as a result of Arrogance, his sense of humor is immediately lost. Along with this loss goes the ability to take a verbal or mental berating from anyone despite these others being totally wrong, and ignore it and laugh about. This is a loss of the ability to orient to life and to mature as a human being and believer in Christ. Most problems Christians have are the result of them being immature people and immature believers. Self Pity is one manifestation of this and can be mistaken for many things often being disguised as pseudo spirituality or some level of concern for the well being of the Human Race. It is very easy to get a society to accept Self Pity. However, when society begins to accept the personal Self Pity of many people then society has lost its collective strength and cannot cope with the collective problems of life. This becomes an enervating terrible loss and weakness to any client nation.

Apostasy does not have to be related to antagonism toward the personality of the Pastor Teacher who is properly teaching doctrine which has been rejected nor to the obvious errors of teaching which will occasionally occur but it is always related to Self Pity and Frustration in the apostate believer. People who are unhappily married and attend “program” churches, try to compensate for failure in their personal life to adjust to each other by becoming very active in whatever activities or programs the church offers in terms of service. In so doing they avoid dealing with their personal problems and the reality of their own situation. By not relating their problems to Bible Doctrine they develop a very strong area of sensitivity. As a result they do not profit from doctrinal teaching but immediately react to it. Once they react from Arrogance they begin to use a name calling system to justify their frustration. Because of this, it is possible for them to be very regular in attendance at Bible class and never profit from it because Arrogance resists the truth. This was the case with Satan, who lived in the presence of God as the anointed cherub, who spent much of his time in the presence of The Lord Jesus, The Christ and Pride or Arrogance was his failure. Satan is one of the most attractive capable creatures ever created by God and has greater intellect and perspicacity than many other creatures but with all this and living in the presence of the Lord every day and seeing the

glory of God he still resisted the doctrine and the whole system of the Plan of God in Arrogance. Being smarter than humans can ever imagine being and more perceptive, living in the presence of eternal infinite God, seeing his attributes in action and hearing the wisdom of God, HOW COULD HE POSSIBLY FAIL? How could Satan say “I will be like the most high”? The answer is simple, [Prideful Arrogance](#).

Arrogance is the greatest enemy of the individual and causes him to make an issue of self when he is not even an issue at all. Arrogance causes him to overestimate self through selfcenteredness and also under estimate self through Self Pity both being incorrect positions. In both situations he starves his soul, which is designed to absorb and contain the Absolute Truths of Bible Doctrine, and feeds it only the LIE of EVIL as a result of his entanglement in Arrogance. When the soul fails to take in Truth, because of neglecting, resisting or rejecting Truth, no matter how strong, powerful or wealthy a person may be, he will degenerate to the point of death because he cannot survive without some aspect of Absolute Truth in the Stream of Consciousness of his Soul. People who constantly feel sorry for self cannot be consoled or helped and all they want is attention and they will suck dry anyone in their periphery, trying to increase the attention they are getting. This has destroyed many pastors who try to appease people and help them but they do not want help and will not allow their attitudes to be straightened out as long as anyone gives them attention. This, as a destroyer of many, is all a matter of involvement in the Interlocking System of Arrogance.

Return to the [Table of Contents](#)

### [Gate #10 – The Arrogance of Approbation](#)

People divorced from reality cannot ever accept reality especially when reality is disaster and as a result they cannot cope with it. For one involved in the Interlocking System of Arrogance there is nothing greater and more stimulating than human approbation. However, the reality is that the worst thing which can ever happen to a human being is to desire the approbation of a crowd or an individual because this eventually destroys the people who desire it and is why the [phoniest people in the world are generally entertainers](#). Being a good entertainer requires that the actor or musician be divorced from reality and if he has talent and is going to play a part he must divorce self from the reality of his life and enter into the part he is going to play. Once he plays a few parts and receives approbation from the audiences he then becomes permanently divorced from reality and this is similar to a narcotic addiction where he must have it all the time. When they start to lose the attention of the crowds they have to go into wild activities to gain more attention. This is what drives people in show business to think that their [Personal Opinions](#) about issues in life have any value whatsoever. In addition, those who are strongly influenced by approbation cannot ever handle disaster. This is why American politicians are of no value in the world today because they are in the GAME of politics for approbation and though 90% may be smart people individually they are so divorced from reality they will be destroyed in the next big national disaster.

Mobs are individuals in a group which have no leader nor discipline and are always emotional, fickle, irrational and seek approbation from the masses around them. Mob involvement is a distraction for the individual to Perception, Cognition, Incultation & Metabolization of Bible Doctrine and becomes a breeding ground for complete entanglement in Arrogance. Those individuals who depend on the approbation of the mob or the big crowd will never have capacity for life and will lose their honor and integrity ending up with a distorted scale of values becoming a demagogue or politician. Approbation from the crowd, when taken seriously, destroys moral courage and distracts from Bible Doctrine and for the believer so oriented, guarantees a lifetime of misery and then a horrible death before being face to face with the Lord. Mob function demands equality while intruding into privacy, destroying property and rejecting authority, thereby it is a destroyer of human freedom. The Mob becomes an evil instrument and easily succumbs to rumor and propaganda and is always victimized by demagogues who promise the millennium and in reality give nothing. Freedom is lost in the mob and every person as a part a mob is a slave to irrational and insane emotion. The mob and its approbation is an incredible distraction to believers learning how to handle national or any collective disaster when it occurs.

Return to the [Table of Contents](#)

### **Gate #11 – The Arrogance of Self Vindication**

Involvement in the Interlocking System of Arrogance renders a person unteachable and even a Pastor Teacher focused on expository teaching of Bible Doctrine cannot teach people in a congregation when they are constantly trying to [Justify](#) or vindicate themselves. This is where all conspiracies come into being and where there is an interlocking of Self Vindication with [Conspiracy Arrogance](#). There is only one person in the vindication business and it is gross arrogance, even blasphemy, to ever attempt to engage in Self Vindication. Only God is the true and accurate witness and ONLY God has all the facts. Others who Judge, Malign, Gossip, are abusive toward others, dislike others or try to discredit others for any reason, do exist, but, they have intruded upon the prerogative of God and have no right to their actions and are in fact responsible directly to God for trying to usurp his job. Therefore, and in addition, no one has any right to Self Vindication as a compensation for real or imagined wrong. The believer is to always live his life as unto the Lord and **NEVER try to justify self for any thing to any one, EVER!** The believer must ensure he is aligned with the Lord and the Grace Plan of God but must never try to justify self because if he does he will become the most unpopular person in the world, a [Self Righteous](#) prig. No one likes this kind of person and this is the most effective way to completely destroy one's own life. To constantly make Self Righteous pronouncements about how right one is, is Self Vindication Arrogance at its worst. ONLY God has the right of vindication for believers and the fact is that **GOD MUST VINDICATE HIS WORD WHEREVER IT IS FOUND** therefore the secret to vindication by God is consistent Post Salvation Epistemological Rehabilitation by Perception, Cognition, Incultation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine to accumulate a MAXIMUM of his word, the thinking of Christ ([1Cor 2:16](#)), into one's soul.



Return to the [Table of Contents](#)

### **Gate #12 – The Arrogance of Fanaticism**

When the attraction of the Interlocking System of Arrogance is allowed by the believer to distract him in his Spiritual Life because of his failures under [Motivational Arrogance](#) it has inevitably begun as a result of some level of [Negative Volition](#) toward Absolute Truth. Avoiding the attractions of the Interlocking System of Arrogance demonstrates that the believer is developing greater and greater faithfulness to God without becoming Fanatical toward God. Fanaticism is a category of Arrogance where the believer is inordinately preoccupied with self and is saturated with intensive Motivational Arrogance from [Self Righteous Arrogance](#) and [Pseudo Morality](#) which becomes Fanaticism. The believer is supposed to demonstrate true faithfulness toward God and his Grace Plan without Fanaticism which can only be accomplished by consistent function in the [Divine Dynasphere](#), the [Power system of God](#) which does not create Fanatics but does create Faithfulness. Fanaticism is also a distortion of Bible Doctrine and there is no place in Christianity for Fanatics. Fanaticism is:

- ▲ ZEAL without knowledge
- ▲ Excessive enthusiasm without [Motivational Virtue](#)
- ▲ Irresponsible Arrogance without [Functional Virtue](#)
- ▲ Subjective Concentration without Bible Doctrine Inculcation
- ▲ Arrogance as inordinate Zeal
- ▲ Bigotry
- ▲ Having Extravagant and Wild Notions
- ▲ Distortion and Misapplication of Bible Doctrine.
- ▲ Failure to regard Humans as PERSONS.

These areas of thought as [Motivational Arrogance](#) can start a whole system of Fanaticism involving the [Functional Arrogance](#) of:

- ▲ Inordinate Ambition
- ▲ Inordinate Competition
- ▲ Complaining
- ▲ Criminality
- ▲ Authority
- ▲ Crusader
- ▲ Conspiracy
- ▲ Political
- ▲ Revolutionary
- ▲ Antisemitism
- ▲ Achievement
- ▲ Legalistic
- ▲ Religion

The Divine Dynasphere, the Power System of God calls for [VIRTUE](#) and Bible Doctrine First NOT Fanaticism. To the extent one becomes a Fanatic he has failed in the Christian Way of Life and fallen headlong into Cosmic Dynasphere I under Motivational Arrogance and thus Fanaticism is Arrogance. Again, the believer must stop thinking in terms of Arrogance ([Rom 12:3](#)) to avoid becoming involved in the functions of the Interlocking System of Antagonistic Emotional Hatred, Cosmic Dynasphere II. Thinking in terms of Arrogance and Antagonism in these 2 systems results in a level of Fanaticism which is INSANITY and a DISTORTION of all Absolute Truth. In fact, one of the most obvious signs of being involved in the fragmentation resulting from pulling the pin of the Arrogance grenade is Fanaticism. There is no excuse for the believer to ever become a Fanatic because TRUE motivation within the Protocol Plan of God, the Power System of God, the Divine Dynasphere, is not Fanaticism but is the invariable result of placing:

- ▲ Bible Doctrine first
- ▲ Mandates First
- ▲ Virtue First
- ▲ Glorification of The Lord Jesus, The Christ first

Fanaticism is therefore both Illusion and Delusion from one's distortion of Bible Doctrine and the believer must therefore dismount from his Fanaticism.

Once the believer starts thinking in terms of Arrogance under Motivational Arrogance with [Mental Attitude Arrogance](#), his life will fragment along the lines of his predilection for subjective or objective manifestations of Arrogance. Therefore, the believer will become either a Fanatic or a FOOL or maybe even both. A good illustration is the Mental Attitude Sin of [Jealousy](#) which results from involvement in Mental Attitude Arrogance and which is a Fanaticism of Motivational Arrogance. This often occurs when Christians avoid and condemn the OBVIOUS overt sins, which in their thinking are the worst sins. They then always become involved in the more subtle sins, the Mental Attitude Sins, which are always considered by God to be far worse, and as a result they become Fanatics in condemning the others who are involved in the overt sins. ([Prov 6:16-19](#)) Then they proceed to call themselves the "Moral Majority" when they are in reality the spiritually arrogant.

Therefore, Arrogance as a system of thought in which there is a real or imagined sense of individual superiority, distorts life and the true perspective of human frailty, resulting in presumptuous [Self Righteousness](#) and a false sense of destiny which produces Fanaticism. These Self Righteous people with their strong personalities tend to dominate any group where they find themselves. When they hear some opinion with which they do not agree they step in for correction and express their opposing opinion seeking to impose their own Self Righteous Standards on all others. Because they have gone from Faithfulness to God in the Divine Dynasphere to Fanaticism in the Cosmic Dynaspheres they have a vernier of strength with a dominating personality from Motivational Arrogance and they thus reject Absolute Truth in any form especially Bible Doctrine. This is Fanaticism and a total obsession with self which motivates one to superimpose his personal false opinions on others, concerning Bible Doctrine standards which they have universally rejected. This inevitably interlocks with [Personality Arrogance](#) so that this believer picks something he does not like and distorts Bible Doctrine to

the point of supporting his ideas about this thing and his desire to stop its functions or destroy it, then he claims that the bible supports his position in areas such as:

- ▲ Abortion
- ▲ Equal Rights
- ▲ Homosexuality
- ▲ Transgenderism
- ▲ Women's Lib
- ▲ ETC.

These people are Fanatically trying to get others to accept their ideals so that they can become the Authority. Inevitably with this comes what they consider as righteous indignation which is out of control. This often occurs in a Reaction to some government administration overreaching the authority granted to them by the constitution of the nation. This is what occurred in the Reagan and Trump administrations when these true conservative presidents were vehemently criticized by both liberals and conservatives because they did not join the band wagon of the party and did not agree with the personal crusades of the conservatives to remain in power. There is one category of people who cannot ever stand or support any truly good legitimate, conservative, establishment oriented administration in the United States government, Fanatics. However, in any system of government when the leading ruler or administrator, like the American president, becomes a Fanatic, then the government will move to dictatorship and when in America Congress attempts to oppose him he will remove them or their power in some way and when the Judicial Branch opposes him he will do the same and take full control of the country. This is what Obama was trying to do and probably what Mr. Trump should have done. Fanaticism is TRUE Arrogance and arrogant people cannot think clearly and for clear thinking one must KNOW principle and have the practical, pragmatic application of, this was and is Mr. Trump.

Arrogant believers always have their own pet area of “holiness” or “spirituality” and Self Righteous Arrogance takes this pet area and runs with it in Fanaticism and tries to forcibly push it onto others. This Fanatic becomes so narrow with his tunnel vision that his pet area of “holiness” becomes his definition of morality but is in fact [Pseudo Morality](#). Therefore, once one becomes a Fanatic the only field of morality which is acceptable to him is his area of Fanaticism and all other areas or definitions are then not tolerated and degeneracy begins. This involvement in [Motivational Arrogance](#) in Cosmic Dynasphere I is engaging in what has been historically fulfilled through Arrogance in:

- ▲ The French Revolution
- ▲ William Garrison
- ▲ Henry Ward Beecher
- ▲ Harriet Beecher Stowe

The people involved here were functioning under [Crusader Arrogance](#) motivated by their Fanaticism and this arrogance attempted to bring the solution to varied systems of slavery by violence and warfare which was totally unnecessary. There are always many small arrogant people who will listen to a dominating arrogant person speak. In their small minded arrogance and their inflamed thinking these people were for violence to solve what they considered to be an insurmountable problem and they were Fanatical.

Therefore, Fanaticism is from and part of EVIL while Faithfulness is [Motivational Virtue](#) directed toward God. Faithfulness to God must be understood and developed from maximum [Metabolized Bible Doctrine](#) in the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul without developing Fanaticism for God. Fanaticism, therefore, is Motivational Arrogance from Evil within Cosmic Dynasphere I.

Return to the [Table of Contents](#)

### **Gate #13 – The Arrogance Skills**

People, generally, are no longer teachable and the exact reason this system of Arrogance has to be explained and understood. The believer cannot learn the Christian Way of Life if he does expose himself to Bible Doctrine teaching because living in the Cosmic Dynasphere System under the rulership of Satan, he is constantly focused on Self. One cannot learn anything in life when he constantly tries to Justify self. In fact most people spend their entire lives in Self Justification because they do not regard themselves as PERSONS but as achievers or failures. Whether Achievers or Failures they constantly try to Justify themselves and their position and no one can learn anything while in this status quo. Therefore, obviously, the believer cannot learn Bible Doctrine in the [Power system of God](#) the Divine Dynasphere when he is involved in the Self Justification of the Arrogance Skills within the Interlocking System of Arrogance, Cosmic Dynasphere I. In the Power System of God, the Divine Dynasphere, the believer must remember that GOD HAS JUSTIFIED HIM at the point of his having made Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God and has provided him with the imputation of the Absolute Righteousness of God. This is what opens the field for the believer's function within the Power System of God, the Divine Dynasphere, the Protocol Plan of God.

The Arrogance Skills are a subjective way of thinking based on principles and policies of EVIL and the believer must divest himself from them at all costs and remain objective in his thoughts and focused not on Human Viewpoint but on the Divine Viewpoint of Metabolized Bible Doctrine resident in his Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.

- ✧ **Prov 23:7**; “As a person thinks in the right lobe of his soul ([heb] nephesh = soul), so he is”.
- ✧ Marcus Aurelius; “Our Life is what our thoughts make it”.

False variables related to involvement in the Arrogance Skills include all of the totally false principles involved in the Interlocking System of Arrogance and the Interlocking System of Antagonistic Emotional Hatred, the false doctrines of demons, the plan and policy of Satan derived from and called EVIL, saturating the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.

### **Arrogance Skills Defined**

#### **Self Justification**

This is a world one lives in where he is always right and all others are always wrong. When distracted by Self Justification the believer then enters into functions under Self

Deception. Self Justification as one of the Arrogance Skills attacks the [Faith Rest Drill \(5 stages\)](#) and takes the matter of personal wrongdoing out of the hands of the Supreme Court of Heaven.

### Self Deception

Self Deception results in seeing self as a hero and close to being God. This Arrogance is a [Mental Attitude](#), a [Motivational Arrogance](#) and a deception of self so that a person who is Arrogant, no matter how intelligent he may be, becomes instantly truly stupid. This Arrogant person has created within himself a weakness which makes him vulnerable to every distortion in life, this is his Arrogance. When function in this area becomes a daily practice the believer then enters into Self Absorption. Self Deception as one of the Arrogance Skills attacks the reality of and need for the [Filling of God the Holy Spirit](#) and having [Metabolized Bible Doctrine](#) saturating the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul, thus very often the believer is totally ignoring both.

### Self Absorption

Inevitably Self Absorption results in totally leaving reality behind. Self Absorption attacks the reality of and need for developing [Personal Love for God](#) and [Occupation with the Person of The Lord Jesus, The Christ](#) as the source of the greatest blessing for the believer in [Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God](#) and replaces this with total focus on self love.

Preoccupation with Self is always an indication of strong involvement in the Interlocking System of Arrogance and function within the Arrogance Skills. The Arrogance skills when used by a Spouse in his marital relationship will ultimately undermine and destroy the Marriage. [Impersonal – Unconditional Love](#) is an essential part of every marriage, and perpetuates [Integrity, Honor and Virtue](#) without any involvement of the Interlocking System of Arrogance or Arrogance Skills and without involvement in the Interlocking System of Antagonistic Emotional Hatred. Arrogance never takes responsibility for being Arrogant because of functions within the 3 Arrogance Skills. The Arrogance Skills of Self Justification, Self Deception and Self Absorption cycle in the negative believer's soul and cause him to LIE to himself because he believes the LIE of Evil and, as a result, become a [Psychopathic](#) liar.

The believer must beware of Justifying his sins ignoring the necessity for use of the [Rebound Procedure](#) as a result of his function under the Arrogance Skill of Self Justification. When involved in the Arrogance Skills and other aspects of the Interlocking System of Arrogance the only recovery for this and any carnality is the rebound procedure provided by God. Rehashing past sins, problems or failures results in Self Absorption, [Self Pity](#) and total involvement in the Arrogance Complex and Arrogance Skills. The Lust Patterns of the Old Sin Nature along with the involvement in the Interlocking System of Arrogance, the Arrogance Skills, and the Interlocking System of Antagonistic Emotional Hatred are the means of the believer's total abject failure in the Spiritual Life. These Arrogance skills cycle forward through each level and then, at times, in reverse, complicate the status of the believers soul with overwhelming Arrogance.



Arrogance Skill #1

Self Justification results in

Arrogance Skill #2

Self Deception results in

Arrogance Skill #3

Self Absorption

Once a believer gets into this cycle, if it is unbroken by his use of the rebound procedure, then when it recycles over and over without his not breaking out of the pattern, it ultimately results in psychosis. If the believer takes the undaunted position that he is never wrong he has obviously cycled through the Arrogance skills many times.

### **Exploitation & Blaming others for One's Problems**

One of the greatest hindrances to learning Bible Doctrine is the interference of well meaning Christians in one's life. Only those who are truly Grace oriented and have true [Humility](#) can avoid being exploited or used by those who function under the Arrogance skills. The believer must always beware of the condescending person since they are functioning under the Arrogance skills using pseudo compassion to exploit him. He need not concern himself about the other person's Modus Operandi but only concern himself with his function under the [Spiritual Skills](#). Every individual has his own free will volition and uses it regularly for both good and bad. No one else can use his volition and no one can coerce his volition, UNLESS HE LETS THEM, therefore the believer must NEVER BLAME SOMEONE ELSE FOR HIS FAILURES. In Arrogance one always accepts responsibility for his successes in life and therefore he MUST assume responsibility for ALL his decisions, whether they are good or bad, successes or failures and never, ever, blame another person for them. Instead of facing failures and saying it is "MY FAULT" very often believers act like cry babies saturated with Self Pity and, as a result, get weaker every day. In addition, no matter what another person does, one cannot take responsibility for them, nor can he maintain any Bitterness, vindictiveness, nor implacability toward them. If he does then he becomes the loser who is entangled in the Interlocking System of Arrogance and Interlocking System of Antagonistic Emotional Hatred.

### **The Origin of Arrogance Skills**

All SIN is preceded by Arrogance, Satan's original sin, and all human sin is followed up by the Arrogance Skills. Therefore, all precedents for the Arrogance skills come from the original sin of Lucifer in eternity past. ([Ezek 28:14-17](#)) Therefore, Arrogance Skills are 'reverse thinking:

- ✧ Self Justification is lowering oneself in life by not taking responsibility for personal decisions
- ✧ Self Deception is where one has hit bottom in life lying to self
- ✧ Self Absorption is where all one can do is think about self and how he feels about anything and everything, and who is saying good things about him and who is saying bad things, and who is telling him he is wonderful and who is not, etc.

Arrogance makes many people in this world their own God, and in their own Arrogance they also say, "I will be like the most high", when they infer, IF I am 'good' enough God will let me into heaven.

[Is 14:14](#) describes the ORIGINAL sin of Arrogance when the super genius, God's most perfect creation, turned against God. As a result of this sin and later Satan's acquisition of the rulership of this world, every human sin from then on involves some form of Arrogance. The Arrogance of Satan was and is that he wants to supplant God, in the person of The Lord Jesus,

The Christ, to rule the angels. His Arrogance is such that he was ready to and in fact did do battle with his creator. Satan assumed in Arrogance that the Human Nature of The Lord Jesus, The Christ in Hypostatic Union was His area of vulnerability for these attacks. In one's Spiritual Life, the temptations he comes to are related to either the Interlocking System of Arrogance, the Interlocking System of Emotional Hatred or the Arrogance Skills. Antagonistic Emotion and Arrogance are the greatest Distractions of the Spiritual Life. Every time one is guilty of gossip or maligning another and thinks he is right, whether he is wrong or even if he is right, he is under Arrogance and Emotional sinning and he is lying about others and to himself. The first revealed direct Satanic temptation of The Lord Jesus, The Christ was designed by Satan to bypass the prototype Spiritual Life and make food more important than the Spiritual Life. In this first temptation Satan solicits the Divine nature to rescue the Humanity of Christ from the state of Hunger. There is both a Value and a Sin issue involved here. The Sinful Function of Self Absorption the 3<sup>rd</sup> Arrogance skill could result in Jesus entering the 2<sup>nd</sup> Arrogance Skill of Self Deception with lying to self in order to Justify saving himself in the 1<sup>st</sup> Arrogance Skill of Self Justification. It was a temptation asking the divine nature to provide for the hunger of humanity of Jesus so that He would bypass the prototype Spiritual Life and the [Filling of God the Holy Spirit](#) and reject the principle of [Logistical Grace](#). Jesus recognized clearly and EVERY believer must also recognize that GOD is obligated to provide all his life sustaining needs until it is time for him to leave this life.

### **Loser Believer – Believing the Lie**

The Loser Believer does not lose his salvation but does lose the conveyance of his Escrow Super – Grace Blessings in both time and eternity. However both Winners and Losers as believers still receive Logistical Grace support from God but the loser remains a “childish” immature person as an adult as a result of his having in some way rejected Bible Doctrine. The concept of “MACHO” generally connotes that a person has grown up physically but is still a child or moron mentally or emotionally. He is a stupid, dumb, imbecilic person and this includes most believers with the wrong overall Human Viewpoint concepts of life from indoctrination in the Cosmic Dynaspheres. Macho people are totally Arrogant and completely entangled in the Interlocking System of Arrogance and they are the worst to try to live with. When this reflects the status of the believer they have, for one reason or another, failed to be consistent in Perception, Cognition, Inculcation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine. These believers, under [Negative Volition](#) toward Bible Doctrine, have no spiritual growth and no understanding of the [Problem Solving Devices](#), [Spiritual Skills](#), [God's Power System](#), God's Grace Plan and no cognition of the [Unique Factors of the Church Age](#). They are ignorant of the [Irrevocable Assets](#) provided by God for their Spiritual Life, the [Divine Dynasphere](#), the [Filling of God the Holy Spirit](#), the fact that they are in the [Royal Family of God](#) and that they are a new spiritual species. They have ABSOLUTELY no concept of the purpose for or the process of the [Rebound Procedure](#) or of their equality of privilege and opportunity in the Christian Way of Life. This status for any believer is tragic because it has a profound effect on Human History and there are way too many spiritually childish believers in this nation and in the world today, the definitive cause of the degeneracy evident here today. The childish believers have GREAT INSTABILITY in their Spiritual Life and in their temporal life and they are similar to a ship being tossed out of control by waves in a storm at sea. They are constantly agitated and

unstable spiritually and mentally as a result of their having a total lack of Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of their Soul. Being tossed around by Heavy Seas or Waves refers to pressures, difficulties, problems, catastrophes, calamities, disasters, sorrows and any other extremities of life, even great prosperity. This believer is FAILING to use the [Problem Solving Devices](#) of the Protocol Plan of God obviously indicating an ignorance of their existence. This ignorance is the status quo of the believer who is ignorant of the:

- ✧ Mystery Bible Doctrine of the Church Age.
- ✧ Protocol Plan of God.
- ✧ 10 Problem Solving Devices.
- ✧ 39 Irrevocable Assets for the Spiritual Life.
- ✧ Grace as the foundation for the Plan of God.
- ✧ The Rebound Procedure
- ✧ How to maintain the Filling of God the Holy Spirit
- ✧ The mechanics of the Faith Rest Drill (5 stages)
- ✧ And much, much more.

This Ignorance results from some level of [Negative Volition Arrogance](#) toward Bible Doctrine which causes a malfunction of post salvation epistemological rehabilitation from a failure to be consistent in Perception, Cognition, Incultation, Metabolization and Application of Bible Doctrine. Therefore to be in the status of “destabilized” in the Spiritual Life is the absolute WORST thing that can happen to the believer, but it ONLY occurs because of his OWN CHOICES! As a result of his total ignorance regarding the 3 most basic Problem Solving Devices it is inevitable that he will enter into and become completely entangled in Cosmic Dynasphere I, the Interlocking System of Arrogance.

Therefore, to become a loser believer is to enter into Believing the LIE of the false Doctrine of Demons which is the principles of the Plan and Policy of Satan, EVIL, put into operation in the Interlocking System of Arrogance, the Interlocking System of Antagonistic Emotional Hatred and the 3 Arrogance Skills. Becoming a loser believer is combining Emotional sins and Arrogance sins and functioning under the 3 Arrogance skills. This problem solving incompetence results in the perpetual carnality of this Loser believer. Therefore, this loser Believer functioning under Cosmic Dynasphere I, the Interlocking System of Arrogance, has severely neglected or totally rejected Bible Doctrine and as a result moves into the Interlocking System of Antagonistic Emotional Hatred, Cosmic Dynasphere II. There he becomes the Enemy of the Cross, the Enemy of God, and a Hater of God. ([John 15:23](#)) When the Adult believer who has developed Spiritual Self Esteem with a [Personal Sense of Destiny](#), from functioning in the [Divine Dynasphere](#), develops [Personal Love for God](#) and then moves from this status to loser Believer he has been distracted by 3 primary things:

- ✧ Arrogance
- ✧ Emotion
- ✧ Problem Solving incompetence

Therefore Problem solving incompetence becomes a permanent distraction to the Spiritual Life resulting in perpetual carnality through the distortion, neglect or total rejection of the [Rebound](#)

Procedure, a crucial aspect of the Christian Way of Life. This believer is therefore minus rebound which puts him on the road of decline to the status of loser status and into the **8 stages of Reversionism**. Therefore, distortion of the rebound procedure is one of the most destructive problems in the Spiritual Life. A person who functions in the 8 stages of reversionism and reaches the stage of Emotional Revolt of the Soul will at this point engage in a stronger use of the Arrogance Skills thereby pushing himself further into reversionism and false reality. The Believer who remains without recovery in reversionism substitutes all of the Arrogance Skills for the Spiritual Skills and abandons all Doctrinal principles for the rest of his life and lives a life of total misery ending with the Sin Unto Death as a final administration of Divine Discipline.

### **The Threat of Perpetual Carnality**

This is the Interlocking System of Antagonistic Emotional Hatred blending into the Interlocking System of Arrogance which leads to persistent function under the Arrogance Skills.

- **Reaction** to Outside Pressure in life, the 1<sup>st</sup> stage of Reversionism, with Emotional Sins firms up the Arrogance Skills and their destruction of the spiritual life.
- **Distraction** in the Christian Way of Life, again the 1<sup>st</sup> stage of Reversionism, from Bible Doctrine and the Protocol Plan of God which is the Spiritual Life of the Church Age which was the main reason that Judaism was so popular in the beginning of the Church Age.

Therefore, Reaction and Distraction place the believer into the 1<sup>st</sup> stage of Reversionism which very often leads to the destruction of the Spiritual Life completely. Distraction can occur at any stage of the Spiritual Life and results from involvement in the Interlocking System of Arrogance and the Interlocking System of Antagonistic Emotional Hatred which eventually interact with one another when there is neglect of regular consistent use of the rebound procedure. This leads into functioning under the Arrogance Skills, of Self Justification, Self Deception and Self Absorption. Distraction creates a VOID in the Believers soul which is empty of Bible Doctrine as a result of non-participation in the processes of the Grace Apparatus for Perception for Post Salvation Epistemological Rehabilitation. On the other hand, the mature believer uses the Spiritual Skills to achieve promotion and thereby avoid these Arrogance Skills.

### **Arrogance Skills & Spiritual Life Distractions**

There are 3 things which result in believers being distracted from the Spiritual Life and Plan of God.

- Involvement with the Interlocking System of Antagonistic Emotional Hatred and the accompanying sins as a part of the distracted life.
  - The believer cannot ever free himself from these apart from the use of the rebound procedure.
- Involvement in the Interlocking System of Arrogance and the accompanying sins.
  - These will destroy the life, especially the Spiritual Life, in every imaginable way.
- Deployment of and function under the Arrogance skills.
  - No Believer can ever advance in the Spiritual Life while living under the Arrogance Skills.

When there is a lack of understanding of the True Spiritual Life there is a natural function

under the Arrogance Skills. First there is cycling through Self justification, Self Deception and eventually Self Absorption and then they reverse and cycle back intensifying their potential for destruction of the Spiritual Life. When involved in functioning under the Arrogance skills one is totally outside the realm of reality and being that there is no reality in Arrogance this is the greatest enemy of the Spiritual Life.

### **Cycling of the Arrogance Skills**

Implacability and Self Justification are found in the believer who has perpetual anger and **Self Righteousness** from the use of the Arrogance Skills and their constant recycling which results in a flawed believer. **James 1:22** explains that the flawed believer is a “Hearer” of the Word of God not a “Doer”. (**1Cor 3:12**) The limitations on the flawed Believer results in no function of the Spiritual Skills only function under the Arrogance Skills which, in fact, constantly function if there is no use of the Spiritual Skills. Arrogance Skills can start their function beginning at any of the 3 skill levels and then begin to cycle through all of them over and over, even in reverse. This results in entering the **8 stages of Reversionism**. Self righteous anger in the flawed believer does not receive justification from God. The believer cannot ever view self as being persecuted in any situation since this is Arrogance. If he is full of Self Justification then whenever he enters into an altercation or disagreement with anyone he will totally deceive himself and eventually cycle over and over through the 3 Arrogance Skills. When he is a loser, a “hearer of the word”, and he looks into the mirror of the Word of God in his soul he will turn away from the mirror which will have a distorted reflection because of his lying to himself. Thus he will forget all about Bible Doctrine, overlooking what has been taught, so that when this occurs repeatedly, he will claim rightness based on his false standards from Arrogance. When the believer can look into his own soul, and see self as he really is from the mirror of Metabolized Bible Doctrine then he AVOIDS the Arrogance Skills, subjective analysis from another’s counseling and any dependence on psychological analysis and functions. If he avoids Divine Viewpoint self analysis he automatically enters into the function of the 3 Arrogance Skills under Human Viewpoint self analysis. Therefore, the lack of the Application of Bible Doctrine to self results in Self Deception and further function in the Arrogance Skills. Therefore, when function under the Arrogance skills is practiced and continued this inevitably destroys the believers life. If the believer does not function under the 4 Spiritual Skills he IS Arrogant and it is inevitable that he will function under the 3 Arrogance Skills. As a result of moving into the 8 stages of Reversionism the believer lives a miserable existence and becomes status quo loser Believer in the Protocol Plan of God. These are people under the influence of EVIL through the Interlocking System of Arrogance who do not understand the word of God as a correction for their personal failures. These people are under occupation with personal problems, the details of life, and are totally subjective.

### **Arrogance & Stress in the Soul**

Arrogance always converts the ever present outside pressures of life into OPTIONAL Stress in the SOUL. Involvement with Arrogance, Arrogance Sins, Antagonism, Emotional Sins, and the Arrogance Skills will facilitate this conversion. The Interlocking System of Arrogance or Interlocking System of Antagonistic Emotional Hatred + Stress in the soul + the Old Sin Nature domination and control of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul results in entrance into these



Arrogance Skills by Dissociation. In this case certain elements of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul take on an independent and separate existence manifesting as the Psychosis of alternating personalities. Therefore, without proper and consistent use of the Rebound Procedure being locked into the Interlocking System of Arrogance and the Arrogance Skills is inevitable. The Arrogance skills will lead one into Christian Activism and this is another mechanism which will lead to destruction of his Spiritual Life. The only true solution to function under the Arrogance Skills and the Interlocking System of Arrogance is consistent Perception, Cognition, Inculcation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine and advance in the Spiritual Life to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God or beyond and this totally depends on the consistent use of the Rebound procedure.

### Outside Pressures which contribute to Stress in the Soul

Arrogance is destructive to the Spiritual Life and without the Problem Solving Devices deployed on the Forward Line of Troops of the Soul outside pressure in life always results in Stress in the Soul and stress in the soul always results in involvement with the Interlocking System of Arrogance. The outside pressures of life include both situations and circumstances of adversity and prosperity, which are antithetical situations but both can lead to Stress in the soul. When the outside pressures of life become the inside pressure of Stress in the soul it signifies 2 things:

- There are NO Problem Solving Devices on the Forward Line of Troops of the SOUL
- The Old Sin Nature has control of the soul therefore there is involvement of this believer in the Interlocking System of Arrogance and possibly the Interlocking System of Antagonistic Emotional Hatred.

Therefore, it is obvious that when the Old Sin Nature takes control of the soul the individual's Scale of Values change radically and he begins to live based on false values. This results in the use of Maladaptive Defense Mechanisms to blame others for his failures.

The development of the Spiritual Life, and moving into Spiritual Adulthood from the development of a Personal Sense of Destiny, Problem Solving Device #6, and its deployment into the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul, is a prolonged process. This spiritual growth is never instantaneous, and it, along with the other Problem Solving Devices, are essential to avoid stress in the soul. Stress is any pressure of life outside the Soul which ONE VOLUNTARILY LETS INTO THE SOUL and therefore, can only be blamed on self. Outside Pressure in life of either Adversity or Prosperity is inevitable and is what circumstances do to one. Stress in the soul is what one does to HIMSELF by succumbing to these outside pressures. Until the believer takes responsibility for using his own volition to create the Stress, it will dominate the soul and be the cause of destruction of his Spiritual Life. The Outside Pressures of Life can be converted to Stress in the Soul through the Interlocking System of Arrogance or the Interlocking System of Antagonistic Emotional Hatred. The believer often begins by Self Deception, lying to self, and continues with Self Justification, lying to others and ends with Self Absorption and total conviction that he is all that matters and can do no wrong. *Always remember, OUTSIDE PRESSURE of one kind or another is INEVITABLE while stress from it in the soul is totally OPTIONAL, totally based on one's own decisions to allow it into the soul and to push out the correct viewpoint from Metabolized Bible Doctrine.*

When a Pastor Teacher and people in a congregation accept false doctrine they depart from the Spiritual Life. Arrogance always rejects accurate expository doctrinal teaching and blinds the believer to the Truth as a result of his being too preoccupied with self or others in relationship to self. Once a believer rejects Bible Doctrine the Pressures of Life make their way into the soul as Stress and the soul is overrun putting the Spiritual Life out of Action and creating a vacuum in the soul. Into this vacuum freely flows the LIE of the False Doctrines of Demons, the Satanic Policy of EVIL with motivations for Human Good production. These are believers who are only interested in personal profit from God and are not interested in the fantastic system which God has provided for them to use in all situations in life. The believer MUST remember that The Lord Jesus, The Christ, when in Hypostatic Union on earth, had outside pressures which were UNIQUE and included things one would never be able to totally understand nor withstand. He had and used 8 [Problem Solving Devices](#), which he pioneered for the Church Age believers, to prevent the pressures of His life from becoming stress in His soul. Sharing the Happiness of God, Problem Solving Device #9, prevents the outside pressures of life from becoming the inside pressure of Stress in the soul but requires reaching the final aspects of [Advanced Spiritual Adulthood](#) through consistent function under the [Grace Apparatus for Perception](#). Allowing Stress into the soul lets the Old Sin Nature control the soul with the resultant destruction of the Spiritual Life. It is extremely important for all believers to understand that SIMPLY BEING A BELIEVER results in GREATER PRESSURE in life than any other person has. One cannot ever handle the pressures of life as a believer without his functioning within the Sophisticated Spiritual Life reached at Spiritual Adulthood from consistent residence and function in God's Power System, the [Divine Dynasphere](#).

### Categories of Adversity & Prosperity Derived from Lust

There are 8 Categories of Adversity which lead to Stress in the Soul when the 10 Problem Solving Devices are not available and deployed to handle Adversities:

- ✧ **Historical or National Disaster**
- ✧ **Victim of Crime Disaster** such as Homicide, Rape, Burglary, Child Abuse, etc.
- ✧ **Victim of Vituperation and Vilification** when there is failure to put the vituperation on the docket of the Supreme Court of Heaven with the [Faith Rest Drill \(5 stages\)](#), Problem Solving Device #3.
- ✧ **Loss of Health**
- ✧ **Economic Disaster**
- ✧ **Natural or Weather Disaster**
- ✧ **Fear of** or not being able to handle **rejection or loneliness** which requires the 10 Problem Solving Devices on the [Forward Line of Troops](#) of the soul to overcome and provide the ability to entertain self without others present and without degeneracy.
- ✧ **Fear of Personal Or a Loved One's Death**

There are 5 Categories of Prosperity leading to Stress in the Soul when the 10 Problem Solving Devices are not available and deployed to handle Prosperity:

- ✧ **Financial Wealth and Riches**
- ✧ **Love and Romance** providing both real and imagined pressures which result in an

increase in the sins of Arrogance and Emotion.

- ✧ **Promotion and Power** when given more power that one can handle objectively with Leadership principles by being promoted beyond one's capacity as a result of [Inordinate Ambition and Competition](#) which provide additional pressures.
- ✧ **Achievement and Recognition**
- ✧ **Success and Approbation**

It is the motivation from the 7 lust patterns of the Old Sin Nature which builds these 13 categories of Outside pressure into Stress in the Soul. When the Old Sin Nature is in control of the SOUL the Lust Pattern drives take over the soul for both believer and unbeliever and no one can, at that time, distinguish between the believer and unbeliever except God.

- ✧ **Power Lust** resulting in, or coming from approbation lust.
- ✧ **Approbation Lust** which is very subtle as it takes a dummy and gives him power over another person who is usually smarter and more capable.
- ✧ **Social Lust** from approbation lust.
- ✧ **Sexual Lust** for those who never overcame the stimulations of the body.
- ✧ **Pleasure Lust** for those who can no longer think and just sit and watch TV from sheer boredom.
- ✧ **Chemical Lust** as a need for drugs and / or alcohol.
- ✧ **Crusader Lust** for those who want to change everyone and every thing for the better.
- ✧ **Criminal Lust** for those who refuse to follow the rules in society under the [Laws of Divine Establishment](#).
- ✧ **Inordinate Ambition and Competition** for those who must keep up with the Jones' or prove they are the most likely to succeed.

This results in the total and unrestrained function of the Old Sin Nature motivated by Evil and results in degeneracy, apostasy, Motivational and Functional Arrogance and Antagonism and very often neuroses even [Psychoses](#). Neurosis is a matter of attainment and is not genetic in its origin, where one can attain a state of neurosis by following his volition into Arrogance and [Emotional Sin](#). The only true genetic tendency is toward SIN, Crime or Human Good, productions from the influence of Evil derived from the operational mechanics of the Old Sin Nature. The believer under control of the Old Sin Nature's lust patterns moves inevitably toward the Degeneracy of Arrogance and the Apostasy of [Reversionism](#). Arrogance and Lust always combine to demand emotional solutions to life. Therefore, as a result of allowing these 13 Categories of outside pressure to become stress in the soul, the believer enters the 8 Stages of Reversionism. If he has capacity for love and happiness from spiritual advance as a result of Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul he will avoid all the pitfalls of the lust patterns of the Old Sin Nature controlling the soul. Reaction to a "perfect" person in the [Feet of Clay Syndrome](#) results in a lust for stimulation from a variety of different sources including alcohol, drugs, illicit sex, revenge, etc.

God, in eternity past, provided solutions for all the problems which one can conceive of occurring in his life in the form of the [10 Problem Solving Devices](#). It is the believer's responsibility to learn Bible Doctrine under the [Filling of God the Holy Spirit](#) and [Grace](#)

Apparatus for Perception and then to develop, deploy and use these Problem Solving Devices stationed on the Forward Line of Troops of the Soul as solutions to ALL problems. If he does not do this, he will fail in the 4 battles of the soul as he allows the outside pressures of life into the soul to create stress in the soul. These 4 battles which occur in the soul of every believer include:

- **Old Sin Nature control of the soul** resulting in Stress in the soul.
- **Sin, Crime & Human Good vs Divine Good** production resulting from and in involvement in the Interlocking System of Arrogance, the Interlocking System of Antagonistic Emotional Hatred and the 8 stages of Reversionism.
- **False Doctrine in the Soul** as a result of believing the LIE of EVIL and rejecting Absolute Truth of Bible Doctrine from GRACE.
- Maladaptive Defense Mechanisms used for solutions to outside pressures in life instead of the Problem Solving Devices functioning in the Soul.

### **Reaction, Distraction & Injustice**

Reaction to injustice in life, as the 1<sup>st</sup> stage of Reversionism, can result in entrance into the Interlocking System of Arrogance and function under the Arrogance skills. The Arrogance Skills conform the thinking and function of the believer to the systems of this world which are based on EVIL, while the Spiritual Skills become Renovation of the Thinking (Rom 12:2+3) and conform the believer's thinking to Divine Viewpoint from GRACE. The Arrogance Skills are often derived from interaction with people where there is real or imagined injustice or adversity apparently meant to purposefully hurt others especially the believer. This creates a bad soul environment while Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul provides good soul environment. Arrogance skills are designed to enable the application of the devices in the Interlocking System of Arrogance and Interlocking System of Antagonistic Emotional Hatred to experience without the person even being conscious of his Arrogance or Antagonism. The Arrogance Skills make it impossible to execute the Protocol Plan of God for the believer with the resultant total failure and loss of his Spiritual Life and loss of the most fantastic blessings for both time and eternity. Whenever the believer enters the Interlocking System of Arrogance and remains within the system in carnality for any length of time he begins to develop these 3 Arrogance Skills.

Reaction sins combine with the Arrogance Skills to give birth to other Emotional, Antagonistic and Arrogance sins, and in this way volition becomes divorced from responsibility for decisions in an Emotional Revolt of the Soul. This involvement in Reversionism leads to Bitterness which is a category of Motivational Arrogance as Mental Attitude Arrogance and drives the believer into greater Interlocking in the System of Arrogance resulting in involvement in maliciousness and an unforgiving attitude. Bitterness which is one of the worst Mental Attitude sins acts like a virus in the soul. It operates as Motivational Arrogance moving through the Interlocking System of Arrogance and leads to the individual functioning under these Arrogance Skills. When the believer is out of fellowship and his soul is under the control of the Old Sin Nature, no matter how meritorious he may consider his works they are not part of his spiritual life and he is ingrained in the Arrogance Skills.

### Arrogance Skills & Power

There is a function of power today where people discover that by being Self Righteous or putting someone on a pedestal then reacting to that person through Iconoclastic Arrogance it gives them POWER. This results in something that solidifies their Arrogance so that they never comprehend their intense involvement in and functioning under the Arrogance Skills. In Self Absorption they suddenly gain a tremendous stimulus because of the power they have developed to destroy a person based on their system of thinking which results from their own cycling of the Arrogance Skills. It has never been understandable to me why a person would want to control another person or group or nation under a system of slavery and tyranny. It is a clear demonstration of a lack of understanding that when one has authority it comes with responsibility to those under his authority. Suddenly, for this person, the approbation factor becomes incredible and the power grows with it and they see many others in their periphery which are like the one they have chosen to destroy and this is the origin of Tyranny and the destruction of many.

### Arrogance Skills & Maladaptive Defense Mechanisms

As a part of the movement through the 8 stages of Reversionism, reaction as the combination of the Arrogance Skills of Self justification and Self deception results in the Modus Operandi of the reacting believer entering the status of function within the Maladaptive Defense Mechanisms. Past skeletons of failures which rise up from one's closet of the subconscious must never interfere with present spiritual momentum. When the believer is distracted and haunted by past failures or inflated by past achievements, he becomes enmeshed in the Arrogance skills and this ultimately results in falling down through the levels of the Apostasy of Reversionism. When the believer gets to the point of Scar tissue of the Soul in reversionism, the mirror of the Soul and all the compartments supporting it on the Forward Line of Troops are smashed and fragmented. The #1 enemy of the Spiritual Life, Arrogance and Human Viewpoint thinking, then occupies the Forward Line of Troops of the soul. This begins a morbid brooding over past failures or reaction through projection of one's flaws onto others which only produces a confusion of interaction of the Arrogance Skills, the Interlocking System of Arrogance, the Interlocking System of Antagonistic Emotional Hatred and Reversionism. Under the operational Status Quo of the Maladaptive Defense Mechanisms the reacting believer has entered into or accomplished 2 stages of unreality:

- ✧ They deny the existence of any problem regarding self and will not take responsibility for their problems and therefore they consider themselves always right and any others in their periphery always wrong.
- ✧ They assign all blame for their own faults and failures to the object of their projection and stand firm in that position.

This is the great Arrogance of Self deception combined with Self Justification and it results in total Self Absorption where they believe that they cannot do any wrong. Believers in the Royal Family of God, must always take responsibility for all Sin, Crime, Dead Human Good efforts and all Evil thought processes else they enter deeply into Self justification and Self Deception and ultimately Self Absorption the 3 Arrogance Skills. In addition to the involvement in Self Absorption, Self Absorbed people are vulnerable to deception by others because they become erratic and capricious like the woman who had a sudden change of thinking about the



prohibited tree in the Garden. This is the mechanism behind Cosmic Dynasphere Evangelism. Self Deception from the Maladaptive Defense Mechanisms of Denial and Projection is an Arrogance which makes one vulnerable to failure and thus totally indistinguishable from his unbeliever counterpart. Therefore, the only solution for the bad decisions to sin or commit criminal acts is the [Rebound Procedure](#) enabling the believer to take responsibility for his sin by acknowledging them to God.

### **Mechanics of Arrogance & Maladaptive Defense Mechanisms**

#### **Denial**

Is divorcement from the reality of the Divine Institutions, the Laws of Divine Establishment, all aspects of Bible Doctrine and the Attributes and Essence of God therefore it is the environment for Arrogance Skill #1, Self Justification. This occurs when the believer fails to acknowledge his own flaws, failures and sins and rejects the [Rebound Procedure](#) resulting in the reinforcement of Self Justification using projection. ([Hosea 8:7](#), [Gal 6:3](#))

#### **Projection**

Is [Transference Arrogance](#) involving ascribing to another person ones own thoughts, motivations, attitudes, flaws, and failures. It is a direct result of involvement in Denial so that he sees in others the cause of all his problems. ([James 3:14](#))

#### **Rationalization**

Is a self serving system of Self Justification, the Modus Operandi of giving incorrect, false definitions and explanations for one's own motivations, behaviors and relationships with others which results in functioning under Arrogance Skill #3, Self Absorption.

#### **Dissociation**

Is a reactionary alteration of the integration functions of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul resulting from engaging in Denial, Projection and Rationalization using the Arrogance Skills of Self Justification, Self Deception, and Self Absorption and is also entrance into the 8 Stages of Reversionism. It occurs where the believer covers up or alters the integration functions of self awareness, often pretending a memory lapse which adds additional strength to self justification with self deception using that magic phrase 'I don't remember that'.

#### **Repressions**

Occur in situations where the believer fails to take responsibility for his own decisions and actions related to sin, crime and dead human good efforts derived from Evil and by this adds a pseudo strength to self justification by forcing knowledge of these failings into his subconscious and out of focus for his memory thus causing him to be unaware of these failings.

#### **Pseudo Self Esteem**

Occurs when there is reversal of the cycle of the Arrogance skills and Self Justification arrives with the strong delusion that the believer is never wrong and never has to take responsibility for motivations, decisions or actions and is then able to assign all these to others.

### Autistic Fantasy

Is total Self Absorption or Arrogance 'frozen in place', where daydreaming fantasy is substituted for human relationships and normal functions and is total divorcement from reality.

Maladaptive Defense Mechanisms found as a part of the Motivational Arrogance of Mental Attitude Arrogance contain greater expansions and more elaborate explanations of these processes.

### Arrogance Skills & Activism

Without the proper motivation from consistent function under the 4 Spiritual Skills Christian service becomes a distraction related to the Arrogance Skills and the Interlocking System of Arrogance and blots out the true purpose of the spiritual life. Grace teaching and Grace Orientation always attack Self Justification therefore Self Justification always rejects Grace. This rejection of Grace results in Self Deception which functions under Denial and this denial results in Self Absorption. Self Absorption moves along and produces the Activism of Human Good Efforts, and other Bleeding Heart Do Good efforts on the part of the believer. It is therefore possible to see a close interaction and interlocking of Crusader Arrogance with Mental Attitude Arrogance where the Arrogance Skills motivate activism but where this entire process can be destroyed by Grace Orientation, Problem Solving Device #4. Christian Activism includes involvement and functioning under a cycling of all of the Arrogance Skills which inevitably result in or from the Maladaptive Defense Mechanisms and inevitably lead to saturation of the believer within the Interlocking System of Arrogance and Reversionism.

The Old Sin Nature has a trend toward Legalistic Self Righteousness which results in or from Activism and the Arrogance Skills functioning together. The Arrogance Skills then cycle repeatedly until the Believer is caught inescapably in the web of the Apostasy of Reversionism and ultimately entangled deeply in the Degeneracy of the Interlocking System of Arrogance with only one Solution, consistency in the use of the Rebound Procedure and daily Perception, Cognition, Incultation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine. Activists will always find a Crusade of one sort or another to follow and in so doing put forth the concept that all others who oppose their crusade are wrong and they are always totally right as per their Self Justification. These individuals believe they have a right to change the Status Quo in any given area of life related to their crusade as a result of Self Deception. They come to believe that their viewpoint is the only possible correct viewpoint and will go to any extent and use any means to promote it or force it on others as a result of Self Absorption.

The sins involving or resulting from legalism which include malice, which is the lust to hurt someone in order to get at and destroy them or another, also result in the myriad of emotional sins. This allows Arrogance and Emotion to take over the mentality of the soul destroying the individual as a result of Emotional Revolt of the Soul and is in fact far worse than the sometimes shocking sin of adultery. Arrogance skills prevent the legalist from understanding Grace as the policy of GOD and prevent legalists from being able to understand and causes them even to fear Grace passages and principles from the word of God. Grace and Evil cannot

coexist, therefore, in the Protocol Plan of God Divine Good production from Grace cannot coexist with Human Good production from Evil. THEREFORE, Human Good production in any form cannot exist in Pre-salvation Grace, Salvation Grace, nor Post Salvation Grace functions of the Protocol Plan of God. Therefore Grace and EVIL, the human good efforts of legalism and Divine Good production of Spiritual Maturity are antithetical and mutually exclusive concepts. THEREFORE, Grace excludes the Arrogance Skills and the Arrogance Skills exclude Grace. Where the Arrogance Skills, as a part of the principles of EVIL, prevail among believers the pivot shrinks and the client nation suffers and is even destroyed by the Supreme Court of Heaven under the [5 cycles of Divine Discipline](#). Where Grace prevails the pivot of mature believers is formed and continues its advance in the Spiritual Life and its unseen support of the nation and the client nation is thereby prospered and preserved. However, even the smallest amount of [Activism](#) by the believer cancels and destroys any production from Grace. ([Gal 5:9](#))

Therefore, christian activism is a system of human solutions to the suffering and problems of mankind and results from the recycling of the Arrogance Skills. The ‘Elative’ use in the original languages of scripture emphasize the fact that the Divine Solutions are true Grace solutions and exclude all human solutions including the MISUSE of prayer. Grace solutions exclude the human solutions of activism which include legalism, psychological rationalizations, defense mechanisms, Arrogance Skills, the Interlocking System of Arrogance, leverage, manipulation, etc.

### **Arrogance Skills & National Destruction**

In any national entity the widespread function under the 3 Arrogance Skills results in the people of that nation being totally divorced from reality. OMG, this is the Unites States of America today! Therefore it becomes obvious that NO client nation to God is ever initially destroyed by an outside enemy but is destroyed from within by the Arrogance of the people first before being conquered. Believers involved in boasting focus on human achievements instead of the Spiritual Life and become totally divorced from the reality of the Protocol Plan of God because they use the Arrogance Skills in substitution for the [Spiritual Skills](#). Therefore, there is an obvious conflict between these 2 concepts in the Spiritual Life. The Spiritual Skills are designed to help the believer execute the Protocol Plan of God and complete the Spiritual Life while the Arrogance Skills are distortions of the functions of Mankind and result in divorcement from reality and destruction of the Spiritual Life. Widespread destruction of the spiritual life of the people in a client nation as a result of function within the Interlocking System of Arrogance, Interlocking System of Antagonistic Emotional Hatred, and under the Arrogance Skills results in THE REQUIREMENT of God to administer WAKE UP Divine Discipline in the form of the 4 cycles of Divine Discipline for the nation. When the people do not respond to the Wake Up Call, the inevitable result is total elimination of that nation under the 5<sup>th</sup> cycle of Divine Discipline. This is an essential function of GOD in the Protocol Plan of God to prevent the universal contamination of the Human Race with the Self Destructive Diseases of Arrogance or Antagonism toward God. Observe the status of life in the Unites States of America in the 1<sup>st</sup> Quarter of the 21<sup>st</sup> century. Where is she headed?

### **Arrogance Skills & Christian Suffering**

For the believer involved in the Interlocking System of Arrogance, suffering is very often designed for blessing to motivate him to eliminate the occupational hazard of involvement in Arrogance and relate him to the sufficiency of Grace. ([2Cor 11:24-33](#), [2Cor 12:1-10](#)) Arrogance is an occupational hazard for the Human Race and all situations in life must be related to the sufficiency of Grace in order to overcome it. Suffering and pressure is inevitable in life and it is also the means by which faith is strengthened and by which the [Faith Rest Drill \(5 stages\)](#) can operate. The trigger mechanism for the believer, to potentially cause him to apply Bible Doctrine to life experience, is found in the outside pressures of life. From the soul of the believer under Positive Volition the function of FAITH REST is then activated and it must be systematically developed and strengthened and this strength comes from using Faith under varying pressure from both prosperity and adversity in life. The Thorn in the Flesh type of suffering, such as that which Paul had to endure, has 2 purposes for the believer, a [Providential Preventative Momentum Testing Suffering](#) to offset Arrogance and the blessing of enhanced momentum for the Acceleration of Spiritual Growth. ([2Cor 12:7](#)) While nothing is known about the problem which Paul endured, it was so very painful that HE prayed 3 times for God to take it away. This prayer was not answered because the purpose of this suffering was to assist Paul in overcoming any residual Arrogance and to enter the highest area of the Spiritual Life available the [Adult Sophisticated Spiritual Life](#). This thorn hubris for the believer could be people testing, thought or pressure testing, injustice or persecution, or the troubles found in anguish. Whatever the mechanics of the suffering, the function of the thorn demon brought Paul to the point of preventative awareness of Arrogance, consequently the thorn demon suffering was for his benefit and blessing. In this situation prayer was the wrong solution and thus was not answered and Paul engaged in 3 useless prayers. The believer cannot ever become Arrogant without suffering horribly because usually this suffering is a “blind” suffering of Self Induced Misery from [Blind Arrogance](#) since most people won’t face up to the fact that they are Arrogant. The purpose of this level of Providential Preventative Momentum Testing Suffering for the believer is to eliminate, as much as possible, Arrogance and it therefore IS suffering for blessing.

There is far greater power in the [10 Problem Solving Devices](#) deployed for action against suffering than there is in the power of suffering to destroy the Spiritual Skills with the Arrogance Skills. There is greater power in the 10 Problem Solving Devices than even in the intensity of certain categories of prayer. Intense emotional prayer is very often an irrational prayer. Always consider, with regard to outside pressures in life of any kind, what God does not remove he intends for the believer to bear, through the use of the Problem Solving Devices especially [Grace Orientation](#). The Problem Solving Devices on the [Forward Line of Troops](#) of the soul are designed to handle every category of outside pressure in life and, for the advancing believer, every category of suffering in life is designed through the use of the Problem Solving Devices to increase spiritual momentum and blessing. Consider also when under pressure of some sort of adversity or suffering that removal of the suffering removes the intended blessing. If suffering is taken out of life then the blessings, based on using the provisions of God to deal with the suffering, are also removed. Suffering is a friend not an enemy. In addition, suffering is often a Field Training Exercise (FTX) in preparation for the

major crises which inevitably will come in life. Under the perfect Grace system of God, the believer gets to practice before he is really tested. It is crucially important to realize that in the function of that practice and under the actual testing HE DOES NOT PRAY TO GOD, he uses the Problem Solving Devices God has provided for him. Wanting the miracle solution for a problem is preoccupation with self under the Arrogance skills. Therefore, the removal of suffering from the life is not a solution in the Spiritual Life. ([Review the Reluctant Sparrow](#)) It is the mechanics of using the spiritual battalions which have been deployed on the Forward Line of Troops of one's Soul in the form of the 10 Problem Solving Devices which are the true solutions to all problems. If the believer has been consistent in listening to and learning the principles of the Word of God taught from his right Pastor Teacher and he has made Bible Doctrine the first priority in his life, then it is simply a matter of finding what God has ALREADY given him; THEREFORE, ONE DOES NOT PRAY FOR IT TO MIRACULOUSLY APPEAR AND TAKE AWAY THE PROBLEMS OF LIFE. In this way he avoids the Interlocking System of Arrogance and function under the recycling of the Arrogance Skills.

Prayer used as leverage toward individuals is [Legalism](#) while Prayer used as leverage toward God is blasphemy. As a result of spiritual growth, the believer must come to the end of self and stop taking good things and making them function in a wrong way. Believers must separate self from the Interlocking System of Arrogance complex and learn to rely on the Grace of God and the Judgment of God for ALL solutions to ALL PROBLEMS in life. This will allow all suffering to be transformed into Blessings. For the believer the concept of strength in weakness must be in his use of the [Divine Power System](#) for the Christian Way of Life. The [Filling of God the Holy Spirit](#) is Problem Solving Device #2 and is Power Option #1 and the entry and power gate of the Divine Dynasphere. [Operation Z](#) is the Grace mechanism for placing Metabolized Bible Doctrine into the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul and this results in [Bible Doctrine Orientation](#) which is Problem Solving Device #5 and Power Option #2.

True weakness in the believer is his always searching for a mechanism to use for solutions to the ever present problems of life. This search will always come up with human solutions which range anywhere from misuse of prayer, christian activism even the use of [Maladaptive Defense Mechanisms](#) or the Arrogance Skills. Divine solutions come from the Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul which results in the deployment of [Grace Orientation](#) on to the [Forward Line of Troops of the soul](#). When Grace Orientation is on the Forward Line of Troops of the soul and the believer encounters his weaknesses, Grace Orientation automatically searches out the Divine solutions. Grace Orientation motivates Weakness to search for Absolute Divine Strength. Therefore, the ONLY true strength for the Believer to rely on is the Divine Power of Power Option #1 the Filling of God the Holy Spirit and functioning consistently in the [Divine Dynasphere](#).

Therefore, this 'thorn in the flesh suffering' can be being the victim of someone else in one's periphery who functions under the Arrogance Skills and is using the Interlocking System of Arrogance to try to destroy him. This REQUIRES the use of the [10 Problem Solving Devices](#) which are developed as a result of consistent Post Salvation Epistemological Rehabilitation and



then deployed on the Forward Line of Troops of one's Soul. There are in fact many categories and ways of being victimized by the Arrogance Skills and the Interlocking System of Arrogance Sins in others. The Arrogance Skills inevitably are engaged by the believer who never humanly matures and in addition is one who rejects Bible Doctrine and lives under the Maladaptive Defense Mechanisms never taking responsibility for his own decisions. This results in his building up the Arrogance skills and cycling within them to his own self destruction.

### **Arrogance Skills & the Immaturity Hangover**

There are two stages in the "Immaturity Hangover" metaphor.

- ✧ INEBRIATION – the infant believer begins to use the Maladaptive Defense Mechanisms.
- ✧ HANGOVER – the defense mechanisms are retained resulting in the believer NOT being able to reach Spiritual Adulthood and forming into 3 categories of dysfunction:
  - The Maladaptive Defense Mechanisms link with the Arrogance Skills on a one to one basis.
  - The Arrogance Skills then lead into the consistent regular and often unconscious involvement of functions within the Interlocking System of Arrogance.
  - These perpetually immature believers make wrong decisions which result in wrong priorities which result in [Rejection of Authority](#) and Rejection of Responsibility.

As a result of rejection of responsibility for one's actions and decisions, good or bad, under the Laws of Divine Establishment, this believer will never mature as a person nor as a believer. Upon receipt of Bible Doctrine teaching he cannot accept the authority of Bible Doctrine and as a result he stays in 'Lag Time' as a believer and continually recycles the Arrogance Skills deeply interlocking in the Arrogance System creating his own horrific Self Induced Misery for life.

Rejection of authority under the laws of Divine establishment causes the believer to have extreme difficulty in learning and applying Bible Doctrine. This occurs because at some time in his youth or childhood he moved into one or more of the Maladaptive Defense Mechanisms to preserve himself from some abuse (peer pressure, abuse by a parent, rejected by the 'in' crowd, etc.) and in adulthood these defense mechanisms have been retained. Inevitably these combine with the Arrogance skills and divorce this believer completely from reality which results in his cycling through the Arrogance skills repeatedly. The constant recycling of the Arrogance Skills produces a resentment of contact with those in authority. This resentment then feeds into the Arrogance Skills which makes it very difficult, when this person makes Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God through faith alone in The Lord Jesus, The Christ alone, to accept the truth of Bible Doctrine and the authority of the Pastor Teacher who properly teaches Bible Doctrine. The Bible Doctrine accurately presented from the pulpit of the local church is the source of the authority of the Pastor Teacher and if one rejects the Truth of the Bible Doctrine then he will reject the authority of the Pastor Teacher. This results in:

- ✧ Perpetuated Old Sin Nature control of the soul
- ✧ Arrogance skills driving the believer deep into the Interlocking System of Arrogance
- ✧ Degradation of the believer and his Spiritual Life because of moving through the 8 stages of the apostasy of [Reversionism](#)
- ✧ Decline under the Arrogance system into moral or immoral degeneracy

- Degrading into Antagonistic Emotional Hatred of God, Bible Doctrine, The Lord Jesus, The Christ and anything related to GRACE.
- Development of neurosis or **Psychosis**.

If these defense mechanisms are to be shed the authority of Bible Doctrine must be accepted and **Metabolized Bible Doctrine** must be converted into the **10 Problem Solving Devices** and deployed on to the **Forward Line of Troops of the Soul**, the **Edification Complex of the Soul** must be completed and residence must be consistently maintained within the **Divine Dynasphere**.

### **Arrogance Skills and Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God**

It is possible to go from spiritual infancy almost to spiritual maturity and yet never become spiritually mature because of the inability to shed one's Arrogance. If a believer approaches maturity moving into the testings to show oneself true and helpless and he has not shed his Arrogance he will never pass the testing and never make it to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God. No Arrogant believer ever reaches Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God. A person in Arrogance always overestimates their importance and does not realize nor appreciate the source of their blessing, everything meaningful in his life. This results in loss with regard to his relationship with The Lord Jesus, The Christ and also with people. No one can have capacity for life, love and blessing and maintain Arrogance. There is no way that any human capacity or ability can ever handle true disaster and it takes the Grace provisions of God from Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul and the capacity from this doctrine to enable the believer to handle real disaster. It is the reverse concentration on the Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul that allows mature believers to handle adversity in the form of great historical or national disaster. Arrogance divorces the person enmeshed in it from reality and they always misinterpret history and underestimate others and overestimate themselves. Arrogance is an acquired weakness not inherent in the human being but it is the worst weakness in life and permeates every aspect of life because it is the basis for EVIL, the plan and policy of Satan for ruling this world and enslaving mankind.

In advancing in the Spiritual Life, the consistent believer eventually reaches the door of the **Personal Sense of Destiny**, **Spiritual Self Esteem**, the **Hope or Confidence** in the Sophisticated Spiritual Life. This can be a door which the believer passes through if he is on 'God's Agenda' or if his is not on 'God's Agenda' it can be an unknown invisible door which slams in his face. A Personal Sense of Destiny depends on and lives under or by the Grace provision of God and his divine power rather than the foibles and failures of the cultivation of human dynamics motivated by **Lust**. These success standards derived from the Old Sin Nature operating in controlling the soul from the influence of EVIL are created by **Unrealistic Expectations** are the inevitable result of and fortified by the 3 Arrogance Skills. This results in Unrealistic Expectations and **Negative Volition** toward Bible Doctrine. The Arrogance Skills in the life of the believer results in the miserable circumstances of unrealistic expectations which causes the reaping of the whirlwind of Divine Discipline. Unrealistic Expectations are the futile function of the Arrogance Skills, and a great distraction in the Spiritual Life of the advancing believer. The believer cannot ever glorify God by the use of Human Power but only through the use of

God's Power and the [4 Spiritual Skills](#). ([Eph 3:19](#)) Therefore, the move from [Spiritual Youth to Spiritual Adulthood](#) is a major vulnerability point in the Spiritual Life, even greater than that which occurs at the initial point of Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God.

[Phil 3:16](#), explains that the high risk area of the Spiritual Life is reaching the stage of developing a [Personal Sense of Destiny](#) which brings the believer to the point of the NECESSITY for the massive application of Bible Doctrine to Life. Very often the adult believer distorts Truth and Bible Doctrine into a system of error and emotion from which even the strongest believers cannot extract themselves. This point of the distortion of Doctrine is the entrance into function under the Arrogance Skills. The point of the believer reaching Spiritual Self Esteem in Spiritual Adulthood is the point of the Spiritual Life where the [Rebound Procedure](#) most likely begins to be ignored, the point of attainment of a Personal Sense of Destiny. In **2<sup>nd</sup> Peter Chapter 1**, Peter explains that if there is a contradiction between what the bible says and one's empirical experience then experience is WRONG, therefore, there can be NO excuse for distorting doctrine to fit one's desires. When the believer tries to apply experience to Bible Doctrine he destroys the Doctrine and enters directly and immediately into the system of [Reversionism](#).

[Phil 3:15](#), entreats the believer to keep thinking according to the [Divine Viewpoint](#) derived from the Spiritual Skills and the [Problem Solving Devices](#) and thus continue the execution of the [Stages of the Sophisticated Spiritual Life](#). This passage is addressed to Adult Believers who are in danger of falling into Arrogance. Entanglement in Arrogance at any stage of the Spiritual Life will make the believer susceptible to losing all functions in his Spiritual Life. ([James 4:4](#)) The Adult Believer becomes a loser believer through the function of Arrogance when he neglects the regular use of the Rebound Procedure. Being in the status of minus rebound may mean that one has never been taught the rebound procedure, or he rejects the concept behind (gr) homologeo as the divine solution even though he understands it, or he distorts rebound from Emotion, Remorse, or Arrogance. He may also add a problem to the solution for another problem, thereby canceling Rebound by adding to the true Grace function of it.

(Illustration) [Jealousy](#) minus rebound results in [Bitterness](#). This intensifies the jealousy problem by adding Implacability, the 2<sup>nd</sup> Arrogance Skill of [Self Deception](#), and Anger which when minus rebound results in hatred and vindictiveness. Anger as a result of Bitterness engages the 3<sup>rd</sup> Arrogance Skill of [Self Absorption](#). Hatred and Vindictiveness when minus rebound result in function under the 1<sup>st</sup> Arrogance Skill, [Self Justification](#) and also the 3<sup>rd</sup> Arrogance Skill of Self Absorption when added to Jealousy. Vindictiveness results in all the Arrogance Skills being cycled over and over so that this believer becomes locked in where Self justification minus rebound results in [Denial](#) and moves the believer into Self Deception. Self Deception minus rebound then results in Self Absorption which returns to Bitterness and starts the cycle all over again. Vindictiveness also results Functional Arrogance as [Revenge Modus Operandi](#), first in the form of Vilification or Vituperation but eventually and inevitably leading to Violence and eventually Murder all which results in Loser believer status.

The Spiritual Life is therefore a system of THINKING to provide proper Motivation and Function

under the GRACE Plan of God and the rejection of the Spiritual Life, or any aspect of it, is also a system of thinking but this provides Motivation and Function which is FALSE and derived directly from EVIL. The Interlocking System of Arrogance, the Interlocking System of Antagonistic Emotional Hatred, the Arrogance Skills and the Stages of Reversionism all include both systems of thinking and function which result in overt actions. If the believer neglects using the Rebound Procedure, he then sinks into consistent function under the Arrogance Skills starting with Self Justification going to Self Deception, and ending with Self Absorption but being able to recycle and reverse cycle these functions. This is a believer, who will upon his death be in heaven face to face with the Lord despite his reversion to the status of LOSER believer and being indistinguishable from the unbeliever.

### **Arrogance Skills, Spiritual Maturity & Solving Problems**

The single greatest distraction the believer will ever have based on Emotion and Arrogance is trying to solve a problem with another problem. It is Arrogance to assume that man by his schemes, plans, abilities, policies and legislations can solve man's problems in history and this is a basic blasphemy against God. The reality of Human History is that only God can solve man's problems. Reaching Spiritual Self Esteem, the point of entrance into the **Adult Sophisticated Spiritual Life**, is the most high risk area of the Spiritual Life for the Advancing Believer since this is the point where he has solved or removed as many problems of life as possible and as a result is very susceptible to Arrogance, thinking he knows all there is to know concerning the Plan of God. When the Arrogance Complex combines with the 3 Arrogance Skills these form a pseudo system of Problem Solving. In this case the Adult Believer makes emotion a part of his Spiritual Life and part of the Rebound Procedure. Rebound has, in this way, distorted the Christian Way of Life into **Legalism** through Arrogance + Emotion so that this believer, is the one who falls out of ranks, is a casualty, and becomes the INEPTAZOID believer (the loser). Then this adult believer begins to solve the problems of outside pressures in life with other problems as a result of 'thinking differently'. This is building a system of Doctrine based on Experience, and Emotion which results in becoming a casualty to perpetual carnality. After having developed and deployed the **10 Problem Solving Devices**, when the believer reverses them to apply **Metabolized Bible Doctrine** from his Stream of Consciousness of the Soul to the experiences and circumstances of his life, then and only then is he functioning correctly. On the other hand, when he takes experience and applies it to doctrine he comes up with False Doctrine and False Experience and the Adult believer then becomes a Loser Believer. There are 3 systems resulting in producing disaster in the process of 'Thinking Differently':

- ✧ Interlocking System of Arrogance and Arrogance Skills + Arrogance and Emotional Sin
- ✧ Interlocking System of Antagonistic Emotional Hatred + Arrogance and Emotional Sin
- ✧ Incompetent Problem Solving using a problem to try to solve a problem.

To be uninformed is to be distracted from the **4 Spiritual Mechanics** of the Protocol Plan of God which include:

- ✧ The Filling of God the Holy Spirit
- ✧ Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the soul
- ✧ 10 Problem Solving Devices developed and deployed onto the **Forward Line of Troops** of

the soul

- Achieving or reaching the [Adult Sophisticated Spiritual Life](#) with development of Spiritual Self Esteem, Spiritual Autonomy, and Spiritual Maturity.

Being uninformed with regard to Bible Doctrine is the mechanism whereby the Arrogance Skills replace the [Spiritual Skills](#). Furthermore, to be distracted as a result of functioning under the Arrogance Skills causes one to be sucked into, completely entangled in and totally distracted by the Interlocking System of Arrogance. To be distracted by Arrogance then eventually and inevitably involves one in the Interlocking System of Antagonistic Emotional Hatred which results in Problem Solving Incompetence. Therefore, to be distracted results in being uninformed or misinformed about Bible Doctrine which results in making distortions concerning what little Bible Doctrine one is informed about. In this distracted and misinformed state Bible Doctrine is the first thing to be rejected. In addition, believers involved at any level in the Interlocking System of Arrogance, if this persists, will eventually become involved in the Arrogance Skills and totally self absorbed which completely destroys the spiritual life entering them into and progressing them through the [8 stages of Reversionism](#). Rejection of Bible Doctrine at any level begins this slide into the 8 stages of reversionism, into the Interlocking System of Arrogance and into the Interlocking System of Antagonistic Emotional Hatred, which eventually leads to the slide OUT OF THIS LIFE in a miserable way under final Divine Discipline from God, the [Sin Unto Death](#).

An example of the transition of a believer from the adult status at the point of reaching a [Personal Sense of Destiny](#) (Problem Solving Device #6), Spiritual Self Esteem (Entrance into the Adult Sophisticated Spiritual Life) due to tremendous vulnerability to Arrogance includes the sins listed below. This is mechanic of the failure of the Adult Believer:

- Jealousy & Bitterness – Rebound == Implacability & Anger
- Implacability & Anger – Rebound == Hatred & Vindictiveness
- Hatred & Vindictiveness – Rebound == 3 Arrogance Skills Cycled many times which support and sustain spiritual degeneracy in the Interlocking System of Arrogance
- 3 Arrogance Skills – Rebound == Malice, Revenge, Vituperation, Vilification, Violence, Abuse even Murder
- All of These – Rebound == loser Believer Status in the Apostasy of Reversionism and the Degeneracy of the Interlocking System of Arrogance

These represent involvement in the Interlocking System of Arrogance which then extends the believer into the realm of the Interlocking System of Antagonistic Emotional Hatred and are in fact a combination of Both.

For believers problems cannot be solved with other problems but only with the Divine Solutions. When any attempt is made to solve problems with other problems, the original problem is intensified to the point of irrationality and confusion as a result of involvement with emotion and results in emotional frustration and entrance into Reversionism. Very often Problem Solving Incompetence denies the reality of the problem and develops the concept or outlook that there is no real problem and the 3 Arrogance Skills become operational in the life through entrance into [Self Deception](#). Personal Self Esteem without the Spiritual function of



Bible Doctrine is true Arrogance. Self Esteem without spiritual support recognizes no limitations in one area of life or another and is the basis for Arrogance and lack of [Virtue](#). Whatever one may have in life which is attached to honor is worth having but without virtue and honor one inevitably tries to solve a problem with a problem or a sin with another which intensifies the situation to the point of becoming intolerable.

The Divine Solutions for problems in life enable the application of Metabolized Bible Doctrine from the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul to the circumstances and experiences of Life. False conclusions always provide the danger of using human solutions for problem solving. This occurs when the believer, in the Interlocking System of Antagonistic Emotional Hatred or in the Interlocking System of Arrogance, thinks he can help God solve the problems of life through the function of Human Ability or Human Power. This results from a lust for power provided by the Old Sin Nature when it is in control of the soul. This is one of the strongest motivations for those who are Adult believers as they decline in their Spiritual Life. The basic solution to this decline by the adult believer is the consistent use of the [4 Spiritual Skills](#) to advance to and function in the 3 stages of the Sophisticated Spiritual Life. These require the consistent and proper use of the rebound procedure to enable the believer to maintain the [Filling of God the Holy Spirit](#) and his function under the [Grace Apparatus for Perception](#), Operation Z, for consistent intake and metabolism of Bible Doctrine.

[2Cor 2:12-13](#), [2Cor 7:5-10](#), compared to [2Cor 12:7-10](#), compared to [Phil 3:15-16](#) clearly explains that failed Emotional Testing will take us to Arrogance Testing which when failed result in Incompetent Problem Solving Testing which when failed result in the rapid decline of the Adult believer. Emotional Testing results when the Old Sin Nature is in control of the soul and this Old Sin Nature testing is continuous through the entire Spiritual Life. In addition Arrogance Testing begins in the early Spiritual Life of Spiritual Infancy and persists through the entire Spiritual Life as well. (See [Progressions in the Spiritual Life](#)) The Winner believer sees the Solutions to all testing in the form of the Metabolized Bible Doctrine in his Stream of Consciousness of the Soul while the The Loser Believer sees only the Problems. The believer must be able to recognize the problems of the Spiritual Life as a result of using Metabolized Bible Doctrine for deploying the 10 Problem Solving Devices on to the Forward Line of Troops of the soul so that he WILL SEE the solutions. God gave each believer an individual portfolio of [40 Assets](#) and many other provisions to solve all the problems of life but they require Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul to become usable. For the loser believer wrong solutions involve 3 Interacting systems of thinking, the Influence from all aspects of the principles and policy of Evil motivating Arrogance and Antagonistic Emotion. Prayer is not a solution for problems in life, only the application of the resident Metabolized Bible Doctrine from one's own Stream of Consciousness of the Soul is where all solutions are found. If the believer comes to a problem but does not find a solution, it demonstrates that he has not used the time given him to inculcate the solution through consistent Perception, Cognition, Inculcation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine. Therefore he has been ineffective in deploying the Problem Solving Devices and thus cannot apply them through the [Faith Rest Drill \(5 stages\)](#) to the Problem Experience.

## **Arrogance & The Sophisticated Spiritual Life**

When in the status of Historical or National adversity, catastrophe or disaster, believers must maintain residence solidly in and be functioning consistently in the [Sophisticated Spiritual Life](#) in order to weather the storm. God does not ever adjust to human failure but He has designed a perfect spiritual life for both maximum adversity and maximum prosperity. This Sophisticated Spiritual Life keeps the believer from engaging in Arrogance in prosperity and Emotional despair in adversity. When pressure is applied in life, from unjust treatment or other adversity the worst thing one can do is Justify one's own position. Under [Self Justification](#), which is involvement in the Arrogance Skills, even if that believer is in the right, he then becomes Arrogant, self indulgent, under [Delusion](#) and preoccupied with self. When under pressure in life if the believer is in the wrong he must simply use the [Rebound Procedure](#), change his direction and move on in life but NEVER take the time or effort to Justify Himself. Arrogance causes an individual to be completely and exclusively occupied with their own BORING Self. In this Country today the self indulgent, preoccupied with self, boring persons of our population have NO Capacity for prosperity nor for adversity which is clearly demonstrated by the overwhelming PANIC resulting from the spread of the "Chinese Wuhan CCP virus" in 2020. Obviously functioning under the Arrogance Skills means automatic involvement in the Interlocking System of Arrogance and the [Motivational Arrogance](#) of [Mental Attitude Arrogance](#) of being bitter, vindictive, implacable, etc., resulting in the [Functional Arrogance](#) of Verbal Sins of vilification, vituperation, slander, maligning, etc., even Overt sins to the point of Murder. This is a very serious problem in the United States today and the only solution is Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God for the unbeliever and for the believer to Grow in Grace and in Doctrine by engaging in consistent Perception, Cognition, Inculcation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine. Unfortunately for our nation the general population has rejected this solution out of hand. The Function of the Sophisticated Spiritual Life is countered by involvement in the Interlocking System of Arrogance, the Arrogance Skills and the Interlocking System of Antagonistic Emotional Hatred in the Plan of Satan, EVIL. This is the Disease of the Christian Way of Life caused by the infection of the Interlocking System of Arrogance and Arrogance Skills into the SOUL of the believer. When the believer functions under the Arrogance Skills in the Christian Way of Life he is "Off the Map" and not oriented at all to the Protocol Plan of God.

## **Stages of the Spiritual Life**

This is a comprehensive detailed discussion of the Spiritual Life of the Christian in the Church Age and a relatively complete and expanded discussion of the "[Progressions in the Spiritual Life](#)" can be found in this separate document which can be obtained at the link above and is far too long to include here.

## **Arrogance Skills vs Virtue Love**

In order to deal properly with the Arrogance skills and entanglement in the Interlocking System of Arrogance, the believer must have deployed on the [Forward Line of Troops](#) of the soul the Motivational Virtue of [Personal Love for God](#), Problem Solving Device #6 and Functional Virtue of [Impersonal Unconditional Love for Mankind](#), Problem Solving Device #7. Legitimate Personal Love for mankind is virtue dependent in the form of both Romantic love and

friendship, however, in the form of pseudo love it gains capacity from the Arrogance skills and this love is used for manipulation of the one being loved and is a major distraction to the Spiritual Life for the advancing believer.

In the Adult phase of the Sophisticated Spiritual Life Personal Love for God the Father is a [Motivational Virtue](#) and the basis for being able to maintain relationship with God and provides motivation for proper function in the Christian Way of Life and maintains the development and deployment of the advanced Problem Solving Devices. Impersonal – Unconditional Love for Mankind is the foundational [Functional Virtue](#) of the Spiritual Life where one can tolerate the obnoxious person and his personality and still allow all those in his periphery the freedom to do what they want when they want, with this love being based on HIS virtue not theirs. [John 3:16](#) is a prime example of impersonal love, “For God the Father loved the world So Much” is impersonal love for all mankind AS ENEMIES, AS SINNERS. Personal Love for man which is very selective and based on personal rapport or attraction derives its capacity from Impersonal – Unconditional Love for Mankind and depends on the virtue therein to sustain it. If one cannot think beyond life, love, and the accouterments of happiness he will never be able to get out of a shallowness in relationships with others in friendship, romance and worst of all marriage. Marriage is designed to be forever, for BETTER or for WORSE, but FOREVER. Thus all legitimate personal love relationships must be sustained by the virtue of the LOVER not the attractiveness of the LOVED one. Impersonal – Unconditional Love for Mankind also prevents others from gaining control of one’s life by preventing him from reacting to them because this love as a form of toleration is based only on HIS virtue.

Each stage of the Adult Sophisticated Spiritual Life has certain essential Problem Solving Devices which enable the believer to pass the Providential Preventative Momentum Testing Suffering for that stage. As an example, deployment of Personal Love for God the Father and Impersonal – Unconditional Love for Mankind provide a strongly organized system of [Humility](#), which includes respect for the authority and the infallibility of the Word of God along with the privacy of the individual. Any failure or vulnerability results from the residual Arrogance maintained after the promotion of the believer from spiritual youth to Spiritual Self Esteem. In Spiritual Self Esteem the believer has enough doctrine to understand principles but not enough to protect him from moving into a dependency on the factors involved in the Interlocking System of Arrogance and Arrogance Skills. At this stage of the Spiritual Life of the ADVANCING believer, Personal Love for God the Father deployed on the [Forward Line of Troops of the Soul](#) begins to dispel the first Arrogance skill of getting eyes on self in Self Justification. Therefore it becomes obvious that failure to systematically develop and deploy the Problem Solving Devices from total consistency in Perception, Cognition, Inculcation and Metabolization leads to vulnerability in the area of the Arrogance Skills. Spiritual Self Esteem is not discouraged by setbacks in life and therefore is free from [Self Pity](#) which is the ‘thumb sucking’ function of the 3rd Arrogance Skill of Self Absorption. The momentum derived from the development of Personal Love for God in Spiritual Self Esteem eliminates the 3 High Risk factors of the Sophisticated Spiritual Life:

- ✧ Interlocking System of Arrogance
- ✧ Interlocking System of Antagonistic Emotional Hatred

## ✧ Incompetent Problem Solving

Satan devours unsuspecting believers by working through the Arrogance Skills and Interlocking System of Arrogance mixed with the Interlocking System of Antagonistic Emotional Hatred resulting in problem solving incompetence. The mandate for the believer, to “advance in ranks” means for him to subordinate himself to [Authority and gain Humility](#). All spiritual advance must be accompanied by humility which forms the antithesis of Arrogance.

[Humility](#) begins with Volition and Values which give Priority #1 to consistent use of the [Spiritual Mechanics](#). Humility includes respect for authority and the Word of God and therefore teachability along with freedom from both Subjective or Motivational Arrogance and Objective or Functional Arrogance. All believers, before reaching Spiritual Self Esteem have some level of Arrogance in some area of their life. No one is born with Humility and it is necessary to be born again into the Royal Family of God to gain true Humility. Humility orients all believers in the Protocol Plan of God and to His Grace while Arrogance always only orients one to [Self Absorption](#). In addition all promotion in the Spiritual Life of the Church age believer is accomplished in the sphere of Humility. For every believer who reaches the Adult Spiritual Life there are 2 great opposing options to be considered. Each believer must either Learn and USE the first 2 Adult Problem Solving Devices in the [Integrity Envelope](#) or in Arrogance go down the road to becoming a Loser believer.

### **Arrogance Skills and Hypersensitivity**

Hypersensitivity is disorientation to self and is Self Absorption resulting in vulnerability to:

- ✧ The Interlocking System of Arrogance
- ✧ The Interlocking System of Antagonistic Emotional Hatred
- ✧ Continued persistent function under the Arrogance Skills
- ✧ Negative Volition toward the principles of Rebound
- ✧ Rapid Reversionistic decline from Spiritual Self Esteem to Loser Status ERASING any doctrine previously learned
- ✧ Perpetual carnality resulting in [Reversionistic](#):
  - Emotional Revolt of the Soul
  - Black out of the Soul
  - Scar Tissue of the Soul

Hypersensitive believers are always unteachable because they constantly are:

- ✧ Making an issue of Self
- ✧ Making issue of the Pastor Teacher's personality
- ✧ Involved in ‘operation overthink’ where they are in Subjective Arrogance
- ✧ Accumulating frustration because Bible Class does not deal with their personal problems
- ✧ Inevitably totally involved in all aspects of [Emotional Revolt of the Soul](#)
  - **Hysterical emotion** of fear, worry, anxiety, etc
  - **Antagonistic emotion** of hatred, vindictiveness, revenge up to and including murder
  - **Reaction emotion** the combining of Arrogance sins such as jealousy bitterness etc., with emotional sins such as hatred, malice, vindictiveness, etc.

- **Self Absorbed emotion** which draws strength from another's emotion directed toward oneself by causing other people to get into pseudo compassion from one's manipulation using unreasonable attitudes, hypersensitive annoyance, etc.
- **Guilt emotion** where it is assumed that guilt is necessary for rebound and must be accompanied with emotional feelings of culpability starting with self manipulation where vulnerability to guilt begins and leads to vulnerability to restitutionalism.

Having come so far in the Spiritual Life in reaching Spiritual Adulthood then getting into this state, the confusion can result from an improper mixture of bits and pieces of Bible Doctrine which the believer focuses on that are compatible with his own subjectivity. In the degrading of the Spiritual Life in [Reversionism](#), Black out of the Soul preventing further perception of Bible Doctrine is bad enough but when Scar Tissue of the Soul develops all intake of Bible Doctrine is stopped and the Metabolized Bible Doctrine resident in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul is systematically erased. The result is status quo LOSER believer, divorced from reality and engaged in [Maladaptive Defense Mechanisms](#) of Denial and Projection and the Arrogance Skills of Self Deception. This causes blaming others for every failure in his life as a result of Self Absorption, therefore cycling over and over through the Arrogance Skills. This is the believer who falls so far into Reversionistic apostasy and Arrogant degeneracy that he is subject to the [Sin Unto Death](#) Divine Discipline. This is now a loser believer who was already in Spiritual Adulthood, possibly Spiritual Maturity but who is now totally divorced from reality.

### **Testing for Blessing in the Sophisticated Spiritual Life**

While prosperity is not an accurate barometer for self evaluation, Suffering for Blessing carries a far greater precision as a means of self evaluation. The principle and reality is that God never allows us to be tested beyond our capabilities and the clear difference between testing of the believer and Divine Discipline is TOLERABILITY. Attainment of a Personal Sense of Destiny and entrance into the adult phase of the Sophisticated Spiritual Life gives to the believer Capacity for Providential Preventative Momentum Testing Suffering. This system of testing is the mechanism for eliminating the Arrogance Skills and a maximum level of Arrogance involvement in the Spiritual Life. Basic Providential Preventative Momentum Testing <sup>(5 Categories)</sup> occurs when the believer reaches the Adult Spiritual Life and gains capacity from Spiritual Self Esteem and Spiritual Autonomy. Advanced Momentum Testing <sup>(5 Categories)</sup> is designed to solidify the Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul of the believer who has reached Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and has had a period of enjoyment of his Super – Grace package of Escrow blessings and has moved under the pressures of the No Man's Land of Intermediate Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God. Evidence Testing is that which occurs after the believer has reached Advanced Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and has endured maximum pressure from Satan's systems of evil in No Man's Land and now has the capacity to have his Spiritual Life presented before the Supreme Court of Heaven as a primary witness for the prosecution to be cross examined by Satan or a special Defense Attorney Demon. The Status Quo of Spiritual Maturity has given the believer the capacity developed from Cognitive Invincibility along with his Logistical Grace and Bravo Grace support with which he can pass Evidence Testing <sup>(2 categories)</sup> using Sharing the Happiness of God and Occupation with the Person of The Lord Jesus, The Christ as key Problem Solving Devices.



*This Evidence Testing* (2 categories), toward God or toward life or mankind, is the maximum pressure a believer can have in life when he has reached Advanced Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God, the ultimate goal of the Spiritual Life, and only serves to enhance the happiness and blessing this believer receives from God.

Therefore, Testing is God's provision to assist in building up of spiritual strength in the soul of the believer by engaging the Bible Doctrine which has already been metabolized and exercising it on new experiences.

More details on the systems of Testing in the Spiritual Life can be found in:

[Progressions in the Spiritual Life](#)

[The Power System of God, the Divine Dynasphere](#)

### [Advanced Problem Solving Devices in the Sophisticated Spiritual Life](#)

All 5 Advanced Problem Solving Devices are necessary to pass the various categories of testing in the Sophisticated Spiritual Life. These are tests of one's Spiritual Life Advancement and the content of Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul and will require the use of the advanced [Problem Solving Devices](#):

- ✧ Personal Sense of Destiny
- ✧ Personal Love for God
- ✧ Impersonal – Unconditional Love for Mankind
- ✧ Sharing the Happiness of God
- ✧ Advanced Personal Love for God – Occupation with the Person of The Lord Jesus, The Christ

In passing the testings of the Sophisticated Spiritual Life the believer will have the most fantastic life which will not be dependent on stimulation from lust fulfillment but from the ability to engage his thinking in Divine Viewpoint thought. Thought is the basis for all valuable things in life and the BIBLE is the Word of God, the Thinking or THOUGHTS of Christ (1Cor 2:16) which must be assimilated into one's own system of thinking. For the believer to be transformed by the renovation of his thinking he first must stop thinking in terms of Arrogance.

### [Blessing and Testing](#)

You cannot have blessing from God apart from Divine Solutions to problems and pressures in life and as one advances in the Spiritual Life he will have Suffering without which suffering there is NO blessing and NO advance. The '(gr) Elative Conclusion' says that the Divine Solutions are the only solutions and the Human Solutions are NO SOLUTION AT ALL. Problem Solving Incompetence inserts Arrogance and Emotion into Problem solving and halts the believer's advance to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God. From the insertion of Arrogance and Emotion into his problem solving mechanism the Believer retrogresses in his Spiritual Life even to the point of loser status. Arrogant believers never know their limitations and as a result adult believers who fail to recognize vulnerability to failure enter into emotional privation. Therefore, advancing believers are most vulnerable to Arrogance and Emotion in the salient of the Adult Crisis. Believers WILL be TESTED from spiritual infancy to Advanced

Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God by the 3 Arrogance Skills, the Interlocking System of Arrogance, the Interlocking System of Antagonistic Emotional Hatred and the resultant Incompetent Problem Solving of trying to solve problems with another problem. This is specifically designed to force the believer to address his arrogance and overcome it.

Passing these varying systems of testing always results in moving further into the Adult Spiritual Life under an accelerating factor and the testing helps eliminate any possibility of Arrogance hindering advance in the Spiritual Life. Passing Intermediate Momentum Testing allows moving into Basic Spiritual Maturity. If the believer's progress is continued moving into intermediate Spiritual Maturity here Maximum Pressure from all categories of Evil and those involved with it will ultimately be experienced as the believer continues advance through toward Advanced Spiritual Maturity. Reaching Advanced Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God allows the believer's life to be involved in the production of maximum glorification of God and also pleasing God as he completes the supreme execution of the Protocol Plan of God and becomes a primary witness for the prosecution in the Angelic Conflict Appeal Trial.

The Testing Status of the Sophisticated Spiritual Life is designed to provide varying degrees of Suffering for Blessing unless the believer fails which results in the testing becoming suffering related to failure. In addition the testing stages are designed specifically to accelerate spiritual advance from one stage to another in the Sophisticated Spiritual Life. Each Stage of Advance through the Sophisticated Spiritual Life enhances the Basic Problem Solving Devices already developed and deployed on the Forward Line of Troops of the Soul and results in the Development and Deploying of the Advanced Problem Solving Devices. Passing these categories of testing results in attaining the 1<sup>st</sup> Strategic Objective of the Spiritual Life as well as 3 Tactical Objectives.

- ✧ 1<sup>st</sup> Tactical Objective is reaching and holding a Personal Sense of Destiny which is Spiritual Self Esteem.
- ✧ 2<sup>nd</sup> Tactical Objective is reaching and holding Spiritual Autonomy
- ✧ 3<sup>rd</sup> tactical objective is reaching and maintaining Spiritual Maturity

The 1<sup>st</sup> Strategic Objective of the Spiritual Life is parlaying the status of Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God into Advanced Personal Love for God, Occupation with the Person of The Lord Jesus, The Christ through Cognitive Invincibility functioning consistently and thereby Glorifying God in time.

The reality of the Spiritual Life is that believers are either advancing or retrogressing in their Spiritual Life, therefore, it must be understood that the believer constantly develops and changes his values and since decisions in life are totally based on values IF his values are based on Bible Doctrine then he will make good decisions but IF they are based on involvement in the Interlocking System of Arrogance or Arrogance Skills his decisions are in fact self destructive. The 3<sup>rd</sup> Arrogance Skill Self Absorption can only be broken by the use in Spiritual Self Esteem and having a [Personal Sense of Destiny](#), Problem Solving Devices #6, deployed on the Forward Line of Troops of the SOUL. This recovery from Arrogance Skills function starts with Rebound and then Positive Volition must be constantly involved so that principles of Bible

Doctrine can be inculcated, metabolized and applied to the believer's life. Under these conditions the individual will change and begin his recovery. However, there is no way, by some other outside means, to rehabilitate and change either a loser believer or a criminal. Spiritual advance from infancy through adolescence occurs as momentum is gained in the Spiritual Life from consistent Perception, Cognition, Inculcation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine under the Filling of God the Holy Spirit and having developed and deployed the basic Problem Solving Devices:

- ↗ #1 Rebound
- ↗ #2 the Filling of God the Holy Spirit
- ↗ #3 the Faith Rest Drill (4 Categories)
- ↗ #4 Grace Orientation
- ↗ #5 Bible Doctrine Orientation

Spiritual Advance from adolescence through spiritual adulthood and into the phases of Spiritual Maturity occurs according to the development of the 5 stages of the Sophisticated Spiritual Life as per the Equations of Spiritual Advance. This is the PROCESS of advance where the believer is maturing in the Spiritual Life.

**(Bible Doctrine Orientation + Grace Orientation + Basic Spiritual Momentum + Initial Providential Preventative Momentum Testing Suffering) == Spiritual Self Esteem a Personal Sense of Destiny (Entrance into the Adult Sophisticated Spiritual Life)**

**(Spiritual Self Esteem or Cognitive Self Confidence + Personal Love for God the Father + Impersonal – Unconditional Love for Mankind + Basic Providential Preventative Momentum Testing Suffering,) = Spiritual Autonomy**

**(Spiritual Autonomy or Cognitive Independence + Sharing the Happiness of God + Intermediate Providential Preventative Momentum Testing Suffering) == Spiritual Maturity (Basic Execution of the Protocol Plan of God) and Glorification of God**

**(Spiritual Maturity or Cognitive Invincibility + Bravo Grace Support [Logistical Grace + Super Grace Escrow blessings] + Occupation with the Person of The Lord Jesus, The Christ + Maximum Pressure from Systems of Evil in No Man's Land as Advanced Providential Preventative Momentum Testing Suffering) == Advanced Spiritual Maturity**

**(Advanced Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God + Maximum Volitional Orientation to Bible Doctrine & Grace + Total Occupation with the Person of The Lord Jesus, The Christ + Evidence Testing) = Maximum Glorification of God, Pleasing God, becoming a PRIMARY Witness for the Prosecution in the Angelic Appeal Trial of Satan (Complete Execution of the Protocol Plan of God)**

This [Progression of Spiritual Advance](#) in the Protocol Plan of God is Parlaying the 6th Problem Solving Device of a Personal Sense of Destiny into the 10th Problem Solving Device of Advanced Personal Love for God, Occupation with the Person of The Lord Jesus, The Christ.

([2Tim 4:6-8](#), [Phil 1:21](#)) Being Subject to Evidence Testing results in becoming directly involved in the resolution of the Angelic Conflict personally in the form of having one's Spiritual Life being presented as a primary witness for the prosecution against the appeal of Satan. None of this is possible when the believer becomes involved in the Interlocking System of Arrogance, the Interlocking System of Antagonistic Emotional Hatred or functions under the Arrogance Skills and these simply make him totally miserable. The more he Justifies Self and makes excuses for his actions the less likely he is to take responsibility for his actions and the less likely he is to use Problem Solving Device #1 Rebound to obtain Problem Solving Device #2 the Filling of God the Holy Spirit. New believers MUST use the first 2 Problem Solving Devices as quickly as possible and as consistently as possible in their Spiritual Life so that they at least have these 2 available to stabilize and provide solutions for their life.

### **The Cogs of Carnality Graphic**

Return to the [Table of Contents](#)

### **Gate #14 – The Arrogance of Condemnation**

Until man discovers who and what he is he cannot appreciate who and what God is. People mostly think in error about self and as a result also about God and are, unfortunately, truly stupid and imbecilic. As a result of the revolution of angels against God led by Lucifer an Angelic Conflict began. After an unknown period when all created angelic creatures had made their personal decision to follow God or follow Lucifer, God convened the Supreme Court of Heaven. Being omniscient God presented the absolute facts of the revolt and proceeded to condemn and render judgment on Lucifer and his followers. God at that point relegated these revolutionaries to the eternal destruction of the Lake of Fire. This is what the fate of all revolutionaries should be. In effect God condemned Lucifer and his followers for revolting against Him and imputed the responsibility or culpability for that sin or transgression to each and every one of them. Lucifer, being the spokesman for and leader of the revolution and these fallen angels, spoke up after judgment was rendered and impugned the character of God. He said in effect that, based on the judgment of condemnation to the Lake of Fire for all the fallen angels, God could not be God because he did not coordinate the function of his LOVE with his Righteousness and Justice. In effect Lucifer APPEALED the court's decision to place him and his followers into the Lake of Fire and attempted to bring God down to his level. Knowing from his omniscience that all of this would occur from Eternity Past, and under the principles of the Grace Plan of God, God permitted the appeal and agreed to demonstrate the fallacy of the contention made by Lucifer. In effect he agreed to demonstrate to all angelic creation that the Essence or Character of God is Immutable and totally Fair and all aspects of it always function together in total coordination for complete self protection and preservation. To accomplish this end he created the Man and eventually gave him the Woman as a companion and put them into perfect environment in the garden and provided from his LOVE everything they would have a need for in life on the earth as human beings. In order to address the

situation of the angelic revolution and failure in the Plan of God he also gave man a volitional test (just like the angels had) as a prohibition. Since Lucifer had made the appeal and had revolted against God in order to rule angelic creation, God used Lucifer's plan of **"Good and Evil"** to set up a test for man whereby God gave Man the option of choosing for the GRACE plan under the Love of God or the Good and Evil plan under Lucifer. After an unknown period of time, Ishah, the Woman, became bored with Adam, tired of his authority over her, and with the daily Bible study provided by The Lord Jesus, The Christ. She, in fact, rejected the authority of Adam, Bible Doctrine and The Lord, and desired equality with all, in reality superiority over Adam, and began to converse with her pet serpent. Lucifer seeing the dissatisfaction of Ishah and her developing Arrogance in rejecting authority indwelt the serpent to speak to her and deceive her. He succeeded in doing so because the Arrogance of Ishah had caused her to not pay attention in bible study and therefore lack an understanding of the doctrines related to creation and the test for man. By playing on her Arrogance Lucifer convinced her that the Tree of the Knowledge of Good and Evil, prohibited by God, was what she needed to assuage her poor self esteem and become greater than all of these things she rejected. Having been deceived in this way, she partook of this fruit, in the presence of her husband, Adam, and then offered it to him who, knowing full well what he was doing, took it from her and both therefore became instantly spiritually dead. Adam and Ishah were created with Body, Soul and Human Spirit so that in essence, by transgressing the prohibition of God, they KILLED their Human Spirit, they Died Spiritually. As a result of Adam's transgression in voluntarily eating of the fruit of the Tree of the Knowledge of Good and Evil, spiritual death and separation from God occurred for Adam as it also did for Ishah and in the process of killing their Human Spirit their genetic structure was corrupted. They could initiate no more contact with God aside from being the recipient of JUDGMENT and Condemnation. At their interrogation by God the Son, the Lord Jesus Christ, in the garden their transgression was imputed to their new genetic Old Sin Nature. In other words they were held responsible or culpable for the transgression having used their free will volition to perform it. At this same time both accepted the potential for salvation based on the future event of the Substitutionary Spiritual Death of Christ on the cross for ALL Human Sin. After the fall of Adam and Ishah they were removed from the perfect garden and told to populate the earth.

In his unfathomable genius God provides a combination of things for every human being at his physical birth. At the point of physical birth for every human being God imputes Soul Life to the format soul within the genetic Biological Life of the emerging fetus resulting in Human Life. In addition and as a result of being descended from Adam and Ishah there is the transmission of corrupted genetic material from the male during copulation and fertilization of the female ovum so that every human being born after the fall of Adam has the same genetic defect of Adam and Ishah which in effect results in a lack of a Human Spirit resulting in an inability to have contact with God and the predilection to personal sin. This lack of a Human Spirit in subsequently born man results at physical birth in Human Life occurring simultaneously with spiritual death and along with this the propensity or predilection to personal sin which is called the 'Old Sin Nature'. This results at birth in human life and, simply because of having the Old Sin Nature as a genetic distortion of the human body, also spiritual death. Adam's Original Sin brought to the Human Race spiritual death and this has been the Status Quo since the fall of



Adam throughout all of Human History. Personal sin is the manifestation, the result, of having a genetic Old Sin Nature and is violation of the rules, laws, mandates or standards of the character of God, and is NOT the cause of Spiritual Death for man. Therefore, for every human being after the fall of Adam, God imputes the culpability for Adam's Original Sin to the genetic lack of a Human Spirit or the Old Sin Nature at physical birth. This imputation of Adam's Original Sin to its real home in the genetic Old Sin Nature is one of the greatest manifestations of the genius of God. The possession of the Old Sin Nature and the imputation of Adam's Original Sin to the Old Sin Nature leaves God no alternative than to condemn each human being to the Lake of Fire just as he did the fallen angels.

This status of man at physical birth removes all potential for the individual, in Arrogance, to claim that some sin he committed resulted in his condemnation by God. The Plan of God cannot have anything to do with sin because sin is a violation of the standards of God and GOD being immutable cannot change his standards therefore, not part of the Grace Plan of God. The test for Ish (Adam) and Ishah (Eve) in garden setting of the Angelic Conflict Appeal was the Plan of Satan laid out as Good and Evil and it did not include SIN (although Satan will definitely use human sin as a means of distracting people from participation in the Plan of God). The Plan of Satan was designed to produce as near a perfect environment for Angels and then for Mankind as possible APART FROM GOD. The Plan of God is GRACE, that which God can do for man which he cannot ever earn nor deserve based on the Substitutionary Spiritual Death of Christ for all human sins. Therefore, the structure of the Plan of God which allowed for the Angelic Conflict, the Angelic Conflict Trial and the Angelic Conflict Appeal, as part of the Grace Plan, "required" God to collect all personal sins for imputation to The Lord Jesus, The Christ who voluntarily died a Substitutionary Spiritual Death on the cross in payment for each and every one of man's personal sins in order to effectively make personal sin by man a NONISSUE. Man and his stupidity in failure (Personal Sin) is ABSOLUTELY NOT the major issue in the Angelic Conflict Appeal Trial and in relationship with God but CONDEMNATION is the issue since stupid only covers some of the people but condemnation by this means covers all people in the Human Race. Because of his failure in the fall of Adam the rulership of this world was turned over to Satan. Under the GRACE Plan and Policy of God, He provides conditions and opportunity for every newly born human being the volitional test of accepting the Grace Plan and Policy of God or the Good and Evil plan and policy of Satan which is now in effect as Satan's process for rulership of this world. It is imperative to understand that Personal Sin is the unfortunate and UNEXPECTED RESULT (for Satan) of Adam's decision to reject the prohibition of God regarding this satanic policy of Good and Evil and was a complete oversight on the part of Satan in his machinations to acquire rulership of this earth. The issue for man is, VOLITIONAL CHOICE, DECISION for God's Plan or for Satan's Plan, while Personal Sin is only a consequence of being spiritually dead and having a genetic Old Sin Nature which gives man the propensity and predilection to sin. The Lord Jesus, The Christ had to go to the cross and provide a Substitutionary Spiritual Death for all human sin to remove human sin from being an issue in the resolution of the Angelic Conflict. Choosing for the Plan of God occurs at the point of Gospel Hearing when the individual uses his Positive Volition to accept the Substitutionary Spiritual Death of The Lord Jesus, The Christ for his personal sins and all sins in humanity. Rejection of God or the Gospel of Christ by

default places the unbeliever in the plan of and under the control of Satan and outside of the Plan of God.

When Human Life occurs in some individuals and they cannot or do not ever arrive at the point of accountability, which is the point of personal decision making, then they cannot be held responsible for their lack of the use of their volition to choose the Plan of God having never reached a level of mental ability to engage in this. They are condemned at birth, are spiritually dead with an Old Sin Nature but as a result of not reaching accountability they cannot participate in the *purpose for man* on the earth and therefore are automatically taken to be with the Lord at their physical death. At this point God the Holy Spirit gives to them a Human Spirit and Eternal Life is imputed to it for them. God created the Soul Life which He also imputed to them at birth for the purpose of their making decisions for or against him and when they cannot accomplish this through NO FAULT OF THEIR OWN, he assumes responsibility for them and takes them to be with him for eternity. This is a primary unequivocal demonstration of the Love of God working with the Justice of God and Righteousness of God to provide salvation for those who cannot choose it. This occurs when a child is born and life is imputed and he lives a very short time and then dies before reaching the point of being held responsible for using his volition as part of the Angelic Conflict resolution at God Consciousness. God does the same thing for the individual who does not develop mentally enough to be accountable even though he matures physically. Consider that man was created solely to resolve the appeal of Satan at his trial in the Angelic Conflict. The creation of man came about to demonstrate to both elect and fallen angels that Satan's impugning of the character of God was a false issue and the Love, Justice and Righteousness of God along with all aspects of the Essence of God all work together at all times. In essence God must be FAIR and in taking the one, who never reaches accountability and cannot use his volition to fulfill his *purpose in life*, to be with God, IS FAIR. Therefore, man was given a volitional test, first the Tree of the Knowledge of Good and Evil vs the Tree of Lives, then after the fall of Adam and rulership of Satan over this world, Satan's Plan of Evil vs God's Grace Plan. If a person cannot ever make the decision then he is not a participant in this appeal trial resolution and since God created him God is responsible for him and must take him to himself at his physical death. The overriding principle is that Condemnation must PRECEDE Salvation and those who die without reaching accountability must be saved as part of the responsibility of God toward his creation. The death of a person prior to reaching accountability, thus the lack of the ability to participate in the decision making process for which he was created and thereby lacking the potential to engage in the resolution of the Angelic Conflict, is considered under the Grace Plan and Policy of God and since this person cannot add nor subtract from the resolution of the conflict he is immediately taken to be with God for eternity.

Condemnation of all human beings born into this world occurs because:

- Man is born DICHOTOMOUS with Body and Soul ONLY

- ✧ Man is spiritually dead at physical birth because of lacking a Human Spirit as a result of the transmitted genetic defect from Adam.
- ✧ Man possesses an Old Sin Nature giving him the propensity and predilection to sin
- ✧ Man is incapable of having a relationship with God except for the purpose of judgment

As a result of lacking a Human Spirit and possessing the genetic distortion of the Old Sin Nature, God holds each of human being culpable for the failure of Adam. Therefore as with Adam and Ishah, condemnation occurs when this SIN is imputed to each person's Old Sin Nature. Therefore, when God imputes SIN ie. the original sin of Adam, to one's genetic defect, the lack of a human spirit and possession of a real Old Sin Nature, he is instantly condemned at physical birth.

The Substitutionary Spiritual Death of Christ on the cross in payment for all human sin transgressions removes SIN as an issue in this life and in the Appeal Trial of the Angelic Conflict. No person can be born and not be spiritually dead and condemned at physical birth, THEREFORE, NO person can become spiritually dead only after committing his first sin. Since the Substitutionary Spiritual Death of The Lord Jesus, The Christ in payment for all human sin, this makes personal sin a total non-issue, personal sin resulting in condemnation by God is a real impossibility. The believer must keep in mind constantly that in this life under the Plan of God for this Appeal part of the Angelic Conflict trial **SIN IS NEVER THE ISSUE**. Being descended from Adam and Ishah and possessing the genetic distortion which precludes man from having a Human Spirit he cannot be born without spiritual death. This is why infant baptism as a means of guaranteeing salvation is idiotic and does nothing BUT when any child dies before accountability is reached they will always be taken face to face with the lord. The Justice of God has executed at the physical birth of every human being the very basis for salvation and for every human being born, CONDEMNATION PRECEDES SALVATION. In addition this aspect of the Plan of God allows God to destroy the Condemnation Arrogance in any testimony when a person says they are condemned for their own personal heinous sins. When Soul Life is imputed to the format soul at physical birth combining with the Biological Life of the fetus forming Human Life, this shows us that God has a purpose for our life and that this individual has entered the X Radical of the **Equation of Hope**, Plan of God.

If God withheld condemnation, in effect did not impute the culpability for Adam's Original Sin, from this spiritually dead individual lacking a Human Spirit, this individual could not participate in the Angelic Conflict appeal **RESOLUTION**. If this person committed a sin it would be the entire basis for his condemnation and there would be no way for him to resolve his status with God because there would be no means for an entrance into the Plan of God. If this person was held culpable for each and every sin he was to commit he would immediately be relegated to the Lake of Fire **before his physical death** after his very first sin, **JUST LIKE THE FALLEN ANGELS**. If this person never had the option of making a decision for the Plan of God, being in a status of never reaching accountability, then after his physical death, as a result of his persistent spiritual death, he would be relegated to the Lake of Fire being

incapable of having a relationship or contact with God except in the form of Judgment. God would have nothing to judge him for but also could not have any relationship with him. God having never condemned him would not have any responsibility for his failure to reach accountability and therefore he would be sent to the Lake of Fire. God would have no responsibility to take him to Heaven because he was never condemned and therefore did not qualify for salvation.

The imputation of Adam's Original Sin to the genetic Old Sin Nature means that possessing an Old Sin Nature the result will be an accumulation of personal sins for every individual, which are never imputed for condemnation to any person, destroying the Arrogant Condemnation Pride resulting from thinking one's personal sins are special. In fact, under the perfect Plan of God for this Appeal of the Angelic Conflict Trial, the personal sins of all human beings are never imputed to any person who has committed them because all of them were imputed to The Lord Jesus, The Christ on the cross. Therefore if a person dies before reaching accountability and has committed 0, 1 or 100,000 sins these were all imputed to The Lord Jesus, The Christ and therefore are not the basis for their condemnation but in fact are the basis for salvation.

The beauty and genius of the Plan of God is that all humans are condemned at birth no matter how good or bad, sweet or obnoxious, evil or spiritual, smart or dumb, generous or unkind no matter who or what one is, how he got here or what his circumstances are; all are condemned immediately at the point of physical birth. All human beings having an Old Sin Nature express the Old Sin Nature in differing ways with some emphasizing one category of sin and some another and when one makes changes in his tendencies to sin it is a very slow and gradual process and only Bible Doctrine can accomplish it. No one can ever change another person and the only person one can change is oneself and the only thing which can bring a positive change to anyone is Bible Doctrine. This is Bible Doctrine in the form of the Gospel of Christ, detailed Bible Doctrine of the entirety of scripture, and the principles of the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions. Some individuals produce one brand of Human Good and some another but all Human Good is a production of the individual while residing outside of the Plan of God and under EVIL, the operating structure of the plan and policy of Satan in ruling this world since the fall of Adam. There are great varieties of people functioning under Evil and some individuals are sweet under Evil and some are snarling under Evil. The concept of the 'total depravity of man' covers the picture of mankind very well but this idea of total depravity does not adequately express the characteristics of Human Good and the [Self Righteous](#) pomposity of [Legalism](#) which is just as depraved as the worst sins. All people, both believers and unbelievers, do commit personal sin and produce acts of Human Good and have succumbed to the influence of the all permeating Evil of this organizational system which rules this world, and it is done all from one's own volition. Some believers like to estimate their Condemnation in terms of what they have done personally but this is totally erroneous, idiotic and involves a superficial pride in what they can or have done to screw things up in life. This is total Arrogance and many believers have great difficulty in understanding that they cannot take the credit for their depravity though they have been wallowing in it from physical birth. Many

cannot fathom that it is Adam's Original Sin imputed by God at birth which results in their personal Condemnation. Understanding this fact helps to understand how erroneous believers can be when they try to say to God "Why did you make me this way, I have done terrible things and it is all YOUR fault, etc".

Condemnation Arrogance is the individual trying to take credit for his own failings causing GOD to condemn him. This is Religion, This is legalism, This is STUPID and would prevent anyone from avoiding the Lake of Fire.

Return to the [Table of Contents](#)

### **Gate #15 – The Arrogance of Misapplied Virtue**

Virtue is the manifestation of the invisible power of God resulting from residing and functioning in the Divine Dynasphere while Arrogance is the manifestation of the invisible power of Satan resulting from residing and functioning in Cosmic Dynasphere I, the Interlocking System of Arrogance. Arrogance derives great power from glorifying and romanticizing SELF while Virtue, for the believer, derives great power from glorification of The Lord Jesus, The Christ. For the unbeliever, virtue is the result of execution of his own game plan through function under the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions. Once a person enters Satan's Cosmic Dynaspheres, the Interlocking System of Arrogance and the Interlocking System of Antagonistic Emotional Hatred, he loses capacity for Personal Love and it turns into Arrogance or some other system lacking Virtue. A person devoid of Virtue in prosperity will be immersed in Arrogance in adversity. Virtue is objective in its direction while Arrogance is always subjective in its direction, therefore, Virtue is directed toward God and Man, while Arrogance is only directed toward Self. Since [Personal Love](#) as a Motivational Virtue is developed in the Divine Dynasphere through Perception, Cognition, Incultation, Metabolization and Application of Bible Doctrine, it is objectively ONLY directed toward God. In addition, [Impersonal – Unconditional Love](#) as a Functional Virtue is also developed in the Divine Dynasphere and is also objectively ONLY directed toward mankind and is a part of the [Royal Family Honor Code](#). Personal Love as a Virtue objectively directed toward God becomes synonymous with Worship, Love of God and Occupation with the Person of The Lord Jesus, The Christ. Therefore, [Worship](#), also a Motivational Virtue, can ONLY be directed toward God while Morality as a Functional Virtue under the Laws of Divine Establishment can only be directed toward Man. This means that Personal Love directed toward man is not a Virtue in itself, but IF it is arrived at properly and correctly, it is the [SELECTIVE RESULT](#) of the Virtue of Impersonal – Unconditional Love for Mankind. Therefore, Personal Love toward man can only be perpetuated by Impersonal – Unconditional Love since Impersonal – Unconditional Love is the only way to solve the problems which result from Personal – Selective or Conditional Love and is therefore the sustaining Virtue for Personal Love toward man. Personal Love directed toward God is the ultimate Virtue and a byproduct of Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the soul. Virtue in the Christian Way of Life is such that in the function of prayer, the believer must have the Motivational Virtue of Confidence directed toward God and Functional



Virtue of Courage directed toward Man. Personal Love directed toward God in Worship under the maximum Category I Love for God of Occupation with the Person of The Lord Jesus, The Christ must be the goal of the Spiritual Life. Therefore, Basic Personal Love for God and Advanced Personal Love for God as Occupation with the Person of The Lord Jesus, The Christ are the direct result of advance in the Spiritual Life to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God.

In the Spiritual Life of the Church Age the advanced [Problem Solving Devices](#), #6 – #10, are all related to Virtue love as Personal Love for God the Father and Impersonal – Unconditional Love for Mankind. The Advanced Problem Solving Devices of the adult Spiritual Life are related to perfect Inner Happiness and are the enemy of the Interlocking System of Arrogance and the [3 Arrogance Skills](#). Virtue can then be organized into 2 categories depending upon its direction. Virtues directed toward God are [Motivating Virtues](#); Virtues directed toward Man are [Functional Virtues](#). Therefore, all Virtue must have an object toward which it is properly directed with the principle being that Virtue directed toward God motivates the Virtues directed toward man while those directed toward man can be applied to and function in life so that:

- ✧ Personal Love toward God motivates Impersonal – Unconditional Love toward mankind.
  - Impersonal Unconditional Love for Mankind develops impact virtues as it is applied in human relationships toward others including
    - ✧ Sensitivity
    - ✧ Thoughtfulness
    - ✧ Courtesy
    - ✧ Good Manners
    - ✧ Accommodation
    - ✧ Kindness
    - ✧ Understanding
    - ✧ Lack of Prejudice
- ✧ Confidence toward God motivates Courage toward man.
  - Confidence toward God also provides no place for the development of fear.
- ✧ Worship toward God motivates Morality toward mankind.
  - It is very important to recognize that basic worship directed toward God is in the Perception, Cognition, Incultation, Metabolization and Application of Bible Doctrine and that Metabolized Bible Doctrine puts Morality in its proper place as only a part of the Christian Way of Life.
- ✧ Genuine Humility toward God motivates Enforced Humility toward authority and mankind in general.
- ✧ Inflexibility regarding God & Bible Doctrine motivates Flexibility regarding every detail of life.
- ✧ Faithfulness toward God motivates consistent unwavering Responsibility toward mankind.
- ✧ Subordination or Submission to God motivates Leadership toward mankind.

Therefore Motivating Virtues drive Functional Virtues directed toward mankind and situations and circumstances of life. All of these Virtues are exclusively the monopoly of God and manufactured only in the Divine Dynasphere.

### **Virtue Reversal == Disaster**

To reverse the direction of Virtue is disastrous and motivated by the influence of Evil and therefore destroys the Virtue. In life all Confidence must be directed toward God and all Courage toward Man. However, when Courage is directed toward God it is Blasphemous and presumptuous. In addition, ALL Confidence toward Man is complete total idiocy. ([1Tim 6:17](#), [Lam 3:21-24](#), [Jer 17:5](#)) Also, all Worship is to be directed toward God, while all Morality is to be directed toward Man. To direct Morality toward God is again presumption and also [Legalism](#) and to engage in directing Worship toward Man is total and complete Arrogance. All Personal Love as a Virtue is directed toward God while Impersonal – Unconditional Love which is a Virtue is always directed toward Man. Impersonal – Unconditional Love directed toward God is also total Arrogance and Personal Love without the support of Impersonal – Unconditional Love directed toward Man is weakness and [Emotionalism](#). Obviously then misdirected Love is totally robbed of its Virtue. When there is misdirection of Virtue it results in destruction of the Virtue and its motivation so that misapplied Virtue can be seen in:

- ✧ Courage directed toward God which is Presumptuous and Blasphemous.
- ✧ Confidence directed toward man which is naive and idiotic.
- ✧ Morality directed toward God which results in gross Legalism.
- ✧ Worship directed toward Man which is total Arrogance and Stupidity and is a function of Religion which is a system of distraction from EVIL.
- ✧ Impersonal – Unconditional Love directed toward God which is total Arrogance.
- ✧ Personal Love directed toward man which is weakness, distraction and emotionalism and a PROBLEM manufacturing device in life.
- ✧ Flexibility toward God and Bible Doctrine which results in an eclectic Christian who bases Bible Doctrine on his experience.
- ✧ Inflexibility toward Man or Circumstances and Details of life results in complete entanglement in Arrogance and Legalism with the focus in life being Self, other people or other THINGS.
- ✧ Genuine Humility cannot be motivational Virtue when directed toward man because it is based on all motivational virtues functioning together which are only directed toward God and results from voluntary volitional conformity to the ABSOLUTE authority of the Sovereignty of God and Bible Doctrine which is the thinking of Christ.
- ✧ Enforced Humility cannot be functional Virtue directed toward God because it REQUIRES conformity toward some system of enforced discipline from some system of organizational authority outside the individual and is motivation from maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul which is a result of persistent Post Salvation Epistemological Rehabilitation from Motivational Virtues and it also requires all Motivational Virtues to function together in order to provide orientation to delegated Authority.

### **Humility as Virtue**

Humility in life is to begin its development in the home as organized humility. The individual, with his volition (Divine Institution #1) is BORN into a system of authority called the Family which results from the Marriage of one man with one woman (Divine Institutions #2 & #3),

the parents, and must respond to this Organizational Authority and its required discipline with Enforced Humility in order to be able to move into life and respond to the delegated authorities of life in schools, business and under government. This individual at God Consciousness and Gospel Hearing can then move, through volitional choice from his Positive Volition, to respond to the absolute authority of God and his Grace Plan and Policy with personal Genuine Humility. Enforced Humility directs proper response toward Delegated Authority in life beginning with the Parents and moving into the realm of Teachers, Professors, Bosses, Drill Sargents, Police, Judges, Pastor Teachers, etc., and teaches respect for and orientation to this Delegated Authority. This enforced humility results in a volitional choice to engage in respect for God's Sovereign Absolute Authority in the form Bible Doctrine as Genuine Humility. Love in any category requires Genuine Humility as the response to the Grace Plan of God. Goodness is always directed toward God as Worship and toward Man as Morality. In Cosmic Dynasphere I, the Interlocking System of Arrogance, misdirection of these characteristics becomes Self Righteousness and legalism, resulting in hypocrisy and is one of the roads to degeneracy in life. Fearlessness is the result of Confidence directed toward God but in Cosmic Dynasphere I, the Interlocking System of Arrogance it becomes bravado. Courage directed toward Mankind is a Virtue and the result of Genuine Humility toward God and his Grace but in the Cosmic Dynasphere becomes an emotionally motivated facade covering true cowardice or emotionalism.

Virtue is NOT proving one's worth or how good one is but is related to knowledge and understanding. Virtue is the result of the Genuine Humility which voluntarily acquires KNOWLEDGE of Bible Doctrine which is a manufacturing machine for Virtue. Virtue cannot exist in the Cosmic Dynaspheres since Arrogance always destroys Bible Doctrine and therefore all Virtue. Virtue is switching from Personal Conditional Love for one other person, to Impersonal – Unconditional Love for Mankind as the situation requires. The Cosmic Dynaspheres with Arrogance and Antagonism toward God and Bible Doctrine have sought to create confusion with regard to all doctrine but the function and application of reverse concentration on Metabolized Bible Doctrine in one's Stream of Consciousness of the Soul solves that problem. The Believer who constantly tries to PROVE something cannot IMPROVE his Status Quo in the Spiritual Life. Proving or trying to prove one's worth is Arrogance while IMPROVING ones worth through consistent Post Salvation Epistemological Rehabilitation from Perception, Cognition, Incultation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine is prudence. Arrogance is unteachable, saturated in subjective reality and is an ignorance of and the cause for lack of knowledge of Bible Doctrine, therefore it is by this very definition derived directly from EVIL.

Humility is Virtue, teachability and objective reality so that knowledge is the basis for manufacturing Virtue when the subject of that knowledge is Bible Doctrine. Humility, as a way of life, is the Virtue of Grace Orientation leading to Occupation with the Person of The Lord Jesus, The Christ and Authority Orientation resulting in Virtue love and service. There are 3 advanced Problem Solving Devices categorized as Virtue Love:

- ✧ Basic Personal Love for God, #7
- ✧ Impersonal – Unconditional Love for Mankind, #8
- ✧ Advanced Personal Love for God, Occupation with the Person of The Lord Jesus, The

Therefore, Virtue Love is a system of thinking in the soul and is based on Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul as the basis for the believer's Spiritual Life. No One can have Virtue Love without the consistent [Filling of God the Holy Spirit](#). Virtue Love, therefore, is not a consistent part of the repertoire of either the infant believer or the youthful believer but requires consistent Perception, Cognition, Incultation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine with Genuine Humility from functioning under the [Grace Apparatus for Perception](#) and under the Filling of God the Holy Spirit. [Humility](#) is the basic Virtue a believer can build which demonstrates [Grace Orientation](#) and truly begins his spiritual advance. All true [Integrity and Virtue](#) reside inside the Divine Dynasphere, God's Power System for the Christian Way of Life. [Impersonal – Unconditional Love](#) is the function of Honor and Integrity and is the result of the development of priorities and functions under the [Royal Family Honor Code](#). A colossal expression of Satan's failure is in the invention of his Cosmic Dynaspheres because they cannot produce Virtue under any category since Arrogance thinks in terms of Superior and Inferior with regard to SELF while Enforced and Genuine Humility think in terms of respect for Authority. As a system of thinking Humility is freedom from Arrogance and is diametrically opposed to Arrogance and one cannot exist where the other already is. Humility is the first essential key Virtue in life for it means there is teachability and since there is a great deal for the child to learn it must exist if the child is to become a vessel of honor. To make the transition from ignorance to cognizance in secular life and also in the Spiritual Life requires the basic Virtues of Enforced Humility and Genuine Humility which enable the successful engagement in Perception, Cognition, Incultation, Metabolization of Bible Doctrine for growth to maturity, both secular and spiritual. (See [Thinking Skills](#)) Humility, therefore, is the greatest Virtue in life fulfilling [James 4:6](#), [1Pet 5:5](#) and one of the benefits of Humility include great prosperity, [Ps 25](#).

Sensitivity is part of the impact Virtue of Impersonal – Unconditional Love and is being thoughtful of others while hypersensitivity is the arrogant flaw of operation over think which destroys teachability with focus on self. Therefore, Sensitivity is an expression of Impersonal – Unconditional Love for Mankind and the combines with the Virtue of thoughtfulness toward others while Hypersensitivity is an expression of Arrogance and the flaw of operation over think which destroys teachability and hinders spiritual momentum in the Divine Dynasphere. Sensitivity is the thoughtfulness, poise, confidence, courage, flexibility, honor, integrity, the true Virtue which comes from residence and function in the [Divine Dynasphere](#) which extends out its recon patrols in all directions to discover the feelings of others and avoids those things which might offend them. Therefore, the function of the Virtue of Impersonal – Unconditional Love is to be expressed in honorable sensitivity as thoughtfulness toward others. Without the Virtue of Impersonal – Unconditional Love there can be no successful Personal Love at any level. Sensitivity as a Virtue is objective and directed toward others, while hypersensitivity, as an aspect of Arrogance under Evil, is subjective and directed toward self. Sensitivity is the expression of Impersonal – Unconditional Love as a Virtue while hypersensitivity is the expression of Arrogance and the frustration resulting from it based on Evil. There is no conflict between sensitivity and honor, integrity, courage, confidence, courtesy, or any other aspect of true Virtue. Sensitivity is teachability in the Divine Dynasphere and is objective while

Hypersensitivity is unteachable and totally subjective. In a Status Quo of Hypersensitivity the REACTION of the believer to unfairness or injustice results from a lack of motivating Virtue toward God in which case he will REACT to every act of injustice and unfair treatment. Morality without integrity is life without true sensitivity. Therefore, Sensitivity and courtesy toward and thoughtfulness of others is part of the impact virtue under Impersonal – Unconditional Love for Mankind in the Divine Dynasphere.

### The Virtue of Love

Disillusion results from the misdirection of unsupported Personal Love or Confidence toward mankind. Having confidence in people is OK but when they fail it may lead one to disillusion and disappointment resulting in Iconoclastic Arrogance or the Feet of Clay Syndrome along with revenge motivation and the Modus Operandi of disappointment in the object of love. There is a part of People Testing in the Spiritual Life which is caused by the misdirected Virtue of worship directed toward people. The only real reason to recognize any flaws which may exist in any other person is to enable one to ignore them and practice the Virtue of Impersonal – Unconditional Love for Mankind. Again, Personal Love toward mankind is Virtue DEPENDENT, in order for effectiveness and success in any love relationship, and is normal but NOT VIRTUOUS. Romance and / or Friendship or Family Love are legitimate expressions of human love but do not constitute Virtue. There is no Virtue in making friends nor in family relationships nor in involvement in romance. Misdirected, even properly directed, Personal love for man has no Virtue therefore must depend on Virtue to sustain it and guard it from disillusion. Personal Love toward man can only be sustained and perpetuated where the Virtue of Impersonal – Unconditional Love exists to provide for functions of integrity and honor because *Personal Love vastly intensifies the problems of human interaction*. Both parties in any Personal Love relationship have problems and flaws and these problems can only be handled through the application of Virtue to the problem. The true principle is that in love, Virtue only exists in Personal Love toward God and Impersonal – Unconditional Love toward man. Impersonal - Unconditional Love toward Man is giving every person the option of using their own uncoerced volition to choose the direction of every aspect of their life. God is perfect and worthy of any Personal Love which can be directed toward him without disillusion or disappointment. In the Spiritual Life the Gate of Confidence is arrived at by reaching a Personal Sense of Destiny, Problem Solving Devices #6, which is the entrance into the Adult Spiritual Life of the Church Age. This includes development and deployment of Basic Personal Love for God and Impersonal – Unconditional Love for Mankind which are a tandem of Virtue Love in the Adult Spiritual Life. This is the Virtue of treating people from the Grace perspective in one's own soul and ignoring their obnoxiousness. This inevitably results in this believer developing in his Spiritual Life to the point of Sharing the Happiness of God, Problem Solving Devices #9, in tandem with Advanced Personal Love for God, Occupation with the Person of The Lord Jesus, The Christ, Problem Solving Devices #10, the final stage of Virtue Love. Virtue Love leads to an inner happiness greater than anything imaginable in Life.

Personal Love toward Man which is minus the support of Virtue results in weakness in several categories:

- ✧ Sin == Sexual Sins of fornication, incest or homosexuality



- ✧ Human Good == engaging in the efforts of trying to solve man's problems through human efforts under socialism, communism, welfare, etc.; even legitimately functioning under the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions when NOT residing in the Divine Dynasphere.
- ✧ Influence from Evil == altruistic involvement with principles of socialism, communism, welfare, etc., the greater good for the greater number.

Personal Love toward God is virtuous and depends on Bible Doctrine for development since to LOVE God you must KNOW God and Bible Doctrine is the only means of knowing God. Personal Love toward man depends on attraction, knowledge and mutual admiration, also a compatibility of Old Sin Natures. Personal Love directed toward Man is a problem manufacturer and in order for Personal Love toward man to not become a problem creator all categories of human personal love must be reinforced by Impersonal – Unconditional Love for Mankind. The proper and consistent function of Impersonal – Unconditional Love REQUIRES maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the soul of the Believer interlocked with the Filling of God the Holy Spirit and this alone results in the development of Virtue and the correct direction for the application of that Virtue. Arrogant people are constantly seeking from others unconditional love while offering only conditional love WITHOUT Virtue in return. Any confidence directed toward man, which is not a Virtue, can only be sustained by the Virtue of Confidence directed toward God. Switching the direction of any of the categories of Virtue results in blaspheme of God, Arrogance, Legalism and weakness directed toward mankind. It is in fact the Impersonal – Unconditional Love BY God which, being perfection in itself, becomes the basis for providing all believers with all categories of Virtue.

The great Delusion of misdirected Virtue often starts with Personal Conditional Love directed toward MAN which is based totally on Emotion and physical attraction and this is NOT ever Virtue. There are 2 categories of Personal Conditional Love toward Man which are always ONLY directed toward A FEW people:

- ✧ Romantic Love or Right Man / Right Woman relationships.
- ✧ Friendship toward compatible others in one's periphery.

However, Impersonal – Unconditional Love is always to be directed toward all people at all times and is the mechanism for the support of this Personal Conditional Love for Man. Personal Conditional Love can only be sustained or perpetuated in any category toward man by the Virtues of Humility and Impersonal – Unconditional Love. Personal Conditional Love toward Man cannot provide unconditional love to anyone because it is, by definition, selective and conditional where one chooses another person in Personal Love because of their attributes which appeal to his norms and standards. Personal Love toward man depends on emotion, attraction, rapport along with Old Sin Nature compatibility and is ALWAYS Virtue dependent.

### Virtue vs Cosmic Dynaspheres

Satan's Cosmic Dynasphere systems deceive because they are based on the false standards of the LIE of Evil and therefore cannot produce Virtue so that when Satan tries it results in Self Righteousness, Legalism and all levels of Arrogance. The irony of Satan's Cosmic Dynasphere I,

the Interlocking System of Arrogance is that Arrogance destroys Virtue but in its subjectivity it also destroys itself. Virtue is the quality of Intrinsic Good ([gr] agathos) and is NOT proving one's worth which is Arrogance. Arrogance is the antagonist and the antithesis of Virtue. There are standards in the Word of God which show what Virtue, Honor, and Integrity are and that these are what must be followed as guides in life and by which one's life must be evaluated. Virtue encompasses those human characteristics manufactured through residence and function in the Divine Dynasphere the Power System of God, and they are a monopoly of God and should be the distinctive characteristic of the Royal Family of God in this Church Age. Virtue is the inevitable result of execution of the Plan of God by reaching Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God. A Believer's residence and function in the Divine Dynasphere produces Virtue while residence in Cosmic Dynasphere I, the Interlocking System of Arrogance destroys Virtue.

### Virtue Summary

Equality is not Virtue and man was not ever designed for equality and where it does exist FREEDOM has invariably been destroyed, which is the key to the resolution of the Angelic Conflict Appeal Trial. Equality is inevitably used by the few to control the many under some form of tyranny. In the Spiritual Life there is neither Virtue nor authority in counseling others and authority exists only in and as the result of the effective, accurate teaching of Bible Doctrine and Virtue exists from learning it. To improve one's worth is objective reality in God's system, to prove one's worth is subjective reality in the Cosmic Dynaspheres involving Arrogance. Therefore, one IMPROVES in the Divine Dynasphere and PROVES in the Cosmic Dynaspheres. Virtue is the manifestation of invisible power in the Divine Dynasphere while Arrogance is the manifestation of invisible power in the Cosmic Dynasphere. Again, Arrogance derives great power from glorifying and romanticizing self while Virtue derives great power from glorifying The Lord Jesus, The Christ in the Divine Dynasphere. Visible personality is NOT EVER the true index of invisible character for it can be the vehicle for representing either Virtue or Evil Influence under Arrogance. Confidence toward God is a Virtue acquired through the Perception, Cognition, Incultation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine. Confidence in man is a normal function in life without Virtue and is only successful when supported by Virtue. Personal Love for God is a Virtue acquired from residence and function within the Divine Dynasphere while Personal Love for Man is a normal function in life but is devoid of Virtue and is Virtue dependent. Worship of God is a Virtue resulting from living within the Divine Dynasphere but worship of man or in religion is an ABNORMAL function within the Cosmic Dynaspheres. Therefore, Virtue directed toward God is motivating while Virtue directed toward man is operating or functioning and neither aspect of Virtue can exist until there has been successful development of the basic foundational of all Virtue, Humility. Decisions without Virtue are disastrous and this is why moral men without moral courage are IMMORAL and function completely under the influence of Evil. Therefore, there can be very Moral persons making constant immoral decisions, as in the government in the United States of America. Mankind is in fact designed for servitude, therefore, every person either SERVES God or Satan and one cannot resist or reject Bible Doctrine and serve the correct master. Joshua was commander of the armies of Israel and after the death of Moses he was the leader of Israel but when he spoke with regard to serving the Lord he also spoke for his entire family thus he was

truly a great leader being successful in battle, administration and in controlling his own household. ([Josh 24:15](#)) The fact is that the believer cannot serve God and do his will apart from Virtue derived from consistent residence and function within the Divine Dynasphere.

Return to the [Table of Contents](#)

### **Gate #16 – The Arrogance of False Perspective**

Having or developing a false perspective in life results from failure in 2 primary choices or decisions in one's life:

- ✧ Rejection of the Substitutionary Spiritual Death of The Lord Jesus, The Christ on the cross for all human sins resulting in failure to make [Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God](#)
- ✧ Rejection of Bible Doctrine, the Thinking of Christ ([1Cor 2:16](#)), after having made the positive decision for Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God through faith alone in The Lord Jesus, The Christ alone.

These individuals adopt a totally [Human Viewpoint](#) orientation to life and begin to function completely within the Plan of Satan under the Cosmic Dynaspheres, the Interlocking System of Arrogance and the Interlocking System of Antagonistic Emotional Hatred. These 2 decision failures result initially in the entrance of the believer into the Interlocking System of Arrogance and into the [8 stages of Reversionism](#) where any aspect of a spiritual life he may have begins to and constantly progresses down through greater and greater degradation and degeneration. For the unbeliever who has not made Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God this degradation results from the rejection of the Absolute Truth of the principles of the [Laws of Divine Establishment](#) and [Divine Institutions](#) designed to protect and perpetuate the Human Race in Human History. This also results from his entrance into the Interlocking System of Arrogance where he lives a totally miserable and fragmented life. For the believer who has made Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God this results in complete rejection of the importance of any Absolute Truth from any Bible Doctrine and the necessity for its consistent daily intake in order to enable function and growth in the Protocol Plan of God. The entrance into the Interlocking System of Arrogance is the beginning of the Fragmentation of the Life of the individual as a result of the explosion of the Arrogance Grenade in his soul. The resulting fragmentation caused by the Arrogance grenade explains everything sinful, abnormal, hypocritical, every act of [Human Good](#), all involvement and motivation from Evil, all Moral and Immoral degeneracy in the life of the believer. It is important for the believer in The Lord Jesus, The Christ to always remember that there is nothing wrong with being Moral as he functions in life and there is nothing wrong with doing GOOD things to help others in life but it must be kept in mind that these efforts have no eternal ramifications in and of themselves unless they are produced while under the Filling of God the Holy Spirit and residing in the Divine Dynasphere the [Power System of God](#). Being Moral protects the Human Race from self destruction and doing good things to help others is a beneficial thing for mankind in general BUT THEY DO NOT, WILL NOT AND CANNOT BRING A PERSON CLOSER TO GOD. These, and any other productions, are the responsibility of the Ambassadorship of the believer and

become maximally functional AFTER he has reached Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God. These efforts or focus' can be PART of the Plan of God but must be accomplished under the proper procedures and motivations within the Plan of God only. The motivation for production of Divine Good in the Plan of God comes from the balance of residence of the consistent [Filling of God the Holy Spirit](#) and maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.

Morality is a system of interaction with other individuals designed for ALL people in order to protect the Freedom, Privacy, Property and LIFE of everyone and it is PART of the Plan of God but the believer is supposed to develop [VIRTUE](#) above his moral functions as he progresses in his Spiritual Life and develops the [Integrity Envelope](#) of the 7<sup>th</sup> and 8<sup>th</sup> Problem Solving Devices. He must develop and deploy Motivational Virtue and also Functional Virtue to advance in the Spiritual Life under the Protocol Plan of God. The unbeliever who has not made Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God is supposed to function under Morality and live within the principles of the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions as a part of his limited interaction within the Plan of God for humanity in general. However, ONE slight tug or pull on the pin of the Arrogance grenade and the entire life of either individual is totally fragmented as his perspective on life moves deeply into the Cosmic Dynaspheres and the system of thinking under the Plan of Satan, EVIL. This can be called the Arrogance of False Perspective but it does not explain the completely inconsistent and disorganized life of the fragmented individual who has rejected God or His Plan after Salvation.

Return to the [Table of Contents](#)

### [Gate #17 – The Arrogance of Inflexibility](#)

Reality in the Christian Way of Life is based on [Flexibility and Inflexibility](#) with regard to the non-essentials and essentials of life, which essentials ONLY include Bible Doctrines. Through personal consideration, evaluation and thinking the believer must establish a scale of values, norms and standards and priorities for life and Bible Doctrine must be the essential and all other things in life must be non essential. If this is reversed, even partially, the believer will never succeed in life. Added to his divorcement from reality and flexibility with regard to essentials in life is his Arrogance, [Emotionalism](#), Scar Tissue of the Soul, [Impulsiveness](#) and sincerity and therefore this person completely destroys himself and collapses when there is a catastrophe or disaster and completely eliminates self as a solution.

Even very intelligent people who become stubborn are reduced to being stupid, having become inflexible about inconsequential in life. The dumber a person is, the more stubborn they are, the more they say NO to every category of truth the more it becomes almost impossible to have enough patience to deal with them. The more stubborn and inflexible a person becomes the more he fills his soul with the [Scar Tissue](#) of reversionism and the more Scar Tissue that coats the Soul the greater he becomes filled with Arrogance and Arrogance always replaces REASON. Therefore, with increased Scar Tissue of the Soul Arrogance always increases and a

person can have a genius IQ but as a result of a great entanglement in Arrogance he will destroy himself because being an arrogant genius he will become irrational and stupid totally wasting his incredible IQ. MacArthur was a genius in battle and no military general could ever think the way MacArthur thought and be arrogant. He could think brilliantly in a crisis and when a person is brilliant in a crisis there is no Arrogance in him. When Arrogance saturates a person they freeze in a crisis and become stupid and even though they may generally be brilliant they become instantly stupid during the crisis.

Therefore, the more Arrogance one has in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul the dumber he becomes no matter how intelligent he may be. Arrogance makes a person stupid as is evident by a historical review of every tyrant or dictator who ever walked into the picture of history. For the unbeliever who rejects the doctrine of the Gospel of The Lord Jesus, The Christ and for the believer who rejects Bible Doctrine or for either who reject the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions at any level, [Scar Tissue of the Soul](#) is built up. When arrogant people look at a great man at any time in history it immediately starts the development of [Jealousy](#) and hangups in their soul and starts an intensified search to find something wrong with that person in order to be able degrade him because the arrogant person cannot live if they think someone is greater than they are. People who are always trying to degrade someone who is truly great are generally very petty people and they cannot ever be true friends because they will always be competing when around one or behind his back. This is a case where a person becomes their own worst enemy in life. This is tragic and these people are always miserable in life and always extremely miserable during holidays where they want attention but don't get it.

In many situations when wanting to recruit personnel for a good organization a good leader will look for the “bad boys” or “trouble makers” the ones who do not conform to the standards of the system they are in. People can always be provided discipline but they can never be forced into flexibility. A person can be sloppy, nonprofessional and mixed up but this can be corrected but it is impossible to correct inflexibility. The only thing which can correct inflexibility is truly hard times in life and often even this does not accomplish it because inflexibility is based on Arrogance. Inflexibility finds the one bad apple in the barrel and says the rest are already spoiled so throw away the whole barrel. Once a person begins to think this way even personal conversations with God do not change this attitude. This is clearly demonstrated in the dialogue between Elijah, after he had reached Advanced Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God, and God. The problem is Arrogance and rejection of the Absolute Truth found in Bible Doctrine. Arrogance always dramatizes and exaggerates the dangers while flexibility always recognizes the dangers but minimizes them in the face of something far greater:

- ✧ “Greater is he in you than he that is in the world”.
- ✧ “If God for us, AND HE IS, [WHO AGAINST US?](#)”

As Royal Family of God until the believer recognizes the authority of the Lord there can be no recovery from inflexible [Self Righteous Arrogance](#). The power and talent of great people is of no consequence to the Lord, and divine blessing and power do not come through natural



ability, human power, self righteousness, [Self Pity](#) nor any other category of Arrogance. To the Lord, These things constitute NOISE. THERE IS NO POWER IN NOISE, there is [Fear](#) in noise but no power and the only way noise can control you is through fear. A mob makes noise and produces fear, the mob is motivated by and functions under Evil and the fear is obviously wrong. Weapons fire produces noise and as long as there is no fear things remain under control. When the noise of weapons produces fear people are intimidated and become cowards and then run away. There is no power in the noise and the only ability the noise has is to intimidate with fear. There is no power in the voice of a bully and a nagging woman may shriek and holler and it is noise and there is no power in that noise but the ability of that noise is to produce fear and intimidation in “Nagging or Henpecking”. Shouting, screaming, explosions, detonations, etc., occur and frighten people and once they are not thinking they become inflexible and this why men freeze in combat, why they freeze on an automatic weapon’s trigger, freeze hugging the ground or become totally immobilized under pressure, etc. Many of the military services do not, to this day, understand that to provide discipline for a soldier is good but when it is done to the point of removing flexibility it means that when he needs to think he will never perform or function properly no matter what. Men freeze on the trigger of an automatic weapon or flinch on the shot because of the noise which causes them to fear. Noise is feared because of Self Righteousness Arrogance which becomes inflexible and this person is thus frightened by noise because the flexibility to bring in and apply thought and Bible Doctrine is gone. Since the beginning of battles in history noise is used to intimidate the enemy. Noise is a weapon but only works on a coward and NOISE never bothers courage because courage can concentrate under the pressure of noise. In addition only Courage can concentrate under the pressure of noise in disaster and it never bothers the person who is thinking and concentrating and applying Bible Doctrine.

Therefore, the most devastating thing in life is involvement in Arrogance and many great people fall to the wayside in life because of Arrogance. Arrogance makes one inflexible and once one is inflexible and on a sin trend he cannot stop apart from being flexible and using the [Rebound Procedure](#) to get out of the trend. Only individually can a believer determine whether Bible Doctrine is important to him or NOT, no one else can determine this for him. In addition the Pastor Teacher is not responsible to gather a congregation and provide hearers but that is the job of God and the Pastor Teacher must only be faithful to teach the doctrine so that when one or 2 people decide to listen there is something to hear. Flexibility is essential for every occupation and profession including being a house wife. A housewife cannot have children or a stupid husband and have no pressures in life which require flexibility. Arrogance + Pressure => Self Pity and when this exists in a status of inflexibility there is no way to recover. One’s degree of flexibility in life is inversely related to his degree of Arrogance. If he is very inflexible then he is very arrogant. If he is very flexible then he is without Arrogance and has great [Humility](#). A prime example is in the TV program “Mash”, where Major Frank Burns was Arrogant and totally inflexible lacking any humility.

When the believer reaches the status of [Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God](#) he should realize first and foremost how tolerant he has become of so many idiots who are struggling to grow up spiritually and who don’t do, look or think like he does and how suddenly he has

become courteous to absolute SCUM. In all areas of life he must always remain flexible especially in his Spiritual Life functions. One's pet areas of 'holiness' are his greatest danger zones for becoming inflexible. To the extent he does not follow the [Royal Family Honor Code](#) in the area of [Inflexibility](#) with regard to Bible Doctrine and flexibility about all other things, to that extent he has failed miserably in the Spiritual Life.

Good debaters must be humble and one cannot be arrogant and be good in debate or any other function in life. When one is arrogant he is inflexible and if he is inflexible he cannot be good at anything especially debate. All great debaters must be flexible, rational, logical, and related to reality but they can be easily destroyed simply by Arrogance and inflexibility. It is the same for anyone who is "good" at anything in life. Smart people who are arrogant and inflexible are always [Pseudo Intellectual](#). One cannot ever exploit a good IQ and great perceptive ability if he is arrogant and inflexible.

Egotistical Arrogance and [Pride](#) in a believer results in his being inflexible and assimilating only what HE thinks is right in a teaching situation, whereas Objectivity in the believer recognizes the truth of ALL Bible Doctrine taught as the [Essential](#) which is the ONLY thing he must be totally inflexible about. The believer who is God's man for the crisis must be very flexible about the Will of God and make instant decisions which do not always agree with his instincts. Flexibility comes from spirituality and Flexibility is seen in [Grace Oriented](#) believers and is the opposite of [Self Righteous Arrogance](#). General Douglas MacArthur was the most flexible person in military functions ever in United States of America history. He was gracious, thoughtful, considerate and brilliant but never inflexible and not ever arrogant. One cannot ever type Eisenhower and MacArthur since both were extremely humble, flexible and intelligent.

~ *[Humility](#) + Brilliance + Flexibility + Moral Courage == Greatness in the man*

In the media and in the education profession many apparently smart people exist but they are pseudo intellectual and although they are intelligent, they are also arrogant and inflexible. Smart people with Arrogance are always pseudo intellectual and have hang ups and are always trying to prove something and trying to advance beyond their peers. The more one pushes to advance in life with Arrogance the more inflexible he becomes especially in Christianity where his personal IQ is not the issue but only his spiritual perspicacity from his Spiritual IQ.

Every day in the United States of America there is some evil thing happening from government overreach, labor usurping power, management failing, or crime that can destroy the believer in an instant. If one is inflexible it will destroy him because he will always give up when put under pressure from these influences. One has to be flexible to be consistent and loyal opposition in the United States of America under the current government policies derived totally from EVIL and only Bible Doctrine gives that flexibility. Wanting to kill the opposition is not a solution but is inflexibility and nothing is solved by violence. The believer must be flexible and to be flexible he must be free from Arrogance. To the extent he has Arrogance in his soul, to that extent he will be inordinately upset about the condition and direction of the country, then, like many people, will think he can do something about the failure of the country. In a major election year many will be distracted by the election fanfare and will try

to find a candidate who they assume will solve all the problems of the nation by having the policy, solutions and courage to be able to do so but the true fact is that NO ONE HAS THE SOLUTION. The Lord Jesus, The Christ could enter the white house and not solve the problems of the United States of America because the problems of this nation involve too many Old Sin Natures saturated with Evil from entanglement in the Cosmic Dynaspheres.

If the believer is inflexible he will be destroyed by the disasters of this time in history. No one in Law Enforcement, Law, Military or any other such profession can afford to be inflexible. As a result of the myriad of resentments which originate from the public they would easily and readily slip into brutality out of sheer desperation. If any succumb to this tendency toward brutality they are no longer professional but just a person in a uniform stooping to the level of the scum that they are supposed to stop. They may be tempted daily to do something violent about these scum and to the extent that they do nothing violent when dealing with them, to that extent, they are great professionally because they don't function under Arrogance. Without Arrogance they don't feel sorry for self when spit upon nor Self Righteous because they are right. This applies to all the military services, officer corps, enlisted men and law enforcement and they must learn flexibility to cope with all the varied circumstances in society and still protect it. Since civilians now run the military and they do nothing to support the military, and are so stupid that they think that signing a treaty with communists or islam makes the country safe. Every treaty this nation signs with those scum bastards makes the situation in America more and more unsafe. One must be flexible to be an officer in the military and avoid Self Pity and Self Righteousness or he will never make a great soldier. No soldier is worthy to wear the rank of any of the services unless he is flexible and can be professional. Professionalism in any occupation requires the ability to take huge amounts of irrationality and abuse from those in authority over one. For a very long time the military services have been and are still experimenting in sociology and destroying themselves by so doing. A man is not worthy to be an officer unless he is flexible enough to handle this and to the extent he is not flexible he is full of Arrogance producing Self Pity and Self Righteousness. Many great patriots have given up hope for the United States of America because of Arrogance, Self Pity and Self Righteousness. This is clearly demonstrated in contemporary American history by the turning over of the Panama Canal which was and should still be American territory. To be right and inflexible is to be a martinet, non patriotic, a coward and run away from pressure or disaster. The people who never give up are often those who appear to give up but who are flexible and return to fight another day.

America may find itself invaded at some point in the near future as has occurred in other nations but today there is no longer a strong military to protect this nation nor is there in times of emergency effective police to protect life or property either. The Military and Law Enforcement cannot or often are not permitted to even stop rioting and prevent looting because of the policies and functions they are under are too soft and liberal. As a result, underground organizations will need to be formed and [Guerrilla Warfare](#) will become the order of the day for disaster survival. Most people are not prepared to become part of this type of function because they can only talk about it and talking about it results in inflexibility and Arrogance. A person must remain flexible about preparations and keep his mouth shut about his plans and

abilities and never announce his plans to anyone. Self Righteous inflexible people never admit that they are wrong about anything and it is incomprehensible why a believer fails to follow the [Rebound Procedure](#) acknowledging his failings and his being wrong, except that he is totally Self Righteous and inflexible. To be Self Righteous and inflexible results in being too arrogant to accept the principles of [1John 1:9](#) and unless he becomes aware of that as a problem he can never make it to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God. For this believer there is no way to pass the [Testing](#) leading up to Spiritual Maturity especially the test of [reversionism](#) attacking as a distraction from Bible Doctrine. As a result of these failures he could not ever make it in a Guerrilla Warfare situation. Bible Doctrine can bring one to the point of being able to handle pressure but he can never break into Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God without flexibility.

The Personality of Dwight Eisenhower hid all of his brilliance, humility and flexibility and most people think he was just sweet and dumb. He is one of the most underrated people who ever have walked across this country and has been maligned and ridiculed and many general officers constantly berated him. Only the believers who glorify God in time and eternity are those who receive the imputation of blessing in time and who will receive great blessing in eternity. One can work his head off in life doing legitimate or illegitimate things supposedly for God during his entire life and it makes no difference to God and he will not ever glorify God in any way BUT he will be unquestionably improving his Arrogance and Self Righteousness. Arrogance is the origin of inflexibility and of Self Righteousness and Cowardice and [Pseudo Intellectuality](#). All great thinking is flexible in everything in life EXCEPT when it concerns principles found in Absolute Truth as in Bible Doctrine including the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions. Arrogance always produces fear if one cannot produce what Arrogance demands. Arrogance always places one into a position where he loses flexibility and once this happens he becomes committed to the wrong ideals or principles. Genius can be a trap resulting in Arrogance and divorcement from reality and this type of person is a real pain in the ass. It is Arrogance which causes genius to be divorced from reality and Arrogance which destroys the potential of genius. Potential in any aspect of life is only converted to greatness by being minus Arrogance, having spiritual factors along with great self discipline and humility.

Arrogance + Inflexibility means all virtue, ability and success are invariably canceled. Divorcement from reality is generally due to inflexibility with regard to [Non-Essentials](#) while flexibility is related to orientation to reality. Inflexibility divorces one from reality and puts him into a fantasy dream world, keeping him out of touch with reality while it dries up thought processes destroying common sense. Inflexibility is a vacuum which sucks Arrogance into the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul. It involves either some aspect of conscious or [Blind Arrogance](#) where the believer makes a primary issue of self. In Arrogance the believer is always so stuck on self and so busy thinking about self that he doesn't have time to realize that others and other situation are or may be involved in any circumstance with him. Inflexibility makes him rude, stupid, thoughtless, and inconsiderate about the feelings and sensitivity of others.

Ironically the reversionist uses the freedom, given to him by the Laws of Divine Establishment,

to say NO to authority and all aspects of the Laws of Divine Establishment and Bible Doctrine. A reversionist accepts his freedom but not the authority which protects it nor the Bible Doctrine from which it has been derived, therefore, he is an anarchist under a system of Arrogance. There are churches which take away the freedom of the people in the congregation emphasizing authority with the result being a saturation of the people with self righteousness. These Arrogance systems are antithetical but all have Arrogance in common and when [Pride](#) accepts freedom in reversionism it always rejects [Authority](#). When Arrogance or Pride accepts authority in [Legalism](#) it rejects all other authority resulting in the self righteousness of legalism. Where freedom and authority are mated there is never any difficulty but where there is stubborn arrogant inflexibility there inevitably is lack of teachability, spiritual growth and successful execution of the Protocol Plan of God.

Return to the [Table of Contents](#)



## Gate #18 – The Arrogance of Intolerance

Intolerance occurs in many areas of the Interlocking System of Arrogance as a result of the believer's entanglement in various areas of Arrogance. It must however be considered as a problem of prejudice and antagonism in this 21<sup>st</sup> century. A major problem in this United States is that the many varied races which exist in this country often bring a culture with them to the United States of America which causes them to misunderstand or totally fail to understand FREEDOM as it has come down in the American culture. This results in tremendous areas of cultural antagonism between Anglo Saxon culture and the freedom it brought and other cultures coming into the country. As a result the immigrant often does not understand freedom nor the source it has been derived from. Therefore, today in the United States of America for the believer, racial and social prejudice is not to be engaged in and from the 80s until now this has not been an affordable concept as a human being, let alone as a believer. This is a time when Satan's ecumenical religious system includes all the slough off believers, the cults, the Catholics, protestants, Hindus, etc., all in one system to oppose the Truth of Bible Doctrine and the believer cannot be effective as a witness by his life and presentation if he is INTOLERANT. Today especially, intolerance is arrogance pure and simple and all people are human beings and the ones who have come to this country for whatever reason are now here providing one of the greatest opportunities for evangelism and witnessing without the believer having to go anywhere. God has said in effect, "USA, as a client nation has failed as missionaries so I am sending the people to you as immigrants and illegal aliens". No longer does the believer live in a time when any kind of prejudice has anything to do with being a Christian but the Christian Way of Life requires tolerance, understanding, thoughtfulness for all other peoples. The believer must consider, WHY NOT! All he has to do is just go back and apply Logistical Grace and consider how TOLERANT God is of each believer, He keeps us alive and provides food, shelter and clothing as part of his obligation to his Royal Family. All believers have been blessed magnificently with Logistical Grace from God and there may be obnoxious people in every race and social strata but there are also wonderful people as well, many who may be awaiting information regarding Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God and the Plan of God. The history of the United States of America is such that very often in the past people from the lowest classes of society have become honorable, virtuous, wonderful people. People from the slums and from the elite neighborhoods can be equally as honorable, virtuous and wonderful because their circumstances of life have nothing to do with it.

By treating the people God has sent to the United States to be evangelized poorly with intolerance and prejudice, because American missionary functions have failed, this arrogance has resulted in the United States receiving the 4<sup>th</sup> cycle of Divine Discipline, WHICH IN REALITY HE HAS ALREADY PUT THIS NATION UNDER. The majority of believers have lost the proper perspective and arrogance shows in the attitudes and prejudices they express but Impersonal Love which is manufactured in the [Power System of God](#) the Divine Dynasphere is the solution to this. If a believer or any person wants to be successful in his life and great in any area of life in the 21<sup>st</sup> century he must become tolerant and it must be genuine tolerance. The future holds greatness for those who develop and maintain Impersonal – Unconditional Love for Mankind who set aside their prejudices, intolerance and arrogance and begin to function within the Divine Dynasphere with Impersonal Love for all mankind.

Return to the [Table of Contents](#)

### **Gate #19 – The Arrogance of Rejection**

Rejection Arrogance invariably interlocks with [Iconoclastic Arrogance](#) and inevitably at some point someone is going to reject the believer and make it clear that they are rejecting him and they will rip off their mask of hypocrisy and tell him what they think he really is. Rejection is actually a combination 2 Arrogance Factors:

- **Passive Rejection** – The [Arrogance of Unhappiness](#), Subjective Preoccupation with Self
  - “I Hate YOU”, here the believer is the object of the statement and receives the action of the transitive verb HATE and in receiving this HATE he is under PASSIVE Rejection. This means he has been rejected and has received a rejection notice. Being rejected by others he is now the victim and he has either disappointed or [Disillusioned](#) someone who then rejects him. This rejection may be fair and justified or unfair and unjustified, that is it may be accurate or inaccurate, right or wrong but the fact is he has been rejected.
- **Active Rejection** – Iconoclastic Arrogance and [Role Model Arrogance](#), Subjective Preoccupation with Others
  - “I Hate YOU”, I is the subject and I reject another and I provide the rejection for them. In any association with people one will reject some and he may rotate his rejections liking them today and hating them tomorrow on and off but HE rejects others.

Outside of 2 exceptions, the victims are no longer innocent and whenever someone is rejected by anyone there is a reason for it and the rejection is a notice of a time for the victim’s self examination. Both passive and active rejection are related to Arrogance and both involve a fragmentation of one’s life with 2 exceptions:

- **Passive Rejection** – The humanity and deity of The Lord Jesus, The Christ were rejected during the dispensation of the Hypostatic Union.
  - People were rejecting perfect God and people were rejecting the perfect humanity of The Lord Jesus, The Christ and it was He in total innocence receiving rejection.
- **Active Rejection** – I Reject Jesus, The subject, the individual who rejects The Lord Jesus, The Christ is obviously involved in arrogance and entangled in a fragmented life in rejecting the humanity of the Lord, a perfect humanity, and the subject is obviously innocent.

The victim can be innocent as in the case of the humanity of the Lord Jesus, The Christ where he was rejected and it was prophesied. ([Is 53:3](#)) Sorrow and suffering as stated in [Is 53:3](#) comes to those who are innocent victims of rejection. ([Ps 118:22](#), [John 6:36](#), [John 6:47](#), [Luke 17:25](#)) During the last 3 hours of the crucifixion of The Lord Jesus, The Christ, his humanity was even rejected by God the Father because all Human Sins in the history of the Human Race were imputed to him and then Judged by God the Father in Jesus’ humanity. Therefore EVEN God the Father in providing for us this so great potential for Salvation Adjustment to the

Justice of God had to reject the perfect humanity of The Lord Jesus, The Christ ([1Pet2:20-24](#))

In v20, this person is rejected because he sinned and he was rejected with harsh treatment but the rejected person endures it with patience, SO WHAT, of what benefit or significance is this? Any time the believer is the innocent victim of rejection and handles it using the Assets of the Spiritual Life, the [10 Problem Solving Devices](#), the [4 Spiritual Skills](#), then he does so it as a part of the GRACE from God. Christians will be rejected because they are obnoxious or not obnoxious and sometime just because they are right. If the believer is rejected because of being a fragmented believer he is supposed to just pick himself up, rebound and keep moving in the Spiritual Life. If he is rejected because he is kind, and full of virtue he must use the GRACE provision of God to handle this rejection. Believers in this Church Age are *called in the Protocol Plan of God to be rejected* because they are honoring The Lord Jesus, The Christ by living in the [Divine Dynasphere](#) functioning under the constructed [Edification Complex of the Soul](#) and using the 10 Problem Solving Devices to live their lives as unto the Lord, thus using all of the invisible divine assets to function properly and effectively in the Christian Way of Life. Believers are commanded to follow in the footsteps of The Lord Jesus, The Christ when rejected and are innocent victims of passive rejection by using the 10 Problem Solving Devices with Grace Orientation being the specific solution mentioned.

Liberal theology has people acting like NIT WITS following some idea of pacifism and loving everyone with Human Good energy and doing this and that good deed for others. This is NOT following in the footsteps of The Lord Jesus, The Christ. The liberal believers always think they are the ones being rejected because of their greatness as believers. Whenever there is a reference in the New Testament Scripture to ONE, (1) single Problem Solving Device this includes the use of ALL 10 Problem Solving Devices. However, at the point of Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God the believer is not ready nor capable to even begin to use these until he makes [PROGRESS in the Spiritual Life](#). 1Peter chapter 2 gives reference to the believer as to HOW To handle rejection:

- ✧ Patience – Using the [Faith Rest Drill \(5 stages\)](#) Problem Solving Device #3
- ✧ Grace – [Grace Orientation](#), Problem Solving Device #4

When The Lord Jesus, The Christ was rejected it was not because he was Arrogant or sinful or involved with Evil in any way but because he was perfect and those who rejected him were sinners. He was rejected because of Satanic Motivation from EVIL and its influence on the people rejecting him. He was rejected because of entanglement of the people within the Interlocking System of Arrogance, Cosmic Dynasphere I. He also suffered as a Substitute for each and every human being in payment for OUR sins, thus on the cross he was rejected by Man and also by God in judgment for these sins. During his 33 years of life he never committed a sin and never engaged in any deceit yet in the arrogance of rejection there is always deceit in slander, maligning, gossip and judging of the innocent one rejected. Jesus did not trade insult for insult when rejected and he did not threaten retaliation for his unjust treatment but put the rejection in the hands of God the Father WHO JUDGES JUSTLY. The perfection of the humanity of The Lord Jesus, The Christ was even rejected by God the Father when He was being judged for our sins. ([Ps 22;1](#), [Matt 27:46](#)).

The functioning of 3 Problem Solving Devices are noted as being used by The Lord Jesus the Christ during the judgment of our sins in Him on the cross:

- The [Faith Rest Drill \(5 stages\)](#) ([1Pet 2:23](#)) Problem Solving Device #3
- The [Filling of God the Holy Spirit](#) ([Heb 9:14](#)) Problem Solving Device #2
  - The imputation and judgment of all human sins to The Lord Jesus, The Christ on the cross was the most awful suffering in the history of mankind and it was the Filling of God the Holy Spirit within the prototype [Divine Dynasphere](#) and maximum [Metabolized Bible Doctrine](#) in his Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul that sustained The Lord Jesus, The Christ during this judgment on the cross.
- [Sharing the Happiness of God](#) ([Heb 12:2](#)) Problem Solving Device #9
  - By this means he disregarded the shame of being judged for sins he did not commit.

The 1<sup>st</sup> and 10<sup>th</sup> Problem Solving Devices were never pertinent for The Lord Jesus, The Christ since he did not ever need rebound having never committed personal sin and he was totally occupied with Personal Love for God the Father and could not be occupied with his own person but He used every other Problem Solving Device.

### **Active Rejection**

In Active Rejection, the believer is the initiator or rejector and this rejection involves fragmentation of his life and nothing augments fragmentation like rejection. This is the believer rejecting Bible Doctrine. I HATE Bible Doctrine – The Subject does the rejecting and the object of the rejection is Bible Doctrine taught in an expository way from the pulpit of the Local Church. When the believer rejects Bible Doctrine in this way the rejector is wrong and he has pulled the pin of the Arrogance Grenade and entered into the fragmented life within Cosmic Dynasphere I the Interlocking System of Arrogance. The believer's Life MUST revolve around Perception, Cognition, Incultation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine especially the mystery Bible Doctrine of the Church Age. This, should be Priority #1 in his life, demanding daily consistent Post Salvation Epistemological Rehabilitation within the Divine Dynasphere. The believer who rejects Bible Doctrine often does so because of his being rejected by other Christians and this reaction at any level is Negative Volition toward Bible Doctrine which instantly puts him into Cosmic Dynasphere I and the [8 Stages of Reversionism](#).

### **Passive rejection**

In Passive Rejection the believer is the victim but too often this victim is already fragmented and deserves rejection. However, there is always the exception of the innocent victim like the humanity of The Lord Jesus, The Christ in the Hypostatic Union. In either case the fact is that nothing is more discouraging to the believer than rejection by other believers.

### **Areas of Rejection**

The believer can be rejected in many ways and in many areas of life such as:

- By peers
- By friends

- ✧ In romance
- ✧ In marriage
- ✧ In social life
- ✧ In business or professional life
- ✧ In Christian fellowship – church life.

Life is always complicated by reaction because this involves self fragmentation and reaction to anything in life causes self fragmentation. When the believer is rejected in passive rejection by those he loves, respects or admires he reacts by pulling the pin of the Arrogance Grenade and thus fragments his life. Sometimes the believer is rejected because he is living a fragmented life entangled within the Interlocking System of Arrogance, Cosmic Dynasphere I and impossible for anyone to be around. However, without regard to the cause or reason for rejection, reaction to rejection always results in fragmentation of one's own life or the intensification of an already fragmented life thus enhanced entanglement within the Cosmic Dynaspheres. The one who is innocent and rejected by others, being personally HURT or UPSET by this rejection is a subtle form of arrogance as a reaction and this results in fragmentation of one's own life. This opens the door for an interlocking with many areas of [Mental Attitude Arrogance](#) and [Iconoclastic Arrogance](#). This is the rejected person who associates his rejection with other Christians and thus reacts with [Negative Volition](#) toward Bible Doctrine. This rejected person also interlocks with [Self Righteous Arrogance](#) and [Authority Arrogance](#) and is deeply hurt by the rejection and thus also reacts with interlocking with the [Arrogance of Unhappiness](#) as total subjective preoccupation with self.

### **Causes of Rejection**

Rejection of the believer by mankind is designed by GOD for his ultimate blessing but rejection can be the result of one's:

- ✧ Acts of justice or injustice
- ✧ Kindness or cruelty
- ✧ Taking advantage of another who has had enough
- ✧ Dishonesty or deceitfulness
- ✧ Honesty or Integrity
- ✧ Using another under the guise of love or friendship, being a hypocrite
- ✧ Previous compatibility having soured and incompatibility set in
- ✧ Positive Volition toward Bible Doctrine or under Negative Volition toward Bible Doctrine.
- ✧ Romantic opposite number having found a better or more appealing partner rightly or wrongly.

For whatever reason one is rejected, the fact is that the rejection exists and it is ALWAYS AN OPPORTUNITY FOR BLESSING FROM GOD. In fact rejection by others is designed for the blessing of the advancing believer who is rejected.

### **Reasons for Rejection**

Many of these are antithetical concepts where:

- ✧ Some are kind, Some are cruel
- ✧ Some are honorable, some dishonorable
- ✧ Some are fair, some are unfair



- Some are right, some are wrong
- Some are honest, Some are dishonest

Whatever the reason for one being rejected by others, the point is that the believer is going to receive blessing from this rejection OR intensify and prolong the fragmentation of his own life in the Interlocking System of Arrogance all the way down through [Reversionism](#) to the [Sin Unto Death](#)? The only real question therefore is, will that believer end being fragmented in his life and entangled in Reversionism and the Interlocking System of Arrogance, Cosmic Dynasphere I or NOT?

### **MIS-Handling Rejection**

Rejection has many repercussions in one's own life but if it involves fragmentation under [Bitterness](#) it has terrible repercussions with regard to others in one's periphery. Reaction to Rejection produces a tragic flaw in the life of the believer and inevitably, when the rejected person reacts to this rejection, he will enter into the Interlocking System of Arrogance, Cosmic Dynasphere I with:

- [Mental Attitude Arrogance](#)
- [Negative Volition](#) toward Bible Doctrine as a result of rejection by Christians
- [Self Righteous Arrogance](#) against authority as well as from being deeply Hurt
- **Hatred, Implacability, Vindictiveness**
- [Iconoclastic Arrogance](#)
- [Role Model Arrogance](#).

### **The Solution to Rejection**

The only solution is IF one is fragmented as a result of rejection is to use the [Rebound Procedure](#) and Keep Moving forward by means of Post Salvation Epistemological Rehabilitation in the Christian Way of Life and IF he is not fragmented then LOOK for the blessing from the rejection. Whatever the reason for rejection IT IS ALWAYS an opportunity for blessing from God and is designed for the blessing of the believer victim. If one is at fault, the blessing comes from facing the reality of his failures or fragmented life and beginning recovery with rebound and consistent Post Salvation Epistemological Rehabilitation. If one is not at fault then he WILL receive Blessing especially if he is a mature believer or at least one who has reached Problem Solving Device #7, [Personal Love for God](#) and has developed this [Motivational Virtue](#) within the Divine Dynasphere. ([Rom 8:28](#))

For the believer who reacts to rejection there can be NO blessing and only a fragmented life. The rejected believer who reacts to rejection either enters into Reversionism and the Interlocking System of Arrogance at the point of rejection or has already entered the Interlocking System of Arrogance and that is why he has been rejected. The believer who uses the [10 Problem Solving Devices](#) when faced with rejection has a response rather than a reaction to rejection and the response is Thanksgiving. Thanksgiving always has its greatest manifestation of [Grace Orientation](#) during situations which are unpleasant. ([2Cor 4:15](#), [1Thes 5:18](#)) This is the ultimate winner's status when he is rejected. Rejection alerts the believer that he needs to change his perspective about life from PEOPLE emphasis to GOD emphasis in order to basically ignore the rejection of people. Most difficulties which occur as a result of

rejection are because believers have put people emphasis over God emphasis. Rejection therefore gives the positive advancing believer an opportunity for objective self examination, the opportunity to reevaluate his perspective. Rejection also gives the believer the opportunity to use the 10 Problem Solving Devices, especially the ones related directly to God:

- Grace Orientation
- Basic Personal Love for God
- Advanced Personal Love for God – Occupation with the Person of The Lord Jesus, The Christ

These will provide the believer with the realization that no one is perfect and every person has an Old Sin Nature and every Old Sin Nature **LIKES TO BE USED**. Therefore, the only perfection a person can ever know is the meager understanding of the Essence of God and magnificence of The Lord Jesus, The Christ in Hypostatic Union which comes from consistent Post Salvation Epistemological Rehabilitation from Perception, Cognition, Inculcation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine. Rejection gives the positive believer the opportunity to use the Rebound Procedure and move rapidly back under the Filling of God the Holy Spirit and status of living in the **Divine Dynasphere**. There he can then function under the **10 Problem Solving Devices** using the Faith Rest Drill (5 stages) to get back to Grace Orientation and Bible Doctrine Orientation in order to exercise his Personal Love for God and Impersonal Love for Mankind as **Motivational and Functional Virtue** applied to his being rejected. He can then use his inner happiness and contentment of Problem Solving Device #9, Sharing the Happiness of God and realize he has a Personal Sense of Destiny and has been elected into a predetermined plan and functions under Advanced Personal Love for God as Occupation with the Person of The Lord Jesus, The Christ so that rejection by others is truly **MEANINGLESS TO HIM**. However, not all of these Problem Solving Devices are available in the Spiritual Life until the believer reaches Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God but each will have a progressive deployment and level of function IF the believer is consistent in his spiritual advancement.

Rejection whether Fair or Unfair is a TEST for one's Spiritual Life and any test for the Spiritual Life is designed to accelerate the momentum of spiritual growth toward **Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God** and becoming an invisible hero. The issue is not fairness or unfairness regarding rejection and if one makes that the issue then he will pull the pin of the Arrogance Grenade and enter into the Interlocking System of Arrogance. This Fragmentation of the life of the believer occurs in the Cosmic Dynasphere Systems where God the Holy Spirit is Grieved or Quenched and the believer is failing in the Christian Way of Life. There is no way one can use Divine Problem Solving Devices under the Grieving or Quenching of God the Holy Spirit because using the Problem Solving Devices requires the power from the Filling of God the Holy Spirit. The only Problem Solving Device available in this situation is the Rebound Procedure, **(1John 1:9)** which is a PROCEDURE for the believer to instantly regain the Filling of God the Holy Spirit and the use of the remaining Problem Solving Devices. The Spiritual Life occurs within the Divine Dynasphere where the believer is under the Filling of God the Holy Spirit and walking by means of the power from God the Holy Spirit. The Filling of God the Holy Spirit and residence inside the Divine Dynasphere are the bases for the Principles needed to respond properly whenever one is rejected.

## **The Breath of the Spiritual Life**

The Filling of God the Holy Spirit is LIKE breathing and is analogous to breathing. Either one is breathing or is DEAD. Either one is in the Divine Dynasphere under Gate #1, the Filling of God the Holy Spirit, or is outside the Plan of God in the Cosmic Dynaspheres, the Plan of Satan. In Cosmic Dynasphere I, one is grieving God the Holy Spirit and being out of fellowship in carnality under Operational Death therefore NOT breathing. In Cosmic Dynasphere II one is quenching God the Holy Spirit and actively antagonistic to God and again NOT breathing. **Therefore the believer certainly must understand that physical LIFE and physical DEATH are mutually exclusive and that he is either ALIVE and BREATHING or DEAD and NOT BREATHING. If he is dead he is not alive and if he is alive he is not dead! Spirituality, the Spiritual Life, is like LIFE and DEATH and is an absolute and being spiritual is mutually exclusive from being non-spiritual. EITHER one's soul is under the control of God the Holy Spirit or one is Carnal and under the control of his Old Sin Nature. These are mutually exclusive and there are NO degrees of spirituality. Therefore, Spirituality is NOT relative and when believers make spirituality relative it results in very few executing the Protocol Plan of God and as a result their being unable to RESPOND to rejection by always reacting to rejection and fragmenting their own life.** One's state of fragmentation and living in the Cosmic Dynaspheres is analogous to the cessation of breathing. The ONLY recovery for the believer who has stopped breathing in the Spiritual Life is the CPR (Christian Procedural Rebound) of the Spiritual Life, the Rebound Procedure and to then keep breathing in Bible Doctrine through Post Salvation Epistemological Rehabilitation. The principle is that the believer MUST NOT hold his breath whenever he is rejected for any reason.

If one's rejection is related to his own failures by entrance into the Interlocking System of Arrogance then he must instantly engage in emergency CPR, (Christian Procedural Rebound) in order to regain his breathing capability under the Filling of God the Holy Spirit. Rejection therefore becomes a fantastic opportunity for the positive believer to engage in Self Evaluation and a chance to dive deeply into the learning process and learn from one's mistakes, a chance to accelerate advance and press toward the high ground of Spiritual Maturity. Rejection is a chance to ENHANCE both Enforced and Genuine Humility at Gate #3 the [Authority Envelope](#) of the Divine Dynasphere.

### **Categories of Rejection:**

Rejection of a person, where the rejection by others is of someone who one is very close to, and results in, when in association with that rejected person, one potentially entering into secondary Arrogance as a reaction to this. Secondary Arrogance is one entering into and becoming involved in the Interlocking System of Arrogance because the person whom one loves or is closely associated with has been rejected and he has reacted to THEIR being rejected by others. Thus he enters into the Interlocking System of Arrogance because of rejection INDIRECTLY related to him but he still fragments his own life.

One cannot become subjective about people without becoming subjective about Bible Doctrine. As a result one will distort Bible Doctrine to justify loved ones when they are rejected thereby entering into a condition where he sides with the one rejected, and himself rejects and possibly

maligns the rejector thus entering into the Interlocking System of Arrogance and fragmenting his own life. This destroys the possibility of either he and / or his loved one recovering and simultaneously puts himself in jeopardy of perpetuation of a fragmented LIFE. Intensification of Fragmentation is the potential when rejection occurs and leads to interlocking more deeply into and becoming more irrecoverably entangled in the Interlocking System of Arrogance at many levels. There is potentially also an intrusion of [Transference Arrogance](#) at the point of Rejection where the believer is antagonistic toward the Rejector and then whatever flaws he may have he attributes to the rejector. This results in whatever hypocrisy exists in his life being moved to the rejector naming him the Hypocrite. To the extent he is a coward he then attributes this cowardice to the Rejector. To the extent one is deceitful he then attributes deceit to his rejector. To the extent he is a snob (involved in some [Self Righteous Arrogance](#) or other arrogance flaw) he maligns the rejector by attributing snobbery to him. This means that this believer will not grow in the Spiritual Life until he breaks out of this pattern through the use of the CPR (Christian Procedural Rebound) of the Spiritual Life and then keeps moving forward in the Spiritual Life with consistent Post Salvation Epistemological Rehabilitation back to Objectivity and Grace Orientation. The believer reacting to rejection will transfer to the rejector the fragments of his own life and his own tragic flaws to justify himself under the [Arrogance Skills](#).

Failure to pass the rejection testing of primary personal rejection or secondary loved one rejection will consolidate the fragmentation of one's life with deep entanglement in the Interlocking System of Arrogance along with permanent personality changes. These permanent personality changes are what occurs in [Eph 4:14](#) as (gr) NEPIOS – childish, meaning being an adult with the end of any growth in life and inability to mature as a person or as a believer in the Spiritual Life because of fragmentation in the life. (gr) “Nepios” is being saturated in the Cosmic Dynaspheres and coming to a dead end in the Spiritual Life and never being able to reach Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and become an invisible hero and never being able to glorify God because of an inability to execute the Protocol Plan of God. This permanent personality change causes one's flaws to become a permanent part of his life. The resultant fragments of his life are thus never removed by the Rebound Procedure. This believer may be saturated with [Mental Attitude Arrogance](#) toward the rejector and then these become permanent flaws in his life. He may not be overtly displaying the characteristics of Mental Attitude Arrogance all the time but every time something does not go his way these flaws will pop to the surface in his inevitable reaction to the situation. The people who know this believer well will then be cautious to NOT offend him and will invariably stop their interactions with him. HE will be the Loser and there will no longer be the honest interaction between him and those he loves. His life will change so he will become saturated with [Self Pity](#) or [Self Righteous Arrogance](#) and frustrated by interlocking with [Unrealistic Expectations](#). He will become a chronic complainer interlocking with [Complaining Arrogance](#) and people out of courtesy will stand by and listen to his whining and complaining but make it a point to NOT come back his way. He will constantly add trying to always get his way becoming a manipulator of everyone in his periphery by trying to make people feel guilty about his situation.

Manipulators are always trying to change those around them and never understand that ONE CANNOT CHANGE ANYONE ELSE BECAUSE ONE CAN ONLY CHANGE HIMSELF AND ONE CAN ONLY CHANGE SELF FOR THE BETTER THROUGH BIBLE DOCTRINE. Unfortunately many take in Bible Doctrine but are totally subjective and when hearing Bible Doctrine and think “that SOB should have been here to hear this one”. This is a totally fragmented life with a lack of objectivity, lack of [Humility](#) and no teachability. The believer reacting to rejection can become a delicate flower, being hurt and withdraw and wilt, yet there is no authorization to, nor any reason to, wilt since as long as the believer is alive God has a plan and a purpose for his life and he is in this plan FOR BETTER OR WORSE! There is no reason nor justification in the Plan of God for Self Pity Arrogance and wilting under rejection. Some people have not been hurt for many years, yet they still think about when they were hurt and complain about it. The change of personality which results from rejection can ultimately cause interlocking with [Psychopathic Arrogance](#). This person avoids reality and retreats into fantasy, hallucination and delusion and as a weak person they seek to control the strong in this state of unreality. They very often will try to manipulate the strong through the threat of their rejection of them. This threat of Rejection tries to impose a false motivation on them but strong individuals will reject this false motivation and NEVER acquiesce to the threat but the weak individual will. If the strong individual acquiesces to this false motivation from the potential of being rejected they then become WEAK which reduces the strong to the level of weakness which is identical to the weakness of the manipulator who is ALWAYS a WEAK person. Anyone who can be manipulated by the threat of rejection is then reduced to the lowest level of weakness possible in their fragmented life. One cannot live in the past and cannot base his life on the fact that someone has at some time rejected him. If he allows this to be the basis for his life he is a fragmented person and will at some point become a manipulator of others. Any time one can get someone to do what he wants them to do just as legalistic Christians always do, these others will be reduced to his level of weakness. This reduces the new Christian to the level of weakness of the Legalistic Christian and has nothing to do with the Christian Way of Life. As long as one becomes involved in legalism as a result of the threat of rejection by other Christians, they will be as weak as the manipulators. This does not apply to parents controlling their children and any rejection of parental authority is one of the GREATEST disasters in Life for a child.

In Active Rejection where the believer is the one who is rejecting another, he becomes the rejector and rejects often because he is a victim of slander, gossip, maligning and judging. This is the one category of sin which will cause others to lose objectivity and CANNOT ever be tolerated in the Local Church. In active rejection the believer often rejects because:

- ✧ Of intrusion on his organized life
  - He is very often protecting his sanity and the organization of his properly oriented life.
- ✧ He is fragmented
- ✧ He is incompatible
- ✧ He is tired of nagging and bullying by others
- ✧ He is tired of interference in his life
- ✧ Metabolized Bible Doctrine has given him a different viewpoint of life not shared by his



friends.

However, as a believer in The Lord Jesus, The Christ, whether one is a winner or loser he will never be rejected by God. ([Deut 1:6](#), [Deut 31:8](#), [Heb 13:5](#))

Return to the [Table of Contents](#)

### **Gate #20 – The Arrogance of Emotion**

Paul was always concerned that believers in this Church Age would fail to understand and appreciate why they were here and therefore lose out in this Spiritual Life and life in general. He gives these [Loser Believers](#) a title of “Enemies of the Cross”. Of all those who could be considered to be enemies of the cross believers would never be thought to be in this category. This is however at least 90-95% of believers in the United States of America under the stipulations given in scripture. These believers will invariably leave this earth under the [Sin Unto Death](#) Divine Discipline but they may not be taken out of this life quickly but live a LONG life in order to train advancing [WINNER believers](#). There are areas of involvement in Cosmic Dynasphere I, the Interlocking System of Arrogance and in Cosmic Dynasphere II, the Interlocking System of Antagonistic Emotional Hatred which are a great distraction to the Spiritual Life and help to produce these losers. One such area involves [Emotion out of control](#), which in addition is a devastating stage of Reversionism. There is normal emotion related to things one appreciates about life which are not related to sin, however, there is also an Emotional Complex of Antagonism and Hatred toward God, Cosmic Dynasphere II, which can totally distract from and completely destroy the Spiritual Life by interlocking with Emotional Arrogance. ([Ps 56:3-4](#))

Fear is the predominant emotional sin and is a SYSTEM of sinning in itself. The solution to Fear is found in the [Faith Rest Drill \(5 stages\)](#), Problem Solving Device #3 and developing and deploying a [Personal Sense of Destiny](#), Problem Solving Device #6. In addition there is [Bible Doctrine Orientation](#), Problem Solving Device #5 as a result of consistent function under the [Grace Apparatus for Perception](#), Operation Z bringing the believer to the point of recognizing the absolute necessity of Bible Doctrine in his life. These and the other basic Problem Solving Devices along with reaching the point of having [Personal Love for God](#), Problem Solving Device #7, which is the primary [Motivational Virtue](#) in the Spiritual Life are part of the solution to Fear. These and all the Problem Solving Devices prevent the outside pressures of life either Adversity or Prosperity from becoming the inside pressures of [STRESS in the soul](#).

In the [2nd stage](#) of the Faith Rest Drill (5 stages), a simple command which is absolutely essential for any believer to become spiritually self sustaining is “DO NOT Fear” ([Heb 13:5-6](#)) which is a prerequisite to the [3rd stage](#) and [4th stage](#) which require reverse concentration on Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul. Fear, as an emotional sin and part of the Interlocking System of Arrogance and Interlocking System of Antagonistic Emotional Hatred and a stage deep in the process of [Reversionism](#), cannot cope with any situation in life.

Fear can only increase weakness and cowardice resulting in irrationality and TOTAL failure to exploit the Grace of God. Therefore, Fear opens the way for all other aspects of [Motivational Arrogance](#) as [Mental Attitude Arrogance](#) and Sins in every category leading to deeper entanglement in the Interlocking System of Arrogance. Selfcenteredness along with its [Self Pity](#) must be canceled out of the thinking in order to overcome Fear. No believer can comply with doctrinal principles and commands as long as he entertains Fear in the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of his Soul. Fear is an Emotional Mental Attitude Sin of Motivational Arrogance. As a result of Fear, Self Righteousness and Self Pity lead to Discouragement.

There are dogmatic principles, postulates related to Fear:

- ✧ The more things in life one surrenders to Fear, the more things he will Fear in life and #1 is Fear of death.
- ✧ The extent to which one surrenders to Fear, to that extent his capacity for Fear is increased.
- ✧ The greater one's capacity for Fear the more he will fall apart in disaster and the more he will increase the power of Fear in his life.
- ✧ The more things which acquire the power of Fear in one's life the greater is his QUANTUM leap into his breakdown under the outside pressures of life while he ignores the use of the [Problem Solving Devices](#).

When the believer does not have the 10 Problem Solving Devices on the [Forward Line of Troops](#) of the soul he will convert the outside pressures of life into the inside pressures of [STRESS in the soul](#). As a result one of the first distractions to come along is Fear. Many Christians who become involved in any form of [ACTIVISM](#) do so based on Fear. Fear that the world will end if man does not change, Fear that pollution will kill them, Fear that some obscure animal or plant will become extinct and as a result interfere in some OBSCURE way with the future of mankind. Fear that some virus will kill all people, and many other idiotic ideas which invariably [REJECT](#) the Plan of God and purpose for the existence of mankind. Believers under Positive Volition to Bible Doctrine should constantly recognize that their blessing comes from the Justice of God through the Righteousness of God motivated by the Love of God and it is totally unnecessary to enter into this type of distraction from the Spiritual Life. Fear is a roadblock resulting in development of [Scar Tissue of the Soul](#) and thus preventing any Metabolized Bible Doctrine from circulating in the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul. Eventually choking it out and erasing it from the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul as a result of reaching the state of [Blackout of the Soul](#) and then building this Scar Tissue of the Soul. ([2Tim 1:7](#)) Every believer has the potential to use the 2 Power Options of the Spiritual Life, the [Filling of God the Holy Spirit](#) and [Metabolized Bible Doctrine](#) in the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul, as his solution to all categories of emotional distraction especially Fear. The Motivational Virtue and Functional Virtue involving [Virtue Love](#) is another set of solutions as part of the mature Problem Solving Devices for the believer including [Personal Love for God](#), [Impersonal – Unconditional Love for Mankind](#) and [Occupation with the Person of The Lord Jesus, The Christ](#). Sound Judgment brings the believer back to the [Spiritual Skills](#) and therefore the answer and solution to the emotional complex. Unfortunately no one is able to distinguish between sinful emotion and

normal emotion until they have reached some stage of [Spiritual Adulthood](#) and are moving toward or are in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God.

The Arrogance of Emotion results from the irrationality which occurs when Emotion in a person dominates the soul in [Emotional Revolt of the Soul](#), superseding his rational thinking from the Right Lobe. When one's soul is dominated by emotion without responding to Absolute Truth he is automatically a slave in his soul and it is just a matter of which historical trend will sweep him up into some form of overt physical slavery. Aberrant emotion occurs in several categories:

- **Hysterical emotion** of Fear, worry, anxiety, etc
- **Antagonistic emotion** of hatred, vindictiveness, revenge up to and including murder
- **Reaction emotion** the combining of the Motivational Arrogance of Jealousy Bitterness etc., with Emotional Arrogance and such sins as hatred, malice, vindictiveness, etc.
- **Self absorbed emotion** which draws strength from another's emotion directed toward one which results from causing other people to get into pseudo compassion caused by one's unreasonable attitudes, hypersensitive annoyance, etc.
- **Guilt emotion** where it is assumed that guilt is necessary for rebound and must be accompanied with emotional feelings of culpability starting with self manipulation where vulnerability to guilt begins and leads to vulnerability to restitutionalism.

This individual is incapable of functioning in the [Divine Dynasphere](#) and lives in Cosmic Dynasphere I, the Interlocking System of Arrogance or Cosmic Dynasphere II, the Interlocking System of Antagonistic Emotional Hatred. Knowledge is the requirement for the environment of thinking not emotion and Bible Doctrine is the knowledge for the environment of decisions never emotion. Saturated controlling emotion converts reality into illusion and hallucination and fantasizes and collapses when put under pressure. The Emotion cannot and was not designed to control the soul and when it does it destroys the thinking process. It is the basis for initiating addictive involvement with Drugs, Alcohol, and functions such as the Tongues Movement. Emotion is designed as a responder to the Right or Dominant Lobe of the soul and must NEVER control the soul and furthermore, emotion has NO VIRTUE but it is truly virtue dependent. Negative emotion is that form of abnormal emotion which dominates the soul and replaces the Absolute Truths of Bible Doctrine and any portion of the Laws of Divine Establishment or Divine Institutions with bleeding heart do good liberalism from Human Viewpoint thinking based on the LIE from Evil. Believers in this Church Age have the freedom to make decisions where wise decisions open options for future decisions while unwise or wrong decisions result in a limitation of options and thus close down options for future decisions. Believers cannot make good decisions under the influence of Evil within the systems of Arrogance since making good decisions requires thought from the influence Grace of based on Virtue derived from the Absolute Truth of Bible Doctrine. If one makes decisions based on thinking Truth they will be good decisions and open great options. If one's decisions are based on the LIE and emotion lacking thought from truth, then he will not be able to think since emotion does not think. These decisions will have been influenced by the LIE based on Evil involved in Arrogance and they will close down options and he will inevitably have a miserable life until he dies. Emotion which dominates the soul erases and replaces the thinking regarding

the Truths of Bible Doctrine or any part of the Laws of Divine Establishment or Divine Institutions with the LIE from the Doctrines of Demons based totally on Evil. Emotion is normal only when subordinated under the authority of the discipline of proper thought. This is just the same as volition which must be under both human authority from the Laws of Divine Establishment and divine authority from Bible Doctrine. People without integrity substitute emotion and Arrogance for that thought and Virtue. It always sounds good when another is very emotional about one, about anything for that matter, but this will sooner or later fade to obscurity under Arrogance.

The superimposition of the stupidities and frailties of mankind onto God and preaching these from the pulpit results in stimulating emotion in the believer. This emotion leads directly into the Interlocking System of Arrogance as [Motivational Arrogance](#) especially through [Bitterness](#) which is a great system of Arrogance from Evil. God never promotes [Jealous](#) believers because Jealousy is terrible Arrogance leading to bitterness which results in complete degeneration of the Spiritual Life. One cannot react to people, when he does he lowers himself to their level of dysfunction, this invariably results from a lack of understanding and metabolization of Bible Doctrine. Arrogance has no sense of responsibility and feels only responsible to self thinking only in terms of self and acting only in relationship to self without even a trace of a sense of honor or integrity regarding anything else.

A [Mental Attitude Arrogance](#) followed by [Iconoclastic Arrogance](#) results in [Evil Obsession](#) and bad emotion as [Emotional Revolt of the Soul](#). Bad Emotion is:

- ✧ Emotion out of Control
- ✧ Emotion divorced from Doctrine
- ✧ Emotional Revolt of the Soul, Stage 4 of Reversionism
- ✧ Interlocking System of Antagonistic Emotional Hatred Involvement
- ✧ Emotional Sins + Arrogance Sins forming Evil Obsession and hybrid emotion.

Bad emotion is divorced from reality so that the Believer sees the problems in his life but never the solutions. Bad emotion is also pseudo compassion & pseudo love, along with [Christian Activism](#), and other arrogant involvements. Bad emotion builds allegations that certain spiritual gifts such as “speaking in tongues” or “miraculous healing” are still extant in this age instead of recognizing that these gifts have been removed long ago having fulfilled the purpose for their existence. All of this should result in the positive believer having the strong realization of the ELATIVE principle that in all the problems of Life Divine Solutions are the Only Solutions and Human Solutions are NO Solutions at all. In the use of the [Rebound Procedure](#) there is no place for emotion but only for the clear concepts of thinking which result in decisions, not ever emotion.

### **Emotional Revolt of the Soul & Psychopathic Arrogance**

Normally the emotion is under domination and control of the Intellect of the Mentality of the Soul. In the normal person the emotional life blends with the intellectual life so as to NOT disrupt a normal Modus Operandi. In the [Psychopathic](#) person this normal subordination of Emotion to the Intellect is NOT present because of this individual having pulled the pin of the

Arrogance Grenade, fragmented his life by entanglement into the Interlocking System of Arrogance. This requires Arrogance CULTIVATED over a prolonged period of time even AS A CHRISTIAN. Some unbelievers enter Christianity with psychopathic distortions in their souls and some Christians develop these tendencies AFTER becoming a Christian. As a result of emotion out of control, the psychopathic believer lacks the ability to evaluate realistically the objects of his emotional responses or reactions.

### **Emotional Revolt as Irrational Arrogance**

The Interlocking System of Arrogance, the entire system generally, is a system of thinking first, it begins with the **Motivational Arrogance** of **Mental Attitude Arrogance**. People react to their circumstances whether local or global with their emotion because of their inevitably interlocking the many aspects of Mental Attitude Arrogance and its Mental Attitude Sins as Motivational Arrogance and Degeneracy. Both rational and irrational arrogance are involved with processes of thinking so that when emotion is involved in a reaction to circumstances this is Irrational Arrogance. Irrational Arrogance is much more predominate today and is synonymous with Emotional Arrogance and is the antithesis of Rational Arrogance. Emotional or Irrational Arrogance uses one's FEELINGS or emotions as the criterion for life instead of Bible Doctrine. In Emotional or Irrational Arrogance, Emotion becomes dominate in the soul rather than responding to the mentality as a result of **Emotional Revolt of the Soul** as the believer moves through the stages of Reversionism. Characteristics of Emotion include:

- ↗ A responder, reflector and appreciator of the thinking in a person
- ↗ The feeling reflexes of the soul
- ↗ The system of feeling and response in the soul which contains:
  - No ability to reason
  - No content of Thought
  - No Bible Doctrine as criteria
  - No common sense
  - No vocabulary as a tool for mental functions
- ↗ NEVER being the criterion for Christian experience

There are 5 categories of Arrogance & **Emotional Sins** which destroy the ability of one to protect family, home and loved ones effectively and involve the blotting out of Bible Doctrine through emotional reactions:

- ↗ **Fear**
- ↗ Worry
- ↗ Anxiety
- ↗ Loss of Self Control
- ↗ Hatred

These emotional reactions means one will inevitably deviate from doing anything correctly in the function of arms because of anger, inordinate violence, loss of professional ability and end up with a saturation of **Self Pity** which causes one to sit and die somewhere thinking only of self. This is Subjective Arrogance, a reaction, and **Guilt Complex** function.

This is emotion in the soul revolting against the mentality of the soul when the Old Sin Nature



is in control of the soul and thus dominating the thinking. Normally the emotion is to be a responder to the Mentality of the soul based on the content of Memory, Categories of information, Norms and Standards and Frame of Reference priorities. As the responder in the soul the emotion is devoid of thought and thought content, lacking rationales and common sense having no ability to reason. When emotion controls the soul the believer cannot think, rationalize or reason things out nor think in terms of common sense or Bible Doctrine and certainly cannot apply Bible Doctrine. Emotion has no vocabulary, no thought, and absolutely no Bible Doctrine. There are some areas of Arrogance involvement which require constant emotional stimulation and these include many aspects and ramifications including:

- Drug Addiction
- Alcoholism
- Sexual Interaction or Addiction
- Anything requiring NO THOUGHT but which stimulates FEELINGS

Therefore Emotional Arrogance eliminates thinking and substitutes feeling and as with all Arrogance, involves total preoccupation with self. When emotion controls the soul it always destroys the ability to think and when Arrogance gives precedence to emotion and how one feels the result is acceptance of false doctrine or distortions of true Bible Doctrine. One of the first principles of Bible Doctrine that the believer under Emotional Arrogance rejects is that of Eternal Security and he often thinks, “I must not be saved because I don’t FEEL saved”. Emotional Arrogance converts reality into illusion and eventually delusion and thus it will inevitably collapse under pressure. Emotional Arrogance results in soul malfunctions during exposure to Bible Doctrine. ([2Cor 6:11-12](#)) Emotional Arrogance is the source of dissension and apostasy in the local church ([Rom 16:17-18](#)) and because these believers do not obey the mandates of the Plan of God they do not develop and possess the basic virtues of Enforced and Genuine Humility. Humility is the State of thinking dominating the soul while Arrogance is the state of emotion dominating the soul. These become the Cosmic Dynasphere Evangelists who deceive many other believers with their flattery. [Phil 3:18](#) tells us that the Emotional Arrogance of the believer inevitably makes him an enemy of the Cross as he moves into involvement in Cosmic Dynasphere II. This points to the reality that the believer who spends consistent time in the Interlocking System of Arrogance will eventually move into being Antagonistic to God under the Arrogance functions of Cosmic Dynasphere I enhanced within Cosmic Dynasphere II the Interlocking System of Antagonistic Emotional Hatred.

### Results of Irrational Arrogance

Diametrically opposite or antithetical functions or characteristics appear in the person involved with Irrational Arrogance so that courageous persons become cowardly and frightened. Cowardice is an abnormal function resulting from emotion dominating the soul and lack of THINKING under pressure. Whereas Courage is the ability to THINK under pressure. Emotional Arrogance is therefore vulnerable to cowardice because when emotion is dominating the soul the believer has no rational thought processes especially when under intensive pressures in life. The believer under emotional arrogance is vulnerable to flattery, motivated by irresponsibility, dominated by Fear and this results in his behavior becoming psychopathic or sociopathic. A perfect illustration of Irrational Arrogance is the Tongues Movement where the

believer is functioning totally from his emotion under the influence of Evil. When Emotional Arrogance produces personality disturbances, including psychopathic or neurotic disorders, Arrogance tries to deal with the pressures of life but instead of resolving the pressures in life it manufactures GREAT STRESS in the soul from Fear and Anxiety. Emotional Arrogance cannot handle Fear and anxiety and as a result phobic, obsessive compulsive and depressive reactions result from the irrationality of this Arrogance. Emotional Arrogance has illusion, hallucinations and fantasizing as the only means of coping with stress and pressure in life so that ALL decisions made from emotion are decisions made from a position of weakness.

The criterion for Christianity only comes from Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul which is a system of Theology related to Reason. Emotion being a system of feeling is never an issue in the Spiritual Life because HOW a believer feels about things does not determine his Christian status quo. Emotion thus becomes a major distraction to the execution of the Protocol Plan of God. The function of emotionalism out of control in [Emotional Revolt of the Soul](#) with the emotion controlling the soul under the influence of Evil and control of the Old Sin Nature has completely deluded MILLIONS of Christians. This is WHY the United States of America as a client nation to God in 1985 was in the 3<sup>rd</sup> cycle of Divine Discipline and today in 2024, almost 40 years later, is now either at the end of the 4<sup>th</sup> cycle or has entered the 5<sup>th</sup> cycle of Divine Discipline from which there can be NO RECOVERY. Preoccupation with Self in Arrogance enjoys substituting Emotional Stimulation for Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul. Emotional, Irrational Arrogance rejects the [4R's of Operation Z](#), the Grace Apparatus for Perception. In Emotional, Irrational Arrogance the person is not saved unless he feels saved whereas, Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God is based totally on faith alone in the Substitutionary Spiritual Death of The Lord Jesus, The Christ alone and how the person feels at the time is inconsequential. ([John 3:16](#)) FAITH as a system of perception is a nonmeritorious function of the Intellect NOT a function of Emotion. Spiritual Death includes spiritual brain death so that when the gospel is presented to the unbeliever there is NO WAY he can actually understand it because he has NO HUMAN SPIRIT to receive it. God the Holy Spirit providing 'Common Grace' substitutes as a Human Spirit making the gospel understandable when some aspect of it is accurately presented. Then through [Operation Z](#) the gospel is either accepted for Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God or Rejected in unbelief. The point and mechanics of salvation REQUIRES a nonmeritorious decision of faith and when this occurs God the Holy Spirit also takes that faith, providing 'Efficacious Grace', and makes it effective for Salvation. Emotion, how one FEELS, therefore, has nothing to do with Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God and the emotion of the unbeliever is blinded to everything pertaining to the gospel and only through the work of God the Holy Spirit providing 'Common and Efficacious Grace' to the individual's intellect can even his faith be made effective for Salvation. Then at the instant of making Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God, God the Holy Spirit creates a new Human Spirit for the imputation of Eternal Life from God. Nothing which involves human merit or ability can be part of that which God uses to provide salvation and Eternal Life for the individual because spiritually dead creatures have **ABSOLUTELY NO MERITORIOUS ASPECTS IN THEIR BEING WHICH WOULD APPEAL TO GOD.** A believer may have an emotional response to being saved but this is NOT the means of salvation.

How the believer feels in his Christian Life also has nothing to do with it and what actually matters in the Christian Way of Life is always only what the Word of God says. Thus things of the Christian Way of Life may bring an emotional response or NOT. Emotion in the individual can certainly be a stimulus for action:

- ✧ Good emotion is designed to respond to what one thinks and enjoys providing appreciation
- ✧ Abnormal emotion is an impulsive function related to the Interlocking System of Arrogance

Emotional Stress causes a person to act Irrationally on his impulses rather than by the application of Truth from Metabolized Bible Doctrine, including the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions, from his thinking soul so that:

- ✧ Fear causes Flight,
- ✧ Disgust causes Repulsion
- ✧ Anger causes Violence

Emotion is related to human power and influence but NEVER to divine power in the Church Age. Believers in the Cosmic Dynaspheres with fragmented lives have 4 significant emotional functions which provide 4 ways to fragment one's life with Irrational Emotional Arrogance:

- ✧ Making a GOD of their own emotions. ([Phil 3:18-19](#))
- ✧ Distracting the believer from the execution of the Protocol Plan of God. ([Rom 16:17-18](#))
- ✧ Emotional, Irrational Arrogance hinders Perception, Cognition, Incultation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine, Post Salvation Epistemological Rehabilitation. ([2Cor 6:11-12](#))
- ✧ Irrational Arrogance makes Emotion the criterion for the Christian Way of Life. ([Phil 3:18-19](#))

### Irrational Emotional Arrogance Distortions

- ✧ It is vulnerable to flattery because flattery causes unreality related to SELF.
- ✧ It encourages Fear since it cannot think under pressure
- ✧ It produces personality disturbances of psycho-neurotic disorders
- ✧ It has no vocabulary and no ability to think and thus no Problem Solving capabilities
- ✧ It can only make wrong decision from a position of weakness.

This is the FRAGMENTED LIFE of entanglement in the Interlocking System of Arrogance under Emotional Arrogance and Emotional Revolt of the Soul in Reversionism.

### Categories of Emotional Sinning

There are several OVERLAPPING and INTERLOCKING categories of emotional sinning and when one entertains any of these he MUST rebound and recover. Failure to recover results in Fear, worry, anxiety, consternation, shock, irrationality and much more.

#### The Hysteria Category

- ✧ Fear
- ✧ Worry
- ✧ Panic
- ✧ Consternation

- Anxiety
- Irrationality
- Dislocation

This results in the buildup of Garbage in the subconscious and is the antithesis of execution of the Spiritual Life. This category eventuates in a build up of [Scar Tissue of the Soul](#) in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul which prevents the Perception, Cognition, Incultation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine. Fear completely represents the emotional complex of sins in many passages of scripture. ([Deut 31:6+8](#), [Is 35:3-4](#), [Is 41:10](#)) This aberrant emotion is a tremendous distraction to the Spiritual Life. This Fear is, in the sense of its controlling the life and distracting from life, what is truly important to avoid.

### [The Dissociation Category](#)

This is withdrawal from Bible Doctrine and living life entangled in the Interlocking System of Arrogance and Interlocking System of Antagonistic Emotional Hatred complexes and Includes:

- Anger
- Hatred
- [Bitterness](#)
- [Jealousy](#)
- Loathing
- Animosity
- Vulnerability to real or imagined insults or injury
- Implacability
- Malice
- Tantrums
- Irrational Violence
- Murder (the worst of all overt sins)

Many of these are very often excusable before the system of common law in society.

### [The Egocentric or Self Centered Category](#)

This is arrogant preoccupation with self, entanglement in the Arrogance Skills with focus on ones own welfare to the exclusion of reality with the strongest drive focused on fulfilling one's desires and includes:

- [Self Justification](#)
- [Self Deception](#)
- [Self Absorption](#)
- [Self Righteous Arrogance](#)
- [Egotistical Irrationality](#)
- Insensitivity about others and [Hypersensitivity](#) about self
- [Maladaptive Defense Mechanisms](#) including:
  - Projection
  - Denial
- [Self Pity](#)
- Sniveling
- Self centered preoccupation with self

- Sinful dissatisfaction
- Vilification
- Irritation
- Annoyance from hypersensitivity
- Subjective overthinking
- Whining and [Complaining](#)
- Malice

Malice is a big part of this category because it becomes an incredible LUST from the Old Sin Nature to inflict injury or suffering on others. The whole emphasis of the 3<sup>rd</sup> category of emotional sins is the function of the Arrogance Skills. This is where the Arrogance skills interact and interlock with the Emotional Complex of Sins and [Reversionism](#) and therefore emotional sins being related to the Arrogance Skills becomes a fantastic distraction to the Spiritual Life from which many people never recover.

### [The Reaction or Antagonism Category](#)

This is the inevitable interaction and interlocking of the Interlocking System of Antagonistic Emotional Hatred with the Interlocking System of Arrogance and includes:

- [Jealousy](#)
- [Bitterness](#)
- Vindictiveness
- Vilification
- Vituperation
- Implacability
- [Revenge Modus Operandi](#)
- [Inordinate Ambition](#)
- [Inordinate Competition](#)
- Hatred
- Anger
- Resentment
- Loathing
- Animosity
- [Projection](#)
- Tantrums
- Violence
- Murder
- Malice again

The key to this interlocking relationship between the Arrogance and Hatred systems is Malice. At this point the believer is totally distracted from the Spiritual Life and looking for answers totally apart from Bible Doctrine. They often seek to find these answers in the realm of psychology. This is of course NOT the answer in any sense of the word since Psychology is one of the greatest means of entering one into function under the Arrogance Skills by providing [Self Justification](#) for the emotional breakdown of the believer. In addition reliance on psychology develops the [Maladaptive Defense Mechanisms](#) so that the individual never blames self for any failures but simply enters into Self Justification with this leading into the whole



complex of [Arrogance Skills](#) and the Interlocking System of Arrogance. These together prevent the believer from executing the mandates of Love using the Motivational Virtue and Functional Virtue of Problem Solving Devices #7, [Personal Love for God](#) and #8, [Impersonal Love for Mankind](#) which are the means for the believer to be following the principles set up by the Love of God in Eternity Past.

### The Guilt Category

This is the worst of all and most observably prevalent being related to malfunction of the [Rebound Procedure](#) with a resultant ignorance of Bible Doctrine because of total inability to metabolize doctrine. It is especially failure in the mechanics of rebound resulting in a lack of the spiritual strength to execute rebound, ([James 4:6](#), [1Pet 5:5](#)) and includes feelings of:

- ✧ responsibility
- ✧ remorse
- ✧ depression
- ✧ morbid self reproach
- ✧ culpability for imagined offenses (often from Nagging)
- ✧ actual culpability
- ✧ inadequacy
- ✧ arrogant preoccupation with correctness of one's behavior from [Self Righteous Arrogance](#) or the Arrogance Skills.

All of this is the result of some real or imagined offense one has become involved in. Guilt is a sin related to [Repression](#) which is rejection from the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul of anything painful or disagreeable because of the believer not having or not using the [Problem Solving Devices](#). [Guilt](#) is entertaining the things which are disagreeable ideas, memories or impulses. Repression puts these disagreeable events into the subconscious as garbage and sinful Guilt into the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul. Therefore, Guilt is caused by the [Maladaptive Defense Mechanisms](#) including repression, denial, projection, manipulation, etc., and people who are weak manipulate stronger people through this guilt. Religion, as a major distraction devised by Satan, generally functions by producing GUILT in its adherents and the motivation for the individual produced by religion is relief from GUILT. A religious person MUST make up for his failures by doing something to atone for his guilt, make a sacrifice, give to the church or this or that other human effort. Religion in contrast to biblical Christianity is always pushing the individual into a corner with GUILT motivation. Guilt as a motivation is NOT the Christian Way of Life but, unfortunately, it is generally taught and practiced as such. When under the Arrogance of Guilt or Guilt as a sin the believer is under the greatest area of weakness in his Spiritual Life and the weakest people in the world are those who live under guilt. This is totally unnecessary for the advancing believer since the Problem Solving Devices have everything needed to handle guilt. Guilt becomes a sin when the believer fails to understand and use the [Rebound Procedure](#) as Problem Solving Device #1 and fails in forgetting those things behind ([Phil 3:13](#)). Parents instead of properly training and disciplining their children go back to the “Dr. Spock” concept and whine at their children to produce in them a guilt complex and in order to be able to manipulate the children or at least try to through guilt. Many times the child learns to manipulate others by watching the parents manipulate them or each other using guilt. This starts in religion and is a definitive part of

legalism and a major motivation in life for many people. This is one of the motivations which crawls into the subconscious and from then on distracts the believer from understanding the things which God has for every believer. Providing strong, effective discipline for a child is designed, if used properly, to eliminate GUILT in any way. The child who has failed in some way or transgressed the rules of the parents MUST be disciplined and it should always follow this process:

- **Confrontation:** The Child is confronted and his failure explained to him and the reasons and rationale behind why it is unacceptable.
- **Admission:** Then he should be made to express verbally what his failure was and the reasons just explained and required to repeat this effort until he can actually do it.
- **Discipline:** Then he is disciplined with whatever punishment is needed and corporal punishment is IDEAL for this.
- **Forgotten:** After the punishment the issue is no longer an issue and totally forgotten and never mentioned again and life resumes as normal for him and you.

All believers have an Old Sin Nature and all have USED the Old Sin Nature at some time or another for one thing or another which was most certainly WRONG. There is always someone around who is ready to dump some guilt project on the believer because of his overtly using his Old Sin Nature. This is the way weak, stupid, arrogant people manipulate others. For the advancing believer in the Royal Family of God, the pressure from guilt is totally finished. Until one grows in the Spiritual Life and understands the Plan of God for his life he can, and most likely will be, manipulated at some time by others imposing GUILT on him. The only people who have never and can never be manipulated by guilt are those who are so insensitive that they do not really belong in the Human Race. If the Christian understands and functions properly in the Christian Way of Life he will be delivered from all of this by his use of the [10 Problem Solving Devices](#).

These 5 categories of Emotional sins are a major part of distraction from the Christian Way of Life and inevitably they are part of legalism. Emotion out of control, divorced from the thinking of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul, always produces emotional reaction which produce emotional sins and these result in irrational distraction from the Plan of God for one's life. As per [Phil 3:19](#) people who get into this emotional complex of the Interlocking System of Antagonistic Emotional Hatred often reject true evangelism and they often say that they believed in Christ and did not FEEL anything therefore are not saved. The reality of Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God is not in the FEELING but is in what Bible Doctrine says and the expression of faith alone in The Lord Jesus, The Christ alone is all that is needed. Dominating Emotion is a simple reason why no one should marry their high school sweet heart since emotion dominates the soul in early life. To be a good lover one must have [humility](#) and Arrogance destroys humility thus eliminating the ability of a man to love a woman or for the woman to respond to the man.

As the Arrogance Skills begin to enter into the function of the believer's Spiritual Life they bring [Emotional Revolt of the Soul](#), stage 4 of reversionism, into play and this results in

**Blackout of the Soul** which actually wipes out, erases, any Metabolized Bible Doctrine from the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul of the Adult Believer. When a believer enters into function under the Arrogance Skills, in **Self Justification** he begins to deny sin in his life and thereby enters **Self Deception** and finally moves to the stage of **Self Absorption** where he uses his own emotion to establish his norms and standards and applies emotion to Doctrine instead of Vice Versa. When Emotion becomes the Criterion for the Christian Way of Life then a High Risk factor is developed in the Spiritual Life. As a result Emotion becomes a Pseudo Problem Solving Device so that the believer must have some ‘feeling’ or emotion for all things occurring in the Spiritual Life. This takes emotion and applies it to Doctrine and as a result he begins building Doctrine on Experience instead of what is written in the Word of God. This results in his distorting Bible Doctrine when it does not line up with how he feels about a thing and consequently the Spiritual Life is destroyed. God has never given to believers any solution to any problem in life which is related to Emotion. The only solutions from God are through **Metabolized Bible Doctrine** applied by means of the **10 Problem Solving Devices**. **2Cor 7:5-10** demonstrates that the false doctrine which comes from applying experience to Doctrine under the influence of Emotional Arrogance results in False Salvation, False Spirituality and False Rebound. God designed **Suffering for Blessing** in his plan in order to allow the Believer to experience the problems of life slowly and learn to apply doctrine to them so that he would be less susceptible to **Emotional Revolt of the Soul** and subsequent distortion of Bible Doctrine in its application to his life. Only when the Believer reaches **Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God** is there the least chance of destruction of the Spiritual Life from Emotional Arrogance.

### **Cowardice, Fear & Emotional Arrogance**

Cowardice for the believer in The Lord Jesus, The Christ is an oxymoron. The Status Quo of the believer should be the display of the Functional Virtue of absolute COURAGE in facing his life in this intensified time of the Angelic Conflict Appeal Trial. However, the question remains, “Why are there believers who are cowards”? Cowards never enjoy anything and are completely arrogant. Arrogance is a major part of cowardice which is the inability to THINK under pressure and one aspect of Arrogance is overestimation of one’s own value in any situation primarily as a result of having nothing of Absolute Truth to think with. Arrogant people always have soul hangups and are always trying to prove something to someone. Cowards in business are always trying to prove how good they are and will certainly tell you how good they are. Cowards are always concerned about self and have no capacity for life and Cowards don’t enjoy sex any more than combat.

No victory won in Arrogance is ever a Victory. The Supreme Court of Heaven never slumbers or sleeps and truth is found in the axiom (**1Pet 5:5, James 4:6**) that “*God makes war against the Arrogant believer but gives grace to the Humble believer*”. In great adversity, catastrophe or disaster, Fear only sees the problem, while FAITH sees the true solutions. One cannot and does not ever solve a problem by creating another problem. One cannot and does not solve problems with a problem but only with a Divine Solution because the “Divine Solutions are the only solutions and human solutions are NO solutions”, the Elative Conclusion of Bible Doctrine. Therefore the Absolute Truth of life is that “The decisions you make determine the life you live”. (Danny Devito – The Renaissance Man) In the Protocol Plan of God Grace Execution

includes Rebound and Keep Moving ([1John 1:9](#), [1Cor 11:28-31](#)), so that the believer must NEVER look back onto past failures nor Fear any future challenges.

As a believer in The Lord Jesus, The Christ one MUST LEARN to concentrate. Everyone is a natural coward in some area and courage is only the ability to concentrate and THINK in pressure situations. One cannot ever apply or use the Metabolized Bible Doctrine unless he has taken the time and made the effort to accumulate it into the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul. The Metabolized Bible Doctrine which resides in his Stream of Consciousness of the Soul cannot be used unless the believer can concentrate under pressure and only with concentration can he apply this Bible Doctrine to disaster, adversity, crisis, catastrophe even to prosperity. One can only learn to concentrate, as a believer, under strict academic discipline during bible study and having any Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the soul but without the ability to concentrate, is Bible Doctrine which cannot ever be applied. If the believer is too easily distracted during bible study this means that when disaster comes he cannot be counted on and would most likely fail under pressure. In extreme adversity or disaster situations one should only team up with people in life who can concentrate under pressure. There is a natural streak of cowardice in every person and the only way to overcome the cowardly streak is through concentration. People in disaster will never make it if they cannot apply what they know and as a result of the inability to concentrate and apply their knowledge they become totally divorced from the reality of their situation. Arrogance divorces one from reality and produces inflexibility regarding [Non-Essentials](#) in life, as does the inability to concentrate on subject matter which does not interest or apply to one's immediate situation. Some believers can make it in a crisis with less accumulated Metabolized Bible Doctrine than others because they can concentrate on what doctrine they have and can therefore think under pressure. The secret to courage is being able to think under pressure and / or follow a system of protocol. If a person cannot think when things are normal they must have a protocol, or a regimented, disciplined system, to force them into standard procedures in order to avoid failure and cowardice.

Maintaining [Poise](#) under pressure is a very important thing in life because like overt courage it requires the ability to think under pressure. The principle is that without ever changing ones personality he can change his person. If one has ever been a coward at some time, he does not always have to be a coward under pressure but can become as courageous as anyone else. If one has been courageous in the past he can become a coward if he fails to think under pressure. Once doctrinal principles are understood and application of them begins in a normal situation the believer can then also apply these same Bible Doctrine principles in a pressure situation. When a person learns to shoot a firearm under normal conditions with proper training and repetition, in crisis conditions they will shoot the exact same way. Thus the fallacy of the idea that "practice makes perfect" because one will perform in exactly the same way that he has practiced and only "Perfect Practice makes Perfect". The person who does not concentrate on each fundamental of shooting on the range under normal conditions cannot do it under abnormal conditions of combat or in a crisis. When one has a true sight picture on the practice range he will have a true sight picture in combat and be effective in killing the enemy. Bands or fields or areas of fire will not ever work properly in combat because shooting

fundamentals are totally ignored. This is the same as what occurs when emotion comes into action during crises or catastrophes. When one is fighting someone and this other is a really good fighter he has to concentrate on the other's hands and feet and watch when each movement takes place and if he can concentrate on what he has learned and practiced and apply it he will have no Fear. This is the purpose of practice in any area of life including practice in concentration on Bible Doctrine principles. Again, Practice DOES NOT make perfect but Practice does MAKE PERMANENT therefore the necessity for constant consistent PROPER practice in physical as well as mental disciplines. Everyone has some area where they would be a coward and this is the result of having an Old Sin Nature. This is the Old Sin Nature with different areas of sin where one person's sin is another's Self Righteousness, so also everyone has some area where they may be afraid and there is nothing wrong with that but what is wrong is BECOMING EMOTIONAL WHEN Fear IS AN ISSUE. When under pressure, above all other times, one must be rational not emotional and the only way to be rational is to have the ability to concentrate and apply whatever has been learned in that area.

Another way to maintain focus and rational thinking and avoid becoming emotional under pressure is to be able to go through a set of protocols or procedures like the British military did in the Indian Mutiny. Believers, under Positive Volition toward Bible Doctrine and the Plan of God, have a chance to practice courage every day by concentration on Bible Doctrine when it is being taught. In life everything one ever learns is learned through concentration. When one wants to learn something he must concentrate on it, but the real test of his ability to concentrate is when he has to learn something he has no interest in. Having to learn things which are uninteresting is what is so very important in the development of the behavior, thought patterns and functions needed for overcoming disaster. This is why the military finally discovered close order drill and this is the greatest protocol system for developing instinctive obedience and concentration on what one is doing rather than what the enemy is doing. To concentrate on what the enemy is doing when they are shooting at one results in Fear but to concentrate on what one is doing shooting at them is courage. Courage concentrates on what one is doing, Fear concentrates on what is being done to him.

As soon as things go wrong in life if one is a coward he stops thinking since cowardice, by definition, is lack of thinking under pressure. When he cannot and does not think under pressure he is instead motivated by the Arrogance of [Bitterness](#) and [Self Pity](#) to whine and [Complain](#). Complaining is lack of thought under pressure. As a result of a lack of knowledge of Bible Doctrine there can be no application of this Absolute Truth to circumstances in life. The point clearly is "You don't have to be in Who's Who in Life to know What's What", Sam Levinson. Wisdom demands application and application demands knowledge, therefore, Wisdom is Knowledge + Application of Knowledge. Proper application in life requires thinking within the system of reality which for the believer is only what GOD sees not what he, himself, sees. Whenever the believer is faced with pressure, adversity or disaster he must be able to draw out from his own Stream of Consciousness of the Soul principles related to GOD, the Plan of God, the purpose of God for his life on this earth and apply them without regard to what the circumstances are and what he sees before him at any given time. This is the effective use of the [Faith Rest Drill \(5 stages\)](#) and APPLICATION OF BIBLE DOCTRINE TO EXPERIENCE. If one



fails to do this he builds up Arrogance in the soul while sliding down through the states of Reversionism resulting in [Black out of the Soul](#) and [Scar Tissue of the Soul](#) and this produces in him cowardice instead of [Virtue](#). Remember, Cowards cannot think under pressure and therefore always give up. Courage received as a result of reverse concentration on Bible Doctrine is the only thing which will truly sustain the believer in time of disaster or adversity and even in great prosperity. Therefore, any level of involvement in the Interlocking System of Arrogance results in the inability to think and under pressure and this always results in cowardice. Emotion also functions in an abnormal way when related to involvement in the Interlocking System of Arrogance. Fear, Cowardice, insecurity are all related to ingrained Arrogance in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul which has not been dealt with through advance in the Spiritual Life from consistent Perception, Cognition, Inculcation & Metabolization of Bible Doctrine.

God, in Eternity Past, knew every thought decision and action each and every believer would ever make and entered this into the Divine Decree to ensure that those things which would be, would be, without interruption. Having entered this into the decree along with the fact that believers in the Royal Family of God would be believers, he therefore also entered [Logistical Grace](#) support for each and every decision of each and every believer. The principle is that for every believer in The Lord Jesus, The Christ, from Eternity Past, “Underneath are the everlasting arms”. When people are frightened only then do they call on God for help and they think this is legitimate prayer. They cry for help instead of concentrating on Metabolized Bible Doctrine from their own Stream of Consciousness of the Soul, which they were supposed to have accumulated during their life. This is the actual purpose for being supported by God under Logistical Grace for life after salvation. These believers call on God with emotional distress instead of being rational from an understanding of the bible doctrine that they were supposed to accumulate and for which they received logistical support. Because they are irrational in screaming to God for help they cannot apply a very simple principle. Every need that any believer has ever or will ever have, including during any historical or national disaster situation which may come, have already been provided and supplied for them from Eternity Past; this is Logistical Grace. In other words, all the logistics for the life of the believer were totally worked out in Eternity Past, SO, what is there to Fear or be concerned about in life? It is a truly humbling thought to understand that the Plan of God was developed so far in the past that the human mind cannot even comprehend how long ago that was. In that plan of creation God created angels, the universe and after Satan’s appeal of his condemnation for revolting against God, mankind. In that plan as a result of his omniscience, God knew everything about EVERY person including every thought of every person, every decision of every person to do honorable things in life or to fail and commit sin or crime or be involved in Human Good productions under the influence of EVIL. GOD knew all these things about each individual believer and how each believer would constantly fail in his life and HE STILL CREATED and over and above that HE DESIGNED SPECIFIC LOGISTICAL SUPPORT FOR ALL BELIEVERS. He still provided logistical support for all believers, the good, the bad and the ugly so WHAT IS THERE IN THIS LIFE TO Fear?

When a believer commits a sin he moves himself under the control of his Old Sin Nature and

out from under the Filling of God the Holy Spirit. Because of this it is not unusual for believers to be found taking the wrong road down the path into [Reversionism](#) and the Interlocking System of Arrogance and directly into functioning under the [Arrogance Skills](#). The solution to these failings is use of the 1<sup>st</sup> Problem Solving Device the [Rebound Procedure](#). However, when he fails to do this and remains under the control of the Old Sin Nature he moves on down that rocky road continually rejecting Rebound thus becoming deeply entangled in the Interlocking System of Arrogance and, as a result of sinking down through Reversionism, destroying any Metabolized Bible Doctrine he may have accumulated in his Stream of Consciousness of the Soul. There are 3 Areas of Sin that lead to the PLAGUE of the Royal Priesthood.

- ✧ Motivational Arrogance and Motivational Antagonism from Emotional Sins including Fear, Worry, Anxiety, etc., involving both Arrogance and Antagonism.
- ✧ Functional Arrogance and Functional Antagonism from Emotional Sins including Malice, Revenge, Violence, even Murder, Etc.
- ✧ Arrogance Skills of Self Deception, Self Justification and Self Absorption
  - This starts the gears of the [Cogs of Carnality \(a graphic\)](#) grinding away at the Spiritual Life and destroying it.

The Royal Priesthood plague includes 2 Categories of virus:

- ✧ The Contaminating or Motivating virus' of all aspects of [Motivational Arrogance](#) and Motivational Antagonism
- ✧ The Symptomatic or Functional virus' of all aspects of [Functional Arrogance](#) and Functional Antagonism

Within these 2 virus categories there can be found various mutations resulting from the Affliction of Carnality such as the Fear Virus which destroys any possibility of Happiness. ([Phil 3:18-19](#)) The believers so infected worship at the shrine of their emotion for their entire Spiritual Life. The point which must be clearly understood is that what one happens to be feeling at any given time is never the criterion for anything in the Spiritual Life especially regarding Spirituality or Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God. The FACT that all believers are given equal opportunity to learn and execute the Protocol Plan of God is recognition of the design of GOD which emphasizes VOLITION and THINKING over EMOTION. Emotion is one of the greatest distractions of the Spiritual Life. Emotion is the “feeling” reflex of the Soul which is designed to appreciate what the believer is THINKING about. Because it is not the criterion of the Spiritual Life and is not a Problem Solving Device nor even a small part of the Spiritual Life it results in accepting the temptation to SIN when it is out of its realm of responding to the thinking of the Right Lobe with regard to the proper functions of Life. As a responder it enhances the appreciation for what is noble and honorable in life. As a reactor it accepts temptation and produces Sin, Dead Human Good Works and Crime all under the influence of Evil. The Spiritual Life of the church age has 2 mechanisms for solving the problems of all Sin. First there is the development and deployment of the [10 Problem Solving Devices onto the Forward Line of Troops of the Soul](#). As a result of this the [Faith Rest Drill \(5 stages\)](#) brings the believer to the “[Doors of Hope](#)” and when he walks through those doors Faith Rest enhances his Spiritual Life. There is also the activation of the “Love

Complex” the Motivational and Functional Virtues of [Personal Love for God](#), [Impersonal Love for Mankind](#) and [Occupation with the Person of The Lord Jesus, The Christ](#) as a major function in the Adult Spiritual Life.

There is [NO PLACE](#) in the life of the believer for Fear concerning anything and if he Fears any situation or combination of circumstances in life he has not advanced in the Spiritual Life to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and lacks sufficient Metabolized Bible Doctrine in his Stream of Consciousness of the Soul. Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God eliminates having any Fear of people, circumstance or any kind of loss in life as well as any insecurity one may have. Believers must have relaxation or a Relaxed Mental Attitude from a lack of [Mental Attitude Arrogance](#) and must have freedom from all Motivational Arrogance including Fear, [Jealousy](#), [Bitterness](#), vindictiveness, implacability, etc., in order to advance to [Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God](#) and maintain this as a Status Quo. People very often Fear others getting more attention or gaining more power over them or they Fear the loss of the accouterments of life or some other inconsequential [Non-Essential](#) thing or circumstance. When believers are under consistent Positive Volition toward Bible Doctrine the Lord guides them to the right place at the right time under Logistical Grace support and provides them with the right equipment and the knowledge of how to use it. Therefore, Fear is a misplaced emotion as long as the believer continues his advance in his Spiritual Life.

Fear erases Metabolized Bible Doctrine by moving the Believer down through the 8 stages of [Reversionism](#) and as a result destroys all Metabolized Bible Doctrine previously learned hindering any attempts at application by the use of the [Problem Solving Devices](#). The movement of the believer from use of the [Arrogance Skills](#) rapidly down through reversionism is the point of counter attack vulnerability by the 4 Horsemen of Apostasy. This is where believers start to ignore the necessity for using the [REBOUND PROCEDURE](#) and fall under complete Old Sin Nature control and Apostasy of the soul. This movement into the Apostasy of Reversionism results in and also from involvement in the Interlocking System of Arrogance and function under the Arrogance Skills with a cycling of them both forward and backward resulting in the believer becoming totally divorced from Reality. Fear, as emotional sin and function under emotional Arrogance, being a distraction to the Spiritual Life, eliminates the potential of reaching a [Personal Sense of Destiny](#), Problem Solving Device #6 and leads to one's function in the Interlocking System of Antagonistic Emotional Hatred and the accompanying sins. Fear always sees only the problem through entanglement in Emotional Arrogance while faith sees the solutions through the Divine Viewpoint of Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul. The more one succumbs to Fear the less he will be able to execute the Spiritual Life resulting in irrational thinking and subsequent accumulation of a maximum level of garbage in the Subconscious of the Soul. This garbage aids in the believer functioning under the Interlocking System of Antagonistic Emotional Hatred and the Interlocking System of Arrogance and erases and replaces Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul with the 4 horsemen of apostasy from the 8 stages of reversionism all motivated and influenced by the LIE of satanic policy, Evil. The 4 Horsemen of Apostasy are:

- ✧ Emotional Revolt of the Soul

- Locked in Negative Volition to Bible Doctrine
- Blackout of the Soul
- Scar Tissue of the Soul

Then as a result of the hysteria and panic of this Fear these 4 eliminate the Problem Solving Devices so that emotion controls the Life. ([PS 56:3](#))

Things which cause Fear and destroy the Spiritual Life include Guilt, Emotional Sins and much of Motivational Arrogance. These are distractions to the Spiritual Life and destroy the understanding of Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God and the true nature of God. There is no Fear in [Virtue Love](#) and they are mutually exclusive. Virtue Love includes Personal Love for God the Father, Impersonal Love for Mankind and Occupation with the Person of The Lord Jesus, The Christ. Virtue Love must always be related to [Integrity](#) and the believer cannot have Love for God in association with Arrogance. The believer is either under the Filling and control of God the Holy Spirit and under Virtue Love or under Fear and Arrogance being controlled by his Old Sin Nature and residing outside the Spiritual Life. AGAIN, Fear only sees the problems in life while Faith with Virtue Love see the solutions. You cannot ever solve problems with emotion and Fear is the greatest of emotional sins. Therefore Fear carries with it total distraction from the Spiritual Life.

OBVIOUSLY, No believer can ever advance in the Spiritual Life by means of the Interlocking System of Arrogance, the Arrogance Skills nor the Interlocking System of Antagonistic Emotional Hatred because these are the Plan of Satan. “Nos Moratori Salutanus” – “We who are about to die salute you”. This was a Roman’s strength and the stimulator of their courage for the battlefield where they had to remove all Fear in order to fight and win. For the believer there is NO Fear in Virtue Love and this includes his time of living in this world which is controlled under the Cosmic Dynaspheres or his time of leaving this world by Dying. Fear is a Sin and involves worry, anxiety and / or panic. It is, in reality, a Sin of [Self Pity](#), Bitterness, the [Motivational Arrogance](#) of Mental Attitude Arrogance including Jealousy, Vindictiveness, Vituperation, Malice or Guilt. Fear is very often used to represent all Emotional Sin controlling the life. The believer must be able to distinguish between Fear and concern, realizing that Fear is a sin of Arrogance and Emotion while Concern relates to the Filling of God the Holy Spirit and giving 1<sup>st</sup> priority to Bible Doctrine. Concern is a sense of responsibility with Honor and Integrity related to the mandates given the Church Age believer as Royal Family of God and as a Royal Priest ([1Pet 2:9](#)).

When emotion dominates the soul the Arrogance complex intensifies and interlocks with the Antagonism complex through Emotional Sin. Antagonism Complex sins are also sins of Arrogance which have been intensified to the point of Antagonism. [Self Absorption](#) when involved with hatred becomes Malice even Revenge Modus Operandi. Therefore, Hatred, an emotional sin, is intensified and locks into other Arrogance and Antagonism functions. David recognized the need to remove any Fear before making big decisions. ([Ps 56:1-4](#)) Here, the (heb) 'batak' is referring to Fear which moves the believer out of fellowship through carnality and David is saying, no matter how far into carnality one may go he just has to name his sins and God takes over and uses the Divine Solutions for him. Fear and function in the Spiritual

Life are mutually exclusive. People who live by Fear are intimidated by Life. Fear is emotion without fact and ultimately the destroyer of thinking. Fear distorts the Interlocking System of Arrogance sins and converts them into Antagonism sins and the irrational state which results becomes [Psychosis](#). Fear inevitably eliminates all Metabolized Bible Doctrine including the Problem Solving Devices as observed in both Paul and David when they were afraid. Therefore, the loser believer cannot overcome the Antagonistic aspect of Emotionally enhanced Arrogance Sins when wallowing in Fear. Once one is out of fellowship and stays there for any period of time he will combine the Interlocking System of Arrogance Sins with the Interlocking System of Antagonistic Emotional Hatred Sins and create a totally irrational life. The presence of any sin of Arrogance or Antagonism in the soul such as Fear, is self punishment and self torture. The only hope for this believer is to remember to use the [Rebound Procedure](#) as rapidly as possible and allow this divine solution to take over and isolate the problem and make available the doctrinal solutions. Rapid deployment of Rebound is the most important of the Divine Solutions. Fear as the first category of emotional sins reaches out and scoops up all aspects of Motivational Arrogance and allows them to function in one's soul unrestrained.

Bitterness is also a virus of carnality which will totally destroy capacity for love. ([Heb 12:15](#)) Without capacity for love the believer only has the ability to become involved with Evil. The believer cannot entertain bitterness in the soul because by so doing he is quenching and grieving God the Holy Spirit and will inevitably be totally miserable and unhappy. The Sins of the Interlocking System of Antagonistic Emotional Hatred are, in part, interlocked into the Interlocking System of Arrogance as antagonistic enhancement of all aspects of Arrogance. ([James 3:14](#)) You can not become bitter or emotional without being arrogant, therefore, bitterness becomes ammunition in the soul where one fires this at others and it causes him to be entrapped by functioning in the Arrogance Skill of Self Justification. As a result he then begins lying to himself under Self Deception and eventually moves into complete Self Absorption. When one starts lying to self he enters into the function of [Delusion](#) and begin to see self as a great believer with all others being inferior and wrong. His mind then becomes twisted with Evil thinking destroying what Metabolized Bible Doctrine he may have accumulated, and as he builds up a cocoon of unreality around himself, he enters into a maximum state of being influence by and functioning under Evil. By this means, he creates his own misery and under the thinking derived from Evil he lies to himself constantly so that when he goes to hear the teaching of the Absolute Truth of Bible Doctrine he applies it only to others and never self. When Bitterness reaches the point of [Revenge](#), which begins with Self Absorption, it demonstrates that bitterness is completely entrenched in the soul and this believer has welcomed the 4 horsemen of apostasy and incredible misery into his life. Bitterness is the greatest Motivational Arrogance of Mental Attitude Arrogance with regard to destroying the Spiritual Life because it lives in a cocoon of Self Absorption and [Hypersensitivity](#) being totally encapsulated in the base of the [Arrogance Skills](#).

It is Arrogance which destroys a person and it was Arrogance which wiped out Elijah, David and Paul and Paul understood this and used it. One can be threatened over and over and think nothing of it and it has no effect on him, but if he is threatened and thinks about it he walks right into [Blind Arrogance](#). When one is threatened and thinks about it and thinks about



self and how it will effect him then he is saturated with Arrogance. No Believer in The Lord Jesus the Christ can be frightened as long as they can think and use reverse concentration on Bible Doctrine where Logistical Grace is concerned and therefore they CANNOT ever be frightened. However, anyone who gets an instant case of Arrogance can be frightened and the very moment one becomes arrogant he is weak and when it hits the soul he is irrational and emotional and rapidly moves through the stages of Reversionism and enters [Emotional Revolt of the Soul](#). It is at this point that he then ignores all he has learned and doesn't even use common sense. Much of Arrogance, pressure and self pity all sponsored by emotion under the influence of Evil, leaves the believer totally unable to use the [Faith Rest Drill \(5 stages\)](#). This failure to use the Faith Rest Drill and the malfunction and failure to use reverse concentration on Bible Doctrine can happen to any believer immature or mature. Both the infant believer and the greatest mature believers who have ever lived must face every day the issue of Logistical Grace. The principle is, **If God**, providing Logistical Grace sustains the life of the [Reversionist](#) saturated with Evil, **and he does**, what will he do for the believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God? Obviously he will do much more in the way of direct blessings for the believer in or beyond Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God but this is rational reverse concentration and when Fear results from Arrogance and self pity this process of thought does not and cannot occur in the failing believer. Once one becomes entangled in Arrogance and full of self pity under pressure, this causes him to become irrational and then want to die. Irrationality comes because of being full of Self Pity Arrogance under pressure. Involvement in self pity, feeling sorry for self, can only occur for a short while so that if it persists then depression sets in. This is the result of having expended all one's energy in self pity with nothing left but depression. This can and often does happen to many believers no matter their level of spiritual maturity. Knowing that, as Royal Family of God, all believers are being supported by Logistical Grace, whether infant or mature or in between, even up to the status of Advanced Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and then receiving Ultra Super – Grace blessings, this reality can be used to avoid Arrogance in any area of life, which is essential for function in the Spiritual Life. Arrogance Testing occurs in the Spiritual Life from Infancy to Advanced Maturity and always comes into the picture when one ignores the Doctrine of the provision of Logistical Grace for sustaining the life of EVERY believer without regard to his Status Quo as a believer.

Fear eliminates Metabolized Bible Doctrine, the [Spiritual Skills](#) and the [Problem Solving Devices](#) and manufactures the loser Believer. Fear is irrational and irresponsible creating distractions from the Spiritual Life and building up the Arrogance Skills, Antagonistic sins and Arrogance sins. [Stress](#) in the soul is TOTALLY compatible with the Interlocking System of Arrogance, the lust patterns of the Old Sin Nature, [Polarized Self Fragmentation](#), [Reversionism](#), and both Moral and Immoral Degeneracy and therefore TOTALLY INCOMPATIBLE with the Christian Way of Life and the Protocol Plan of God. The greater the mind-set as a loser Believer while living, the greater will be the intensification of Fear while dying. There will be many personalities in the Church Age saturated with EVIL and they include types like Castro, Khomeini, Mao, Khrushchev, Carter, Nader, Jane Fonda, Hitler, and many others. It is easy to be disturbed or shaken by the personality of someone who has power and then become antagonistic to them whether they are representing Establishment or Evil. Many times people cannot learn from

another because they cannot get past the personality of the one teaching but this is simply a test of objectivity. The believer must never allow what these varied personalities say or do to disturb him to the point of not being able to apply Bible Doctrine. History is filled with Evil in power positions or representation in nations but the administration of the nation generally reflects the Status Quo of the people. Historically People get what they DEMAND, they get what they think and therefore what they deserve. The believer, however, is protected from any Evil government in a nation under the principle of Logistical Grace and the Wall of Fire. There were 7000 mature believers in the Northern Kingdom of Israel and because of these men the northern kingdom was protected and blessed in the time of Ahab and Jezebel. ([1Kings 19:18](#)) The believer with maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul should never be disturbed by the Evil personalities of contemporary history. Evil rulers simply reflect the volition and thinking of the people they represent. Personality disturbances on a local, national or international level are a distraction to learning and applying Bible Doctrine. Personality disturbances also result in malfunction of the [Faith Rest Drill \(5 stages\)](#). It is the whining and [Complaining](#) of Human Viewpoint, the involvement within the Interlocking System of Arrogance and being vulnerable to [Reversionism](#) which is everything which hinders glorification of the Lord. The motivations and policies of politicians and the false doctrines of apostate teachers will often disturb the believer resulting his entering the Interlocking System of Arrogance. This is where the [Crusaders](#) of life become vulnerable and mired in the Interlocking System of Arrogance. Life and history are filled with false doctrine, Evil policies and wrong motivations and these must never distract the believer from his Perception, Cognition, Inculcation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine, his primary objective in life and the *REASON he receives his Logistical Grace support*. These must not hinder his momentum in the Plan of God and he must be persistent in regular intake of Bible Doctrine.

Fear is the preoccupation with the outside pressures of life, the problems of life rather than the solutions which can only be based on Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul. Fear and the function of the Spiritual Life are mutually exclusive and the Believer who lives by Fear is intimidated by life and even the irrationality of overwhelming Fear related to death will not prevent dying. As a result the believer will ignore or reject the divine solutions for all the problems and pressures he faces since Fear is preoccupation with the problem and involves intimidation in life. The believer who prefers fulfillment of the Spiritual Life over Fear has a door which opens in the Unfailing Love and [Superabundant Happiness](#) from God. Fear also eliminates the power of prevailing prayer and destroys the superabundance of happiness from God totally ignoring the unfailing love of God which provides something special for mature believers in [Dying Grace](#). The greater the mindset one has as a loser believer while living the greater the intensification of Fear while dying. The Outside Pressures of life are always there and MUST be dealt with by means of Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul. Stress is OPTIONAL in life and is NOT found in the soul unless there is NO APPLICATION of Bible Doctrine to the pressures of life. Fear ultimately is a sign of Arrogance and selfcenteredness and always has punishment associated as a result of its removing the believer from the Plan of God.

Arrogance requires no productive thought but Humility requires constant thinking and concentration. Fear and Cowardice are strictly negative emotion and there is no thinking in emotion. Confidence does not come from Arrogance, which can and does produce Pseudo Confidence, but only from [HUMILITY](#) the only source of true GREATNESS. Cowardice results from Fear, it cancels prayer, is preoccupation with Self in Arrogance and puts the Believers deeply into the Cosmic Dynaspheres. Courage is thinking under pressure while cowardice is emotion revolting and dominating the soul under pressure making thought impossible. Under the conditions of Fear and Cowardice the thinking is suppressed by emotion which then dominates the soul preventing any rational thinking under pressure. When a person becomes entangled in the Interlocking System of Arrogance emotion automatically dominates the soul and thus substitutes unreality for reality making him vulnerable to Fear, flattery, irresponsibility, sociopathic and psychopathic behavior. Emotional Arrogance is always vulnerable to flattery because flattery encourages unreality with regard to self. Emotion Arrogance results in that form of [Psychopathic Arrogance](#) called neurosis and all neurotics were previously involved in Emotional Arrogance.

Arrogance cannot stand up to any adversity or pressure in life and believers should be using the Metabolized Doctrines they learn on a consistent basis from function under the [Filling of God the Holy Spirit](#) and [Grace Apparatus for Perception](#) instead of being afraid. They should apply the [Faith Rest Drill \(5 stages\)](#) and the Doctrinal Principles and Rationales built up from consistent Perception, Cognition, Incultation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine to overcome and defeat any Fear potential in life. Unfortunately, even cowards, when in a state of Fear, have the ability to use the Arrogance Skills of Self Justification, Self Deception, and Self Absorption. This is the motivation people have today in subscribing to the pseudo security of Socialism and why people trade their freedom for any pseudo security. The abuses they are subject to mean nothing to them as long as they have what they consider to be security. This is the result of the saturation and recycling of the Arrogance Skills and is the full effect of [Self Absorption](#).

Out of the 7 worst sins ([Prov 6:16-19](#)) Fear as the Motivational Arrogance of Mental Attitude Arrogance is a Mental Attitude sin and at the top of the list. Fear is a terrible inordinate concern for self in any situation. One cannot Fear without being entangled in Arrogance and one cannot be arrogant without at some point entertaining Fear in his soul. Therefore, where Fear exists in life Arrogance is its bedfellow. Fear, worry, all [Mental Attitude Arrogance](#) and the irrationality of emotionalism are contradictions to the Christian Way of Life and reflect a lack of [Metabolized Bible Doctrine](#) and the [10 Problem Solving Devices](#) in the believer's life. In the development and advance of the Spiritual Life the Problem Solving Devices develop at various stages and in various levels of functionality based on whether the believer is in spiritual childhood, spiritual adolescence or spiritual adulthood. One cannot use these Problem Solving Devices until he has developed them from consistent Perception, Cognition, Incultation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine. Once developed they must then be deployed onto the [Forward Line of Troops](#) of the soul and then be TESTED by the Attack of the Mosquito in order to resist the attacks of Satan and the Cosmic Dynaspheres. However, one cannot deploy them until he has learned about them and how they work mechanically and he cannot do this

without consistent Post Salvation Epistemological Rehabilitation from DAILY Perception, Cognition, Inculcation & Metabolization of Bible Doctrine.

The most predominant thing which destroys one's capacity for life is involvement in Arrogance especially the Arrogance involved in irrational, uncontrollable Fear and then next in line is [Jealousy](#). If one consistently entertains these or any other aspect of Mental Attitude Arrogance or Mental Attitude Sin in life, then, when he is dying, he will be completely hysterical and in terrible mental agony. It is amazing to see how a frightened person begins to reason, first comes Fear, then comes panic, then comes some kind of distorted reasoning. In the person involved in emotional arrogance, when there is disaster hovering in any particular circumstance there is first a reaction of Fear followed by intense panic and then all of a sudden these frightened people have a stimulated moment of thought where they look for someone else to blame. Because they are locked into [Self Righteous Arrogance](#), total selfcenteredness and are concentrating completely on self it never occurs to them to blame themselves for their Fear reaction and as a result they always seek to blame others. Frightened believers are totally irrational no matter how sane they normally are and irrational people always come up with WRONG conclusions and this is a form of temporary insanity.

Initially Fear, as Motivational Arrogance, touches off an overwhelming interlocking in the Arrogance complex and as a result of Arrogance predominating the soul these individuals become temporarily free of the Fear and think they are something special. However, when increased pressure comes along the Fear replaces the Arrogance but because Arrogance is still there but subdued by Fear it causes interlocking with other categories of Arrogance such as [SELF PITY](#). Any time one enters into self pity he has dominant Fear and other subdominant Arrogance in his soul. Therefore, Self Pity is a combination where Fear is controlling Arrogance. Not one moment of life should ever be involved in self pity whether one is lonely or feels that the world has passed him by and that he has not received his due in life, because every moment he logs under SELF PITY he makes himself worse than a simple coward. He, by this means, becomes worse than a coward and is walking death, a total disgrace to The Lord Jesus, The Christ and a disgrace to his provision of Logistical Grace support and the potential for receiving Super – Grace blessing in time. The believer is a Royal Priest and Royal Ambassador for Christ and any moment logged in self pity, he, as an arrogant coward, is not properly representing himself to God nor Christ to mankind. Self pity is one of the worst of all sinful functions because it combines 2 of the worst sins into a disastrous subjective thing. Self Righteousness, which always throws blame out in all directions and thinks of others as being totally inferior and Self Pity when under pressure. Once locked into these 2 irrationalities, then from Arrogance comes the inability to reason. Then when Jealousy and Bitterness are added to this the combination it results in Fear and PANIC.

• Selfcenteredness + Hidden Arrogance + Pressure == Fear.

As a result, the self pity begins judging and maligning those in authority and blaming others for the pressure situation adding to this the “I told you so” syndrome. “I told you so” is a pressure reliever and under pressure it results from Arrogance and it demonstrates the vanity of the person and their saturation with Arrogance. As a result this makes any pressure situation much worse and much more complex.

### **The Faith Rest Drill & Emotional Arrogance**

**Humility** is that state of soul whereby the individual is oriented to reality through thinking and Authority Orientation. The 3<sup>rd</sup> stage of the **Faith Rest Drill** (5 stages) begins reverse concentration where in this stage the believer adds principles of the Metabolized Bible Doctrine in his Stream of Consciousness of the Soul to the promises he has claimed. He then uses this Metabolized Bible Doctrine to develop, deploy and concentrate on Doctrinal Rationales to focus his thinking on reality. Then, from the Doctrinal Rationals and upon reaching Doctrinal Conclusions, understands the solutions and ultimately controls the pressure situation. To be able to use any Bible Doctrine principle or rationale one must be able to think Bible Doctrine under pressure and this is not possible when the soul is dominated by emotion. The doctrinal rationales orient the believer to reality whether it is the greatness of God or the believer's personal sinfulness. In each case of the application of a rationale the believer is oriented to reality by what is involved in his thinking.

In every occurrence or situation where one might be deprived of something necessary for life this is a challenge to, testing under the Faith Rest Drill (5 stages). The issue always will be, "Is Bible Doctrine more real than the situation of deprivation". Our life on this earth after Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God is TOTALLY dependent on the principle of Logistical Grace. In fact, after salvation God is OBLIGATED, PERSONALLY REQUIRED, to provide everything necessary for our continued live until His plan for our life is completed. In time of deprivation the believer must consider whether he automatically claims a promise to stabilize the mentality of his soul so that he can function under Faith Rest, move into the Logistical Grace Rationale and then move on and relax OR does he WORRY. Worry is a sign of unbelief and of hidden Arrogance. When he WORRIES he is so involved with self that in his thinking he places self outside the reality of the Plan of God. The believer is commanded in no uncertain terms to "NOT WORRY" about anything especially what might occur TOMORROW. (**Matt 6:34**) This means that each day must be faced in the light of the word of God and that the believer is commanded to live one day at a time. In addition, the Evil of the plan and policy of Satan or the temptations of any given day are sufficient for that day and he need not be concerned about more Evil or temptation beyond one day. Each day has its own brand of Evil because Satan rules this world and these include, Socialism, Gas Rationing (1970s), Terrorism, Mass Shootings, 2<sup>nd</sup> Amendment compromises, Governmental attacks on free enterprise, mandates to wear protective masks and stay and work at home and attacks on all the freedoms guaranteed in the American Constitution. Each day the Evil of it is a challenge to the principles of the Faith Rest Drill for that day. God gives us one day at a time and expects us to live that day and thus Faith Rest must claim Logistical Grace for each day and never worry about tomorrow.

Frightened people must always be approached with simple solutions. Accepting solutions from others is very simple when one is not frightened, upset or worried about situations he faces. Simple solutions for problems and pressures in life can start with the question "Are you not worth more than birds and are you not a greater value to God than any bird". (**Luke 12:24-26; Matt 6:26-27**) When a dog barks at birds and they fly the dog cannot chase them and if they



fly a very long way off they are not very smart birds. When under pressure and Fear approaches one must decide if he is better, smarter and more valuable than the birds and if he can come to the correct conclusion he WILL KNOW that if God provides for the bird under Grace, and he certainly does, he can provide for every believer also under Grace in any situation. Birds do not earn nor deserve to be sustained in life and their existence clearly illustrates the provision of Logistical Grace blessing from the Justice of God to the Righteousness of God resident in the believer who has made Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God. Hearing and understanding this principle the believer must consider whether he has stopped worrying or not?

Worry about one's physical height cannot ever cause him to grow taller. ([Matt 6:26-27](#)) Being tall or short means neither inferiority nor superiority in life and being or not being tall is no reason to develop some mental complex in life. No matter how much one thinks about his height and worries about being too short or too tall that does not, will not and cannot change his height. The continuation of life on the earth is the responsibility of the Lord and such provision is not a subject for Fear, worry or any distraction for the believer. However, in reality the greatest source of worry is NOT Fear directly but Arrogance. An overestimation of one's own importance and applying that to life is the source of worry. **IF** the Lord provided the greater, the salvation potential as the result of the Substitutionary Spiritual Death of Christ on the cross for all human sin, while all mankind were his enemies, **AND HE DID**, will he now withhold the less of [Logistical Grace](#) support and blessings for the life of the believer in time? **IF** God did the greater or more difficult providing salvation when one was his enemy as an unbeliever, **AND HE DID**, then it follows (lat) "Afortiori" that He will certainly do the less in the form of Logistical Grace provision for the entire life of the believer since the believer is now His friend and part of his Royal Family. The most difficult thing for God was to provide for man the potential for Salvation Adjustment to his Justice, **WHICH HE DID**, based on the Substitutionary Spiritual Death of Christ on the cross and He provided for the unbeliever's personal faith in The Lord Jesus, The Christ being efficacious for Salvation. NOW, after having engaged in Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God, He **MUST** provide the less of Logistical Grace support in time. He is **OBLIGATED** to support the believer for his entire life after salvation in order to give each believer the equality of opportunity to reach Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and complete execution of the Protocol Plan of God. Each believer is part of the Royal Family of God as a result of faith alone in The Lord Jesus, The Christ alone and the Baptism of God the Holy Spirit putting him under positional sanctification. Just as worry cannot add to health or height or length of life so worry is not part of the Plan of God and when one worries he is obviously not in the Will of God for his life. The [Faith Rest Drill \(5 stages\)](#) offsets, counteracts the distraction of worry in all areas of life especially concerning Logistical Grace support.

### **Humility & Emotional Arrogance**

The cure for Emotional Arrogance is discipline and [Authority Orientation](#) resulting in Enforced Humility, this, for the believer, is accepting the teaching authority of one's right Pastor Teacher and **EXCLUSIVELY** sticking with his ministry. The greatest thing for children is to have strict parents who force the child to respect them. When this occurs the result in the child, who is

or becomes a believer, is that Enforced Humility + Genuine Humility == Spiritual Growth under Grace. When Enforced Humility becomes Genuine Humility this believer has made the advance to Spiritual Maturity. No one ever advances in the Plan of God nor reaches Spiritual Maturity without Enforced Humility. The believer MUST “humble himself under the mighty hand of God” (James 4:10), which is in this Church Age found through the Bible Doctrine taught by someone he may think is a jackass. When in a leadership position, or any position of authority, being tough on those under one’s authority will not win him a popularity contest but WILL develop in them humility, an essential for a successful organization. When those under authority begin to respect and love the one over them, then they have developed real humility. One in authority can get much more out of those who are under his authority through Enforced Humility than he can through function at any level of Arrogance.

### **Emotional Arrogance & The Insignificant**

Emotional Arrogance not only eliminates rational thinking in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul but produces arrogant preoccupation with the Insignificant. Arrogant preoccupation with the insignificant not only destroys any true scale of values in life but develops an arrogant selfcenteredness which destroys capacity for life, love, stability and inner happiness. The details of life are the means of living but cannot become the basis, motivation or capacity for living. Thought is the motivation for life while food, shelter, clothing, etc., are the details and means of living. When one is motivated for living because of details of living such as food, transportation, fame, wealth, etc., he has used Arrogance to eliminate his capacity for life. He has used his own Arrogance from his own volition under the control of the Old Sin Nature to destroy his own capacity for life, love, stability and inner happiness. No one can become arrogant from someone else’s influence but only from improper use of personal volition. Many marriages go bad because one of the couple’s Arrogance emphasizes the details of life over thinking. Humility, which results from thinking emphasizes capacity for life and with capacity one can enjoy the details of life. Without the capacity from the thinking which develops humility the details of life will make one totally miserable. The Absolute Truth of Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul gives the believer the ability to think so that even without the accouterments of life he can still have the ultimate of inner happiness. It is Knowledge which is the environment for thinking NOT EMOTION. Emotion cannot produce vocabulary, principles nor rationales for application to life. One can possess all the accouterments of life and still be miserable with them because he can have no capacity for them without thought. All he has done is feed his Arrogance with the details of life and Arrogance will always be hungry for more and he will become totally miserable trying to acquire them.

### **Bible Doctrine & Emotional Arrogance**

God’s sense of humor is truly great and one can see it when he realizes that God has allowed Christianity to remain in Human History despite the multitude of Believers who weep and wail, do penance, apologize, spend their lives working to correct the flaws in the devil’s world to appease God, and MORE, all in an effort to gain forgiveness for sin and override what The Lord Jesus, The Christ did for mankind on the cross. This emotionalism is not a part of forgiveness and not a part of salvation and not part of the Grace Plan of God. Emotion is only

good when functioning under the control of Doctrinal Thinking in the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul within the [Divine Dynasphere](#). If there is no thought in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul based on Absolute Truth then there is no preparation to meet civil war, revolution, world war, tornadoes, floods, or any other disaster whether historical, national, natural or personal. Bible Doctrine is the environment for decisions not feelings from emotion. Emotions are supposed to be the result of the appreciation of thinking and the nervous extension of thought in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul. Emotions are designed to enable man to enjoy life. However, if decisions are made based on emotion, options for the function of freedom are limited until one runs out of options and has only Divine Discipline and the Sin Unto Death to terminate the misery of his life on this planet. Emotional Arrogance converts reality into illusion and hallucination. This is often done as a result of the misdirection of volition and physiologically through the illicit use of drugs or alcohol just as it is done spiritually through the Interlocking System of Arrogance and the Interlocking System of Antagonistic Emotional Hatred. Emotion fantasizes and collapses under pressure. People who fantasize cannot take pressure in any form and it destroys them and they have no thought basis to reach out to smack down pressure. In time of disaster emotion possesses no capability for coping with the situation and the pressure results in a retreat from reality and the greater the retreat the closer one comes to psychosis. Therefore, Emotional Arrogance inevitably interlocks with [Psychotic Arrogance](#). This is why Arrogance is far stronger than any good deed, love, even perfect environment. This is why people reject and conspire against good and honorable government. Therefore, these people walk in darkness as a result of Emotional Arrogance and [Emotional Revolt of the Soul](#).

Arrogance was the key factor when Adam and Ishah were in the garden and they rejected the perfect environment of the garden of Eden because of it. The doctrine related to the Plan of God for them and the issues of the Angelic Conflict had been continuously taught to them each day “in the cool of the evening” when The Lord Jesus, The Christ came to the garden and taught them. Each faced the issue set out as a test by God and failed because of Arrogance. The woman wanted to be as smarter than Ish and as smart as God. The man chose the woman out side the Plan of God and the garden and its perfect environment rather than The Lord Jesus, The Christ and the perfect environment in the garden. Eschatologically the last revolution in Human History will be based on the [Arrogance of Rejection](#) of the perfect environment and government of the millennial reign of The Lord Jesus, The Christ. This will be the only perfect government in Human History in perfect environment on the earth and will demonstrate the fulfillment of the doctrines and principles of scripture, yet people in Arrogance will reject it.

### **Emotional Arrogance & Revolution**

To the extent one is entangled in the Interlocking System of Arrogance, to that extent, he is without happiness and the longer he is in the Interlocking System of Arrogance the more intense his [Unhappiness](#) becomes. All revolution is the Arrogance of Rejection of the good environment produced from adherence to the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions under legitimate honorable government and substituting the Evil environment of tyranny. Revolution can only produce tyranny which is anti God and anti establishment.

Revolution could not exist without [Crusader](#), [Criminal](#), [Conspiracy](#), [Political](#), [Client Nation](#), [Authority](#), [Ignorance](#), [Power](#), [Iconoclastic](#), unhappiness, and above all Emotional Arrogance. Emotional Arrogance always rejects legitimate authority in life. Iconoclastic Arrogance + Emotional Arrogance == total confusion and disorientation to life. Emotional Arrogance results in people believing the absurdities of life. Once this occurs people lose all sense of responsibility and integrity with regard to the function of the client nation. Therefore answer to the question in the recent history of the United States of America comes to mind clearly, “how could anyone vote for Bill Clinton or Barak Obama 2 times or even consider Hillary Clinton or Joe Biden as suitable candidates for the Presidency of the United States of America”?

### **Jealousy & Emotional Arrogance**

[Jealousy](#) is an attitude of discontent, with another's achievements or with the way they have treated one. Jealousy can be a part of both Motivational Arrogance and Motivational Antagonism from the Interlocking System of Arrogance and the Interlocking System of Antagonistic Emotional Hatred as Mental Attitude Arrogance and Mental Attitude Antagonism. It intrudes into another's privacy and in so doing destroys human freedom. It is an essential part of Crusader Arrogance and Self Righteous Arrogance and produces legalism and moral degeneracy. It becomes Legalism and Tyranny through possessiveness and is, in this way, related to the destruction of the Christian Way of Life. It is related to “personal love” through Fear of rivalry and loss of another's love or attention. It is related to hatred since it is irrational and suspicious and it is the basis for [Inordinate Competition](#) in relationships especially romantic love. It is a strong basis for strife and discord in organizations as well. Jealousy is the basis for rejection of authority, therefore, [Conspiracy](#) and [Revolution](#).

Jealousy is related to the suppression of [Pride](#), which is the trigger for producing false motivation and discord. ([Phil 1:15](#)) Arrogance creates hangups in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul and these are the source of false motivation in life. The people with these flaws are always petty and jealous and always trying to find weaknesses in others. If they cannot find any real weakness in others they will make up their own brand and attribute these to the others. However, when the hangups are reversed by suppression of pride and Arrogance there begins a chain reaction and it results in the most heinous function of Evil. Pressure put on pride depresses it and sets a trigger which can set off the entire system of [Mental Attitude Arrogance](#) and Sins and from this, in the believer, a Christian monster is created.

Jealousy DESTROYS reciprocity and reciprocity in Love for God is the only motivation for staying with Bible Doctrine and the Spiritual Life. Jealousy is anti freedom because it does not permit people to love from their own volition. It demands love and attention based on one's own volition not on the volition of another. Ironically by this means the volition of the very person whose attention is desired as the basis for love is in fact destroyed along with the love potential. This destroys the possibility of being loved at all by this person. At the same time the Spiritual Life which God has given to the believer and which is motivated by Reciprocal Love cannot be completed while under jealousy.

Jealousy is related to hatred and is both an arrogant and emotional sin. It is irrational in it's

hatred and resentment of others. It is a “mood” Arrogance which is troubled by the possibility that a persons love has been directed to a rival. It leads to suspicion and motivates anger, hatred, gossip, slander, maligning and revenge. It destroys the desire of another to love because of one’s bitterness, vindictiveness, implacability, gossip, slander or revenge. It is the basis for inordinate competition in love, in friendship, marriage, family relationships, social intercourse, organization functions even business.

Fear functions as a part of the Interlocking System of Antagonistic Emotional Hatred and it basically is the antagonistic enhancement of the Interlocking System of Arrogance and together these destroy the [Problem Solving Devices](#). Fear replaces Metabolized Bible Doctrine as this believer slides into [Reversionism](#) with the attack of the 4 Horsemen of Apostasy (4 stages of reversionism starting with Emotional Revolt of the Soul). This causes the believer to loose the battle of stress in the Soul and therefore it becomes obvious that Fear Creates Stress in the soul. The Fear “virus” in the soul represents Emotional Arrogance as a primary distraction to the Spiritual Life. Reaction Jealousy combines the Antagonistic complex and Arrogance complex, and at this point jealousy becomes a sin of emotion. [Guilt](#) and Jealousy are a part of the motivation for [Revenge](#) and exemplifies the irrationality of emotional sins. Jealousy is possessiveness where one tries to take control of another’s life and for believers this often results in an attempt to prevent advance to the high ground of Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God in another believer. It is the Arrogance of imagining how important one is and how possessive he can be of others.

### **Emotional Arrogance & Personal vs Impersonal Love**

Before one gives personal love to anyone he must evaluate the object for his love else his love will be compromised if the object is the wrong person for him. Knowledge must precede love and one must know the person before he can love the person in order for that love to be true. One must know a person in order to admire and love them so that without knowledge of the person he will inevitably develop less respect for them, reject them and become indifferent to them and ultimately separate from them. In order to function effectively in life and especially the Spiritual Life, one cannot fall into hate for a person but must switch to [Impersonal or Unconditional Love](#) and simply avoid them. The believer is not to hate since that is a sin and he is not entitled to that. Most people are so Arrogant that when they make a mistake about choosing friends or in romantic relationships with opposite sex members they blame them and never think to blame self. Hatred is nothing more than a person making a mistake about the object of his love and most hatred and antagonism is nothing more than Arrogance. The person who is without Arrogance is one who when he finds he has made a mistake about a person or friend or loved one he switches to Impersonal, Unconditional Love and does not bother to hate them but simply recognizes his own stupidity for getting close to them.

Therefore, anything in life which is sustained by emotion will eventually fall apart and totally shatter. Emotion is wonderful but to be sustained by emotion is always a disaster because man is are designed to be sustained by thought never emotion. Emotion is designed to respond to thought and there is a place for emotion in having capacity for love but it is a terrible thing to try to sustain love with emotion. To the extent that one sustains personal love with emotion to



that extent when the love ends, the opposite reaction will occur and the resulting hatred will be to the same level that the love was in the beginning. Emotion turns love into Jealousy, hatred, vindictiveness and implacability and there is nothing like strong emotional love to lead into the development of strong hatred. The same emotion which gives an appreciation for so many things in life, adding to capacity and stimulating it, also betrays when one makes a mistake in his choices or selections. At the foundation of all of this is one's Arrogance which is often initiated by someone flattering or giving attention to him and then it turns into hatred when for any reason he is rejected.

Unquestionably the most destructive of all things in human relationships is involvement in the Interlocking System of Arrogance, and for effective human relationships there must be the development of great [Humility](#). Arrogant people seek unconditional love while offering only conditional love. The [Lust Patterns](#) of Arrogance covet:

- ✧ Wealth without Honor
- ✧ Success without Integrity
- ✧ Promotion without Ability
- ✧ Approbation without Humility
- ✧ Love without Virtue
- ✧ Sex without Happiness (self gratification).

Only [Impersonal or Unconditional Love for Mankind](#) perpetuates a relationship without any involvement within Motivational Arrogance or Motivational Antagonism. Problems related to or requiring function under Impersonal Love for Mankind for solutions include [Unrealistic Expectations](#) and frustrations which destroy the focus of the Spiritual Life which is supposed to lead up to [Occupation with the Person of The Lord Jesus, The Christ](#). This destroyed focus results in having Eyes on People, Self and Things and involves both the Emotional and Arrogance Sins and Arrogance Skills. This also can become [Role Model Arrogance](#) with its assigning someone to the position of Role Model based on customary functions or having a certain status in life so that when there is departing from these functions or status standards, there will be maligning, gossip, vituperation and vilification.

The believer MUST always remember that he cannot change people to conform to his personal standards and expectations and that this is a part of power and approbation lust. He cannot make a role model out of another since they will ultimately violate his personal expectations and move him into [Iconoclastic Arrogance](#). Each believer can change only one life that being ONLY his own personal Life and he can change only one person that being Self. Impersonal or Unconditional Love for Mankind perpetuates its own honor, integrity and virtue throughout all stages of spiritual adulthood, without reaction, antagonism, self righteousness or self pity, without gossip, maligning, vindictiveness or slander, etc. Impersonal Love for Mankind is not influenced by Arrogance or sin and becomes the virtue, honor and integrity required by friendship, romance and marriage and completely avoids Emotional Arrogance.

Return to the [Table of Contents](#)



## Gate #21 – The Arrogance of Hypersensitivity

Hypersensitivity is an attempt at sensitivity by the one residing and functioning in Cosmic Dynasphere I, the Interlocking System of Arrogance. Their emphasis is always focused on the Object of their Love and these people have NO Impersonal Love for Mankind therefore, and inevitably, everyone in their periphery eventually offends them by a look, a word, or a deed. Hypersensitive people are completely preoccupied with themselves and see all other people in terms of their own Arrogance. This is a person wearing their feelings on their sleeve for all to see and be irritated by. People who talk about others and vindictively criticize others are COWARDS. Hypersensitivity is Arrogance and Arrogance is Cowardice. This Hypersensitivity stifles and neutralizes the function of Impersonal Love for Mankind and is tantamount to the Arrogant anarchy of rejection of all legitimate authority in life. Hypersensitivity means Loss of Common Sense through Arrogant divorcement from Reality.

Normal Sensitivity is thoughtfulness of others while Hypersensitivity is thoughtlessness regarding others.

↪ Jealousy + Pride = Hypersensitivity + Pettiness

All hypersensitive people are Complainers and petty. To be sensitive about those around you is to be thoughtful of those around you, however, people who are totally unteachable are the ones who always take advantage of courtesy and thoughtfulness. These people are Arrogant, stupid and think that a person who is courteous and kind in commanding others is weak. When discovered in a congregation these Arrogant ones are to be warned when they fail a few times and if they persist in their failings then removed and even publicly crucified if needed. This is the method needed to ferret out Arrogance which is unteachable and can never learn. All Arrogant people think they are smarter than the leader and eventually must be removed.

Hypersensitivity is a loss of common sense through Arrogant divorcement from reality. Sensitivity is objective, and directed toward others with thoughtfulness while Hypersensitivity is subjective directed toward self with Arrogance. Sensitivity is the expression of the Functional Virtue of Impersonal Love while Hypersensitivity is the expression of many levels of Arrogance. Many people cannot be taught because of their inordinate interest in trivial concepts and pose trivial questions related to their personal Arrogance. You cannot insert personal Arrogance into Perception, Cognition, Incultation, Metabolization of Bible Doctrine or any other academic subject and expect to learn anything. This is a system of subjectivity, introversion and operation over think by which the Believer can distract himself with his own doubts and personal Arrogance. There is a total Arrogance in the Believer who attempts to reconcile things which appeal to him with Bible Doctrine. In reality, the Believer ultimately must choose, Bible Doctrine or his favorite academic subject. Hypersensitivity therefore generally functions under Negative Volition Arrogance. The underlying flaw is being only interested in the teaching of Bible Doctrine when it applies to one's personal situation, problem or difficulty. This is not positive volition and is Arrogant rejection of Bible Doctrine and self interest.

Hypersensitivity creates its own inside pressures because Arrogance is the source of the Hypersensitivity and is the pressure generator of the soul. Arrogant people carry around with them their own pressure generator resulting in a persistent sense of inadequacy and insecurity.

On a day by day basis all that these people do is manufacture their own pressure in life from their own Arrogance. Arrogant people always pick something which is insignificant to be under pressure with. They create their own failure in life and always blame it on others instead of self. Blaming others for problems in one's life is a sign of total preoccupation with self, which by definition is ARROGANCE.

The believer cannot ever insert personal Arrogance into the most important function of life which is the Perception, Cognition, Inculcation, Metabolization, and Application of Bible Doctrine. Hypersensitivity is locked in with the function of Negative Volition Arrogance in the Interlocking System of Arrogance. Under the ministry of God the Holy Spirit the Believer must divorce Arrogant Preoccupation with Self from the Perception, Cognition, Inculcation, Metabolization, and Application of Bible Doctrine or Divine Discipline will hit him very hard. In the function of the [Grace Apparatus for Perception](#) it is essential to completely understand the Bible Doctrine which is taught before it can ever applied to self or allowed to generate a personal offense toward it.

Sensitivity is needed for Perception of Bible Doctrine and for application of Bible Doctrine to self and others with whom one may be in conflict with and to life in general. In the chain of responding to kindness when a reaction is inserted from Jealousy, Pride or Implacability the result will be devastating. [Mental Attitude](#) Sins break the chain of a gracious response to gracious actions. Jealousy as a form of Arrogance is the most destructive form of [Motivational Arrogance](#) as Mental Attitude Arrogance and a Mental Attitude Sin. Unwarranted use of violence never solves any problem, in fact resorting to violence against an individual or group which is helpless may stimulate Arrogance but will eventually destroy and humble the insolent presumptuousness of this individual.

Hypersensitivity is involvement in Cosmic Dynasphere I, the Interlocking System of Arrogance and it is motivated by the strong influence of Evil and as Motivational Arrogance serve to motivate the individual to engage in other Motivational Arrogance and much [Functional Arrogance](#). Sensitivity is the honorable motivation from Bible Doctrine and the is Motivational Virtue of [Personal Love for God](#) to engage in the Functional Virtue of [Impersonal Love](#) in the Divine Dynasphere. It manifests itself in good manners and individual accommodation to a group in professional, social, academic and spiritual life. Hyper-Sensitivity is a manifestation of lack of both Human and Spiritual maturity and one primary manifestation is [Self Pity](#). Hypersensitivity is making a false issue out of self incompatible with the specific circumstances. Preoccupation with self plus an exaggerated [Personal Opinion](#) of one's value to a group results in attempted superimposition of one's opinion on the group and using one's influence to undermine the authority and policy of that group. [Self Righteous Arrogance](#) never forms an effective policy because it *resists operating on principles*.

Pride and Hypersensitivity are always mated and this Arrogance always thinks in terms of Superior vs inferior, always looking for someone else to blame for personal decisions while the Hypersensitivity compensates for any and all the bad decisions made by blaming others. These people who are generally wrong about everything are very aggressive in maligning others.

Their Arrogance forces them to ignore the fact that they are wrong and therefore they must pass the blame to someone else. Judging, Maligning and Gossip are all part of this function. Therefore, hypersensitive people, as a part of their involvement in Arrogance, resent their insecurity, which they manufacture from their inferiority. When operating under Hypersensitivity the believer will never find his right church, right pastor, right Man or right Woman and will be miserable throughout his life and basically friendless. Therefore, Sensitivity as the expression of Impersonal Love and thoughtfulness of others, must be created through daily residence and function in the [Divine Dynasphere](#). Sensitivity is not subject to becoming Hypersensitivity unless it malfunctions under Personal Love by lacking support from the Functional Virtue of [Impersonal Unconditional Love for Mankind](#).

Impersonal Love sensitivity is the mechanic in the Christian Way of Life of being thoughtful and tolerant of others and if one has the ability to be thoughtful to those he works with, then he has capacity for Personal Love in his life. In contrast Hypersensitivity is being Arrogantly thoughtful of self and totally intolerant of others. Hypersensitive Believers are totally unteachable because of the Arrogant flaw of operation over think. They live outside the Divine Dynasphere, lacking the Filling of God the Holy Spirit and teachability so that this Believer has no ability to learn Bible Doctrine thus no momentum in the Spiritual Life because advance to Spiritual Maturity comes from LEARNING Bible Doctrine.

In addition no one can built a system based on Self Righteous Arrogance to attempt to gain salvation from God. If one moves into self righteousness and rejects God's righteousness there is NO salvation for him. The Plan of God excludes all Arrogance and Self Righteousness and NO unbeliever can acquire Salvation by using his own Self Righteous to attempt to enter the Plan of God. In addition no believer can attain Spiritual Maturity with Arrogance in his soul and functioning with a self righteous Modus Operandi. This is why some believers fulfill the maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine principle to reach Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God but their Arrogance keeps them from maintaining their Maturity and they fall backward into [Reversionism](#). The Arrogant believer is unteachable so that at some point in his advance to Spiritual Maturity he will resent a subject or the method of presentation of a subject from his right Pastor Teacher. This does not occur when he is interested in a particular aspect of Bible Doctrine or has problems in life which he thinks that Bible Doctrine can resolve. Arrogant people learn Bible Doctrine until their personal difficulties are resolved and then they return to their former status and Modus Operandi within the Cosmic Dynaspheres. The believer cannot be eclectic with regard to Bible Doctrine and advance to Spiritual Maturity. Any involvement in the Interlocking System of Arrogance is being disoriented to authority and unteachable with regard to bible doctrine. It is the function of Humility with the recognition of and submission to [Authority](#) preserving humility which is essential to attain Spiritual Maturity. God delegates authority in life in order for all people to function under so that they might learn Humility as the basis entrance into the Plan of God and for their advance to Spiritual Maturity. Therefore, Authority in all areas of life is designed to maintain Humility and therefore teachability. Therefore, involvement in Self Righteous Arrogance with a lack of Authority Orientation and Enforced Humility and having never developed any level of Genuine Humility is a clear sign of immaturity, both mentally and spiritually.



These Believers in their Arrogance create their own flaws and failures and manage to rationalize them by blaming others NEVER self. They are saturated with a sense of inadequacy and insecurity. The reality for the believer is that ALL security is related to God never People and ALL efforts with regard to it MUST be directed toward God. These Childish adults are created by poor parental training resulting in immaturity in their youth where they never grow up because they are never required to take responsibility for their own personal decisions. These types are thoughtful only of those they love and insensitive toward all of those they dislike.

### **Hypersensitivity & Insensitivity as Non-virtuous Functions**

Non-virtuous function in life is found in Hypersensitivity concerning self with Insensitivity toward others as Motivational Arrogance or Motivational Degeneracy. Hypersensitivity is Arrogant preoccupation with self and results in making an issue of self in every occasion. Hypersensitivity functions under the Arrogance of the [Demand Syndrome](#) where one is always trying to have one's own way while making life miserable for everyone in his periphery when this does not happen. The demand syndrome thus is seeking to control everyone in one's periphery, in all aspects of his life. This is the Hypersensitivity Arrogance of attempting to superimpose one's will over others which results in tremendous intolerance and insensitivity toward all others. Therefore HYPERSENSITIVITY is also INSENSITIVITY toward the feelings and needs of others. Laughing at or criticizing another for expressing some truly idiotic option is NOT sensitivity. Hypersensitivity is total preoccupation with, in fact, an obsession with, the importance of self and a total disregard for the importance or needs of any others. Hypersensitive people fantasize and are divorced from reality and the farther they get from reality the closer they come to Neurosis and [Psychosis](#). When confronted with obvious superiority in another the hypersensitive believer seeks to destroy the superiority, rationalize it away or ridicule it, thus fantasizing and hallucinating about his own false superiority. When confronted with obvious inferiority the hypersensitive believer becomes a bully and tyrant demonstrating his superiority. Hypersensitive people are totally unteachable and Hypersensitive believers are unteachable and make issue of self rather than Bible Doctrine and when confronted with superiority or inferiority in a Pastor Teacher they react according to the lines of their own hypersensitivity:

- ▲ Criticize and ridicule the more knowledgeable pastor
- ▲ Bully the less knowledgeable pastor

Because of operation overthink the hypersensitive believer becomes eclectic and picks and chooses what areas of Bible Doctrine they want to learn and rejects all others. The reality which they reject is that there is always some aspect of Bible Doctrine which will KICK one's ASS back to reality but they do not want this. The Motivational Arrogance of Hypersensitivity combines to destroy [Humility](#) and Teachability which is the most important factor in the Christian Way of Life. It is the academic self discipline of Genuine Humility which becomes a factor when some pastors stumble through a subject and the positive believer must consider that he can always learn something from everyone. The Motivational Arrogance of Hypersensitivity is often unseen but is expressed through the Functional Arrogance of overtly making issue of self with maligning, judging and gossiping about others or engaging in overt [Self Vindication](#). This destroys the believer's teachability thus his momentum in the Spiritual

Life and thus his Spiritual Life in general. Therefore, Sensitivity is OBJECTIVE and an expression of Impersonal Love toward All while Hypersensitivity is SUBJECTIVE and results in arrogant expressions through Functional Arrogance always emphasizing self. Motivated by arrogance and preoccupation with self the hypersensitive believer is always seeking a “friendly” church instead of a doctrinal teaching ministry and therefore never grows up in his Spiritual Life.

Return to the [Table of Contents](#)

## **Gate #22 – The Arrogance of Unhappiness**

### **Happiness**

Happiness, (gr) Chara = Inner Happiness, Contentment, Relaxed Mental Attitude, which brings true capacity for life, mastery of the details of life and focus on the [ESSENTIALS](#) of Life. God always possessed Inner Happiness, he is happy now and has been happy since Eternity Past and is perfect and an integral part of the Essence of God or Character of God. Nothing any creature can do in life, no matter how good or how heinously bad it may be, can change the Happiness of God. This is exactly what we desire as [Problem Solving Device #9](#), the top floor of the [Edification Complex of the Soul](#). The fact is that one cannot make God unhappy but must not ever forget that God can make him unhappy. This divine happiness is the basis for his being motivated from His Love to think, plan and act in terms of GRACE toward mankind. Upon making the decision to CREATE in Eternity Past and at the point of the establishment of the Divine Decree, God decided to SHARE his happiness with mankind. However, in order to do this God must share something of his Capacity to love, his Mental Attitude, and his character which is ONLY possible through regeneration and subsequent Perception, Cognition, Inculcation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine consistently. ([Neh 8:10](#))

God, therefore, determined a way to provide this Inner Happiness to mankind and ALL of this was accomplished through the principles and policy of Grace. This was a formidable task because in all of creation, the hardest creature to make happy is Man. The truly amazing thing is that God wants to share his happiness with man but He can only do it with Christians who must be BORN into his Family first through regeneration. Grace encompasses the principles and policies of God in creation where he has found a way to share this Inner Happiness and contentment and GOD and Grace cannot fail but man including Christians usually miss the mark on this one and fail to acquire the [Happiness of God](#). Under the Grace Plan and Policy of God in order for the believer to share in his happiness in this Church Age it requires:

- ✧ Constant Filling of God the Holy Spirit
- ✧ Consistent Function under Grace Apparatus for Perception
- ✧ Unrelenting Construction of the Edification Complex of the Soul

The KEY to reaching the point of sharing God’s Happiness in the Christian Way of Life is the Edification Complex of the Soul and the sooner the believer constructs his to completion the better off he will be. However, the believer MUST be very careful to not build an Edification

Complex of the Soul with poor construction materials, the LIE of False Doctrines from EVIL, which result in a collapsing structure with a foundation of FH, FAT-HEADEDNESS or **ARROGANCE**

### **Thinking & Happiness**

Essentially what one thinks in his soul is the only thing which determines whether he is happy or not and the fact is that happiness is not dependent on the circumstances in one's life. By one's own thinking he can carry happiness or misery with him wherever he goes. However, Arrogance is also a system of thinking and is what the person carries with him in order to produce Misery in his life. The Arrogance of Unhappiness gives nothing and demands everything from others. It is a demand operation where the individual demands attention from everyone in his periphery. It is closely related to **Psychopathic Arrogance**. A Fragmented life resulting from entrance into the Interlocking System of Arrogance, Cosmic Dynasphere I, by pulling the pin of ONE'S OWN ARROGANCE GRENADE, is an unhappy life. If the believer, who is guaranteed total happiness in eternity with God, becomes involved in the Interlocking System of Arrogance, he WILL have a totally fragmented and completely unhappy life. Most believers consistently blame others for their unhappiness but the reality is that they cause this unhappiness for themselves by involvement in Cosmic Dynasphere I, the Interlocking System of Arrogance. The reality is that NO ONE can make another person happy and the believer must carry with him his own capacity in life and manufacture in his SOUL from his thinking his own Inner Happiness. In addition, NO ONE can make another person UNHAPPY and unhappiness is also produced BY SELF. These unhappy believers put the blame for their miserable life onto other people, the circumstances of their life, the environment in which they must live and even on GOD. There is NO reason for any believer to be unhappy and in fact believers are clearly mandated to be CONTENTED with what they have (**1Tim 6:6-8**, **2Cor 12:1-10**, **Heb 13:5**). However, no matter what, or how much a person may possess or who he is in society, when he enters the Interlocking System of Arrogance he WILL have an unhappy life. The PIN of one's own arrogance grenade is any aspect of the Interlocking System of Arrogance into which one becomes entangled. Unhappiness Arrogance interlocks almost instantly with many other areas of Arrogance such as **Limitations Arrogance**, where one pushes self beyond his limitations and capacities.

The Arrogance of Unhappiness is a level of Selfcenteredness and Preoccupation with Self which eliminates the possibility of any happiness in life. The Arrogance of Unhappiness is, therefore, total subject preoccupation with self and is another area resulting in failure to develop teachability in one's life because the individual under the Arrogance of Unhappiness is constantly Justifying self by his function in the **Arrogance Skills**. Selfcenteredness, as Arrogant Preoccupation with self, eliminates any capacity for happiness and without capacity one cannot ever have happiness. Self gratification which occurs within the Interlocking System of Arrogance can be very stimulating but it is NOT happiness. When one is involved in self gratification, no matter who or how many are aiding one in self gratification, being out of the Power System of God it is completely self destructive for the believer and produces incredible Self Induced Misery followed inevitably by Divine Discipline. Not only does involvement in the Cosmic Dynaspheres guarantee unhappiness in life but it also leads to erroneous ideas as to

what truly constitutes happiness. [Self Justification](#), [Self Gratification](#), [Self Righteousness](#) form a team in the attempt to find some happiness in life which, once it is functioning, is very difficult to break out of. To the extent one depends on others to make him happy, to that extent he is in the Arrogance of Unhappiness. ALL Arrogance involvement produces preoccupation with self which inevitably results in UNHAPPINESS and at the same time eliminates any capacity for happiness. For the believer happiness is ONLY found while residing and functioning within the [Divine Dynasphere](#) and is [Virtue](#) related and Virtue dependent. Therefore, clearly, happiness is a state of soul and is not receiving something from someone or being the recipient of some effort on another persons part or receiving attention, approbation or declaration of undying love from another. No one can cause any other person to be happy except God and only then through one's own exercise of a positive volitional attitude toward the Plan of God and His Bible Doctrine. A person may be able to stimulate another or complement the other but that person cannot ever make anyone happy. Someone may do something nice for another and if this other is happy in his Soul he will respond with happiness but if he is unhappy in his soul, no matter what or how great a nice thing is ever done for him, it will not and cannot ever cause that person to be happy. Happiness as a state of soul is not being in pleasant environment, having loved ones close by, or having the material things which one has attained in life at one's fingertips. There is no such thing as a person or thing making anyone happy. This is one of the great Arrogance myths of life. Only the Arrogance of Unhappiness assumes that people, material possessions, pleasant environment or social acceptance can make one happy. Unhappiness of soul relates to the Arrogance of soul involving personal [Hypersensitivity](#) and total insensitivity toward others. All Arrogance, being selfcenteredness and preoccupation with self, means that these people, unhappy of soul, will stand around and expect others to make them happy. They are attention demanders and give nothing of themselves and demand everything for themselves from others.

ALL Arrogance destroys capacity and makes one unteachable and causes him to lose interest in normal things in life so that he has no hobbies or interests and when retirement occurs it will result in the person being a dull cratchety OLD PERSON. Everything in life is designed for happy people to enjoy but ONLY people who have Inner Happiness can enjoy it all. Happy people, ones who carry their happiness with them, can make a successful happy marriage because success in marriage demands [Virtue](#) and happiness cannot exist without VIRTUE. Pleasant things in life are NOT happiness but happiness is based on Virtue and is the reason the Power System of God has the mandate that says VIRTUE FIRST. The Arrogance of Unhappiness seeks to dominate one's environment because Arrogance is preoccupation and obsession with self leading eventually to [Psychosis](#). The fact is that control of one's environment and those within it is not ever enough so that for these people, as a result of their total arrogance, there must be total enslavement, total domination, of everyone and everything in their periphery.

The disciples and all believers in this Church Age are commanded to keep on having Inner Happiness at all times because that is what they are designed for, sharing the [Happiness of God](#). However, this is potential based on the development of the [Edification Complex of the Soul](#), deployment of the [10 Problem Solving Devices](#) and maintaining residence in the [Divine](#)

**Dynasphere.** In order to accomplish this the believer must follow the example of The Lord Jesus the Christ in consistent Perception, Cognition, Incultation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine by means of the Grace Apparatus for Perception in order to effect the construction of the Edification Complex of the Soul. IF the believer can accomplish these things, maybe he will and maybe he will not, then he will receive Inner Happiness as the result of his consistent Post Salvation Epistemological Rehabilitation from Perception, Cognition, Incultation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine. This is a LAW set up by God and is unfailing where the believer is concerned. This means that the believer can have:

- ✧ Inner Happiness which fills up a deficiency in his life ([Phil 4:11-12](#), [Heb 13:5-6](#))
- ✧ Inner Happiness which fully possesses him in his Edification Complex of the Soul during the varied functions of his Royal Priesthood including
  - Prayer
  - Perception, Cognition, Incultation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine
  - Witnessing
  - Giving
  - Worship
  - Praise
  - Filling of God the Holy Spirit.
  - Etc.
- ✧ Inner Happiness which fully influences his life and thinking as a result of completed construction of the Edification Complex of the Soul, deployment of the 10 Problem Solving Devices and consistent residence in the Divine Dynasphere under the Filling of God the Holy Spirit.
- ✧ Inner Happiness which fills with a certain which comes from the Filling of God the Holy Spirit ([Gal 5:22](#)) and this comes from the Edification Complex of the Soul. ([John 17:13](#))

One source of this Inner Happiness is unstable, because the believer can lose the Filling of God the Holy Spirit by Sin, therefore, it can be very fleeting without depth or roots unless he engages in consistent Perception, Cognition, Incultation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine under the Grace Apparatus for Perception. Once the believer completes the requirements of the Law of happiness from God, then Sharing the Happiness of God belongs to that believer with its capacity for Life and Love, a Relaxed Mental Attitude and Mastery of the Details of Life. Once the Edification Complex of the Soul is completed the believer can fail through sin if he uses the Rebound Procedure as an IRF (Instant Reaction Force) and returns quickly to the Divine Dynasphere and Filling of God the Holy Spirit, the Edification Complex of the Soul and its structure still remains and is not altered and Inner Happiness returns and in fact is expanded. This provides a great motivation for the believer to be consistent in his use of rebound and in Perception, Cognition, Incultation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine and is why the bible says “Weeping may endure for the night but Joy, Inner Happiness comes in the morning”; “The Joy, Inner Happiness, of the Lord is your Strength”. This is what construction of the Edification Complex of the Soul brings to the believer in order to combat the Arrogance of Unhappiness.



### Categorical Happiness

- Minus H (-H) = stimulation or distraction from the Spiritual Life by a TEMPORARY non-Sustainable state of Euphoria. These are the believers who are happy because they have found something in life to stimulate them:
  - Drugs
  - Alcohol
  - Sex
  - Fast Cars or Motorcycles
  - Success in Business
  - Social Life Acceptance
- However, this only lasts as long as the stimulation and euphoria exists and then the happiness fades and evaporates.
- Neutral H (nH) = Happiness derived from understanding and adherence to the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institution principles designed for the protection and perpetuation of the Human Race. ([Prov 18:22](#), [Eccl 9:4-9](#))
- Plus H (+H) = True permanent happiness in the believer who has reached Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God having executed the Protocol Plan of God and who is a winner believer and an invisible hero. ([Prov 3:13](#))

### 6 Illusions of Happiness apart from Virtue and Values In Life

- One cannot build happiness on the details of Life such as Marriage, Money, Sex, Success, Pleasure, Health, Social Life, etc.
- One cannot build happiness on environment including Location, Home, Car, Money, Job, Etc. Happiness is very much today ERRONEOUSLY associated with Good or Better Environment demonstrated by the environmental movements in society.
- One cannot build happiness on People but only on Virtue and values extrapolated from Metabolized Bible Doctrine learned in one's lifetime therefore the Spiritual Life.
- Be sure to NEVER play games with the lives of others since one cannot EVER build happiness on friendship, marriage, children or any other human relationship.
- One cannot build happiness on changing the Devils World by way of Christian Activism, [Crusader Arrogance](#), Social Engineering, Violence, Crime, Civil Disobedience, or [Revolution](#).
- One cannot build happiness on another's Unhappiness through the use of Gossip, Maligning, Judging, Vilification, Revenge, etc.

Rapport with God must take precedence over Rapport with People and this can only result from consistent Perception, Cognition, Incultation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine. Therefore, True Happiness must come from the principles developed from Metabolization of Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul. On the other hand, Pseudo Happiness is often related to the superficial pleasures in life, the "details of life" ([Eccl 1:1-2](#)) which require neither Virtue nor Values. Pseudo Happiness is very often related to some form of self promotion related to approbation, status symbols, culture, etc., over the spiritual life. Therefore, Pseudo Happiness is very often the source of Self Induced Misery under the Law of Volitional Responsibility. And of course, Pseudo Happiness is related always to the [Arrogance](#)

Skills and cycling through these for the destruction of the Spiritual Life of the believer.

### **The Myths of the Arrogance of Unhappiness.**

This is people saying that other people and pleasant circumstances can make one happy. This is the fundamental concept behind entertainment. Entertainment can be enjoyed by those who are happy but unhappy people don't even enjoy even GOOD entertainment any more than they enjoy church services. The reality of happiness in life is that the individual brings his happiness or unhappiness with him to every event whether it is something he wants to do or not. There is a similar myth and illusion about marriage in the thinking that it will bring happiness. However, marriage is one of the greatest battlegrounds in history and will never bring happiness to anyone who does not possess happiness first. Marriage was never designed to make one happy and by putting 2 unhappy people together in marriage they will VASTLY intensify their areas and expressions of unhappiness.

### **Happiness for the Believer vs Unbeliever**

Any happiness prior to making Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God is always temporary and superficial, it can be called "neutral H". Therefore, the fact is that the unbeliever can be happy and many times the individual who was happy as an unbeliever is miserable as a believer. The basis for prolonged Unbeliever happiness is understanding and adherence to the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions and under the humility derived from Authority Orientation the development of his Honor and Integrity. However, this bonifide Human Happiness is unstable and depends on pleasant circumstances and acquisition of the Details of life. In addition this Human happiness never can carry anyone during adversity, disaster and very often even great prosperity. Having Human Happiness when the unbeliever makes Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God this often brings misery to this new believer because if he does not construct an Edification Complex of the Soul within a few years of his Salvation, the happiness from the initial Filling of God the Holy Spirit will only carry him in the same manner as human happiness carries the unbeliever. The unbeliever has happiness now and again with misery between so that the main objective of the smart unbeliever is to get the periods of happiness as close together as possible, unfortunately, when this is accomplished this unbeliever becomes often bored with the continuous happiness and seeks stimulation in sublimations. Although the gaps between periods of unbeliever happiness caused misery the returning Happiness stimulated him, however, now with the Happiness periods being close together this causes him to want to try new things all the time and seek greater stimulation all the time and there is NO CONTENTMENT. Then when an unbeliever makes Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God this all changes and he will either have great Inner Happiness as he advances in his Spiritual Life or constant Unhappiness from Self Induced Misery possibly with Divine Discipline added in. The point is that Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God in and of itself is not the bringer of Inner Happiness which requires consistency in the Grace Apparatus for Perception functions which provide the means for Post Salvation Epistemological Rehabilitation.

For the unbeliever true happiness is based on his honor, integrity, capacity for love and life in the status of establishment and under Humility (3 categories). For the believer happiness is all

of this plus Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul causing the development of [Virtue](#) resulting ultimately in [Sharing the Happiness of God](#), Problem Solving Device #9, upon reaching Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God. BECAUSE the believer possesses happiness in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul, people, things and situations can stimulate that happiness so that this believer can have good relationships with other people by responding to their compatibility. He can enjoy people and possessions but neither people nor possessions nor situations are the source of his happiness. Good relationships with people and having nice possessions merely are expressions of the capacity in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul for happiness and for life. This does not imply, by any means, that people or possessions can make anyone happy. In contrast, with Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul and Humility (3 categories) neither people nor their loss, nor material things or the loss of these things can make the believer unhappy. [Humility](#) is the foundation for basic virtue and the secret to happiness while arrogance is the basic cause of unhappiness. A romantic person is one who has capacity for truth and integrity and can applaud honor. However, the stimulation of one's approbation and receiving applause from a group will never make anyone happy.

Happiness belongs to the believer who finds wisdom, Metabolized Bible Doctrine which is available for Application to Life. There is no "Gate" or functional area in the [Divine Dynasphere](#) system as a HAPPINESS GATE but there are Wisdom Gates constituted by a combination of Basic and Advanced Christian Modus Operandi of consistent function under the [Grace Apparatus for Perception](#), Operation Z with the 4 Rs. The first thing which is produced in the Modus Operandi of the Divine Dynasphere is Basic or [Foundational Virtue](#) of Humility which leads to [Motivational Virtue](#) directed toward God and [Functional Virtue](#) directed toward man and circumstances in life, all based on the accumulated Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul. This is where happiness begins, in the Integrity Envelope of the Divine Dynasphere. ([Ps 144:15](#), [Ps 31:7](#), [John 17:13](#))

No one can make the believer happy except himself when he makes right decisions from a position of strength in the Divine Dynasphere System and thus maintains control of his life having developed a [Personal Sense of Destiny](#). Happiness is completed by Metabolized Bible Doctrine saturating the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of his Soul. One can be tolerated under the function of Impersonal, Unconditional Love from others directed toward him but this does not bring happiness. One can respond to others in marvelous ways IF he carries his happiness with him. Jesus vigorously responded to the Arrogant Woman who proclaimed that happiness was the result of his being carried in his Mother's womb and fed at her breasts. His response was direct and forceful toward this arrogant woman when he dogmatically said, "Happiness is for those who are consistent in hearing and retaining by metabolizing, Bible Doctrine". Unhappiness cannot ever be blamed on some person or situation which is antagonistic or offensive but ONLY on one's decisions to avoid consistent Perception, Cognition, Inculcation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine. Therefore, clearly it is the attitude of the individual believer toward Bible Doctrine which is responsible for his Happiness or Unhappiness in Life. Paul clearly stated that he recognized that having abundance in life or having nothing in life was NOT the source of happiness or unhappiness. ([Phil 4:11:13](#)) He taught that the

believer must LEARN to be happy, and if he constantly spends his life in Self Justification he cannot learn anything, thus because he does not LEARN Bible Doctrine, he cannot ever be happy.

Therefore, happiness is not found in material possessions nor fulfillment of goals nor in success in any field of endeavor but it is what constitutes the basis for thinking which gives capacity for Happiness. Believers have a choice to function under the Spiritual Skills from God or under the Arrogance Skills of Satan which are antagonistic to the Protocol Plan of God. It is by this means that believers become either Winner believers making Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God or Loser Believers retrogressing in the Spiritual Life to a status similar to the unbeliever and then dying a miserable death after living a miserable life. The loser believer's lifestyle is the use of the Arrogance Skills in the application of Arrogance, Emotion and Antagonism, resulting in the stimulation of the lust patterns of the Old Sin Nature motivating the trends of the Old Sin Nature to activate the Areas of Weakness or Strength in the Old Sin Nature for temptations for the production of Sin, Crime or Human Good in one's life. The Winner Believer's lifestyle is the application of the Spiritual Skills derived from maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul resulting in his function within the Divine Dynasphere to produce Divine Good and for the consistent application of Bible Doctrine to his life. Believers, therefore, are bound to be either winners or losers and without regard to which category one ultimately falls into, he is assured that he will NEVER LOSE HIS SALVATION.

### Unhappy People

Arrogant people are inevitably unhappy people because the only happiness they ever experience in life is -H. Obviously then the Arrogance of Unhappiness is one part of the fragmented life resulting directly from involvement in the Interlocking System of Arrogance. The inevitable result of living a LIFE in Cosmic Dynasphere I, the Interlocking System of Arrogance is a guarantee of misery and unhappiness which the believer invariably creates for himself to which the Lord adds the 3 categories of Divine Discipline:

- Warning
- Intensive
- Dying = Sin Unto Death

### Erroneous Ideas as to what constitutes happiness in life

Subjective preoccupation with self as part of entrance into the Cosmic Dynasphere I guarantees that one of the fragments of that believer's life will be the Arrogance of Unhappiness and part of this theorizing results in the disaster of Misery in one's life. The principle always remains that one cannot build happiness based on a moment of time where there has been an experience resulting in some great pleasure. Only sufficient Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul can bring any level of happiness to the believer. Only with maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul will the believer have the Capacity for True Happiness and then be able to have happiness in life in any and all situations in life.

No matter what one may achieve in life (Research the Story of the Life of Smedley Butler) when the pin of one's own Arrogance Grenade is pulled it results in fragmenting and destroying all that one may have achieved and in fact one's entire life. Arrogance will destroy all capacity to appreciate what has been achieved in life and also the capacity for happiness, love and life itself. These results are administered by the Cosmic Dynaspheres devised by Satan who is the greatest SUPER GENIUS CREATURE ever created so that he does not have to attack any believer directly. The ironic thing is that whatever pressure the believer perceives he is under he has invariably caused to come to himself. Satan knows believers very well and he receives constant intel about each believer and sits back and laughs at them when they pull the pin on their own Arrogance grenade and VOLUNTARILY enter into function within HIS mechanism of operation. Whenever a believer pulls the pin on his own grenade by entering into the Interlocking System of Arrogance he is deluded, distracted and deceived by a myriad of false concepts especially regarding happiness. In the Christian Way of Life, capacity for Happiness MUST precede the true acquisition or function of happiness and in the Cosmic Dynaspheres the happiness, contentment and mental stability of [Problem Solving Device #9](#), Sharing the Happiness of God, cannot and does not exist.

Therefore, it is difficult at best for those residing outside the Divine Dynasphere to realize that happiness is a condition of the Soul NOT something someone else can do for another, not some form of recognition, achievement or attention where one is gratified. If the believer has happiness in the soul it is only because he has developed advanced virtue in the [Integrity Envelope](#) of the Divine Dynasphere. Self evaluation of this status can be achieved by considering whether one can understand [HUMILITY](#) in any way and if he can see any signs of it in his life. If Bible Doctrine is not first in the life of the believer and is not Priority #1, then there cannot be Motivational Virtue directed toward God and therefore cannot be Functional Virtue directed toward man and circumstances in life. Developing these attributes is what constitutes happiness. The believer without these will change friends, jobs, environment, spouse, everything from time to time and will constantly be looking for something or someone to bring him happiness and will never find it. Happiness in one's soul can only be there because of his consistent residence in the Power System of God, the Divine Dynasphere, and fulfilling the [Priorities of the Spiritual Life](#). Therefore, Happiness is an issue between the Believer and God and the Believer and AUTHORITY and the Believer and his ATTITUDES toward Human Beings. One cannot have happiness by having attitudes toward others where they are considered and treated related to their status as Achievers and NOT as individual PERSONS. In all cases Pseudo Happiness or the Arrogance of Unhappiness results from people having a myriad of types of self gratification and stimulation and not recognizing that these are temporary things which cannot last. ([Prov 3:13-15](#))

### **Unhappiness of The Free Spirit**

The "free spirit" individuals are never truly happy nor are they in any way humble, always being arrogant and preoccupied with themselves, they are proud of being a free spirit and express that nothing ever bothers or gets to them but this is a fallacy because they have TOTALLY FRAGMENTED their own lives. This is the Individual who recognizes freedom without having ANY sense of responsibility under freedom. This is the totally self indulgent



person living in Cosmic Dynasphere I where the more he seeks happiness the more it eludes him ([Eccl 1:12-14](#)) so he is on a NEVER ENDING QUEST for it under his concept of FREEDOM, living in Reversionism under a [Frantic Search for happiness](#). The principle which has eluded this “free spirit” is that ONE CANNOT EVER BE HAPPY BECAUSE HE IS FREE TO DO WHATEVER HE WANTS TO DO. No One is a truly a “free spirit” and everyone invariably is under some authority and as such has responsibilities and is inevitably locked into a system called “ESTABLISHMENT”. Believers are locked into the greatest system or plan ever to exist the Protocol Plan of God and this, as does any system, provides structure and guidance for direction in one’s spiritual life. A person may be free to indulge himself in every whim of his life but this brings frustration and misery to his life because of HIS OWN DECISIONS. (**Song of Solomon, Ecclesiastes, Proverbs of David & Solomon**) Then, for the believer, when God adds Divine Discipline to this, it increased and intensifies that misery. This free spirit individual associates happiness with every form of stimulation, excitement or pleasant environment imaginable but these do not bring PERMANENT Inner Happiness. These are the people in the 60s who were killing themselves slowly with drug abuse and this trend has advanced and accelerated today to a far greater part of the population of this nation.

### **Martyrdom of Unhappiness**

People involved in the Arrogance of Unhappiness develop a [Martyr](#) complex because unhappiness is something carried in the soul and with it there comes a martyr complex as a condition of soul. This complex impacts negatively all those associated with this unhappy one, who will then end up with a guilt complex. The Arrogance of Unhappiness, therefore, strives to make everyone around the unhappy one miserable and also unhappy. If you are a happy person the Arrogance of Unhappiness is designed to give you a [Guilt Complex](#) when you are around someone else who is wallowing in unhappiness. Therefore, the personal Martyr complex + the Guilt complex built up in those around the unhappy one, is the influence of the Arrogance of Unhappiness from the unhappy one directed toward the others in his periphery. Thus the Martyr Complex + the Guilt Complex is the conspiracy to control the environment of others apart from the principles of Freedom.

Reality in the Christian Way of Life is that believers can be happy in prosperity or happy in poverty because happiness is a state of soul. War or Peace makes no difference to a person with happiness in their soul. ([Phil 4:11-13](#)) Unhappy people inevitably become involved with idolizing other people because they are always looking for someone to make them happy and this turns anyone who appears to make them happy into an idol so that by this means they inevitably become involved in [Iconoclastic Arrogance](#). Happiness MUST BE LEARNED and for the believer who remains under Positive Volition toward Bible Doctrine, happiness will be with him in both prosperity and poverty, war or peace, tranquility or adversity, IN ANY SITUATION OR CIRCUMSTANCE OF LIFE.

The ONLY organized part of the Believer’s body is his Old Sin Nature which is part of the degraded Cell Structure of the Body as a result of Adam’s Original Sin. The Trends of the Old Sin Nature encompass Legalism which is [Self Righteous Arrogance](#) and Antinomianism which is [Self Indulgent Arrogance](#) and includes deviations from gossip to fornication to murder. When

involved in a Legalistic Search for Happiness the Believer rejects the true happiness of the [Problem Solving Devices](#) and follows the trends of the Old Sin Nature to Lascivious Lawlessness or Legalism and this can begin with functioning under the 2<sup>nd</sup> Arrogance Skill, [Self Deception](#). Legalism which is a form of pseudo happiness related to the soul which cycles through the [Arrogance Skills](#) from Self Justification to Self Deception, to Self Absorption, to Self Righteous Arrogance, [Crusader Arrogance](#) and any Christian Activism with emphasis on the Arrogance Skills and Interlocking System of Arrogance. This results in functioning under the [Maladaptive Defense Mechanisms](#) of the Denial of Reality and Projection of one's personal flaws onto others. Antinomianism or [Lascivious Lawlessness](#) is pseudo happiness related to the body and the pleasures of the body, with a search for approbation, power, prosperity, social life, social or professional status, etc., none of which are substitutes for [Sharing the Happiness of God](#), Problem Solving Device #9. If the Old Sin Nature trends do not polarize from being involved in Self Deception then the person can have a mixture of both legalism and lasciviousness which often results from his Guilt shifting his pseudo happiness effort emphasis on the soul to emphasis on the body. These people then cycle from soul emphasis and do good liberalism, until they get bored with that, then they shift to the lascivious sins and emphasize the pleasures of the body and continually oscillate between the two.

### **Sublimations & Unhappiness**

In the Arrogance of Unhappiness the believer invariably associates his concepts of happiness under pseudo happiness with a variety of things which result from his sublimation in life and his desiring to possess:

- ✧ Money
- ✧ Fame
- ✧ Success
- ✧ Approbation
- ✧ Pleasure
- ✧ Social Life Acceptance
- ✧ Good Health
- ✧ Sex
- ✧ Friendship
- ✧ Marriage
- ✧ The POWER to control others

The Arrogance of Unhappiness invariably then interlocks with [Unrealistic Expectations Arrogance](#). Few people are loved the way they want to be loved or treated the way they want to be treated. Because of this they develop a frustration within themselves which intensifies their unhappiness. This is the believer who focus' his attention on himself instead of developing and deploying [Problem Solving Device #10](#), Occupation with the Person of The Lord Jesus, The Christ, Advanced Personal Love for God. The reality of Happiness vs Unhappiness is:

- ✧ *The Friendly Church* cannot make one happy, but the believer may attend a Local Church thinking that this "Friendly Church" will bring him happiness. The friendly church CANNOT make one happy because these churches are filled with unhappy

Christians and the more “friendly” these people become the more frustration builds up in them.

- ✧ The Doctrinal Church which consistently teaches expository Bible Doctrine is what can ultimately bring the believer happiness. It is only Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul which can make the believer happy.
- ✧ People cannot make one happy, ONLY Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul can. People constantly go different places to find other different people in order to find happiness in association with other people but this is futility.
- ✧ Sex cannot make one happy since is it only very short lived physical stimulation of the body and only Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul can sustain happiness involving personal love and romance.
- ✧ Money or Wealth cannot make one happy since if one loses it his unhappiness will be intensified and again, only Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul can bring happiness without regard to finances.
- ✧ Prosperity and Success cannot make one happy, again if one loses it his unhappiness will only be intensified, and only Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul can ever be the source of happiness.
- ✧ Good Health cannot make one happy because it can be LOST very quickly since human beings are very fragile organisms. Only Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul can bring happiness. Healthy people simply have more capacity for the UNHAPPINESS which occurs when they pull the pin on their arrogance grenade. Very often, unhealthy people who handle their Limitations well have LESS capacity for unhappiness even if and when they enter Arrogance thus this is one of the few benefits of being unhealthy.
- ✧ Marriage cannot make one happy since marriage is a problem manufacturing and enhancing system. Only Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul can bring happiness.

### Myths of Marriage & Happiness

*#1 – The myth perpetuated by unhappy married couples is that Marriage is a Panacea and being romantic in youth brings marriage into the place of being a great happiness panacea.* The Older Movies, books and plays all ended with the hero finding his mate and getting married “AND THEY LIVED HAPPILY EVER AFTER”. However in the most realistic OLD MOVIES, the hero rode off into the sunset with his HORSE and left the girl behind. However, the reality is that marriage is a Problem Manufacturing Device and people are no better in marriage than they are as individuals. When a person, who inevitably has some level of pressure or difficulty in his life, marries a woman who inevitably has some level of difficulty also in her life, they increase the pressures and stresses and problems they have by MULTIPLYING them, NOT adding them. Even with people promising to love each other forever they can remain unhappy for the rest of their life because unhappy persons will not and cannot ever cope with marriage. In contemplating marriage one must marry someone who also has Inner Happiness while he has Inner Happiness or both will be miserable the entire time they

are married. This is TRUE COMPATIBILITY. Having Bible Doctrine in the soul is not the only key to happiness in marriage. For the believer ONLY Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul can make him happy and this occurs as a result of his developing capacity for life, love, HAPPINESS, and, in addition, capacity for divine blessings all which must occur and function under [Humility \(3 categories\)](#). A man and woman with internal happiness or neutral happiness in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul will be happy together even if they do not have an emotional love. If one of these is unhappy in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul they will only survive in their relationship if the dominate one is the happy one. If one imagines that he is the most miserable person on the earth despite being a believer in The Lord Jesus, The Christ, he has a significant problem in his Spiritual Life. Having this kind of problem is an indication of massive levels of garbage loaded into the subconscious with it constantly bleeding into the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul. Having garbage seeping constantly into the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul, he does not want doctrinal solutions because they are God's Solutions but wants the Self Centered Solutions of Arrogance and therefore in christian marriage he does not fulfill the mandate of [Eph 4:31](#). The Believer's who uses his volition to enter into the Interlocking System of Arrogance has a fragmented life and this fragmented believer in a marriage will cause a miserable marriage and 2 fragmented believers will almost instantly destroy a marriage. This believer with a fragmented life who from his own volition has entered Arrogance is a LOSER in life and will be a LOSER in marriage as well. Loser believers are not those who fail in their secular life or Spiritual Life but those who FAIL TO RECOVER from their fragmented life because they fail to use, reject or totally disregard the [Rebound Procedure](#) to recover and thus do not KEEP MOVING ahead in their Spiritual Life. Only consistent function within the Protocol Plan of God with residence in the [Divine Dynasphere](#) can change a loser believer into a winner but first the believer must learn the Plan of God, develop and deploy the [Problem Solving Devices](#), the [Edification Complex of the Soul](#), and maintain his residence in the Divine Dynasphere, and become aware of how the Interlocking System of Arrogance, Cosmic Dynasphere I can be entered into in order to avoid it. Only Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul as Epignosis Bible Doctrine and Sophia Bible Doctrine for application can change the fragmented life into a marvelous life.

*#2 – The Myth that one can solve marital problems by changing spouses or changing their spouse and most people approach problems in marriage by trying to change the other person in the marriage.* It is imperative to always remember that in the Christian Way of Life and specifically in Marriage ONE CAN ONLY CHANGE SELF ONE CANNOT EVER CHANGE ANYONE ELSE ESPECIALLY NOT ONE'S SPOUSE. Any changes produced in one's spouse will make one's life with that person even worse than it already is. Forcing a change in a person results in ruining them as a result of interfering with their volition. Only Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul of a believer can ever make proper permanent changes in a person. The Arrogance of Unhappiness has a dedicated consistent function which attempts to change others to comply with one's own fragmented perspective. The Destroyer of Marriages is therefore not:

- ✧ Money
- ✧ Unfaithfulness

- ✧ Relatives
- ✧ Discovery of Incompatibility
- ✧ Loss of Love or Romance

These are only symptoms and cannot provide a proper diagnosis of the disease which destroys a marriage. These areas each have been the cause of problems in marriages but they are not the true cause of a destroyed marriage. It is the entrance of either or both spouses into ANY ASPECT of Cosmic Dynasphere I the Interlocking System of Arrogance and thereby fragmenting their own life which destroys marriage. The fragmented life inside the Interlocking System of Arrogance cannot have a successful marriage. The believer must KNOW his limitations and avoid [Limitation Arrogance](#), else his spouse will constantly enlighten him concerning them. If one HATES his spouse in marriage he has lost a far greater battle than marriage and already has a totally fragmented life and is on his way to becoming a complete loser believer. The first thing this believer thinks about is DIVORCE which is NOT a solution but an intensification of the problem aspects of his own life. This fragmented believer is the same after divorce that he was before it, still being a fragmented person. Divorce is NOT a solution to problems in marriage just an ESCAPE from the other person and the one seeking divorce is running away from the true problem of fragmenting his own life and the only thing which has changed about this person is his circumstances. Therefore, simply put, marriages fail because believer's are failures as human beings and are living fragmented lives. Believers very often fail in marriage because they get married for the wrong reasons which are very often related to the Arrogance of Unhappiness so that they are constantly trying to get away from:

- ✧ Unhappy Homes
- ✧ Unhappy Environments
- ✧ Unhappy Situations or Conditions in their life

These are believers who make wrong decisions as bad decisions from a position of weakness where the Arrogance of Unhappiness causes one to assume that marriage is a panacea and a Problem Solving Device which it is NOT! It is [VIRTUE](#) which is designed for happiness and happiness in marriage depends on the believer developing [VIRTUE LOVE](#) in 3 categories:

- ✧ Basic Personal Love for God
- ✧ Impersonal – Unconditional Love for Mankind
- ✧ Advanced Personal Love for God as Occupation with the Person of The Lord Jesus, The Christ

These 3 can be developed on the road to recovery from a fragmented life after the use of the [Rebound Procedure](#) and then consistently MOVING AHEAD in the Spiritual Life with consistent Post Salvation Epistemological Rehabilitation. However, these only function optimally when the believer is persistent in his recovery and reaches Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God.

*#3 – In marriage a strong man can control his household no matter the status of the wife. In marriage a strong man cannot control a weak woman because she lacks [Humility](#) but a strong man can control a STRONG woman because she has humility and Self Esteem and has a recognition of the authority of her husband never feeling threatened. The worst combination in marriage is a weak man with either a strong or weak woman. The AUTHORITY in marriage*



demands a STRONG man for the proper rearing of children in a family because children are neither strong nor weak but are impossible until they are brought into line. It is the Weak woman who wants to run everything and makes everyone uncomfortable until she controls it all while she is completely uncontrollable.

### **Unhappiness & Control**

The Arrogance of Unhappiness is the carnality of the believer who seeks to control others by making them feel **Guilty** for neglecting him. He seeks to dominate, control, or enslave in marriage and an unsuccessful man in life seeks to bully and overcome the spouse and reduce her to his level. As with all arrogant people, they love to control other people and they do so with guilt, **Self Pity**, flattery, etc., and thereby they control their environment without ever lifting a finger in effort. The Arrogance of Unhappiness is therefore that fragment in the Arrogance grenade which seeks to control one's:

- Environment
- Persons in the Environment
  - Family
  - Friends
  - Loved ones
  - Business associates

Thus Unhappiness seeks to control people by 2 mechanisms or processes:

- Guilt for alleged neglect
- Arousal of self pity

Unhappiness seeks to dominate and enslave and control and exercise POWER over one's environment and conditions of life and those in association with him.

### **Principles of the Arrogance of Unhappiness**

Happiness cannot be built on the details of Life which according to Solomon and David include EVERYTHING in one's life outside of Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul. (**Prov 3:13-15, Prov 1:22**) If one has capacity for happiness derived from maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul ALL the details of life can be wonderful but without that capacity they just create greater misery. Satan himself illustrates completely the Arrogance of Unhappiness and he has more of all these things and rules millions of fallen angels and billions of the Human Race and yet he is totally unhappy, frustrated, bored etc, and totally Miserable in constant FEAR of the ultimate condemnation to the Lake of Fire inevitably waiting for him.

For believers in this life, people and circumstances will constantly work together to take him beyond his spiritual capabilities and into the Cosmic Dynaspheres and without the development of the **10 Problem Solving Devices** and their deployment onto the Forward Line of Troops of the soul along with maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul as a result of having Bible Doctrine as Priority #1 in his life, there is no way to overcome this pressure. No one can be happy functioning beyond his capabilities or capacities by trying to achieve things beyond his ability. Only Arrogance will take one beyond his capabilities or capacities and arrogance always makes one miserable. **Self Absorption** and the many other

aspects of the Arrogance Complex and [Arrogance Skills](#) always result in the believer being divorced from reality and engaging the [Maladaptive Defense Mechanisms](#) (the greatest unreality in life) and thus destroying their own happiness. This believer will react to life when he gets beyond his capabilities or capacities and instead of being involved in happiness he will be miserable.

Arrogance in the soul, the [Motivational Arrogance](#) of [Mental Attitude Arrogance](#) of [Jealousy](#), [Hypersensitivity](#), Subjectivity from [Pride](#), Hatred, [Bitterness](#), Vindictiveness, Implacability all are unhappiness and failure to live within the realm of [Virtue](#), the [Divine Dynasphere](#). Arrogant people are always unhappy people and include the workaholic, the monster who forces those under him to work extended hours in order to get away from someone or something he does not like. However, there are people in life who are dedicated to their work and work long hours but these are humble people. If one has a relationship with an arrogant person and they contend that something or someone can or will make them happy, one could beat himself to death trying to provide for them what they claim will bring happiness and inevitably fail because this is a fabricated myth. These arrogant people will drain the one trying to please them completely and still nothing will ever make them happy. Such people wait for everyone to come to them and cater to them and attempt to make them happy. It is not possible to bring happiness to an arrogant person because happiness is a status of soul and their soul is totally saturated with arrogance. The Arrogance of Unhappiness is the misery of selfcenteredness.

Believers must realize no matter how they die or how they live, from Eternity Past GOD has known all about each of them personally and has never forgotten about them. Every believer will be tempted to engage in [Self Pity](#) and [Self Righteous Arrogance](#) and all the negative things which occur in one's thinking when under the pressure of some sort of personal crisis. The believer can get away with this type of arrogance until disaster or crisis occurs historically or nationally. To function and live properly in this life the believer must eliminate all Self Pity, [Bitterness](#), or anything which tries to make him feel isolated in life. He must establish a spiritual growth status in order to head off all categories of arrogance in the Interlocking System of Arrogance. He can only overcome the Self Righteous Arrogance, which inevitably occurs in disaster, by understanding the FACT that in Eternity Past God was much more aware of the disaster than he is even while he is in it and God most likely even toned it down because He knew there was only so much the believer could take in disaster. The believer must recognize clearly that he is not the first person who has ever been or will be captured by an enemy and imprisoned, or who has lost his legs or sight, or who is in some special disaster in his personal life. God knew all about this aspect of his life and thought about him in Eternity Past and PLANNED for every aspect of his life, both what the believer may think is good in life and what he may think is bad.

The provisions from God under his Grace are the basis of all blessing and thus all happiness for the believer. Happiness or unhappiness certainly does not depend on how one's children turn out, it is the state of one's own soul. If the believer is a basically happy person, circumstance does not change his happiness and therefore cannot ever be an issue. If he is basically an

unhappy person then he is [hypersensitive](#) to circumstances and insensitive to others and this is interlocking of the Arrogance of Unhappiness with the [Arrogance of Inversion](#). Arrogant people always put pressure on their children, wives, dogs, friends, business associates, etc., because unhappiness in the Stream of Consciousness of their Soul becomes cursing by association. People who are unhappy in life will compensate by dominating their environment and enslaving all those associated with them. Once one's soul is saturated with the Word of God every aspect of life will be reflecting happiness which is capacity developed from maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul. Greatness in any person is not who or what is behind or in front of him but what is inside his Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.

### **Prosperity & Unhappiness Arrogance**

CAPACITY for all categories in life is what really counts and this only comes from consistent Perception, Cognition, Inculcation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine. The Arrogance of [Pride](#) or vanity, because of the accumulation of wealth, prosperity and promotion, destroys capacity for these very things and they become a source of intensified misery rather than one of happiness and blessing. It is very often difficult for the believer to realize that the things he wants and desires in life and which motivate him to study Bible Doctrine are not the source of true happiness but the results of accumulating the source in his Stream of Consciousness of the Soul. The material things are only the accouterments of blessing from the accumulation of Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.

The prosperity of another person should never distract the believer from Bible Doctrine. In addition whether a person is functioning under Evil or Grace, whether he is an advancing winner believer or a reversionistic loser believer, should never be a distraction to the believer just as when someone else has more prosperity than he does. The believer focused on others may classify some as functioning under EVIL because of having great prosperity but this in reality is NONE OF HIS BUSINESS. He may still persist in categorizing these others who have prosperity as Evil especially if they push him by flaunting their status and failing to give him his privacy. The advancing believer must realize that there are always reasons for the prosperity of others and he must never become involved in Mental Attitude Arrogance including Jealousy, Bitterness or Envy each which will pull the arrogance pin and enter him into the Interlocking System of Arrogance and thereby fragment his own life. The only true prosperity in life originates from execution of the Protocol Plan of God and subsequent distribution of one's Escrow Super – Grace Blessings deposited for each believer by GOD in Eternity Past. When these are distributed, upon reaching Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God, that believer will have contentment plus prosperity which perfectly FITS his life. God does not prosper all believers in the same way and he knows the capacity each believer has for various levels and types of prosperity and knows if he gives certain things these would often make some believers miserable because they lack capacity for them. He only gives to believers things which align with their specific capacity and all the believer must do is stay within the framework of the capacity which God provides and KNOW HIS OWN LIMITATIONS avoiding [Limitation Arrogance](#). The real prosperity of the Protocol Plan of God is related to understanding and using the [10 Problem Solving Devices](#), the [10 Unique Characteristics of the](#)

Church Age AND the 40 Assets provided by God at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God. Most individuals, when they have prosperity, are in fact totally miserable but always put on a front of great happiness while inside they are completely miserable very often worrying constantly about whether they will LOSE their prosperity and how it will occur. Without capacity prosperity is meaningless and useless and a source of great irritation and unhappiness but when God provides prosperity aligned with one's capacity developed from consistent Post Salvation Epistemological Rehabilitation it brings fantastic happiness. This is why the New Testament Scripture emphasizes CONTENTMENT with what one has and having nothing but FOOD and CLOTHING should bring complete contentment (1Tim 6:6-8, 2Cor 12:1-10, Heb 13:5) because there is a capacity aligned with that, which is developed from Perception, Cognition, Inculcation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine, which is fantastic. Therefore Prosperity for the believer and the resultant happiness when present is related to his spiritual assets though there will be other aspects of prosperity as well but all related to his developed capacity from his level of Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of his Soul.

### **Happiness, Unhappiness & the Client Nation**

When a client nation has people with Metabolized Bible Doctrine including the Laws of Divine Establishment and the Divine Institution principles in the Stream of Consciousness of their Souls along with honor and Integrity, War does not change them and make them unhappy. (Ps 89:15-17) The Justice of God imputes blessing to the Righteousness of God which is imputed by God to the believer at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God, just as much in adversity as in prosperity. Only a system of great Humility can and will bring happiness. Under universal military training the organizational humility of the military will bring enforced humility which will result in genuine humility and will ultimately bring great happiness to the life of the soldier. In a proper setting of education this same process will occur. A nation without universal military training or some other universal system of inculcating discipline and respect for authority cannot be a happy people. Inculcation of discipline results in using one's own volition to pace oneself and to learn to enjoy life and freedom and therefore have great happiness. Happiness is always related to Grace rather than people or things and all Grace BLESSINGS directly from God comes from the Integrity of God through the Justice of God to the Righteousness of God which has been imputed to the believer at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God. It is the Mature Believer ONLY who has humility and capacity for blessing and happiness. (Ps 144:15, Ps 31:7, John 17:13+17, 1John 1:4, Prov 3:13, Luke 11:27-28) In the client nation to God, happiness in the nation depends on how the people respond to Absolute Truth found in the Laws of Divine Establishment, the Divine Institutions, the Gospel of The Lord Jesus, The Christ, and the entire realm of Bible Doctrine.

### **Bible Doctrine, Disaster & Unhappiness**

Those who live in and go through the Arrogance of Unhappiness having entered the Interlocking System of Arrogance never survive disaster. They have no built in inner resources from Bible Doctrine to support them under this pressure. The Interlocking System of Arrogance will even cause mature believers to often be preoccupied with disaster and as a result be distracted from the Plan of God for their life. Circumstances of history do not change the Plan

of God and [Logistical Grace](#) continually functions to all believers just as well in national adversity as it does in national prosperity. Preoccupation with disaster drags the person into the Interlocking System of Arrogance with the resultant fear and intimidation by life, along with Selfcenteredness, [Self Pity](#) and [Self Righteousness](#) which results in a distortion of the facts of history. The believer must not ever be preoccupied with disaster but view it from the light of Bible Doctrine. Preoccupation with disaster will inevitably ignore the Plan of God rationale and therefore cause him to fail in the use of the [Faith Rest Drill \(5 stages\)](#).

The Believer has a magnificent conciliation and encouragement from Metabolized Bible Doctrine knowing that in times of maximum Evil and degeneracy God preserves the believer whether Jew or gentile. Being in an advanced state of apostasy and degeneracy from Evil, in the United States of America today, it is imperative that the believer understand that no matter how bad things may become in this nation the Plan of God for each member of the Royal Family of God moves right on. Historical disaster DOES NOT in any way imply that the Plan of God is canceled and that until 'better times' come along no one will advance to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God. Some of the greatest advances to Spiritual Maturity are accelerated by disaster and in the status of Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God there are 5 categories of Escrow Super-Grace blessing imputed directly to these believers. Not only is the Mature believer in the Plan of God, whether Jew or gentile, under [Logistical Grace](#), he is also under the principle of [Super – Grace](#) blessing whether in time of prosperity or disaster. The incredible fact and motivation for the believer in these trying times is that 2 of the categories of his Escrow blessings provide for those in his periphery with Blessing by Association and Historical Impact blessings. Daniel is a prime example of blessing in disaster. Therefore, times of defection and declension have never hindered the Plan of God for the believer with Positive Volition toward Bible Doctrine. It is only the believer with Negative Volition who peels off and enters the 8 stages of apostasy in [Reversionism](#). Neither Historical or Natural Disaster can hinder the momentum of any believer who is under persistent Positive Volition toward Bible Doctrine.

### **[The Basis for True Happiness](#)**

The real shock should be that GOD **commands** the believer to be happy ([Phil 4:4](#)) and God never gives the believer a command that the believer cannot fulfill or follow. However, this is not to be construed as it can be an instantaneously executed command for the believer fulfilled instantly at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God. To fulfill this command requires persistence in Post Salvation Epistemological Rehabilitation from Perception, Cognition, Incultation, Metabolization and Application of Bible Doctrine. Therefore, TRUE HAPPINESS is confined to and can only exist within the Plan of God and mankind can only enter the Plan of God ONLY by making Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God through personal FAITH alone in the Substitutionary Spiritual Death of The Lord Jesus the Christ alone. So the reality is that at the point of Salvation ONLY the possibility or potential for Inner Happiness exists for the believer and there is NEVER INSTANT OR AUTOMATIC HAPPINESS by exercising faith in The Lord Jesus the Christ. The fact is that the ONLY way to acquire any Inner Happiness is to begin, as quickly as possible, the construction of the Edification Complex of the Soul and the only way to construct the Edification Complex of the Soul is through consistent function under



the [Grace Apparatus for Perception](#). ([John 17:17](#))

Within the Grace Plan of God, He has designed Phase II Happiness for the believer to be permanent, stabilized and sustaining in the most difficult circumstances in life because it is based on Metabolized Bible Doctrine and construction of the Edification Complex of the Soul, the Problem Solving Devices, and residing in the Divine Dynasphere. ([1John 1:4](#)) The terminology used in Scripture for Inner Happiness is almost always “blessed” and should be translated “Happinesses” because there are 2 primary sources for it:

- ✧ the Filling of God the Holy Spirit ([Gal 5:22](#))
- ✧ the Edification Complex of the Soul ([John 17:13](#))

The accumulation of (gr) Epignosis knowledge is the Metabolized Bible Doctrine which results in construction of the Edification Complex of the Soul, the Problem Solving Devices, and under consistent Positive Volition constant residence in the Divine Dynasphere which produces PERMANENT Inner Happiness.

No one can be under the Filling of God the Holy Spirit constantly thus this is a temporary source while the Grace Apparatus for Perception building the Edification Complex of the Soul under Positive Volition toward Bible Doctrine results in a permanent structure and permanent Inner Happiness. This Inner Happiness inevitably leads the believer through application of Metabolized Bible Doctrine directly into OVERT Happinesses and this also is double Happinesses. ([Ps 119](#), [Ps 130](#), [Jer 15:16](#), [Matt 4:4](#), [Eph 4:23-24](#))

Inner Happiness interlocks directly with Capacity for Love as:

- ✧ Category I – Love for God as application of maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine.
- ✧ Category II – Romantic Love toward ONE Right Man or Right Woman as application of Metabolized Bible Doctrine but it requires stabilization from Impersonal Unconditional Love for Mankind as a functional virtue.
- ✧ Category III – Friendship toward any others from application of Metabolized Bible Doctrine and also stabilized by Impersonal Unconditional Love for Mankind as a Functional Virtue.

Without the completion of the Edification Complex of the Soul the individual has little if any capacity for these categories of Love. Therefore, ultimately all happiness for the believer is based on his Attitude toward Bible Doctrine. Thus there must be consistent accumulation of Metabolized Bible Doctrine into the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul ([Jer 15:16](#), [John 13:17](#), [1John 1:4](#)) Under the Law of Happiness from God, regardless of the failure of any generation of believers concerning acquiring Inner Happiness as Sharing the Happiness of God it is always available to every believer in every generation. ([John 17:13](#))

Those who expect people to make them happy can never be happy. Those who demand that people make them happy are incapable of being happy. People often go to church to be happy but this certainly cannot make you happy. Happiness must reside in one's soul based on the level of Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of his Soul and only he can decide, from his own volition, for or against Bible Doctrine. The believer must inculcate Bible Doctrine until he has built up his [Edification Complex of the Soul](#) to the point of Spiritual Maturity and then he will have in the soul the [Super – Grace](#) blessings of Maturity Adjustment

to the Justice of God, which include building up a high level of [Sharing the Happiness of God](#). Sharing the Happiness of God is the only means of being truly happy in this life. It is the ABSOLUTE TRUTH of the word of God in one's soul which puts power into the soul of the believer and this is what makes him happy. There can be an overt expression of this happiness in relationships if there is Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul which gives capacity to express happiness. Therefore, happiness is ONLY from the content of what is in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.

Return to the [Table of Contents](#)

### [Gate #23 – The Arrogance of Regret](#)

Regret is something believers seem to be really consumed with. The Arrogance of Regret becomes remorse when the Sin Nature interacts with it destroying effective Adjustment to the Justice of God and [Genuine and Enforced Humility](#). The arrogance of Regret produces [Guilt](#), characterized by remorse, depression and deepening disorientation to reality and life. Regret as arrogance destroys [Rebound Adjustment to the Justice of God](#) even for the believer who has reached [Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God](#). Guilt is fueled by Regret, and guilt is [Mental Attitude Arrogance](#) and a [Mental Attitude Sin](#) reaction to the Arrogance of Regret. Remorse as a characteristic of Regret Arrogance is also a Mental Attitude Sin which also moves the believer into perpetuated carnality. ([Psalm 77](#))

When a believer is absorbed in [Divine Viewpoint](#) thinking and is under pressure and recognizes his failures of the past, he, when seeking God's hearing and rule over his enduring search for the divine solution does not include [Emotional Human Viewpoint](#). There should not ever be any Regret for the believer in God's plan nor in God's solutions as he must understand he is where he is because the Plan of God has placed him there. Regret is a human Emotion from the Interlocking System of Arrogance and when deeply involved the Interlocking System of Antagonistic Emotional Hatred. All absolutes are covered by the Grace provisions of God, so that one can learn the absolutes, attain the objectives of Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God including [Occupation with the Person of The Lord Jesus, The Christ](#), and produce Maximum Glorification of God, then stand at the judgment seat of Christ as a winner with no Regrets. When God forgives failure or sin according to [1 John 1:9](#), HE FORGETS THE ENTIRE MATTER. Regret becomes arrogance and preoccupation with self that causes the believer to fail with regard to his confidence and in his application under the [Spiritual Skills](#). Regret is a precursor to and initiator of guilt therefore it is not in any way related to [Grace Orientation](#). Regret has no place in prayer and destroys a [Personal Sense of Destiny](#), Problem Solving Device #6. A personal sense of destiny is not distracted by past failures, but motivates the believer to consistently use the [Rebound Procedure](#) and keep moving ahead in the Spiritual Life so that the [Faith Rest Drill \(5 stages\)](#) takes on new meaning. If one is still alive after failures or pressure from adversity or disaster, he is in the plan of God and must *always look forward and move ahead, ADVANCE, and continue his spiritual momentum*. The advancing believer must never look back at life with Regret since when this occurs one's eyes are on circumstances, things,

people, or self and the spiritual life is stalled and orientation to Grace is destroyed. The point is that the Grace of God is what keeps the believer alive and provides all things for him in this life so what is there to Regret? The weeping believer expresses the Regret of wrong thinking and the failure to orient to Grace and this results in the inability to develop a [Personal Sense of Destiny](#) and thus total disorientation to life and history. Disorientation to history means distraction from the real spiritual life. This was the problem with Israel during the Assyrian crisis and applies just as much to their Babylonian crisis. It also applies to the National crisis of failure for a Client Nation like the United States. ([Is 33:6-7](#)) Ambassadors of peace, State Department Fools saturated with human viewpoint always weep bitterly in national crises and the believer without Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul which results in a total lack of wisdom from Bible Doctrine applied to experience, always weeps bitterly with Regret. God's knowledge is not subject to development, reasoning, regretting, foreboding, or depression. God knew all about each and every believer's crises in life from Eternity Past and provided for them. THE ADVANCING BELIEVER MUST KNOW THIS! ([Prov 13:16-17](#)).

History is a very short time compared to eternity and the believer's time on earth is a drop in the ocean compared to eternity. Those who place other things in life above Bible Doctrine have a false scale of values and are failing to take [Advantage](#) of all the equal privilege and opportunity God has provided for them in time in order to be able to advance to [Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God](#). All those "other things" which are so interesting and important will become so very meaningless when one looks back on them from eternity. The Latin phrase, SIC TRANSIT GLORIA MUNDE, "The glory of this world passes away" should bring to each believer a reflection concerning what one thinks about the THINGS which are important in this life. In eternity the believer will realize that the things he considered important in life were not important at all and he will be amazed that God supported him throughout his life while having such meaningless false standards. ([Lam 3:15-](#)) Although the believer cannot lose his salvation, if he has rejected consistent Perception, Cognition, Inculcation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine and has stalled his spiritual advance to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God, he is a LOSER. A part of the agony of the [Sin unto Death](#) for those in the final stages of [Reversionism](#) is to realize that they have had an opportunity to make his life count in a fantastic way but instead, chose to follow the plan of Satan during their life on this earth.

The importance of mature Church Age believers glorifying God by achieving a tactical victory cannot be overemphasized. The suffering the mature believer endures under the Bravo Grace transition from [Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God](#) through the "no man's land" of [Intermediate Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God](#) while moving toward [Advanced Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God](#) and the [Evidence Testing](#) of this mature status is a major factor in breaking the back of Satan. There are 2 things which break the back of Satan in this Angelic Conflict. The strategic victory as a result of the Substitutionary Spiritual Death of The Lord Jesus, The Christ on the Cross and the tactical victory of those believers who advance to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and receive their Escrow Super – Grace blessing package in time. As a part of Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God [Occupation](#)

[with the Person of Christ](#) never has one second of [Bitterness](#) or Regret. In his function under Occupation with Christ the believer will sometimes laugh and sometimes cry; sometimes his heart will be filled with sorrow, and sometimes with joy. Occupation with Christ demands that he go on living when those closest to him have been taken home to the Lord. Regret is Arrogance and [Emotional](#) sinning combined and interacting within the Interlocking System of Arrogance through [Guilt](#) and the whole realm of [Mental Attitude Arrogance](#). Wrong Emotion in weak believers is demonstrated by their allegation that emotional activity such as remorse or Regret has something to do with being saved or being forgiven for sin. Wrong emotion is the erroneous premise in the distortion of the [Rebound Procedure](#) which inserts emotion like "godly sorrow", penitence, distress, Regret, remorse, etc. Believers in Corinth added [Unrealistic Expectation](#) to [Role Model Arrogance](#), followed by the [Feet of Clay Syndrome](#) and [Iconoclastic Arrogance](#) regarding Paul. Their erroneous premise was that the function using the Rebound Procedure was related to their emotions. Carnality IS perpetuated when anything, especially emotion, is added to a divine solution. As a result of this occurring when using the [Rebound Procedure](#), no forgiveness is possible, perpetual carnality persists, resulting in incompetent problem solving. ([2 Cor 7:8-10](#))

Regret therefore is ignorance of Rebound Grace. God is always faithful and forgives any believer who calls up the court case of judgment for all sin and names his sin personally to Him. God never fails to forgive, even if that sin has to be named a thousand times and every 15 seconds. His righteousness is never compromised by forgiving and purifying the believer, that is the result of the blessing and benefit of the Substitutionary Spiritual Death of The Lord Jesus, The Christ on the cross. God not only forgives known sins which are acknowledged, but also purifies from all forgotten and unknown sins or "wrongdoing". Failure to use the Rebound Procedure and failure in [Grace Orientation](#) results in perpetual carnality which when uncorrected leads to the believer being face to face with sin and as a result removed from this life as a loser. Anguish or "being distressed as God would have it" is the law of volitional responsibility reminding the believer that "whatever a person sows that will he also reap" along with divine discipline. Therefore, Regret and / or Remorse cannot and must not be a part of the Rebound function. The true premise of Rebound is a change in one's thinking and has nothing to do with emotion. In fact the reality in the Plan of God is that Emotion never has anything to do with any divine solution for any problem. In addition this premise of Rebound also includes deliverance and that concept which is based completely on GRACE is totally devoid of emotion. Thinking and deliverance devoid of emotion adds up to the (gr) HOMOLOGEO of [1John 1:9](#) which means to name, cite, acknowledge one's sins to God, agreeing with God that his judgment of them was complete in Christ, devoid of emotion, like as a witness in courtroom testimony. When sins are simply named to God without adding any emotion or Regret as a part of an erroneous premise, then God forgives and purifies even of sin not remembered or not understood. Emotion, as a system of human effort works, in Rebound compromises God's righteousness. How one feels about sins is not important to God and it is only how God's considers one's sins that is important. All sins were judged and the penalties paid for them on the cross by The Lord Jesus, The Christ. Sin, not being part of the Plan of God and most likely not part of the Plan of Satan, could not NOT EVER be an issue in the Angelic Conflict Appeal Trial under the system God allows, therefore The Lord Jesus, The Christ

was required to become man and go to the cross to be judged for all sin to remove sin as an issue in the resolution of the Angelic Conflict Appeal. However, Sin is an issue in one's Spiritual Life since it removes him from the Grace Plan of God for his life either temporarily or permanently. Therefore, God has excluded emotional Regret as the solution to the problem of sin. No one ever maintains the status of spiritual adulthood when wrong emotion of any kind becomes part of a divine solution and NO believer ever functions properly under his Royal Ambassadorship and represents the Lord Jesus Christ through EMOTION.

Instead of remorse and Regret, the believer must have maximum Grace Orientation to life; maximum dependence upon the Grace policy of God, therefore total elimination of human dynamics as part of the spiritual life. There must be maximum utilization of the [Unique Features](#) of the great power experiment of the Church Age. With [Divine Viewpoint](#), [Bible Doctrine Orientation](#), Grace Orientation, leading to [Occupation with the Person of The Lord Jesus, The Christ](#), the Believer can successfully and contentedly live within his human [Limitations](#) in life. This allows living within the limitations of one's environment without embarrassment, Regret, [Inordinate Ambition](#), or inordinate competition. As a result the believer can have a dynamic spiritual life even without having a dynamic personality and still glorify God in every circumstance. Therefore, this is arrival at a complete niche orientation, at the point where one can say that the Grace Plan of God has been executed in his life. By avoiding the Arrogance of Regret or remorse the believer can extract the maximum benefit from the blessings of cognitive invincibility. This results in mental stability, orientation to reality, and incomparable Grace Orientation to life, which includes Grace thinking from the absolute truth of Bible doctrine and the resultant subsequent Grace motivation, Grace decisions, and Grace actions. Therefore, the believer has maximum control of his life through the function of the [Problem Solving Devices](#) developed and deployed in [Spiritual Adulthood](#).

The believer in The Lord Jesus, The Christ, when under Negative Volition toward Bible Doctrine, loses a true spiritual Scale of Values. He is not ever the product of his environment, but only of his own VOLITION. When one leans on environment for solutions, he create stress in the soul. He cannot ever blame environment for his own bad decisions as a result of using his volition in a wrong way. The believer must live his spiritual life by creating spiritual values, spiritual norms and standards, and a spiritual Frame of Reference by learning and applying Bible doctrine to every contingency in life. Those who do this are living their life in the light of eternity and will have no Regrets when they die. The believer can have a spiritual life beyond (gr) gnosis, simple knowledge, and a life beyond his imagination or dreams. As a part of this spiritual life, God provided [10 Problem Solving Devices](#) so believers can handle all of life's problems day by day without any Regret, however these must be DEVELOPED from Metabolized Bible Doctrine and then deployed onto the [Forward Line of Troops](#) of the soul to create a spiritual defense line. Without salvation, eternal life, Bible Doctrine in the soul, the Problem Solving Devices from God and the potential for execution of the Plan of God, unbelievers will suffer Regret for all eternity. And believers failing to execute any level of the spiritual life will have LOSS of REWARD and temporary acknowledgment and awareness of lost opportunity at the Judgment Seat of Jesus Christ. If a believer in The Lord Jesus, The Christ, lives only by [Shame](#) and Regret in time, he will have complete loss of reward for eternity. For



the believer, time is the opportunity to glorify God, and to demonstrate to all angelic creation the greatness of God's Wisdom, Love, Justice and Righteousness all working together. For the unbeliever, memory has Regrets beyond death. ([Luke 16:25](#)).

In the word of God there is no neutral concept of expectation. The believer's expectation is either good or bad. If it is nothing, he is in serious trouble as a believer. Good expectation originates from Metabolized Bible Doctrine circulating in the stream of consciousness. Bad expectation is the result of [Emotional Revolt of the Soul](#), [Locked in Negative Volition](#), [Blackout of the Soul](#), and [Scar Tissue of the Soul](#) allowing the Old Sin Nature through Reversionism to maintain stringent control of the soul. There is nothing more awful, as a part of suffering in life, than to look at one's life at the point of dying and have nothing but Regrets. The believer cannot and must not in the Spiritual Life ever try to move forward by looking backward at failures. ([Lam 3:19-21](#), [Phil 3:13](#)) When one advances or is going forward in the Spiritual Life he does so on God's agenda but if he is looking backward on his life then he will move backward in his Spiritual Life on his own agenda which includes consistent function under the [Arrogance Skills](#) of self-justification, lying to self in self-deception, and complete self-absorption. This becomes the base of operation for his miserable life.

The invisible hero who has reached Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God dies with absolutely no Regrets ([2Tim 4:6-8](#)) having regularly used the Rebound Procedure and therefore has nothing to regret at the Judgment Seat of Jesus Christ. Regret leading to the [Emotional Arrogance](#) of Guilt is the irrationality of a believer feeling guilty about the things he has done in the past over which he no longer has any control. [Guilt](#) is failure to recognize the right perspective that all personal sins and failures were judged in Christ and paid for by his Substitutionary Spiritual Death on the cross and therefore **THEY ARE NOT EVER AN ISSUE**. The right perspective is that the believer is to acknowledge or name those sins to God the Father thus taking RESPONSIBILITY them to receive forgiveness in order to maintain his Statue Quo in the Spiritual Life. In effect this is a recognition by the believer, at every failure he may engage in, that the GRACE of God is the only reason he is still on this earth.

In effect by rejecting Regret the believer prevents and rejects The Arrogance of Emotion in GUILT. Emotional Regret is totally self-centered, therefore, for this believer Emotion has no strength and is relegated to its designed position as a responder to proper thought. There will not be an Old Sin Nature in heaven nor at the Judgment Seat of Christ. Thus the believer who advances in his Spiritual Life will come to the end of his life with no Regrets. ([James 1:25](#)) All believers, at the point of physical death, when the soul and spirit leave the body and they are instantly face to face with the Lord ([Psalm 23:6](#)), are in the "interim state", a time when no distinction is made between winners and losers. The scripture declares that there is an interim body and in this interim state, there is no [Unhappiness](#), no Regrets, no [Shame](#), no sorrow, tears nor death, even if the believer is a loser believer having no stored up eternal reward. The believer in The Lord Jesus, The Christ, must never allow the arrogance of Regret to possess his thinking especially when using the Rebound Procedure of [1John 1:9](#) and he must constantly reject Regret. The Arrogance of Regret interacting with the Old Sin Nature produces disorientation, disillusionment, depression and more, destroying any spiritual advance.

Return to the [Table of Contents](#)

### **Gate #24 – The Arrogance of Discouragement**

The Arrogance of Discouragement occurs when the believer is under great pressure in life and lacks solutions. This may also occur for the advanced believer when he sees clearly the problems of life as in national disasters, knows the solutions, but has no means of administering those solutions. The presence of unexpected adversity or unexplained disaster in the life often tempts and drives the believer into state of [Self Pity](#) and the preoccupation with self known as Discouragement. This is Arrogant Discouragement, and is a distraction to consistent Perception, Cognition, Incultation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine and leads to destruction of spiritual momentum. Very often the death of a loved one, loss of wealth, position or fame, unjust treatment or criticism, being misunderstood or maligned leads to this arrogance. This is the intensification of self pity arrogance. ([1Kings 19:10](#), [Matt 26:58](#)) Disaster or adversity without Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul makes the believer susceptible to this arrogance. It results when Adversity occurs for the believer who lacks the Momentum of [Gate #5](#) of the Divine Dynasphere, consistent Perception, Cognition, Incultation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine. The Arrogance of Discouragement is depression from interlocking in Motivational Arrogance within Cosmic Dynasphere I, the Interlocking System of Arrogance. For this believer there are good days and bad days in the Cosmic Dynaspheres and as a result there is instability in vacillating between these which then can lead to [Emotional Revolt of the Soul](#) and the Depression of Discouragement Arrogance.

Return to the [Table of Contents](#)

### **Gate #25 – The Arrogance of Disenchantment / Disillusionment**

Arrogance of Disillusion & Disenchantment is Subjective Preoccupation with Others, a wrong view of human beings. When the believer learns to regard all human beings as individual persons, he will not be Disillusioned by those he admires, loves or with whom he has rapport if they fail in some way. No believer can afford to be disappointed with people because this is [Motivational Arrogance](#) leading to deep entanglement in the Interlocking System of Arrogance. When the believer LEARNS the FUNCTIONAL VIRTUE of [Impersonal Unconditional Love for Mankind](#) from Metabolized Bible Doctrine he will then become a magnificent lover of people with great friendships and he will never be caused to be disoriented by his attitude toward others. Disenchantment or Disillusion is, therefore, an extension of or interlocking with [Iconoclastic Arrogance](#). The arrogant reaction of Disillusionment and Disenchantment interlocks with the Motivational Arrogance of Mental Attitude Arrogance engaging then in the [Functional Arrogance](#) under Evil of [Revenge Modus Operandi](#). Thus, as in Iconoclastic Arrogance, the illusion created by Arrogance must be destroyed by Arrogance. Generally, Arrogance is basic divorcement or disassociation from reality. Disenchantment Arrogance begins with

preoccupation with an object of admiration or attraction and terminates with preoccupation with self as a result of frustration, Disillusionment or Disenchantment with the object or image of one's own admiration, thus is closely interlocked with Iconoclastic and [Role Model Arrogance](#). This category of Arrogance may result in short or prolonged subjectivity but it can cause the believer to slip very easily into insanity. This insanity is blaming the object of one's admiration for what he himself has done. This is a recycling of his subjectivity. Recycling subjectivity is a spin cycle which is very difficult to recover from because the transfer of blame to the object of one's admiration assuages his Arrogance. As a result the Arrogant person never blames self for his own Arrogance but transfers the blame to others. This category of Arrogance creates a [Personal Opinion](#) or the idea of a set of standards for perfection which are then transferred to another but which they cannot ever measure up to it. As a result this Arrogance results in Disillusion and Disenchantment with them. This Arrogance in Disillusion blames the other person for not fulfilling the standards which his own Arrogance has created. In this category of Arrogance the object of one's admiration is actually innocent whether they have become sinful or not, while the Arrogant one is guilty of the most heinous form of subjectivity. The reality is that the object of admiration does not create himself as an object of admiration for anyone.

The warning, "Cursed is the man who puts his trust in man and makes flesh his arm" means that Arrogant individuals inevitably find someone to admire and respect just like they find those to hate or revile. This admiration and respect for selected people, as a normal thing in life, becomes abnormal when linked into the Arrogance of Disillusion and Disenchantment. When a believer becomes Disenchanted with another believer, ie. a husband becomes Disenchanted with his wife or the wife with her husband, or either with their BOSS or their Preacher, or Doctor or any other people whom they have contact with; this same Arrogance which built up the idolizing or enchantment, now tears it down and SEEKS to destroy that Idol. This arrogant reaction of Disillusionment and Disenchantment as Motivational Arrogance or Motivational Degeneracy from Evil, then drives the individual into the Functional Arrogance or Functional Degeneracy of Revenge Motivation and the Modus Operandi of Iconoclasm. This drives the individual into a stronger preoccupation with self. Arrogant subjective believers in their preoccupation with self IGNORE reality especially that of the Old Sin Nature and universal depravity of man. As believers they particularly IGNORE the mandates of the [Power System of God](#). The believer is never told to engage in the Motivational Arrogance of Mental Attitude Arrogance and Mental Attitude Sins yet all these things fragment one's life because from one's own mentality and emotion he creates an Idol and then reacts to some perceived failure of it and attempts to destroy it. This is the obvious interlocking of the Motivational Arrogance of Disillusionment or Disenchantment Arrogance with Functional Arrogance of Iconoclastic Arrogance. This is the basis for "Hell has no fury like a woman scorned" but it should be "Hell has no fury like an arrogant human being scorned". Arrogance often fantasizes love, romance and friendship into the unreality of an image of perfection which cannot and does not exist. Therefore disappointment with a friend, loved one, boss, management, government, labor, officers, coaches, professors, Pastor Teachers, can be NORMAL; but when this builds into Disenchantment and Disillusion of a self manufactured idol created from one's own Arrogance and subjectivity and then results in greater preoccupation with self, IT BECOMES TOTALLY

ABNORMAL. The principle is that inevitably, the Illusion created by Arrogance is ILLUSION destroyed by Arrogance.

No one can be Disenchanted with a human being or group or organization without Arrogance. If one treats all human beings as individual persons then he is in God's System and will avoid this type of Disillusion Arrogance. Human beings cannot be treated in admiration like perfect idols nor obnoxious objects of hatred but they must be treated as individual persons. This only can occur with the development of 3 categories of Virtue in the [Divine Dynasphere](#). Disenchantment with a person or organization does not ever reflect the failure of the object of that Disenchantment, which may in fact actually have failed, sinned or disappointed in some way or may be innocent and have done nothing wrong, but it reflects the failure and Arrogance of the one who is [Hypersensitive](#) in Arrogance. Disenchantment reflects the Failure of the SUBJECT who is LIVING in Cosmic Dynasphere I the Interlocking System of Arrogance and functioning in total abnormality, subjectivity and Arrogance, NOT the Object. Disillusion is Arrogance, hypocrisy and absolute sloppy thinking in one creating and then despising what has been created and then trying to destroy it. It is the hypocrisy of transferring the blame for one's own aberrant emotional distortions of soul, to another. It is by this means that the Disillusioned or Disenchanted one becomes the iconoclast but has in fact destroyed self as a person by making his own inner thoughts a destructive force in his periphery. This is also the [Self Righteous Arrogance](#) and [Legalistic Arrogance](#) of assuming that someone else is perfect and then seeing what is considered imperfection in them and trying to destroy it or them because of it.

It is the quintessence of Self Righteous Arrogance to make a pronouncement on another, regarding their having feet of clay, when the pronouncement itself is a demonstration of an entire body of clay in the accuser. The believer must beware of the person who makes pronouncements about another's failings for this is a person who has idolized another, reacted to them and become Disillusioned by them and is now involved in personal recycling of a subjectivity which is expressed verbally to now destroy their idol. They are advertising that this other one has feet of clay while their whole body is made of clay. It takes Arrogance to create an image and then turn around and destroy the image in a reaction of Disillusionment. Preoccupation with self leads to such great admiration of one's own Personal Opinion that contradiction from one's own created object of admiration turns admiration into hatred, love into [Bitterness](#), respect into maligning which therefore becomes the Feet of Clay witch hunt. No one is perfect, all people fail and all constantly sin. The failure of others is usually unknown unless one happens to be personally involved in it. Therefore, the stupidity of the idea of setting oneself above another follows the principle of "let he who has no sin cast the first stone" ([John 8:7](#)).

Disillusion Arrogance rejects the Bible Doctrine related to the imputation of Adam's Original Sin at physical birth and of the existence of the Genetic Old Sin Nature in all humans, with the exception of The Lord Jesus, The Christ of course. It is rejection of all classifications of personal sin in oneself while over emphasizing these in others, and rejecting that Sin, as the result of every person having an Old Sin Nature, was ALL judged and paid for in the humanity

of The Lord Jesus the Christ on the cross. This is the Arrogance of assuming the prerogatives of God by assigning lofty and vain attributes to self while Arrogantly condemning former objects of admiration. The condemnation takes a very Self Righteous form assuming that one has discovered the object of his admiration's failings and their character flaws, he not having such failings. This assumption assigns perfection to self, recycling subjectivity in his thinking, and flaws to those who do not measure up to his illusions of perfection. Whenever one is pointing out the feet of clay of another he is implying a superior perfection in himself. This Arrogance is the illusion of assuming that anyone is or can be perfect so that when Disillusion and Disenchantment follow, it seeks to react to, belittle, malign and destroy the image which the Arrogance has created.

### **The Feet of Clay Syndrome**

This is the Arrogance of rearranging the doctrine of [Hamartiology](#) (Sin) to suit one's own convenience in life and to transfer to the object of one's admiration, blame for one's own subjective Arrogance and frustration. It is Arrogant to be idolatrous about people, but it is just as Arrogant to be Iconoclastic and destroy idols one has personally constructed from people. Admiration is normal but making an object of one's admiration into an idol of assumed perfection and then reacting with Disenchantment when they fail to live up to perfection is abnormal, sinful and totally motivated by Evil and also extremely self destructive. One may find the flaws of the object of his admiration, the feet of clay, but in finding them he is destroying himself. The self destructive process overflows into Disillusion, Disenchantment and Iconoclastic Arrogance as the feet of clay emerge. To admire, love, honor, respect, revere, adore, esteem, approve, applaud others is a normal function under [Humility](#) and objectivity. Only Arrogance takes these normal functions and converts them into the construction and then destruction of self created idols. God is to be worshiped being perfect while people are to be loved, honored, admired, appreciated and approved even with all their failures. People can be and are to be admired despite their Old Sin Nature and failures and this is normal in life. What is abnormal is to transfer the worship of perfect God to the worship of imperfect man and to then become Disillusioned and Disenchanted with them and attempt to destroy them. The believer who is humble will never be Disenchanted with God. The believer who is humble will never be Disillusioned or Disenchanted with people because this is Arrogance which is the antithesis of humility. It is normal to be DISAPPOINTED with people but Disillusion or Disenchantment as an Arrogant reaction to an object of admiration which has been worshiped is abnormal and sinful and, in fact, this is the way Lucifer himself sinned. The feet of clay syndrome is Arrogant frustration assigning the broken object of your admiration to the lowest hell of Disenchantment. In recycling subjectivity the believer, in Arrogance, is doing all of it when He:

- ✧ Creates the object of his admiration
- ✧ Assigns perfection to it
- ✧ Reacts to it with Disillusion or Disenchantment
- ✧ Works to destroy it through Iconoclasm

The Believer doing this is the Arrogant one and the Failure, not the one whose feet of clay he has discovered and now seeks to destroy. Man who is not perfect cannot create perfection, yet this Arrogance of Disillusion and Disenchantment, Role Model Arrogance and Iconoclasm are



combined efforts in presuming to do so. Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul produces the humility of admiration, love, honor, respect, reverence, adoration, esteem, approval, etc., and such humility is both objective and [Flexible](#). Therefore humility never assigns perfection and never reacts to imperfection and humility loves, admires, respects, honors, esteems, etc., and this therefore stabilizes human relationships. Only Arrogant thinking can produce Disillusion, Disenchantment and Iconoclasm.

### **Disorientation to Life**

It should be emphasized that the [Arrogance of Unhappiness](#) always interlocks with the Arrogance of Disillusion and when they interlock they always produce disorientation to life. The basically unhappy person is most vulnerable to the Arrogance of Disillusion. Generally happy people are objective and flexible allowing them to distinguish between love and presumed perfection and they can also distinguish between admiration, respect, esteem, adoration and presumed perfection and only the people disoriented to life cannot make this distinction. Believers, as a result of understanding the Love of God and the Dynamics of Love in the Spiritual Life, often find that they still have glitches in their Modus Vivendi which involve the intrusion of Arrogance. They often want others to love them and dance to their tune and if they don't these believers become critical, moody, self centered, even distorting Bible Doctrine in order to condemn them. The believer will do this to the point of losing his momentum in the Spiritual Life and entering into Divine Discipline from the Supreme Court of Heaven. This is punishment which comes from the Love of God, whose Love, is in fact, not diminished because of the believer's distortions, aberrations or entrance into the experience of self pity, and which love is supposed to be a source of blessing for him. In his state of [Self Righteous Arrogance](#) he excuses self and passes the blame to others whose attention and approbation he very often is seeking. He uses Bible Doctrine as an assassins dagger, twisting it, distorting it and also rejecting it and he then claims that Bible Doctrine doesn't work when in reality it works just fine in condemning his own quirks and the aberrations of his own Old Sin Nature. In this status of Arrogance when one loves, he can never love another who is imperfect, and if he reacts to the imperfection of others he becomes totally disoriented to life. Admiration and respect cannot be turned into Disillusion and Disenchantment Arrogance without entanglement in the Interlocking System of Arrogance being firmly tied into the soul. This forces the conclusion that basic disorientation to life and basic unhappiness have the same source, some aspect of Arrogance, one's very own personal Arrogance. The Arrogance of Unhappiness combines with Iconoclastic Arrogance to divorce the believer from the reality of life. This explains why so many believers are neurotic and [Psychotic](#) and totally defeated in circumstances of adversity and completely overwhelmed even in prosperity. Pomposity in an individual is an illustration of Arrogant Disorientation to life. Pomposity is the characteristic of overemphasized self importance or disorientation to life through Arrogance. The discovery of feet of clay in a self created object of admiration is in itself, the pomposity of Arrogance, it is a total preoccupation with self to the exclusion of reality.

### **The Solution to Disillusion & Disenchantment Arrogance**

As with all aspects of one's involvement in the Interlocking System of Arrogance, engaging in the use of the [Rebound Procedure](#) and following this up with consistent Post Salvation

Epistemological Rehabilitation from Perception, Cognition, Inculcation, Metabolization & Application of Bible Doctrine leads eventually to Spiritual Adulthood and [Occupation with the Person of The Lord Jesus, The Christ](#) who is the manifest person of the holy trinity the Godhead. The discernment, from this Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul, functioning in the believer in compatibility with [Humility](#), objectivity and [Flexibility](#) insulates the believer against converting things or persons into images of perfection. Therefore, Humility + Bible Doctrine == Avoidance of Disenchantment & Disillusion Arrogance. Once Inner Happiness or [Sharing the Happiness of God](#) is acquired from construction of the [Edification Complex of the Soul](#) and deployment of the Problem Solving Devices, it protects from Disillusion and Disappointment regarding:

- Circumstances of Life [Phil 4:11-12](#)
- Details of Life [Heb 13:5-6](#)
- People [Heb 12:2](#)

Return to the [Table of Contents](#)

### **[Gate #26 – The Arrogance of Guilt](#)**

Guilt is the state or Mental Attitude of thinking one is liable for punishment or having culpability for wrongdoing, wickedness, depravity, transgression, immorality, crime, evil, offenses, etc. Any time one entertains any Guilt for ANYTHING in his life he is not only in a terrible state of chain sinning but also in the Interlocking System of Arrogance. Guilt is part of the [Motivational Arrogance](#) of the Interlocking System of Arrogance and the mechanism by which many people are manipulated by others. If one is being manipulated by someone who keeps him in a state of Guilt he is in the worst form of slavery in this life. Guilt is NOT a part of the Christian Way of Life therefore, [Shame](#) about any failure or success in one's life is also DEFINITELY NOT PART OF THE CHRISTIAN LIFE. Therefore, Shame and Guilt destroy the Christian Way of Life. The believer must consistently use the [Rebound Procedure](#) to simply acknowledge sins and failures directly to God and receive His forgiveness which is based totally on the Substitutionary Spiritual Death of The Lord Jesus, The Christ on the cross for those sins to which NOTHING CAN BE ADDED. Therefore, for the believer, whatever the sin or failure may have been, IT MUST BE FORGOTTEN (Phil 3:13), if he is still alive when the dust clears after sinning, he must pick himself up and move on in life. ONE MUST NOT EVER LET PEOPLE IN HIS PERIPHERY TRY TO CONTROL HIM THROUGH Guilt over the things he has done in the past. Parents often try to control children in this way with, “After all I have done for you”; Wives often try to control husbands, Husbands try to control wives through this same Guilt. Ministers can be involved in controlling the congregation through Guilt often with regard to SIN and failure before God. Guilt should not be the motive for any aspect of one's life especially with regard to bible study and if one attends because of Guilt his motivation is TOTALLY WRONG and he won't get much out of it. Guilt is Arrogance and a sin to be acknowledged in Rebound and to then MOVE ON from. People who feel Guilty about sins, failures and improprieties instead of using the Rebound Procedure and forgetting them are failing in the Christian Way of Life.

Guilt and Shame are part of the Interlocking System of Arrogance and are interlocked with [Mental Attitude Arrogance](#) and the accompanying Sins all which are related to Selfcenteredness and [Self Righteous Arrogance](#). There is no place for Shame or Guilt in the Christian Way of Life and when the believer discovers he is carrying Shame or Guilt in his soul his Spiritual Life has been set back until he uses the [Rebound Procedure](#) and MOVES ON. The believer must be consistently under the [Filling of God the Holy Spirit](#) and when involved in Shame or Guilt he is only Grieving God the Holy Spirit. However, this does not ever imply that he may not be Guilty of the things he is ashamed of. It means ONLY that Guilt feelings and Guilt reactions from Shame for something he has done are part of the Interlocking System of Arrogance and NOT the place for the believer in The Lord Jesus, The Christ to be. Rebound plus residence in the [Divine Dynasphere](#) is designed under correct and accurate teaching of Bible Doctrine to orient him to the Grace Plan and Policy of God. Thus [Grace Orientation](#) includes forgetting those things which are behind, thereby eliminating Guilt and Shame in one's life.

The Interlocking System of Arrogance produces Self Righteousness, [Self Pity](#), Guilt as a complex of sins and depression and results in the believer making a subjective issue of self. Most of the suffering that the believer is going to face in the testing from God in his life demands that he clear the decks of Arrogance and Guilt complex involvement. Guilt is where the victim of injustice usually wants to dump all of his problems and Guilt on the people in his periphery. The Guilt complex is composed of a crystallization of Self Righteousness under the prosperity which comes from Logistical Grace and its oscillation to Self Pity under the pressure of adversity or disaster of Divine Discipline and even divine testing. When he is at this point the believer has developed enough [Scar Tissue of the Soul](#) for believing only the LIE from EVIL and intensifying Arrogance in that specific area of his life and when pressure comes to that area he will react with a Guilt complex. The only relief for this Arrogant believer from the pressure of the Guilt complex is transferring blame for some personal failure to someone else. This results in complete disorientation to reality which in turn results in sociopathic dialogue which contributes demoralization and confusion to the disaster. As soon as disaster begins a person can go from Pride to Guilt through the diffusion of Self Pity and Self Righteousness resulting in the irrationality of false accusations. This person needs help because in being so self centered and locked in with Arrogance, seeking a solution and relief from the Guilt, they use these false accusations to relieve the pressure on self caused by their own Arrogance and Guilt. The worst thing to do in this situation is try to use perfect logic to diffuse the situation. The person must go outside of self for help and very often to the one they are trying to destroy. The only real solution to these problems is Bible Doctrine and Occupation with the Person of The Lord Jesus, The Christ.

Guilt is a system of Arrogance such that normally when the believer under consistent Positive Volition sins he falls into Grace under Rebound forgiveness. However, when the believer consistently under Negative Volition gets into [Legalistic](#) Self Righteous Arrogance he falls directly into the distortions of the Mosaic Law which motivates this Arrogance of Guilt. This understanding is that which goes with [Humility](#) and indicates [Orientation to Grace](#). As more is understood about Grace there comes the realization that being ashamed of even minor failures,

sins and even heinous acts that have been committed as a believer is NOT a part of the Grace Policy of God. This Guilt and ashamedness are great continuous distractions to the Spiritual Life. Being ashamed, having [Regrets](#) about anything is Guilt and motivates greater Guilt and these all are failure to orient to the Grace of God. There is no place for either [Shame](#) or Guilt reaction in the Plan or Policy of God. Anyone who tries to make another feel Guilty is trying to gain inordinate control over that person's life. In many cases this is the use of raw power and a function under Evil. Very often this is the approach of evangelists trying to make people feel Guilty about their failures in the realm of sin or their lack of acceptance of Christ. Often this is accompanied by the requirement that the unbeliever walk the isle or raise their hands or weep in repentance going through some rigmarole which has nothing to do with Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God nor restoration of fellowship with God for the believer who has failed in some way.

When one is in a state of Guilt from any source, he IS in a state of SIN and has moved deeper into the Interlocking System of Arrogance. The fact that all believers in The Lord Jesus, The Christ continue to sin and fail after Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God should not be a surprise. Even though different believers may have different areas of sin and weakness NONE are excused because of their lack of sins. However, sins are never to be allowed to make the believer feel Guilty. The Substitutionary Spiritual Death of The Lord Jesus, The Christ on the cross ELIMINATED SIN AS AN ISSUE in the Angelic Conflict Appeal Trial, the Protocol Plan of God and the Spiritual Life of the believer. Guilt is a Sin, part of the Interlocking System of Arrogance, a great distraction to the execution of the Protocol Plan of God and a system whereby [Religion](#) and Legalism with their false doctrine takes control of the life of the believer. There can be no doubt that much of what is done in committing sin may be wrong and living in a time when the social aspects of sin are now being accepted or judged by a Self Righteous society places an emphasis on the overt shocking sins which are committed. Divorce, as an example, is a major factor occurring on a regular basis in this country and it is WRONG with very limited exceptions and this results in many people being made to feel Guilty about their failure and they operate on this Guilt and not on the Policy, Plan and Grace of God. When one is wrong in any failure and has had a Guilt reaction because of it, he cannot and will not solve his problems with the Guilt, but will generally be led deeper into the Interlocking System of Arrogance. Only the Grace of God can solve any of his problems, especially those of failure in sinning. No one who possesses any common sense (truly a limited few today) is going to condemn a believer about his personal failures because anyone who condemns the believer's failures is truly stupid and has not taken a good look at their own life and seen their own sins or failures. ([1John 1:8](#), [1John 1:10](#), [John 8:3-7](#))

It is obvious therefore that any believer involved with Guilt in his soul is OUT OF LINE in the Christian Way of Life and if Guilt is the motivation for anything in his life he will be out of line his entire life and die and go to heaven as a loser. Not being ashamed of any sin of failure means, like Paul, the believer must know how to handle sin and the failures of life under the Grace policy of God. Getting into competition or comparison about the nature of one's sins must bring one to the analysis of the 7 worst sins delineated in Proverbs. ([Prov 6:16-19](#)) Only one of these is an OVERT sin and that is MURDER which deprives a person

permanently of the use of his volition. However, it and all the rest have to do with the Interlocking System of Arrogance and the [Arrogance Skills](#). Who is to say on the basis of the type of one's sin who is the best Christian. This is what is being attempted in legalistic Christian circles today. A believer is judged by Christian society on the basis of their sins and if the sins are considered "respectable" like the terrible sins of gossip and maligning then this person is considered more spiritual. When the sins are observable, overt and involved with some aspect of immorality such as adultery or fornication, then this person is socially condemned and an attempt is made to make them feel Guilty about their sins. If one is full of [Pride](#) and involved in [Self Righteous Arrogance](#) and [Morality Arrogance](#) his sins will be totally ignored by society since he presents himself like a sweet and kind person.

All believers have sinned and continue to do so and no one is an exception and all have failed and when Christianity and Christians are judged on the basis of sin this results in being locked into the Interlocking System of Arrogance. These judgmental individuals have failed to recognize their own sins on the one hand or, on the other hand, having recognized their sins they fail to realize that any one single individual sin takes a believer out of fellowship with God, out from his soul being under the control of God the Holy Spirit and therefore out of the Plan of God just as quickly as any other. Their thinking is [Legalism](#) and it is an attempt to invoke a Guilt reaction from the one being judged as a result of his sins. Legalism in this country is phenomenal and it is no wonder that the United States is degenerating as a nation under the cycles of [Divine Discipline](#) and is today, as the 1<sup>st</sup> quarter of the 21<sup>st</sup> century comes to a close, on the real brink of total national disaster. When Paul says he is not ashamed ([Phil 3:13](#)) he is describing a state of incredible [Humility](#) which he had maintained and thereby avoided the Interlocking System of Arrogance. Whatever the category of sin which exists in one's life, it is all still sin and repugnant to the Righteousness of God, however, in the Grace Plan of God all that is required of the sinner is the consistent use of the [Rebound Procedure](#) to return to fellowship and the [Divine Dynasphere](#) the Protocol Plan of God. Paul basically is stating that he has [Grace Orientation](#) and does not function on the basis of Guilt nor is he motivated by Guilt. Guilt is a driving factor in many aspects of many people's lives and people often go to prayer sessions just to make up for failures of the past. Unfortunately this is failure again on their part for not realizing that all PAST failures were judged and removed by God blotting them out, initially on the cross and for them at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God.

The basis for all the [Problem Solving Devices](#) provided for the believer by God and whereby the believer priest solves his own problems is based on [Grace Orientation](#). If one surrenders to Guilt then motivation for the Christian Way of Life is WRONG and it has nothing to do with the Lord but is focused on occupation with self under Guilt. Guilt is a terrible system of Arrogance, sin and the motivation for asceticism and other reactions to the Christian Way of Life. The Gospel information has always been available to mankind throughout Human History and believers must be taught Sotieriology with regard to Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God so as not to be hung up by the Interlocking System of Arrogance and thereby become disoriented to Grace. The immature believer living in the Cosmic Dynaspheres is saturated with and entangled within the Interlocking System of Arrogance and is ashamed of many things he



has done in life and this motivates incredible Guilt in his life and results in his being totally disoriented to life. Believers cannot afford [Shame](#) motivating Guilt in any aspect of life because the cross eliminated this. Ignorance is a cause of Shame and when added to Arrogance become a total disaster in life. After Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God through faith alone in The Lord Jesus, The Christ alone, rejection of or neglect of Perception, Cognition, Inculcation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine means failure to execute the Protocol Plan of God. This means a miserable and frustrating life including Guilt and all aspects of living in the Interlocking System of Arrogance. This believer never understands that the issue in the Christian Way of Life is Post Salvation Epistemological Rehabilitation with learning, understanding and living by Bible Doctrine principles. This lack of doctrinal cognition causes failure to execute the Protocol Plan of God and this ignorance of Bible Doctrine breeds Arrogance and causes misery for these believers all of their lives.

The believer must realize that man is under Spiritual Death from the moment of his birth and commits personal sins as a result of his Spiritual Death but these sins or failures are absolutely NOT part of the Gospel of Christ. The Gospel, meaning GOOD NEWS, is the explanation of Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God in terms of [reconciliation](#), redemption, unlimited atonement and [propitiation](#). [Heb 12:2](#) explains that He, The Lord Jesus, The Christ, despised the Shame of being in contact with human sins and being judged for them and as a result the believer has absolutely NO RIGHT WHATSOEVER TO ANY Shame OR Guilt. One of the greatest powers in life is where the self centered prideful person controls or manipulates, in the name of morality, social justice or personal responsibility, the strongest people in the world by giving them a syndrome of Guilt and Shame. It is the amalgamation of Self Pity and Self Righteousness which results in the formation of a Guilt complex which invariably results in chain sinning. There can also be the abuse of power without legitimate [Authority](#) by developing power through another system such as Guilt being motivated in the recipient. This is a system of manipulation and crosses into [Conspiracy Arrogance](#). Transient or permanent [Psychosis](#) never takes responsibility for any action, always shifting the Guilt to others and punishes the innocent for crimes others have committed.

Believers, in the process of rejecting doctrine, build layer upon layer of [Scar Tissue in the Soul](#). This intensifies the Arrogance factor in the soul until eventually these people come to be able only to believe the LIE. The LIE is all that is encompassed by the plan and policy of Satan, Evil. The intensification of the Arrogance factor in time of disaster or adversity produces self-pity so that the Self Righteous Arrogance and Self Pity amalgamate to form a Guilt complex.

↳ Self Pity + Self Righteous Arrogance == Guilt Complex Formation.

### **[Guilt vs Grace Thinking](#)**

[Pride](#) as a part of Evil is Arrogance and causes the person who has it to become involved in Self Pity when under pressure and Self Righteous in prosperity. The diffusing of their Self Righteous Arrogance into Self Pity results in the build up of a Guilt complex and often the desire to save all humanity. This applies to all individuals and groups in all situations of life. Self Pity destroys individuals, teams, groups and all organizations including their leaders as Coaches, Pastors, Military Officers, Police, Educators, etc., and everyone needs to understand

this principle. [Unhappy](#) people invariably have a [Martyr Complex](#) and try to generate in those around them a Guilt complex so that these others will cater to their every whim. Guilt and [Jealousy](#) are a part of [Revenge](#) Modus Operandi and result in Revenge Modus Vivendi. In time of testing, if the believer is current in terms of his use of the [Rebound Procedure](#) for his failures, the worst thing which he can then think in terms of is his past sin. He should, in time of pressure, only ever think in terms of Grace. A person thinks in terms of Sin because they are involved in Self Righteous Arrogance and have fallen into the Guilt complex because of past sins.

When entangled in Arrogance one often will switch to Guilt which results in a very serious condition of the soul and has an adverse affect on his Spiritual Life and mental health. This is caused by resistance to Bible Doctrine, resulting moving down through the stages of Reversionism to [Black Out of the Soul](#) and formation of [Scar Tissue of the Soul](#) and failure to understand and orient to Grace through the use of the Rebound Procedure. As a result there is built up Arrogance in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul from rejection of or resistance to Bible Doctrine which results in disorientation to Authority even the Absolute spiritual authority of God. Believing LIES regarding the Spiritual Life and temporal life occurs from crystallization of Self Righteousness under the prosperity which comes from the distributions of [Logistical Grace](#). In this case, the believer often thinks God is blessing him because he has cleaned up his life, when, in fact, he is simply receiving Logistical Grace support designed to provide him with what is needed for execution of the Protocol Plan of God. There is nothing wrong with cleaning up one's life but the believer must never make the erroneous conclusion about one's personal efforts being part of the requirement of God in the Christian Way of Life. Oscillation between Self Pity under pressure and disaster combined with Self Righteousness under prosperity becomes complete disorientation to reality resulting in sociopathic behavior and contributes to demoralization and confusion and is very destructive to the Spiritual Life. When testing comes the believer MUST stop thinking that God is punishing him for something he has done in the past but realize that even under [Divine Discipline](#) for engaging in sin and failure the suffering is NOT for the SIN itself but because the sin takes the believer out of the Plan of God. Therefore, the only correct option for him is function under the Rebound Procedure which will instantaneously convert Divine Discipline to testing for blessing thus making the issue again GRACE. This should focus the believer on the reality that he HAS NO RIGHT to any Guilt at any time for any reason.

When others gain knowledge of one's personal sins some will keep on trying to make him PAY FOR THEM by trying to use Guilt to control him. An essential part of Rebound is that he MUST forget what is behind and keep moving forward in the Spiritual Life. The believer cannot move ahead in the Spiritual Life while he is continually looking back on his failures and sins, being filled with [Shame](#) and Guilt. To be ashamed is to be effected by Shame and is part of functioning within the Interlocking System of Arrogance and under the [Motivational Arrogance](#) and [Mental Attitude Sins](#) all related to selfcenteredness. There is no place for either in the Protocol Plan of God and to the extent one entertains either Shame or Guilt in his life to that extent he is in a state of sin and locked into the Interlocking System of Arrogance making

an issue of self instead of the Grace of God. The [Rebound Procedure](#) and [Divine Dynasphere](#) residence is designed to orient the believer to the Grace Plan and Policy of God for the Church Age. [Grace Orientation](#) includes forgetting things behind and using Rebound to keep moving ahead and advancing in the Spiritual Life. Guilt and Shame are not part of the Christian Way of Life but are a destructive part of the Interlocking System of Arrogance.

### **Guilt & Egocentricity**

Arrogance always branches out to produce, Self Righteousness in time of prosperity and Self Pity, Selfcenteredness and [Emotional](#) Fear in time of Adversity. These combine to produce a massive Guilt complex. These people always make an issue of self when the true issue is never their failures or past sins but the condition of the client nation. Men in a position of spiritual leadership and authority, who communicate Bible Doctrine are always misunderstood by the Arrogant. The focus of the Arrogant is ME, ME, ME so that the mechanics of the Guilt complex revolve around Arrogance and Selfcenteredness from the degradation of [Reversionism](#) and the subsequent development of Scar Tissue of the Soul and this sponsors the Guilt complex. Arrogance in many forms is the source of Guilt which is a complex of sin or chained sins. Having believed the LIE of EVIL as a result of developing Black out of the Soul and Scar Tissue of the Soul the believer rationalizes his compromises as being [Justified](#) and thinks of self as doing the Lord's will and thus develops extreme [Self Righteous Arrogance](#). Then pressure in adversity turns this Self Righteousness to Self Pity showing the instability and irrationality of Arrogance which leads to more extreme Self Righteous Arrogance. The resulting Guilt complex associates his current pressures in life with some sin or failure of the past. This Guilt results in becoming locked in with [Egocentricity](#) where this subjectivity makes him vulnerable to erroneous and unnecessary self induced misery pressures. The source of the damaging subjectivity is Arrogance however, Self Consciousness and Self Evaluation related to Bible Doctrine standards is legitimate subjectivity and is designed to eliminate the damage of Guilt.

### **Guilt vs Prosperity**

A wealthy liberal is an imbecile and they generally are weak minded and no matter what the means was by which they acquired their wealth they feel Guilty about it. A wealthy liberal is a person who can dress up and walk into a crowd of hippies and feel Guilty about what he is wearing. He is stupid cowardly, unstable, Arrogant and useless. Profit is legitimate and wealth is legitimate and there will always be great inequality of Status Quo among all people. There is no such thing as equality in any aspect of life including related to wealth, therefore, socialism and the welfare state functions are a satanic attack on the rationales of Christianity and both are directly derived from Evil. There is nothing greater than the Evil in the mentality of the person who has acquired wealth and is ashamed of it because this is like saying "I am embarrassed because I have had the intelligence and ability to make a profit from by business". This is idiotic and if there were no profit in business there would be no such thing as prosperity and profit is a legitimate motivation for both individual and national prosperity. It is only the weak, poor, Arrogant people who resent profit and prosperity. There is much more Arrogance among the poor than among the rich and the poor always carry Arrogance in their souls and they are constantly trying to make the wealthy feel bad about their wealth. This is

the same thing that mealy mouthed preachers do when they try to weasel money from the rich.

### **National Guilt**

NO society has ever survived its Guilt complex which always starts because of Arrogance. When society has a Guilt complex it becomes extremely permissive and to the extent society becomes permissive to that extent it abandons the [Laws of Divine Establishment](#). (Illustration, the United States of America in this 21<sup>st</sup> century) When society has a Guilt complex they want to do something for those whom they feel sorry for and as a result the society makes heroes out of scum and minorities. Minorities are very often composed of people who have no concept of what freedom actually is and what it requires of them and what the nation under freedom is actually about. In the United States of America today many cannot even speak the language of the nation in which they live nor think in terms of its constitution and the principles which have been built up in it as a part of it being a client nation to God. Therefore, minorities must gain the proper motivation under the concept that if they want to stay in this country and succeed they must learn the language of the country and the history and can profit and prosper ONLY from their own motivation and initiative. Americans do not have to understand them but THEY MUST understand America. They can remember the national and cultural holidays of their former country, personally and quietly, but if they stay in the United States of America they are to become American and have no rights to those holidays or other foreign celebrations because THEY MUST understand AMERICA. The Guilt complex in a society says the society must understand the minorities and immigrants and thereby the scum in society, which does not in any way infer that all immigrants or minorities are scum. The more a nation brings or allows immigrants into the country without enforcing the immigration process the more people there will be without a clue as to what this nation is all about. In the past men would become citizens by coming to this country and enlisting in the military. In World War II a young man came up from Mexico City and enlisted in the army and he went into Europe and received the Medal of Honor for his valor and bravery and when he returned he became a wonderful honorable American and he was a credit to Mexico and to the United States of America. These things must be done in order to preserve the greatness of this client nation to God, the United States of America.

### **Guilt, Rebound & Emotional Arrogance**

For the believer in time [Shame](#) is a combination of Mental Attitude and Emotional Arrogance and Sin related to and leading to the Arrogance of Regret which in turn leads to and interlocks with Guilt. However, Shame at the Judgment Seat of Jesus Christ will be a transient normal function of the soul, for the individual believer who has made ZERO progress in the Spiritual Life, and this is why it can occur at the Judgment seat of Christ while the believer is in resurrection body and is not a sin. Shame, in this context, is a normal function of understanding one's failure and is a momentary recognition of not using one's time in life

under equality of privilege and opportunity in a better way. Shame as a Mental Attitude Sin leading to the Arrogance of Regret and the Guilt Complex in time, occurs only during temporal life and is abnormal, Arrogant, and sinful. Shame at the Judgment Seat of Jesus Christ is tantamount to a painful feeling originating from the conscious recognition of something which was dishonorable or wrong or sinful, therefore, embarrassment regarding failure to fulfill God's plan though having every necessity to do so. This is a very temporary state or recognition of one's Status Quo leading into the eternal state.

Having or developing a Guilt complex is a pressure of life and this is an emotion much stronger than what the word of God allows believers to engage in. The believer MUST be consistent and name his sins to GOD alone by using the [Rebound Procedure](#) and then forget what he has done since God has already dealt with his failures and blotted them out. If he tries to assuage a Guilt complex regarding sin or failure he is thus under domination of his emotion and therefore Arrogant. The final phrase of [2Cor 7:5-7](#) shows the disaster of the reactionary emotional sins combining with the Interlocking System of Arrogance Sins to form super sins resulting in Distraction. When Paul was out of fellowship he was involved in the soul reaction of emotional sins and he became very emotional about the reaction of the Corinthian believers regarding him. He thought at one point he had done the right thing and then when he was out of fellowship he was not sure that it was right, he became sorry he offended the Corinthian believers when he was under the reaction of his emotional sins. This is the irrationality which combines emotional sins with Arrogance sins.

↳ Jealousy + Emotion = Fear, Worry, Anxiety, and MALICE.

[Bitterness](#) also motivates malice and once it is combined with Emotion it becomes Vindictiveness, Hatred, Lust to Hurt, Motivation for [Revenge](#), and Revenge Function, Vituperation and the Vilification in creating the [Public Lie](#). Arrogance combined with Emotional Sins destroys any possibility for application of Bible Doctrine as a result of intense irrationality. There is no cognition at all in any system of Emotion nor is there any thinking. When emotion is functioning normally there is appreciation in it but there is no STRENGTH nor any THINKING within emotion at any time. When these believers are told how wrong they are and become aware of their wrong doing they WILL rapidly enter into Guilt, which triggers a switch in the soul. This switch causes Guilt to become the basis for Guilt reactions which distract from the use of Rebound for solutions to their failings and as a result they become SORRY for what they have done and very Regretful. Emotion under Guilt totally distracts from reality and neglects Rebound and supplants it with Regrets and Apologies. The believer can socially apologize for wrong or irritations caused to others but never to an inordinate level and he NEVER apologizes to God. Rebound is citing or naming the problem and letting God IN Grace deal with it according to his System. Pseudo Compassion also accompanies the Sins of the Emotional Complex and in America today it is demonstrated by sending troops to various 3<sup>rd</sup> world nations to try to stop the abuses of the populations which occur there very often occurring in these nations because of a collective Negative Volition at God Consciousness. When Americans see through the media starving abused children they must always remember that despite the fact that their parents have rejected the truth, these children who may die in these situations having not reached accountability under the Plan of God, will be the ONLY



representatives of their nations and races in heaven from their generation. Emotion of the believer out of fellowship is a monster which goes to the candy shoppe and chooses the Arrogance which it likes today and eventually selects Malice which ultimately leads to Revenge Modus Operandi. This then ignores the principle that when one has been wronged by someone else he must leave it in the hands of the Supreme Court of Heaven. Titus broke the Corinthians away from the emotion of feeling sorry for themselves by admonishing them with a command to Stop feeling sorry for Self. He enlightened them as to their being out of fellowship and the necessity for them to use Rebound without emotion and without apology to anyone. Here again is the Elative conclusion in that God's Divine Solutions are the only solutions and when out of fellowship the ONLY solution is Citing, Acknowledging Sins to God for Rebound function.

When the believer names his sins to God, He forgives and Purifies the believer from all sins he has committed, meaning he is instantly separated from all the sins. The believer should never try to rationalize any pressure he is under as being punishment for any sin he has committed in the past because ALL SINS are gone instantly he is totally separated from them at the instant of the use of Rebound. Emotional Sins of Guilt with regard to old sin is always Arrogance and this results in perpetual carnality and, when it persists, will bring the believer ultimately to the [Sin Unto Death](#). The believer must always remember and rely on what the bible says about Rebound in that he is purified from and forgiven ALL sins when he uses Rebound and therefore MUST forget them and move on in the Spiritual Life under the Filling of God the Holy Spirit. [\(1John 5:16\)](#) Rebound is a set of instructions, a procedure given to believers by God, which they must follow for forgiveness of sins, which instructions are based on the Judgment of ALL Sin in the Humanity of The Lord Jesus, The Christ while on the Cross. As a result, the basis for sin forgiveness in Rebound is the Substitutionary Spiritual Death of Christ during the Judgment of all SIN. Rebound is Not a Faith Rest Function because the [Faith Rest Drill \(5 stages\)](#) only operates under the [Filling of God the Holy Spirit](#) and the Filling of God the Holy Spirit is not operational when the believer is under carnality and is only recovered by the use of the [Rebound Procedure](#).

When the Believer Rebounds and afterward dwells on the old sins he becomes overwhelmed with Guilt and starts to review his sins thereby entering emotional sinning instead of moving forward in his Spiritual Life. Guilt is an emotional sin so that the believer who has escaped carnality by Rebound immediately reenters carnal death through the Guilt. Guilt is a morbid self reproach with emotional feelings of culpability. Guilt is the emotional sin which results when the Believer uses Rebound and then in his subjective Arrogance fails to forget those things which are behind. [\(Phil 3:13-14\)](#) As a result, instead of Rebound and Keep Moving [\(1Cor 11:28-31\)](#) the believer Rebounds and enters the Emotional complex of Sins by knocking on the Door of Guilt. Guilt is then parlayed into the 3 [Arrogance Skills](#) in order for the believer to justify his sin and excuse himself for it.

Guilt causes Repression as a [Defense Mechanism](#) or Denial because of the Fear, Worry, or Anxiety caused by Guilt when one has overwhelming concern about the consequences of his sin. The Guilt 'complex' causes abandonment of the principles of Grace available in Rebound and

Keep Moving. Entertaining Feelings of Guilt results in perpetual anxiety where these feelings cause outside pressures in life to become stress in the soul. By this time the believer has entered the syndrome where constant Guilt results in perpetual anxiety about past sins and consequences. [Fear](#) of the consequences of past sin then ignites the Emotional Sins with Guilt. This is the system of motivation for compliance used by every religion on the face of this earth. This is morbid self reproach becoming and culpable with Self Pity and Self Righteousness and all the Emotional Sinning combining with the Arrogance Skills to destroy the Spiritual Life and rapport with God. The principle is that the MORE one increases the power of FEAR or any emotional sin in his life the greater his failure to function under the [Spiritual Mechanics](#) and the more he becomes an [Ineptazoid](#) believer.

Return to the [Table of Contents](#)

### [Gate #27 – The Arrogance of Shame](#)

Shame is a painful sensation or Emotion excited or caused by a consciousness of having done something which injures one's reputation; or by the disclosure of actions which are considered mean or degrading; or that which brings reproach, ignominy, derision, dishonor or contempt. To be ashamed means to be affected by the Mental Attitude of Shame which ultimately leads to the Mental Attitude of [Guilt](#) or VICE VERSA. Therefore, being ashamed is a function of and motivation for Guilt AND having the Mental Attitude of Guilt is a function of and motivation for Shame. Shame as a painful EMOTION has no ability to rationalize and is often irrational unless connected with something which is legitimate and by means of the emotional involvement thus appreciated. When involved in the Interlocking System of Arrogance, in prosperity the believer is under [Self Righteous Arrogance](#) and when under pressure or adversity falls into [Self Pity](#) and certain adversities combine to introduce Shame leading to [Regret](#) leading to Guilt complex functions.

In the consideration of Shame as arrogance there is a strong tie in with other aspects of Motivational Arrogance especially [Emotional Arrogance](#) and the Functional Arrogance in Interlocking System of Antagonistic Emotional Hatred and its Sin Complex. There is NO Place for Shame in the Spiritual Life of the Royal Family of God in the Church Age. When Failure occurs it simply requires the function of the [Rebound Procedure](#) and for the believer to Keep Moving ahead in the Spiritual Life. ([1Cor 11:28-31](#)) Shame is like crying about some problem or failure. You don't Learn from Shame, it does not allow you to focus on the problem, it prevents being teachable, therefore, Shame is Arrogance. It is a state of Emotional and Self Centered Arrogance, it does not provide forgiveness for failure, which only the rebound procedure can and having objectivity as a result of rebound is the only way to continue to move forward in the Spiritual Life by learning Bible Doctrine.

Doing things of any kind for which one will be ashamed will build kinks in the soul and the Arrogance of Shame is one of the major factors which builds subjectivity in the soul. There are 2 corollaries to always remember:

- ✧ NEVER do anything you are or will be ashamed of, EVER
- ✧ NEVER be ashamed of anything which you do, do, EVER

Violation of either of these results in violation of both and is actual doing 'doo-doo'. As a result hangups in your soul will prevent Bible Doctrine from getting through to the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul and becoming Metabolized Bible Doctrine at some point for some subject. This is what occurs when people are feeling remorseful about sin when using the Rebound Procedure. The fact is, GOD does not care how one feels about any failure or sin, his only consideration is based on the fact that the believer knows it was a sin and admits doing it and KNOWS it was already judged. This is the only consideration which God gives to sin at all. Shame and Guilt always go together and guilt is sin but Shame is not, however, Shame is a distorted arrogance of thinking leading to the emotional distraction of Guilt. When one is ashamed about something and then feels guilty for participating in that thing, this is a Mental Attitude Sin. The believer can feel ashamed about something but when he allows that to become guilt then he is falling into the Cosmic Dynaspheres and the sin complexes there. When a believer persists in doing something he is ashamed of he has a hangup in his soul and is in fact totally subjective and will become more and more subjective as his Spiritual Life is degraded by his moving down through the states of Reversionism.

If one does not possess Virtue Love he will not succeed in the Spiritual Life. In 1Cor 13:1 a "Sounding Brass" was used in the ancient world and was 2 pieces of Brass which were rubbed together and produced a sound like scratching fingernails on a blackboard. It was used by peddlers to call attention to their wares or to their talents. In this passage it means that if the believer fails and engages in Shame he will spend the rest of his life calling attention to himself, Complaining and never amount to anything in the Plan of God. This is Distraction as a result of entanglement in the Interlocking System of Arrogance and the 3 Arrogance Skills.

Inordinate Emotional activity is a system of Shame for those who engage in it. Facing the Sin unto Death is a matter of Shame and Emotional Revolt of the Soul is also a matter of Shame. The Spiritual Life of the Church Age for the Royal Family of God is a system of SPIRITUAL COMMON SENSE thinking not EMOTION. Good emotion is a system of response and appreciation from an understanding of what God has provided for mankind in his Grace system. In fact the Essence of God does NOT include Emotion and Emotions are only part of the Human Soul to allow man to appreciate what the human soul approves of and what God has provided. Emotion SHOULD ONLY exist where Cognition has preceded it. Inordinate or Bad Emotion is related to Hamartiology, Sin, and includes:

- ✧ Fear
- ✧ Worry
- ✧ Anxiety
- ✧ Jealousy
- ✧ Bitterness
- ✧ Hatred
- ✧ Anger
- ✧ Malice
- ✧ Guilt

- ✧ Vindictiveness
- ✧ Implacability
- ✧ and others

In addition, the lowest form of human LOVE is an emotional relationship devoid of [Integrity](#), Honor and Virtue having great instability and capable of producing a myriad of [Sexual](#) Sins. Believers who have Emotion as their basis for functioning do mostly crazy, irrational things as a pseudo system for what they consider the Spiritual Life. There is NO EMOTION in the Modus Operandi of the Spiritual Life except in the Appreciation of Grace. Shame and Emotion are always together and the Emotional Viewpoint of Life is constantly distracted with ideas which line up with the Cosmic Dynaspheres because people think having great emotion is happiness and that happiness is only an emotion.

Believers in this category of arrogance are those who have a way of life which is to glory in their Shame or dishonor. When one becomes irrational he is generally not aware of it. When manipulated by guilt he is not rational nor is he handling life through the right and wrong of Bible Doctrine but only according to what someone else says he should be ashamed of. People who focus on the critical appraisal of the failures of others in their past are those who try to manipulate and control the life of these others. There are people today who grew up in the 60's and 70's who glory in their Shame over things they do or have done which are WRONG and motivated totally by EVIL. They demand that everyone recognize that whatever they are doing it is an "alternate life style" and is legitimate and wonderful and that others must glorify all the people involved in these things. This is the lesbian, homosexual and women's lib groups of today. Americans have basically lost all sense in this society. They honor and cater to the WRONG people and have lost all sense of proper value in life. Americans constantly honor athletes and entertainers, non-essential individuals in life, and dishonor and criticize both Law Enforcement and Military personnel, essential individuals in life for the protection and preservation of FREEDOM.

There is nothing like the destruction produced by Shame in life regarding something which one has done in the past and which is now recognized as having been wrong. It is terrible and painful and in fact is defined in this way. Therefore, for the believer, Shame is a painful feeling of the consciousness of something dishonorable, wrong or sinful, that causes regret and the embarrassment of failure to fulfill the Plan of God. For every believer this is without excuse since every believer is given equality of privilege and opportunity to advance in the Spiritual Life and fulfill the Plan of God. The thing which initiates this is the mental attitude of [Human Viewpoint Thinking](#) derived from the strong influence of Evil.

[1Cor 15:34](#) is a divine mandate to all believers to have capacity righteousness from an advanced Spiritual Life. The believer cannot ever come to his senses or awaken from being drunk on Human Viewpoint until he has capacity for blessing from God and this only comes with reaching [Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God](#). God is fair and he will never bless anyone beyond the capacity of the one to be blessed. Some Capacity Righteousness is instantly given at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God to enable the believer to receive [Logistical](#)

[Grace](#) support. A second part can be attained or fails to be attained based on one's personal attitude toward Bible Doctrine and willingness to expose self to it on a consistent basis during his lifetime. Another part is given at the time of receiving the Resurrection Body. ([2Pet 3:13](#)) Believers are commanded to wake up from Human Viewpoint thinking and STOP SINNING with regard to sins related to:

- ✧ The Arrogance Skills
- ✧ The Interlocking System of Arrogance, and its sins
- ✧ Interlocking System of Antagonistic Emotional Hatred, and its Sins

All believers can elucidate some categorization of sin but for most these are only the overt sins which are shocking to the Self Righteous [Legalistic](#) moral believers. However, involvement in the Arrogance and Hatred complex of sins is involvement in the worst sins of the soul. The fact is that many believers still have almost NO KNOWLEDGE of God even though exposed to the teaching of Bible Doctrine. Many believers who hear about God through great bible teachers still have no knowledge of God as a result of refusing to expose themselves to the consistent teaching of Bible Doctrine. Many of these believers are not even aware of their Shame or dishonor and confuse [Morality](#) with spirituality. The believer may not even be aware of Shame at this point and GUILT is definitely not the way to become aware of it. [Metabolized Bible Doctrine](#) in the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul along with the consistent use of the [Rebound Procedure](#) and daily function using the [Spiritual Skills](#) is the only true way to be aware of one's Status Quo of Shame or lack of it.

### **[Shame at the Judgment Seat of Jesus Christ](#)**

At the Judgment Seat of Jesus Christ the believer will stand before Christ in a Resurrection Body to be evaluated as to how he has used the time allotted him in his life for advance in the Spiritual Life. Shame in the Resurrection Body is an Oxymoron and only applies to the absolute total LOSER believer. The Shame of the Loser believer in time and how it occurs is found in [Phil 3:18-19](#). However, it is an oxymoron to think of Shame in the Resurrection Body but it exists, albeit temporary and of very short duration, because the loser believer will NOT be found spotless or blameless at the [Judgment Seat of Jesus Christ](#) but will be shown by Christ to have totally wasted the equality of opportunity and privilege and all of his Logistical Grace support structure. In order to avoid Shame at the Judgment Seat of Jesus Christ the believer must have used the Grace [IRREVOCABLE ASSETS](#) from his salvation portfolio to fulfill his Spiritual Life through consistent function under the 4 Spiritual Skills. Therefore, the believer avoids Shame at the Judgment Seat of Jesus Christ through the execution of the Protocol Plan of God for the Church which is only executed by the consistent function under the spiritual assets provided by God through the Divine Initiative of Antecedent Grace set up in Eternity Past. The Peace or Prosperity of [Phil 4:7](#) which occurs at the Judgment Seat of Jesus Christ cannot be possible until all 4 Spiritual Skills are in place, operating and being consistently used. This requires in part the development and deployment of the [10 Problem Solving Devices](#) and construction of the [Edification Complex of the Soul](#).

The Rebound Procedure is compatible with the Integrity of God. Therefore, believers who are ignorant of the plan of God and the function of rebound will have Shame during the evaluation



of the Royal Family of God at the Judgment Seat of Jesus Christ. ([2Cor 5:10](#)). As a result the believers who fail to execute the Spiritual Life in Time will have loss of reward and instant though temporary acknowledgment and awareness of lost opportunity for spiritual advance while standing at the Judgment Seat of The Lord Jesus, The Christ, the Evaluation point for all believers in the Church Age. The greatest momentary embarrassment in all of Human History will be that of the believer who arrives at the Judgment Seat of Jesus Christ in a Resurrection Body and then under the equal opportunity principle discovers that he has totally failed to execute the Protocol Plan of God. This is classified as Shame which will occur for the loser believer in his Resurrection Body before the Judgment Seat of Jesus Christ because his escrow [Surpassing Grace Blessings](#) and rewards for the eternal state will remain on deposit forever as a memorial to his Lost Opportunity. These are believers who never reached a point of thinking in terms of Bible Doctrine and [Divine Viewpoint](#) and never had a Scale of Values developed from Metabolized Bible Doctrine and whose dying was from the Sin face to face with miserable Death. These are believers who are Punished in their life by God severely yet the Love of God is still directed toward them, but unfortunately mostly in the form of great Divine Discipline. The only thing these believers can think about in life is functioning under the principles and policy of EVIL using gossip, maligning, parties, etc., and they never get to the [Happiness of God](#) during their Life, which is their true heritage.

1Cor 15 is the resurrection chapter and in these 51 verses the subject is resurrection, the resurrection of Christ and all Church Age believers as Royal Family of God. At the Resurrection of the Royal Family of God when in Resurrection Bodies this Shame will come back to lay these believers down flat. These are “LOSER” believers who have not lost their salvation but who have never made **one iota** of progress in their Spiritual Life beyond Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God OR those who advanced to some degree and then fell backward through [Reversionism](#) to Dying Discipline. ([1Cor 15:34](#)) This demonstrates the principle that there is an OXYMORON for the Loser believer who will have a Resurrection Body and stand before Christ at the Judgment Seat of Jesus Christ in Shame. This is an apparent contradiction of terms and status’ with regard to the Resurrection Body where the believer being in a Resurrection Body with total joy and happiness facing The Lord at the Judgment Seat of Jesus Christ and then having Shame is an oxymoron. Therefore, these LOSER believers ONLY will experience a momentary Shame, an awareness of their lost opportunity, before Christ.

### **Avoiding Shame at the Judgment Seat of Jesus Christ**

The question which should be paramount in the thinking of the believer should be “how do believers in The Lord Jesus, The Christ, avoid Shame when in their Resurrection Body standing before The Lord at the Judgment Seat of Jesus Christ”? To avoid Shame at the Judgment Seat of Jesus Christ, there must have been the use of some of the [Problem Solving Devices](#) in time to advance to any degree in the Spiritual Life after [Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God](#). The believer must have resided in the [Divine Dynasphere](#) sporadically or consistently and functioned under the [4 Spiritual Mechanics](#) to some degree for some spiritual advancement. In any case this Shame will not be a lasting Shame for those who receive a  $\Theta$  evaluation since it will be occurring while in a Resurrection Body and under Eternal Security. This will not be

generalized Shame for all believers but ONLY for those believers who have made absolutely NO advancement in the Spiritual Life after Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God. This Shame will occur only at the [Judgment Seat of Jesus Christ](#), where each believer is to be evaluated for what he did with the [Divine Assets](#) provided by God from Eternity Past and given to him at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God in time. So in effect at the Judgment Seat of Jesus Christ the question from the Lord will be “WHAT DID YOU DO WITH THAT LIFE I GAVE YOU”. As members of the Royal Family of God, all believers have equality of privilege and opportunity to execute the Protocol Plan of God during their lifetime. For the believer advancing even one small step toward or having reached [Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God](#), his [HOPE](#) is the absolute confident expectation of the future prospects found in the promises of God from the Metabolized Bible Doctrine in his Stream of Consciousness of the Soul. Confident expectation DOES NOT MAKE HIM ashamed. The Oxymoron is between CONFIDENCE and Shame. Confidence at the Rapture and Judgment Seat of Jesus Christ is based on the function of the believer NOW, in time, as a result of any level of his use of the [Faith Rest Drill \(5 stages\)](#), the [10 Problem Solving Devices](#) and any level of [Edification Complex of the Soul](#) construction. The believer who reaches Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and those who move beyond this status will have confidence NOW concerning the Judgment Seat of Jesus Christ so that if the rapture should occur NOW there will be confident expectation of their evaluation at the Judgment Seat of Jesus Christ. In the [Equation of Hope](#),  $X + Y + Z == \text{HOPE}$  and infers that Hope is ABSOLUTE CONFIDENT EXPECTATION. The HOPE in this Equation is the absolute confidence that in using the Doctrines of God in the form of the Gospel, the Spiritual Skills, and the Eschatological Doctrines the believer will complete the Protocol Plan of God and have NO UNCERTAINTY about and no Shame at, the Judgment Seat of Jesus Christ when he is in a Resurrection Body.

All believers have Eternal Life, both losers and winners under the principle of Eternal Security. Escrow or Super – Grace and Ultra – Super Grace blessings for time, the greatest blessing God can give to a believer in this life, are given at Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God. This infers that the potential for the Escrow or Surpassing – Grace blessings for the Eternal State, above and beyond the Ultimate Sanctification of the Resurrection Body, are far beyond the Capacity of the Loser Believer. These will be a REALITY only for any believer who advances to any degree in the Spiritual Life and therefore for these there will be NO Shame. Here, understanding the Eschatological Doctrine about the future, results in the absolute confidence that the believer, who has functioned under Positive Volition toward Bible Doctrine consistently in his life, will receive, at the Judgment Seat of Jesus Christ, eternal blessings and rewards of the greatest possible magnitude far above and beyond the status of the loser believers. There will be great distinction in the eternal state between loser and winner believers because of all having EQUALITY OF OPPORTUNITY AND FREEDOM in time. The believer is given the spiritual freedom to execute the Protocol Plan of God in his life. Hope is his confident expectation while the Loser believer represents and demonstrates the epitome of an oxymoron. He is the one who:

- ✧ Has Shame in the Resurrection Body at the Judgment Seat of Jesus Christ
- ✧ Has Failed in fulfilling or completing the Equation of Hope
- ✧ Lacks confident expectation or ABSOLUTE confidence at or about the Judgment Seat of

Return to the [Table of Contents](#)

### **Gate #28 – The Arrogance of Lust**

All human beings have an Old Sin Nature with its trend toward Legalism and trend toward Lascivious Lawlessness, with areas of weakness and strength and Lust Patterns. When any believer gets out of fellowship he very often enters directly into the Interlocking System of Arrogance and the functions under the [Arrogance Skills](#) based on the stimulation from his Lusts. The Lust patterns of the Old Sin Nature stimulate the trends of the Old Sin Nature to induce the Area of Weakness or Area of strength to manufacture temptation to produce Sin and Crime or Human Good respectively. When temptations from the Area of Weakness are accepted by the individual's volition this instantly moves the believer out of the Power System of God, the [Divine Dynasphere](#), and puts him under the Power System of Satan, the Cosmic Dynaspheres of the Interlocking System of Arrogance and Interlocking System of Antagonistic Emotional Hatred. The categories of the Lust Patterns within the Old Sin Nature include:

Power	Approbation	Pleasure	Social	Sexual
Chemical	Crusader	Ambition	Monetary	Revenge
Criminal	and others.			

Approbation Lust includes a passive Lust for being the object of another's Lust or attention. [Crusader](#) Lust is an unbelievable system where very often Christians are trying to work for God, but having no Idea what Christian service is supposed to be nor what the Christian Way of Life is, they actually function to promote the plan and policy of Satan, [EVIL](#). The ultimate result of succumbing to Lust is entrance into function within the Arrogance Skills which lead eventually to Malice which is the Lust to Destroy another. The Arrogance of Lust occurs when extreme desire is linked with Arrogance. This is unrestrained, inordinate, unregulated, abnormal desire. It is an arrogant preoccupation with self and one's own desires leading the believer to distraction from consistent Perception, Cognition, Inculcation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine. It includes and interlocks with [Sexual Arrogance](#) but is NOT limited to Arrogance related to sex. It is an inordinate desire for Sex, Wealth, Recognition, Power, Success or any of the accouterments of life.

The believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God or Advanced Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God never varies and never waivers and Bible Doctrine is ALWAYS Priority #1 in his life and this is why these believers can enjoy everything in life. Whether his circumstances take a spiritual, temporal or historical impact direction they can be enjoyed to the maximum by the person who reaches Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God. HOWEVER, it is very important to realize that *other people do not like it when one is enjoying everything to the maximum*. This is a result of their Old Sin Nature's Lusts functioning and they would like to enjoy what this advanced believer is enjoying. From their arrogant perspective of thinking, they are much better than he is, and they cannot understand how he can have all these

enjoyable things and all this enjoyment when in their thinking, he is such a cluck and a pain in the ass and they are so marvelous. They add to their Arrogance with [Jealousy](#) while he, simply enjoying his life, puts added pressure on their Arrogance. He has many things they do not, enjoys life as they cannot, is a blessing to others as they cannot be, has historical impact which they cannot have and which they do not even comprehend and has everything in life which they do not and this puts terrible pressure on their Arrogance. Therefore, they constantly plot and conspire against him and attack him but they will inevitably die horribly under the Sin Unto Death as a result, after being subject to Warning and Intensified Divine Discipline. The funny thing is that others in their periphery never catch on to these things as the cause for the situation which provides their extreme suffering.

Return to the [Table of Contents](#)

### **Gate #29 – The Arrogance of Unrealistic Expectation**

When involved in Unrealistic Expectation Arrogance one is not being loved as he wants to be loved and thus tries to change the other person to conform to his expectations of love. He is not treated the way he thinks he should be treated, therefore, he tries to change others to conform to his expectations as to how he is to be treated. He becomes very frustrated when he cannot get people to conform to his Unrealistic Expectations and thus becomes childish because he has the idiotic idea that everyone should be like HE thinks they should be. Lovers should conform to his romantic notions and friends should act the way he thinks they should act and his spouse must act the way he thinks she, or vice versa, should and in the worst cases be like dear old mom or dad! Unrealistic Expectations interlocks readily with the [Arrogance of Unhappiness](#) and is defined again as a level of subjective preoccupation with self. Unrealistic Expectations present themselves in many ways. These Unrealistic Expectations result in the [Demand Syndrome](#) seen in many contemporary believers. Because they are not loved nor treated the way they want they become frustrated and laden down with Arrogance and [Bitterness](#) and involved in and functions under the [Arrogance Skills](#). Unrealistic Expectations + [Ignorance](#) of the Bible Doctrines of the Church Age destroy the Focus of the [Unique Spiritual Life](#) in Human History.

The Essence or Character of God is protected by the Integrity of God with Love as the motivator and Righteousness as the system of standards and Justice as the function. The believer in the Royal Family of God, has been loved by God from Eternity Past the way he ought to be loved, but as a result of a lack of [Metabolized Bible Doctrine](#) he does not know nor understand this love. Therefore he fails to respond to it and as a result there is NO reciprocity of [Personal Love for God](#) and no motivation in the Spiritual Life. As a result of lack of motivation the [Grace Apparatus for Perception](#), provided by God for him to learn Bible Doctrine, is neglected and there is a lack of the accumulation of Metabolized Bible Doctrine into the Stream of Consciousness of his Soul. This very often results in this believer saying Bible Doctrine does not work when they are under some pressure or are being tested and cannot pass the testing. In these believers perpetual carnality reigns and the [Rebound](#)

Procedure is abandoned for Arrogance so that Legalism takes over in the soul. As a result they become lovers of pleasure instead of lovers of God, always learning but never able to come to the (gr) EPIGNOSIS knowledge of Truth. (2Tim 3:2-7) They thereby reject the only way they can ever be loved and the way they ought to be loved by God in the Spiritual Life. Arrogance along with legalism breeds unhappiness and results in divine discipline. (James 4:6, 1Pet 5:5) This believer misses out on the principle that God loves him the way he ought to and wants to be loved. When the believer responds to the Doctrinal principle that God loves him as he ought to be loved this results in his entrance into the function in the Spiritual Life with Reciprocal Love for God or Reciprocity, and motivation for spiritual advance which blessings beyond his dreams or desires

Unrealistic Expectations means Self Deception where people are not treated as they want to be treated. When this is combined with the Self Centered Arrogance or arrogant subjectivity it replaces the function under the 4 Spiritual Skills in the life of the believer. This is in essence the 3<sup>rd</sup> Arrogance Skill, Self Absorption and combines all the Arrogance Skills in the Soul replacing all the Metabolized Bible Doctrine which was ever in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul. Self Absorption then moves backward to Self Deception and this person is now bound into self induced misery and self fragmentation in his Life all the while blaming others for the consequences of his Arrogance and Sins. The believer can only operate either under the Spiritual Skills or the Arrogance Skills. Once he reaches this stage of fragmentation, it results in constant cycling of the Arrogance Skills in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul and the underlying base of this problem is entrance and consistent residence and function in Cosmic Dynasphere I, the Interlocking System of Arrogance.

His self absorption feeds the Arrogance of Unhappiness, and it intensifies all the problems in his life. Unrealistic Expectations Disillusions the believer in such a way that the believer goes on a Frantic Search for something which will bring him happiness, thus entering stage 2 of Reversionism. His primary problem is that the only complete solution to this Frantic Search for happiness is developing and deploying the 9<sup>th</sup> Problem Solving Device, the Happiness of God, +H. However, this can only occur through consistent Perception, Cognition, Incultation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine resulting in his moving through Spiritual Adulthood and then reaching Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and completing the Execution of the Protocol Plan of God, which he has not even attempted to do. Only consistent Perception, Cognition, Incultation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine resulting in a maximum level of Metabolized Bible Doctrine residing in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul can develop the position of Sharing the Happiness of God and never will all the Wealth, Success, Fame, Sex, etc., in the entire world, nor any other form of approbation, do so.

When involved in Unrealistic Expectations if one rationalizes a problem then he will rationalize the solution and if he rationalizes the solution he will select human solutions over Divine Solutions. Therefore according to the elative conclusion, a rationalized human solution is no solution. The believer must recognize the reality of a problem before he can recognize the reality of the divine solution. This is why some believers deny and fail to use the Rebound Procedure because they feel in their self centered perfection that they have no failures to admit



to. Unrealistic Expectations as a part of the second Arrogance skill, Self Deception, is where the believer seeks to solve frustration by adding Arrogance to Arrogance. The Arrogance of total Preoccupation with Self in the 3rd Arrogance Skill of Self Absorption is thus added to that of Self Deception. Most of those involved in this mechanism are very lonely people and simply want a little companionship. Involvement in Self Absorption also requires Self Justification and here begins the cycling of the Arrogance Skills where the individual is building themselves up in their own soul. Unrealistic Expectation is always a state of unhappiness caused by entering into these Arrogance Skills. When a believer is involved with Unrealistic Expectations he never takes responsibility for his own actions because of his divorcement from reality. Unrealistic Expectations as self absorption means that one is rapidly moving farther away from reality because of the function of recycling through all the Arrogance Skills. The fact is that Arrogance never takes the responsibility for being Arrogant. His decisions related to reality are related to only one type of life style that being life under the Arrogance Skills. When one enters into function under the Arrogance Skills he brings Divine Discipline upon himself for being outside the Grace Plan of God and the only threat to this pseudo reality of the Arrogance Skills is the Absolute Truth of Bible Doctrine.

As a result of involvement with and function under the Arrogance Skills the illusion created by Arrogance becomes the illusion destroyed by Arrogance. This results in rearranging the Doctrine of Hamartiology (sin) to fit one's own Arrogance and in order to rationalize one's own sins and retain one's false judgment of self as perfection. As long as the believer assigns responsibility for his problems and failures to another human being he is under a system of Evil [Obsession](#) and until he recognizes his responsibility for his own problems he will be functioning under the Arrogance Skills and divorced from reality and never be able to solve or get out of the problem situation. The believer must straighten out himself in order to facilitate his getting out from under his problems. The Elative Conclusion says that the divine solution is the ONLY solution and Human Solutions are no solutions. The Solution provided by God is in the form of becoming conscious of just one single sin which has been committed. This brings to the front the option of using the [Rebound Procedure](#) to reestablish the Filling of God the Holy Spirit and thus break the control of the Old Sin Nature over the soul.

Return to the [Table of Contents](#)

### **[Gate #30 – The Arrogance of Sincerity and Desire](#)**

Desire is wanting to possess something without going through the effort needed to gain it. Desire always travels with 2 other companions, Arrogance and Sincerity. There is no way that sincerity is ever a [Virtue](#) since sincerity is a superficiality. People sincerely desire to glorify God and to do the right thing by God and to help God. In most cases this desire to glorify God is never going to be the reality of glorifying God and there is a vast difference between these. Desiring something like this is arrogance and the desire alone takes one farther and farther from reality and actually further from accomplishing that which is desired. Desire and Sincerity will never glorify God but GRACE function and application always does, however,

[Grace Orientation](#) and Function requires continuous, persistent Post Salvation Epistemological Rehabilitation from Positive Volition to Bible Doctrine by the believer. The function of volition under desire is never the source of blessing from the Justice of God. One can wish, desire, beg, cry for blessing in sincerity and the result is only that he is farther from blessing than when he started. Sincerity and desire have introduced a series of false issues which build a wall between him and God. Esau hustled, cried, wept, was sincere, reformed but never expressed faith alone in The Lord Jesus, The Christ alone. Wishing for blessing from the Justice of God will never bring blessing from God. In the Christian Way of Life no beggars will ever get blessing and only in the [Human Good](#) welfare state of socialism will beggars ever get anything. Desire in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul is no substitute for Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul. Combining Sincerity and Desire into ‘Sincere Desire’ greatly complicates simple desire. God has a plan for all creation and for mankind and for every individual believer and He has revealed His plan and the believer MUST follow his plan and following the plan is simple since it is a GRACE Plan and under a Grace Policy there is no work, merit, earning or deserving by the recipients in the plan. Only Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul of the believer provides the capacity to receive the benefits of blessing within the Plan of God which come by way of the Justice of God. Desire in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul is meaningless in the Plan of God. Desire and Sincerity will divorce the believer from the reality of the Plan of God and the blessing which is available from God. The believer with these characteristics of the soul becomes a ‘hustler’.

In the [Pseudo Intellectual](#) sincerity is as meaningless as the emotion which originates it. The Arrogance of [Emotionalism](#) produces sincerity and it is the sincerity of the pseudo intellectual which drives them to the [Self Righteous Arrogance](#) of trying to fix the world’s problems with such EVIL functions as socialism and welfare state systems. Sincerity is directly connected to the emotion and is therefore of no value in any crisis and pseudo intellectuals will be dropouts in any crisis. Sincerity is, therefore, interlocked with Emotional Arrogance and if one is going to be sincere for any reason he must be dogmatic about it and also emotional. This is the Arrogance of Sincerity interlocking with Emotional Arrogance and setting up false dogmatic statements and principles.

Return to the [Table of Contents](#)

### **[Gate #31 – The Arrogance of Pseudo Love](#)**

Of all the subjects in the scripture Love is the major one that average Christians do not understand. They do not understand Personal or Conditional Love nor Impersonal or Unconditional Love and especially the Attribute of the Love of God nor the Anthropopathism of love related to God. As one thinks of Love and Hate as emotional responses to another person or thing or situation he must recognize that God cannot emotionally love the world and God cannot hate anyone and it only takes Arrogance from man to think God can do either of these.

To the extent that one's love of another has any level of Arrogance, to that extent he has no Capacity for Love in any category. There can be no true love when there is function under the [Arrogance skills](#), the Interlocking System of Arrogance or the Interlocking System of Antagonistic Emotional Hatred, all which are guaranteed to destroy the believer because they are part of the Power System of Satan derived from EVIL. Arrogant Pseudo Love is an attempted duplication of True Soul LOVE for the individual who is residing in the Cosmic Dynaspheres. All Personal Conditional Love related to people is [Virtue](#) dependent for happiness and success and within Cosmic Dynasphere I, the Interlocking System of Arrogance there can be NO VIRTUE. Personal Love among human beings depends on virtue for its very existence and perpetuation to solve the problem apparatus existing with it. When a person says "I Love You" when in the Cosmic Dynaspheres it is hypocrisy, arrogance, vanity and [Motivational Arrogance](#). It is paradoxical that in Arrogance mankind is constantly looking for Unconditional Love from others. People in Cosmic Dynasphere I the Interlocking System of Arrogance are totally preoccupied with self and what they want in personal relationships is Unconditional Love, unconditional adoration from others. This is the nature of Arrogance thus life in Cosmic Dynasphere I means the impossibility of finding or perpetuating True Love in relationships. The arrogant desire for Unconditional Love requires a complete and total focus of another's activity in one's own direction. The reality of this is like trying to hold water and squeeze it. Intimacy and rapport in personal love relationships are conditional and EXCLUDE virtue and they can only become Unconditional by having Impersonal, Unconditional Love for all. The Cosmic Dynaspheres Destroy personal love and Arrogance only desires unconditional love toward the subject with no consideration for the object. When the subject and object in a personal love relationship are both arrogant the relationship of romance or friendship will completely self destruct.

Therefore, any form of love when one is residing in the Cosmic Dynaspheres is a false or pseudo love and must include Arrogance and hypocrisy and the greater the Arrogance the greater the Hypocrisy. Just as morality in the Cosmic Dynaspheres is Arrogance, [Self Righteousness](#) and [Legalism](#) so Love in the Cosmic Dynaspheres is Arrogance, the narcissus syndrome, hypocritical and a Problem Manufacturing Machine. Love in Cosmic Dynasphere I the Interlocking System of Arrogance manufactures problems toward self, toward others in one's periphery and also toward God.

### **True Love**

*"I could not love you dear so much, loved I not HONOR more",* Lovelace. This is the principle of love under the Laws of Divine Establishment and the true meaning of love. True Love is a result of something far greater than emotion, it is Integrity and Honor. Lovelace presents the reality of the case that without honor you have no capacity for love nor happiness nor simple pleasures in life. Without capacity for love in any category you have neither honor nor integrity which are so needed for happiness in life.

➤ Integrity + Loyalty = Honor

When people residing in the Interlocking System of Arrogance become part of one's life, they

demand that there is loyalty to them instead of to the principles of Bible Doctrine or the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions. They thereby destroy one's integrity, honor and ultimately capacity for life, love and happiness. Pseudo love emphasizes sex or physical love, therefore self over honor. Objectivity and sex in marriage becomes the ritual which goes with the reality found in the HONOR of true soul love.

- ✧ Sex + Subjectivity = Self Centered, Self Gratifying or [Sexual Arrogance](#)
- ✧ Integrity + Loyalty = Honor == Objectivity
- ✧ Sex + Objectivity == Selfless, Considerate, Thoughtful or Expression of True Love

True love emphasizes honor and integrity therefore the object of love receives both loyalty and respect. Integrity + Loyalty = Honor, therefore, to become honorable, one's integrity must be loyal to the principles of Bible Doctrine, the Laws of Divine Establishment and the Divine Institutions which must first be understood and then applied to life. For the believer in The Lord Jesus, The Christ this means a total understanding and application under reverse concentration of the [Royal Family Honor Code](#) the best summary which is found in *Romans chapters 12-16*. Objectivity for the believer results from consistent Perception, Cognition, Incultation, Metabolization & Application of the Bible Doctrine which constitutes the totality of the Royal Family Honor Code and all its concepts. For the Unbeliever in the client nation this also results from consistent Perception, Cognition, Incultation, Metabolization & Application of the Bible Doctrines involving the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions and all their ramifications. Both of these processes require objectivity of the soul. One cannot understand and apply Bible Doctrine nor the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions, which are derived from Bible Doctrine, and be subjective because subjectivity is Arrogance.

- ✧ Subjectivity + Arrogance (-Integrity -Loyalty) = Cowardice

Cowards have no sense of responsibility and are totally Arrogant and subjective because subjectivity makes a total issue of self. A believer with maximum courage may instantly become a coward because of entanglement into the Interlocking System of Arrogance. In combat situations in the military, a very courageous person can become a raging coward from one day to the next day because of becoming entangled in the Interlocking System of Arrogance. Arrogance in its many forms always results in an inward personality change even if it is not outwardly evident.

Arrogant people take the integrity and loyalty out of the principle of Honor. Arrogant people destroy integrity and honor in others by making an issue of themselves. Arrogant people make an issue of self and thereby USE those they say they love. Arrogant people who use another person will eventually despise him. These Arrogant people cause the problems involved with pseudo love or pseudo friendship which involve integrity vs loyalty. Anyone who makes an issue of integrity vs loyalty is trying to draw one into pseudo love and that influence is coming from an Arrogant person and integrity will inevitably be destroyed.

In the human race in order for Personal Love to function properly it must have the insertion of virtue from [Impersonal Unconditional Love for Mankind](#), this is the Live and Let Live principle. Personal Love for man is dependent on virtue from the [Integrity Envelope](#) of the Divine Dynasphere which includes Personal Love for God and Impersonal Unconditional Love for Mankind. This divine mandate requires the [Virtue Love](#) of Personal Love for God and Impersonal Unconditional Love for all Mankind rather than Arrogance in order to make Personal Love for man function properly in life. Personal Love for Man always gravitates toward Arrogance with a focus on, “what makes ME happy”, “what turns ME on”, “what can she or he do for ME”. Therefore, Impersonal Unconditional Love for Mankind is free from Arrogance while Personal Love for Man is hamstrung by Arrogance. Personal Love for God becomes [Motivational Virtue](#) for Personal Conditional Love in Life. Impersonal Unconditional Love for Mankind provides capacity for Personal Conditional Love for humanity in the form of friendship, romance, and in marriage. This is the Integrity Envelope for Personal Love, which is always virtue dependent. Impersonal Unconditional Love for Mankind is unconditional in all relationships and offers integrity, honor, and virtue by removing reaction, retaliation, [Revenge](#), [Jealousy](#), [Pride](#), [Self Righteousness](#), [Self Pity](#), etc.

Impersonal Unconditional Love for Mankind, Problem Solving Device #8, emphasizes the honor and integrity of the subject and is always free from the [Motivational Arrogance](#) of [Mental Attitude Arrogance](#). In other words one cannot produce Impersonal Unconditional Love for Mankind in the Divine Dynasphere while being arrogant, jealous, bitter, vindictive, implacable, full of hatred, seeking vengeance, full of self pity, or in the throws of a guilt complex. However, Sacred HONOR, developed from Loyalty to Bible Doctrine and [Integrity](#) from progressing through the Divine Dynasphere, forms a legitimate system of human sensitivity and thoughtfulness of others. As a result of any involvement within the Cosmic Dynaspheres this believer is flawed and has no capacity for Personal Love nor any ability to develop Impersonal Unconditional Love and NO honor nor integrity. Impersonal Unconditional Love for Mankind and Personal Love both have emotional responses in the soul and there is no inference that there is no emotional content in Personal Love or Impersonal Unconditional Love for Mankind. It should be obvious that Impersonal Unconditional Love for Mankind solves personality conflicts and supports and strengthens Personal Love. However, if [Emotion](#) dominates the soul the Believer has NO capacity for either Impersonal Unconditional Love for Mankind nor Personal Love and instead he resides in the Cosmic Dynasphere I, the Interlocking System of Arrogance under the Motivational Arrogance of Mental Attitude Arrogance. Believers are mandated to engage in Impersonal Unconditional Love toward all other believers. ([John 13:34](#), [John 15:12](#), [John 15:17](#), [Heb 13:1](#)) Impersonal Unconditional Love must be non hypocritical, ([Rom 12:9-10](#)) whereas pseudo love in the Cosmic Dynaspheres is always riddled with hypocrisy. This Cosmic Dynasphere love is Arrogant pseudo personal love which is designed only for self gratification. The key to success or failure of personal relationships is the involvement or lack thereof in Arrogance. Pride or Mental Attitude Arrogance destroys capacity for love and for all aspects of life. Even a “Wrong Man” minus Motivational Arrogance or “Wrong Woman” minus Motivational Arrogance will result in a successful marriage simply because of no involvement in the Interlocking System of Arrogance. [Humility](#) is essential for success in marriage, career and life in general. ([1Pet 5:5-6](#))



Pride is a sin and Motivational Arrogance and as such is one of the greatest enemies of having any true capacity for love or life. The people who cannot love because of their entanglement in the Interlocking System of Arrogance are also unteachable because of their arrogance and thus cannot find the solutions to it. Love has to be instinctive and objective and have a sense of justice and although EMOTION in love is wonderful it is only an APPRECIATOR and has no doctrine, rationalization nor common sense and is only a responder to physical or mental attraction. Everyone wants to love and be loved, so they rush into it without any thought and no focus on the Bible Doctrinal principles regarding love. There can be very real true love or friendship when a person has capacity for it and they are free from gossip, Self Righteousness, maligning, slander, etc. Subjective people are very frustrated and as a result constantly engage in gossip and malign anyone who seems to be happy. In general in this nation Americans have lost their judgment about many things and the majority of the people have a myriad of internal Hangups which put Scar Tissue on the Soul. Today in the United States of America things are totally disastrous in this regard and most people have Arrogant Self Righteousness and therefore have no capacity for love and they cannot be taught since this Self Righteous Arrogance comes from deep in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul. Being generally unteachable requires a long drawn out process until the soul is able to be straightened out as a result of consistent Perception, Cognition, Incultation, Metabolization & Application of Bible Doctrine and the Mental Attitude sins, Verbal sins, Overt sins and hangups are systematically lost. Until then there will be little or no capacity for love in any category. As a sin, fornication is considered by the majority of Christians to be a GREAT sin, but the Justice of God hardly tapped David for fornication. However, for Pride or Mental Attitude Arrogance, having hangups in his soul and committing MURDER David was clobbered by God suffering Divine Discipline for 15 plus YEARS. What the truly believer needs is to develop the capacity to love The Lord Jesus, The Christ and to get out of his own hangups, Pettiness, Insecurity, Inordinate Competition and inordinate affections. This capacity only comes from maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul and reaching Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God. One cannot ever become a mature believer and remain subjective in his Stream of Consciousness. Subjectivity comes from being young and competitive and making one's way in life while gaining confidence. When it is persistent in life this attitude is often very destructive.

The Righteousness of God and Justice of God have constantly reciprocating functions based on the Status Quo of the believer. What the Righteousness of God approves the Justice of God MUST BLESS, and what the Righteousness of God condemns the Justice of God MUST PUNISH. These functions occur as a result of motivation by the Love of God. This is the Integrity of God in its functions. No matter one's failure or success in the Spiritual Life, the Love of God remains the same, clearly demonstrated in the cases of Paul, Moses, David and many other believers including every individual believer today. However, when the believer involves self in Sin and Arrogance, the Righteousness of God switches to its condemnation mode and as required the Justice of God disciplines the believer, always motivated by the Love of God expressed according to the "rules" of the Grace policy and plan of God, which the believer has chosen to reject or ignore. The believer must understand that Divine Discipline for his failures

is motivated by the Love of God which wants to stimulate the believer to use his volition to return to and stay under the Grace Policy and in the Grace Plan of God.

The believer who is under Positive Volition to Bible Doctrine must have his mind organized through self discipline, respect for [Authority](#) and recognition of greater more important things in life than self. This means that there comes a time in the life of every person that responsibility, duty and honor, must take precedence over one's Personal Love for another and desires for the accouterments in life. This is what occurs in military life during wartime. In life there always will be tests to see if one's sense of duty, responsibility and understanding of historical circumstances are more important than those dearest to him whom he loves personally the most. This also demands reciprocity because in noble, honorable and [Virtuous Love](#) the one being left behind MUST understand the importance of Duty and Honor. The woman's love must be so great that she is willing to permit her husbands sacrifice for this responsibility and when this occurs it is truly wonderful and honorable to witness. A fantastic example of this is the famous speech **"Toast to Army Wives"** by George Patton. However unfortunately, this is not the case with all military wives and today it involves the IDIOCY of "military husbands" who stay home while the wife goes of to fight in wars. Mostly these are very selfish, superficial and very stupid being not willing to let their husbands out of sight for even a second because their time with their husband, to them in their Arrogance, is more important than anything else in life. This is how a people think in times of decadence. There has to be, on the part of the woman, not only a response to the man she loves but the recognition that he must do his duty in life whether at a simple job which requires long or unusual hours or long periods of time away from her in service to his country. These wives must be very understanding and noble and very much in love and dedicated to making a wonderful home for their husbands when they return from duty to country. They must not be contentious and constantly complain and nag and one must not call them bitches because this maligns female dogs unnecessarily. Where true love exists, in the parting of those who must sacrifice from the ones they love dearly, when the wives left behind see their loved one go, they MUST be understanding and encouraging rather than whining, [Complaining](#) and unnecessarily contentious. The one who leaves, must leave with the encouragement of knowing he is loved and will be missed and that his loved ones will be waiting when he returns, as a result he will function to the highest levels of Honor and Integrity in his duty being highly motivated from this love.

However, the believer need not be the person who is sweet to everyone and thinks that doing things for others and helping others with their difficulties or problems or even simple things they cannot do for themselves is always the right thing to do. He should not be the person who cannot say NO to anyone and thereby neglects the responsibilities he has toward "loved ones" because he cannot be unkind or say NO when someone asks him for something. He must not be the one who IGNORES when his loved ones ask for something or who is late for appointments with them because of being SWEET or helping OTHERS. This kind of person has been brainwashed thinking that 'loving the brethren' means being sweet to obnoxious people. It is TOTALLY ACCEPTABLE to be nice and polite to others but being sweet to the average person who has an area of [Blind Arrogance](#) makes them think that when anyone speaks softly

or in kind tones or is a gentleman, this one is a push over and can be easily manipulated. There is no such thing as LOVE in any category without Character and Integrity and people who are constantly SWEET have neither. The people of this country have lost all character and integrity and this was clearly demonstrated when the United States FAILED to help the Hungarians against the communists when they begged for American intervention. Character and integrity says COMMUNISM is EVIL, the United States government said it would help but never did and in fact BACKED DOWN like the yellow cowards the people had become and still are as clearly demonstrated in Korea, Vietnam and the Middle East and now with the contentions with China and Russia in the 21<sup>st</sup> century. Most believers have a difficult time with this principle because they have heard too many pastors talk about LOVE with dulcet tones and with sweetness oozing from their mouths. There is a legitimate love but it is always to be based on CHARACTER, INTEGRITY, and above all else Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul and the [Filling of God the Holy Spirit](#) but it does not mean one has to be a sweet jackass and allow himself to be pushed around by manipulative morons. This is exactly what the American government has been and constantly IS demanding of the population today. It is also what the American government is and has been for many decades succumbing to on the world stage. Legitimate love is a Relaxed Mental Attitude with freedom from implacability, vindictiveness, jealousy, pettiness and all Motivational Arrogance and [Mental Attitude Sins](#). This is true love and it also embodies HONOR and INTEGRITY.

If one has selfish love which includes [Jealousy](#), pettiness and other reactions he will destroy his capacity for love since all true love must have a sense of sacrifice. True love must be sensitive to the object of love. The Personal Love which is possessive is no love at all. This is like a horse with a tough mouth which is not sensitive to the light use of the rein at all. When one becomes possessive and jealous inevitably he destroys the wonderful love he may have had. Love does not stand still in life and is always moving forward or backward. Therefore, one loves those close to him either more or less than he did before. Being possessive strangles and smothers love and if one smothers someone's love for him, he will destroy them as well. One loses something in love when he forgets the origin of all love and by remembering the origin he always has humility to support and stabilize his love. Occupation with the Person of The Lord Jesus, The Christ, [Advanced Personal Love for God](#), is the key to capacity for both Impersonal Unconditional Love and Personal Love, thus reaching the status of Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God is a prime objective with regard to having capacity for Love.

### **Dishonor & Love**

When a woman breaks up with a man in whom she has supposedly been in love and then runs him down to her next lover she has no integrity nor honor. [Bitterness](#) and all [Mental Attitude Arrogance](#) result from a life in the Interlocking System of Arrogance. When involved in Arrogance, under the concept or function of Integrity + Loyalty = Honor, Arrogance cancels integrity and therefore honor and leaves only loyalty to generally a jackass of a person or idea. Client nation Arrogance always manifests itself in the collective distortion of the meaning of love. People use the term "LOVE" for everything as a part of their distortions which is not its true meaning. Client nation public Arrogance divorces love from honor and integrity whereas, true love is based on honor derived from integrity. Integrity in true love results in total loyalty

to the one loved and one would never betray the person he loves and therefore he has HONOR. There is no capacity for love or happiness without the principle of Integrity + Loyalty = Honor. Therefore, true love resides in 'integrity attraction' rather than 'physical attraction' between a man and woman. Physical attraction cannot ever be on the same level with Integrity attraction. Feminine physical beauty is common and where it does not exist it is usually because women generally are whining self pitying wimps. True love is the attraction of the mind in objectivity and the attraction of integrity. Issues in true love are always based on compatibility in fields of integrity where fields of integrity involve the Absolute Truth of the Gospel of Christ, the Laws of Divine Establishment and entire realm of Bible Doctrine. If one has honor first then he can have true love. This is the means by which a woman will give first place to her Right Man and to his career and both of them to Bible Doctrine. Honor therefore, becomes the capacity for love in all categories. There is no capacity in the average believer for Category I Love today because there is no knowledge of God, therefore, no honor or respect for The Lord Jesus, The Christ in general. Category III Love is friendship and true friends cannot exist without integrity from both parties. Integrity means a total loyalty and true friends are loyal to each other without being disloyal to doctrine or truth thus maintaining HONOR. In true love 'integrity attraction' is the reality while 'physical attraction' is the ritual. Consequently the principle holds true here as well, "Ritual without reality is meaningless". A woman cannot get her way with a man by nagging and if she does she has destroyed his integrity. A man of integrity and honor will never succumb to nagging no matter how long it lasts. The thing which most defeminizes the woman and detracts from any attractiveness she might have for the man is nagging, whining, mewing and complaining.

### **Personal Love vs Virtue**

Everyone sins, because everyone has an Old Sin Nature, but not everyone is or can be Virtuous but the fact that the believer in The Lord Jesus, The Christ has an Old Sin Nature AND can in fact be virtuous should provide a small inkling as to the GENIUS of the System of God. The believer has been BORN again into the System of God which requires Virtue First and demands he gives priority to the mandates of the system. In the System of God his volition must be focused on things within the system not those outside the system which can distract and thereby destroy him. In the System of God, Mandates must be Obeyed. In the System, Personal Love is only OPTIONAL, however, everyone constantly runs around in life looking for someone to fall in love with looking for romance instead of Virtue. If the believer looks for Virtue First then when romance is found it will be a success but without virtue, romance will be a source of Disillusion, total Arrogance involvement and ultimately self destruction. Impersonal Unconditional Love for Mankind is Imperative in God's system, is a problem solver and is one of the mandates which must be obeyed. Another mandate for the believer is for him to be Virtuous but he is not ever commanded to fall in love. Virtue characterizes interaction within the Divine Dynasphere in order to handle the problems resulting from the Old Sin Nature and the myriad of attacks of the Cosmic Dynaspheres. There can be no unconditional aspect of personal love toward man and to seek it results in instability, frustration, immaturity, unhappiness and illusion which will drive the believer into Cosmic Dynasphere I the Interlocking System of Arrogance and the Demand Syndrome of the Narcissus complex. Virtue in the believer is the manifestation of the invisible life within the Divine

Dynasphere and all happiness depends on virtue not any of the accouterments or “DETAILS” of any aspect of life.

Return to the [Table of Contents](#)

### **Gate #32 – The Arrogance of Inordinate Grief**

Dying is, in fact, designed by God so that a person has to ‘go it alone’ and face reality alone once and for all. Dying forces one to face the fact that being a success or failure is only based on how one dies, with or without [Metabolized Bible Doctrine](#) as support. God gives dying blessing ONLY to the one who succeeds by the divine standard of having reached [Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God](#) as a result of building a maximum level of Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of his Soul. It is very easy to become vindictive, neurotic or [Psychotic](#) when exhausted or during a prolonged period of dying, however, if there is use of the inner resources of Metabolized Bible Doctrine this believer will receive blessing so that he recognizes that it is a privilege to carry on even though exhausted, then, he gets a preview of what the Lord has for him in dying.

The Principles for the mourner revolve around the concept that grief is a *private matter* between the one who has lost someone dearly loved and ONLY the Lord. Loneliness, sorrow and fragrance of memory belongs only to the one left behind, not the whole world. Comfort from the word of God belongs only to him and many times this will not be understood by others in his periphery when a loved one has died. The believer MUST know that the one he loves is in a place of “no more sorrow and no more tears” and has gone through there own “death shadowed valley” in the absolutely perfect timing of the Lord. No one deserves to harbor resentment and hate in social situations because others are going on with their lives, nor ever try to impose any grief onto them. The believer is left behind to honor the Lord with his function under the [Spiritual Skills](#) and his response to Grace with [Doctrinal Orientation](#) and [Grace Orientation](#). Reaching a point of [Occupation with the Person of The Lord Jesus, The Christ](#) demands that he keep on advancing to or through Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and complete the execution of the Plan of God despite his loss. God has allowed him to remain here alive to fulfill a definite purpose for his life and he must accomplish it. In this way he honors the memory of those whom he loves who are now gone and he can retain those memories until they meet again. ([Rom 14:10](#)) Life must GO ON for the living even though there is a great sorrow for the loss of loved ones. Only the Grace of God can provide the needed comfort and strength to weather this storm in life.

The believer has been given the opportunity to Metabolize Bible Doctrine into the Stream of Consciousness of his Soul to avoid the Arrogance, Antagonism and Emotional sins which can be involved in inordinate grief. He does not forget loved ones who preceded him into heaven by God’s perfect timing for their death. Life and history must continue and he has been given time to fulfill the Plan of God so he must use that time effectively and never superimpose his grief onto those who are going on with there lives.



## Death is God's Decision

It is not uncommon for the believer to have increasing bitterness during the critical illness of a loved one when watching them get closer to dying. This is a result of the constant reestablishment of Arrogance in their soul. This produces Self Pity as a result of the pressure from critical illness. This believer often has been operating on Self Righteousness for a prolonged time and when these attitudes begin to cycle they produce a Guilt Complex and this believer ultimately will surrender to the Mental Attitude Arrogance and sin of irrationality and reaction in the crisis. When a person faces some pressure and relates it instantly to some failure in their past they become extremely Arrogant. When under pressure one must immediately think about the Lord not self in order to avoid Arrogance and self pity. It is an essential stabilizing fact that the Believer cannot be removed from this life apart from the sovereignty of God. Until God makes that decision NO ONE, NO SITUATION, NOTHING can remove the Believer from this life. Dying is God's decision and therefore he decides the time, manner, and place of the believer's death. No Believer can remain in this life longer than God has allotted time for him to remain here. No Believer can be removed from this earth until God decides to take him home. No instrument of death can ever remove the Believer until God makes the decision to remove him and God uses all sorts of instruments of death to take Believers home. Those who remain continue living as a result of the provision for them of Living or Logistical Grace and through the function of the Spiritual Skills. Their Grace Orientation must never be driven off by their soul retreating from grace because of Bitterness over the death of a loved one. The difficulty in handling the death of loved ones comes from the Emotional Arrogance and sins which include Fear, Worry, Anxiety, Vituperation, Revenge Motivation, and others.

Every human being will die apart from the rapture or Exit Resurrection of all believers at the end of the Church Age. Each one will die the way the Lord wants him to die under great blessing or great Divine Discipline. Dying will be fun and a huge blessing for the believer who has reached Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God as a part of his Escrow Super – Grace blessings or it will be the greatest nightmare ever to occur in life for the Reversionistic believer. The way that this part of one's life plays out depends entirely on the individual's volition and attitude toward Bible Doctrine. The believer's decisions about life, the Lord and Bible Doctrine occur constantly and must be positive toward the Lord and Bible Doctrine above all else in life. When the time comes for dying and things are not pleasant in dying, one's own personal decisions from personal volition are what has shaped the manner of his dying. The believer actually decides every day of his life the manner of his death and what he thinks while dying and whether he is in a state of great happiness or great misery is the result of these constant decisions.

Elijah was full of self pity under the broom tree and in the cave and when God made him come out of the cave and asked him what he was doing there he switched from Self Pity to Self Righteousness. The application for the believer basically is that there is no way, that a believer in the Royal Family of God can die well unless he lived well and his capacity for dying is determined by his capacity for living and both come from the accumulation of

maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of his Soul. How one lives determines how he will die and if he has capacity for living then he will have capacity for dying as a mature believer. Ignorance of Bible Doctrine is Arrogance and Arrogance cannot cope with life and is divorced from reality. The coward in living is also a coward in dying and cowardice is lack of the ability to think under pressure whereas courage is the ability to think under pressure and the greatest form of courage is thinking Bible Doctrine under pressure while utilizing the final stages of the Faith Rest Drill (5 stages). When face to face with death and one is dying, even the Mature Believer in death very often will ignore the principle of Dying Grace and often they ask over and over again, “Why did this happen to me”? This is Arrogance. This Believer in Arrogance, if he has not responded to Divine Discipline punishment nor recognized the Authority of God, will fail in his spiritual life, fall into reversionism and come under the Sin unto Death, dying in the most miserable manner imaginable. God keeps every believer alive in time of disaster and adversity so that he can use the principles of Bible Doctrine and experience the greatest happiness of life IN DISASTER, under ADVERSITY.

### Death & Grace

Consistent Perception, Cognition, Incultation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine and advancing in the Spiritual Life to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God results in removal of all fears especially that of death which is one of the greatest fears in life. The Fear of Death is one of the strongest of Satan’s means of controlling both believers and unbelievers in life. Eternal consolation means that sooner or later the believer must face the fact that unless the rapture occurs first EVERY human being must die. How one dies is the final test he takes in life to determine if he glorifies The Lord Jesus, The Christ or NOT! The difference is between Dying Grace for the believer who has reached Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and the Dying Discipline of the Sin unto Death for the perpetually carnal, reversionistic, or degenerate believer residing exclusively in the Cosmic Dynaspheres. The entire issue is that Death can be comfortable and marvelous and the greatest experience and blessing (Ps 116:15) in life OR it can be the final administration of Divine Discipline from God. There will be no discipline or punishment or pain or sorrow after death. Once the believer dies the soul and human spirit leave this human body and are absent from the body and face to face with the Lord where there is no more sorrow, tears, pain nor death. It is the knowledge of what occurs AFTER PHYSICAL DEATH that is important and part of the advance to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God is the knowledge of the Dying Grace Rationale developed through the use of the Faith Rest Drill (5 stages). This rationale is developed by learning from Bible Doctrine everything involving death for the believer and all that God provides for each believer in his death. After Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God, God provides everything for each believer in living and also in dying and dying makes God more of a reality than living every could. When the believer has used his time in this life properly it results in a comprehension of the blessing he will receive in dying and this brings the understanding of the incredible nature of Dying GRACE blessings from God. In addition when the believer reaches Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God he realizes that when and after he dies there will still be the principle of blessing by association, heritage blessing and historical impact for those left behind. This, therefore, can be and is immensely comforting for the believer knowing that God will

bless their loved ones and others associated with them after his death and possibly for many generations. In addition there is also the knowledge of the accompaniment of The Lord Jesus, The Christ while he travels through his own Death Shadowed Valley ([Ps 23:4](#)). This should bring the understanding that the death of every believer is precious in the sight of the Lord. There is also the anticipation of receiving the resurrection body and being face to face with him. **IF** the believer has done his best in the Spiritual Life (maybe he did and maybe he did not) and reached Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God he will know that those left behind will also recognize that the Lord gives and takes away according to his timing and as a result of following his plan. He knows that those left behind will also know that He is still the Lord, to be revered by all believers in all circumstances, and this brings great comfort to the one dying. Understanding the principles of Bible Doctrine related to dying, which takes the sting and fear out of death, becomes the principle of eternal encouragement.

At some point every believer must face the possibility and reality of his DEATH, whether it will be instantaneous or slow, lingering and painful. He, understandably, may not joyfully anticipate it, especially the latter situation, as it is not a desirable thing to face. He must, however, always consider that GOD has provided all that he will need to face and over come everything in life including whatever death may bring to him. God will provide for each and every believer in his dying moments just as He did in his living moments and after his death the believer will be absent from the body and FACE TO FACE WITH THE LORD. The Christian must apply these principles to both self and also to loved ones who have been lost to death. He may seriously miss loved ones but must face the fact that the believer in The Lord Jesus, The Christ who departs this life is in a place of absolute perfect happiness. Understanding the principle of death and the benefit of death to the believer, he must be constantly aware of his responsibility in personally witnessing, especially to his remaining loved ones. The correct attitude of the believer left behind should not ever be inordinate grief for the one who has left this life and is with the Lord. He may experience extreme LOSS and this may bring him great sadness but should not make him fall into Self Pity Arrogance for the true fact is that *THE ONE WHO HAS LEFT SHOULD BE GRIEVING FOR THE ONES WHO ARE LEFT BEHIND* because those who are gone are face to face with the Lord. There is no sorrow or regret in heaven but if there was any aspect of it, those believers who precede us should be feeling sorry for those who have to remain in this world ruled by the devil.

**IF** The Lord Jesus, The Christ is faithful in providing the benefits of [Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God](#) and then [Logistical Grace](#) support in time for the Christian and [Super – Grace](#) blessing at [Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God](#), AND HE IS, he therefore WILL BE faithful in providing [Dying Grace](#) blessings at his death and unimaginable blessings after death in eternity. The human body is not eternally sanctified, separated to God, although it is separated to God for a short time in life after Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God, but when the believer receives his own Resurrection Body he will have Ultimate and Eternal Sanctification. This new body will be perfect, not susceptible to time or any destructive force, with no pain and no misery, no Old Sin Nature and no tendency to produce Human Good. Therefore, the believer can justifiably conclude that his body will be set apart to God, just as is the body of Jesus at the right hand of God the Father now, since he will have a Resurrection

Body just like that of Christ. ([Phil 3:21](#), [1John 3:1-2](#)) The soul is to live with God for all eternity because of one's attitude toward the Substitutionary Spiritual Death of Christ for all human sin thereby choosing the Plan of God, and the regeneration or provision of a Human Spirit by God the Holy Spirit, which is part of the salvation package, giving the believer the ability to have fellowship with God in time and continuing for all eternity.

The Christian must know, as Paul did, ([Phil 1:20-21](#)) that to die, for the believer, is gain because he has been told in scripture that he has an inheritance incorruptible which will not fade and mansions in heaven waiting for him because of the Faithfulness of God. God cannot change his attitude toward the believer and this attitude is set at the moment of the believer making Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God. The "Calling" of God is the moment the believer accepts the Substitutionary Spiritual Death of The Lord Jesus, The Christ and at that moment makes Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God through faith alone. At this moment he becomes the object of the Faithfulness of God and this continues throughout time and into eternity and cannot ever change toward him. There is a time coming ([2Pet 3](#), [Rev 21](#)) where the earth will be destroyed by Fire and the whole universe will fall apart but where all believers in The Lord Jesus, The Christ will survive because of the Faithfulness of God. The Faithfulness of God is set down in detail and observable in the Grace Plan and Policy of God and His faithfulness is based on Who and What GOD is never who or what the believer is or has done. When one makes Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God through faith alone in The Lord Jesus, The Christ alone, GOD starts dealing with him under the perfect plan of Grace and NEVER STOPS in time nor throughout all eternity. Always remember, the Faithfulness of God depends on GOD alone. Believers in The Lord Jesus, The Christ must KNOW that ALL believers have been promised under the Faithfulness of God, a wonderful, glorious future without suffering or misery or sorrow where they will be restored to loved ones in eternity who even now are in the place of perfect blessing and peace.

However, if the believer goes through the "valley overshadowed by death" ([Ps 23:4](#)) while functioning under the [Arrogance Skills](#), the Interlocking System of Arrogance or the Interlocking System of Antagonistic Emotional Hatred he manufactures his own misery in his rejection of Grace. If he goes through the death shadowed valley after living and growing spiritually to maturity and after execution of the Protocol Plan of God, Dying is then the greatest blessing and spiritual profit of all of his life. Death for the believer is Graduation Day and varies significantly in its processes for each believer. Some Believers will take a long time to graduate, therefore have a long valley to traverse. Some Believers will have a swift graduation, therefore have a very short valley to walk through. Some Believers will graduate at the head of their class, with the huge benefits of dying grace and all who advance to any degree in the Spiritual Life will receive some distribution of their escrow blessings and rewards in eternity as part of their [Surpassing Grace](#) package. Some Believers will graduate at the bottom of their class while residing in the Interlocking System of Arrogance or Interlocking System of Antagonistic Emotional Hatred with extreme misery. They will lack their escrow blessings and receive NO rewards for Eternity and their Surpassing Grace blessings will include ONLY ultimate sanctification with a resurrection body minus the Old Sin Nature and minus the potential for Human Good production. Dying will be the greatest blessing of the believer's life if he

functions consistently under the Filling of God the Holy Spirit and [Grace Apparatus for Perception](#) to reach Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and beyond to Advanced Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God. However, Fear, especially of dying, focuses on the problems in life and also in dying, while the [Problem Solving Devices](#) focus on the divine solutions for both. Fear is Arrogance and an emotional sin therefore irrational and a major distraction to deployment of Problem Solving Devices on to the [Forward Line of Troops](#) of the Soul. Fear is also results in function under the Arrogance Skills rather than [Spiritual Skills](#) and is the source of the greatest influence from Evil in Life. The most important principle to always keep in mind is, ***Fear of Death will never prevent Dying,*** and ***Hysterical Grief will never bring a loved one back from the Dead,*** however, it will prevent living life and especially the Spiritual Life. Dying will be the greatest discipline of life if the Christian rejects Grace and functions under the Arrogance Skills and within the Interlocking System of Arrogance. For those left behind, all these things must be understood and considered when one that they dearly love leaves this life. Although a great loss will be experienced and they may have very strong grief at the loss, this is a private matter to deal with in privacy and to recognize that all believers will be reunited with loved ones after this life is over. Inordinate public grief, weeping and wailing constantly especially when anyone is present to listen to the overflowing sorrow which has been brought by this loss is absolute and total Arrogance on the part of the one grieving.

Return to the [Table of Contents](#)

### **Gate #33 – The Arrogance of Insecurity**

For the believer in The Lord Jesus the Christ any level of insecurity is an affront to The Lord Jesus the Christ. It is a rejection of His provisions under Logistical Grace which are designed to keep the believer alive in this world ruled by Satan in order that he can have equality of opportunity and equality of privilege to advance in the Spiritual Life of the Plan of God and complete execution of this Protocol Plan of God.

There are 13 steps to the Hangman's Noose of Insecurity in life:

- ▲ Insecure husbands result in insecure wives.
- ▲ Insecure parents result in insecure children.
- ▲ Insecure children result in an insecure generation.
- ▲ An insecure generation DEMANDS Security.
- ▲ In demanding security (Generally from Government) an insecure generation becomes an entitled generation.
- ▲ The entitlement is offered to the insecure generation by insecure politicians (wanting only reelection).
- ▲ The Vehicle for entitlement becomes some form of socialism (Part of the Plan of Satan, EVIL), offered by an insecure government DIVORCED from the [Laws of Divine Establishment](#) principles as found in the infallible Word of God.
- ▲ To finance the pseudo security of socialism an insecure government buys power and security for itself through both confiscation of wealth in unjust taxation and



redistribution of wealth in the name of the false premise of “the greater good for the greater number”.

- ▲ In the process of socialism giving security to the insecure, Human Freedom is DESTROYED and replaced by the false premises of blessing and other tricky demagoguery words such as “CHANGE”.
- ▲ The divinely established biblically presented principles of freedom under the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions are therefore superseded by absolute power in the hands of the insecure and incompetent rulers or representatives whose power lust feeds on the demands of something for nothing by the people so that the people sell their heritage of freedom for a mess of pottage, pseudo security.
- ▲ This is the beginning of national self destruction which can only be reversed by the spiritual solution which begins with regeneration as a result of Faith alone in The Lord Jesus, The Christ alone which must then continue with Post Salvation Epistemological Rehabilitation functions under the [4 Spiritual Skills](#), and then attains maximum momentum through a pivot of mature believers through whom GOD blesses the nation.
- ▲ In the end the only true and genuine security is provided by the Grace of God never by the efforts or mankind with the only exception being FREEDOM THROUGH MILITARY VICTORY as a principle under the Laws of Divine Establishment.
- ▲ Socialism and other forms of political panaceas are tantamount to the rejection of the divine solution. God’s answer to insecurity, which is provided by the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions found in Codex III of the Mosaic Law and [Romans 13:1-10](#) regarding freedom, prosperity and the ultimate solution for time and eternity, Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God through faith alone in The Lord Jesus, The Christ alone, is the entering into and fulfilling the Protocol Plan of God through the function under the 4 Spiritual Skills.

Return to the [Table of Contents](#)

#### **[Gate #34 – The Arrogance of Dominating Personality](#)**

Personality Arrogance is a key issue in becoming involved in the Interlocking System of Arrogance. In [Blind Arrogance](#) a [Self Righteous Arrogant](#) person dominates a group through his own system of legalism or [Fanaticism](#) where he places himself above all others. When he hears an opinion with which he does not agree he steps in and expresses his opposing opinion seeking to impose his own Self Righteous Standards on all others in his vicinity. Because they have gone from Faithfulness to God in the Divine Dynasphere to Fanaticism in the Cosmic Dynaspheres he has a vernier of strength with a dominating personality as a result of saturation with Motivational Arrogance from Evil and he thus rejects all absolute Truth and Bible Doctrine. Very often an offshoot of Blind Arrogance is Personality Arrogance which is the arrogance of a person having a strong dominate personality and then using it to influence or

dominate a group. There are 2 types of people with Personality Arrogance one dominates through his pleasing, effervescing personality while the other will do so by manipulation. Personality Arrogance finds this dominating, manipulative, pleasing personality setting false standards for a group instead of true standards from Bible Doctrine or the [Laws of Divine Establishment](#) and [Divine Institutions](#). This is a Fanaticism and [Obsession](#) with self superimposing one's false [Personal Opinions](#) on others superseding Bible Doctrine standards which he has rejected. Generally speaking, the uninformed or naive person is the one most susceptible to this type of person. This naive person can be distracted from Bible Doctrine by any other who makes him a victim by the use of his strong Personality Arrogance involvement. This is the blind leading the blind in a church or business or any organization. This is where Personality Arrogance interlocks with Blind Arrogance, Personal Opinion Arrogance and also [Institutional Arrogance](#). ([Matt 20:1-15](#)) This is a member of the congregation deciding that the Pastor Teacher no longer has a biblical message or has not put it together correctly and upon announcing this to his "cell" of believers they then take the cue from him and follow him leaving that local church. All of these people thereby move deeply into the Interlocking System of Arrogance. When this occurs for the Pastor Teacher who is effectively teaching Bible Doctrine it is a good thing indicating to him that the majority whom he will be teaching will only be those under Positive Volition to Bible Doctrine. The dominating personalities in any organization are completely aware of setting up their personal and often erroneous opinions against the authority in the organization, against Bible Doctrine and / or the Pastor Teacher in the local church or anyone in an authority position in any organization. This is the selfcenteredness of Personal Opinion Arrogance and seeks to establish personal opinions over any doctrinal standard or any policy of any organization.

There will be many personalities in the Church Age strongly influenced by Evil, and in our time they include individuals like Castro, Khomeini, Tse Tung, Khrushchev, Carter, Nader, J. Fonda, Obama, Pelosi, Soros, Bloomberg, Biden, Harris, ETC. It is extremely easy for one to be disturbed or shaken by the personality of someone and become antagonistic. Many times people cannot learn because they cannot get past the personality of the one who is teaching and this is simply a test of their objectivity. The believer must never allow interaction with these Evil influenced or controlled personalities to disturb him to the point of not being able to apply Bible Doctrine. History is filled with leadership functioning under Evil in nations but always remember the principle that *the leadership of any nation generally reflects the Status Quo of the people in that nation*. Therefore, historically people get what they DEMAND, what they think and therefore what they deserve. However, the Mature Believer is always protected from leadership functioning under EVIL in a nation under the principles of Logistical Grace and the Wall of Fire. There were 7000 mature believers in the northern kingdom of Israel and because of these men the northern kingdom was protected and blessed in the time of Ahab and Jezebel. ([1Kings 19:18](#)) The believer with maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul is not disturbed by the personalities of contemporary history which are influenced strongly by or totally controlled by EVIL. Leaders functioning under Evil simply reflect the volition and thinking of the people they represent. These personality distortions, when they occur on a local, national or international level are simply distractions to learning and applying Bible Doctrine. Personality distortions in others

can result in the believer engaging in malfunction of the [Faith Rest Drill \(5 categories\)](#) and the involvement in the incessant whining of Human Viewpoint along with entanglement in the Interlocking System of Arrogance, becoming vulnerable to [Reversionism](#) and everything which hinders glorification of the Lord.

### **Personality, Blind & Institutional Arrogance Interlocking**

In business only management or investors can and should set any policy they want since they are using their money to finance the business. Without their capital there will be no labor at all. The labor unions try, and today most often succeed, to superimpose their standards on management in order to tell management how to run its business. This is the [Blind Arrogance](#) of their complaining about their wages or working conditions and Institutional Arrogance where those in the union are trying to set policy for the business. In addition it always involves Personality Arrogance with those controlling the union who have strong dominant personalities trying to bully management for more wages and labor to comply with their wishes and standards. This problem faces people in Local Churches and any organization and even in the home or any other institution under the Laws of Divine Establishment or Divine Institutions or any profession. Thus, Personality Arrogance and an extension of Blind Arrogance interlocked with Institutional Arrogance.

In Blind Arrogance a strong Self Righteous person generally dominates a group of weaker people with some system of Self Righteous Arrogance or [Legalism](#). When this involves believers, they are [Weak](#) being without Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul and they assume a person with a sweet, nice or dominating personality is spiritual and even spiritually mature. This domination occurs from a leader through some system of legalism where he begins to exercise such an influence on the people that they don't look to the Pastor Teacher or any other source of spiritual leadership but accept Personality Arrogance for leadership. This person is immersed in the Interlocking System of Arrogance and so locked into it so that in their soul they are totally degenerate.

Personality Arrogance is also an extension of and interlocks with [Crusader Arrogance](#) as well. This is the arrogant person using his personality to dominate a group and be antagonistic to the authority and / or policy of the organization and leadership of the organization attempting to change things according to his standards, thus interlocking into [Authority Arrogance](#). The dominating person in any organization has entered into Blind Arrogance and is declaring that the organizational leader no longer has the right policy or message. This can be a cause of distraction from Bible Doctrine or any policy of an organization through personality domination rather than Metabolized Bible Doctrine thus resulting in the blind leading the blind or weak. All fall into the Interlocking System of Arrogance and become locked into it. This is the selfcenteredness of personal opinion rather than the objectivity of Truth. Personality arrogance seeks to establish personal opinion over doctrinal standards or the policy and authority of any organization. The believer, especially strong personality believers, must avoid allowing personal opinion to become at odds with Bible Doctrine. Many people, both believer and unbeliever, can then interlock from personality arrogance into [Antisemitic Arrogance](#).

Personality Arrogance is closely related to [Unhappiness Arrogance](#) since all arrogant people are unhappy people. They may place a facade of happiness over their unhappiness but their preoccupation with self guarantees unhappiness. They constantly demand attention and expect all who are in their periphery to make or try to make them happy. When you are preoccupied with self everyone must make you happy by giving you attention. This arrogance demands attention and decides or concludes that certain things will make them happy such as Sex, Business Success, Popularity, etc., and therefore others must provide them. Marriage, as an example, is for happy people, it is NOT a means of bringing happiness to people. Preoccupation with Self will guarantee that whatever accouterments of happiness one may possess he will never be truly happy and Personality Arrogance will in fact cause him to be totally preoccupied with self. He will develop the martyr complex and bring the pall of gloom, which constantly surrounds him, to all those who have the fortitude to remain in his periphery. When he causes others to move into this gloom environment he then gains happiness from their entrance into his suffering periphery.

### **Personality, Blind & Conspiracy Arrogance Interlocking**

Personality Arrogance where the dominating personality sets false standards for a 'CELL' is how this amalgamates and interlocks with [Conspiracy Arrogance](#). This results in the acceptable, dominating, pleasing personality setting false standards for a group instead of standards coming from Truth. This is the Arrogant one saying believers must LOVE everyone and if one is not sweet, kind and does not let everyone run all over him, then he cannot be a good Christian. The great danger here which must be avoided is that never should a believer allow self to be set up against the spiritual gift of Pastor Teacher since this will mean a LIFETIME of Divine Discipline. These distractions resulting from personality domination develop into loss of doctrinal control of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul. Strong or Dominate personalities in any organization must beware of setting up their erroneous Personal Opinions against the authority of the organization in an interlocking with Institutional Arrogance. This interaction includes a myriad of functions under the [Motivational Arrogance](#) of [Mental Attitude Arrogance](#) and can result in the development of the [Mutual Admiration Society](#) with its arrogant and inadequate categories of personality forming a Conspiracy. This conspiracy is always mutual antagonism to authority and thus originates from Institutional Arrogance. Criminal Arrogance is very often rooted in Institutional Arrogance and is interlocked with Personality Arrogance which is total rejection of authority in any and all categories especially national authority.

### **Avoiding Personality Arrogance**

When the believer finds himself disagreeing or rejecting something taught by an established authority, such as in bible study, or something he has read in the bible itself or some policy of the organization he is functioning in; he should move it around in his mind and find the problem area and then remove that problem and place it aside for future consideration. This separates what is acceptable from what is unacceptable. Then he must patiently wait and continue to function under the Grace Apparatus for Perception or the Laws of Divine Establishment until he gains a greater understanding of the information. Then, if he is truly a believer positive toward Bible Doctrine or an unbeliever with Positive Volition regarding establishment principles and has true humility, all the things he questions will eventually be

answered. There will always be new questions and new problems and Bible Doctrine and / or the Laws of Divine Establishment must be inculcated to discover the truth and the explanations.

Return to the [Table of Contents](#)

### **Gate #35 – The Arrogance of Genetic, Ancestor Pride or Posterity Pride**

Pride in one's Ancestry can be fun as long as one does not take it too seriously because one cannot try to establish personal superiority based on ancestry. This was the basis for Nazi Germany. Genetic Arrogance occurs when one assumes superiority because of aristocratic lines or inherited wealth. Genetic Arrogance assumes that greatness in life is inherited from ancestors and rejects decisions and self discipline as the basis for one's own advancement. Reality is that greatness in life is not inherited and the achievements of one's ancestors cannot be the source of inordinate **Pride** without destroying the achievements themselves. This is inordinate self esteem and lofty self respect based on one's antecedents. When one assumes that he has achieved on the basis of his ancestor's successes or has success because of his antecedents or because of inherited wealth he enters into genetic Arrogance. When pride assumes inherited greatness then the greatness is gone and only the Arrogance remains. Genetic Arrogance assumes that greatness in life is related to ancestral history but fails to realize that ancestors succeeded and became great *because they worked hard, could think and had courage and virtue.* Success on the individual believer's part is NEVER related to what his ancestors did and when there is a great deal of frustration in one's life that individual very often seeks success in the family tree.

Genetic Arrogance can have 2 opposite directions, toward ancestors, where the individual takes the successes of his ancestors and applies it to himself without having accomplished anything himself. It can also be directed toward his posterity where he has frustration in his own lack of success in life and therefore tries to produce success through his children. Children should never compete with their parents but live their own lives in honor as did Napoleon's illegitimate son. Greatness in one's heritage always has a trap and that trap is always Arrogance. This is historically how socialism took over liberalism whereby the Arrogance of the aristocracy allowed the rise of Lloyd George and socialism. Being descended from someone great often leads to one leaning on their heritage and as a result these people have no motivation in life and simply depend on the greatness of their antecedents.

### **Posterity Arrogance**

Posterity Arrogance is another type of genetic Arrogance where frustrated parents try to push their children to succeed in areas that they have failed in. This is the child being victimized by the Arrogance of one's ambitious parents and is the disease of inordinate parental pride or fulfilling one's failures through one's progeny. This can also be demonstrated in competition with parental success by the children. Many potentially great people are ruined by trying to follow in the footsteps of the parents or compete with the achievement of the parents. Personality imitation of parents by their children, especially when there are very different



personalities, can destroy the development of the child's own personality. It is a terrible thing for any child to try to imitate a parent in any way. Phillip of Macedon one of the greatest genius' of all time had a son Alexander who had great genius also but not quite as great as his father. Because of this he could only express this genius by leaving Macedon and conquering the world as Alexander the Great. Napoleon's sons are an example also, one was eventually great as a French diplomat and the other was a complete failure dying by age 21. Children are to be seen and not heard and adult social life should be devoid of children but parents should encourage children to develop in their own unique way and form their own unique personalities and follow their own motivation to success or failure in life.

### **Genetic Arrogance and RACE**

Life is made up of an individual's Adjustments and Maladjustments. There are no racial issues in life and to introduce race as an issue into any aspect of life is to introduce Arrogance and thus the development of Hypersensitivity. Many races are extremely hypersensitive as demonstrated by the demand for and current claim of "diversity" in society in the United States of America. If the root of the tree, The Lord Jesus, The Christ, who saves the gentile also sustains him as a believer under Logistical Grace, then obviously NO ONE can make any claim to superiority for any reason. The principle of Logistical Grace counteracts all Arrogance in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul based on Race, Gender or Social Status because the root of the tree sustains every believer in life, gentile or Jew, male or female, rich or poor. Under Logistical Grace the believer has absolutely no right to racially based Genetic Arrogance. Logistical Grace principles can prevent one from entering the Interlocking System of Arrogance and also get him out when he falls into it. The Logistical Grace Rationale thus becomes the first stage of sanity and recovery for the believer who becomes involved in the Interlocking System of Arrogance. Arrogance produces a Legalistic Self Righteousness which becomes a distraction to the Grace blessing one receives under the rationale of Logistical Grace for support in life. All grace blessings come to the believer by way of the Righteousness of God imputed to him at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God. This is a GRACE imputation and is judicial not real since there is no antecedent home for this Absolute Righteousness. The believer does not receive any blessing of any kind because he is superior in race, economic status, social status, intelligence or because of any other system or attribute. He receives all grace blessing from the Justice of God imputed directly to the Righteousness of God given to him by God at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God which is ONLY acquired through faith alone in The Lord Jesus, The Christ alone. Therefore how can anyone, especially the believer, even imagine that there is anything he is or can do which makes him superior to anyone else and deserving of any special status or blessing from God.

Communists raise racial issues in societies they opposes primarily to destroy freedom in those societies. Neither the Constitution of the United States nor the Doctrines of the Bible recognize any racial issues in life. When a believer gets involved in racial issues he becomes a totally Arrogant person and Arrogance manifests itself in his inadequacy. The exploitation of this issue today with blacks and Hispanics results from a Marxist influence and if one falls into this system he certainly has no Bible Doctrine in his Stream of Consciousness of the Soul. When the believer is focused on Bible Doctrine he comes to realize that he is born in the framework

of his race because God has a plan for his life IN THE FRAMEWORK OF THE RACE HE IS IN. Marxism is a satanic organization of false doctrine based on Evil. When anyone relates any aspect of his life condition to environment and blames his failures on environment he has discarded doctrine. He must never blame his rotten personality on race because this is saying his race is inadequate. He must realize that being persecuted is most likely due to one's own rotten personality and it would be the same no matter what race the individual is part of. God has a plan for the lives of all believers and it does not include operating on the playing field of the devil, therefore, believers must never engage in frivolous civil court battles nor racial issues. Observing that this has occurred constantly in the United States it clearly is the exploitation of the stupidity of Americans by communism which has also occurred in the past in South Africa and Rhodesia where the communists have taken over both by contending that their governments persecuted the blacks. There is no area of one's background in life which has anything to do with the purpose of God for one's life. The believer must NEVER let other people use him and never let communists or moslems exploit him in any way. One's background and race has nothing to do with the fact that he is or is not regenerated under the Plan of God. This is what is the greatest of importance for each of believer, and it only requires Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God and Regeneration. Therefore, making Race an issue in the United States of America is an attempted exploitation by communism to take over the country and industry and use them to take over the world. This is the unimaginable Arrogance of the "black lives matter" movement today. The citizens of the United States of America are Americans not Black Americans, nor Chinese Americans, nor Hispanic Americans and believers in The Lord Jesus, The Christ are more than that, they are **CHRISTIANS and Royal Family of God**. When one raises racial issues he is saying GOD made a mistake in his racial background. When he promotes racial issues he is promoting Evil, the plan and policy of Satan, and attempting to produce Human Good, the production of that Plan, and this is operating under the control of the Old Sin Nature. The Old Sin Nature is why tyranny exists in history along with loss of opportunity which has nothing to do with race.

Some gentiles, to compensate for their INFERIORITY, become Arrogant and boast of their superiority, and clearly demonstrating this was the motivation of Adolph Hitler. This was and is the Arrogance of the Nazis and any other **Antisemitic** group. In Germany the Jews were the backbone of the nation which developed the industrial basis for the greatness of Germany. This boasting in terms of unreality is because of some triumph or imagined superiority over others and thus a manifestation of the Interlocking System of Arrogance entered through the **Motivational Arrogance** of Pride as **Mental Attitude Arrogance**. This Arrogance is being contemptuous of others and boasting about real or imagined superiority concerning them. The greatest mistake in life and history is to look down on the Jew because inevitably this results in the greatest and most insurmountable difficulties in one's life. The gentile believer often produces this antagonism when he should be participating in the blessing which comes from the Jew. Believers must beware of the Interlocking System of Arrogance especially when this causes antagonism toward the Jew. The believer is at all times to avoid the Interlocking System of Arrogance with regard to making an issue of race because only God makes an issue of any race and that race is ONLY the Jew. For the people who are so called 'minority' races in the United States to make issue of themselves is total Arrogance. For anyone to make an

issue of any race except the Jewish Race is Arrogance. This is especially true of any believer in The Lord Jesus, The Christ since all that he can possibly learn and know of Bible Doctrine came from the Jews. There is a command for all gentile believers to avoid all Arrogance especially antisemitism because Arrogance is punished by God severely and Antisemitism can be the basis for complete national destruction. Arrogance is a corrupter of the soul and the beneficiaries of Grace are not exempt from it. Arrogance can be the basis of sin which motivates rejection of and distraction from the truth of the Gospel, Bible Doctrine or the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions. By making a negative issue of the Jewish race and its supposed faults one will enter more deeply into the Interlocking System of Arrogance through Pride. This even occurs when the believer discovers that the Jews were primarily the only writers of the New Testament Scripture. This then will interlock with a rejection of Bible Doctrine under [Negative Volition Arrogance](#) and even [Impulsive Arrogance](#) and discrimination against the Jews in any organization often pushes this person all the way into [Criminal Arrogance](#) and into attacking them through Antisemitism.

People who talk in terms of being a superior race are so entrenched in the Interlocking System of Arrogance they are begging for The Lord Jesus, The Christ to put them out of their misery. When these people rule others they put very heavy burdens such as taxes on those whom they conquer and very light burdens on themselves. In addition in this type of situation, where there is Arrogance and response to it, there is inevitably brutality and cruelty. The reality of history and the nature of the prophecy of races ([Gen 10](#)), the problem of Arrogance and Self Righteousness as a result of success, have all motivated people to make issues out of racial origins. There is no such thing as a pure race any longer in history and racial purity disappeared at least 3500 to 4000 years ago. This is illustrated by the Jews who have the best genealogies of all races but where the largest Jewish tribe, that of Joseph, is itself half gentile. Not only does the bible remove the racial issue but also the constitution of the United States of America never ever makes an issue of race therefore, any time any American government system or official is making an issue of race they are violating the constitution. Therefore, all racial issues are generally the result of [Reversionism](#) and the influence of Evil and any attempts at correcting the “minority problem” is an Evil solution to a pseudo racial problem. The composition of the Integrity of God and our relationship to the Integrity of God is the ONLY true issue for man with absolutely NO regard to Race, Gender, or Social Status. In the Church Age whether a person is Jew or gentile, privileged or underprivileged, male or female, is never the issue. All races are eligible for Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God and all come to it in the same manner with the only thing required being positive use of volition toward the Gospel of The Lord Jesus, The Christ. Regardless of race, social status, or gender, the individual must acquire relationship to the Integrity of God through Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God. Adjustment to the Justice of God for Salvation and Eternal Life requires simple Faith alone in The Lord Jesus, The Christ ALONE and no race ever has any advantage over any other race. The Justice of God judged the sins of all races when the humanity of The Lord Jesus, The Christ received the imputation of them on the cross. Therefore, Race is never an issue in anything except the maladjusted Arrogance and stupidity of mankind. When anyone ever makes an issue out of race it is always based on the influence of Evil, and is part of the plan and policy of Satan, rising up. Therefore, both Jew and gentile, male or female, freeman

or slave must Adjust to the Justice of God for salvation in the same manner, by means of faith alone in The Lord Jesus, The Christ alone. This ALONE will enter them into an eternal relationship with God.

The constitution of the United States of America says that while there are historical differences in the races, as a citizen of the United States of America race makes no difference whatsoever under the law. Scottish, Irish, Chinese, Germans, Italians, etc., and just about every race has become great and famous in the United States of America except the black race because the blacks have been misled by liberals in government in order to control them. Liberals lie to the blacks and their only hope is the same as our only hope that being faith in the Lord Jesus Christ. All people must understand and respect legitimate authority and not allow Arrogance to destroy it because NO race can survive collective Arrogance. All that has been done for blacks is to make them, as a race in this nation, totally Arrogant and totally divorce them from reality, giving them false hopes and the delusions of persecution. Jews are in fact actually superior as a race but that superiority and greatness destroyed the Jews in history and their collective Arrogance led to the repeated administration of the 5<sup>th</sup> cycle of Divine Discipline to them. Adolph Hitler, being as stupid as anyone can be, took a racial prejudice system and created an Arrogance in Germany which also destroyed it. This German Racial Arrogance had no historical foundation and it was taught in Nazi Germany that Germans were Aryans, which is not even a racial term but a linguistic term referring to a language category and NOT A RACE. This was also demonstrated in Spain, France and other areas of the world where their collective Arrogance eventually destroyed the people there.

This nation alleges, in hypocrisy, to give freedom to everyone and opportunity to all races. However, a number of “minorities” have been discontented with their lot in life and feel they are not getting all the opportunities which others have received. In their racial Arrogance they make constant demands, totally incompatible with their abilities and their ideals, for the sole improvement of their lot in life. There have been and continue to be politicians (not statesmen) who exceed to these demands and add greater confusion to an already degenerate Status Quo. In the United States of America since the 60’s this nation has been functioning under great hypocrisy where blacks, Hispanics, and other ‘minorities’ are patronized and simultaneously despised and this has resulted in no one having respect for those who are being patronized. The blacks and also the Hispanics have been and continue to be patronized by the liberal politicians and as a result the black race generally has developed strong involvement in the Interlocking Systems of Arrogance and this has greatly contributed to their degeneracy in the area of social life. If blacks had listened to George Washington Carver or Booker T Washington instead of Martin Luther King they all would be 1000% better off today and would be regarded the same as anyone else in society. Every political issue since the 60’s has gotten down to the blacks, Hispanics, Mexicans, and today moslems and their presumed persecution and this has been the result of politicians patronizing them to get their vote. This has strongly contributed to the national degeneracy at this time in this client nation and has resulted in the overt appearance of revolution with rejection of all authority with personal property destruction going unpunished. Within the confines of any Local Church where Bible Doctrine is emphasized, race never is an issue and no race is prohibited from being simply themselves. In

contemporary history, the only place where blacks and other ‘minorities’ ever have had a fair chance to succeed without patronage has been in the United States Army but that has now ended. When a government interferes with the principle of universal military training it is inevitable that that nation will have both military AND social disaster. Universal military training is designed to teach the principles of responsibility and authority orientation in life. In the 70’s at least, in every phase, rank and stage of the United States Army, blacks and other races have had a fair chance to advance based on ability. Yet even before the 70’s blacks and liberals both despised the military. Yet the most respectable law abiding citizens come out of the military with a clear understanding of authority and a professional attitude toward the Laws of Divine Establishment principles. When any client nation rejects its military and beomes involved in a voluntary army, as has occurred in the United States, the result is always total degeneracy. Again this is clearly demonstrated in the recent history of the Unites States of America since the termination of the Military Draft System.

A major thing which can rapidly destroy any race is removal of their concept of authority orientation. Believers assemble to study doctrine because they love Bible Doctrine and all believers in all races are able, with the Perception, Cognition, Incultation & Metabolization of Bible Doctrine, consistently to rise above any racial stigma. Believers should want to grow in grace and the knowledge of The Lord Jesus, The Christ and grow in his plan and the major problem they will encounter in their own spiritual growth is their own personal Arrogance. As individuals believers they must maintain objectivity to view these things in the light of Bible Doctrine and realize that each of individual, without regard to his background in any area, has the same chance to advance in the Spiritual Life as anyone else. The believer has no right to ever make issue of race or engage in political liberalism and he must have respect for anyone who has made the effort to learn Bible Doctrine under the privacy of his Royal Priesthood. Under the Plan of God no one ever has a right to claim discrimination for any reason. In the Plan of God skin color or race is absolutely NO handicap and if there is any handicap it is from Arrogance especially [Self Pity](#). Many races and nations have been destroyed because of collective Self Righteous Arrogance including great peoples like the Persians and Lydians to name but a few. When under pressure and feeling sorry for self the source of that self pity is the Arrogance of pride. When in a personal period of prosperity and one becomes snobbish the source of this again is Arrogance. There is no place for self pity nor snobbish Self Righteousness in Christianity. For Christian families, Christian schools are NOT the best way to bring up children and despite the pressures in public schools with the consistent teaching of Bible Doctrine in the home and the local church, children will invariably learn to get along with and function beside all sorts of people.

Return to the [Table of Contents](#)

### **[Gate #36 – The Arrogance of Egocentricity](#)**

Self Consciousness is Ego and there is nothing wrong with being self conscious and in fact, in order to be Objective, one must be self conscious and relate self to absolute truth and reality.



Life must be faced in the “here and now” and one cannot go back and live in the past or the GOOD OLD DAYS (as attractive as they might seem at times). When EGO gets involved in thinking, such as the recognition of personal inferiority in life in some area, this often causes disturbances in the processes of thinking. The recognition that someone can do something better than one can is NO REASON to become Arrogant, however, in fact, it IS one of the major sources of jumping into [Mental Attitude Arrogance](#). The reality is that the world is better because certain people can do certain things better than others. This should not become the basis for thinking from the perspective or viewpoint of EVIL, where this recognition of another’s superiority in some area causes one to look for a weakness in this other person in order to judge, condemn and try to destroy him. This is the subjective egotistical approach in thinking under the influence of Evil. This is the approach which inevitably leads to [Psychosis](#), Manic – Depressive mental illness, Schizophrenia, and many other mental disturbances. These and all categories of the [Motivational Arrogance](#) of Mental Attitude Arrogance are the result of involvement in the Cosmic Dynaspheres and failure of the believer to pass the testing of Arrogance which is what the failure was of Ish (Adam) and Ishah (Eve) in the garden. Therefore Egotistical Arrogance is the distortion of the Self Consciousness of the soul when facing 2 categories of reality:

- ▲ Subjective Reality – Another is better than one is.
- ▲ Objective Reality – One is better than another is.

These 2 systems of Motivational Arrogance can start a whole system of [Fanaticism](#) involving:

- ▲ [Inordinate Ambition](#)
- ▲ Inordinate competition

In the Status of Egocentricity, [Self Absorption](#) locks in and becomes the expert in lying to self. Thus cycling in the [Arrogance Skills](#) by this means devotes one’s life to [Self Justification](#). [Fear](#) generally is associated with [Rejection of Bible Doctrine](#) which puts layer after layer of [Scar Tissue](#) on the Soul until it builds up to the point of preventing the Perception, Cognition, Incultation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine. This results in saturation of the soul with Arrogance which causes the believer to accept only the LIE because they can no longer assimilate Truth. In time of prosperity this becomes [Self Righteous Arrogance](#) and in times of adversity it becomes [Self Pity](#). This Self Righteous Arrogance and Self pity merge in the soul to provide deep entrance into the Interlocking System of Arrogance. Any historical catastrophe which occurs to a nation is often designed specifically to destroy the spin off of [Reversionists](#) and the pivot of mature believers is always preserved. Spiritual growth through consistent Perception, Cognition, Incultation, Metabolization of Bible Doctrine moves the believer with unwavering Positive Volition toward Bible Doctrine from [Spiritual Infancy to Spiritual Maturity](#) and thereby into the supporting pivot for the nation. Only [Metabolized Bible Doctrine](#) in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul can guarantee freedom from Arrogance and protection from the anthropocentric systems of Satan. Thus being involved in Egocentric Arrogance is total and complete focus on self above all others and all things.

The failing of Egocentricity is added to by this individual having a huge problem of an [Obsession](#) with the failures of others. Very often believers, who have strong standards from Bible Doctrine, look down their nose at others who don’t have the same standards. This Self

Righteous Arrogance then surfaces having been derived from Motivational Arrogance in its many categories. The problem today, as always, is not the issue of morality or lack of it but the condition of one's soul and what is contained within it. When under pressure Arrogance as Self Pity occurs and when the believer fills up with Self Pity he constantly whines and Complains. The Greater the whining, moaning, complaining and crying the greater the self pity and therefore the greater the Arrogance in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.

The believer must never lose track of the origin of all blessing which is God himself. When other people provide great approbation telling the believer how good and talented he is, he must remember that the origin of everything he has and everything he is, is God who provides ALL blessing. The believer must remember this origin and give thanks to the origin because he is only what he is because of the origin. God gave and keeps on giving as he did when he gave his unspeakable gift of the savior in the 1<sup>st</sup> advent of The Lord Jesus, The Christ. The believer loses something extremely important when he forgets the origin, by his remembering the origin he will always maintain Humility. When he forgets the origin he inevitably becomes Arrogant and thinks he is self made. He forgets who permits him to continue to live and work hard and be successful. Many a successful believer having moved almost to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God, falters and fails at this point because of this principle. When people succeed in life and forget the origin of that success they fail even though they still retain the accouterments of material prosperity, promotion and success. If the believer is very intelligent and he knows it, to the point of being Egotistical about it, he can instantly be made to become stupid with an IQ of -0 as a result of some physical ailment which he has no control over. This could knock the Arrogance right out of him IF he understood, maybe he would and maybe he would not, that he was entangled in it in the first place. If he has something or someone he loves or enjoys he must always remember the origin. No believer has ANYTHING which the Lord did not give to him and which He can take away from him in the blink of an eye. During the Christmas season especially, the believer will be able to exhibit a great sense of humor IF he remembers that all of the Human Race are nothing before God and whatever one is or has or wherever he goes or to whatever level he is promoted or in what ever way he may succeed it is because of who and what the Lord is and not who or what he may or may not be. He has whatever talent or ability he has because God gave him that talent and ability and if he gets too Egotistical about it the Lord can take it away and then he will see exactly what he really is. If one does not appreciate the Lord as the source of everything in normal times then he will fail in abnormal times and will inevitably blame the Lord in disaster whereas he merely ignores the Lord in normal times.

Arrogant people are always selfish and never think much beyond their own nose. They want power as advisers and will advise suicidal courses of action just to have the power to give the advice. This is and has been the American government for many decades in all of its aspects. When the believer is in a position of authority, to the extent that he seeks advice he shows weakness or incompetence or both. Incompetence results from a lack of learning and understanding how to handle personal or professional pressures. Weakness is the result of Arrogance preventing him from recognizing that he is helpless and he WILL face impossible situations and the only help he can always rely on is Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream

of Consciousness of the Soul. Seeking advice or counseling demonstrates true weakness and is Arrogance in the form of Selfcenteredness. Arrogant people always make an issue of themselves and seeking counseling is demanding that an instant solution be provided by another to an irresolvable personal problem. Refusal to accept the principles of Bible Doctrine is making an issue of self and rejecting God as the true issue.

The only thing which really counts in life and is actually of any importance and the only thing the believer can take with him from this life is Bible Doctrine. When believers get to the point of thinking they are really something important they slip into the Interlocking System of Arrogance and Arrogance as it seeps in brings with it the most vicious of all categories of sin and failure derived from Evil, immediately neutralizing the ability to think. If one is smart he becomes dumb and if he is talented he loses his talent and if he is in love he loses capacity for love and becomes an unworthy object for someone else's love. There is nothing in life worse than Arrogance. Changing the type of sin one commits in a system of pseudo spiritual growth by giving up something only results in Arrogance with Self Righteousness and Self Pity being developed into [Guilt](#) and thus total failure. The person who has assumed erroneously that he has not committed a sin in a long time is in a state of Self Righteousness delusion supported by deep entanglement in Arrogance known or hidden, and he is the one who never knows what to do in a crisis. This person never knows what to do under any pressure of any adversity and he feels bad for himself when he is under this pressure. He goes back to the last sin which shocked him believing that this is the cause for his pressure and this causes the Arrogance complex to interlock into Guilt so that he is locked in for total failure as a result of having no thought ability or content. Recovery from sin is provided by the [Rebound Procedure](#) and is instantaneous with God in forgiving for the sin completely blots it out, while recovery from lack of thought requires consistent function under the [Grace Apparatus for Perception](#).

All believers functioning under [Negative Volition](#) toward Bible Doctrine, who neglect or reject Bible doctrine, have subjectivity based on their own Arrogance and their own vanity. The [Reversionistic](#) believer always misconstrues the motivation of others, he rejects the integrity of anyone who comes into his periphery, it is impossible then for such a believer to carry on a normal relationship with anyone else in life. His involvement in [Hypersensitivity Arrogance](#), the fat head syndrome, also means this person has a thin skin and is easily offended or insulted. Some people are so Arrogant, so self-centered, so full of themselves, that they take everything seriously and personally, and every comment as an insult and are constantly vibrating in the confusion of their mind. The greater the persons Arrogance the thinner their skin. In situations like this every statement made to this person is immediately misconstrued because of their Hypersensitivity. Therefore, with any Arrogance involvement there often is developed a case of extreme Self-righteousness.

From Egocentric Arrogance comes the 'Narcissus' complex where the believer has complete preoccupation with self accompanied by total dissatisfaction with all others. He becomes dissatisfied if he thinks they are better than he OR if he thinks they are worse and cannot put them in their place by telling them why they are worse or wrong. These are people who are never happy unless everyone around them is in their proper place. It is here that Egocentric

Arrogance interlocks with [Institutional Arrogance](#) with its disorientation to having proper response to authority. In this regard, a man of strong character cannot control a weak woman who is involved in Egocentric Arrogance because she lacks [Humility](#) but a strong man can control a STRONG woman because she has humility and Self Esteem and recognition of the Authority of her husband never feeling threatened by him or his decisions. The worst combination in a marriage is a weak man who can be inevitably controlled by both a strong and a weak woman. Proper handling of AUTHORITY demands a STRONG man in the family for the proper rearing of children because children are neither strong nor weak but are impossible until they are brought into line. A weak woman always wants to run everything and makes everyone uncomfortable until she controls it all. Egotistical Arrogance, as a real or imagined sense of superiority, distorts life and the true perspective of human frailty and it never recognizes its shortcomings as a result of being under [Limitation Arrogance](#). The ones who have this IMAGINED sense of superiority are the ones who become [Psychotic](#) because they are flawed. One day they love you and the next they won't speak to you.

It is inevitable that Self-righteousness comes to be regarded as spirituality by the person who has it as part of his involvement in the Interlocking System of Arrogance. When one finds self hopeless and helpless he MUST remember that he has a LIVING God who knows all the facts, who has told him that there are no accidents in life, and that there is only one way to keep Arrogance out of the picture, and THIS is HIS purpose in putting him into a hopeless, helpless situation. The secret to born-again living in the Christian Way of Life is in spiritual advance as per the [Equation of Hope](#), through consistent Post Salvation Epistemological Rehabilitation via daily Perception, Cognition, Inculcation and Metabolization of doctrine. The believer who ignores this secret because of Arrogance involvement and builds resistance to Bible Doctrine will, in fact, come to only be able to believe the LIE of all aspects of Evil. There is only one way the believer is ever going to succeed in the Christian life and that is to realize how weak he actually is. He cannot ever have any illusions about self. All it takes for Arrogance to flare up in a moment is for the believer to be impressed with his own abilities or talents.

All Arrogant people in making an issue of themselves and are also consumed with [Pettiness](#) and self importance. No matter how catastrophic life becomes there is always some Arrogant person standing around making an issue of his personal life or personal problems and ignoring the ongoing present disaster. In time of crisis the Arrogant believer only thinks of self and how he may be personally endangered by the actions of others. It never occurs to him to consider whether anyone is doing what they should to recover from the disaster. The most innocuous request put to him becomes a source of personal endangerment. Arrogance has no answer to the crisis only the Egocentric megalomania of perceived personal disaster. Arrogant people are always focused on self but when someone else comes along who has greater power they are immediately frightened and go from Arrogance and false courage to obsequiousness and true FEAR. Then they flatter that powerful person constantly as a result of being motivated from their fear.

The Christian often thinks he is here in this life to manufacture his own pleasures in life and to do things his own way as if he is here to dictate to God what God's plan will be with regard to his life. This is total Egocentric Arrogance and Bible Doctrine is designed to whip this Arrogance out of him. The Christian is here only for the pleasure, glory and satisfaction of God and God is not up there in heaven for the believer's pleasure or glory. I am and Col. R. B. Thieme Jr. had been 'DOG' people. I have decided Dogs are a prime example (when in the care of those who are "dog people") of WHY HUMAN BEINGS CONTINUE TO EXIST. Dogs are a pain in the ass to care for and must be properly trained, fed, groomed, exercised, bathed and when needed taken for medical aid. Why do some of us LOVE them so much? BECAUSE, despite their being at times a huge pain in the ass, they bring us pleasure and often unconditional love when they are obedient. The same thing applies to people. God created Angelic Creatures and then Mankind KNOWING from Eternity Past (Duh! that is so long ago that the human mind cannot even comprehend how long ago that was), prior to creation, that both would be a HUGE PAIN IN THE DIVINE ASS but God keeps man around to give him a chance to learn his plan and purpose and execute these in the short period of his life by reaching Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God or beyond. Thereby man can bring Him greater glory and pleasure upon man's receiving the incredible Escrow Super – Grace or Ultra – Super Grace blessings during his lifetime on this earth ruled by Satan, God's greatest antagonist. When the believer aligns with God's plan, God's pleasure and glory then overflows to the believer and is absolutely unimaginable. This is the same for your DOG when he is obedient and loyal, your pleasure overflows to him with chew toys, long walks and many treats. {This is a perfect analogy mostly because DOG backward is GOD!}

### **Egocentric Arrogance & Conscience**

In the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul of the believer the Conscience establishes Norms and Standards and a Frame of Reference for serving God based on Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the soul. ([1Tim 1:3](#), [Heb 9:14](#)) The Conscience containing Bible Doctrine is the basis for enduring suffering, maltreatment, misunderstanding, etc., without trying to apologize, defend or justify self in any way. ([1Pet 2:19](#), [1Pet 3:16](#)) In this sense the properly developed conscience is a great protection in avoiding Egocentric Arrogance, the ego trip. When one has firm standards based on the Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul and sticks with them he will be able to avoid this Self Righteous Egocentric Arrogant ego trip function. It is apparent that most CHRISTIANS don't in any way ever come to realize how Arrogant they actually are and this includes ALL Christians. It is truly amazing to observe the number of believers in The Lord Jesus, The Christ who have absolutely NO MANNERS. This Arrogance often comes from not having any Norms and Standards developed in the soul concerning various aspects of life. True [Humility](#), good manners and thoughtfulness are often very closely associated and are to be developed as Functional Virtue while residing consistently in the Divine Dynasphere, the [Power System of God](#). The concept of good manners, decorum and thoughtfulness are extremely important in life but unfortunately are left out much of the time in most people's early childhood training. Therefore, conscience is an extremely important principle and function and the more it fills its Norms and Standards and Frame of Reference with Metabolized Bible Doctrine and the principles of the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions regarding to all areas of



life the greater one becomes as a believer in this life. The conscience is a computer related to capacity for life and the GOOD Conscience is one saturated with Metabolized Bible Doctrine forming Divine Viewpoint Norms and Standards, and from Grace Orientation provides GRACE concepts and principles in life and thoughtfulness of others at all times.

Return to the [Table of Contents](#)

### **Gate #37 – The Arrogance of Inordinate Ambition and Competition**

Inordinate Competition can be a person competing in various areas of the Spiritual Life or in Social Life ie., Category II and III love. The worst display of Arrogance is found in people who have [Hangups](#) and think they are smarter than others and think they are going to upstage others with their Inordinate Competition motivation. One type of competition is what makes a male a man and what makes a female a lady but when married people compete with each other that is a pain in the neck and it is better to never be around a couple like this who constantly compete. Believers must never let life cause them to be mentally depressed but it will if they are involved in Inordinate Competition or Inordinate Ambition. If one engages in this dysfunction he will become a frustrated person living constantly within the Cosmic Dynaspheres of the Interlocking System of Arrogance and Interlocking System of Antagonistic Emotional Hatred designed by Satan. The believer must come to realize from Metabolized Bible Doctrine in his Stream of Consciousness of the Soul that he will never get ahead in this life by pushing or by devious means. **IF**, a believer under consistent Positive Volition does get ahead in this life, maybe he will and maybe he will not, it will be because of his position in the Grace Plan of God and it will then result in glorification of God. Therefore, it is much better to be a garbage truck worker than a corporate president if one remains under the Grace Plan of God with consistent advance in the Spiritual Life. From my personal perspective it is much better to teach little children than be a college professor and be under the constant influence of Evil. When this is one's perspective in life he will begin to be relaxed in life and lose the strong ambitions and desires to get ahead in life. Ambition is normal and is simply having objectives in life and fulfilling them but Inordinate Ambition is trying to prove one's superiority to and over others by one's achievements thus interlocking with [Achievement Arrogance](#). This is then covered by a facade of Hypocrisy in [Self Deception](#) because it is contained in the Right Lobe of the Soul and not publicly shown to others. Pulling the pin on this part of the Arrogance grenade by engaging in Arrogant occupations results in total misery in life. Believers cannot and should not have goals so set in their minds that they move toward these goals even if they have to walk over the dead bodies of those who get in their way while accomplishing them. These are demonstrations of hangups in the Soul and this is Inordinate Ambition. The worst possible thing to happen to this type of person is to grow old and see that many if not all of his ambitions have failed. This results in totally frustrated old persons becoming very old before their time. This occurs when one has these strong drives and ambitions which drive him deep into the Interlocking System of Arrogance which is a dead end and will never take ANYONE, anywhere, under any circumstances, permanently. On the other hand the believer does not have to go around with drooping shoulders and go through systems of self flagellation

which are NOT in any way part of humility nor the Spiritual Life. [Humility](#) is a state of having NO HANGUPS AND A LACK OF SUBJECTIVITY IN THE SOUL. To the extent one has subjectivity in the soul to that extent he is Arrogant and NOT humble.

Many people cannot make friends because of Arrogance and many, have endeavored to discover something about others, only to compete with them and this is Arrogance. No one can ever make friends and get people to appreciate them by constantly competing. There is a place for competition but it is ONLY found in the devils world and this is, in fact, what is wrong with wimpy pastors who do not study and teach as they are supposed to. There is no one in this life whom anyone should EVER be competing with. Every Pastor Teacher should do his own thing and simply study and teach and plug away and let the Lord advance him. Every believer should simply do his own thing and study each and every day and move ahead constantly in the Spiritual Life and apply what he has learned in his own study. Arrogant people also have no capacity for love in any category ever, and having friends who are Arrogant will never bring one true friends because they have no capacity of any kind for life either. It is God's purpose for each believer to have friends and loved ones in this life and this is part of his election. Capacity for love and life is something God provides for believers in his [ELECTION](#) of them by providing Bible Doctrine to develop their capacity. Election will therefore make incredible changes in the life of the believer once he begins to understand it. Things go wrong in life when Inordinate Ambition is linked to other categories of [Motivational Arrogance](#) and [Functional Arrogance](#) and that is when the trouble begins where Arrogance automatically divorces one from any perspective regarding the source of all that he has or can have. When one is Arrogantly and Inordinately Ambitious and has hangups from Arrogance then anything and everything in life is related to Arrogance, selfcenteredness, [Self Pity](#), [Self Righteousness](#) and [Guilt](#) and accompanying this is ONLY being able to believe the LIE of the plan and policy of Satan, EVIL.

To avoid Inordinate Ambition and Inordinate Competition, two very destructive drives in one's personality, it is imperative that the believer always remember, ***"If God does not promote you YOU are not promoted"***. As ruler of this world, Satan promotes reversionistic believers under his principles from Evil but such promotion is not accompanied by the stability and blessings resulting from reaching [Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God](#). Here the believer develops and deploys [Occupation with the Person of The Lord Jesus, The Christ](#), and [Sharing the Happiness of God](#) and possesses the CAPACITY for the promoted life. Thus, the only promotion which counts comes from God and results from advance to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God. Understanding this principle of Bible Doctrine relaxes the believer's Mental Attitude and prevents him becoming overly ambitious and pushy in trying to get to the top in life and keeps him from developing hangups and frustrations thinking that he is not getting proper recognition in life. This is a totally relaxing principle insulating the believer from Arrogance and protecting him from ambition motivated by Evil and it guards him from the success syndrome. Therefore, Grace Promotion is the only acceptable promotion for the believer in The Lord Jesus, The Christ.

As long as Arrogance is in the soul there will be nothing but punishment from the Justice of

God for the believer as a result of being constantly OUTSIDE of the Plan of God. If the Arrogant believer is not promoted by God he will inevitably enter into some system of self promotion which develops into a system of sinning related to Arrogance. Self promotion is a system of Arrogance which conflicts with the Word of God. ([James 4:6](#), [1Pet 5:5](#)) No matter what one does, or how important one is in life, **IF GOD DOES NOT PROMOTE YOU, YOU ARE NOT PROMOTED**, and there is nothing comparable to functioning at the level of the Spiritual Life God has given the individual believer in this church age as a Grace benefit. Promotion Momentum follows a definite system in the Protocol Plan of God. The Justice of God gives every believer a fair chance for promotion and there is NO believer who is NOT promote-able. Unfortunately too many people think promotion ONLY involves temporal or material successes and advancements. Arrogance is the mechanism for destroying the promotion momentum in a persons Spiritual Life. The principle is and always has been in this Church Age:

- ▲ *Filling of God the Holy Spirit + Human IQ == Spiritual IQ*
- ▲ *Spiritual IQ + Grace Apparatus for Perception, Operation Z == Metabolized Bible Doctrine in Stream of Consciousness of the Soul & PROMOTION & Advance in the Spiritual Life.*

Promotion starts with the Grace of God as the policy and part of the function of the Justice of God. It is the Arrogance factor in his life which is what causes the believer to find himself in some aspect of difficulty. Involvement in the Interlocking System of Arrogance and the related sins are the worst DRAG which occurs to the Spiritual Life, at any time, to anyone, in the Church Age. Believers must break away from Arrogance in the life in order to be able to advance in the Spiritual Life.

All great people are simple in their procedure but infinitely superior to everyone else in their thought. The greater one is the more simple he is in function and thus lacks major hangups and Arrogance in trying to prove he is better than everyone else by competing with others. Great people lack Pettiness, [Jealousy](#) and Envy as well. In reality truly great people are very simple and not nearly as complex as those people who constantly try to prove themselves better than others by being Jealous, [Bitter](#), maligning others, etc. Only those who criticize great people are complex and are [Arrogant Self Righteous](#) people with overriding Jealousy and many other involvements in [Motivational Arrogance](#) of [Mental Attitude Arrogance](#). The world is filled with [Conspiracies](#) and only Self Righteous Arrogant people have to explain away the problems of life by conspiracy theories. People who don't understand history very well have to use conspiracy theories in their Arrogance and this simplifies everything for them and by trying to blame everything on this pseudo simple solution they show they are complex people with [REAL Hangups](#).

### **Inordinate Ambition and Power Lust**

Inordinate Ambition and the lust for power and success is a guarantee of never having happiness in life, never having normal relationships in life and never having true blessings in life. Success in any area of life only can bring or be accompanied by happiness when the successful person has the ingredients essential for capacity for prosperity, happiness and blessing. These are only developed by understanding and adherence to the Laws of Divine

Establishment and Divine Institutions for the unbeliever and by advance in the Spiritual Life to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God for the believer. People who are impressed with power will never be impressed with FREEDOM and never have capacity for freedom, happiness or love. This is why one can meet people and be attracted to them and yet the friendship does not work because they are attracted to POWER. When POWER is the only absolute and it comes in relative chunks and that is the focus of LUST, these people may use others and be nice to them but sooner or later these others will be thrown out for ones who can promote their power ambition more effectively. When power becomes religion then one is dealing directly with EVIL and there will invariably be multitudes of converts into this system. To foresee the possibility of having power, approbation, success, etc., forces one to return to the fact that those who think in terms of relatives cannot ever enjoy the blessings of possessing the absolutes.

### **Inordinate Ambition vs Virtue**

The Cosmic Dynaspheres are designed to move the believer into progressively deeper and more destructive systems of Arrogance eventuating in **Emotionalism** thus making him totally unhappy and dissatisfied with his position in life. However, God has not left the believer to his personal devices but has developed for him, and at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God placed him into, the Divine System for Human History, the **Divine Dynasphere** which requires **VIRTUE FIRST**. Being the subject of unfairness and injustice are the greatest tests in life and when one is falsely accused, in reaction, he wants to stand before the world and prove himself right and justified. In fact, in the Protocol Plan of God, it is inconsequential for the believer, when people malign or lie about him or misrepresent him and make false statements and accusations about him, and his response should be ‘SO WHAT’! **Humility**, developed in the Divine Dynasphere, allows these things to pass by because The Lord Jesus, The Christ will understand and if people do not that is their problem alone. Therefore, only in the Divine Dynasphere can the believer take unfair treatment without reaction. Reaction to any situation manufactures preoccupation with self and blaming others for the function of one’s own free will volition. This type of Arrogant divorcement from reality, with its total loss of common sense, wisdom and discernment, leads to **Crusader Arrogance** and involvement in politics like the “MORAL MAJORITY” which inevitably results in a de-emphasis of Bible Doctrine in one’s life. This is affirmative action, social engineering, utopianism, social action, the social gospel, etc., a total distraction from the Plan of God. Every believer will face momentum testing in the area of animosity from others and unfair treatment, gossip, maligning and being discredited by others. To maintain one’s personal **Virtue & Integrity** requires Confidence toward God and Courage toward man, Worship toward God and true Morality toward man, Personal Love for God and Impersonal Love toward man and these VIRTUES are only developed by consistent residence and function within the **Divine Dynasphere**. In this way, response to God avoids reaction to man and thus avoids all the Evil principles contained in the Interlocking System of Arrogance. In a civilized society where actual survival is not an ongoing issue as it is in a primitive society, people have more time to be preoccupied with self rather than thinking about surviving. People who have to be concerned about surviving do not have time to be frustrated and preoccupied with self, therefore, in a civilized society frustration is generally being motivated in life by one’s Arrogance and bad decisions. In a primitive society bad decisions

frequently lead to DEATH so there is no room for Frustration. Frustration in any aspect of life is Arrogant preoccupation with self, disappointment with others, thwarted lusts and desires and vain Ambitions. Most people are frustrated in situations and under conditions where they actually have control but use their volition to make bad decisions from a position of weakness as a result of lacking Metabolized Bible Doctrine in their Stream of Consciousness of the Soul. Therefore, poor judgment and bad decisions and lack of acquired wisdom from Metabolized Bible Doctrine brings about one's own personal difficulties in life. For the believer in The Lord Jesus, The Christ Virtue and Integrity are to be the first priority and without these the believer cannot function in the resolution of the Angelic Conflict. In addition they become hopeless, helpless and useless in meeting all the problems of life no matter how smart or clever they may be nor how sweet their personality is and as a result they will not make it very far in life.

### **Proper Orientation to Power and Success**

Success in any area of life is fantastic and delightful but there are 2 ways to acquire or come to success:

- Sell out and function within the Cosmic Dynaspheres under Satan's system of Evil
- Advance in the Spiritual Life under God's system of Grace and function based on the Metabolized Bible Doctrine in one's Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.

The consideration must be when one has some form of success, would one rather have a few people love him because he is himself or many more people love him because he is successful? Therefore, clearly the way to acquire power or success does not depend on one selling out to the Cosmic Dynaspheres. Power and Success can be achieved or acquired by functioning in the Divine Dynasphere as well, however it will be dependent on God providing the promotion and success under his timing and then it will be a blessing and the result of advance in the Protocol Plan of God.

PROSPERITY is something GOD provides for ANY believers who reach Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and beyond, no matter how humble his status, station or circumstances may be. The principle for the believer is "If God does not promote you, then you are not promoted, If God promotes you NO ONE and NOTHING can ever demote you". The difference between promotion and prosperity under the Power System of God vs the power and success of man in general living in the Cosmic Dynaspheres of this world, is the possession of the capacity for power, prosperity, success and blessing with humility. This fundamental virtue of Humility, developed in the believer in the Divine Dynasphere and the unbeliever under the Laws of Divine Establishment, allows them both to enjoy prosperity while it lasts and use the power and authority properly while it exists. Then the believer in the Plan of God, and the unbeliever as a result of his consistent function under the Laws of Divine Establishment, can understand that HE WILL BE SET ASIDE by time because inevitably TIME sets aside all people. This is the idiocy of Power Lust and Inordinate Ambition and Competition with the idea of forming a "legacy" for historical recognition. However, there is a unique exception for the believer who reaches or exceeds Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God because there is for him in eternity blessings, decorations, privileges and honors which will last FOREVER. Therefore, when success and prosperity are related to the Plan of God and the Divine Dynasphere where the believer has advanced to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God,



then these have eternal repercussions regarding happiness. For those who have the right kind of prosperity, (and remember that there is nothing wrong with having great success, power or prosperity in life) it is accompanied by capacity for success, happiness and prosperity and without the capacity all will be meaningless and in fact create misery in their lives. For the believer, happiness, success and prosperity in life depends on faithfulness, function and advance in the [Power System of God](#), the Divine Dynasphere.

Return to the [Table of Contents](#)

### **Gate #38 – The Arrogance of the Demand Syndrome**

The Demand Syndrome is part of the Narcissus complex thus interlocks with the [Motivational Arrogance](#) of [Egocentric Arrogance](#) manufactured in Cosmic Dynasphere I, the Interlocking System of Arrogance. It involves total preoccupation with self and the function of subordinating all others to that preoccupation. Implacability is also preoccupation with self in the narcissus complex and accompanies the Demand Syndrome. Since Arrogance destroys [Virtue](#) the narcissus complex and the Demand Syndrome replaces the loss of virtue and accompanying happiness in the individual and fills this vacuum resulting from entrance into Cosmic Dynasphere I. Involvement in the Cosmic Dynaspheres manufactures the Demand Syndrome in the same way as the Divine Dynasphere manufactures Virtue in the individual. This preoccupation with self is accompanied by an all encompassing lust for attention. Since [Happiness](#) and [Virtue](#) coexist in the Divine Dynasphere that which destroys virtue always destroys happiness as well. The frustration of lacking true happiness while in Cosmic Dynasphere I, is therefore manifest by the functions of the Demand Syndrome and narcissus complex. Narcissistic preoccupation with self demands complete and total attention from everyone and anyone in one's periphery. Therefore the Demand Syndrome is directed toward all mankind in a negative way just as the Functional Virtues are directed toward all mankind in a positive way. The constant use of euphemisms by individuals, to avoid using unpleasant or potentially offensive vocabulary, is very often indicative of complete disorientation to reality or an arrogant necessity to be well thought of for eloquent speaking. The Demand Syndrome is individual Arrogance demanding for self complete concentration, devotion and submission from everyone. Everyone in the vicinity of this person must contribute to his arrogant preoccupation with himself. This desired approbation from the masses becomes an obvious distraction to Perception, Cognition, Inculcation & Metabolization of Bible Doctrine and is therefore the breeding ground for saturated entanglement in Arrogance. The demand for attention and approbation also develops [Hypersensitivity](#) so that everyone must conform and be subservient or be bullied, ridiculed, punished and disgraced. This conformity to someone else's Arrogance is their game which is illustrated by 5 categories:

- ✧ The arrogant adolescent demanding their parents conform to them.
- ✧ The entitlement generation demanding what they have not earned nor achieved in life.
- ✧ The frustrated lover demanding full attention from the opposite number.
- ✧ The talented athlete subverted by the approbation of the crowd.
- ✧ The successful entertainer who parlays applause into Arrogance and flattery into

megalomania.

The Demand Syndrome results in the vanity of seeking to control one's environment or to always be the center of attention. This destroys any chance of happiness since the true source of happiness is learning Bible Doctrine in the [Divine Dynasphere](#). Therefore the demand for attention from all mankind is in antithesis to [Impersonal Love for Mankind](#), a primary Functional Virtue developed in the Divine Dynasphere, and it seeks to control everyone by demanding attention, flattery, recognition, etc. History is often the story of how the weak control the strong and very often weak insecure, irresponsible, arrogant individuals control policy, procedure and people in Social Life, Love Life, Business Life, Professional life, Culture, Government and Churches. Through self centered Arrogance and preoccupation with self the weak thereby can dominate the strong. The weak who demand food stamps, welfare checks, free education and wait for government handouts control the United States of America today and this is an ongoing historical downtrend in America which is leading inevitably to national collapse.

One cannot ever be spiritually mature when he constantly makes an issue of Self and the Believer who has advanced to [Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God](#) and is receiving his Escrow Super – Grace Blessings never makes an issue of self in any way. No believer should try to make his [Opinion](#) important, in addition he never has to explain what he is thinking, his point of view, especially any thinking that he is important when, in fact, he is not. He should never be feeling sorry for self, insisting his viewpoint be heard or try to straighten out any organization. NO Believer possesses Virtue while making an issue of self, this is [Self Pity Arrogance](#), preoccupation with self, even megalomania. It is easy to be a JACKASS but nearly impossible to be a saint. The Christian becomes miserable and in fact transmits that misery to all those in his periphery because he makes an issue of self when he cannot find his right spouse, good job, social group, etc. He unfortunately does these things when the true issue of Bible Doctrine as 1<sup>st</sup> priority not SELF is ignored.

The believer enters the Cosmic Dynaspheres, Satan's Systems as a result of any level or type of Sin and any function contrary to the Grace Plan and Policy of God. Consequently, any involvement in the Cosmic Dynaspheres contributes to the **Unhappiness** of the believer. Considering Cosmic Dynasphere I the Interlocking System of Arrogance and the Demand Syndrome the believer entangled here is thoughtless, unreasonable, and stupid in demanding that he be made the focus of the lives of everyone in his periphery. The Demand Syndrome has no physiological implications or causes, and it is strictly a spiritual problem. Therefore, this Arrogance becomes a clear and simple way to determine if one is not residing in the Divine Dynasphere and if virtue first is not the major priority in one's life. Under the Demand Syndrome, everyone in one's periphery MUST contribute to the megalomaniacal preoccupation he has with self. This believer demands attention and total focus from everyone, else he will punish everyone around him. This is the Matriarch not getting the proper attention and then making life miserable for everyone in her family. This is the patriarch not getting the proper attention and then going out and raising hell or causing some personal injury to self to get attention. The Demand Syndrome also develops the total antithesis of all Virtue,

Hypersensitivity, which becomes a self destructive function putting one's spiritual life in reverse along with all categories of living and at times ends with suicide. When under the Arrogance of the Demand Syndrome, ALL persons in view must conform to some pattern of subservience or this believer reacts with bullying, punishing, ridiculing and maligning in public. This habit of criticizing others because of their lack of compliance with one's demands becomes a TOTALLY self destructive function. This is the believer manufacturing his own unhappiness and misery and often this type of people congregate to support each others hypersensitivities. In illustration: Arrogant adolescent children very often try to control their parents by being completely thoughtless, self centered, totally wrapped up in their own activities, sulking and developing hypersensitivity to the point where it destroys any physical beauty and attractive personality they may have. This is the ENTITLEMENT generation today who think that just because they exist they are entitled to a free ride in life. These are people who have been or who think their ancestors have been, abused historically therefore they are entitled to a free ride in life. The reality of life is that HISTORY moves on and leaves behind the abuses of past generations and NO ONE is ever entitled to anything because of the disasters which have occurred in the historical past. This is illustrated clearly by the Japanese Americans who were terribly maltreated in the United States of America after Pearl Harbor even though these Japanese CITIZENS in the United States of America prior to and during World War II had fantastic integrity and honor yet they were abused by the United States government. These abuses occurred in the past and must be and have been forgotten and no reparations ever demanded in compensation for them.

These are also people who demand what they have neither earned nor achieved in life or deserve in life. Every individual in his life has at some point had an injustice directed toward him but when he sits around and whines and [Complains](#) about it, this is Arrogance. The fact that the individual is still alive, especially the believer, indicates that God has a plan and purpose for his life and he must never look back whine or complain about things which have put him under pressure or adversity in his past. This is self destructive and such pressures and injustices may well be the reason he is the person he has become, in the situation he is in, because of the Plan of God for his life. When the believer is in God's System the [Divine Dynasphere](#), [HUMILITY](#) demands that he "forget those things behind and press forward to things ahead moving toward the high calling of God in Christ Jesus", moving constantly forward to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God. It is ONLY Arrogance which looks back while humility and virtue always look forward and the truth of life is that NO ONE is EVER entitled to anything for any reason.

This is the frustrated Wife or Husband who find it extremely easy to get into the Demand Syndrome, putting self on a pedestal, thinking he or she has personally been maltreated. In reality, no individual can ever enter into marriage without at some point and in some way being maltreated. Frustration in personal relationships in life always results in some maltreatment which easily leads one into the Interlocking System of Arrogance and the Demand Syndrome. This is the frustrated individual in a relationship who engages in demanding abnormal things in life like constant approbation and recognition as a result of his building Arrogance. This is the hypersensitivity which will effect that person's life in every way

especially within the Local Church. This is the talented athlete, artist or performer who has approbation of the crowd or audience for a short time and they must beware, “Sic Transit Gloria Munde”, The Glory of the World Passes Away! Approbation and recognition can normally result in some emotional stimulation but the believer must remember that people are fickle and will BOO as easily as applaud. Approbation develops hypersensitivity because it goes directly into the soul to stimulate the emotion. The danger comes from the fact that Approbation is addictive and when it is no longer present it is missed and results in the Demand Syndrome.

Among all people there are 2 kinds of people who can be boorish in life:

- Those truly great who do not have to be concerned about others recognizing their greatness because those close to them will clearly recognize this and as a result they gain sufficient satisfaction from knowing that they have done a good job in life and do not need approbation and never try to appeal to anyone.
- Those pseudo great who talk about their own greatness and drive everyone away from them as a result of their Arrogance.

The Demand Syndrome with its hypersensitivity is typically and inevitably followed by interlocking with [Disillusion Arrogance](#), the misdirection of one's life. This results in misdirection of confidence in life. Confidence in people is acceptable when one is in close personal relationship with people but one must realize that it can lead to disappointment and disillusionment when they fail. The point is that Nobody is perfect, everyone has an Old Sin Nature, and one should not expect perfection from anyone. In [2Cor 2:3](#), [2Cor 7:16](#), [2Cor 8:22](#), [2Cor 10:2](#), [2Cor 11:17](#) Paul expressed confidence in the Corinthians and it must be recognized that this confidence is NOT VIRTUOUS. [Confidence](#) is only a virtue of motivation and directed toward GOD! Confidence in Man for any reason, like Personal Love for Man, is VIRTUE DEPENDENT and this confidence manifests the personal virtue of Paul which was not blind but related to the Positive Volition of the Corinthians toward Bible Doctrine. If one truly has, from residence in the Divine Dynasphere, virtue, confidence in someone within the framework of his own virtue, then this is significant but not virtuous. Confidence in man can only be sustained where confidence in God exists and is sustained by Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul. This is to sustain and protect the confidence in man from Disillusion and [Iconoclastic Arrogance](#).

In the Demand Syndrome there can also be misdirection of Personal Love which is directed toward Man and is Normal but NOT virtuous. In Category II, the Personal Love of Romance or Marriage and also in Category III, the Personal Love of friendship or Personal Love for family are legitimate expressions of Personal Love but do not in themselves have any virtue. The thing which makes Personal Love wonderful is Virtue therefore Personal Love is virtue dependent and can only be sustained and perpetuated where [Impersonal Unconditional Love](#) supports it. For virtue to exist in love it must have proper direction and the true principle is that Virtue only exists in [Personal Love toward God](#) which requires residence and function in the [Power System of God](#) the Divine Dynasphere and also in Impersonal Unconditional Love for Mankind. It is inevitable that personal love toward man intensifies the problems of human

interaction resulting in Disillusion, the [Feet of Clay Syndrome](#), [Self Pity Arrogance](#), [Jealousy](#), vindictiveness, implacability, [Revenge](#), etc., and these all cause inevitable self destruction. The Demand Syndrome can also cause the misdirection of Impersonal Love toward God and this is obvious Arrogance and megalomania, attempted superimposition of one's personal standards on God. With Personal Love for God, which is a virtue, there can be no disillusion nor disappointment with Love for God apart from blaspheme. Blaspheme always comes from the believer who is in a state of Arrogance or when functioning from stupidity resulting from ignorance of Bible Doctrine.

People are not perfect, all people have Old Sin Natures and love to use them. Those whom one decides to engage in personal love with have flaws and failures so that Personal Love for man can become a tragic flaw for the individual leading to involvement in the Cosmic Dynaspheres and ultimately self destruction. Personal Love minus stabilizing Virtue establishes vulnerability to weaknesses, sin and [Human Good](#) production from the influence of Evil. Therefore, any hypersensitivity in the individual produces and also results from the Demand Syndrome and causes Disillusion which results in the individual making himself unhappy. People in one's periphery may be right or wrong in their treatment of him, but this is inconsequential, and whether they are right or wrong, fair or unfair is never the issue. The issue is that this individual makes himself miserable when involved in the Demand Syndrome. This believer cannot even say God is punishing him because he is using his own self determination to punish himself with Self Induced Misery. The reality is that most Christians are miserable NOT because God is giving them Divine Discipline but because they are punishing themselves and God does not have to waste his time in punishing them. However, if they remain in the Cosmic Dynaspheres long enough then they will receive warning, intensive and ultimately dying Divine Discipline from God to add to their Self Induced Misery. The believer who constantly makes himself miserable can only avoid this by entering and consistently residing and functioning within the System of God the Divine Dynasphere and REMAINING there and when he slips out he must get back in as rapidly as possible. As a result of Self Induced Misery being the predominate motivator of unhappiness in the believer's life, he is therefore his own worst enemy when he is constantly using his own volition to make decisions to produce personal unhappiness. This is inevitable for the believer who resides and functions within the Cosmic Dynaspheres which are in fact specially designed to make the believer unhappy.

Return to the [Table of Contents](#)

### **[Gate #39 – The Arrogance of Ingratitude](#)**

Gratitude to God is in essence [Grace Orientation](#). Ingratitude to God keeps the believer spiritually poor and is the epitome of Arrogance. This is the greatest self centered attitude and without gratitude one cannot ever solve his problems in life. Lack of gratitude is the prevalent attitude of the dependent person in the welfare state. The epitome of both temporal and spiritual immaturity is Self Centered Arrogance. A believer will always remain immature when



he has no gratitude for what he has received, especially the myriad of amazing things he receives from God. When the believer is blessed with material wealth or success from the Grace of God he must never allow Arrogance into his soul. His great material blessings do not mean that he is better in the eyes of God. He must never judge what others are doing because this is instant involvement in [Self Righteous Arrogance](#) and [Legalism](#). Believers with money who flaunt their money are a great test for other advancing believers.

Gratitude is measured in terms of [Humility](#) and Arrogance always destroys true Gratitude because Arrogance and Humility are mutually exclusive. There must be something in life upon which the believer can focus which will knock the Arrogance out of his life and which he can have respect for. This something must be and must remain Bible Doctrine and it must be transferred from the pages of scripture into the Right Lobe of the Soul of each believer by means of the teaching ministry of a qualified and prepared Pastor Teacher. Therefore, only those who respond to Bible Doctrine avoid the Cosmic Dynaspheres and the [Arrogance Skills](#) and are able to Execute the Protocol Plan of God in their Humility.

The [Gratitude Gauge](#) is defined as the measure of the quality of True Happiness in the Soul of the Believer. Involvement in the Interlocking System of Arrogance is the 0 point of one's Gratitude Gauge and Advanced Personal Love for God, [Occupation with the Person of The Lord Jesus, The Christ](#), Problem Solving Device #10 is the 100 point on his Gratitude Gauge. A 0 on the Gratitude Gauge creates a vacuum in the soul into which floods the LIES from Evil of False Doctrine. ONLY the use of the [Rebound Procedure](#) and divine mentorship under the [Filling of God the Holy Spirit](#) in consistent Post Salvation Epistemological Rehabilitation by daily Perception, Cognition, Incultation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine can raise the reading of the Gratitude Gauge from 0 to the stage of 100. Capacity for anything worthwhile in life comes from the Metabolized Bible Doctrine resident in the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul. However, the Capacity for failure in life also comes from the soul as the Gratitude Gauge approaches 0 and as involvement in the Interlocking System of Arrogance increases. The Disasters which follow in one's life as a result of no Gratitude Gauge movement from the 0 point include:

- No Happiness in the life as the Old Sin Nature takes over the soul of the believer who then lives under it's Lust patterns and Trends.
- Loosing the [4 Battles of the Soul](#) as a result of being under the Old Sin Nature control of the soul which include:
  - Stress in the Soul
  - Sin in the Soul
  - False Doctrine in the Soul
  - Problem Solving Incompetence.
- Functioning under the Arrogance Skills and Interlocking System of Arrogance both involving grieving and quenching God the Holy Spirit.

The believer with 0 on his Gratitude Gauge rejects authority as a result of his becoming involved in the Interlocking System of Arrogance and Arrogance Skills. By his rejection of Authority under the Arrogance Skills and the [Arrogance of Bitterness](#), respect is turned into

vilification and malice leads to [Revenge](#) and hatred, while the Gratitude Gauge becomes frozen at zero. The destruction of Gratitude in the believer is the destruction of his Integrity and results in his failure in every respect in the Protocol Plan of God.

When functioning under the Interlocking System of Arrogance there is total ingratitude on the part of the believer. This is the inability to think, apply, appreciate or have any capacity for life. This believer may become preoccupied with the details of life and lose sight of the major issues in life because the Interlocking System of Arrogance destroys his capacity for life. This results in his inability to use whatever Metabolized Bible Doctrine he has remaining in his Stream of Consciousness of the Soul. Therefore, involvement in the Interlocking System of Arrogance guarantees ingratitude and boorish rude behavior. The believer must in all situations and under all circumstances in life remain professional in his functions with people even when they are rude, this is part of being aristocracy in the Royal Family of God. Therefore, there must always be a level of professional function in the Christian Way of Life. This includes an understanding of all the mechanics of the Spiritual Life and all the [Assets](#) given us by God at [Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God](#) including the [Logistical Grace](#) provisions for the believer's life to enable his advance in the Spiritual Life. Former or current greatness in any area of life is no guarantee of current or future success in any other aspect of life or in the Spiritual Life. Involvement in the Interlocking System of Arrogance with [Self Pity](#) destroys any capacity for appreciation or thanksgiving, GRATITUDE, which is an objective function. One cannot ever be objective in life and under rampant subjectivity of the Interlocking System of Arrogance.

The concept of glorying in confidence demands amplification and both Hope and Glory must be understood. Boasting or glorying is never commanded toward self since this is Arrogance and should only be directed toward God as part of the believer's progress in the Spiritual Life. Boasting about the Integrity of God is a lack of Arrogance and freedom from the ingratitude which is frequently related to human blessings. This relates to gratitude on the part of believers but in life there are many ungrateful men. Human ingratitude is observed very frequently but this is very often provoked by the Arrogance of the benefactor. The attitude from which a person gives, when it is a poor attitude, destroys gratitude from those receiving. God gives directly from his perfection and his Absolute Justice backed by his Absolute Righteousness. Therefore, the believer's only response to God's giving MUST BE gratitude. Gratitude must be cultivated in the Human Race and this comes from developing capacity for life because man, in his total depravity, has no true capacity for anything especially gratitude. Anyone can proclaim thanksgiving, which is an overt expression of gratitude, without meaning it at all. True thanksgiving is an overt expression of the inward attitude of gratitude which only comes from maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul. Appreciation for what God has done can only come when one has the pertinent Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of his Soul and can appreciate the giver. Once the believer understands the Integrity of God, ingratitude is never a problem. A believer, with maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul, who has reached [Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God](#), in his relationship with God, does not include ingratitude but only gratitude as a Mental Attitude and thanksgiving as an expression of

it. The gratitude of the believer is increased in proportion to the level of Metabolized Bible Doctrine resident in his Stream of Consciousness of the Soul. Therefore boasting in God is the expression of gratitude which comes from maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul manifesting capacity for blessing from the Justice of God. Having this capacity is a HUGE blessing, especially in time of adversity, when he can in fact boast even in adversity.

Return to the [Table of Contents](#)

#### **Gate #40 – The Arrogance of Pseudo Intellectualism**

A normal and logical result of rejection of Absolute Truth in any of the 3 categories by an intelligent individual with a High IQ is Pseudo Intellectual Arrogance. A smart person cannot reject Absolute Truth without becoming stupid or imbecilic and this rejection makes them instantly Arrogant. IQ has nothing to do with Arrogance and some of the most Arrogant people one will ever encounter are the peasant, stupid, scum of any society and some are the aristocratic intellectuals. The failure of talent or ability to be exploited is very often related to the subject of the Interlocking System of Arrogance. The greatest potential available for each believer as a member of the Royal Family of God is that which is provided by God to enable his advance to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God however, involvement with Arrogance will prevent the achievement of this desire.

Arrogance always wants self to be better than everyone else and when one tries to be better than other people in the realm of theology he finds self in the embarrassing position of trying to be more correct than anyone else about God. Speculation about spiritual alternatives leads to speculation about the scripture itself which always demands interpretation and never speculation and this speculation invariably leads to attempts to reconcile philosophy or science with doctrine. The reason there is so much confusion in Christian churches today is the direct result of Arrogance and the attempt to reconcile the Absolute Truth of Bible Doctrine and the falsehoods and LIES of the Cosmic Dynaspheres. This is how the development of [Religious Denominations](#) with their myriad of false teachings begins. The incredible thing is that it does and should take a lifetime to learn all the facts and nuances of Bible Doctrine, and it may in fact be impossible, and there simply isn't time for speculation about what may or may not have occurred at any given point with alternate decisions in any area. Speculating with regard to the word of God is not a game but it is a serious distraction from the study and learning of accurate Bible Doctrine.

The believer who rejects his own spiritual heritage moves into the Interlocking System of Arrogance and this ultimately results in the development of [Black out of the Soul](#) and [Scar Tissue of the Soul](#) as he falls down through the stages of Reversionism. This then destroys the advantage of having a high IQ and great intelligence and inevitably results in his becoming no better than a moron. Therefore, genius is neutralized by Black out of the Soul and Scar Tissue of the Soul and this is historically the problem for the Jewish people, who are the smartest

people in all of history in the world. By saying no and rejecting their spiritual heritage and The Lord Jesus, The Christ as savior they have failed to effectively use the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions given directly to them by God.

Pseudo Intellectual Arrogance occurs when the believer tries to superimpose his Human IQ over his Spiritual IQ with the manifestations being overt influence from and involvement in Evil with its derivations of socialism, utopianism, communism, existentialism, Gnosticism, social action and many other human philosophies of life. This is acceptance of the [Human Viewpoint](#) of the satanic Cosmic Dynasphere systems and rejection of the [Divine Viewpoint](#) of the Grace Plan of God in life. This in itself is a glorification of human speculation about anything and everything and is demonstrated clearly in concepts such as transcendentalism and human evolution. Pseudo Intellectual Arrogance either glorifies human speculation to the exclusion of Bible Doctrine or attempts to reconcile human viewpoint speculation with Bible Doctrine. Many Pseudo Intellectuals when faced with a command which demands some sacrifice, suffering or difficulty make the right noises so that they don't lose their status in the eyes of others and then they depart to some more comfortable set of circumstances. Pseudo Intellectuals are always sincere, [Emotional](#) and [Impulsive](#). Emotion produces impulsive action and believers must avoid impulsive action and move to rational meaningful action based on the application of Bible Doctrine to experience. Emotion and Arrogance in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul produce sincere dedication and impulsiveness. The impulsive emotional individual has added to this activity, [Pride](#), Scar Tissue of the Soul and [Sincerity](#) so that this person completely destroys himself when there is a catastrophe or disaster occurring. This is self elimination and is characteristic of the majority of believers today and totally disassociates them from reality. However, emotion can be good if it is used properly and subordinated to the thinking of the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul so that there is good, enjoyable emotion when thinking stimulates its response.

The great thrust of Evil which was attractive to the Jews was this intellectualism. The Jews, who are the smartest group of people in the world in all of history with regard to intellect, have destroyed and neutralized the ability of their intellect because it is not related to Absolute Truth and therefore they are slaves to their intellect. Intellect minus Absolute Truth is ABSOLUTELY of no value. By rejecting Bible Doctrine, especially the Gospel of Christ, the Jews have become enslaved to their own intelligence and they don't cease to be brilliant but being slaves to their intellect they cannot function properly in application and thus become completely divorced from reality. This is another part of the explanation of the holocausts and why the Jews lined up by the hundreds of thousands to be killed by the Nazis. When you become a slave to your own intellect you divorce self from all truth and become a slave to Arrogance. Arrogance will always destroy the best intellect and a genius with overwhelming entanglement in Arrogance is useless and has the same [Self Pity](#) in disaster and the same [Self Righteousness](#) in prosperity as anyone else. If there is anything that has become attractive to Christianity it is this so called 'intellectualism', which is simply the attempt to reconcile the philosophical systems of man that are currently popular with the Doctrines and principles of Christianity. This is, in effect, the rejection of Bible doctrine as the Absolute Infallible Word of God. This is the constant ongoing attempts to amalgamate Bible Doctrine with Satanic Human

Viewpoint thought so that, in effect, Bible doctrine can be used to justifying the function of Kosmos Diabolicus within the area of Christianity. It is an attack which is constantly faced today and clearly demonstrated by the acceptance of such principles of Evil as homosexuality, feminism, welfare state functions, socialism, all religions and many other concepts. No system of phallic activity, no system of lust, no system at all can succeed on the basis of emotion; it must be carried by intellect, and this is the intellectualism that appeals to the Arrogant individuals who accept the Cosmic Dynaspheres.

The Pseudo Intellectual believer is always one with Black out of the Soul and Scar Tissue of the Soul and the greater his Scar Tissue of the Soul, the greater his entanglement deeper in the Arrogance complex, which systematically builds up in his soul. The stronger the Arrogance is in the Stream of Consciousness of his Soul the more he is impressed with his own thoughts and therefore becomes totally unteachable. He always has a better way and something he wants to do instead of learning what someone else wants him to do. He may be an unteachable Pseudo Intellectual with a high IQ but cannot even put his thoughts together to think in terms of principle. These people are susceptible to any false concept, especially those related to welfare and socialism, and want complete government regulation of individual lives unless it directly effects them. College professors for some decades in America have fallen into this category and have incredible Arrogance which makes the majority of them Pseudo Intellectuals. Arrogance in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul ALWAYS resists Absolute Truth and because of this these individuals can perceive an outer layer of academic substance but never the inner truth which supports it. The Pseudo Intellectual cannot ever stand up to historical crisis or national disaster because they have no common sense and no concentration ability. The concentration that it takes for Perception, Cognition, Inculcation & Metabolization of Bible Doctrine and that needed to take (gr) gnosis and convert it to (gr) epignosis Bible Doctrine is the same as that needed for the application of that doctrine to circumstances and situations of life. If one cannot concentrate during learning he cannot ever apply what he has supposed to have been learning. The mechanics of how one learns are the same as the mechanics of how one applies that learning to situations. Perception and Application both work on the same system of concentration but in reverse of one another. Therefore, Concentration not only applies to learning but also to application of learned principles to life so that obviously then the only difference between [courage](#) and [cowardice](#) is the ability to think and concentrate for application of what one has learned.

It is generally not the people of genius nor the talented people who make it to true greatness in this life, it is the pluggers of life who function with the highest levels of self discipline. These are the people who have consistent overriding self discipline and concentration to understand the objectives and remain persistent and focused no matter the distractions which come their way. Smart people often don't succeed to greatness in life nor in any major effort because of distraction and most often entanglement in Arrogance on their part. The Pluggers are the ones who most often succeed in life in general because *all people are better off when they are held to a high standard of performance.* Arrogance destroys the effectiveness of a brilliant mentality and any strength, talent or ability. Arrogance makes a smart person dumb and a stupid person petty. Arrogance is a source of great misery to the one who is entangled



in it and even greater misery to those closely associated with him. Arrogance is the number one enemy of the Christian especially self righteousness. Self Righteousness is Arrogance and all self righteous Christians are as Arrogant as Satan himself. Neither Arrogance nor any other aspect of Evil can understand good, pure motivation based on Virtue nor can it understand any other functions based on GRACE. Therefore Arrogance which is derived from EVIL assumes that the honorable motives of others are dishonorable and equivalent to those of the Arrogant individual himself. When Grace and Evil come into contact there is always conflict of thought and action and this is most often disaster for the Evil side.

The problem with the people of America today is found in the simple explanation that the American way of life is gone because there is no longer an American Way of Thought. The American way of thought is gone because the people have divorced themselves from Absolute Truth in all 3 categories. If one does not know truth then he is a slave to his own intellectualism and ultimately destroys himself by filling his mind with what is totally false, the LIE from EVIL. The greater the natural perceptive ability the greater also is the ability to absorb what is false. To absorb the LIE, this false information is to absorb darkness and produce the application of that darkness in the mind toward any problem of life which only intensifies the darkness. Therefore the intellectual and man of genius can only switch from intellectual functions to Arrogance and back again, never bathing in the LIGHT of Absolute Truth.

Attempting to reconcile the Absolute Truth of Bible Doctrine with false speculative activity in any academic field is Pseudo Intellectualism or Anthropocentric Academic Speculation. Pseudo Intellectual Arrogance is therefore where philosophy and science attempt to be reconciled with Bible Doctrine and when it cannot or does not occur it results in the individual's hostile rejection of Bible Doctrine. Philosophy is the Arrogance of man attempting to explain man without God, while Biblical Doctrine is the Justice of God explaining himself to man. All Pseudo Intellectuals think they are as smart as whoever is the person of greatest intelligence in their periphery. They believe this because of a build up of Scar Tissue of the Soul from Negative Volition to Absolute Truth which results from and inevitably in greater Arrogance so that the greater the involvement in the Interlocking System of Arrogance the greater is their divorcement from reality. ([2John 9](#))

This describes a whole category of people who cannot ever live through a crisis nor handle any personal nor historical disaster. This person as a Pseudo Intellectual is a person whose Arrogance of soul is greater than his knowledge in any field he is involved in. His Arrogance forms a wall around the possibility of ever getting to real Truth. He knows about one or more subjects and may even be an expert in one or more fields but really never orients to Absolute Truth despite his being an expert in some field. His area of expertise is superficial and a Detail of Life and he tries to reconcile his field with Bible Doctrine. He has no foundation of Bible Doctrine nor understanding of or adherence to any category of Absolute Truth and all his knowledge, no matter how great it may be nor the area it is in, has no roots in the Absolute. Therefore, this clearly represents the Pseudo Intellectual observed in this time and most college professors, IF, they have any level of intelligence at all, fit this categorical mold today. They

are Arrogant and [Inflexible](#) and their Arrogance allows them to assume that knowledge and expertise in one subject or field makes them expert in just about anything in life. They have an “Arrogant hangup” which distorts any Bible Doctrine they hear into rationalism or empiricism.

As an unbeliever the Pseudo Intellectual with a High IQ and great perceptive ability, learns incredible things but never gets to Absolute Truth. There is no root for their knowledge in truth and they vacillate from irrational to emotional and become neurotic and [Psychotic](#) and generally, eventually they totally fall apart. They reject Bible Doctrine as Truth related to the Divine Institutions and the Laws of Divine Establishment and God and by this means build up an enormous level of Black out of the Soul and Scar Tissue of the Soul. This builds greater and greater involvement in the Interlocking System of Arrogance which brings instability and eventually disaster. Spurious emotion divorces the Pseudo Intellectual from reality in normal times and therefore he cannot ever survive the abnormal times of historical crisis because of the concentration of destructive emotion. The United States of America will have a historical and national crisis in this time of its contemporary history and most likely will not survive it if the people have not straightened out their priorities in life. There must be self discipline and this must be parlayed into self determination and there must never be distraction by any Human Viewpoint system. All Arrogant Pseudo Intellectuals are eclectic and only choose to learn what they like or agree with from that which is presented to them in any field especially when they are involved in bible study. They set themselves up as the absolute authority in any field of intellectual endeavor. They always become [Irrational](#) and [Emotional](#) since their Arrogance divorces them from reality and therefore they switch to functions under emotion instead of thought as they enter into [Emotional Revolt of the Soul](#).

The believer under Divine Discipline or in a pressure situation of adversity, crisis or disaster in life is forced to face reality and should then use the [Rebound Procedure](#) to resolve any carnality and clearly see their Arrogant failure and hopefully never forget that lesson but move on for advance in the Spiritual Life. To solve any problem in life the believer must begin with an orientation to reality. The first point of reality orientation is self evaluation and recognition of personal failure or “What a jackass I am”. This is describing self as the idiot who can go no lower. This obviously places the solution somewhere above the level of personal idiocy. A big part of self evaluation must be telling God the Father what he already knows about one’s failures using the Rebound Procedure including involvement in any aspect of the Interlocking System of Arrogance. When one has the self perspective of being lower than a chigger bug then there is no way to go but UP in the Plan of God. Always remember that problems are solved in a state of [Humility](#) never in a state of Arrogance.

### **Pseudo Intellectuals & Absolute Truth**

The human mind no matter how brilliant is helpless to cope with life apart from Absolute Truth. The human mind was designed by God to operate on TRUTH and cannot properly operate on that which is false. Therefore, no matter how great an individual’s IQ their whole thinking process is distorted and ruined by operating under falsehood, the LIE from Evil. The only way to exploit a high IQ is to always have it operate on the basis of the 3 categories of

Absolute Truth found in Bible Doctrine. Therefore, for both believer and unbeliever, the mentality of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul only functions properly by the fuel of Bible Doctrine. For the unbeliever this is found in the Gospel of Christ, the Divine Institutions and the Laws of Divine Establishment; and for the believer it is found in the Laws of Divine Establishment, the Divine Institutions and the entire realm of Bible Doctrine. The Jew by genetic inheritance has a great mind but this becomes a phenomenal mind when he accepts his spiritual heritage at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God through Faith alone in The Lord Jesus, The Christ alone. The mind of the Jew although brilliant becomes useless without the divine help of Bible Doctrine.

For the Pseudo Intellectual there is a wall around truth which he refuses to and has never penetrated to get to the truth. His concepts do not have roots in truth but his perspicacity has given him a great deal of information about many things based on Cosmic Dynasphere LIES. In most cases he has been thoroughly educated and has a great deal of knowledge about many subjects and NONE OF IT is related to Absolute Truth. The Pseudo Intellectual may know a great deal in many areas but when it comes to Bible Doctrine he resists it like Amenhotep II. He, however, as a result of this and even as a believer, builds Scar Tissue of the Soul and the greater the Scar Tissue of the Soul the greater the pressure and the greater the pressure the greater the Arrogance Entanglement so that he will hear truth, even in simple terms, and totally reject it. This is the reason so many college professors are socialistic and communistic having lots of information and having learned many things but having no relationship to truth, therefore, they are Pseudo Intellectuals. When they hear truth and reject it then they begin to slide down through reversionism and build Scar Tissue of the Soul so that as it builds to covering the soul it causes Arrogance to be sucked into the vacuum of the soul. Therefore, the smart person, any person in fact, who has rejected Absolute Truth has an automatic increased Arrogance factor. When one has orientation to Absolute Truth he constantly wonders how people can be communists, socialists, welfare proponents, homosexuals, etc., and yet observe the evidence of free enterprise, the motivation of freedom, the functions of privacy and property for prosperity and then still put men into government who are socialists or communists who will eventually destroy them. How can anyone be socialist and think that is the answer to man's problems and how can they ever accept and agree with the welfare state functions. How can Americans accept graduated income tax when it is very clear from scripture that fixed income tax such as 10% or 15% for all is the proper and authorized method of taxation which does not destroy motivation and still provides enough money for efficient small government operation. As Pseudo Intellectuals these people live for approbation and their rejection of the tenets of Bible Doctrine results in a build up of incredible Arrogance. The Pseudo Intellectual thinks in terms of approbation like those whose profession is entertainment, where approbation is their desire and the basis for their happiness, and as a result they have no capacity for life, happiness, blessing or anything at all. In the spiritual world the number of believers in any congregation is inconsequential and it is only Positive Volition in the congregation which is important yet many pastors function totally under the desire to have extremely large church congregations to stimulate their approbation lust. The Pseudo Intellectual looks at the life from Human Viewpoint and has no interest in Bible Doctrine and his driving motivation is to push himself for greater approbation and recognition. When he is

a believer he will be in heaven but is a complete failure when it comes to spiritual growth and ultimately dealing with any personal or national catastrophe or historical crisis. Without Bible Doctrine the Pseudo Intellectual does not have the integrity nor moral courage to venture out into unknown circumstances or uncertain conditions.

The Pseudo Intellectual is the person who is full of Soul [Hangups](#) and saturated with Arrogance and who distorts Bible Doctrine into a system of rationalism and empiricism. They are intelligent people but without a base in Absolute Truth they are always of a liberal, relativistic orientation so that the only difference between radicals and liberals is their IQ. Beneath the veneer of intellectualism is emotional distraction and when frustrated in any way in their plans or thinking they become excessively emotional and totally irrational. They believe themselves to be equal to those whose thinking is based in Absolute Truth and in their Arrogance are stymied by their hangups constantly trying to prove something to everyone. Arrogance continues to blind them to their true value in life, which is in fact 0. Arrogance and selfcenteredness cause these people to attach erroneous importance to their intellect and abilities which totally divorces them from reality. Being smart with quick perception they have the occupational hazards of lacking common sense, being disoriented to life and reality, enmeshed in Arrogance, self centered and having feelings of immeasurable self importance and extreme [self righteousness](#). The liberal is always an extremely self righteous person who eventually becomes emotionally unstable and psychotic or neurotic. Arrogance and emotion out of control are the source of his sincerity and instability and sincerity is never a [Virtue](#). Making emotional decisions has no meaning and verbal or overt dedications mean absolutely nothing in the Christian Way of Life. These merely express emotional [Reversionism](#), Pseudo Intellectuality and advertise that these individuals are trying to use someone or some situation for their own personal benefit or aggrandizement. This, inevitably, occurs in all organizations where people declare their unwavering loyalty to the leader. This is also the idiocy of public dedication and reaffirmation of faith by the believer. Reaffirmation of faith is blasphemous because Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God is permanent and unchangeable and after Salvation the consistent use of the [Rebound Procedure](#) and engaging in Perception, Cognition, Incultation & 'Metabolization of Bible Doctrine is the [Essential](#) of the Christian Way of Life. 'Surrendering' to preach or to mission work is absolutely meaningless since the believer must learn Bible Doctrine to know what spiritual gift he actually possesses and even then any communication gift very often requires preparation under great intensity and focus so that any one shot dedication is totally meaningless. Therefore, dedications, in any aspect of the Spiritual Life, are no substitute for consistent Perception, Cognition, Incultation & Metabolization of Bible Doctrine.

### **Pseudo Intellectual Arrogance = Rational Arrogance**

Rational Arrogance is the VANITY of Pseudo Intellectual Arrogance or the "ELITISM" of the high or genius IQ. This Elitism is the Arrogant conscious pride of belonging to a select or favored group of people who may have a high IQ and who tend to look down on those who are of lower intellectual capability. It is the vanity of giving precedence to human IQ and intellectual attainment over [Spiritual IQ](#) and momentum from Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Right Lobe of the Soul. This generally afflicts those believers whose superior IQ or intellectual background gives them a false sense of superiority. These pseudo intellectual believers very

often compromise Bible Doctrine by attempting to reconcile Bible Doctrine with philosophical and scientific speculation. Because it is anthropocentric, Pseudo Intellectual Arrogance tends to accept as FACT, *THEORIES* and philosophical speculations in the areas of Rationalism and Empiricism and try to make them a part of Christian Doctrine. However, Bible Doctrine is the Thinking or Mind of The Lord Jesus, The Christ ([1Cor 2:16](#)) and He will never accept these concepts as part of Christian Doctrine. Rational or Pseudo Intellectual Arrogance often chooses some *THEORETICAL* concept such as “Evolution” over Creation because it seems to be more reasonable because it focus’ on human developed THEORIES, than the Divine Revelation in the Canon of Scripture. Intellectual Arrogance very often distorts the TRENDS of history and substitutes FALSE Trends and Ideas such as the idea that if you make treaties with communists or moslems that there will be no war and they will disarm and depart from their objective to conquer the world. Intellectual Arrogance contradicts the lucid and perspicuous statements of Bible Doctrine from scripture using the academic subjects of:

- ✧ History
- ✧ Philosophy
- ✧ Psychology
- ✧ Sociology
- ✧ Historical Geology
- ✧ Anthropology
- ✧ Political Science
- ✧ ETC.

In addition with they glorify ideals derived directly from Evil including Marxism, communism and islam and insert these into academic subjects. Trends of Rational or Intellectual Arrogance are seen throughout the history of Christianity beginning with GNOSTICISM in the time of the apostles. Gnosticism tried to reinterpret scriptures adding philosophical concepts which Bible Doctrine totally rejects. This was prominent early in the 1<sup>st</sup> and 2<sup>nd</sup> centuries and was present in the Scholasticism of Medieval times in which the THEORIES of Plato and Aristotle were brought into Christian doctrine and made part of it. This Pseudo Intellectual Arrogance is now, and has been for a very long time, a very definite part of the picture of any higher academic pursuit. Therefore, Rational Arrogance uses Human Viewpoint, Academic Theory as the criterion for life instead of Bible Doctrine.

This is inevitably the result of the interlocking of the [Motivational Arrogance](#) of [Mental Attitude Arrogance](#) and its Mental Attitude Sins with [Rational Arrogance](#) as a fragment of the Arrogance Grenade and then also interlocking with many areas of [Functional Arrogance](#) all based on principles from Evil. Rational Arrogance is involvement with processes of thinking and in all aspects of the Interlocking System of Arrogance the entire system requires some area of thinking first and this is Motivational Arrogance. When entering into Cosmic Dynasphere I, there must be thinking occurring first, and this very often involves Rational Arrogance. This “thinking” arrogance is the antithesis of Emotional Arrogance, also Motivational Arrogance, but which is [Irrational Arrogance](#). However, Pseudo Intellectual Arrogance is trying to superimpose Human IQ over Spiritual IQ. This is the function of the Human Viewpoint of life from Cosmic Dynasphere involvement which rejects or sets aside Truth and scoffs at and ridicules Divine Viewpoint. The Absolute Truth of Bible Doctrine forms a system of absolutes under which the



believer is supposed to function, while arrogance intrudes on this with the glorification of human speculation and therefore deals only in the relative. By seeking to reconcile Bible Doctrine with Philosophy and / or Science the result is increased arrogance factors. Today this is characterized and manifest by existentialism, social action, utopianism, socialism, communism, etc. There are 3 categories of people who become involved in Pseudo Intellectual Arrogance:

- ▲ Ignorant people who are Arrogant and have no knowledge of the subject they are discussing
  - ◆ They are involved with oversimplifications and therefore oversimplify solutions with panaceas of life
    - A good illustration is Antisemitism or any other racial destruction theory.
    - This is the Jacobean mentality and they have red herring solutions for everything.
- ▲ Brilliantly intellectual people who are arrogant
  - ◆ They have a vast over estimation of their own Personal Opinion as one who is brilliant in one field but thinks he knows everything about every field though he is absolutely stupid in these others.
    - These are the scientists or college professors who are expert in one field or area and think they know all that is necessary in other fields.
- ▲ Those who resent or envy those who have attained greatness in some field rationalizing their consideration that these others are not as smart or great as they are.
  - ◆ These are very often people involved in entertainment or athletics who are brilliant in their fields
    - They feel compelled to give their opinion about things they have no knowledge of

### **Pseudo Intellectuals & Liberalism**

Pseudo Intellectuals are invariably liberals and this is why the liberal is always trying to do good somewhere and why they are bleeding hearts. This is how they create a vacuum in their soul into which socialism and Marxism is sucked and why the idiocy of Marshal Field and Henry Wallace developed in American history. This is why in government, business and college classrooms so many socialists and welfare state supporters and do good liberals can be found. In South American countries the college campuses are places which foment revolution similar to what was seen in California during the Vietnam war with idiotic insane hippies running all over the campuses denouncing the country and the war. These people are phonies and Pseudo Intellectual and should have been tried and executed as traitors. Their major problem was a combination of emotional distraction and entanglement in Arrogance. When frustrated in any way such as when losing an election, the liberal becomes emotional and irrational even to the point of perpetrating violence. This was blatantly obvious during the 2016 election year and under the Trump Administration all the way to the 2020 election and the constant insane opposition to his efforts to rebuild the stability of this nation. When his Arrogance is challenged the Pseudo Intellectual individual becomes totally irrational and tries to raise up a mob to destroy his opponent. This person cannot ever survive in any type of crisis.

Liberalism in all forms is Arrogance and therefore not related in any way to reality. Liberals are anti police yet expect Law Enforcement to protect them when THEY are in danger. They are weak even supportive toward criminals and they ignore the victims of crime until they become victim of real or imagined injustice. They are intelligent people but knowledge without a base in Absolute Truth means they are always liberal in their Modus Operandi and Modus Vivendi. The Pseudo Intellectual believer cannot ever learn enough Bible Doctrine to be more than an infant believer because Arrogance rejects the authority of the teacher and the authority of the Word of God. All Arrogant Pseudo Intellectuals are eclectic and set themselves up as the absolute authority in any field of intellectual endeavor they are involved in. Arrogant Pseudo Intellectuals are one of the major reasons that the United States of America has been begging to be destroyed for DECADES.

Representatives in the American government are pitiful in all areas of thinking but cannot be exclusively blamed since the people who elected them are truly the ones at fault. In evaluating the failings of America one must look at self and one's whole system of thinking since it is that which is today totally erroneous and at fault. Americans have allowed a system of liberal thinking to filter into all areas of the culture, education and government and this liberalism involves Pseudo Intellectualism. Pseudo Intellectualism, therefore, generally refers to the status of smart people with relatively high IQ who have generally been educated beyond their capacity thus putting them into positions of greater ignorance. They have no roots in Absolute Truth at all and as a result can only accept LIES into their souls having created a vacuum in the soul from this rejection of Absolute Truth. As a result of development of [Blackout of the Soul](#) and the build up [Scar Tissue of the Soul](#) they become totally blinded to reality and DEMAND to be destroyed by God. Liberalism has its source in Evil and is totally anti Christian and anti God to the core and as a result of the saturation with it, the United States of America, as a CLIENT nation to God, has been demanding destruction. With his function of [Human Good](#) the Pseudo Intellectual liberal sets himself up as God and names his pet projects as the panaceas of life and solutions to all man's problems for which he constantly [Crusades](#). When he is frustrated in these efforts and functions he turns to his emotion and becomes more irrational and this divorces him more and more from reality. The United States of America is saturated with these individuals and is even governed by those that are emotionally irrational and blind to the fact that communism in Russia and China along with islam are all focused on the take over or absolute destruction of America. American people have been brainwashed and propagandized to think and believe that communism and even islam are good things so that accepted national policies have condoned their violence while in reality both are derived directly from satanic Evil and are murderous systems of tyranny. America, as a nation of liberals, has confused the principles of [Human Good](#), which are derived from Evil as its production system, with that which has brought it prosperity under freedom.

The Jews have a spiritual heritage of total conservatism and every line of the Mosaic Law is conservative and establishment oriented. Unfortunately however, Jews have become very liberal because of their rejection of Christ as savior and the resulting formation of collective Scar Tissue of the Soul. This has resulted in more rejection of Bible Doctrine truth and

therefore believing the LIE of liberalism from Evil. Their intellect is great but Scar Tissue of the Soul plus Arrogance takes the greatest intellect of the Jew and turns it into nothing. The greater the Scar Tissue of the Soul the more the unbeliever Jew uses the Mosaic Law as a system of salvation and considers spirituality to be by means of sufficient human effort works. Any time the unbeliever uses any system of human effort or ability for salvation or spirituality they develop the worst case of [Self Righteous Legalism](#) imaginable. Many liberal believers think that if they could just see God work for the United States of America in a miracle this would turn the nation back to its greatness. The United States of America is in such a state of collective [Negative Volition](#), Black out of the Soul and Scar Tissue of the Soul because of rejection of all categories of Absolute Truth. This means that there is an incredible built up Arrogance so that even a national miracle would be rejected because the people believe ONLY the LIE from EVIL and reject all truth along with miracles. The miracle only has power in the response of the believer who sees or knows the miracle for what it is and who believes by accepting truth without the miracle. The miracle is fine for someone with a lot of Bible Doctrine but the fact is that having reached Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God as a result of possessing maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul, believers don't need the miracle. Liberals think of miracles in terms of alleviating suffering but The Lord Jesus, The Christ used miracles as his credentials to establish his messiah status not to alleviate suffering. Even with his miraculous deeds He was not accepted and Jewish people saw the miracles and did not accept him because of their Blackout of the Soul and built up Scar Tissue of the Soul. The power of Scar Tissue of the Soul + Arrogance is far greater than the power of the true miracles from God and any believer with Scar Tissue of the Soul is never impressed by miracles, just consider the Pharisees of the time of Jesus.

### **Pseudo Intellectuals & Emotion**

Very often the Pseudo Intellectual is emotional, sincere, overtly dedicated, enthusiastic, impulsive and at the same time a total failure. This category of believer cannot face in any way personal, national or historical disaster or even adversity because the Pseudo Intellectual is totally divorced from reality and cannot even face the most superficial type of uncertainty in pressure or testing. If a believer cannot face uncertainty he cannot face any level of disaster. The Pseudo Intellectual may have spurious enthusiasm but it is artificial and comes from the emotion of the soul rather than Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul. Because of entanglement in Arrogance and [Reversionism](#) there is Arrogantly stimulated emotion which results in his public presentations being eloquent and beautiful but totally meaningless. There is no ability by this type of person to recognize that the greatest slavery in life is slavery to the Old Sin Nature and the [circumstances or details](#) of life. The concept of the Pseudo Intellectual is that if one does not like his circumstances and is unhappy then when he changes them he can be happy again. This is irrational through and through since happiness is designed by God for when one is in any circumstance. Pseudo Intellectuals are always sincere, emotional and impulsive. Good emotion can be expressed when there is logical, rational thinking which stimulates it to respond. When the believer is focused on reality and has Metabolized Bible Doctrine along with the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul and sees an enemy destroyed in

or outside his country he can be aroused to a fevered pitch emotionally.

When an Arrogant person starts impugning the motives of a believer with Positive Volition toward Bible Doctrine he has lost his basis for disagreement or discussion. This is an attempted destruction of a very basic principle of freedom which says that whatever one's motives are they are his business alone and no one else's. Generally speaking the Pseudo Intellectual has no concept of the principles of leadership and does not understand that there can be no such thing as freedom, security or a spiritual thrust in any group of people or nation unless there is AUTHORITY which is the key to everything.

### Pseudo Intellectuals & Stupidity

The reason intelligent people are stupid about so many things is because of Arrogance. Scar Tissue of the Soul builds up pressure in the soul and this fosters greater Arrogance which blinds and divorces the individual from reality. One can have a genius IQ but Arrogance produces Blind spots in the soul and because of this some of the most intelligent people in the world today are the most stupid. In short, Arrogance makes any person stupid. The more Arrogance entangles the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul the more blind the person becomes to Truth. These persons are inevitably involved in the 8 stages of Reversionism. Therefore, the only real way to be truly smart and discerning is to be totally free from Arrogance.

When one has command of an organization he should never look for the very smart people to support the organization but look for people who are oriented to authority and inculcated with self discipline and thoughtfulness. The Arrogant Pseudo Intellectual person is useless in any organization until every ounce of Arrogance is whipped out of them and replaced with discipline. There were a few organizations such as the military and a very few proper academic institutions where they would knock the Arrogance out of people giving them some meaning in life and making a human being out of them. Unfortunately, at this time in our history, even these organizations are failing to demand discipline and authority recognition and in fact now even foment greater and greater Arrogance. The problem today in the military is that some Momma's boy or of all things GIRL, whines to momma about how hard things are and momma then whines to her congressman to make the military stop being so hard on her babies. In addition there is acceptance of every level of immoral degeneracy imaginable so that unit cohesion is thereby totally destroyed. In academic institutions some poor little Lord Fauntleroy complains to momma or daddy that school is hard and thinks that even though he spends his time partying and NOT studying he should still pass all his courses and graduate because Momma and Daddy have paid for his diploma. Momma and Daddy talk to the administrators and threaten to withhold their donations unless Little George can graduate. These types, and in fact all American youth, should be put into a strict system of discipline and authority starting in elementary school. Everyone in the American system of public education has been trained to think he is the most important thing in the world and the only other important thing is protecting the atmosphere and waterways. He has been propagandized and brainwashed to think that the government should control all business and life functions and has had a maximum of Evil, socialistic, do good, liberal thinking infiltrated into his soul. This is

what develops in historical collapse of any nation and America is not an exception and is susceptible to and in fact on the very brink of the 5th cycle of Divine Discipline AT THIS VERY TIME. However, this is even yet unseen and unrecognized by the stupidity which is prevalent in the pseudo intellectual society today.

The Pseudo Intellectual is one whose day dreams are divorced from reality and when he sits and day dreams he is shallow because he is easily distracted from things which are important. This emotional instability makes him a casualty to the historical crisis even before it occurs. In crisis and disaster there will always be a calm before the storm because PEOPLE IN THEIR INCREDIBLE STUPIDITY refuse to see the warning signs of coming crisis. People are not dumb with low IQ but stupid in the sense of Arrogantly thinking that they can keep doing the same wrong thing and get a better or proper result. These people always look on the bright side saying everything is going to be alright when in reality the disaster is overtaking them and crisis is about to destroy them. During the calm before the storm the only preparation which exists is in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul in the thought patterns of the individual. There is only one thing which is of value and which the believer can take from this life into eternity and that is the thought content of Bible Doctrine in his Stream of Consciousness of the Soul. The Metabolized Bible Doctrine stored in the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul is more valuable than all the gold, silver or precious stones, more than power and authority, more than anything the world knows or has ever known. People are often collectors and gather to themselves many varied sundry things. Believers in the Royal Family of God, must collect Metabolized Bible Doctrine into the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul continuously and consistently. The truth is that no one can steal Metabolized Bible Doctrine out from one's Soul, therefore, preparation for potential future disaster demands maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of one's Soul. This is the true dynamic for disaster and imminent crises, though they are real and their danger is real, believers with Positive Volition are given minor disasters, personal or collective, to evaluate and strengthen their preparation for these major catastrophes.

### **Pseudo Intellectuals & Authority**

Individuals involved in Pseudo Intellectual Arrogance always think of Authority in terms of convenience and the authority of the police is convenient if he is protecting their privacy, property or life. It is convenient to have a commander in the military to sign furloughs but not to follow in combat. It is convenient to have a Pastor Teacher if you need a character reference or a shoulder to cry on but not convenient to come listen to Bible Doctrine regularly. It is convenient to have a doctor when you have pain but not for health maintenance. Arrogance is disassociated from reality to the extent that it views authority as not being a true establishment function but only a matter of personal convenience. One has not lived until someone has used him and his authority to gain their OWN ends. Obviously this pseudo recognition of authority is a part of Pseudo Intellectual Arrogance interlocking with [Authority Arrogance](#) and these people are only capable of a minor level of authority orientation. The Arrogance of this type of hypocrite only allows him to recognize his own authority. In his thinking he always subordinates all genuine authority to his own Arrogance. In his reality the only true authority is his own Arrogant thinking. This person in Arrogance assumes that his



high IQ and quickness with words makes him superior to the rest of the human race. When his Arrogance makes this assumption, as resident Arrogance inevitably does within the individual as Arrogance increases, it further divorces him from reality creating a susceptibility to neuroses, [Psychoses](#) and other mental aberrations. As is too often the case with intelligent people their assumption of superiority over others divorces them from the reality of life and the resultant Arrogance gives them inflexibility with regard to [Non-Essentials](#) in life. Once a person becomes inflexible with regard to non essentials they become totally flexible with regard to the essentials of the Absolute Truths of Bible Doctrine.

The believer must be constantly cautious with regard to a person who is constantly proclaiming loyalty to him and that he would do anything for him. These are the people who will knife him in the back and cut his throat, literally and figuratively, whenever it will benefit them personally. Only another Arrogant person would believe anything about these people, who are, in fact, the worst people alive. Only facing reality with Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul will allow the believer to see through this viscous hypocrisy.

### **Pseudo Intellectuals & Security**

Any conservative who is anti Semitic or who is conservative to protect his own property from being involved in socialism is pseudo conservative. When there is a conflict between human security and the operation of the Plan of God the Pseudo Intellectual switches from intellect to emotion and peels off to support his own interests. If the Pseudo Intellectual cannot be offered more security than a fox has then his human security orientation becomes distracted resulting in [Negative Volition](#) toward Bible Doctrine and his entering into Reversionism and Arrogance with total resistance to Bible Doctrine thereafter. The Pseudo Intellectual, as such, has already accepted human security systems as a means for happiness and is thereby under Negative Volition to Bible Doctrine and distracted from the Plan of God. His emotion brings no strength to any crisis therefore he always fails in the crisis. Because survival and security are related in the thinking of the Pseudo Intellectual, he inevitably becomes emotionally unstable in time of crisis or disaster. Security is his priority but as a result of his rejection of truth he loses the greatest system of security the world has ever known which is found in the freedom to operate in the [Equation of Hope](#) Plan of God.

This is what the majority of people have done in America, choosing security over freedom. When one chooses for freedom he is under Positive Volition toward TRUTH, but, when he chooses for security he is under Negative Volition toward TRUTH and functioning based on the influence of EVIL. Freedom motivates one to fight and die for his nation while security motivates the loser to go on a student strike or march in protest to ensure he does not go to war. The cowards of Kent State University all should have been shot as traitors in the 1970 as well as the campus occupiers of 2024 and all those students had only motivation for Security while heroes are motivated for freedom. In any nation when at war those who do not support the national effort to preserve freedom are traitors and MUST be treated as such. When in government service of any kind at any level when the persons involved do not function to protect and defend freedom they in fact are also traitors and should be prosecuted and

punished as such. This test of motivation demonstrates that all Pseudo Intellectuals are yellow cowards motivated for security and from Arrogance only to promote self to maintain whatever Status Quo self has. They have no concept of freedom or proper motivation. If this nation is to survive in the future it must return to universal military service and every male must serve with NO FEMALES in combat organizations but only as support personnel. This will begin to bring back some semblance of understanding of the importance of authority and freedom in this nation and where security truly lies.

### **Pseudo Intellectuals and National Arrogance**

Pseudo Intellectualism is the status of the majority of believers today in the United States of America. This has disassociated believers from reality and the people should have risen up in arms when the B1 bomber was canceled and when SALT talks started with Russia decades ago. The people again should have risen up in arms against the abusive executive orders of Obama and his administration and the blatant mental incompetence of Biden in 2020, so that the lack of the strength to do this in the people is truly tragic. Today the people should be gathering as armed groups to require the prosecution and execution of those responsible for the election fraud perpetrated on November of 2020. American statesmanship departed from this country when politicians became divorced from reality and were concerned only with maintaining their CAREER in politics. This started with liberalism and liberals never have any concept of reality as is observed in the canceling of construction of atomic energy plants and the border wall with Mexico. Liberalism and its divorcement from reality is in the functions of OSHA, EPA, BATFE, the Advertisements showing Indians crying about trash and thinking that a volunteer army is going to be effective. Divorcement from reality is in moslems and illegals being allowed into the country in droves, and when here whether legal or illegal, their being allowed to function in Law Enforcement, the Military and politics and the idea of having to accept unvalidated Refugees because the world opinion thinks it is right. This type of believer has substituted emotion, enthusiasm, sincerity, dedication and impulsiveness for motivation from the truth of Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul and the Laws of Divine Establishment as a protection of his nation. This is American Christianity since AT LEAST the 60's and believers have joined the rest of the nation in being totally divorced from reality in every way. The situation here is so bad that when the United States goes down it will not be graceful and there will be medieval times and dark ages here again.

### **Pseudo Intellectuals & Socialism**

Socialism is the pinnacle Arrogant thinking of darkness from Evil being the antithesis of the thoughts of the The Lord Jesus, The Christ ([1Cor 2:16](#)) presented in the Bible Doctrine and the Laws of Divine Establishment. When people in Arrogance prefer their own thoughts over the thoughts of God as in the Laws of Divine Establishment and the Divine Institutions this is in effect the [Big Blot Out](#) with dramatic emphasis on their Scar Tissue of the Soul. Self Righteous Arrogance is that which makes a Fabian or Marxist socialist out of Pseudo Intellectuals. All Christians who are smart and who become Pseudo Intellectual inevitably follow rationalism and empiricism as their systems of perception disregarding Faith and the function of faith under the [Grace Apparatus for Perception](#). These believers are absolutely hopeless and useless never engaging in the process of learning Bible Doctrine and as a result of following such systems

they cannot ever understand Bible Doctrine. Arrogance and selfcenteredness divorces them from reality and they become no different than any believer who has only (gr) GNOSIS as academic knowledge in the Left Lobe of the soul and can quote Bible Doctrine by points but they have no Bible Doctrine in the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul for application to life and circumstances. They have no capability spiritually nor from the standpoint of Modus Operandi in life. The Arrogant college professor who is a socialist is dogmatic in thinking himself always right and this gives him Self Righteousness just like the legalistic Pharisee had and the baptist has today in their point system for salvation and spirituality.

### **Pseudo Intellectuals & The FOX**

The fox demonstrates something that all Pseudo Intellectuals have, since this lowly animal never builds his own house and always steals someone else's house. The Pseudo Intellectual never builds a system but always uses an existing system to advance himself. This country was not built by communists, socialists, Marxists, moslems nor constructed for welfare state function. College professors for many decades, as Pseudo Intellectuals, enjoy the freedom provided by the military whom they generally despise and denigrate. They enjoy the freedom American forefathers planned through the application of Bible Doctrine and enjoy freedom because The Lord Jesus, The Christ controls Human History including that of the United States of America. However, they steal their benefits from this freedom like communists, socialists, the US bureaucracies and the government stealing from us in welfare state functions. The fox is crafty and smarter than other animals, with the exception of course of the Coyote, and he is so smart that he saves his energy for getting food and uses someone else's house to live in. Therefore the fox is exactly like the Pseudo Intellectual, the hippie, the welfare recipient, the illegal alien or moslem scum.

There has been built in the United States of America a magnificent nation through freedom. The communists of Russian, China and Cuba along with the moslems of the world want it and even Mexico wants to take the southern strip of the United States back. They think that by taking this they will seize the prosperity of this nation without having any realization that prosperity comes from freedom and function under the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions and that as communists, socialists or moslems they cannot ever have it. This is the fox, the Pseudo Intellectual, the college professor, the wealthy communists in this nation. These people are Pseudo Intellectual and know a lot of things because of great perspicacity but have no knowledge of Absolute Truth. The most basic truth they reject is Freedom itself the very underlying issue of the Angelic Conflict.

In the time of Jesus the fox differed from most canine types and always searched out a burrow usually built by badgers and took their home for himself. However, if the badger came back the fox was driven out since the stable badger was always stronger than the fox. All Pseudo Intellectuals are thieves and steal ideas and are academically dishonest and it is easily demonstrated that all liberal professors are always academically dishonest. I had occasion to be responsible for approval of terminal research papers for a professional school and one of my students wrote a paper on research papers and discovered that in the United States of America around 2002 there were approximately 1.5 million research papers published each year where

less than 1% had any valuable or valid information contained within them. Foxes are regarded as insignificant and the Pseudo Intellectual can easily be compared to the fox and by this comparison revealed to everyone that he will never, whether a believer or unbeliever, accept the Absolute Truth of Bible Doctrine unless he recognizes his own true insignificance, which is an impossibility since he is tied into the Interlocking System of Arrogance. The Pseudo Intellectuals have homes and work through life, like all liberals, as con artists in the field of ideas which distracts from and in fact destroy freedom. Once one distracts from freedom any system set up is tyranny. Even though the fox is small and insignificant as an animal he occupies a home which he has acquired not by strength or ability but by being smarter and more deceitful and cunning than others since he waits for others to build a den and then he steals it. This is the welfare state and this system waits until free enterprise builds great prosperity and then, through bureaucratic or government functions, steals it. This is exactly what the immoral government of the United States of America has been doing for over 70 years, stealing prosperity from free enterprise. The stupidity of this type of Arrogant mind set is in a failure to realize that once you kill this goose there are no more golden eggs.

The Pseudo Intellectual Believer who is considered one of the “smart people” assumes intellectual superiority over others and this instantly divorces them from reality in life. The believer must come to realize that he never stands still in the Spiritual Life. At the end of the each day he is either worse or better but never the same. This is determined by his attitude toward Bible Doctrine and toward the Authority of the teacher of Bible Doctrine. There are so very many things which can trigger entrance into the Interlocking System of Arrogance in the individual and they always lead to divorcement from reality and when this occurs the believer is always worse than he was before. Having a high IQ has an occupational hazard which is based on being smart, clever and perceptive and this can stimulate and result in becoming Arrogant, self centered and having overriding feelings of self importance. When a smart believer falls into these occupational hazards he is in for a great deal of Divine Discipline. No one starts out this way but all can work into it without even trying. Pseudo Intellectuals, no matter how very intelligent they may be, can NEVER recover by being taught complex principles but only by understanding the simplest of Bible Doctrines. They are distracted by their own self importance and an Arrogance which blinds them to the reality of their Arrogant situation. The only way to break through this Arrogance and shine some light into the Blackout of the Soul they have developed is with the simplest concepts and principles of Bible Doctrine.

This believer is the one who shows emotional fervor but his good intentions are never equivalent to advancement in the Plan of God. Despite being a great scholar and student, this believer has failed to distinguish between true security as a part of the Plan of God vs the human concept of pseudo security within the Cosmic Dynaspheres. Emotion destroys his moral courage and he makes very wrong decisions by putting the acquisition of blessing before Bible Doctrine whereas the Plan of God always puts Bible Doctrine before blessing. In fact a believer's emotions never function properly until Bible Doctrine comes first. Therefore, the fox analogy shows us that spurious emotion divorces the Pseudo Intellectual from reality in life and from the true solutions to problems in life. These believers do not realize that any system of

human security can be destroyed instantly and become NO SECURITY at all. There is no wealth, authority, position, approbation nor any system in life which can actually provide security since security is the monopoly of God. Therefore, the ONLY TRUE Security in life is found in Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God and moving on with consistent Perception, Cognition, Inculcation & Metabolization of Bible Doctrine.

Return to the [Table of Contents](#)

### **Gate #41 – The Arrogance Regarding Authority, The Satanic Syndrome**

Man is given the opportunity to make THOUSANDS of decisions to accept or reject the truths and authorities set up by God. The volition of man constantly faces Authority in life and must choose to accept or reject it. Rejection of Authority infers that decisions have been made from a position of weakness which means from residence and function in the Cosmic Dynaspheres under the influence of EVIL. Acceptance of Authority infers that decisions have been made from a position of Strength which means, even to a limited extent by the unbeliever, from residence and function within the Divine Dynasphere under the influence of [GRACE](#) and Bible Doctrine. This is the mechanic of shaping the soul of the believer as this “lump of clay” comes against the GRINDING of divine Authority.

Arrogance was the original sin of Satan and Disobedience was the original sin of man and these 2 combined in an individual result in total disorientation to life. Disobedience rejects Authority and Arrogance seeks to set it aside. The most basic ingredient of any Arrogance is rejection of all Authority outside of one’s own vanity. Authority Arrogance is a cult involving rejection of Authority beginning in childhood where one’s personality is dominated by primitive drives and excludes rational behavior and is very often characterized by irrational behavior such as:

- ✧ Raging tantrums
- ✧ Sulky behavior
- ✧ Deceitful actions
- ✧ Obstinate behavior
- ✧ Boastful behavior
- ✧ Shameless behavior
- ✧ Erratic behavior

Authority Arrogance is therefore, rejection of various categories and levels of Authority in life resulting in complete Disorientation to Life. This starts under [Organizational Humility](#) with Parental Authority setting up a policy and prohibiting some activity on the part of the child so that he will be required to function under [Enforced Humility](#) by adhering to that prohibition. This then requires that the Authority orientation of the child totally depend on his volitional choices. Rejection of parental Authority and their policy results in that child beginning to think more and more in terms of Arrogance. What he thinks and wants to do becomes more important to him than whatever the policies of the parents may be and what their training would be for him. This starts an insidious disorientation in his life. Therefore, rejection of Authority results from the existence of Arrogance in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul so



that strong Arrogance can be caused simply by rejection of Authority. Where rejection of duly constituted Authority exists Arrogance is standing by and where Arrogance exists rejection of Authority is in the vicinity and neither gets very far away from the other. As a result of this the believer becomes completely disoriented to reality in life.

Authority has been an issue since the beginning of the Human Race, the fall of Ishah (Eve) and Ish (Adam) is a clear demonstration of rejection of established Authority in the Human Race. Satan tricked the woman by playing to her developing Arrogance and getting her to respond to him instead of her husband Ish or to The Lord Jesus, The Christ both which were her primary Authority structures. When she responded to Satan, it was now mankind's turn to decide for or against the Authority of God or the Authority of Satan. She rejected her role as responder to her husband (the status of most females today) and his legitimate divinely delegated Authority, she also rejected Bible Doctrine, and the Authority of The Lord Jesus, The Christ, and accepted the illegitimate Authority of Satan's deception. She was operating under Authority Arrogance, [Approbation Arrogance](#) and [Egotistical Arrogance](#), she wanted to know what God knew, she wanted to be smarter than Ish and in fact to be “as smart as God” and therefore, like Satan she also desired to “Be like the most High”. Ishah rejected divinely authorized Authority and accepted the Authority of Satan under his principles and policy of “Evil” and its system of production, “Good”. She, in doing this, was deceived into the first sin, the transgression of the Will and Plan of God, in the Human Race, by eating of the fruit of the forbidden tree. Ish who had delegated Authority from God over the woman also ate of the fruit but did so without deception simply by taking it from the hand of the woman and thus threw away his Authority while accepting the Authority of the woman which was and is not authorized in the human race. Every individual in the Human Race has the same potential for Arrogance and disobedience just as Ish and Ishah. In essence anyone, being in their situation, would have made the exact same decisions.

### **Origins of Authority Arrogance**

Many individuals have a problem with Authority because of the Arrogance residing in their soul. They often think they are smarter than everyone else or possibly really are, and therefore have a difficulty being under Authority which is not as smart as they are or as they think they are. It is difficult to knuckle under to the Authority of others when one is smarter than they are and have devised a policy better than theirs. However, all rejection of Authority is based on some level of Arrogance and also involves sin, both which mean that the believer is out of the Plan of God. As a result of rejection of Authority there is always Self Induced Misery and associated with it, and because the rejection of Authority itself removes the believer from the Plan of God, there is Divine Discipline added to that suffering. Very few people are smart enough to identify legitimate Authority and then respect it. Very few are [Flexible](#) enough, not having [Humility](#), no matter how poor the policy is, to live with it and under it and still do the best possible job no matter what. In order to do this the individual must be flexible, have a sense of humor and have capacity for life which very few people really have. When one rejects Authority and ‘bucks the tiger’ so to speak, he does not have enough capacity for life but has a GREAT impression of Self and a very poor impression of the one in Authority. A person may be VERY Smart but very often for most people it is detrimental to them to be too

smart. A person can be too smart for his own good when he takes all his smarts and says to himself that [he knows more](#) than the one in Authority, that he can do more than they can and the Authority figure is therefore a dummy. Therefore as a result he will not obey the Authority figure or very often he goes around it or does not follow the policy of the job. This then is REAL TROUBLE for the “smart” person. Many people, when they reject Authority, they then try to straighten out everyone in their immediate periphery and this is total Arrogance. These are the people who argue with the boss or fool the police officer or do some other clever thing to get around Authority which they often easily succeed in doing, but, this will hurt them all of their life. These people MAKE their own Self Induced Misery by this means and, in fact, most of the suffering which believers have is, unfortunately, NOT FOR THEIR BLESSING and not even Divine Discipline.

Every person in the world has some level of Arrogance and usually does not recognize that they are [Arrogant](#) but if one is discerning it is the first thing which will be spotted when encountering these people. A woman is not a real woman until she is 30 years old. There is always a time when a woman will challenge the Authority she is under. The woman is designed to be under Authority and she is basically a responder and her aggressiveness comes from good or bad responses to Authority, ie. response or reaction. The woman will challenge many authorities and her breakout from Authority links with her Arrogance and some of the easiest paths for these breaks from submission to Authority include the Local Church, some female club or their weak boss at work. This is how they express their Arrogance by setting aside the Authority over them. They may resent the Authority but Authority is what it is and must be respected and followed by anyone under it. Ladies need to be kept feminine with soap, fine linens and cosmetics and all women must be kept from their overriding Arrogance which, in the Human Race, was FIRST found in the WOMAN. Because the woman is designed as a responder and has an Old Sin Nature and as everyone, always has a bit of Arrogance, it is inevitable that her Arrogance will challenge any Authority she is under. In fact part of the curse or divine discipline of the Woman for her fall in the garden was for her to constantly desire to usurp the Authority of her husband over her. Authority is to the Arrogant woman as the toreador's red cape is to the bull. When it comes time to lower the boom on those who reject Authority, the anti-Authority women in the congregation or elsewhere are no longer to be treated as or considered ladies. They must be controlled for the benefit of the congregation or organization and so that after they regain their proper response functions they can again be charming ladies.

Authority Arrogance, as a part of [Motivational Arrogance](#) or Motivational Degeneracy from Evil, invariably and inevitably REJECTS all systems of Authority established by God for the preservation, happiness and Freedom of the Human Race. It is under the Laws of Divine Establishment principles and the Modus Operandi of Christianity that Authority is defined. It is a legal power delegated from God to the Human Race where by some members of the Human Race have jurisdiction and responsibility for others. Authority Arrogance is a fragment of the life which occurs when the Arrogance Grenade is detonated and entanglement in the Interlocking System of Arrogance results in disorientation to Authority in some way. The sum total of all LEGITIMATE legal power delegated by God to the Human Race is defined and

summarized in the principles of the various categories of TRUTH.

- [Laws of Divine Establishment](#)
- [Divine Institutions](#)
- Totality of Bible Doctrine

“Establishment” itself represents the principle of authorized Authority. Establishment means that certain members of the Human Race have received from God jurisdiction and responsibility for others in the Human Race. This extends in both temporal and spiritual realms. In the temporal realm it is the categorical functions delineated under the Divine Institutions within the function of the mechanics of the Laws of Divine Establishment. In the spiritual realm it is the organization and function of the local church in this dispensation under the Pastor Teacher who consistently and effectively teaches Bible Doctrine. Authority was the issue for both the man and woman at their fall, so obviously the fall of man is directly related to his rejection of or relinquishing Authority. It is established and revealed in the Local Church through proper communication of Bible Doctrine, and directly related to the Pastor Teacher’s expository communication of Bible Doctrine. It is also obvious that history only continues as a result of the perpetuation of the principles of secular function under divine establishment based Authority. Spiritual Authority is the direct Authority of God given to the Pastor Teacher and delegated by him in limited amounts to Deacons and other administrators of the local church. Therefore, secular life has Authority regulated and controlled by the functions of the Laws of Divine Establishment operating through the Divine Institutions which include:

- #1 – Volition or free will
  - Every advance and success or retrogression and mistake of one’s life is related to his decisions. Taking personal responsibility for all decisions in life is a part of respect for one’s personal Authority in his own soul and an indication of reaching maturity in life.
- #2 – Marriage where the MALE husband has Authority over the FEMALE wife
  - The ultimate key to success and happiness in any marriage is the Wife voluntarily submitting to the Authority of her husband and the husband exercising this Authority exclusively for the protection and love of his wife.
- #3 – Parents having Authority over children
  - This includes ALL Parents – good or bad
  - It is ARROGANCE for the child living in the home of the parents to use his perception of the unfairness of the mandates of parents or their disorientation to the current generation’s standards of thinking as justification for violating their mandates and rejecting their Authority.
  - IF the parents have unjust mandates, this child will be able to experience and overcome UNJUST treatment long before others and have the opportunity to pass this testing while he is young.
- #4 – Government, legitimate or illegitimate, having LIMITED Authority over citizens to control crime.
  - Refusal to pay income taxes (Rom 13) is rejection of delegated Governmental Authority and operating under Functional Arrogance.

In any society divinely delegated Authority exists in many areas at many levels as illustrated by

the FEW examples below:

- Academic Authority should exist in every level of education but this has been set aside in the education system in the United States today in both of the 2 categories of this Authority:
  - The policy of the institution.
    - This is the system of Authority as organizational humility carried out by the administration whose responsibility it is to do so for the benefit of the children whom they are to education regarding the realities of Freedom.
    - This has been universally circumvented by the control that the “school board” has over the administration and the policy set by them for the children under their “care”.
  - The Teacher in the classroom whether good or bad has the Authority for the time the student is in that class.
    - The responsibility of the student includes concentration, poise, manners, proper behavior, etc., and whether he is interested in or agrees with the subject being taught or not, he is only responsible to concentrate on it.
      - Parents have no right to interfere with classroom Authority or discipline and their only option is to remove the student to another educational situation if they are displeased.
      - School Boards have no right in any capacity in reality to limit the ability of the Teacher to control and administer his classroom and again the only right is for the dissatisfied parents to remove the student to another educational institution.
  - Teachers may be communist, socialist, moslem, or some other disoriented type but still they have the Authority in the classroom and whether they teach what is right or wrong to the children is only to be determined by the policy of the administration and the only recourse is to remove the teacher.
    - This again in our system of education has been circumvented by the organization of Labor Unions as Teachers Unions where a teacher who gains tenure cannot be removed unless they engage in some heinous activity.
    - The ultimate effect of such an educational distortion depends on how strict the parents are about the inculcation of Bible Doctrine in their child.
    - The ultimate principle is that the Authority of the teacher in the classroom at any level CANNOT be destroyed without destroying the entire educational system.
- Coaches in Athletics whether they are deemed Good or Bad must have Authority over the team they coach to instill the principles and virtues of self discipline, fairness, and humility in the players.
  - His personality is not an issue but in the area of athletics HE IS the Authority and it must not be undermined lest the team be erratic and unsuccessful in their competitions.
- Police officers as representatives of the Law whether he is Good or Bad must have the respect and cooperation of the citizens.
  - When one is stopped for traffic violations he must respect the officer’s Authority and not express any antagonism toward him.
  - The officers personality is never to be an issue, good or bad, but the real issue

must remain one's own bad decision at the wrong time which is observed by the officer.

- This Authority and respect has been totally destroyed by civilian review boards for Law Enforcement personnel.
- Judges on the bench in the Courts as representatives of the Law whether his decisions are good or bad must have their decisions respected and adhered to.
  - There should be VERY LIMITED options for APPEAL which is singularly abused in our system today.
  - Whether one agrees with the decisions or not he must recognize that the alternative to the decisions of the Judge on the bench is:
    - Anarchy
    - Terrorism
    - Dog Eat Dog living
    - TOTAL injustice.
    - Violence
    - Even Revolution

There must be an essential balance between Authority and Freedom which comes only under legitimate functions of Authority derived from the Laws of Divine Establishment, Bible Doctrine in the Divine Dynasphere and the Divine Institutions. Involvement in any level of Arrogance will inevitably destroy one or more of these. Decisions can be made by those in Authority abusing their Authority as a result of not knowing how to handle it and thus becoming tyrannical and destroying Freedom. Decisions can be made from Freedom to join conspiracies or commit crimes against the Laws of Divine Establishment and thus destroy Authority resulting in Anarchy. These functions under arrogance can occur both in one's personal life and in one's national collective life.

### **Authority Arrogance Leading to Functional Arrogance**

Authority Arrogance overtly REJECTS all systems of Authority established by God for preservation, happiness and Freedom of the Human Race. Motivational Arrogance is what initiates the rejection of all legitimate Authority in life from any of the aspects of Mental Attitude Arrogance. This rejection of all Authority is then the origin of motivation to engage in:

- ▲ [Crime](#)
- ▲ [Violence](#)
- ▲ [Terrorism](#)
- ▲ Slavery
- ▲ [Revolution](#)
- ▲ Tyranny
- ▲ Dictatorship
- ▲ [Conspiracy](#)
- ▲ Anarchy
- ▲ and much more



This is all part of the Influence of Evil from the function of Demon Influence under the operation of the Cosmic Dynaspheres. *Demon influence has no power or Authority apart from HUMAN CONSENT* originating from the volition of the soul which thus initiates the Motivational Degeneracy or [Motivational Arrogance](#) derived from Evil. In all cases involvement in any aspect of either Motivational or [Functional Arrogance](#) is the DIRECT result of one's own decisions and constantly assigns power to people who function totally under EVIL who do not possess legitimate Authority in life.

### **Responsibility under Authority**

When a person becomes part of an academic organization, or any other organization, their responsibility is to adhere to whatever policy has been established or LEAVE. If they cannot function properly in this way then there is something seriously wrong with that person's integrity, character and/or Spiritual Life. The principle is that if one enters an organization or educational system HE IS RESPONSIBLE TO ABIDE BY THEIR POLICIES because by his entrance he has agreed to accept the policies and they have the only Authority in the system and he possesses NONE! In academics in the United States the system is bad not just because the content is bad but more so because of the POOR use of, or total LACK of, Authority in the classroom and total permissiveness allowing children and students at ALL levels to express themselves in a class. No one ever learns by self expression but only by listening and concentrating on the subject being presented. Administrators are needed in schools who back teachers and teachers are needed who are TOUGH so that when a student complains about something in a class he is THROWN OUT. This is the same thing in athletics where the coach is the Authority not the parents nor the players. The most dramatic illustration of the crucial need for Authority Orientation is in the military where when the principles of Authority are violated it means loss of life and possibly loss of national Freedom. In business when Authority is violated or distorted businesses fail and prosperity is destroyed. Labor unions and government bureaucratic regulations are a slap in the face to business where the Authority of the one putting up the capital is usurped by either labor or government.

Therefore, the acceptability of Authority in life is dependent totally on the function of one's Volition and this gives the individual the OPTION to accept or reject Authority. The Authority delegated by God for the protection and preservation of the Human Race at every level is useless and of no value UNLESS the people under that Authority willingly ACCEPT it. Therefore, Motivational Arrogance as Motivational Degeneracy from Mental Attitude Arrogance under the influence of the principles of Evil rejects ALL Authority and is therefore the origin of the OVERT REJECTION of Authority as Functional Arrogance. Therefore, Motivational Arrogance by definition precedes activity under Functional Arrogance both derived from Evil as Authority Arrogance.

All true Capacity in and for life begins with [Authority Orientation](#). Authority is the Secret KEY of Freedom and guarantees the Freedom of everyone not just some because if all do not have Freedom then eventually none will have Freedom. Authority is clearly defined by the Laws of Divine Establishment and the Divine Institutions and the MOST SIGNIFICANT loss of Freedom is from the rejection of the Authority of the Husband by the Wife in Marriage. If the believer

cannot and does not orient to legitimate Authority he will never orient to Freedom. When the individual is disoriented to Freedom or Freedom is absent then some facsimile is expressed in fanaticism. [Fanaticism](#) is the ability to concentrate on ONE IDEA and invariably the fanatic always wins out over people who cannot concentrate on anything.

Sooner or later every person will in his life have some amount of Authority or power, small or great, and what each must remember when considering power is that it MUST NEVER BE USED FOR PERSONAL BENEFIT. Power is never to be related to Arrogance which very often accompanies it because ONLY Humility can use power and Authority properly. [Enforced](#) and [Genuine Humility](#) developed from Authority Orientation under the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Dynasphere is the only means of properly using power. Humility is the point where [VIRTUE](#) is linked to Power so that all Authority used is for GOOD. God will inevitably give each believer some level of power to see if they can pass the power testing and this is an area where many people fail when they abuse their Authority. When one has power he must be very flexible with the use of power and very relaxed and very honorable and the more power one has in any facet of life the greater the challenge is to that person's integrity. Power, just like Freedom, requires a tremendous sense of responsibility and having power and using it under VIRTUE results in the individuals becoming asocial or aloof to a great extent in order to maintain objectivity but this aloofness must never be misconstrued to be Arrogance.

Humans possessing Authority means the involvement and expressions of human personality. Some people cannot accept Authority unless they LOVE the individual in Authority. This is the difficulty faced by Mr. Trump in the United States who tried to accomplish what was most beneficial for the nation but was rejected by much of the population because of his personality and their subjectivity regarding the lack of personal benefits for them. If the one in Authority is obnoxious, objectionable or disagreeable in any way this is made the issue instead of how he functions in the administration of his Authority. Therefore involvement of the believer in Authority Arrogance reflects a lack of his having functioned under the Authority Orientation of the Divine Dynasphere to develop Enforced Humility and Genuine Humility. He therefore has an obvious failure to understand [Divine Viewpoint](#) with regard to Authority and has total disorientation to life. It is very strange how people in their Arrogance are always trying to find respect from others in life and how they go about it by trying to prove they are equal to some and better than others. The real way to find respect in life is to recognize Authority whenever and wherever it exists. This is the antithesis of the shallow person today who is trying to prove he is better than everyone else and thereby assuage and stimulate his Arrogance.

There are those in life whose Arrogance exceeds any possible Authority in life and therefore God has set up a series of principles and concepts whereby he uses his Divine Authority to administer Divine Discipline punishment and eliminate this manifestation of the Old Sin Nature which is part of the Plan and the Policy of Satan. These "Dreamers" clearly despise all Authority wherever it may be found in any administrative functions. This resentment is directed toward anyone who carries Authority whether it is spiritual or secular Authority. These people despise leadership in churches and in all secular authorities including government,

schools, military, business, athletics in any person or institution where Authority resides. They despise it as unreasoning animals considering only themselves and this is [SELF CENTERED Arrogance](#). This is where Satan began his whole revolution and followed it with propagandizing and recruiting the fallen angels and later the deception of the woman and the enticement of the decision of Adam in the garden to give up his Authority and follow the woman. This is what has been occurring in all higher creation since before time existed, apart from those who renovate their thinking with consistent Perception, Cognition, Incultation & Metabolization of Bible Doctrine. The principle which is found in effective military function must also be found in effective functions in the Local Church where believers are not present to be smarter or better or out do anyone but to ONLY learn Bible Doctrine. Therefore believers must function under the principle of Authority and if a believer violates this principle he is to be removed from the congregation. One cannot live without Authority nor have capacity for life without it. A woman cannot be feminine without the Authority of the man she loves and men cannot free themselves from Arrogance without Authority. One great test of Authority orientation is found in social life when one associates with people who are constantly trying to out do others and have entered social life with the hangups of Arrogance. These individuals have failed to properly contact and orient to any Authority system such as that which is in military, business, education, spiritual life, home, Law Enforcement, etc. There must be a system of Authority for individuals to be able to properly use Freedom and to be free of the one single thing which makes them totally unteachable, Arrogance. To the extent one carries Arrogance in his soul and thinks he is smarter than the one teaching or more eloquent; to that extent, the only thing in life which is a teaching aid for that person is the suffering and misery of Divine Discipline.

The believer must not distort grace by thinking that when he defies the rules set up by Authority he will not be disciplined. Authority is to be used to make a person more efficient not to allow him to violate principles of Freedom, privacy and property. One has a right to be sinful and to make decisions in Freedom against Freedom and against Authority but once this is done the Authority has the RIGHT to remove him. Authority must exist to protect privacy, property and above all else life and volitional Freedom and all the divinely established rights which exist for the individual. It is gracious to prosecute those who get out of line in society in minor ways in order to avoid strong antagonistic personalities later. Having an Old Sin Nature the individual needs both the fear of God and respect for all aspects of his delegated Authority brought out through Divine Discipline as a restrainer of Sin, the Interlocking System of Arrogance and [Reversionism](#). Arrogance can only be broken down through actual fear of the prospect of potential intensive discipline. Arrogance produces [Self Righteousness](#) or [Self Pity](#), both divorced from reality. Within the Interlocking System of Arrogance the production of Arrogance ranges from snobbishness to [Psychopathic](#) behavior. Arrogance always rejects truth and this is why intelligent people often with a very high IQ come to believe a system of LIES which are so obviously LIES it often is amazing to observe.

In Maladjustment to the Justice of God, when a person begins to slander or attack Authority especially spiritual Authority they have become Haters of God and thus have moved into the Interlocking System of Antagonistic Emotional Hatred, Cosmic Dynasphere II. When a believer

finds a pastor who is erratic, not engaging in the consistent expository teaching of Bible Doctrine, he must simply move on and not try to judge him in any way. God will issue proper judgment according to his own proper timing, all by himself. Believers are notorious for their rejection of the Authority of the Pastor Teacher of “their” local church and thinking they know more doctrine or principles than he does and thus try to undermine him or direct his teaching functions. These believers will become subject to the Divine Discipline from God which is designed for the bad pastor teacher when they interfere with his ministry in any way and this is triple compound Divine Discipline or greater.

One must never engage in crime which is an attack on Freedom and establishment, nor attack the police or military. Wives must admire and respect their husbands OR they should not marry. The wife cannot LOVE her man unless she has fear and respect for his Authority. The Believer cannot love God unless he has fear, as in awe of, and respect for God. Therefore, rejection of Authority and becoming a hater of God is an expression of [Reversionism](#) since the believer cannot ever grow in the Spiritual Life unless he recognizes the Authority of Bible Doctrine, the Thinking of Christ ([1Cor 2:16](#)). Implacability, as a personal failure, means rejection of all types of Authority and these Arrogant persons accept only their own Authority. If a person rejects establishment Authority they will reject the Authority of the Pastor Teacher as well. The most basic Authority in life is parental and when this is rejected a pattern is set in the personality of the child and he begins a life of rejection of Authority which results in disorientation to life in general and which will ultimately destroy him.

Many people are very often promoted beyond their capacity to handle Authority and power because their capacity for these is limited by their ability to communicate. The elaborate and technical communication systems established in this world today are not nearly as important as the ability of the Human Being to communicate effectively which has existed throughout history. The ability to communicate is the basis for life itself and is one’s ability in public speaking. The individual who is going to use power properly must have the ability to communicate and be understood and therefore must first have the ability to THINK and one’s communication ability cannot ever exceed one’s ability to think because communication expresses one’s thoughts through vocabulary. In government the antithetical functions are observed where a Statesman adheres to some form of principle focused on Establishment and Freedom while the politician adheres only to any system which will allow him to grab the most votes to stay in office. He uses communication to appeal to people with varying and different views in life making them all think he is on their side when he is only on his own side. Therefore, if one is going to have a successful social or business life he must be able to speak effectively and to communicate with people no matter what his occupation may be. Most people would be much better off if they would learn to speak lucidly than by going to the gym and taking care of their bodies. However, this is not having highly eloquent language which obfuscates or makes abstruse what one is trying to communicate, it is clear lucid communication able to be understood by all. This is the KEY to effective use of Authority and power.

Submitting to or rejecting the authority of one who teaches Bible Doctrine properly, and by this

accept the Word of God or, in Arrogance, reject his authority and teaching and make an issue of his personality determines his involvement in Authority Arrogance of Humility. Once the believer decides this he will either increase or limit his options in life. Once there is rejection of the Laws of Divine Establishment authority in refusing to pay taxes, avoiding military service, resisting the police in Law Enforcement then there is destruction of the option of making decisions under freedom. This is in fact the IDIOTIC position of morality in even THINKING that criminals have RIGHTS which must be honored. If one persistently and consistently destroys options he will eventually run out of options. If one throws a decision he should be making back onto the people under him, he is a blatant coward. When one has authority and fails to use it properly but throws decisions back onto the people under his authority, he admits to the inability to fulfill the office he is supposed to function in. No one can learn anything nor lead anyone apart from humility. Without humility in a class room the instructor will make an issue out of authority. On the other hand when a student makes an issue of self he has become totally Arrogant. Students in a class or institution must be told what the policies are not ever asked what they think about the policies. The one in authority may be good or bad but when one is in a system which has put him under authority he simply has to submit to that authority or leave that system. The beauty of and value of Universal Military Service is that the inductee does not have an option of LEAVING the service and therefore must LEARN to function in humility under authority. This was the fallacy of the Officer Candidate system of the United States Marine Corps in the 1970s where college graduates were enticed into the candidate system but given the OPTION of withdrawal. When one works for someone he is under that persons authority and whether he does or doesn't like him is never an issue. The only issue is WHAT IS HIS POLICY and how can the employee carry it out as unto the Lord. If one doesn't like the policy then he can LEAVE the organization but he has no basis for staying and fighting the policy or being underhanded or refusing to do the policy. If a corporation decides that all laborers will be paid \$5.00 per hour without regard to their job description, the labor has no right to form a collective bargaining organization, a UNION, and argue with management for higher wages or wages based on Job Descriptions. Those in labor simply have a right to comply or find another job elsewhere.

### **Manifestations of Authority Arrogance**

Authority, therefore, is a creation of God and it recognizes that there may be millions who can take full responsibility for decisions in their own personal life but very few who could ever handle responsibility for controlling or providing for others. Authority involves a person who is willing to take responsibility for his decisions and for the effect these decisions have on the lives of others. Most people think of Authority in terms of Arrogance where those in Authority are able to tell others what to do and have them provide obeisance to position, rank and / or title but this is not truly Authority only Arrogance. As a result, these weak people resent this Authority and therefore are Arrogant people. Rejection or resentment of Authority in any realm demonstrates Arrogance, therefore, Arrogance is weakness. Weakness begins with children who reject the Authority of their parents and goes on for them throughout life.

2 Examples of the basic manifestations of Authority Arrogance include:

- ✧ Children disobeying parents



- This often occurs when children get this idea based on how their mothers reject the Authority of their fathers.
- If the child's volition clashes with the parental Authority they will be disoriented to life, however, if the child's volition coalesces with the parental Authority they will be oriented to life.
- When people reject parental Authority in childhood they eventually become involve in some form of revolution.
- Wives rejecting Authority of Husbands ([Col 3:18](#), [Col 3:20](#))
  - Wives are to be subordinate to husbands in all things but the only way women can accomplish this is through functioning inside the [Integrity Envelope](#) of Personal Love for God and Impersonal, Unconditional Love for Mankind.
  - A Woman involved the feminist movement is a woman functioning inside the [Arrogance Skills](#).

The young girls who become “boy crazy” make themselves ugly no matter how physically attractive they may be and they enter into the Interlocking System of Arrogance and any one who enters into the Interlocking System of Arrogance becomes an ugly person. Most of the current popular music and entertainment has for many decades been a complete disorientation to LIFE and demonstrates a total lack of Authority orientation. Adam's original sin, imputed at physical birth to all subsequent human beings born into this world, provides each person with spiritual death and his sin was a SIN of DISOBEDIENCE and rejection of Authority. Humans are born with disorientation to Authority and cannot orient to life until they have been taught and developed orientation to Authority and this is why man has been given by God the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions. These laws require Authority Orientation in order to preserve the Human Race on this earth. Living in the world ruled by Satan, one does not easily orient to Authority as a result of being under the influence of Satan's Original Transgression of Arrogance, which is the basis for his entire plan and policy for rulership of this world, EVIL.

Any person who has power and also possesses soul hangups cannot ever properly handle their power. When subjectivity and hangups are combined with Authority and power the [Pride](#) and [Hangups](#) are strengthened. This is the [Arrogance of Power](#). All organizations especially government, military and Law Enforcement must have (and do not) a means of determining subjectivity in an individual and no one should ever be promoted above his level of subjectivity. Everyone who is eligible for promotion in any field or area of life should recognize that the higher one goes in Authority the greater his objectivity must be because of the greater level of responsibility he will possess. He must, therefore, never have Authority beyond his subjectivity factor. This is why a woman cannot and should not occupy certain positions in life since being a responder she is much more prone to subjectivity and to yield to that subjectivity with great facility. When a woman as a responder rules men to whom she should respond, in order to keep on ruling them, she must become subjective and this produces Pride and [Egotism](#). However, the environment where the women function as responders is the absolute best thing to be around. Subjectivity is overriding overemphasis on self therefore the Mental Attitude Arrogance of Pride. Most people cannot handle having very much power and

when subjective people get into positions of great Authority the result is the creation of Franklin Delano Roosevelt or Woodrow Wilson, who were both totally subjective and whose policies and functions resulted in disasters for the United States of America whose ramifications are still being felt today. On the other hand individuals like Theodore Roosevelt, Ronald Reagan, and even Donald Trump are OBJECTIVE individuals and this is a wonderful thing to behold and results in a great benefit for the nation. George Marshal was totally SUBJECTIVE and this was devastating for the military and the state department under his “marshal plan”. George Patton and Douglas MacArthur were totally OBJECTIVE and this was a great blessing in the military resulting in incredible victories in World War II. The subjective person cannot handle Authority or power properly and the result for those under him is inevitably TYRANNY. Examine any bureaucrat in the United States of America and you will see total subjectivity with deep soul hangups in their systems of management. The principle of [2Chron 32:26](#) is significant with regard to the United States of America since we now face imminent destruction as a nation as a result a saturation of [National Arrogance](#) and this is Arrogance related to collective subjectivity.

A person, when entangled in Arrogance, always tries to gain approbation from everyone and when there is someone challenging that approbation these people will endeavor to undermine them and revolt against their Authority. Faithfulness and respect for Authority must go together, and when people criticize and ridicule Authority they are not people of faithfulness nor of integrity. A person who criticizes Authority is one who cannot be trusted. The people who go against Authority are Arrogant and do not have the ability to properly and realistically orient to life. This is one very strong reason why every male upon graduation from high school or reaching his 17<sup>th</sup> or 18<sup>th</sup> birthday should be required to have military service training before engaging in any other function in life. Therefore, when a person criticizes Authority he is a faithless person who cannot be trusted and is without honor or integrity and saturated with Arrogance. Authority was not designed to allow the expression of Arrogance but to initiate and require taking responsibility for others. Arrogance destroys leadership potentiality and its sensitivity to the needs of subordinates. Subordinates must, at appropriate times, be reprimanded but never degraded.

All systems of disorientation to life and to reality begin with rejection of Authority in the home. This means there can be no development of capacity for happiness or blessing and results in a life of total [Unhappiness](#). One cannot remain in this type of Arrogance and resent, reject and despise one's parents and have any type of growth or maturation in life. Volition directed toward establishment Authority is what determines whether one is an honorable or dishonorable person. Rejection of establishment Authority is why believers accept socialism, communism, welfare, etc., and resent those who work for a better life instead of expecting a government handout for a better life. There is no such thing as fairness in life. Fairness only ever comes from God, where the believer will always receive total fairness from the Justice of God but will NEVER receive what he actually deserves! The only certain thing the individual will ever face in life is Authority not ever fairness. Unfair, unreasonable, unjust but LEGITIMATE Authority and one's ability to orient to that Authority, is the basis for happiness or lack of it in life.

Without Authority there can be no capacity for life and for a woman in marriage, lack of Authority orientation will cause the marriage to be destroyed by pettiness and resentfulness. This nation is on the verge of being destroyed because of the lack of Authority Orientation and this is clearly demonstrated among the younger generations, especially in their attitudes toward the military. There are people today who are totally anti-military and reject military training and resent being shouted at or reprimanded by anyone especially, a Drill Sargent during training. Even if an enemy were landing on our shores these “children” would not lift a finger to resist them and live by the false axiom “better red than dead”. Without Authority Orientation there is unrivaled and unrestrained Arrogance and the greater the Arrogance the less there is capacity for life. Freedom itself demands Authority and you cannot attack any area of Authority without destroying all of the factors and principles of Freedom. Authority Orientation can be lost through demon possession for the unbeliever, drug addiction where even an individual’s own Authority is rejected and through demon influence via the LIE of the satanic policy of Evil for the believer.

### **Authority Arrogance vs Establishment functions**

All unbelievers live in a sphere of real spiritual death and are constantly influenced from the Cosmic Dynaspheres if or when they depart from the principles of the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions. This is why Codex I and III of the Mosaic Law are saturated with Laws of Divine Establishment principles. The main protection for the believer against the Cosmic Dynaspheres is Bible Doctrine and the use of the [Spiritual Skills](#). The client nation to God is defined in terms of spiritual activity under the Divine Institutions and the Laws of Divine Establishment Freedoms. The Lord Jesus, The Christ anticipated the Church Age when he said “render to Caesar the things which are Caesar’s and to God the things which are God’s”. Therefore while the unbeliever has a responsibility to adhere to the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions the believers have DUAL responsibility and this does not include [ACTIVISM](#) and requires that they “Render unto Caesar” which is orientation to Divine Establishment Law activity including the proper functions of:

- ✧ The 4 Divine Institutions
- ✧ Freedom as Uncoerced Volition
- ✧ Privacy
- ✧ Private Property
- ✧ Freedom through Military victory thus responsibility to serve in the military
- ✧ Free Enterprise with existence of WEALTH and POVERTY side by side which is inevitable.
  - Therefore the only interference in Free Enterprise should be by Law Enforcement where criminality of function exists.
- ✧ Separation of Business and State
- ✧ Separation of Church and State

Therefore, common Laws must be based on the true principles of the Laws of Divine Establishment in order to establish a secure and legitimate structure of Authority designed to protect citizens against criminality.

Rejection of Authority in the 2 categories of the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions is destructive and not only results in a fragmented life and self destruction for the individual but is also the basis for destruction of Freedom in a nation and ultimately the nation itself. These areas are the very basis for the functions in Christianity of:

- Missionaries
- Evangelism
- Witnessing
- The free Perception, Cognition, Inculcation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine by the Christian.

### **Legitimate vs Illegitimate Authority & Government**

Legitimate Authority is that which follows the structure and organization of the system and Plan of God which includes the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions. This includes everything which is in subjection to the Will of God and Plan of God. Therefore, Legitimate Authority must follow the system of God and be in subjection to the Authority of God. Illegitimate Authority is that which is oriented and functions contrary to the System and Authority of God. *The believer does not owe any allegiance to an illegitimate system of Authority nor the government based on that Authority.* There is no allegiance required from the believer toward any system which is anti-Authority regarding the system of God which includes any Authority which goes against or is antagonistic to the Authority system of God. The Authority system of God is found beginning in [Gate #3](#) of the Divine Dynasphere the Authority Envelope. Under enforced discipline the individual develops and exercises enforced humility as a result of his compliance and submission to the discipline. He then builds this into Self Discipline and Genuine Humility the foundation of ALL virtue in life.

Obedience to any form of illegitimate Authority is not OF or IN the Plan of God and therefore Christians world wide have been deceived into overthinking where OVER thinking is a person who oversteps or misapplies Bible Doctrine giving HIMSELF the Authority to supersede the Authority of Bible Doctrine. These are believers who wander through life under the influence of Evil functioning within the Cosmic Dynaspheres. Spiritual Freedom is liberation from the Cosmic Dynaspheres and brings with it the ability and necessity to function within the [Divine Dynasphere](#). The believer must have allegiance to Legitimate Government based on and it functioning under the Divine Institutions and Laws of Divine Establishment, however, the government of the United States of America in the 21<sup>st</sup> century is NOT a legitimate government. All aspects of this government today and those in control of them are functioning within the Cosmic Dynaspheres especially the Interlocking System of Arrogance.

History is filled with leadership or representation in nations saturated with Evil, but the leadership of any nation generally reflects the Status Quo of the people. Historically People get what they DEMAND, they get what they think and therefore what they deserve. The believer, however, is protected from any Evil and Illegitimate government in a nation under the principle of Logistical Grace and the Wall of Fire. There were 7000 mature believers in the northern kingdom of Israel in the time of Elijah provided for under Logistical Grace and protected by a Wall of Fire and because of these men the northern kingdom was protected and blessed while

under the rule of Ahab and Jezebel. ([1Kings 19:18](#)) The believer with maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul is to never be disturbed by the personalities of contemporary history which are saturated with Evil. Leaders who function under the influence of Evil simply reflect the volition and thinking of the people they represent.

The people in a nation must either respond to or react to the Authority systems of God where response is function, even in a limited way, in the Divine Dynasphere and reaction is function within the Cosmic Dynaspheres. Legitimate Government is designed based on its acceptance of the Directive Will of God and any nation which tries to function OUTSIDE of this concept of legitimacy WILL BE REMOVED by God of necessity. Functioning OUTSIDE the concepts of legitimacy is functioning under the PERMISSIVE Will of God and neither the individual nor the nation can expect to exist and operate indefinitely under the permissive Will of God. The Justice of God provides divine punitive action for this and that brings into the picture the overruling Will of God. This rejection of the Directive Will of God is Negative Volition toward the “rules” of God for function in the Divine Dynasphere and opens the individual to the Interlocking System of Arrogance, Interlocking System of Antagonistic Emotional Hatred and the Stages of [Reversionism](#). Therefore, the United States of America no longer having a legitimate government has been grinding down through the 5 cycles of national Divine Discipline literally for decades and is on its last leg of this journey today!

### **Fear vs Authority Orientation**

Americans have been facing a growing problem for many decades because the very thing which led to the rise of communism and made it easy for them to take over other nations is that their systems allowed people to be terrorized by government. A person who does not respect Authority is an Arrogant person and this person is a coward under pressure. This is why communism was able to come into being. The citizens in the United States of America have been for decades collectively developed into cowards as a nation because NO ONE respects Authority. Not the Police, Judges, Traffic Laws, Military Uniforms, Parents, THE CONSTITUTION, ETC. There has been a total loss of respect for all Authority in life in America. People don't know how to cope with this situation so they turn to drugs and other forms of sublimation and the United States has become a society of individuals seeking sublimation to generate [Pseudo Happiness](#). When a person becomes a drug or alcohol addict he rejects all Authority even the Authority of his own volition and this rejection requires an overwhelming entanglement in Arrogance to get to this position. For these individuals when the pressure is OFF there is Arrogance but when the pressure is ON there is Cowardice. The communists were and always are, a small group of people and could never have taken over any nation especially the Russian or Chinese countries if it were not for these characteristics of the people there. Because they are gangsters, hoodlums and psychopaths they only get away with their machinations by frightening people. In these instances people were frightened because they had no respect for Authority and lacking self discipline this made it easy to be frightened and terrorized and pushed around. Therefore the first sign of a lack of respect for any form of discipline, enforced or self induced, is some level of Arrogance. A prime fundamental example is the ‘Women’s Lib’ movement, which is actually a part of the communist conspiracy in the



United States, which is the type of thing the communists have learned can be instigated because women inherently love to reject Authority. They will readily reject the Authority of their Husbands, Pastors, anyone in any situation who is over them. The poorest manners ever to be seen in social situations are generally observed in women who reject all Authority. Society cannot get along without women but surely it can do without women who do not respect any Authority since these are truly Arrogant females. Put this Arrogant female under pressure by trying to draft her son into the military and then send him to an unpopular war zone to fight and she becomes a coward and fears for her son's life. Thus the oscillation between [Self Righteous Arrogance](#) and [Cowardice](#).

### **Ladies, Learning & Arrogance**

Everyone learns in silence but the in the bible ladies are COMMANDED to learn in silence. Ladies don't like to be talked down to and in their Arrogance always assume that the inconsequential things rolling around in their mind are extremely important. Women will only learn from experts when they finally decide the teacher is really an expert, usually a male, whom she respects to the utmost, or a recognized great teacher. When it comes to teaching, the woman is generally more discerning than the man, except where personality enters into it and in these cases women often mistake sweet talking men for spiritual or intellectual giants. The attitude of the woman to Bible Doctrine as taught from the pulpit determines whether she is a reactor or responder in life. When a woman becomes subjectively involved in any area of life she has a very difficult time accepting contradictory teaching regarding that subject. Being emotionally and subjectively involved she sees some implications of things but may not like the facts regarding them. In addition Arrogance about her intelligence level, real or imagined, wipes out the beauty of the woman and being smart as a woman is secondary and being beautiful INSIDE is far more important. When a woman, or anyone for that matter, has content in her soul which conflicts with what the bible teaches and she rejects the bible, she is in for a terrible time in life. In any area of life, where one is inclined to have hangups, he will not "learn in silence". Silence, obviously, means NOT vocalizing, whispering or passing notes but is also means not having a Mental Attitude resistance to what is being taught. Loss of the objectivity of an "open unbiased mind" results in rejection or distortion of what is taught. Many women constantly switch pastors as a result of their failure in some area of Bible Doctrine comprehension where they resist the Authority of the teaching of the Pastor Teacher. Once a woman identifies her right pastor she must then wade through preconceived notions about things being taught and personality difficulties with the pastor and get down to focus only on the subject matter.

It is the response of interest, good manners, concentration and respect for the Authority of the one teaching which is of paramount importance for ALL believers. No one can learn anything especially Bible Doctrine while talking and talking in a Local Church during bible teaching is WORSE than just poor manners. Talking in the local church during bible class is also reaction, thoughtlessness and especially Arrogance, thinking what one is saying is more important than what is being taught from the pulpit. Talking in the local church during bible study is saying what one is doing is far more important than the "thinking of Christ" ([1Cor 2:16](#)) which is

being taught. There must be inner tranquility, quietness of the mentality of the soul and undisturbed inner life without anger, guilt, bitterness or implacability and a totally objective soul in order to learn Bible Doctrine. Therefore, the first issue with a woman who is disturbed in some way with regard to the doctrinal content of a message is not the content of the Bible Doctrine but the matter of Authority. When a woman respects the Authority of the one teaching her, concentration is so total under the Filling of God the Holy Spirit that she is totally free from Mental Attitude Sins, antagonisms and subjectivity, and as a result, her being thoughtful of others and poised always causes her to wait to talk later. When women react in their souls they always want to talk now and tell what they think and how they feel. They will very often react in the middle of a bible message and thereby disturb the teaching. In reaction the most reticent of women have a great deal to say and their anger spews from their mouths regardless of the circumstances of the moment. Being in a local church congregation means nothing to a reacting woman and when she verbalizes her reaction she ceases to concentrate on the subject and totally makes an issue of self. To make an issue of the doctrine being taught is to be objective, but to make an issue of self is always subjectivity. The only real issue during teaching in the local church is Bible Doctrine and it's context and content. Therefore when the woman interposes with a reaction of Mental Attitude Arrogance and Sin and she interrupts with verbal or written vituperations this is the pattern whereby the woman fails in the same way as Ishah did in the garden. The original woman in the garden came to where she failed based on her developing Arrogance and she resented the teaching of The Lord Jesus, The Christ and reacted to his DOGMATIC MONOLOGUE teaching. She rejected the Authority of her Right Man Ish and when Mr. Evil, Satan, began to share dialogue with her, that dialogue appealed to the woman who could then enter her opinions into the conversation and she welcomed this. With her right man a woman uses dialogue to undress her soul to the one whom she loves and this is the legitimate function of dialogue in the woman and what makes her so inclined to talk instead of listen. There is nothing more beautiful than the inner beauty of a woman who reveals her soul through conversational dialogue. However, there is no place for the "nakedness" of the woman's soul in the local church assembly since the nakedness of soul is only for the intimacy of conversation with her right man. Having resented the Monologue teaching of Christ which was taught with Authority she did not hear nor understand the context nor the content of the doctrine taught and confused these when engaging in dialogue with Satan. She confused the issues of spiritual death with physical death. Instead of uncovering her soul having Bible Doctrine content, she uncovered it lacking doctrine to allow Evil, the policy of Satan to infiltrate it. When she came under the influence of Satan she FELL as a result of her blossoming Arrogance. Satan EXPLOITED her false impressions fanning her Arrogance to a greater and greater level. While she was bored with Bible Doctrine she found stimulation in the Arrogance of her own Opinions. The dialogue with Satan fed her vanity, boosted her ego and made her Arrogant enough to reject the Authority of

The Lord Jesus, The Christ, Bible Doctrine and Ish all together. No woman should ever expose her naked body to any but her right man but more so no woman should ever reveal her naked soul to Evil. Subordination to the right Pastor Teacher protects the soul from Evil just as LOVE for her right man protects her body from sinfulness and infidelity. Discipline and Authority are necessary for learning and for clothing the soul with the fine garments necessary to receive Super – Grace blessings. To give a woman Authority over a man or permit her to teach from the pulpit of the local church is to destroy her inner beauty and convert her Blind Arrogance into Reversionism and to put her directly under the influence of EVIL. This also manufactures, out of her revolt against Authority, a revolutionist, trouble maker and a person saturated with EVIL within the Cosmic Dynaspheres.

### **Authority Arrogance & The Local Church**

All Legitimate Authority in life is delegated by GOD and falls into categories and includes those powers given to humans derived from the principles of the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions as:

- ✧ Husband in Marriage
- ✧ Parents in Family
- ✧ Government in Nations
- ✧ Management in any system or organization
- ✧ Coaches in athletics
- ✧ Teachers and Professors in education
- ✧ Higher Ranks in the military and Law Enforcement
- ✧ Police over citizens
- ✧ Judges for the determination of Legal functions
- ✧ Pastors in the local church (not religious denominational hierarchies)

In the spiritual realm the Royal Family of God is responsible to the added Authority which resides in Bible Doctrine as the basic spiritual Authority, it being the THINKING OF CHRIST. (1Cor 2:16) Also then, with the Pastor Teacher, who has received that spiritual gift at the point of his making Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God and having engaged in an acceptable system of preparation, having the delegated Authority to teach this doctrine. Therefore, the Authority of the Pastor Teacher in his local church comes from the spiritual gift, his preparation and the ACCURACY of his communication of Bible Doctrine. As in all cases regarding Authority, the individual believer uses his volition to respond to or reject the Authority of the teaching of the pastor, or any other delegated Authority in life, and must then assume responsibility for the consequences of all such decisions.

Therefore, there is always a system of Authority in each of the Divine Institutions and there is also delegated Authority in the Spiritual Life. In the Spiritual Life there first is the supreme sovereign Authority of God himself but He does not communicate directly with people in this dispensation. His communication Authority has been delegated through Bible Doctrine to the Doctrinally focused Pastor Teacher and then, through this man, to the local church

administration all the way down to the doctrinal teachers of children. Any person who has responsibility for teaching a bible class to children also has Authority over them as well as RESPONSIBILITY for them. In the realm of spiritual Authority there is the designated and essential absolute Authority of Bible Doctrine so that Positive Volition toward it, function under it and continuous intake of it invariably results in spiritual growth. Any Authority in the spiritual realm which divorces itself from the Bible Doctrines of Scripture immediately becomes illegitimate, useless and susceptible to all sorts and levels of Divine Discipline. God has provided Authority for every function in life and He has set up for believers a way of life detailed under the [Royal Family Honor Code](#). The faithful, accurate doctrinal teaching on the part of the Pastor Teachers results in the development of [Authority Orientation](#) for the believers in his congregation. A total distortion of this principle is demonstrated by the ex cathedra pronouncements of the pope of the roman church. When there is a conflict between the scripture and what the pope says the pope is always right and inevitably this results in there being conflict between the pope and the Roman religious denomination on the one hand and GOD on the other hand. Authority Orientation is always a source of inspiration and blessing to the individual and those in his periphery. It is [Essential](#) for effective Perception, Cognition, Inculcation & Metabolization of Bible Doctrine which is the only means of reaching [Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God](#) with its subsequent phenomenal blessing for time. Therefore, Authority Orientation is essential for the formation of the pivot of mature believers which sustain and advance the client nation to God.

Consequently, regeneration into the Spiritual Life of the Church Age introduces a new Authority in the life of the believer in the form of the organization of the Local Church with the Pastor Teacher as the primary Authority. Bible Doctrine should be established as the 1<sup>st</sup> priority for the Life of the believer after Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God in order to comprehend and orient to this new Authority. Bible Doctrine is essential for the making of good decisions from a position of Strength in every situation in life. Authority in the local church is necessary for establishing options for enforcing and exercising Freedom in the Christian Way of Life while the Authority in the home is the essential basis for establishing options for Freedom in General life. The factual reality is that *the existence of Authority makes Freedom possible* and even enhances it. All Freedom in any nation exists primarily because of military victory. Victory in military functions is based on proper effective function UNDER AUTHORITY. No Believer has the right to be critical of Authority in any way which would inevitably destroy his ability to function under that Authority. When one is dissatisfied with the policy, purpose or regulating Authority in any organization *he has the option to QUIT OR LEAVE the organization* but not to criticize or attempt to undermine it. Most often when a person quits a job it is because of Authority DISORIENTATION. This is Authority Arrogance and is the basis for tremendous disorientation in life.

True Righteousness in life, for the believer, occurs at [Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God](#) with the imputation of the Absolute Righteousness of God to each new believer. However, sanctification in time, (being Set Apart to God) which also begins at Salvation as a result of the [Baptism of God the Holy Spirit](#) providing the believer with Positional Sanctification and thus Eternal Security, is fulfilled as Experiential Sanctification upon reaching [Maturity Adjustment to](#)

[the Justice of God](#) or beyond. This results when the believer has been consistent in Perception, Cognition, Incultation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine and assimilates a maximum level of Metabolized Bible Doctrine into the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of his Soul thus progressing in his Spiritual Life to complete execution of the [Protocol Plan of God](#). ([Rom 9:19-21](#)) At Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God the believer becomes the slave to this imputed Absolute Righteousness while at Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God the believer becomes the slave to his Sanctification. This is his challenge to exercise a new option in the Spiritual Life. By advance to Spiritual Maturity the believer places himself under slavery to both temporal and eternal blessings which he receives directly from GOD. This slavery eliminates all possible delusions of grandeur concerning spiritual greatness and keeps the believer from engaging in any level of Arrogance by interlocking the [Motivational Arrogance](#) of Mental Attitude Arrogance or [Pride](#) with [Inordinate Ambition & Competition](#) and [Achievement Arrogance](#), among others. It is the judicial imputation of the Righteousness of God and real imputation of Eternal Life to the home of the regenerated Human Spirit which brands the new believer as a slave to The Lord Jesus, The Christ, and with this slavery comes the security of guaranteed Positional Sanctification. While Freedom is essential for function in the Angelic Conflict it is not necessary in the relationship of the believer with Christ. In fact, all truly great relationships in life include the concept of slavery, whether it is the believer's relationship with God or the woman in marriage or the individual in his chosen area of employment. This is where and how Arrogance becomes the basis for destroying capacity for life, including the Spiritual Life. Slavery is the basic concept of Authority vested in one individual. The best parents follow this pattern in using *their good judgment* to teach children to orient to life. Such slavery means security and security means blessing and there is no real blessing in life unless there is security. Therefore, security and blessing cannot be associated with any accouterment of life but only with God as a result of being a slave to God and having his guaranteed security. Anything which can be seen as overt security in life can be lost in an instant thereby resulting in a loss of all associated blessing and the perceived security. Using Freedom to make decisions for the Plan of God and Bible Doctrine results in blessing far greater than anything which one can imagine. Such slavery is the basis for God providing MORE than Ish and Ishah lost in the garden. Such slavery requires a rigid schedule of learning Bible Doctrine under the function of the Grace Apparatus for Perception.

Therefore, every believer should CHOOSE to advance in the Spiritual Life and thereby avoid all aspects of Evil, the Policy and Plan of Satan. The ONLY means of doing this is by the constant, consistent Perception, Cognition, Incultation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine under the [Filling of God the Holy Spirit](#) and [Grace Apparatus for Perception](#), Operation Z. This is the means of spiritual growth and also the only means for [Reversion](#) recovery and is the only path to reach Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and to qualify the believer to receive his Escrow Super – Grace Blessings. Therefore, to advance in the Spiritual Life the believer MUST learn Bible Doctrine and to learn Bible Doctrine he must be taught by his own right Pastor Teacher who has been given the Authority and the TEACHING SPIRITUAL GIFT at his Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God. The teaching ministry of the Pastor Teacher along with the mentorship ministry of God the Holy Spirit teaches doctrine to one's Human Spirit and transfers it into the Left Lobe of the Soul to provide the believer with a clear understanding of



its content. ([John 16:12-15](#), [1Cor 2:9-14](#), [1John 2:27](#)) Believers therefore learn Bible Doctrine through what is taught by their right Pastor Teacher when both are under the Filling of God the Holy Spirit. God has appointed these human communicators to teach those in any given congregation while both are consistently under the Filling of God the Holy Spirit. God the Holy Spirit does not teach the believer apart from the academic discipline of the local church (in one form or another). In other words God the Holy Spirit does not speak to believers nor teach them ANYTHING directly, thereby avoiding Arrogance in the life of the believer. Therefore, it is the ministry of God the Holy Spirit along with the ministry of the Pastor Teacher which provides the Bible Doctrine the believer MUST inculcate. This is the structure of the Authority ordained and delegated by God to give the believer the OPPORTUNITY to grow in the Spiritual Life and reach Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and thereby qualify for actual, real blessings directly from God.

The title ‘Disciple’ used in scripture does not mean simply follower, as a matter of fact in the original language of Koine Greek it actually means “‘STUDENT’ under strict academic discipline without portfolio, present strictly to learn what is being communicated”. The first command given by the condemned apostle Paul to the Pastor Teacher Timothy and all subsequent Pastor Teachers in the Church Age is that they MUST carry on in this fashion by studying and teaching biblical principles and doctrines constantly. This is the ONLY means by which the pastor establishes his divinely ordained Authority in the local church where he communicates. If pastors do not carry on in this fashion then there will be disasters in their Spiritual Life and in the Spiritual Lives of all believers under their Authority. This inevitably will result in the failure of believers to advance in the Spiritual Life and reach Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God. There are very great dangers every time a local church sets up any system, process or program whereby someone else is going to be teaching or communicating to the congregation. Although this MUST be done at times for many reasons there ARE great dangers in the system. The greatest danger is the development or expression of Arrogance by those who will be doing the teaching to others while they, themselves, are NON-responsive to the teaching from the Pastor Teacher. It may be that they are simply unteachable with regard to improving their teaching method or content. It may be that they reject the content of the pastor’s messages or simply his person and welcome the opportunity to set things straight.

If one is to avoid involvement in the Interlocking System of Arrogance he must accept the Authority of his own right Pastor Teacher and listen to his teaching and respect it NOT just accept it. If he cannot respect the teaching of a Pastor Teacher he must leave that local church quietly without complaint or any personal criticisms and find his right Pastor. The analogy is that just as parental Authority provides orientation to temporal life so pastoral Authority provides orientation to spiritual life. Therefore, having 2 forms of life after regeneration believers now have 2 sources of Authority and thus 2 sources to orient them to this life. The Authority that one rejects with regard to the Pastor Teacher will reflect itself throughout his entire life with the rejection of Authority in all other aspects of his life. It is Arrogance which causes this to occur and thus there is no happiness in life nor blessing in life in this situation. ([Heb 13:17](#), [Heb 13:7](#))

Again, Bible Doctrine is the mind or thinking of The Lord Jesus, The Christ ([1Cor 2:16](#)) with absolute Authority over all believers. The Authority of the Pastor Teacher is related to, derived from and established by his ACCURATE and consistent communication of all aspects of Bible Doctrine. The Local Church becomes analogous to the home and *family* into which one is physically born and now, with the new believer being “born again”, he walks into the Local Church as part of the Royal *Family* of God. Just as there is Authority in the home there must be Authority in the Local Church. Local Church Authority is needed to enable the exercise of one's Freedom in the Christian Way of Life just as the Laws of Divine Establishment Authority is needed to enable the exercise of one's Freedom in temporal life. Rejection of Authority in the Local Church is tantamount to rejection of Authority in the home and means entrance into the Interlocking System of Arrogance through Authority Arrogance, the ‘satanic syndrome’. The believer has the Freedom to find a right Pastor Teacher and to leave any Local Church because the pastor does not teach Bible Doctrine or the pastors personality is so obnoxious or irritating that one is constantly distracted, tormented or offended by it. However, this does mean that under no circumstance should the believer ever criticize the Pastor Teacher whose church he is leaving. The believer must not EVER, FOR ANY REASON, leave a Local Church and criticize the Pastor Teacher whom is being left behind. If one does and persists in being critical of any Pastor Teacher, he will receive maximum TRIPLE COMPOUND Divine Discipline doubled for Authority Arrogance and the believer, most certainly, cannot afford this. Just as the teenager who rejects parental Authority is disciplined all his life so the believer who rejects pastoral Authority spends all his Christian life in misery being disciplined rather than receiving the blessing God has designed him for.

It is some level of Negative Volition to the Bible Doctrine taught by a Pastor Teacher which is a source of dissension and apostasy in a local church. This is usually the result of entanglement in Arrogance and these believers think their [Personal Opinion](#) is more important than anyone else's and as a result they resist or reject Bible Doctrine. Lack of [Authority Orientation](#) and personal involvement in Arrogance causes them to resist the teaching of Bible Doctrine from another human being. This frequently occurs when the Pastor Teacher is in the category of being one's peer or is a younger man teaching older men and women. Anyone who stands before others in teaching any area immediately places many of their audience into [Inordinate Competition](#) with them. It should be understood that the lowest function one can have in this life is to be an actor, whose whole purpose in life is to PRETEND to be someone that he is NOT, and even scrubbing floors is a higher calling than this job. These people entertain by pretending or portraying something or someone which they are not and receive inordinate financial reward for their pretending. These pretenders or ‘fakers’ are applauded for their performances but at times they are not at all entertaining to Arrogant ones who are in fact competing with them. Anyone who stands up in public will have inordinate competition from those who have the inordinate Mental Attitude Arrogance of pride which in many cases is even unknown to themselves. However, when a person represents Authority in any way in life, this is a major challenge to those under that Authority when the authority proclaims something which is not universally agreed with. However, individuals must in all cases remain totally objective and impersonal with regard to Authority. One of the greatest issues in life, under [Impersonal, Unconditional Love](#) as a Functional Virtue, or any other function, is Authority

orientation. People very often get themselves into trouble when there is the some perceived failure of Authority which is over them in some area of general life so that they become a law unto themselves. This is what occurs in the Local Church when [Negative Volition](#) causes Bible Doctrine to be rejected or resisted. Under Authority Arrogance with Inordinate Ambition there is always develops a [Revolutionary](#) group called a ‘mutual admiration society’ so that those who resist Bible Doctrine or Pastoral Authority always look for others who do the same. This results in an amalgamation of malcontent Arrogant people forming their own revolution in life. In whatever area this is found, whether against coach or Pastor Teacher or professor it is always WRONG. It is against the fundamental concept of the [Royal Family Honor Code](#) particularly the principle of Impersonal or Unconditional Love for all Mankind. Impersonal or Unconditional Love is related to Authority Orientation and even if one does not like the person in Authority he must always respect that Authority.

Authority orientation is related to Freedom, the Laws of Divine Establishment, the Divine Institutions and Spiritual Advance from the accumulation of Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul. Believers under Positive Volition toward Bible Doctrine advance to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God through consistent Perception, Cognition, Incultation & Metabolization of Bible Doctrine and cannot maintain their motivation and momentum in the Spiritual Life apart from Authority Orientation. Every human being has an Old Sin Nature, it is the part of the physical makeup of the human body, and it is totally Anti-Authority. As a result of this, there are many ‘lawless’ people in the world due to a combination of [Ignorance](#) and Arrogance. The Arrogant person rejects the Spiritual Authority of the Pastor Teacher in the local church and may be a church tramp constantly moving from one Pastor Teacher to another. To accept the Authority of any Pastor Teacher as communicator of Bible Doctrine is very difficult for many people because of their level of Arrogance involvement. Most people do not have much opportunity to have their Arrogance rewarded as it should be with the pain of suffering and humiliation. Rejection of Authority is just one of the great problems of Arrogance. It is always very difficult for a person in any organization who knows that a policy is wrong and that the Authority responsible for or under that policy is wrong in some way, yet to still subordinate self to it and them when it is part of his job to do so. In reality the ONLY alternative for this person is to quietly leave and move on to another organization or function in life. Many people in the spiritual realm leave a denominational church for this reason and thus desire an independent church. They do well in the independent church until someone or some doctrinal principle from scripture defines their Arrogance and points it out to them at which time they hop to another independent church and repeat this over and over again. When this occurs Authority Orientation is lost. As a result of this trend some of the people with the least capacity for life are fundamentalist Christians who have gained salvation but whose lack of Authority Orientation has destroyed their spiritual growth and therefore their capacity for life. They rationalize that when they think they are right and the pastor is wrong they have a right to overthrow the Authority of that Local Church. One never has the right to overthrow Authority because of some abuse or error on the part of the one in Authority. The fact is that some of the worst people with regard to Authority Orientation are missionaries with reference to the administration of their missionary function when, as a result of their Arrogance, they reject all Authority except their own when

their ego is inflated by their functions in the mission field. Pastor Teachers are not exempt and as long as the Pastor Teacher stays with strict, proper Bible Doctrine teaching he will always recognize that The Lord Jesus, The Christ is in charge and he is a SLAVE. Unfortunately many pastors invariably succumb to Authority Arrogance when they hear that their sermons are great and when they stand at the door of the church and receive complements from the congregation and then they *believe* them.

### **Respect for the Authority of the Pastor Teacher**

If Authority Arrogance or the satanic syndrome can be an issue in the home for a wife or for children becoming critical of their Authority with regard to orientation to life, then, being “born again”, making Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God, and becoming a spiritual baby in the Royal Family of God, introduces another aspect of this problem, Authority Arrogance in the believer. By means of “Regeneration” from God the Holy Spirit at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God or being “born again” through faith alone in The Lord Jesus, The Christ alone, there is introduced a new Authority in the life of this new believer. The new believer becomes a new lump of clay or a new recruit in the army of God starting over in his growth.

Authority Orientation in the spiritual realm is vastly more important than Authority Orientation in the human realm although both are essentials in life. In the spiritual or divine realm lack of Authority Orientation results in direct Divine Discipline from God. In the human realm discipline for disorientation to Authority comes from the function of Law Enforcement and the judicial system in a society, which may or may not function fairly or effectively. The Authority of the Pastor Teacher is limited to his own congregation which is generally in a geographic area but not always. God has provided an umbrella of divine Authority over the mechanics of the Grace Apparatus for Perception in the teaching ministry of God the Holy Spirit which requires the Filling of God the Holy Spirit for Perception, Cognition, Incultation & Metabolization of Bible Doctrine to occur. God has also provided an umbrella of human Authority, under the Laws of Divine Establishment and its Freedom, over the mechanics of the Grace Apparatus for Perception in the function of the Pastor Teacher and disciplined classroom functions for communication of Bible Doctrine. The Royal Family Honor Code demands Authority Orientation as part of its function and recognizes this as what is common sense, good manners, thoughtfulness of others and respect for Bible Doctrine so that inevitably Perception, Cognition, Incultation & Metabolization of Bible Doctrine is related to Authority Orientation.

In the spiritual realm, self promotion by the Pastor Teacher is DEATH to his ministry and indicates Arrogance and lack of the necessary leadership to bring the congregation toward Spiritual Maturity. Leadership MUST come from Bible Doctrine Orientation, Grace Orientation and Occupation with the Person of The Lord Jesus, The Christ for the Pastor Teacher and through his teaching to everyone in his congregation as well. The congregation with Positive Volition toward Bible Doctrine is motivated, by the ACCURACY of the Bible Doctrine taught them, to continue in Perception, Cognition, Incultation, Metabolization and Application of that Doctrine. The Issue is always the content of the Word of God, never self and each person must function under his own Positive Volition for reception of Bible Doctrine. The initial

establishment and maintenance of discipline for the teaching of Bible Doctrine is the foundation of Pastor Teacher leadership. The Leadership Pastor motivates by teaching Bible Doctrine WITHOUT INTERFERING with the privacy or volition of the individual Believer. Once Authority is established in the Local Church from accurate doctrinal teaching, leadership delegates that Authority to gifted individuals for overseeing daily functions in the local church. In contrast, management, in all areas including that of the Pastor Teacher in the Local Church, abuses all Authority and seeks to control everything himself. The function of the leadership Pastor Teacher produces both self motivation and esprit DE corps in the congregation while the function of the management Pastor Teacher produces, [Conspiracy](#), [Disillusion](#), bickering, dissatisfaction, [Legalism](#), [Pride](#) and general lack of integrity. Authority and Freedom must be balanced otherwise, in the Spiritual Life, when there is Freedom without Authority there is Lascivious or Lawless Antinomianism and when there is Authority without Freedom there is Legalistic [Self Righteousness](#) in the believer. This is the believer who thinks he is an Authority to himself and ignores the organizational system for the Church Age where the Pastor Teacher must teach Bible Doctrine because it is not possible for the individual believer to read the bible and get the proper information from it himself.

The believer's Arrogance becomes intensified when the Authority of the communicator of Bible Doctrine along with the message of Bible Doctrine is rejected at the same time. The Authority of one who has the Spiritual gift of Pastor Teacher is tantamount to the Plan of God and rejecting the Authority of even a mousy Pastor Teacher results in immediate entrance into the Interlocking System of Arrogance. Any man who aspires to the ministry of Pastor Teacher must have already made spiritual growth to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God from consistent function under the Grace Apparatus for Perception in order to even recognize that spiritual gift in himself and must not be involved in [Blind Arrogance](#). In order to become and function as a Pastor Teacher in a pulpit of a local church there is also an incredible amount of training which is required today. These men do not have any inherent Authority just from possessing the gift of Pastor Teacher and their Authority only comes when they are called to a local church and then teach Bible Doctrine accurately in that venue. This, as well, is a spiritual gift only for males and is a sovereign decision of God the Holy Spirit and not earned nor deserved and MUST be made effective by engaging in excruciating, intensive training. The DANGER is that once the person completes his training and goes to a local church he may not be able to handle the incredible Authority he has which, in itself, requires a great deal of training and self discipline and avoidance of Blind Arrogance as a destructive system. He must have enough leadership ability to NOT abuse the tremendous Authority vested in him by God as the Pastor Teacher of a local church. Good Leadership ability will keep the Pastor Teacher from both Arrogance and abuse of power which is an occupational hazard for all those in the ministry.

The [Motivational Arrogance](#) of [Mental Attitude Arrogance](#) and the Mental Attitude Sins which reject the Authority of the Pastor Teacher include:

- ✧ [Blind Arrogance](#)
- ✧ [Jealousy](#)
- ✧ Vindictiveness



- Implacability
- [Bitterness](#)
- Hatred
- Antagonism

Verbal sins which reject the Authority of the Pastor Teacher:

- Judging
- Maligning
- Gossiping
- Accusing

Since the double honor of the Pastor Teacher includes receiving respect it is his RESPONSIBILITY to use his Authority to maintain the privacy of the Royal Family of God in his congregation. The Pastor Teacher will occasionally have to function in a very distasteful way in disciplining and even excommunicating believers who fall into the category of opposing his legitimate Authority in the local church. This will be the person who maligns or gossips habitually or who attacks the Pastor Teacher instigating or causing others to revolt against his Authority in the local church. The Pastor Teacher has the Authority to exercise this discipline on those who intrude on the privacy of someone else in the congregation as well. This DOES NOT include parents who are correcting their children for obnoxious or undesirable actions or attitudes. Children do not have a right to privacy under their parents and should be thoroughly supervised when in the assembly of the local church. However, though every Pastor Teacher must be judicious in the exercise of his Authority, he must also be AGGRESSIVE in the:

- Study of Bible Doctrine
- Teaching of Bible Doctrine
- Counter Attack on any type of bullying, gossiping or maligning in the local church.
  - This type of behavior must be cut off immediately and the congregation MUST be protected by the Pastor Teacher from these things.
- Disciplining those who seek to neutralize his Authority by intruding on the privacy of others.

The responsible believer must be reprimanded whenever the Authority of the Pastor Teacher is challenged. These people are NOT to be taken aside and disciplined in private but the situation must be addressed, as a result of what they have caused or may cause, and they must be disciplined in public. Many people think it is not very nice to reprimand someone in front of other people but this is a false bleeding heart liberal concept and the bible clearly states that when the Authority of the Pastor Teacher is challenged he MUST discipline or reprimand the individual in front of everyone present. Being sweet and nice is great when everyone understands the principles of privacy and Authority but when this is not the case SWEETNESS is WEAKNESS to the jackass who challenges the Authority of a leader.

The Authority of the Pastor Teacher is DIRECTLY from God and is a pure Authority apart from the Cosmic Dynasphere systems of Satan. It is to be respected and to have it respected sometimes the Pastor Teacher must get tough with recalcitrant people. The Pastor Teacher must have respect because Bible Doctrine is always controversial and cuts into the believer's

soul like a knife. Doctrine challenges, tears down and rebuilds the believer from his soul outward. It shows him what he truly is, removing all illusions of grandeur and is a direct challenge to any Arrogance he possesses. Arrogance is natural in the Human Race, as a result of man being under the rule of the Arrogant Master, Satan, and having a genetic Old Sin Nature which predisposes him to follow EVIL, the plan and policy of Satan, which has Arrogance as its fundamental base. However, Arrogance is ABNORMAL as far as the Royal Family of God is concerned. It is essential, therefore, for the Pastor Teacher to be given respect in order to communicate Bible Doctrine to the congregation since many times the believer will NOT Like what is being taught when it inevitably strikes deep into his propensity for Arrogance. If a believer listens objectively to a Pastor Teacher and cannot appreciate his teaching then he must simply GO FIND ONE WHOSE TEACHING HE CAN APPRECIATE AND WHOM HE CAN RESPECT, and he MUST go quietly without any fuss or criticism. Therefore, any attack on the Pastor Teacher's Authority on the part of the congregation MUST be met with emphatic, vigorous, aggressive public reprimand. There can be, and often is, an encroachment on the daily function under the Grace Apparatus for Perception of others by a believer in a congregation who is guilty of any aspect of Mental Attitude Arrogance or who maligns or judges others. This is a total violation of the privacy of other believers who are victims of this and public reprimand will work effectively to prevent this.

The gift of Pastor Teacher DEMANDS Moral Courage above and beyond the normal integrity and the courage of life. No Pastor Teacher can protect his congregation and be a coward. Cowardice and Arrogance go together and many people are MORAL cowards because of their Arrogant pride and they would rather be well thought of than RIGHT. This is how mediocrity in the United States became famous and Franklin Roosevelt is the one accomplished this most effectively making mediocrity famous. He would rather have been well thought of than ever thought to be RIGHT. The Arrogant pastor under pressure is a coward and the cowardly pastor MINUS pressure is Arrogant. God has made no provision for Cowards in the Spiritual Gifts especially in the Ministry of the Pastor Teacher. In life, many people are not cowards because they are STUPID. Being stupid and not cowardly they are NOT sensitive to those under their Authority. It is too easy for the stupid person to be unafraid and very often they are too dumb to understand what they should be afraid of. For leadership to be effective one must have a lack of cowardice plus common sense intelligence to know how others feel and not be callous, indifferent or insensitive to the feelings and sensitivities of others under one's Authority. Occasionally the leader will have a case when he has to get tough with someone but this should be very rare. To be stupid with regard to Bible Doctrine is to be dangerous since Bible Doctrine can be explosive when taken out of its proper setting. The Pastor Teacher cannot ever be a bully either, therefore, to balance these positions he must be smart about people as well because when pressure is put on a bully his cowardice invariably shows itself.

Therefore ALL PASTORS must be free from Arrogance and cowardice which are part and counter part. The teaching ministry of the Pastor Teacher is seriously hurt when he is involved in Arrogance, Apostasy and / or Stupidity. No pastor can function when Arrogant or apostate or when he is stupid about Bible Doctrine. In every generation there will be pastors who can be classified in this way. Pastors sin, fail and foul up from time to time, just as anyone else,

but can still do a great job in communication of Bible Doctrine. However, no man can ever function as a Pastor Teacher if he is Arrogant because on the other end of his Arrogance will be cowardice resulting in total malfunction of the level of Authority he has from God over his congregation. The only effective means of avoidance of this status comes through maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in his Stream of Consciousness of the Soul. No one will ever know a Pastor Teacher has cowardice until there is pressure put on his Arrogance. When a pastor does something wrong he simply is wrong and must never become Arrogant about himself and NEVER be cowardly. Unfortunately, one of the greatest problems with men in the ministry is this Arrogance. Arrogance permeates every aspect and function in life and there are a myriad of subtle ways to become involved in Arrogance and the only protection one has from Arrogance is maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul. Unfortunately many men in the ministry NEVER engage in doing their job properly and rarely study bible doctrine in an expository manner. In addition, many men in the ministry as Pastor Teachers are highly critical about people and situations out of SHEAR JEALOUSY.

Therefore, in summary, believers are to be under the Authority and command of their own right Pastor Teacher and comparing Pastor Teachers is a sign of Arrogance and immaturity in the believer. NO ONE EVER HAS A RIGHT TO COMPARE Pastor Teachers EVER. God has provided for every believer a right Pastor Teacher and when the believer finds his, he simply MUST stay under his teaching and never become involved with any other Pastor Teacher. The believer is to become Grace Oriented under the Authority of his own right Pastor Teacher, whoever he is, and the only way to accomplish this is to focus on the accuracy of the teaching of the Bible Doctrine he presents. If this is properly done, THEN and ONLY THEN can God promote the believer and provide for him, his Super – Grace Escrow blessings in time, which, in fact, is the WHOLE PURPOSE of the Christian remaining in this life after Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God.

### Arrogance vs Authority of the Pastor Teacher

The Authority of the communicator of Bible Doctrine and the content of the communication of Bible Doctrine intensifies one's Arrogance when it is resisted. The results are twofold:

- ✧ Acceptance of false doctrine, which is believing the LIE of Evil.
- ✧ Intensification of one's entanglement in the Interlocking System of Arrogance.

The Pastor Teacher must get into a routine and stay in it and when he handles a recalcitrant congregation he must be TOUGH because any sign of being NICE is considered by the average human as weakness. The Pastor Teacher keeps on fighting and hanging tough by his consistent studying and teaching. In the combat of the Angelic Conflict, he must have ABSOLUTE CONFIDENCE in the Living God, The Lord Jesus, The Christ. The true motivation for the Pastor Teacher and for the congregation also MUST be reaching and maintaining Occupation with the Person of The Lord Jesus, The Christ which comes from maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul. There are 2 public functions of the Pastor Teacher:

- ✧ To use his Authority to focus the attention of the congregation on his teaching of Bible Doctrine.
- ✧ To use his Authority to dogmatically and clearly communicate Bible Doctrine.

In teaching Bible Doctrine both effective Authority and proper communication functions are involved. NO Pastor Teacher can teach without Authority and during his teaching, the communication of Bible Doctrine is MONOLOGUE and there is no place for sharing or DIALOGUE. In any given local church the Pastor Teacher is the only one who has the Authority to communicate doctrine therefore his policies and opinions based on Bible Doctrine are the only ones which count. It is blind Arrogance to try to help or try to “straighten out” the Pastor Teacher and his teaching. The believer is in the local church to get what the Pastor Teacher is teaching not vice versa. Every member of the congregation MUST have confidence in the judgment of the Pastor Teacher or they must move on to another local church. However, there always are a great many people in a congregation who are alive ONLY to test other advancing believers and may not ever learn anything from a Pastor Teacher. The objective for the congregation is to get the ‘message’ of Bible Doctrine and they do not have to like any other thing about the Pastor especially his personality. However, in the matter of his professional judgment the believer in the congregation MUST HAVE CONFIDENCE IN THE PASTOR’S ABILITY IN HIS FIELD. In any area of life, if one expects to learn anything from anyone, he must have confidence in the one who is advising or instructing him. Therefore, the Pastor need not ever explain anything he does in any area of his life. For the new Pastor Teacher the difficulty lies in the fact that people often try to disregard, to have contempt for, a leader who is YOUNG (See Napoleon Bonaparte). If the believer cannot respect his Pastor Teacher then he MUST go find one whom he can respect, and this should not be someone whom he ‘likes’ but one with content and organization whom he can RESPECT. The believer must respect the message and have confidence in what the Pastor teaches with regard to Bible Doctrine and if he cannot find this in the local church where he currently is then he should look in other places. Also, older people have a tendency to look down on the Authority of those YOUNGER than they are or even of the same generation, but the Pastor Teacher whether he is young or not must not ever allow himself to be pushed around by the congregation but must exercise his Authority properly for the teaching of Bible Doctrine to occur effectively.

No 2 people have commonality in any area in life, but with regard to BIBLE DOCTRINE the Pastor Teacher must be an example. What the Pastor does when he leaves the pulpit is NO DAMNED BUSINESS OF ANYONE IN THE CONGREGATION. What the Pastor does when behind the pulpit is totally the business of the congregation. What the Pastor wears, does, thinks, drives, lives in and says is between HIM and the Lord and this is the same as for every believer. The Pastor Teacher, like the members of his congregation, must have a certain

amount of privacy in his life. For him to be an example the Pastor should be a pattern ONLY with reference to the Bible Doctrine he teaches. No believer should ever try to pattern his lifestyle after the lifestyle of his Pastor. The Pastor must lead the advance of the congregation in their function under the Grace Apparatus for Perception, [Operation Z](#), having the greatest possible inner resources of Bible Doctrine as a result of his own diligent and sacrificial study of Bible Doctrine. However, the Pastor Teacher should not, because of this, ever become a counselor. When the Pastor becomes a believer's counselor he then begins to LEAD and LIVE that believer's life for him. When the Pastor makes judgment calls for people this is wrong and in fact part of EVIL and totally out of line with the proper function of the pastor. As a member of the Royal Family of God the believer in The Lord Jesus, The Christ does not need counseling by anyone but does need Bible Doctrine. If he is unsure about a principle of Bible Doctrine then he should persist in diligent study and depend on his inner resources of Bible Doctrine and the guidance of God the Holy Spirit in order to make proper decisions. This is how the believer builds up spiritual strength, through listening to the authoritative dogmatic teaching of Bible Doctrine, in order to establish the inner command post and dictator of his own soul. As a result, all the counseling he will ever need will come from the Metabolized Bible Doctrine resident in his own soul. When the believer answers his own questions from Metabolized Bible Doctrine in his Stream of Consciousness of the Soul he is 1000% ahead. "Purity of mind" which only comes through Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul means that Bible Doctrine is to be the motivator of the Pastor just as it is for all members of the Royal Family of God. Through this "purity of mind" from Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul the Pastor Teacher establishes his Authority in the Local Church without abusing his Authority or bullying.

The new Pastor Teacher is susceptible to abusing his Authority just like any other person in Authority and could thereby fall into:

- ✧ Blind Arrogance
- ✧ [Approbation Lust](#)
- ✧ [Inordinate Ambition](#)
- ✧ Writing technical books without enough doctrinal background
- ✧ Starting Doctrinal Tape ministries without enough doctrinal background

Most Pastor Teachers today want to start at the top with the publishing of books and accumulating tape ministries and thereby become great in the public eye but they are not students of the word of God by any stretch of the imagination. The Pastor Teacher does not truly become a student of the word of God until about 10 or 15 years of study time has passed. The new pastors who engage in these things lead with their ambition and lust for approbation and inevitably this is what destroys them. No Pastor Teacher can properly exercise Authority over the congregation without Metabolized Bible Doctrine in his Stream of Consciousness of the Soul producing purity of motivation which completely neutralizes Mental Attitude Arrogance especially [Pride](#), Ambition, [Jealousy](#), Vindictiveness, Pettiness, Implacability, and Academic Dishonesty.

No one can properly use Authority until he has been under unfair Authority and this is what is



wrong with many Pastor Teachers today who have never had to endure unfair or obnoxious Authority by being under the unfair Authority of others. Most of these men simply don't know what they are doing and are under [Blind Arrogance](#). No one learns discipline OVERNIGHT and the person who actually learns discipline must be UNDER discipline for some time in order to know both ends of Authority, in order to balance it out and use Authority properly. Therefore, NO Pastor Teacher or any teacher for that matter, ever uses discipline or Authority properly unless he has been on the end of the strongest discipline possible. Therefore, the most practical training for the Pastor Teacher includes Strict Academic Training to a very high level, Law Enforcement training, Athletic Training and especially Military Training. In the early church any given Pastor Teacher trained the men in his congregation for the ministry of Pastor Teacher but today there are levels of higher education for training Pastor Teachers. The Pastor Teacher must be the man who can go into a business or other employment situation and respects the Authority of management even if they are not highly competent. Most people want an easy way in their life but this is not what occurs when there is proper Authority or discipline orientation. Good manners are a sign of the understanding of general concepts of Authority and of having capacity in life which MUST be related to Authority. Therefore as part of the training and preparation of the Pastor Teacher he MUST learn what Authority is all about.

In the training of the Pastor Teacher there is very often some Academic Seminary needed. However, not in every case, but there must always be intensive concentration on Bible Doctrine and spiritual growth from some Pastor Teacher who can accurately communicate Bible Doctrine. This is not as prevalent today as in the past. In higher education the college or seminary may have rules which MUST be obeyed if the person wants to matriculate there and the candidate does not have to like or agree with the rules but they do have to be OBEYED. Unfortunately, today in most institutions of higher education, the faculty and administration too often cater to the students when they absolutely should not. No student in any institution HAS ANY RIGHTS, THEY ARE THERE TO LEARN AND NOT TO TALK BACK OR COMPLAIN ABOUT HOW THINGS ARE RUN. Trying to get around the rules demonstrates that a person is a SNEAK and has no knowledge of discipline and will never function properly in administering discipline and using Authority. A great part of the training of the Pastor Teacher is discipline so that once he starts something he must finish it unless he is involuntarily removed from the program. Therefore, in effect, the most disciplined person in any organization especially the Local Church must be the one who has the MOST Authority.

Authority Arrogance related to the Pastor Teacher of the Local Church and rejection of his Authority distracts believers from effective Post Salvation Epistemological Rehabilitation. As a result the message from Bible Doctrine which is so very vital to the nation and the individual in the Royal Family of God under this type of Arrogance results in a major tragedy producing the failing of the nation. Many scriptures WARN against undermining the Authority of Bible Doctrine and the Pastor Teacher. [Is 54:17](#) explains that the Pastor Teacher who does his job properly is protected from all attacks while believers are told in [Heb 13:17](#) to KEEP ON obeying those Pastor Teachers who teach Bible Doctrine accurately. The believer is admonished to LISTEN to and ASSIMILATE the Bible Doctrine their chosen Pastor Teacher is teaching. The

Pastor Teacher gets his Authority from the spiritual gift, the proper preparation and the calling from a congregation where his Authority is based on the proper teaching of the Bible Doctrine he presents to them. It is inevitable that some believer in the congregation will become dissatisfied and disenchanted with a specific pastor's ministry. When this results from some aspect of a fragmented life as a result of entanglement in the Interlocking System of Arrogance, this believer will suffer under the law of volitional responsibility AND Divine Discipline. If the fault lies with the Pastor Teacher COUNT ON IT, God will punish him. There is a strong analogy between the function of Divine Institution #3 Family, and the Local Church:

	<u>Family</u>	<u>Local Church</u>
<b>Authority</b>	Parents	Pastor Teacher
<b>Blessing</b>	Accepting Parental Authority	Acceptance of the Pastor Teacher Authority Positive Volition toward Bible Doctrine
	<i>Adhering to these levels of Authority will result in blessing for one's entire lifetime</i>	
<b>Cursing</b>	Rejection of Parental Authority	Rejection of Pastor Teacher Authority Negative Volition toward Bible Doctrine
	<i>This results in cursing or misery for one's entire life but can be overcome by reverting to acceptance of the Authority of the Pastor Teacher and executing the Protocol Plan of God.</i>	

Just as the child who rejects the Authority of his parents will have incredible misery for his entire life so the believer who continuously rejects the Authority of his Pastor Teacher will spend his entire life on this earth under Divine Discipline and Self Induced Misery. The believer must never compound the problem of dissatisfaction with any Pastor Teacher by engaging in some aspect of Arrogance which inevitably will fragment his life. Therefore the most advantageous course of action for the dissatisfied believer is to LEAVE that Local Church quietly without hurting himself or the Pastor Teacher. Never criticize the Pastor Teacher and always leave his punishment in the hands of the Lord. Criticizing, Maligning or Judging any Pastor Teacher for any reason results in incredible Divine Discipline because the Pastor Teacher gets double discipline for his failures thus the critical believer will get Triple Compound Divine Discipline TIMES 2 thus Divine Discipline to the 6<sup>th</sup> power. Criticizing a Pastor Teacher may be accurate or blasphemous but there is not enough time in life to warrant any reaction to any Pastor Teacher and pulling the pin in one's own Arrogance grenade and fragmenting one's own life. Always remember the believer who reacts to a Pastor Teacher and leaves a Local Church TAKES HIS FRAGMENTED LIFE WITH HIM TO THE NEXT CHURCH. Authority Arrogance will ONLY destroy the one involved with it especially when it is directed toward the Pastor Teacher of a Local Church.

There is no such thing as a plurality of elders in any local church and even attempting to institute this is Arrogance. There is no differentiation of teaching elders vs administrative elders for any Local Church. This is a LIE from EVIL involving Arrogance and is a revolutionary attack on the Authority of the Pastor Teacher along with Inordinate Competition,

resistance to Bible Doctrine and rejection of delegated Authority from God. Believers who follow this have no concept of Authority in the Local Church and, as a result, fall deeply under the Influence of Evil. There is ONLY 1 “elder” in any congregation and this term is in fact a designation of Authority. The idea of plurality of elders is a false doctrine involving Arrogance and convenience, being a justification from Evil for bringing about dissension and ultimately revolt in the Local Church. This concept is an [Inflexibility](#) in the non-essentials, distortion of priorities and flagrant violation of the [Royal Family Honor Code](#).

The believer who expresses his Positive Volition by listening to several Pastor Teachers at one time is engaging in, at the very best, A DANGEROUS ENDEAVOR. Plurality of Pastor Teachers is not a good decision nor an authorized option for the advancing believer. Plurality of Pastor Teachers is not a substitute to finding a Pastor Teacher who teaches solid doctrine under whom one can grow. Personal Arrogance is the usual result from listening to several pastors since the LISTENER will INEVITABLY have to make decisions about doctrinal principles to decide who is correct if and when there are any discrepancies or contradictions in the teaching. Humility is critical in this area and the believer must find a Pastor Teacher and stick with him. A believer cannot submit to the Authority of 2 Pastor Teachers at the same time and this results in Authority disorientation and thus the believer himself becomes the arbiter of his doctrinal intake. If there is confusion from the teaching of 2 Pastor Teachers then the decision as to whom is correct will distract the believer from his spiritual growth and can even totally stall it. Listening to multiple Pastor Teachers becomes an issue of Authority orientation and Bible Doctrine accuracy. This becomes a primary problem in the Spiritual Life when the believer takes from each Pastor Teacher only what the believer himself decides is accurate.

The Pastor Teacher must not ever allow his own antagonism, Arrogance or stubbornness to cause him to become prejudiced or unfair and fail in his [Grace Orientation](#) in any situation. There must be total objectivity on the part of the Pastor Teacher, therefore, it is impossible for the Pastor to function day in and day out without Grace Orientation. Under Grace Orientation he must be fair, stick with facts, ignore his prejudices and his personal feelings never allowing them to destroy his fairness. The Pastor Teacher must not be easily angered for anger is [Mental Attitude Arrogance](#) and a Mental Attitude Sin. He must maintain a Relaxed Mental Attitude and even if the Pastor Teacher becomes angry his recovery must be just as quick as the reaction which resulted in his being angry. Therefore, the Pastor Teacher must use the [Rebound Procedure](#) quickly and consistently, as an IRF, after any sin. The Pastor must not be prone to addiction to alcohol, drugs or any other form of sublimation. Although this does not prohibit drinking for either the Pastor or the congregation it does mean that he should not engage in drinking to the point of drunkenness. The concept is that the Pastor should not be using anything outside of the Spiritual Life for sublimation. His being in a position of leadership in the local church and the Christian Way of Life demands he be [Sharing the Happiness of God](#) rather than seeking overt stimulation. There is a proper prayer for those in Authority under recognition of that Authority and orientation to it which is commanded of every believer. (1Tim 2:1-2) Therefore believers are to Pray for those in Authority so that the believer may lead a tranquil life.

## **Arrogance Destroying Authority**

Arrogance and Authority cannot ever coexist and when Arrogance crowds Authority it destroys that person in whatever Authority area they have. Every person who has Authority must learn to rely on his own judgment or be able to discern good advice from bad and evaluate the advice without subjectivity or any Arrogance involvement. He must have enough [Humility](#) to see good advice and take it and recognize bad advice and ignore it, and it should not ever matter from whom advice comes. He must have capacity for the Authority which he has because he must set policy or at least enforce it and see that it is carried out for the organization he is in. He always needs to know the facts of any situation and must never make decisions without facts. If he is humble he will accept good advice founded in facts and take action based on it. If he is Arrogant he will reject that same good advice because of some subjective thing he does not like about the ONE GIVING THE ADVICE. Good advice very often comes from strange places and one must never allow Arrogance to hinder taking good advice. Good advice is always given by Bible Doctrine but Arrogance is always blind to it and always takes the bait of any [Jealous](#) innuendo.

Arrogance produces the soul hangup of having to constantly prove oneself and this is why all military officers start as 2<sup>nd</sup> Lieutenants, to avoid Arrogance and develop Humility. Very often these young inexperienced men, instead of being teachable by ranking commanders and good non commissioned officers, take the stand of not needing advice from anyone. Thus, Arrogance always makes the person who possesses it very uncomfortable and miserable as a result of his thinking he always has to prove himself. When one enters into an organization having been given Authority he needs to FIRST learn how the organization is set up and runs and not jump in and change things. There are many people who cannot handle having Authority and with it they become instant monsters and bullies and this is the Arrogance of trying to prove something. Arrogance is one of, if not the single most destructive influence in the life, and can be extremely [Impulsive](#); while good leadership sits back observes, considers and waits for the right time to make changes. If it is possible that one can wait long enough, those in any organization involved in any conspiracy will very often crucify themselves. Arrogance and leadership are mutually exclusive and when they combine all Authority will be lost. The level of Authority one has will be inverse to the level of Arrogance he has. In other words, the percentage of Arrogance in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul will destroy that percentage of Authority one has.

The Chain of command in any organization is a 2 way street and the higher one goes in command or executive functions the more he must have an executive secretary or assistant so that everything which is to come to him either goes through the secretary, assistant or vice president but not to the president or chairman of the board directly. When one functions this way in organizations he has good administration but when the chain of command is destroyed there will always be poor administration. Chain of command is a filter to keep bad ideas from reaching the top and allowing things which should be handled at a lower echelon to be handled there. Those in a progressing chain of command MUST have orientation to both the Authority above them and the policy to which all are supposed to be supporting. Arrogance when present at lower levels in the chain of command will often prevent valid, good advice

and ideas from reaching the one in charge. This highlights the necessity for choosing assistants under one with integrity and loyalty to the organization, its policies and the one above them in authority. Considering this concept then the president of an organization does not help load cargo nor directly receive complaints whether they are legitimate or idiotic. Life in all organizations MUST include chain of command and this is one of the most important functions in the principle of organization and administration and today it is completely ignored. Unskilled workers feel entitled today to take their complaints directly to the chief executive officer. Students at university level feel entitled to approach the president of the university with their complaints. When this is prevented they form into groups or “unions” in order to pressure the administrators of an organization to hear their complaints directly. On the other hand when a person in higher Authority runs around in an organization trying to do everything himself he is trying to prove to the workers he is one of them and is in reality a very poor leader. Chain of command is also a spiritual factor of life in addition to being a good business and leadership principle. People who jump the chain of command or divert its proper function are Arrogant, feeling that they are, or what they think is, more important than anyone or anything else. In this process they destroy the Authority of any effective administration and its leadership. They suffer from Arrogance and have an inability to orient to life, not being able to accept Authority. Having a lack of Authority Orientation added to their Arrogance will bring a miserable life to these people. Therefore, when a person is raised under permissiveness in their family they will fail to orient to any Authority in life. When the principle of withholding discipline is generally excepted in a society the children end up in jail because of their lack of respect for any Authority, and the Jails do not impose any suitable punishment for the rejection of the authority of Common Law.

### **Arrogance vs Responsibility**

One of the great dangers of life is the Arrogance factor causing one to assume a level of responsibility for which he does not have the capacity nor ability. In business, the military, education etc., all the systems in the organizations in society today force people to try to accept responsibility beyond their ability to cope with that level of Authority. Many people may want to be president or head of something and should possibly have more Authority than they currently have because they could do a better job than the one who is carrying the responsibility and facing the pressure ineffectively. However, one must always beware of Arrogance leading him into a false position since not everyone has capacity for command or leadership which along with its authority entails accepting great responsibility over a larger group of people. When a man is in a leadership position who can think and is calm under pressure and has sagacity and wisdom and he has respect for any Authority anywhere wherever he sees it; there is no Arrogance in this man. One cannot ever be a great leader and have Arrogance and those ones must respect Authority wherever it is found.

### **Arrogance vs Orientation to Life**

Failure to orient to the Christian Way of Life in effect is the pattern of people who cannot orient to life in general. There are many of these who will never, ever, have any capacity for life nor be able to orient to life and will not ever have any success in life. Their problem is always the same, they cannot accept Authority which is the basis for all Freedom. The



principle of 'live and let live' alludes them and cannot even be operative without Authority. Authority must exist in all levels of life in order to protect the Human Race from self destruction because Authority protects Freedom. There MUST be Parental, Civil, Academic, Spiritual, and many other areas of Authority in life. When people, without Authority or the position of Authority, think they ARE the only Authority and think they have learned something which makes them superior to others, their rejection of duly constituted legitimate Authority causes them to totally lose out in life. The woman who rejects the Authority of her husband will become disoriented to life and be a miserable creature and once this pattern is set in her soul she will reject all Authority in life. Rejecting the Authority of the boss on the job sets a pattern for the man who does so and as a result he also loses out in life. The athlete who rejects the coaches Authority sets a pattern where he rejects all Authority in life. In the United States of America, especially since the 60s, the people have been and continue to be a people who reject all Authority totally lacking any Authority orientation. Consequently it will not take much to trigger far reaching overwhelming anarchy and revolution which would totally destroy the remaining Freedom Americans enjoy and have enjoyed throughout the history of this nation.

Authority in Education is designed to develop ENFORCED HUMILITY from ENFORCED DISCIPLINE which will stimulates SELF DISCIPLINE and result in GENUINE HUMILITY which provides TEACHABILITY and begins the development of Virtue in the individual's life. Management in any organization is a principle of Authority and organization and some management is bad and invariably will destroy an organization but good management will bring an organization up and provide prosperity for everyone in the organization. However, whether it is good or bad management and whether they have wronged the individual employee in any way is NOT EVER the issue because the issue is that the individual CAN NEVER allow himself to become anti-authoritarian because of having had bad management over him at some point in life. This abuse of Authority must never be allowed to fragment one's own life by his becoming involved in the Interlocking System of Arrogance. The development of Bitterness because of having been treated unfairly by some level of management (real or imagined) will cause fragmentation of one's life with entrance into the Interlocking System of Arrogance, Cosmic Dynasphere I. Management, like all Authority, is a good principle and the fact that people enter into function under these principles and violate the proper functions therein does not invalidate the principles and when one reacts to management failures THAT ONE IS WRONG. The only person who is hurt by reacting to improper function of Authority is the one reacting when he fragments his own life.

When one rejects Authority in one place or situation in life he will reject it in many other places. It is his privilege to accept or reject Authority where it exists but if he tries to destroy the Authority figure he will ultimately reject Authority in all areas of life and Arrogance will rise up to destroy him. When there are enough people who reject and do not respect the Authority of a judicial system and Law Enforcement the tragic result is that this Authority disappears. As a result, in all areas in Law Enforcement, Military function, Church, Business, Education and Home the people in the United States of America rejecting these areas of Authority, have been and continue to be destroying what little Freedom still remains and as a

result this nation in the process. One of the signs of rejection of Authority is in the young people who turn to drugs which divorce them from the reality of their existence. This began in earnest in the 1960s but is dramatically worse today. Drugs are a chemical destroyer of the both the body as well as the soul. When one loses Authority Orientation it destroys one of the most beautiful systems of hindering untrammelled Arrogance with the result that he will have major hangups in his soul. Once a person orients to and accepts the fact that there is always some Authority over him, it helps to knock out some of his Arrogance and the individual minus Arrogance can then properly exercise whatever Authority he possesses. Many people have too much Arrogance to ever exercise Authority at all because Arrogance cannot ever exercise Authority properly. In addition, most people cannot distinguish between confidence and Arrogance in others and many great military, business and government LEADERS were and are NOT Arrogant at all but simply totally self confident. Some examples include, MacArthur, Patton, Eisenhower, Jackson, Lee, and possibly Mr. Trump.

Authority Arrogance also destroys command structure in any organization including the military, business and education and thus destroys the organization and its ability to function properly to protect Freedom. One major thing which has destroyed command structure in the United States Military is the intrusion into the military system of an erroneous system of promotion and control and oversight by civilians. This replaced the system where an officer or NCO could legitimately and satisfactorily be in the same organization AT THE SAME RANK in the military for his whole career. When an officer is doing a good job at his rank and in his organization at whatever level, HE USED TO BE AND SHOULD BE LEFT ALONE THERE and compensated for his successes. The “new” system of OER (Officer Efficiency Rating) demands that officers must advance but to get ahead the officer has to be a genius or he must cheat. This system removed the necessity of officers to be constantly thinking about the men under them for whom they were responsible but only considered how an officer would look good on paper thought he inevitably was neglecting his troops. Another reason for the degradation of our military is the intrusion of civilian influence on military functions by civilian government especially during the prosecution of War, all of this destroying Authority in the process.

### **Arrogance, Impudence & God**

Obviously, one cannot be impudent with God and get away with it and, in addition, in life one cannot ever be impudent with any form of Authority and get away with it. People often appear to get away with being impudent but this is simply feeding one's Arrogance since they are, in fact, destroying the system designed and set in place for their own blessing, prosperity and any future they might potentially have. People most often over estimate the value of what they are doing or have done in life instead of correctly evaluating the importance of the Bible Doctrine they are or should be learning. When involved in Arrogance people don't know who or what they really are and as a result they don't have a clue as to who or what God is and they will answer back, contradict and are generally impudent to God and this is Dangerous BLASPHEME. The Arrogant Legalistic person always overestimates self and underestimates God and any time a person underestimates God they always overestimate self. This is how Arrogance was born, this is what Lucifer did in wanting to “Be like the most High” and also what Ishah did in the garden wanting to be “as smart as God, knowing Good and Evil”, but,

in reality, the creature has no right to challenge or compare himself to the creator.

It is inevitable when Arrogance is too great in angels or man that there is no respect for Authority even that of God. When a person becomes so Arrogant from [Negative Volition](#) and the resultant Scar Tissue of the Soul in [Reversionism](#) he becomes divorced from reality which inevitably means his rejection of Authority. When, in man, [Scar Tissue of the Soul](#) builds up, Arrogance increases, and when Arrogance increases there is overwhelming rejection of Authority even that of Elohim, GOD. It becomes very easy to see how the Interlocking System of Arrogance and the degrading Spiritual Life processes of Reversionism interact and interlock beginning with Negative Volition toward Bible Doctrine. Arrogance in the soul develops in proportion to the levels of [Blackout](#) and Scar Tissue in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul as the individual rejects Bible Doctrine and assimilates more and more of the principles of Evil. This is why the military should always start with very tough discipline like they did in the past and why the student in any educational setting should have no rights or privileges whatsoever and why when one starts in any endeavor in life he MUST start at the bottom and must learn Authority and work his way up in a system of Authority. When one starts at the bottom he cannot give orders to anyone and as a result he is learning Authority orientation. Especially in the Spiritual Life where without Authority he cannot grow to reach Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God the actual objective of the Spiritual Life.

### **[Rejection of Authority & National Destruction](#)**

Rejection of Authority is the first sign of national degeneration and disintegration. This was the reason for the Jewish ‘Teen Age Law’ where incorrigible teens were taken to court and if their unrelenting incorrigibility was proven by the parents the judge would sentence the teen to death. The death of these teen aged youth would avoid the problem of rejection of Authority later in life and ultimate destruction of the nation. When a nation is composed of impudent people it will inevitably destroy itself. The rise of the toleration of Evil in many forms including homosexuality, transgenderism and giving special ‘rights’ to these degenerate individuals and criminals, is not something which comes instantly into being but it starts by rejection of Authority regarding first normal functions and ends up with abnormal ideas and functions. You never start disintegration in a nation with the abnormal and when that finally occurs it is merely a manifestation of an earlier rejection of legitimate principles and Authority.

In the United States of America the Interlocking System of Arrogance has spread into a national disease today as is demonstrated in the distortion of authority in all aspects of American lives. It is part of or motivated by Mental Attitude Arrogance to malign, judge, gossip about others. Whining and [Complaining](#) is Arrogance and those who whine about all their problems and think others care about what ails them are truly Arrogant. [Humility](#) accepts the authority of the Pastor Teacher in order to learn Bible Doctrine while Arrogance resists both the teacher and the doctrine. Legitimate authority in education enforces humility for perception and the best academic professors are always those who have good content in their instruction and also demanded respect in the classroom. God the Holy Spirit must be able to control the believer through consistent Filling because this is spiritual enforced humility. If one persists long enough under the [Filling of God the Holy Spirit](#) then his Arrogant self will be suppressed since

the Filling of God the Holy Spirit is as much enforced humility as a drill sergeant standing face to face with a recruit and berating and bracing him.

People who reject the Authority of the police, teachers, bosses, parents, etc., are often led into the Interlocking System of Arrogance without having [Scar Tissue of the Soul](#). The result of this Arrogance involvement is accepting false doctrine or believing the LIE of Evil under strong delusion. In the national entity no matter how great the government there will always be those who are discontented, even with almost perfect government. When government is bad the smart people are discontented but when government is good and people are discontented, they are generally the stupid people. There is an ongoing clear demonstration of this in the United States of America with acceptance of the Obama and Biden administrations and rejection of the Trump administration in the 21<sup>st</sup> century. There are always going to be malcontents who reject any and all Authority in human government. If government is excellent and Authority is properly used then it is the Evil [Reversionist](#) who objects to it and there are always reversionists in any land or group thus always someone who will complain. Beware of the government or corporate organization devoid of complaints because there are neither stupid nor smart people there and the people are actually nothing. This is why there must be policy, Authority and discipline at all levels, from the divine institution of marriage to the most complex corporation in free enterprise and also in all government without regard to its form in the historical entity called a nation. [Ps 69:22-23](#) is referring to reversionistic believers and unbelievers who plotted revolution against David and it mentions the pleasant things in life such as the routine things like having food on the table etc., referring to a secure life. This is an Imprecatory Prayer from David and the snare in this prayer has to do with the fact that reversionists and those who are influenced by Evil MUST BE PUNISHED and he is asking God that when these people are in prosperity that it become a trap for them. The only way for this country, the United States of America, to function properly on the world stage is by having Authority Orientation including an ORGANIZED PROFESSIONAL Military and Law Enforcement system with a proper attitude and function along with honor and integrity in proper judicial functions in execution of the law and not interpretation of it. The main problem is that Americans today do not submit to Authority and are therefore not oriented to LIFE at all.

All Authority is useless without the volitional consent of the individuals under it and human acceptance of Authority is too often nonexistent because of involvement in the Interlocking System of Arrogance. Individuals under Authority Arrogance who reject Authority do so with devastating results which causes:

- ✧ Crime
- ✧ Violence
- ✧ Slavery
- ✧ Terrorism
- ✧ Tyranny
- ✧ Revolution
- ✧ ETC.

The only possible way to stabilize a nation under the Laws of Divine Establishment is for it to have a stable backbone. This is the key to human function and that key is Authority.

Authority Arrogance is the enemy of the Freedom needed for uncoerced volitional choice, privacy, property and unregulated LIFE. Privacy is destroyed through the Arrogant involvement in gossip, maligning, judging, bitterness, all Mental Attitude Sins and Mental Attitude Arrogance. This Arrogance is blatantly visible today in the 4<sup>th</sup> estate, the MEDIA, which has been propagandizing and controlling what people hear and see in order to manipulate them into false actions and the acceptance of EVIL and its Human Good production. The media starting UNTRUE rumors is a sign of degeneracy and the result is the fragmentation of the lives of those who function in the media who are involved in these processes who only desire power and stimulation for their approbation lust. Freedom under the 1<sup>st</sup> and 2<sup>nd</sup> amendments is very important but NO ONE has any right to gossip, slander, malign with untruths and those in the 4<sup>th</sup> estate, the media, in all aspects of entertainment and news reporting MUST HAVE INTEGRITY AND BE RESPONSIBLE FOR FOLLOWING the Laws of Divine Establishment and the Divine Institutions and today they are not. This is a tragic usurpation of Authority and thus a destruction of all aspects of American Freedom. In addition Freedom is also destroyed through the individual's and nation's malfunction under the Divine Institutions. This is the true Evil basis for and nature of homosexuality, transgenderism and homosexual marriage because it destroys the principles and functions of the Divine Institutions. This is all an Arrogant attack against Authority so that the principle becomes obvious, that Freedom without Authority is Anarchy but Authority without Freedom is TYRANNY.

Authority Arrogance results in the destruction of Freedom through crime with the “pushing” of individuals into drug addiction. Drug addiction is MURDER of the soul and destroys the ability of a person to use his volition. It takes away a persons sense of responsibility and destroys the proper use of his volition. Communist domination techniques involve their attempt to saturate their enemies with illicit drug use and is blatantly obvious in the United States of America in the 21<sup>st</sup> century. Drug addiction, violence, [Crusader Arrogance](#), the attempts under [Self Righteous Arrogance](#) of the individual trying to superimpose their will on others in activism is all interlocked with Authority Arrogance. This is clearly demonstrated in the destruction of Free Enterprise where the government seeks to destroy capitalism with redistribution of wealth by STEALING the money from the rich and giving it to the useless scum poor. Inevitably this results in everyone becoming poor as those who work hard to prosper see the futility of doing so and stop. It is the rich under capitalism which makes it possible for prosperity to exist in a nation as it once did in the United States of America.

At Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God new believers enter into a new and special situation requiring growth which is the reason in scripture they are called children or infants. All initial Authority in life can be related to childhood. It is by means of intrinsic Arrogance that legitimate Authority from God is rejected resulting in disorientation to life. The most basic authorized, delegated, legitimate Authority from God is parental in the home. Rejection of this Authority is disorientation to life and entrance into the Interlocking System of Arrogance and this inevitably results in serious maladjustments in life. This easily and invariably results during times of national degeneration when there are excesses involving Freedom and the abuse of Freedom involving illicit use of drugs, illicit sex, etc. It is the SPIRITUAL malady which results in national degeneration and both individual and collective Divine Discipline punishment



from God. The only way a nation in this state can be preserved when this degeneracy reaches a saturation point is that the pot containing their sublimation system has to be broken and remolded. In order to preserve the nation when this rejection of Authority is locked in and generalized in many of the people, these people must die in mass.

Any person with great Authority allegedly has great power such as a President, General Officer, or Department of State head, etc., but the extent to which the one possessing the Authority is influenced and advised by others to that extent he is weak. In the United States of America people are elected to government positions and Authority but the people who often are elected are not the ones with the power and Authority. The ones with the real Authority and power are the ones who advise and influence these elected officials persuading them, making decision for them and totally directing their functions. As a result the elected people, in positions of supposed power, become very weak as a result of being influenced by flattery from those under them who advise them. These individuals are weak because they have believed the LIE of Evil and are then subjected to flattery, to which they succumb. As a result of believing the Lie and rejecting Absolute Truths they are Arrogant and very open to this flattery. Unfortunately, there are always influence peddlers of all kinds surrounding the person in charge who is supposed to have the Authority but in reality it is these peddlers who actually have the power not the elected person. Any person with Authority must be very careful that he uses his Authority properly and that he is not erroneously influenced by friends, pseudo friends and those whose personalities attract him and whose compliments he enjoys. If one believes any LIE from Evil, any part of the plan and policy of Evil and its production of “good” devised by Satan, he is very weak no matter how talented or brilliant he might be. Believing the LIE and having [Scar Tissue of the Soul](#) added to Arrogance takes the most talented people who ever live and destroys them and the system they are functioning in. Julius Caesar was one who survived this but later he died in a weak moment of emotion and trust under the influence of the Senate of Rome. None of us can survive believing the LIE of Evil because even truly great people have fallen as a result of it. Jews had Authority as client nation to God and were elected to privilege and by application, their election comes to the believer in the Royal Family of God in this Church Age. Believers do not have the secular Authority of the President of the United States of America nor of the Senate, Congress, a Governor or even a Mayor but they do have the greatest Authority in this world today. This is privilege under the doctrine of election and the Authority and power to change Human History which is vested in the Righteousness of God imputed to all believers at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God. This Absolute Righteousness from God gives the potential Authority, power and privilege to change history by the INDIVIDUAL Believer accumulating a maximum level of Metabolized Bible Doctrine into his Stream of Consciousness of the Soul. By his reaching Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God he receives the blessings and status of the Invisible Hero. However, if the believer is distracted from the Absolute Truth of Bible Doctrine then 2 things will happen:

- He will build Scar Tissue of the Soul from degrading his Spiritual Life in Reversionism and become entangled in the Arrogance complex.
- Between Scar Tissue of the Soul and Arrogance he will always believe the LIE from Evil and thus will be distracted from the Protocol Plan of God and will not use his personal Authority to advance to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God thus failing to

contribute to the pivot and fail in assisting the deliverance of his nation.

Anyone can be distracted by flattery, discouragement, crusading, reform, dynamic personalities and getting one's eyes or focus on material things, other people or self. If, however, one is consistent in Perception, Cognition, Incultation & Metabolization of Bible Doctrine he may fail occasionally but he will ultimately use his prerogatives and Authority properly to reach Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God. The believer has Authority but it is not to dictate policy to the world and overtly change things or pass laws. This has already been done by those believing the LIE who pass laws which hinder business, attempt to take personal protection from citizens, prevent profits in business, destroy the military, obfuscate Law Enforcement and judicial functions, create big government and shrink the importance of people and free enterprise business. Under the doctrine of Election by being professional, the believer having this Authority and power of decision as Royal Family of God, must be sure he avoids the distortion of this power which comes from distraction, Arrogance, believing the LIE or joining crusades to help mankind. IF he fails to use his Authority and power properly in the Plan of God he becomes like a weak ruler who is influenced erroneously and does not wield effectively the Authority he should possess. In this failing he will drag his nation to its own destruction.

THE BELIEVER MUST GUARD HIS PRIVILEGE CAREFULLY BY NEVER QUITTING AND NEVER ALLOWING ANYTHING TO DISTRACT HIM FROM HIS Post Salvation Epistemological Rehabilitation from consistent Perception, Cognition, Incultation & Metabolization of Bible Doctrine. No one is perfect and all believers will fail because the Old Sin Nature does not diminish in its functions with age or time in grade in the Christian Way of Life. In addition every believer is continuously vulnerable and susceptible to the intrusion of Arrogance into his life. There are so very many ways in which one can become Arrogant with some being obvious and some not, and any involvement in the Interlocking System of Arrogance will ultimately destroy the Authority the believer possess as Royal Family of God. Being distracted from Bible Doctrine is tantamount to being unprofessional and when the believer abuses his Authority or is distracted by the LIE from Evil, his Authority can stimulate his involvement in Arrogance and this is what will ultimately destroy him. The greatest men in history have failed in this way including Moses, Elijah, David, Paul, and many others so the individual believer cannot ever think that he cannot or will not fail at some point. Once the Arrogance complex is established in one's soul, no matter what one's talent or ability may be, it falls by the wayside and Arrogance becomes the base of function to launch into either [Self Pity](#) or Self Righteousness inevitably fusing these 2 into a [Guilt Complex](#). Most People do most things based on a guilt complex and try to make up to God or other people for their failings. Some are embarrassed by having wealth and many are ashamed to dress in such a way so as to show their wealth. This is one thing which will destroy any believer. Many truly great businessmen become liberal or communist because they have a guilt complex from a degrading down through the stages of Reversionism to [Black out of the Soul](#) and [Scar Tissue of the Soul](#) and their Arrogance combines with these to produce extremely deleterious results in their Spiritual or secular Life.

### **Weak Believers, Emotion & Authority Arrogance**

It must be emphasized that the [Weak Believer's Reversionism](#) is related to lack of Authority orientation. He is under control of his own Old Sin Nature as a result of his entanglement in Arrogance and Reversionism and has degraded his soul function by [Emotional Revolt of the Soul](#). Any intensive training system in any area of life suppresses this Arrogance in both believer and unbeliever. Weak believer reversionists seek to build a [Mutual Admiration Society](#) to gain the support of others who are also Anti-Authority. The weak reversionist believer rejects the Authority of both Bible Doctrine and the Pastor Teacher and as a result he does not serve or obey the mandates of The Lord Jesus, The Christ. Being under Negative Volition to Bible Doctrine he has no motivation or momentum to advance in the Plan of God. It is inevitable that this weak reversionist, involved in Arrogance, will be a slave to his emotion and serve only himself. (2Cor 6:11-12) Even the greatest bible teachers can have no positive effect where emotion is the believer's criterion for spirituality and Arrogance is the motivator for participation. All emotional reversionists are motivated by their own Arrogance and therefore completely lack [Authority Orientation](#). When a believer is motivated by Arrogance he is soulishly blind and non-perceptive in his soul. Arrogance invariably belongs to those Christians who are ignorant of Bible Doctrine and they, being under [Blind Arrogance](#), may not even be aware they have entangled their soul in it. Involvement in any level of Arrogance makes one susceptible to flattery and false teaching. Believers ignorant of Bible Doctrine are impressed by overt personalities which they emphasize in their thinking and life and this results in their easily succumbing to flattery. It is blatantly clear then that Fundamentalist Christianity has traded its doctrinal heritage for emotion as the criteria of spirituality and Arrogance as the motivator of the soul and this is clearly demonstrated by the holy roller tongues movement and faith healing movements of the 20<sup>th</sup> century. If the believer is Self Righteous he is also subjective in his learning of Bible Doctrine and will pick what he likes and reject the Authority of the totality of Bible Doctrine and of the Pastor Teacher presenting it. He uses his own Authority to choose what doctrines he agrees with and those which stimulate his emotions and thereby enters a state of mental and emotional revolt in the soul. This is resisting bible doctrine with which one does not agree and is the extreme danger of entering into the function of a Plurality of Pastors to learn Bible Doctrine.

### **Self Discipline & Blessing vs Authority Arrogance**

Believers who are growing up in the Spiritual Life very often don't even realize that God, sitting on his throne, wants to provide them with all the enjoyable things in life but in order to be qualified to receive them they must first advance to the point of having capacity for these materialistic things of life. This clearly explains that the Plan of God for believers started in Eternity Past and goes all the way into eternity future. Every believer MUST also know that he has Eternal Security in order that God, in his matchless grace and perfect plan, can match up his miserable life with the most amazing blessings any person or angel ever dreamed possible. It is a **SHOCK** to the fallen angels and Satan and all unbelievers and Negative Volition believers in his world when a believer receives his Escrow Super – Grace blessings as a result of reaching the status quo of [Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God](#). The incredible thing about all this is that it comes through that which the vast majority of Christians lack, Self Discipline and the resultant [Genuine Humility](#). The ironic thing is that MAN most often uses

all of his genius and ability to avoid both discipline and Authority. It is obvious then that Arrogance, as the foundation for the Plan of Satan, EVIL, is what causes one to try to avoid what makes life most wonderful and most enjoyable, self discipline. Enforced discipline under systems of Authority exists to develop [Enforced Humility](#) and train the individual's functions and to remind him that he has potentially great things coming in his life if he will simply function under a system of discipline and respect for Authority. In life, especially in the Spiritual Life, by submitting self to discipline, both enforced and self discipline, blessings WILL come to each and every believer. The believer is always free to submit to or reject discipline and in the Spiritual Life when he rejects it he becomes subject to Warning, Intensive and eventually Dying Divine Discipline. It is, therefore, apparent that the most difficult thing in life for people to learn is DISCIPLINE in life.

It is the malfunction of the believer's use of the [Faith Rest Drill \(5 stages\)](#) which results in human reactions in the form of the [Motivational Arrogance](#) of [Mental Attitude Arrogance](#), Sinning and bleeding heard Human Good production. All malfunctions of the Faith Rest Drill involve inconsistency, irrationality and unreasonableness as a result of being motivated by Mental Attitude Arrogance and Sins such as [Jealousy](#), [Bitterness](#), vindictiveness, implacability, Self Righteousness or Self Pity. Malfunction of the Faith Rest Drill includes the rejection of Authority as:

- ✧ Police Authority when stopped for a violation in traffic.
- ✧ Pastoral Authority when doctrine is resisted.
- ✧ Commanding officer Authority when one is full of Self Pity and Arrogance.
- ✧ Teacher or Professor Authority when participating in a classroom situation.
- ✧ Many other areas of Authority in life.

Authority is rejected when people fail under pressure and this failure is called [FEAR](#), which true meaning is *absence of normal rational thought*. Mental Attitude Sins are erroneous, irrational thoughts and the people involved with them will reject Authority yet make demands of the one in Authority inconsistent with their rejection. This is like trying to explain something to a woman who becomes immediately emotional and irrational. This often occurs when pressure is applied to the individual and they move into Self Righteous Arrogance or [Self Centered Arrogance](#). They have their focus totally on self and when they look at self it is with fear and cowardice. Then because of their Arrogance their focus bounces away from self and they cannot keep their focus on self and must look for someone else, a patsy, to blame for their failures. This bouncing from self to others results in Self Pity, feeling sorry for self, and never thinking rationally even for a moment. Their Self Pity Arrogance and selfcenteredness DEMANDS that they stop focusing on self as a failure and find someone else to blame for their failures thus never taking responsibility for their personal decisions. This one whom they blame is very often the one in a leadership position who has the Authority over them. When confronting this type of discontent in a group of irrational rebels the one in Authority must never back off and attempt to appease them but must always speak and act forcefully and control them.

### **Authority Arrogance & Hangups in the Soul**

[Authority Orientation](#) and the principle of Authority removes the excuse for having Arrogant

hangups in the soul. Many people destroy their capacity for life and their ability to have any true friends when, in their souls, they constantly think “I am better than this person and am going to out do this person in some way”. This is the Arrogance of man under the functions of the Old Sin Nature and it results in Arrogant [Hangups](#) in one's soul. People often think they are inadequate unless they can do some things better than anyone else. To offset this in life there exists the principle of Authority which is designed to negate, limit, suppress and destroy Arrogance in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul. The person who says or wants to say “I did this better than anyone” is ridiculous. In any field of function in life, the concept is to LEARN principles and functions, not out perform others. This principle is demonstrated in the *proper* function of military training. When a man enters the military he is there to learn how to do something right and how to properly function under Authority as part of a team, not to outdo others in his unit.

Authority and its proper exercise is dependent on the ability of the individual to think under pressure and for him to have moral courage, which is the ability to make the right decision under that pressure and to have the physical courage to act based on those decisions. These principles apply under delegated Authority and apply in all cases especially in the Local Church where the Pastor Teacher must be able to think, study and teach Bible Doctrine rather than run around trying to be a good example or use his personality to impress the congregation. Congregations NEED people who disrupt things in the Local Church so that the others, who are truly not under consistent Positive Volition to true accurate Bible Doctrine Teaching, can be enticed to leave the local church to find whatever false or pseudo doctrine they desire. Since the 1970's and much more so today, Arrogance and personality have substituted for proper leadership and the proper function of teaching in the Local Church and in fact in every aspect of life in the United States of America. Authority must be able to think under pressure and when Authority is in a state of cowardice, it is therefore unable to think and Authority cannot ever function effectively in this state and this status results in anarchy. There have been several examples of anarchy running rampant in current history in United States of America in the early part of the 21<sup>st</sup> century with the wall street sit in, riots in Ferguson MO, Baltimore MD, in the burning of a Wisconsin town by revolutionary Marxist democratic party motivated groups, student protesters occupying college campus' and many others to date. This has occurred in other places, like the taking over of a segment of Portland Oregon by Marxists, and the trend continues and is becoming greater and more destructive as each day, month and year goes on. The interesting thing in these situations was that in Ferguson MO for example, the organization of the Oath Keepers stepped in to help legitimate business maintain their security and this shocked the rioters and was RESENTED by the Law Enforcement and political Authority in the area. In Baltimore MD., Law Enforcement personnel from other states were brought in to the areas of rioting and then abandoned in these areas by unionized transportation drivers sympathetic to the rioters and had to fend for themselves, having to WALK through these areas without any backup in order to get out. In addition in the demonstrations and riots in many cities of the country the rebels have been calling for de-funding of the police which would bring to this country total anarchy. The United States has today a cowardly government with cowards as its representatives in government and IT MUST AND WILL CHANGE and it is very likely going to be a very messy process.



## **Family, Children, Parents & Authority Arrogance**

More people's lives are ruined by rejecting parental Authority than almost any other thing in life. Children who live with parents and reject or resent the policies of their parents and then violate them often scar their souls for life. The only hope for these people is Bible Doctrine. There are 3 Categories of Fragmentation of one's life which always interlock with Authority Arrogance:

- [Impulsive Arrogance](#)
- [Institutional Arrogance](#)
- [Conspiracy Arrogance](#)

Parents as the first Authority in life are to teach and train children by first teaching them language with which they then communicate policy and principles to the child as a student. [Humility](#) is required in every system of learning since the student must accept the Authority of the teacher in order to learn. The teacher or the Authority may be present as a human teaching an individual or class, it may be a video or an audio recording, or a book or manuscript of some type and the student MUST accept the Authority of that system before he can learn anything from it. People generally cannot think clearly, rationally, nor according to the Laws of Divine Establishment or in terms of the Divine Institutions because no one has ever taught them these principles during their childhood. Today in the 1<sup>st</sup> quarter of the 21<sup>st</sup> century the system of public education has been deliberately corrupted so as to teach distortions of the principles of the Divine Institutions to the children so that they reject Divine Establishment concepts out of hand. Parents who have Humility are teachable and this humility should and must be passed down from parent to child through the training process under humility.

In life, the first war in the soul is between Arrogance and Humility where the child in Arrogance attempts to reject parental Authority and resists parental teaching but the child who has been properly trained and has developed humility accepts parental Authority and thus learns from parental teaching. The Child as a “Vessel of Honor” is molded by Positive Volition towards parental Authority and teaching while the child as a “Vessel of Dishonor” is molded by Negative Volition towards parental Authority and teaching. As a result the child with Humility in his soul, being a vessel of honor, learns how to say NO to many of the temptations of life in their formative years. However, the Arrogant child becomes involved in the [Arrogance Skills](#), the Interlocking System of Arrogance and Interlocking System of Antagonistic Emotional Hatred along with [Emotional Revolt](#) with active, unrestrained trends toward lasciviousness, lawlessness, violence, etc., and are therefore destroyed in childhood. The “Vessel of Honor” is molded with good manners and thoughtfulness of others, respect for privacy, property, the rights of others, etc., all aspects of the [Laws of Divine Establishment](#) and principles of Metabolized Bible Doctrine. Above all else the “Vessel of Honor” is trained to respect all systems of Legitimate Authority. The “Vessel of Honor” accepts all Legitimate Authority in Humility while the Vessel of Dishonor rejects these things as a result of being in a state of Arrogance. When the children reach puberty or the status of personal accountability and begin to make their own decisions in life, the vessels have been formed into these 2

categories, Humble and teachable vs Arrogant and unteachable. From this point on in life the only hope for the “Vessel of Dishonor” is Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God and Regeneration through Faith Alone in The Lord Jesus, The Christ Alone. By a positive decision at Gospel Hearing for Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God the Believer is placed into the Protocol Plan of God. Here he receives equality of privilege and opportunity for execution of the Spiritual Life as a member of the Royal Family of God in this Church Age BUT is now under the Authority system of GOD, to which he is directly responsible.

The Humility response is positive to the Authority system where the head of the family is the husband and the husband is the chief one in the family to train and in fact must train both the wife and the children. The wife then has Authority with the husband to train the children according to his instruction of her. This is where Humility in the child is first developed as they recognize the Authority of the mother and father in the family. Children must respond to their parents whether the parent is good or bad. Then when children enter public or private school, now having teachers as Authority, a principle which no longer exists in the American education system, they must never be smart asses with a teacher nor with their coaches or anyone else in the school hierarchy. Their first employment engagement puts this maturing child under the Authority of the boss no matter who he is or how poor or good a boss he is. It is totally improper to ever undermine the Authority of the boss in any organization and if a person is dissatisfied with a position under a boss he can simply resign or quit his job and go find another boss to be under. Universal military training is very good in fact necessary for all males since it establishes proper Authority orientation for them. Women’s social organizations are in fact ‘gangs’ and as such have no Authority structure and therefore function under Anarchy and Arrogance from their very inception. Marriage requires the woman to subject herself to the man and to RESPECT him and his position of Authority in order to have true love for him. The woman as a responder becomes Arrogant by seeking the approbation of many men before or even after marriage. This desire for satisfying her approbation lust is a part of the system of Arrogance which brings weakness into the life of the woman and destroys her Spiritual Life. A woman has true love in her soul when she seeks the approbation of only one man. If she does not center and focus on the Love for this ONE man then she will NEVER execute the Spiritual Life and be under Divine Discipline for her entire life. A woman should never agree to marry a man unless she can respond to and respect him and can set aside her approbation lust and desire to be recognized by all the other men in her periphery. She must totally give honor and respect to her husband in thoughtfulness and sensitivity. If she cannot do this to only ONE man then she SHOULD NOT MARRY. The Man, as her husband, gives her all the honor she will ever need and if he cannot do that he should not marry her. Marriage can become a trap if these principles are Ignored. Some women will never know true love because they have approbation lust for attention from more than one male or from some other function in their life.

Authority Arrogance results when there is a failure to make the transition from Authority in the home to Authority in life where the [Enforced Humility](#) of the home should have led to the development of [Genuine Humility](#) for life. Authority Arrogance is also where legitimate Authority from God is rejected and results in disorientation to Life and is devastatingly

detrimental to the individual and the nation. Rejection of the Absolute Truth of Bible Doctrine by the believer results in strong delusions as a result of involvement in the Cosmic Dynaspheres. Very Few recover from this and rejection of parental Authority is why young people so often leave home with an adult body and a child's soul. The most difficult transition in life is from childhood and Authority in the home to adulthood and Freedom in life. Arrogance + Rejection of Parental Authority guarantees disorientation to life and lack of capacity for happiness or blessing. Authority and the Laws of Divine Establishment are the great tests in human life just as they were in the Garden of Eden. Authority response or reaction is always tested by someone who is a complete jackass who has Authority over the individual. One's attitude toward Authority is the secret to success in social, business and personal life. Overt Rejection of Authority in life results in rejection of the inner Authority in the soul and this destroys the persons self discipline and Genuine Humility. The Soul is an ORGANIZATION in one's personal life with its emotion, volition, norms and standards, viewpoint and is in fact the area for development of one's own personal [Organized Humility](#). Proper function under this system leads to capacity for life and happiness in life. The individual's Volition, functioning under the Organizational Humility of his own soul, based on his response to Enforced Discipline, produces the Enforced Humility of his Soul and if used properly leads to the development of Genuine Humility from personal Self Discipline. Therefore, when one rejects outside Authority he is also rejecting his own inner Authority and lacks self respect and self discipline and will try to compensate in some way for his failure to effectively run his own life. Lack of Enforced and Genuine Humility in life results in preoccupation with self which rejects Authority outside of self and therefore that individual cannot properly use any Authority which God may have given him.

### **Pseudo Solutions vs True Solutions to Authority Arrogance**

Authority Arrogance is total dysfunction with reference to Authority and is what prevents the believer from fulfilling the Plan of God for his life and using the full benefits of Logistical Grace. If one does not like the person who is over him in Authority he will most likely not follow the mandates of their Authority. If one is preoccupied with self he will reject Authority in any area of life. Arrogant thinking is the downfall of any Spiritual Life and Humility as a way of life involves Authority orientation which the believer must have to construct the [Edification Complex](#) in his Soul. Enforced Humility is the result of one's RESPONSE to the pressure which Authority uses to bear down upon the individual with mandates for their function. Authority arrogance is the result of REACTION to this same pressure from Authority. Enforced Humility, therefore, is a result of a person being under Authority and accepting that Authority and its mandates under a system of what can be called Enforced Discipline and functioning to the requisite level. Genuine Humility is what is developed in the Soul when a person submits voluntarily to Authority and recognizes the purpose of mandates for function and from his own self discipline functions under those mandates to the highest possible levels whether the Authority figure is present or not. He recognizes his lower position with regard to another or takes in a maximum of Bible Doctrine under conditions of enforced discipline and then develops self induced discipline, to function to the best of his ability, all VOLUNTARILY. Genuine Humility toward GOD comes from the accumulation of maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the SOUL which RESULTS from proper function under and in response to Authority

in a situation of ENFORCED HUMILITY, namely Bible Study or Class. This doctrinal intake will motivate a proper response to Authority under Enforced Humility. Enforced humility is what God or any other Authority uses to provide each of us with MOTIVATION to stay under the rules OR provide appropriate recompense for the stupidity of not doing so in the form of Divine Discipline, Jail Time or flunking one of my classes in university. Genuine Humility toward GOD from Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the soul motivates a response to the Enforced Discipline of Authority in life which provides Enforced Humility. Genuine Humility overall must be a result of proper function under Enforced Humility provided by the proper function under Enforced Discipline resulting in the development of Self Discipline while being under some Authority in life such as bible study or Local church attendance. Therefore, Enforced humility is REQUIRED in life as a positive volitional response from being under Enforced Discipline when under outside Authority, such as bible study or in military service, or any other Authority structure in life. This motivates the development of Genuine Humility as a volitional response produced from Self Discipline and Self Regulation, in the believer toward God and in both the unbeliever and believer toward all Authority in general. Enforced Humility is the response of volition in the recognition of Authority in life and subordination to it without any hangups or Arrogance. Genuine Humility will then eventually develop from self discipline and self regulation bringing with it the capacity for Love, Life, Happiness and Blessing. These three, Impersonal, Unconditional Love, Enforced Humility, and Genuine Humility set the stage for the function of volition as one's personal Authority in life.

If a person is involved in the Interlocking System of Arrogance, picking out some failure they have had in the past in order to help them extricate themselves from Arrogance is useless since this person is UNTEACHABLE. No one can be taught anything by anyone when they are saturated with Arrogance. When it comes to dealing with petty failures in life, timing is of critical importance. Most petty failures are the result of a major failure in the soul such as involvement with the Interlocking System of Arrogance or the Interlocking System of Antagonistic Emotional Hatred often beginning with the [Motivational Arrogance](#) of [Mental Attitude Arrogance](#) and sin such as ANGER, ie. losing one's temper. When a person becomes angry and loses his temper he is no longer rational and therefore has become unteachable. Most often this type of person must be put on neutral ground in order to cause them to be under Authority and taught. There must be an unfamiliar Authority, which is respected, for the Interlocking System of Arrogance to be moved aside and for the person to have any objectivity. When one has Authority he must never single out those under him when they do things which irritate him because if he does then he is failing in leadership. When this occurs the one in Authority must get to the cause of the problem of why these people do things to irritate him. He must discover why they assume they can get away with doing these irritating things, and then challenge the Arrogance of the person or persons initiating the irritations. In situations of leadership and Authority there are exceptions and if one is not being respected or one does not have attention from those under him then he must immediately straighten them out. This situation is the Interlocking System of Arrogance challenging organizational Authority.

Arrogance resents those in Authority who are tough and demanding when they are under such

Authority or those who are considered obnoxious in some way. People often assume that a stereotype personality goes with a particular position of Authority and when one does not match the presumed Authority stereotype, his subordinates fall immediately into Arrogant reactions. Never trust personal judgment about someone in Authority when they are first encountered. One can develop instant antagonism in this case and the fact that this occurs and there is in instant personality conflict shows that his Arrogance is Blind Arrogance, Mental Attitude Arrogance or [Institutional Arrogance](#). If one has had rapport with someone in Authority in a company and someone else comes along and takes their place with a totally different personality and the rapport is gone there is again very often instant antagonism. When properly motivated with [Grace Orientation](#) and [Humility](#) it will reflect itself in [Integrity](#) and this is the great safeguard against Arrogance. Unfortunately, most people have enormous excesses of Arrogance without any integrity to counter balance it. Integrity accepts Authority without making issue of personality, attire, grooming or attractiveness whereas Arrogance makes an issue of all these superficial qualities while reacting to the Authority.

Under the concept of False Doctrine the accuracy of Bible Doctrine is rejected by the Arrogance of the person hearing it. Under the principles of Bible Doctrine and the Grace Plan of God, God has never given the woman Authority over adults in the Spiritual Realm. This is God's order of things and not demeaning or degrading. In contrast the woman has been given the spiritual gift of Helps which is absolutely fantastic in the spiritual realm. If there is one thing that Arrogance resents in others more than anything else it is the fact that others possess Authority or power in some form or hierarchy in life occupying a higher position than they. Arrogance always resents anything that smacks of Authority and anything that has responsibility for enforcing or carrying out policies. One of the worst things Arrogance does is to fail to evaluate people in Authority with regard to their ability. Blind Arrogance inevitably sees some flaw in their appearance or some personality failure that is then immediately resented. This is not only disorientation to life but it is often destructive to the person who does it. There was one truly great man who was constantly rejected by Arrogant people simply because he was very physically unattractive, the Apostle PAUL.

Authority Arrogance fails in the recognition that all people are HUMAN and all have an Old Sin Nature and when there is incompatibility of Old Sin Natures these people are not ever going to be satisfactory to the Arrogant one. Some of these will inevitably have Authority over the Arrogant individual who will dislike them instantly and intensely to the extent that he will fail to respond to their Authority and to that extent will fail in his Spiritual Life. Lack of Self Discipline and Self Regulation is also lack of Enforced and Genuine Humility in life and preoccupation with self and results in lack of teachability and therefore inability to engage in effective Post Salvation Epistemological Rehabilitation from Perception, Cognition, Incultation, Metabolization of Bible Doctrine. Unfortunately, a great many times in life, the only thing which brings respect for the one in Authority is either use of VIOLENCE or their Physical or personality ATTRACTIVENESS.

The 2 greatest areas of attack on Freedom under the Authority of Law are both related to Arrogance, one is on the society in general and the other on the spiritual life of the individual.



The United States of America has been a wonderful nation in the past but that is PAST. Today the Arrogance of the representatives and a vast majority of the people in the nation motivates them to try to place themselves above the Law. Believers must remember [1Pet 5:5](#), 'God makes war against the Arrogant believer'. Therefore, the easiest way to incur the discipline related to Arrogance is to put self above the Law. The easiest way to accomplish this is to engage in ANY Sexual sinning. The Supreme Court of Heaven punishes all cases of the "Above the Law Syndrome", whether related to sex outside marriage, crime, demonism, government, politics, etc. A Degenerate nation can only escape total destruction through making Adjustment to the Justice of God, fortunately, this solution does not have to include the entire nation. This begins with the individual as an unbeliever, making Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God through Faith alone in The Lord Jesus, The Christ alone. Then these Believers must execute the Spiritual Life of the church Age and reach Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God by means of consistent Perception, Cognition, Incultation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine. This Post Salvation Epistemological Rehabilitation is the only way to advance spiritually and such perception demands Authority Orientation. The Solution for believers begins with [1John 1:9](#), the [Rebound Procedure](#) being used on a consistent basis. Unfortunately ingrained Arrogance always totally thwarts both of these solutions.

Freedom is never isolated and it is combined with and interrelated to other concepts forming 1 complete and interrelated category. Freedom as a principle of the Laws of Divine Establishment and the [Royal Family Honor Code](#) functions integrally as a complex of principles. Volition of the individual is the basis for all Freedom and must remain uncoerced and uninfluenced at all times. Privacy is a part of Freedom and is a principle related to the Royal Family Honor Code and the royal priesthood of the Church Age believer where in privacy the individual can exercise his volition properly. Property is a part of Freedom and is a principle related to the Laws of Divine Establishment for the function of life to ensure privacy and enable volition to function. Authority is a requirement for proper function of Freedom and is the protective umbrella for Freedom protecting the Freedom of EVERY person in a society or organization. Freedom without Authority is anarchy and Authority without Freedom is tyranny. There cannot be an attack on any one of these categorical aspects of Freedom without destroying all Freedom. Socialism as an attack on property destroys Freedom. Slavery as an attack on personal self determination, volition, destroys Freedom. Gossip as an attack on privacy destroys Freedom. Concepts concerning the Arrogance of the pseudo "dignity of man" destroys Authority, the protection for Freedom. Freedom for the unbeliever can be lost through demon possession, drug addiction, erroneous or false thoughts or fears that one might lose some system of personal security. Therefore the most subtle attacks on Freedom eliminate by rejection either the Royal Family of God Authority or Laws of Divine Establishment Authority.

There are many ways to lose Freedom but lack of Authority Orientation is the greatest and is as important as Freedom itself. There is Divine Institution Authority in Volition, Marriage, Family and Government and economic, educational, judicial and team Authority and all have been destroyed in the United States of America today. Marriage is a state of Authority not a state of happiness and whether a person is happy in marriage or NOT depends on the 2 people involved and their capacity for happiness just the same as when they were single. Neither is

some aspect of temporal success happiness because all happiness related to successes depends on having capacity for it. Capacity begins where all teaching, especially regarding Freedom must begin, with Orientation to Authority. No one ever starts with Freedom but always with Authority which is the secret to Freedom and Authority guarantees the Freedom of EVERYONE not just some nor just the one having Authority. If everyone does not have Freedom eventually NO ONE has Freedom. Therefore, Authority is defined for us by the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions provided as doctrinal principles in the scripture. The general rejection of the Laws of Divine Establishment in this nation has clearly resulted in a consistent LOSS OF Freedom. The most significant demonstration of the cause for America's loss of Freedom is the many women who enter marriage and suddenly realize that they must OBEY their husband but they cannot, and their bliss and happiness is instantly ended. If the woman had gone through a tough disciplinary system somewhere in her life or been properly trained by her parents then she would be able to SUBMIT to Authority properly. All marriage is a state of Authority but for most people entering marriage it is ONLY a means to obtain legalized SEX and demonstrates how stupid people are. Once you understand what marriage truly is then you can either have happiness in it OR great unhappiness commensurate with your level of Arrogance. If you are unhappy as a single person you will be unhappy when married and thereby take some one else with you into unhappiness. If you do not or cannot orient to legitimate Authority then you cannot orient to Freedom and you cannot have any happiness in life. This is an additional overwhelming reason why universal military training is so very important in any nation because it compensates when legitimate Authority is no longer exercised or taught in homes or when it no longer exists in schools. When you see mob functions such as exist when there is a 'demonstration' or a 'march' this is a TOTAL rejection of Authority. Generally these Mobs are very animated in their function because this is the ONLY Freedom they have ever really had and that freedom is totally out of control. This was clearly observed with the Iranian student demonstrators in the United States in the 70s against the Shaw of Iran and the recent revolutionary demonstrations which have burned a town in Wisconsin in 2020. When a people lack Freedoms they have to express some facsimile thereof in [Fanaticism](#). This always returns to Man's basic problem, the Old Sin Nature and Arrogance providing the temptation and motivation to resist or reject Authority.

### **Ultimate Limitation on Power**

The reality in life is that Power and influence are totally meaningless because the more one has the more one is susceptible to the Interlocking System of Arrogance and this inevitably involves great misery and unhappiness and most accumulations of great POWER usually end in great tragedy. The GREEKS in their development of Drama in the 5<sup>th</sup> Century BC caught on to the principle that EVEN THOUGH ONE CAN ACHIEVE THE HIGHEST LEVEL OF SUCCESS AND BE A NOBLE, POPULAR AND GREAT FIGURE IN HISTORY HE WILL ALWAYS HAVE A TRAGIC FLAW WHICH **WILL** COME TO THE FRONT TO DESTROY HIM! The tragic flaw is of course some level of involvement in Authority Arrogance or any of the other 80+ aspects which allow entry into the Interlocking System of Arrogance. People have always and still now worship power and idolize Evil because of residence and function within the Cosmic Dynaspheres. These people will never have capacity for Freedom nor happiness and without the understanding of the Absolute Truth from Bible Doctrine or the Laws of Divine Establishment

and Divine Institutions, they are always impressed with the wrong things.

True Reality is that ALL human beings who possess any level of absolute power have their absolute power limited by DEATH. All dictators, with all of their power, including the dictator of the Revived Roman Empire in the future, have all been and all will be overtaken by TIME and by this means God has put a limitation through time on their power. Therefore, there is a limitation on all human power, greatness or success because of the linear progression of TIME and the greatest and worst of any people always face the ABSOLUTE of DEATH! Therefore there are 2 definitive time limitations on human power:

- DEATH
- Divine Judgment apart from death

If the power of great dictators had been perpetuated throughout history and time had not limited them with DEATH then today there would be NO Human Race or the Human Race would be under total slavery to EVIL. God's provision of both TIME and DEATH, where sooner or later EVERYONE dies no matter his power or success, is a definitive protection for the Human Race. It is TIME which catches up, destroys and changes everything in the Human Race with the inevitable LOSSES in personal and collective life. Therefore the individual believer MUST make the best use of his TIME by making Perception, Cognition, Incultation and Metabolization of the Absolute Truths of Bible Doctrine FIRST PRIORITY in his life. No matter how great a human being may be with regard to power and success and no matter what he achieves in life there is a TIME LIMIT to him and his successes and the ABSOLUTE is DEATH.

### **Humor, Control & Power**

Slander is the function of both those who have POWER and those who are weak and have no understanding of or ability to relax and see humor in life. Humor is a great weapon in the hands of those who can think and think with absolute truth from Bible Doctrine. ([John 1:14](#), [Rev 13:6](#)) When one is involved in any level of arrogance and does not see humor in anything or cannot even laugh at himself he tends to malign and slander those who are beyond his power even those with a sense of humor. People with too much power generally have no sense of humor and those people saturated with EVIL who have a sense of humor are generally extremely dangerous. Arrogance + Power and Authority cannot laugh at anything because Arrogant preoccupation with self always takes self too seriously and this inevitably can lead to [Psychotic Arrogance](#). However, all the vast power of the KOSMOS, this world cannot control the believer with maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in his Stream of Consciousness of his Soul, and if that power kills him then the believer goes to the interim state in heaven and he cannot be controlled there either. Therefore, **for the mature believer, EVIL has no control over his life EXCEPT as the believer himself might allow it by making wrong decisions from a position of weakness.** The mature believer is therefore beyond the power of EVIL because of the POWER of Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of his Soul, furthermore he is beyond the Power of EVIL in DEATH because of his Interim life in heaven.

Return to the [Table of Contents](#)

## **Gate #42 – The Arrogance of a False Scale of Values**

There must be a scale of values in the individuals soul for proper function in normal society and is should be related to the Laws of Divine Establishment, the Divine Institutions, and the moral code of scripture. Scale of Values Arrogance is the arrogant individual holding onto a Scale of Values not appropriate for the historical position he finds himself in. One's system of values must be based on the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions or Bible Doctrine or Both with volition making consistent decisions based on this Scale of Values during his Life. If the believer fails in any way he must use his volition to consistently and instantly activate the [Rebound Procedure](#) in order to ensure rapid recovery. The believer loses this capability and the status of value development and in fact destroys a good Scale of Values by moving into functions under the [Arrogance Skills](#) and entering into [Self Justification](#), [Self Deception](#), and eventually [Self Absorption](#). Arrogance skills involvement becomes the greatest distraction to the Christian Way of Life because they focus one's attention and his life on his own abilities, intelligence or talents and disregard Grace allowing him to reject responsibility for his own bad decisions and actions. There must also be a proper Scale of Values which will significantly vary for victorious function in warfare when involved in combative warfare, [Clandestine War](#) or intelligence organizations or functioning in counter insurgency and counter intelligence which are totally opposite to and untenable with normal, proper function in society. This second scale of values is designed to bring the client nation to victory and GLORIFY GOD IN THIS VICTORY. Sins of normal society are, therefore, no longer sinful when committed in the function of clandestine war, counter insurgency and for counter intelligence organizations to preserve the client nation to God. Lying, cheating, deceit, killing, subversive action, etc., are no longer considered sinful when the survival of the client nation is at stake. There are 3 chapters in 2<sup>nd</sup> Samuel which deal with authorized, proper and effective functions when involved in counter insurgency and intelligence organizations. ([2Sam 15, 16, 17](#))

Return to the [Table of Contents](#)

## **Gate #43 – The Arrogance of Morality**

While the presence of or involvement in a state of morality is NOT spirituality, the ABSENCE of morality can destroy spirituality. Spirituality is on a higher plane than morality but does not reject morality as occurs in antinomianism. This is the great danger of [Legalism](#) which is Morality and Arrogance combined. Therefore, Morality, on its own, is not a bad thing but IT IS for the entire Human Race and is part of the Laws of Divine Establishment functions. However, Morality minus [Virtue](#) == [Self Righteous Arrogance](#) the legalistic syndrome while Morality plus Virtue == a [Problem Solving Device](#) of the Protocol Plan of God. Therefore, without Virtue First morality is invalid and useless because it is Self Righteous Arrogant Morality and a fragment of the Arrogance Grenade which will destroy one's life and becomes [Motivational Arrogance](#) from Evil. Therefore, Morality is a part of Christianity but is also for the Unbeliever and Morality protects human freedom for both believer and unbeliever under the

Laws of Divine Establishment. Morality has a Bright Side which is found in the Laws of Divine Establishment but it also has a Dark Side found in Interlocking System of Arrogance or Interlocking System of Antagonistic Emotional Hatred. When involved in the [Arrogance Skills](#), [Self Justification](#) results in the person feeling that they are never wrong which pushes them into [Self Deception](#) and eventually leads to [Self Absorption](#) and the cycling through these skills leads them into LEGALISM and Sin. Therefore the Dark Side of Morality includes Arrogance, Legalism and [Christian Activism](#). Morality Arrogance involves the [Self Righteous Arrogance](#) of superimposing or attempting to superimpose one's own false standards on others. When a system of Morality created by Arrogance is superimposed on the Laws of Divine Establishment, True Morality or Christian Spirituality, there is developed the Arrogance of Morality interlocked with [Crusader Arrogance](#). True morality demands that everyone have a RIGHT to privacy, property and to make decisions without coercion. This makes it possible for evangelism to occur and the Local Church to exist giving the individual the CHOICE as to whether to make Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God and become involved in Perception, Cognition, Incultation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine OR NOT! Morality Arrogance is how Liberal Government is driven. This is the Ralph Nader or Nancy Pelosi or the general democratic party functions in life and why they all are so saturated with the Influence of Evil. Evil as the Plan and Policy of Satan in Cosmic Dynasphere I has Self Righteous Arrogance leading directly into Morality Arrogance. All Arrogance can convert good Christian service into bad Christian Service. Morality in the Divine Dynasphere is a Virtue based on Grace, while morality in the Cosmic Dynasphere is Arrogance based on Evil leading to Self Righteous Arrogance, Legalism and total loss of the true perspective of the Christian Way of Life. The Believer under Morality Arrogance can be involved in Christian service but it will count only for wood hay and stubble at the Judgment Seat of Christ and therefore be destroyed. Christian service only has meaning when the believer is residing in the [Divine Dynasphere](#) and is only truly functional when the believer has reached [Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God](#).

Morality is without strength in Cosmic Dynasphere I, the Interlocking System of Arrogance and the only strength of Morality is [Virtue](#) and all Virtue resides in the Divine Dynasphere. Morality + [Pride](#) results in character weakness and degeneracy. Morality becomes the source of hypocrisy and legalism, of taking the influence of Evil and using it for the production of Human Good. Morality PLUS:

- ▲ Mental Attitude Arrogance, Pride, is [Inordinate Ambition](#)
- ▲ [Negative Volition Arrogance](#) is preoccupation of self and rejection or neglect of Bible Doctrine causing degradation down through [Reversionism](#) and movement into the Interlocking System of Antagonistic Emotional Hatred.
- ▲ Blind Arrogance is Self Righteousness
- ▲ Crusader Arrogance is social action and all things anti-establishment and anti-God.

As a [Functional Virtue](#) morality is only found in the [Divine Dynasphere](#) and it must only be directed toward mankind. Morality cannot be directed toward God and when it is it results in Legalism and preoccupation with self and loss of the whole concept of Grace. True Morality in the Divine Dynasphere is based on [Enforced and Genuine Humility](#) which allows a rapid advance in the Spiritual Life but in the Interlocking System of Arrogance, morality will



eventually expand degeneracy. Degeneracy, as a result of involvement in the Interlocking System of Arrogance, comes from one of 2 antithetical mechanisms, morality or immorality. Moral degeneracy might be demonstrated by a person who tolerates homosexuals and the obvious problem is that the only difference between the homosexual and those who tolerate them are a few sexual sins. Immoral degeneracy is obviously demonstrated by the one who engages in these promiscuous or perverted sexual activities.

In addition, Love is only virtuous in the Divine Dynasphere. God invented the Divine Dynasphere to exclude all areas of Arrogance and Human Love to be exclusive with regard to other individuals. Any form of love in the Cosmic Dynaspheres is Arrogance, hypocrisy and superficiality just as morality in the Cosmic Dynaspheres is Arrogance and legalism. Because Impersonal, Unconditional Love extrapolates Honor and Integrity from the individual who loves when residing in the Divine Dynasphere it totally disregards Arrogance, malice, vindictiveness, etc., from others toward self. Virtue for the believer includes Morality directed toward MAN. Worship is true Virtue when directed toward GOD while the worship of man is Arrogance and idiocy.

Morality Arrogance is where people assume that morality is Christianity when in fact it is not. Christianity condones, respects and adheres to morality under the Laws of Divine Establishment but a pseudo or false morality can result from preoccupation with self. When this Arrogant morality system is superimposed on establishment morality or becomes a substitute for function in the Divine Dynasphere it is a disaster and results in Self Righteous Arrogance along with legalism and is a pseudo morality. Morality Arrogance is preoccupation with false standards developed from pseudo morality to the exclusion of true morality and its purpose in the Modus Vivendi of protection for the Human Race. Morality Arrogance is the Arrogant function of Self Righteousness or preoccupation with false standards as a result of Negative Volition Arrogance toward the ABSOLUTE TRUTH of Bible Doctrine or the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions. This is the superimposition of a false and personally developed standard of pseudo morality over a true and collective standard of morality for the Human Race and is therefore related to both Blind Arrogance and Crusader Arrogance. The Cosmic Dynaspheres, which are Satan's power systems for ruling this earth, can and enthusiastically support pseudo morality. Morality must be combined with Integrity to have any value in life. Morality is NOT the Christian Way of Life, but is the way of life for the Human Race. Morality minus Integrity is Arrogance while Morality plus Integrity in the Royal Family Honor Code is part of the dynamics of the Christian Way of Life. True Morality in life is related to an Honor Code of Integrity of the soul and under true morality one does not treat people based on how they merit that treatment but on the Integrity in one's soul. Under Impersonal, Unconditional Love for Mankind believers must switch from Arrogance to Objectivity and relate their own behavior and thinking to their own integrity based on Metabolized Bible Doctrine in their Stream of Consciousness of their Soul.

Therefore, morality without Virtue is found only within the Cosmic Dynaspheres and is Arrogance and Antagonism and motivated from the influence of Evil to produce Sin, Crime and Human Good. The ONLY Morality which counts in the Christian Way of Life is Morality based

on Virtue + Integrity and can only be found in the [Divine Dynasphere](#). There can be NO Virtue, Honor, or Integrity apart from the Divine Dynasphere, even for the unbeliever. Morality without Integrity is like Life without feeling. Unbelievers who have Integrity and Honor function in a limited fashion in the Divine Dynasphere under the Laws of Divine Establishment. The Unbeliever, therefore, enters the Divine Dynasphere through the [Authority Envelope](#) where they develop [Enforced](#) and [Genuine Humility](#), the underlying foundation for all Virtue, and this explains why some unbelievers have great Virtue but are still unbelievers. However, there can be a Morality with all levels of Arrogance, especially Self Righteousness outside the Divine Dynasphere. Morality without Integrity is always involvement in the Cosmic Dynaspheres thus is Legalism and / or Lawlessness and leads to Crusader Arrogance, Socialism, Welfare Functions, Social Action, etc.

True Morality establishes stability in society however in Cosmic Dynasphere I, the Interlocking System of Arrogance, as occurred with LOT the nephew of Abraham, morality leads to degeneracy similarly to immorality in the Cosmic Dynasphere. Ultimately LOT, who was very moral, became degenerate and engaged in incest with his daughters and was just as degenerate as the men of Sodom in their homosexuality. The function of morality in Cosmic Dynasphere I, the Interlocking System of Arrogance produces hypocrisy, self righteous Arrogance and an Arrogant facade of conformance to social precedence without honor or integrity. Morality in the Cosmic Dynasphere is weak and results in degeneracy from overt conformity to law or social precedent, while in the Divine Dynasphere it is a Virtue and powerful and fortified by conformance to the Absolute Truths of Bible Doctrine. Pseudo Morality is no substitute for Honor, Integrity and Virtue, and Impersonal, Unconditional Love is the key to avoiding this. Morality without Virtue is the guarantee of malfunction in the Spiritual Life. Spiritual dynamics do not involved personality change but involve the establishing of honor and integrity in the soul and through the function of Impersonal, Unconditional Love while residing in the Divine Dynasphere. This IS morality, Virtue, Integrity and Honor in the Spiritual Life. The function of Impersonal, Unconditional Love is reverse concentration in the application of Metabolized Bible Doctrine to situations in life, the establishing of Bible Doctrine priorities and decisions which conform to Bible Doctrine standards. This IS the spiritual panacea for human relationships.

### **Believers & Unbelievers in Morality Arrogance**

While the believer or unbeliever functions in this category of Arrogance, they do so in their own pertinent sphere of life. The Arrogance of Morality occurs because it is almost impossible for humans, who constantly see degeneracy and lasciviousness, to think of the person who is involved with Morality Arrogance as anything but GOOD. However, this type of person is truly influenced by and saturated with EVIL, as Evil is in its pure form. This Self Righteous Arrogant person is so preoccupied with self that he thinks of self as ALWAYS RIGHT. When linked with Crusaderism this person is totally devoted to imposing his false standards on others. This Arrogance also rejects [Establishment Authority](#) and establishment morality. Unbeliever Morality Arrogance is found in the person who as an unbeliever has a false sense of morality and favors confiscation and redistribution of wealth, wants to save all unborn fetus', etc. The believer functioning under Morality Arrogance, on the other hand, substitutes a system of

morality for the Spiritual Life and for the [Filling of God the Holy Spirit](#). This system of Arrogance creates a person totally under the influence of EVIL. It often results in crusading for a “cause” by the use of false systems such as violence and terrorism. Because it is the rejection of establishment principles of morality and substitutes a false system of morality this invariably results in [Psychopathic](#) behavior.

In Pride or [Mental Attitude Arrogance](#) the unbeliever substitutes a personal and false standard of morality for the true morality standard found in Laws of Divine Establishment. All morality for the unbeliever is related to the Laws of Divine Establishment and the Divine Institutions. Thus Morality Arrogance is blatantly illustrated by the United States federal government trying to solve social problems instead of trying to protect the freedom and rights of individuals. Therefore Morality Arrogance rejects the authority of the Laws of Divine Establishment including patriotism as well as rejecting and subverting the proper functions under the Divine Institutions. Unbeliever Morality Arrogance is illustrated by the individual who, on the basis of his false standards of morality, refuses to sign up for the draft and military service when his country is involved in war and calls himself a “conscientious objector”, this is Morality Arrogance. The believer can also fail in this way and refuse military service and to sign up for the draft and they both therefore enjoy the privileges of freedom without taking responsibility for freedom because of Arrogance; many times this is actually personal cowardice. Believers entangled in the Interlocking System of Arrogance always reject spirituality by Grace and it being the absolute status of the Filling of God the Holy Spirit and its recovery after carnality through the [Rebound Procedure](#) and always subscribe to some system of pseudo spirituality by human effort works. All legalism is Arrogance and rejection of true spirituality. This also includes the concepts of tithing in substitution for spiritual giving or speaking in pseudo tongues in substitution for true worship.

The concept, which is today held by the majority of people, that Life begins at conception involves Self Righteous Arrogance, the [Arrogance of Ignorance](#), [Crusader Arrogance](#), [Arrogance of Emotion](#), [Negative Volition Arrogance](#) and is against all aspects of the Laws of Divine Establishment and involves Cosmic Panacea’s, Religious Group actions, [Pseudo Intellectual Academic Speculations](#) and is most definitely part of Satan’s System of Evil. Morality in the Cosmic Dynasphere is the basis for establishing strong influence over individuals through Evil and is therefore corrupted, destroyed and parleyed into Human Good production from Evil.

### **Morality Arrogance vs Laws of Divine Establishment**

When a system created by Arrogance and self righteousness is substituted for or superimposed on the [Laws of Divine Establishment](#) morality or on Christian spirituality which is the absolute status of the Filling of God the Holy Spirit, the result is the Arrogance of Morality. Morality is not the means of function under the Laws of Divine Establishment but it is the result of such proper adherence and function such as:

- ▲ Paying taxes no matter how high or immoral etc.
- ▲ Serving in the military
- ▲ Respect for and entering Law Enforcement functions
- ▲ Serving in the government honorably

- ▲ Avoiding criminality
- ▲ Being honorable in marriage and parenthood
- ▲ Recognition of the privacy of others
- ▲ Respect for property and common rights of others
- ▲ Respect for another's Freedom

The Laws of Divine Establishment are the greatest system of morality ever to exist and when they are violated the individual or group so involved has become Arrogantly Immoral just as when anyone interferes with the privacy, property or freedom of others. This is why we have been given the Decalogue (ten commandments) whose subject is FREEDOM (not sin), and its purpose is to properly define freedom and relate it to some sins and some other functions which destroy freedom.

### **Interlocking of Morality Arrogance**

This is a Motivational Arrogance of Mental Attitude Arrogance and it rejects privacy and the principle of Live and Let Live. All Morality is based on Privacy and demands all people have their Privacy. **Criminal Arrogance** rejects the morality of both property and the right of others to pursue happiness. Psychopathic Arrogance is totally divorced from reality and the Laws of Divine Establishment morality and thus rejects all legitimate morality from sociopathic and psychopathic thinking and behavior. Crusader Arrogance always rejects the morality of establishment freedom. Negative Volition, **Institutional**, Crusader, **Conspiracy**, **Political**, **Client Nation**, **Authority**, **Unhappiness**, and **Iconoclastic Arrogance** all distort morality by being eclectic, picking and choosing what doctrinal or personal principles will be followed and using selfcenteredness as the norm for morality rather than the word of God. This is a basic failure of fundamental Christianity which has related their personal Arrogance, which is a system from Evil, to morality. When Evil is added to morality then morality loses the purpose of morality and becomes the **LEGALISM** which is found in Bible Colleges and Christian schools. When the believer substitutes morality for spirituality he then rejects the Grace policy of the Plan of God and accepts his own prejudices for the Christian Way of Life.

Morality is not the means but the result of spirituality and the Christian Way of Life. It is the result of OBEDIENCE to the TRUTH derived from Bible Doctrine including the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions. Therefore, true morality is the result of complying with Bible Doctrine and / or the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institution truths under the Filling of God the Holy Spirit. Both the Filling of God the Holy Spirit and the Laws of Divine Establishment and the Divine Institution's authority are systems of **Enforced Humility** which include:

- ▲ Parents over children
- ▲ Husband over wife
- ▲ Government and Law Enforcement over citizens, Management in business over labor
- ▲ Professor in classroom over students
- ▲ Coach in sports over athletes
- ▲ Pastor Teacher in Local Church over congregants
- ▲ ETC.

As a part of the function under the Laws of Divine Establishment and Bible Doctrine principles for the local church, orientation to authority in all of these categories especially that of the Pastor Teacher in the local church is part of TRUE morality.

Therefore Spirituality and the truths of the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions were designed by God for both believer and unbeliever in order to produce morality associated with [Humility](#) and [Integrity](#). The constitution of the United States of America will never be able to function properly unless the unbeliever is just as moral under the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institution functions as believers under Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of their Souls. Therefore, Morality does not belong ONLY to the believer but to the whole Human Race. It is the only basis for recognition of common rights such as privacy and freedom. No system of morality which involves the function of Arrogance is a true system of morality. All systems of morality which include Arrogance on the part of the individual make it an immoral system. **Morality + Any Arrogance == A System from Evil.**

### **Morality Arrogance in Government**

When congress in Arrogance passes laws or institutes rules under bureaucracies which are rules or laws concerning what individuals can do or not do and are designed to regulate social functions, which in fact are supposed to be OPTIONS for individuals in life, this is a system of gross Self Righteous morality and locked in Arrogance and is a direct part of true EVIL. This is an ongoing function in the American government which dramatically infringes more and more on freedom on a day by day basis. It is the true and legitimate responsibility of government to protect business from crusaders and crusader Arrogance just as it is the function of government under divine law to protect business from criminality. This means that believers OR unbelievers can be patriotic, moral and honorable OR unpatriotic, immoral and dishonorable. Unfortunately, very often, the unbeliever has more integrity and honor than the fundamentalist believer because of the believer's involvement in Morality Arrogance.

### **Morality and the Christian Way of Life**

Once the believer enters into the Cosmic Dynaspheres, the best he can only be is MORAL, but morality without integrity from the [Divine Dynasphere](#) and without Honor is LEGALISM, Arrogance and Self righteousness and in the Cosmic Dynaspheres morality is therefore, NON-VIRTUOUS. Morality only has honor and integrity inside the Divine Dynasphere. In the Divine Dynasphere, morality is Virtue and produces sensitivity, honor and integrity and is wonderful to behold. Morality in the Cosmic Dynasphere is minus Virtue and instead is concentrated Self Righteousness. Self Righteous Moral people are always hypersensitive to they own feelings and totally insensitive to the feelings of others. This is always accompanied by the blind siding involvement in Morality Arrogance, where one is proud of the morality he has developed but this is hypocrisy without Virtue. Morality is not spirituality because anything the unbeliever can do is not part of the Christian Way of Life. The Christian Way of Life is a supernatural way of life and demands a supernatural means of execution through the absolute of spirituality which is only the [Filling of God the Holy Spirit](#). Morality is conformity to the Laws of Divine Establishment including the authority, ethics, motivations, character, conduct, honor and integrity contained therein. It is also conformity to all of the Divine Institutions including



volitional freedom, marriage, family and government. It is imperative to understand that Christianity is not a morality system but a PERSONAL relationship with God beginning with personal faith alone in The Lord Jesus, The Christ alone. All the dynamics of Christianity and the Christian Way of Life are not related to the individual believer but to the ministry and the Filling of God the Holy Spirit producing something higher than morality in each and every believer.

Morality has definitive limitations which are ignored by Arrogance. It cannot provide salvation and Arrogance seeks salvation by works not by Grace through faith. It cannot provide spirituality, which in fact is the ABSOLUTE status of the Filling of God the Holy Spirit, and Arrogance seeks this also by systems of human effort works called legalism and again ignores Grace. It cannot advance the believer in the Plan of God or in the Spiritual Life, which can only occur through persistent Post Salvation Epistemological Rehabilitation by Perception, Cognition, Inculcation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine which requires the Filling of God the Holy Spirit and function under the Grace Apparatus for Perception. Arrogance again seeks and bases pseudo spiritual advance on, guess what, human effort works or production, from the influence of Evil. Arrogance bases spirituality and spiritual advance on morality and acceptable human effort works. Legitimate Christian production in witnessing, prayer, and other aspects of the Christian Way of Life, RESULT FROM the Filling of God the Holy Spirit and consistent spiritual advance in the Protocol Plan of God. Therefore, Arrogance says production is the MEANS of spirituality while God says production is the RESULT of spirituality and spiritual advance.

### **Morality Exposed**

Morality protects human freedom making possible evangelism and the proper functions of the Local Church. It is not a substitute for salvation nor spiritual growth in the Plan of God. Morality is not spirituality but spirituality includes morality. Morality fulfills the proper functions of the Divine Institutions of volitional freedom, marriage, family and government. The Interlocking System of Arrogance distorts morality into a system of unreality which opposes the Plan of God. Arrogance is the enemy of the Laws of Divine Establishment, the [Divine Institutions](#) and the Christian Way of Life. Only Self Righteous Arrogance uses morality as a means of spirituality or substitutes [Personal Ego](#) for the honor and integrity found within the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institution's Modus Operandi. [Humility](#) in life is the key to morality and there is no true morality apart from humility. The Authority delineated by the Laws of Divine Establishment is the norm for humility in life for both believer and unbeliever and the Filling of God the Holy Spirit is the STATUS of humility in the believer. Both are, in reality, [Enforced Humility](#). Enforced humility recognizes one's volition and his ability to respond to authority or reject it. When one gets out of fellowship through any sin he is no longer under humility in the Spiritual Life. Those who choose to dodge the draft, refuse military service, cheat on income tax all have some aspect of the Arrogance of morality and lack honor or integrity and have no humility which is essential for true morality. Self discipline derived from and based on personal volition or from function under the Filling of God the Holy Spirit in Christianity provides self imposed or Genuine Humility and all true morality is based on self discipline developed under the enforced discipline and enforced

humility. True Morality demands that both believers and unbelievers be law abiding citizens of the client nation, patriotic and dedicated to the doctrine of freedom and the authority needed to guarantee the freedom of all. Jehovah Witnesses, as an example, are very immoral and evil and anti-Christian because they are anti-government and their whole system is based on Arrogance and having no humility.

### **True Morality & Humility**

True Morality cannot exist without humility. The authority delineated by the Laws of Divine Establishment and detailed in the Divine Institutions including that of the Pastor Teacher of the Local Church who dogmatically teaches Bible Doctrine, are systems of enforced discipline designed to develop enforced humility. Everyone will, at some point have to face the issue of whether he will submit to the authority of someone who he dislikes, disagrees with or resents. If one makes an issue of the person over the policy of the organization or doesn't carry out the policy effectively, then he has substituted false morality for the true morality of the Laws of Divine Establishment.

Self discipline is the basis for concentration on anything in life. The one who has self discipline has humility. The one with humility and self discipline is also a great lover. This one can be a great administrator or a professional in any profession because he can concentrate. He learns to concentrate by making decisions to concentrate. As long as one can concentrate he is under genuine humility and this makes him great in whatever area his job may be. When one makes self discipline a habit it offsets the Interlocking System of Arrogance which can also become a habit. With consistent Perception, Cognition, Inculcation, Metabolization & Application of Bible Doctrine the Interlocking System of Arrogance will always lose out. This intake of Bible Doctrine inevitably causes radical personality changes in those who focus on humility, objectivity and **Flexibility**. This results in true morality in life. When one is miserable all the time he is involved in the Arrogance of selfcenteredness and **Self Righteousness** and **Self Pity**. This results in a lack of the ability to concentrate on what is important in life. One is truly Arrogant if the only person he can respect in life is self. The same self discipline which is used to concentrate and learn Bible Doctrine is the genuine humility for the application of Bible Doctrine to adversity or even to prosperity. Without genuine humility one cannot ever apply Bible Doctrine. Genuine humility is therefore derived from functioning under self discipline and this is the operation of the **Faith Rest Drill (5 stages)** in concentration to apply Bible Doctrine. Courage as a Virtue is self discipline combined with genuine humility resulting in the ability to think under pressure. Arrogance cannot think or concentrate whether under pressure or not. People who cannot concentrate under pressure are cowards, and cowardice is simply lack of the ability to THINK under pressure. The thinking of **Divine Viewpoint** using the Faith Rest Drill <sup>(5 stages)</sup> and Doctrinal Rationales requires Genuine humility and concentration and will bring the positive believer through all the disasters and crises of life.

True morality based on the Laws of Divine Establishment is for both believer and unbeliever and one of the worst fragments of the Arrogance Grenade for the believer's life is Self Righteousness interlocking into Morality Arrogance. Morality in itself is GOOD not bad and it

is converted to BAD by distortion of its purpose under Arrogance. There are therefore, 2 categories of Morality:

### True Morality

This is based on the Laws of Divine Establishment, and in similar fashion is designed for both believer and unbeliever. It is related to responsibility to government, society, legitimate authority, law, parents, wife to husband and vice versa, teachers, coaches, etc. It is a wonderful and a legitimate system but it is NOT the Christian Way of Life. However every Christian must be MORAL in the true sense but the problem with Christians is that they think, or are led to believe, that MORALITY is the Christian Way of Life, and as a result they enter into the Interlocking System of Arrogance so fast it is pitiful. They never learn the principles of forgiveness based on GRACE involved in the [Rebound Procedure](#) and as a result spend their entire lives trying to do as many good deeds as possible in the Cosmic Dynaspheres to satisfy God, thus serving Satan and not the Lord. True morality is a guardian of the Human Race and protection of freedom thus providing for evangelism and the right of all to hear the gospel and uncoerced respond to it or NOT and take in Bible Doctrine if so desired OR NOT! True Morality is also the basis for proper the functions within the 4 [Divine Institutions](#).

True Morality is many things today and is more that what is in the Decalogue of the Mosaic Law. It includes as illustrations:

- ▲ Paying taxes
- ▲ Serving in the military
- ▲ Respect for Law and Law Enforcement agencies
- ▲ Recognizing privacy
- ▲ ***Respect for freedom and willingness to give one's life for freedom***
- ▲ Recognition of the sacredness of property and human life

All of these demand that the subject of MORALITY possess [HUMILITY](#) and that Morality being always related to freedom moves the individual to:

- ▲ Make Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God through faith in The Lord Jesus, The Christ
- ▲ Learn and metabolize Bible Doctrine and grow in Grace

Arrogance distorts this morality into salvation and spirituality by human effort works and the bullying and tyranny which comes from [Personality Arrogance](#). Self Righteous Arrogance establishes false Norms and Standards out of the true Norms and Standards of the Laws of Divine Establishment Morality. This Pseudo Morality is part of the fragmented life of the believer living in the Cosmic Dynaspheres and is used by apostate Christians as a substitute for the true Modus Vivendi of the Christian Way of Life. In general believers are ignorant of Bible Doctrine as members of the Royal Family of God and the true tragedy is that they are, by and large, ignorant of the significance of the [Laws of Divine Establishment](#) and [Divine Institutions](#) and their function in protecting and preserving the Human Race.

Not Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God, nor spirituality nor blessings come from morality and thinking they do is the LEGALISM such as is found in religion. Because morality

is for both believer and unbeliever it is NOT the Christian Way of Life and therefore, [Virtue](#) derived from the [Filling of God the Holy Spirit](#) and [Metabolized Bible Doctrine](#) in the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul is higher than Morality and is the basis for the Christian Way of Life. The Protocol Plan of God can only be executed by the believer understanding and using the [40 assets](#) given by God at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God and NOT by being an Arrogantly super moral person.

When the whole realm of true morality and Virtue is generally ignored and destroyed in life this individual becomes a totally unstable disoriented person. Therefore, the Influence of Evil from consistent residence in the Cosmic Dynaspheres is the real enemy of true morality and true Virtue. All true morality is based on Virtue and when there is morality without Virtue it is the moral degeneracy of Arrogance. This is why the Laws of Divine Establishment are so important for all individuals to gain an understanding of HUMILITY and the BASIS for and KEY to true morality. Therefore, Establishment Authority is the NORM for development of Humility in life by both believer and unbeliever and the Filling of God the Holy Spirit is the BASIS for developing Virtue in life for the believer. True morality cannot be divorced from the fundamental Virtue of humility but the Arrogance of Cosmic Dynasphere I robs morality of its Virtue. Once Virtue is removed from morality it is replaced with Arrogance from Self Righteousness and once there is a strong Self Righteous society a system is established for REACTION to Self Righteousness. Self Righteousness is hypocrisy and Arrogance but Reaction to this is the toleration which becomes Moral DEGENERACY in the Interlocking System of Arrogance. This is illustrated by the Self Righteous American society before World War II which totally rejected Homosexuality and it was unimportant at that time to have laws prohibiting this because society cast these people out. Then the Self Righteousness was replaced by the toleration of the 60s and 70s and now since the 80s Americans have been living in a system inundated with both Moral and Immoral Degeneracy. This occurs by means of the involvement of the society in arrogance which breeds one form or another of [Fanaticism](#). Once one becomes a fanatic the only field of morality which is acceptable is his area of fanaticism but all other fields are then tolerated and Degeneracy begins.

### [Pseudo Morality](#)

The Self Righteous Arrogance of inordinately moral people is demonstrated as they come to God with their “moral” Way of Life and expect him to accept it for salvation or spirituality. They distort the wonderful thing known as Morality into a system of [Motivational Arrogance](#) under Legalistic Religious Self Righteous Arrogance which cannot be the source of Salvation nor of spirituality. ([Matt 19:16-26](#)) This is a distortion of the concepts and principles of morality used by BELIEVERS in the Cosmic Dynaspheres, in the various stages of [Reversionism](#). Especially when they are involved in Emotional Revolt of the Soul, Black Out of the Soul, Scar Tissue of the Soul, and Reverse Process Reversionism where they interfere in the lives and motivations of others. These believers are MORAL but their morality is distorted into a system of or motivated by Evil and from it comes cruelty. Religious Self Righteous Arrogance is clearly demonstrated by the Roman Catholics persecuting Jews in Spain during the Inquisition. This was the result of the thinking and motivation of very MORAL people and yet they burned at the stake first JEWS and later Protestant Christians. When Self Righteous Arrogance is added

to morality it results inevitably in the cruelty of persecution. Self Righteous Arrogance distorts human morality into the production of Human Good works from the influence of EVIL, from the source of the Cosmic Dynaspheres in opposition to the Protocol Plan of God. For Christians this involves relating the mechanics and principles of salvation and at times spirituality to Morality rather than to Faith ALONE in The Lord Jesus, The Christ ALONE or regarding spirituality which is the absolute status of the Filling of God the Holy Spirit. As a result many Christians are led to believe that they will receive blessing from God for being strictly and unwaveringly moral and good. Unfortunately for these people, Salvation is not the result of morality, legalism or any Human Good production and many Christians in the 1<sup>st</sup> century AD were distracted by JEWS who came in after Paul and the other Apostles and Pastor Teachers and convinced these new believers, especially the gentile believers, that they were NOT really saved unless they kept the Mosaic Law.

Keeping the law, being strictly moral, is not spirituality and does not provide for one's Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God, but it was and still is a false system of salvation and spirituality for both believers and unbelievers and probably the greatest ever known. In ½ of the books of Romans and Galatians there is a clear description that NOTHING can be ADDED to faith in Christ for making Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God. In Arrogance Man always wants to do something to EARN his salvation so that he can feel he deserves it and also wants to do something to be qualified to be spiritual. However, it is only the WORK of God which is sufficient and acceptable to God and it was the imputation and judgment of human sin in the humanity of The Lord Jesus, The Christ on the cross, and his Substitutionary Spiritual Death as payment for them, which is all that was necessary to provide the potential for Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God for every person. There is also the work of God the Holy Spirit making gospel information clear and real to the unbeliever in his spiritual death under Common Grace. Many believers want to add to salvation by faith ALONE, with commitment, lordship, baptism or inviting Christ into the garbage dump of their HEART, ETC. This state of total confusion is total Arrogance and the Christian side of involvement in the ultimate cause of the 5 cycles of Divine Discipline on their nation. This confusion is ultimately the result of the fragmentation of the life of a maximum number of believers who have pulled the Arrogance Grenade Pin and jumped willingly into the Interlocking System of Arrogance and as a result, under the influence of Evil, follow the trends of their Old Sin Nature in controlling the soul.

In communist china when the communists took over there were still missionaries there but they were not focused on the absolute truths of Bible Doctrine. The communists went to the mission complexes and solicited the cooperation of the missionaries telling them they would get rid of petty crime, drug abuse, prostitution and gambling houses and the missionaries agreed to cooperate NOT having TRUTH as their background but being focused on Morality as the Christian Way of Life. These missionaries could only think in terms of HUMAN MORALITY so they told the people to cooperate with the communists and surrender their weapons to them because they would help them. The missionaries were involved in Legalistic Self Righteous Arrogance and could not see the principle and picture of ORGANIZED EVIL and made an issue, just like all disillusioned fundamental Christians do, of PERSONAL MORALITY. The problem



NOT seen by these missionaries and most of the people in the United States of America today is that when someone comes and says they will take these immoral problems away from society they will also be taking away FREEDOM. Freedom belongs also to the drug abuser, the prostitute, the criminal, the gambler, and ALL of those who do not engage in these immoral activities, TO ACCEPT THE Substitutionary Spiritual Death of Christ on the cross for their personal Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God. These missionaries in china and most fundamental Christians in the Unites States of America today cannot see the simple point of Bible Doctrine in Category I Truth of the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions. Therefore, this Morality minus Virtue is Self Righteous Arrogance and a fundamental PART OF EVIL. Morality provides the ability and RIGHT of the believer and unbeliever, whether moral or immoral, to live side by side and respect the privacy and freedom of each other. The Christian Way of Life is not morality it is a divine system of Virtue which is FAR greater than Morality and under Virtue the individual takes cognizance of the Old Sin Nature while Morality does not. The missionaries to the Chinese could not understand or associate doing something to cause pseudo morality, with EVIL. The communists did in fact close the prostitution houses, the gambling houses and the Opium dens thus the people could not go there any longer. However, the communists opened schools and required attendance to indoctrinate the people, especially the children into accusing even their parents who opposed communism in the Chinese people's courts and thus cause them to be executed.

Fanaticism and Inflexibility are part of arrogance and many believers fall into this as a result of involvement in Self Righteous Arrogance where they first develop a system of inflexible morality MINUS Virtue. In this system with their inflexibility they then become Cosmic Dynasphere Evangelists, as believers, being zealous, inflexible and implacable. It is inevitable that the more inflexible one becomes the more inconsistent one's life becomes. Self Righteous people virtually and invariably deny the existence of the Old Sin Nature and their own constant sinning. Once the Self Righteous believer becomes impressed with how wonderful he is because of his MORALITY, which is minus Virtue, he becomes inconsistent and very hypocritical. Unbelievers who are pulled into the Cosmic Dynaspheres and who become closely involved with pseudo morality without Virtue, Zeal without Knowledge and implacability and inflexibility inevitably become eligible for Cosmic Dynasphere Evangelist status. Any satanic evangelists MUST practice Hypocrisy which is the natural result of being MORAL without Virtue in Self Righteous Arrogance and Crusader Arrogance. (Rom 16:18, Matt 7:15) This is the legalistic trend where people become involved in MORAL Degeneracy and are considered to be great believers while in fact they are fragmented losers in the Christian Way of Life.

S

### The Protocol Plan of God, Morality & Virtue

In the Protocol Plan of God, Spiritual Self Esteem motivates the development of Virtue Love by leading into Spiritual Autonomy where Problem Solving Devices 7 & 8 are completed. When the Integrity Envelope is completely embraced in all of the aspects of Motivational Virtue this is the Virtue necessary to support and provide strength for morality as Functional Virtue which is directed toward MAN. This is where the believer can use his royal priesthood to solve his own problems. Impersonal, Unconditional Love for Mankind cannot occur when there is only morality. MORALITY minus Virtue == Self Righteous Arrogance and Self Righteous people are

not good lovers or good for anything. Impersonal, Unconditional Love for Mankind depends on the complete development of all the [10 characteristics of Spiritual Adulthood](#) and moving through Spiritual Autonomy. Therefore, Morality plus Virtue == the Problem Solving Devices of Virtue Love in the Christian Way of Life. However, Morality is designed by God for the ENTIRE Human Race to stabilize society and to give every individual privacy, freedom, sacredness of property and life. Neither moral or immoral people solve their own personal problems and the unbeliever can be very moral but morality cannot provide either salvation or solutions to the problems of his life. There is NOTHING WRONG WITH MORALITY and the proper function of the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions are dependent on it however morality is not a Problem Solving Device.

Therefore, it is the Protocol Plan of God, with the [Royal Family Honor Code](#), which produces something HIGHER than morality by consistent residence of the believer in the Divine Dynasphere, and this is Virtue. In the Protocol Plan of God, the believer progressively develops the [10 Problem Solving Devices](#) and builds their [Edification Complex of the Soul](#) which results from consistent residence within the [Divine Dynasphere](#) the POWER system of God. The Christian Way of Life is, therefore, far greater than Morality. Morality is in fact the proper function of the entire Human Race living under the [Laws of Divine Establishment](#) and [Divine Institutions](#). Virtue is the result of the believer consistently living in the Divine Dynasphere and attaining the 3 stages of the [Sophisticated Spiritual Life](#):

- ▲ Spiritual Self Esteem
- ▲ Spiritual Autonomy
- ▲ Spiritual Maturity

The key to developing Virtue is residence consistently within the Divine Dynasphere under the enabling power of God the Holy Spirit with the momentum developed from maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul. Therefore, Christianity does not reject morality but assigns it its proper place so that the Christian Way of Life requires Virtue to be first and this must be added to Morality to avoid LEGALISM and the resultant fragmentation of one's life. In addition, [Grace Orientation](#) must be added to morality and without it the life of the believer will be fragmented by his pulling the pin of some aspect of the Arrogance grenade. Some unbelievers can be fantastically moral and by adding the Virtue from the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions to their morality become truly wonderful people who very often outshine the believers with their fragmented lives. The believer with a fragmented life is not living and executing the Protocol Plan of God for his life and is not living in the Divine Dynasphere. Virtue begins as residence in the Divine Dynasphere with Virtue Love as:

- ▲ Personal Love for God as motivational Virtue
- ▲ Impersonal or Unconditional Love for Mankind as functional Virtue
- ▲ Advanced Personal Love for God, Occupation with the Person of The Lord Jesus, The Christ, as the priority solution to life.

Morality Arrogance is ignorance and the interlocking with Self Righteous Arrogance by the believer who has pulled the pin of the Arrogance Grenade and substituted Morality for his

Christian Way of Life as a result of temptation from the Area of strength of his Old Sin Nature. By making morality the focus of his life, his area of strength in his Old Sin Nature distorts morality into legalism. This requires, or results in, total ignorance of Bible Doctrine and entanglement in Self Righteous Arrogance to substitute, under the influence of Evil, human morality for divine Virtue. Therefore it is Arrogance from Cosmic Dynasphere I which robs morality of its true divine purpose and substitutes Self Righteousness. Self Righteous Arrogance establishes false Norms and Standards to add to its distortion of Morality which makes morality LOOK bad when in reality it is great BUT ONLY IN ITS PROPER Frame of Reference. Self Righteous Arrogance superimposes false standards on MORALITY and then demands everyone follow this pattern. The proper Frame of Reference for morality is the believer being HUMBLE and functioning under true humility. For the believer this is ONLY developed by residence and function at Gate #3 of the Divine Dynasphere, [The Authority Envelope](#) where both ENFORCED and GENUINE HUMILITY are developed which keep the believer from fragmenting his life. It is imperative what the believer remember always that *“God makes war against the Arrogant”, because Arrogance is the basis for the Plan of Satan, EVIL, which takes morality and distorts it into a system of LEGALISM which excludes Grace and is outside the true Christian Way of Life.* The Arrogance of Morality assigns functions and purposes to morality which GOD never intended in his invention of Morality for the Human Race and which the Human Race cannot survive without. Therefore, Morality must always be accompanied by Humility and any entrance of Human Good production efforts for Salvation, spirituality, blessing from God is a blasphemous trinity of a fragmented Christian life.

Return to the [Table of Contents](#)

#### **Gate #44 – The Arrogance Regarding Eternal Security**

At Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God through faith alone in the Substitutionary Spiritual Death of The Lord Jesus, The Christ alone, God the Holy Spirit creates a replacement Human Spirit for the one Adam lost for the Human Race. At that point God imputes to that Human Spirit Eternal Life and there is nothing any person or any other creature can do to separate the believer from his human spirit and that eternal life. This is Eternal Security which is the foundation for [ALL HOPE](#) and CONFIDENCE in the Christian Way of Life. To suggest that there is something the believer can do to gain, or worse yet, to lose Eternal Life as a result of his own good deed efforts or failures through sin is absolute total Arrogance. At Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God the imputation by God of Eternal Life to the regenerated Human Spirit is a PERMANENT arrangement. Any Thinking other than this can and does destroy all proper motivation for advancement or growth in the Spiritual Life. The disoriented believers who think in these terms always succumb to the pressures of adversity and assume their sufferings are greater than the Plan of God. Eternal Security is what provides ABSOLUTE CONFIDENCE in the Plan of God knowing that one's failure or success cannot cause faltering of the plan and cannot result in one ever losing his SALVATION. The [Arrogant Pride](#), of thinking that there is some sin one can commit or failure one can engage in for which God will kick one out of his plan and eternal heaven, is the epitome of Arrogance and a complete

lack of understanding of the [GRACE](#) principles upon which the Plan of God is based. SIN IN THE ANGELIC CONFLICT IS INCONSEQUENTIAL AND IS NOT AND CANNOT BE AN ISSUE in the Plan of God and in fact is not part of the Plan of Satan though use by him constantly when it occurs to distract the believer from the Plan of God. ALL human sin has been judged at the Cross in the Humanity of The Lord Jesus, The Christ who paid the penalty with his Substitutionary Spiritual Death for each and every one and at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God believers are all cleansed from all prior sins and then given the option of using the [Rebound Procedure](#) for all subsequent sins. Therefore, as a result the believer is forgiven all named or acknowledged sins and purified from all unnamed sins, ([1John 1:9](#)) therefore, SIN IS NOT EVER AN ISSUE IN THE Plan of God. The issue for all mankind is making a choice between the Plan and Policy of Satan called EVIL vs the Plan and Policy of God called GRACE, choosing the Divine Good production of The Lord Jesus the Christ in his Substitutionary Spiritual Death for sin vs the Human Good production one can engage in under the Plan of Satan. Unfortunately for many people, Pride rejects Grace and Accepts Evil.

Therefore, the most arrogant people in the world are those who think they can lose their salvation. They have the colossal nerve to think they can commit a sin which Christ had not paid for, which God the Father cannot forgive and which will cancel out the Plan of God. This is the epitome of Arrogance but even under these conditions they cannot lose their Salvation after they have made proper [Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God](#). The believer enters into salvation by a GRACE means from the work of God and he cannot change that by adding to it nor subtracting from it. The Indwelling of God the Holy Spirit ([1John 2:27](#), [Gal 5:17-18](#)) given to him at salvation is a guarantee that he has Eternal Life and eternal salvation and NO ONE can ever take this from him. The believer has Eternal Security because of the regeneration of his Human Spirit by God the Holy Spirit at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God and thereby is born into the family of God and cannot be BORN OUT OF IT. The believer, when he says or thinks some sin he has committed will cause him to lose his salvation, is indicating that he is the BIGGEST JACKASS IN CHRISTIANITY AND ALSO THE MOST ARROGANT JACKASS. He is so full of Arrogance that he thinks he can commit a sin which is GREATER THAN THE PLAN OF [GOD](#). To think that he, all by his little self, can commit a sin which will cancel the plan or promise of God is the most arrogant thing imaginable. It demonstrates that he has his head stuck so far up into the WRONG part of his anatomy that he cannot see daylight and to recover at all he MUST get away from his focus on SIN. Just because some sins are shocking to believers does not mean God gets shocked by those sins. The believer must face the reality than in Eternity Past God decided to create and as a result of being omniscient he knew everything which would and could occur as a result of that creation. HE KNEW, so long ago that the human mind cannot comprehend how long ago that was, that every BELIEVER would constantly fail. YET HE STILL CREATED. He has known about all one's personal sins long before the individual ever existed and ever committed them and at that time, LONG AGO, He made provision for them with the Substitutionary Spiritual Death of Christ on the cross way back in Eternity Past. How arrogant must a person be to think he can disturb this plan, a plan which he cannot even truly begin to comprehend?

## **The Shepherd & The Lamb**

When the lamb gets out of the fold and wanders into the mountains HE IS STILL A SHEEP. When the believer gets out of fellowship and gets into carnality he is still a believer, a member of the Royal Family of God, having been born into this family by his own choice to make Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God and he still has his Eternal Salvation and Eternal Life, this is his Eternal Security. ([Eph 1:4-6](#), [John 10:27-30](#), [Rom 8:32](#), [Rom 8:38-39](#), [Ps 37:24](#)) Once one chooses Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God through faith alone in the Substitutionary Spiritual Death of The Lord Jesus, The Christ alone God provides **39 Irrevocable Assets** for his life and **NOTHING** can change this EVER! These are uncancelable assets for the believer's life and since God is Perfect these assets are perfect and since God is permanent these assets are permanent thus NOTHING and NO ONE can ever change or cancel them, NOT EVEN GOD HIMSELF. It takes an incredible level of Arrogance to think that some sin one could commit will cause him to lose his salvation or that he has already committed such a bad sin that God cannot save him in the first place. This is the incredible Arrogance involved in the thinking that anyone can do something for which GOD cannot have a solution. There is nothing worse than the SORRY believer who thinks he must WORK and EARN his way into Heaven and into the Plan of God. The Plan of God is a GRACE based plan therefore making this a complete inconsistency in thinking. In this area of Arrogance the believer MUST be very careful to consider only HIS OWN status and not that of any other person since focus on the Eternal Security status of others will be what instantly puts that believer INTO THAT SAME STATUS of ARROGANCE. [1Pet 1:4-5](#) tells us that EVERY lamb, whether residing in the fold or having strayed out of the fold, has an inheritance and this will be presented to the believer lamb at the [Judgment Seat of Jesus Christ](#). The Shepherd, The Lord Jesus, The Christ, leaves the flock in safety and goes and seeks the one who has gone astray. When the believer gets out of fellowship, as long as he lives in this status, the Lord is SEEKING HIM. He is seeking to stimulate or convince this failing, carnal believer, to get back in fellowship, back to the fold of the flock. If this believer persists in staying OUT of the Plan of God out of Fellowship with God then the Lord will simply spank him. He will be spanked literally to the point of DEATH which brings this lamb permanently back into the fold, face to face with the Lord in heaven where he cannot stray ever again. The only way to recover from going astray and return to the fold for the lamb is the use of [1John 1:9](#) the [Rebound Procedure](#). The Shepherd who is SEEKING the straying lamb is The Lord Jesus, The Christ offering him the opportunity to get back into the fold, but even this straying lamb will be with the Lord after his death. ([John 10:1-21](#), [John 10:27-30](#))

Return to the [Table of Contents](#)

## **Gate #45 – The Arrogance Regarding Equality**

People who think in terms of equality in the Human Race are saturated with and totally entangled in the Interlocking System of Arrogance and they demand rights which they cannot understand nor fulfill. Freedom GUARANTEES inequality as a result of volitional functions with regard to the drive of the individual to Fail or Succeed. Big government, little people and



liberalism produces Arrogance and Arrogance assumes the prerogatives of God and destroys Freedom with a ploy called EQUALITY. In essence Equality can be considered a synonym for EVIL and equality is NEVER an Issue in life but VOLITIONAL Responsibility always is. Generally, the people in the United States of America are totally willing to sell their heritage of Freedom for a mess of pottage called security under the false principle of Equality. They are willing to give up Freedom for a free ride on medical coverage or welfare, guaranteed wages from labor unions, etc. There is one thing which completely destroys the youth of a nation and that is the young being taught to think in terms of security in place of Freedom. This totally destroys them from the inside out. Thinking in terms of security is for the WEAK MINDED elderly individuals but considering how many people of all ages in the United States of America think in this way what does that say about this once great nation? As a believer there is absolutely NO EXCUSE for ever thinking in these terms. Freedom is the primary issue of life and in fact it is the KEY to the resolution of the Angelic Conflict Appeal Trial and the reason the Human Race exists in the first place. The believer should relish being free to try new ideas, experiment in life and advance OR DECLINE and try to make a living in a variety of ways which may interest him personally. Today the young want a guaranteed income and that everyone should be made equal. People constantly and erroneously think that everyone who does the same job should get the same pay, and if they made the same salary as great business men or professionals that they would then be equal. This is total Arrogance and these people cannot ever substitute this Arrogance for true ability and cannot ever be as good as the one who works for his advances in life. The people who talk about equality are the truly Arrogant ones of the society. They don't actually mean that they want equality but, in reality, they want something for nothing so that they can prove their superiority to those who have far greater ability than they. This is a huge soul hangup above all others. No one can really get ahead in any area of life in this manner.

Arrogance, being the basis for Satan's policy of EVIL, is divorced from reality. Evil always thinks in terms of equality while God under GRACE with its divine standards thinks only in terms of SUPERIORITY AND INFERIORITY. Equality is tied to opportunity and consideration under the law by the United States constitution and in this sense it is related to the fundamental concept of the American War for independence which was Freedom. In essence this means that everyone is treated equally, fairly and justly under the law (unfortunately this is no longer the case) and that equality is having the OPPORTUNITY to advance as far as one can go based on one's own motivation and ability OR NOT and as a result then decline into oblivion. By using Freedom some people will advance to greatness and some not at all and as a result one can unquestionably see that Freedom ALWAYS creates greater inequalities than had previously existed. Great Inequalities are essential in the preservation of the Human Race since only a few in the Human Race have the ability to take care of the rest of the Human Race. When there is Freedom in society, this means that those with ability advance to where they can take care of those who cannot advance. THESE are the ones with honor, integrity and virtue who function under the concept of taking care of the weak and infirm and punishing the slothful and criminal. People in the United States and especially believers have lost their identification as being a part of the Royal Family of God. They should be advancing to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God from accumulation of maximum Metabolized Bible

Doctrine into the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul but are instead are involved with Emotionalism, social gospel and even socialism. Equality is not now nor has it ever been the objective of Freedom. THE BELIEVER MUST GET IT THROUGH HIS HEAD, Freedom leads to greater inequality and being a believer in the Royal Family of God and a Royal Priest will lead to the greatest inequalities ever in both his life in time and in eternity in heaven. However, inequality in heaven does not mean imperfection and every believer in eternity will have both a Resurrection Body of perfection and maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in his soul for maximum capacity to enjoy everything in his status quo in heaven to the maximum. In life and history those people who talk most about demanding equality have already recognized their inferiority and Arrogance and as a result are very disturbed about it. In the garden, the woman had both an authority problem and an equality problem and this same occurrence is clearly demonstrated in the women's lib movement today. She made inequality and authority an issue as a result of her Arrogance. Inequality never is a problem nor an issue in the Grace Plan of God and it does not hinder happiness or success in life if the person is functioning under Humility.

### Equality and Eternity

The believer in The Lord Jesus, The Christ, despite all of his failures, even to the point of involvement in Reversionism resulting in the Sin Unto Death, will have a resurrection body and be in a perfect place provided by perfect God, HOWEVER, there will be NO EQUALITY. As a consequence the idea of equality in this life on earth is meaningless and people are not even happy when they are said to be equal under the law. However, equality is, in reality, not ever an issue in life, but Freedom is, and must always be, the PRIMARY issue in life. Freedom is the basis for being able to choose for or against Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God through faith alone in The Lord Jesus, The Christ alone. No one is ever equal to others in life and the only way to approach equality is through Arrogance especially Pride and even this, in fact, results in greater inequality. This same false system of rationalism which brings into the thinking the idea of equality today, brings greater Arrogance and thinking in terms of superiority tomorrow. When laws are passed which try to say people are equal and try to solve social, political, and economic problems by legislation, these same laws will say tomorrow that these lawmakers are superior people and the result is the creation of destruction, anarchy, unrest and ultimately tyranny. Observe the fundamental support of the "black lives matter" and "antifa" groups by the democratic party and the Chinese communists in 2020.

Property is an essential part of Freedom and there cannot be Freedom or motivation under free enterprise unless one owns personal property. The success of others in life should bring to everyone delight not envy and it should provide motivation under Freedom and free enterprise for personal achievement. This has been a part of the American way of life since the inception of the United States of America but it has faded out today. All motivation in any system of Freedom or in any government under Freedom is based on the fact that one can use his personal free will to advance OR retrogress and he is what he is based totally on the function of his own self determination. Equality comes along and says that one is supposed to be the same as everyone else and that there is no such thing as aristocracy nor success, a concept which is in truth absolutely ludicrous. This is how communism comes along and gives

Arrogance to the common man and the scum of society and they, having Arrogance, are thereby very susceptible to manipulation and conquest. Function in the Plan of God is based on Volition and Freedom of Choice and some individuals will enter the Plan of God and some will not. Therefore, as a result of the individual's decisions, some will go to Heaven and some to Hell (the Lake of Fire) after their life on this earth is ended. Some in the Plan of God will advance in the Spiritual Life through consistent Perception, Cognition, Incultation & Metabolization of Bible Doctrine and some will not. Therefore some will receive **Super – Grace** or **Ultra Super – Grace** blessing in time and some will not. Therefore, some will receive UNIMAGINABLE temporal as well as eternal blessing and reward and **some will not** but ALL believers in Christ will be face to face with the Lord when their life is over. There is no equality in the Plan of God but there is Freedom. The **Laws of Divine Establishment** provide the Freedom necessary to allow the unbeliever to accept The Lord Jesus, The Christ as savior or **NOT**. The Laws of Divine Establishment also provide the Freedom to allow the positive believer to advance in the Spiritual Life through maximum Perception, Cognition, Incultation & Metabolization of Bible Doctrine or move into the Apostasy of Reversionism and failure. The Laws of Divine Establishment provide the Freedom to allow the believer to maintain or continue the mature Spiritual Life to glorify The Lord Jesus, The Christ to the maximum **OR NOT**. The entirety of the Spiritual Life as a function of the Plan of God to resolve the Angelic Conflict all depends on Freedom and self determination. With this Freedom there must be duly constituted authority which protects Freedom and without authority Freedom cannot continue. Today, in our society, there must be a return of authority in the realm of the control of children in the home, control of crime in Law Enforcement, and legitimate control in government, military functions, business, and especially in education, in order to allow individuals to properly function in life under Freedom. One must use his Freedom and self determination and always take responsibility for his personal decisions, and as a believer, he must have motivation to continue momentum in the Christian Way of Life.

### **Equality Myth**

There never, ever, is equality in life in any area. Freedom of opportunity is EQUALITY OF OPPORTUNITY but this Freedom always results in the greatest inequalities which make some believers strong and some weak, some individuals successful and wealthy and some poor and failures. Any time there is true Freedom with opportunity this Freedom is the sphere of operation for life and function and some use the Freedom to go down in life and some to go up. Everyone who wants equality, the blacks, Hispanics, moslems, etc., in reality, their Arrogance only really wants superiority. When they are given equality of opportunity and Freedom some sit on their asses and collect socialistic welfare payments and others work hard, advance in their Status Quo in life and do extremely well. From the beginning, the United States Constitution has said neither RACE nor CREED nor Religion is ever an issue and to make one of these an issue demonstrates and advertises one's Arrogance.

Freedom cannot exist without the umbrella of authority. In addition, Freedom and Equality cannot coexist and Freedom cannot guarantee nor manufacture equality in the Human Race. When one has true Freedom he is free to advance as far as his desires and ability will legally take him BUT he is also free to be a bum, a criminal and a failure in life. This does not occur

today in the new American system since the government supports the bums today with the profits from the producers and true criminals are rarely properly punished. The government by supporting the bums solicits, and in fact gains, their support in destroying the Laws of Divine Establishment and the [Divine Institutions](#) in the United States of America. When the Laws of Divine Establishment are removed from a society then inevitably tyranny replaces them. Equality destroys Freedom and certain events, such as the gas rationing in the 70s and required health care insurance in the early 21<sup>st</sup> century, seek to make everyone equal and this destroys their Freedom. The government in the United States has sought to destroy Freedom in every aspect of life and society for many decades and this is the reason the scum get away with rioting and looting during “demonstrations” and why American faces the greatest crime wave of its history. Invariably in every society some use Freedom to advance and some to retrogress under the principle of self determination and each has the right to go their own way as long as they are not involved in crime and not interfering with someone else’s Freedom in some way.

Freedom is the reality of life while equality is the great myth of life. As long as one understands Freedom as part of the Laws of Divine Establishment with its authority under the Divine Institutions, he is functioning properly in life. When he says no to Freedom he starts to build up [Scar Tissue of the Soul](#) since Freedom is a part of the Absolute Truth found in the Bible Doctrine principles of the Laws of Divine Establishment. By this rejection one then increases his level of Arrogance and can only believe the LIE of every EVIL satanic system involving socialism, welfare state functions, even communism. The LIE is equality, socialism, welfare, communism, religion, islam, etc. This is what happened to Thomas Jefferson and with his concentrated Scar Tissue of the Soul, he compromised Freedom and came up with the erroneous theory that “all men are created equal” and must be equal in all aspects of life. Freedom is truth and equality is a LIE. People believe the LIE today because the scum are Arrogant not because of [Logistical Grace](#) support from God but as a result of support from government under the principles and functions of EVIL. Freedom ALWAYS guarantees inequality not equality. Especially in heaven there will be phenomenal inequality and some will have great blessing and decoration for their Resurrection Body and some none. Equality is the device of the Arrogant and is the disorientation of the sociopath while Freedom is the motivation of [Grace Orientation](#). Forced equality is the policy of dictators and tyrants but also the basis for Satan’s Cosmic Dynaspheres, the pseudo millennium of socialism and the welfare state. Freedom is an Integral Part of the Policy of God in the creation of the Human Race to resolve the Angelic Conflict and is dogmatic and [Inflexible regarding the Essentials of life](#) and reality, while being flexible and pliable regarding the non essentials of life. Therefore, Freedom is common sense orientation to reality including [Respect for Authority](#), privacy and property. Under the Laws of Divine Establishment Freedom and authority are mated and one cannot exist without the other. In the Spiritual Life, Freedom without the authority of Bible Doctrine is [Antinomianism](#) and Authority without Freedom in the Spiritual Life is [Legalism](#).

Again, Freedom and Equality CANNOT coexist. This is where Arrogance begins and why people and this nation both have now failed. The plans of nations operating under the principles of Evil and the conspiracies of people functioning under Evil are always directed against human Freedom. In Arrogance the liberal, by his plans based on EVIL, seeks the

equality of mankind which is in fact a non-reachable distorted dream. That Arrogant nation seeks to fulfill its plans by conquest and tyranny based totally on EVIL. This is the motivation and design behind both Russian and Chinese Communism. The principles of both equality and tyranny attack Freedom. Man is supposed to use his Freedom to advance or fail, to be Humble or Arrogant, to be carnal or spiritual. Freedom is the reality while equality is simply a myth. Equality is the device of EVIL and the battle cry of the degenerate. Attempts at forced equality is the policy of tyrants and the conspiracy of the Arrogant, and today is the national domestic policy in America based totally on EVIL. Under the Laws of Divine Establishment, Freedom and Authority are 2 sides of the same coin. Where authority is rejected Freedom cannot exist. For the people of any nation to have capacity for Freedom they must be mature. Immature people are led around by others who are functioning under EVIL or are degenerate and they distort Freedom and eventually destroy it. The greater the participation of the people in Arrogance based on Evil the greater the national degeneration and more there is a loss of Freedom.

There is and always will be a differentiation of classes in any society and this is due to differences in drive and ambition based on Freedom and its proper function. Those who are successful result in a type of aristocracy, especially in the client nation. All systems of aristocracy start out historically based on ability, integrity and honor but eventually, after the 3<sup>rd</sup> generation, turn into something involving the degeneracy of Arrogance when the people cannot stand the prosperity they have inherited and develop a hollow shell of Arrogance. This is what happens in any system of aristocracy and is not only true in nations where there are monarchies but also in the free nations such as the United States of America. There is an American aristocracy hidden under terms couched in liberty and Freedom with the worst description being EQUALITY. Equality as a myth is the sworn enemy of Freedom and there never has nor will be equality in the Human Race from birth to death. Equality is the communist system of propaganda for conquest and they speak of it to the poor, appealing to their Arrogance, there by causing social upheaval. In every society those most prone to Arrogance are always the lower classes and this is the dominating status in the lower classes and the system by which communism has successfully conquered 2/3 of the world today. It is a system directly from Satan and links communism directly to Satan.

### **Provision and Maintenance of Freedom**

Therefore, Equality is a myth and is SATANIC in its origin and is and has been used by communists to break down a nations internal Freedoms for conquest while they, themselves, have never believed in equality but only use it to conquer others. Some peasant or student in Iran or Iraq cannot ever run their country like the Shaw of Iran did. You cannot ever even think that some bum in a tenement housing project can run a business and be responsible for a big payroll and see that thousands have jobs, this is the totally sloppy, stupid thinking of Reversionism, pettiness, Jealousy and all aspects of Arrogance. The most Arrogant people in the world are the poor down trodden people who always make an issue of their social status or their race. On the other hand people like George Patton and Douglas MacArthur, who were totally confident in their own abilities, were universally criticized as being Arrogant but were in fact not even the slightest bit Arrogant. The bums and scum on the American streets, the



hippies, gangs, many Hispanics and blacks today are totally Arrogant. Today, people have no clue as to what Arrogance or love really is until these have been defined by scripture. Many Christians today and in the past have gotten involved in revolution and even think today in terms of socialism, which always has been and is now for the United States self destructive, as the answer for this nation. Americans have been destroying themselves internally as a nation and will certainly have a great destructive disaster in the near future as a result of the systematic destruction of their Freedoms from their involvement in Arrogance.

The Laws of Divine Establishment always emphasize Freedom, Self Determination, and INEQUALITY. Equality becomes the lying propaganda of the revolutionist seeking to sway public opinion and gain power and control over the masses by exploiting their Arrogance, strong delusions, and their lust patterns. The believer should know, that all Freedom is provided and preserved through military victory and all Freedom for Americans has been purchased on battlefields where the blood of military men has been shed so that all the people have the privilege of being evangelized and coming to church and growing in grace and knowledge of The Lord Jesus, The Christ, OR NOT! Freedom is a principle of Bible Doctrine and the invention of God so that the Human Race can fulfill its divine purpose and destiny in the resolution of the Angelic Conflict. (See "[The Angelic Conflict](#)", by R. B. Thieme Jr.) The greatest problem in this United States of America is that Freedom and equality cannot coexist and equality is the enemy of Freedom and the liberal controlling interests in the government believe equality is to be valued over Freedom. The concept of Equality is an integral part of a system of conquest and the destruction of Freedom for the development of tyranny. Believers are to be totally free to advance by Perception, Cognition, Inculcation & Metabolization of Bible Doctrine or be retrogress under Negative Volition toward Bible Doctrine and enter reversionism. There is, therefore, as a result of true Freedom in both time and eternity, great inequality in time on earth and this will also be true in eternity in heaven. By this nation ignoring the fact that Equality is a way to destroy Freedom and is a myth and Freedom is a reality, the key to human life and is an invention of God, America has put itself on the brink of a great national crisis.

Return to the [Table of Contents](#)

#### **Gate #46 – The Arrogance of Inversion**

Inversion as a technical theological term is a situation where the responsibilities and thus the resultant blessings of one or a group are turned over to the one or group toward which those responsibilities were to be directed and the redirected responsibilities are then toward the first individual or group by the second.

#### **The Inversion Defined**

The Inversion is a situation in human history whereby the Jews, (or any believer or client

nation) as a result of consistent Negative Volition, especially with regard to the “Big Blot Out” concerning The Lord Jesus, The Christ, have been placed under the 5<sup>th</sup> cycle of Divine Discipline by God and have lost the responsibility for preservation, protection and dissemination of Bible Doctrine to gentile groups. This Jewish Inversion has occurred 2 times in history. The first was the Babylonian captivity of Jeremiah’s Day when the surviving Jews from the Chaldean invasion of Judah were taken to Babylon as slaves and the priest nation of Israel was totally removed from its function for God. At that time, for a relatively short period of 70 years, the Persians and other gentiles took over the responsibility for the preservation, protection and dissemination of the Gospel of Christ and Bible Doctrine in general. Today the Church Age is the “Great Inversion” as a result of the Jews again expressing [LOCKED IN Negative Volition](#) toward the God of Abraham, Isaac and Jacob and engaging in the Big Blot Out totally rejecting everything concerning the 1<sup>st</sup> advent of The Lord Jesus, The Christ. The Inversion results from the Jews losing their status of Priest Nation to God and ONLY gentile nations being able to take up the responsibility regarding Bible Doctrine. In essence the responsibilities and position of the Jews and Gentiles is reversed or “Inverted”. In effect gentile believers have taken the responsibility from the Jew with regard to representing God to the world and have been given the charge of being Royal Ambassadors for Christ in this Church Age. This period of Inversion began in 70 AD and in this Church Age the Inversion has thus far lasted approximately 2000 years.

The Inversion finds gentiles without the spiritual heritage of the Old Testament Scripture not only Accepting by faith alone The Lord Jesus, The Christ and his Substitutionary Spiritual Death but advancing to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God. ([Is 65:1](#)) All the while, Jews, with total divine revelation in their Old Testament Scripture heritage, reject Him as Christ, Messiah, the savior, and enter into [Black out of the Soul](#) and [Scar Tissue of the Soul](#) as a result of moving into [Reversionism](#). The Inversion is composed of regenerate gentile believers vs the majority of Jews as unbelievers. In the Inversion the believing gentiles possess the Righteousness of God and the unbeliever Jews possess only their own Self Righteousness. By this, the Inversion sets up a contrast between the Righteousness of God imputed to gentiles at [Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God](#) and the Self Righteousness of the Jewish unbeliever who rejects Christ. God only excepts His Absolute Righteousness and rejects the Self Righteousness of the Jews which is one of the basic manifestations of Arrogance. The Inversion results in the God of Israel blessing the gentiles and punishing the Jews. Punishment by Inversion results from Jewish [Self Righteous Arrogance](#) and [Mental Attitude Arrogance](#) especially involving [Jealousy](#) toward the gentiles. When there is jealousy in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul it is a symptom of a far greater involvement in the Interlocking System of Arrogance. Jealousy is a [Petty](#) sin and derived directly from Evil but it is not the originator since NO ONE can be jealous without either some other Overt or [Blind Arrogance](#).

Therefore, when the Jews reject The Lord Jesus, The Christ and blot out the 1<sup>st</sup> advent from their soul they are punished by Inversion where there is salvation and blessing for those they scorn from their Arrogance. They scorn the gentile knowing he does not have their background or heritage and that he is not as smart as they are. However, in Inversion, the gentile believer receives blessing from God and the Jew as an unbeliever receives cursing as Divine Discipline

because of his Negative Volition. In Inversion the Jews become jealous of the gentiles even though they only have themselves to blame for the situation. This always occurs during adverse situations in life and the Jews, like all people in general, always find a patsy when they are in trouble and always blame others but it never occurs to them to blame themselves.

### **Arrogance of Inversion**

Inversion Arrogance occurs when the gentile believer as part of the Great Inversion assumes superiority over the Jewish unbeliever because the Jews, in effect, are branches of the olive tree of the Plan of God which have broken off. Because God has disciplined the Jew there are spiritual 'RED NECK' gentile believers who look down their noses at the Jewish unbeliever in effect saying the Jews are getting what they deserve because of the crucifixion of Christ. Believers must recognize that it was God who put that judgment of the 5<sup>th</sup> cycle of Divine Discipline on Israel in AD 70, and this discipline had to do with a lot of things but NOT the crucifixion of Christ. The crucifixion was a result of Jewish involvement in the Interlocking System of Arrogance and in fact was a REQUIREMENT of the Plan of God for providing the potential for Salvation for Mankind, and demonstrates GOD in his perfect Plan using all situations to advance his plan. This involvement in the Interlocking System of Arrogance is the exact same thing occurring in the United States of America even more so today because the United States of America has assumed the status and responsibility of Israel at this point in the Church Age as a Client Nation to God. As a result of this same Interlocking System of Arrogance involvement, if Jesus came to the United States of America today, he would be crucified just as he was in Israel some 2000 years ago. The Jews are under Divine Discipline and God needs no help in that discipline and it is Arrogance to think one can help God in this area by condemning or ridiculing the Jews and becoming Antisemitic. Gentiles are not saved because they are better than Jews and the fact is that Racial Jews are far superior to gentiles. Race has nothing to do with salvation and certainly does not have anything to do with the 5<sup>th</sup> cycle of Divine Discipline and the Inverted position of the Jews today. In fact, it is unfortunate that RACE is not the issue with regard to Divine Discipline because the melting pot of races, the United States of America, today is on the very brink of the 5<sup>th</sup> cycle of Divine Discipline itself and this could then be blamed on Racial Difficulties here.

The fact of history is that gentiles are inferior and therefore the inferior gentiles are saved only because of the Grace Plan of God and when Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ was on the cross all the sins of every human being dead, alive, and yet to be born, were imputed to Him and then JUDGED in his humanity. Because in this judgment the Substitutionary Spiritual Death of Christ as payment for these sins propitiated God the Father all sin was FOREVER removed as an issue in the Human History part of the Angelic Conflict Appeal Trial. As a result of this all of mankind has the option of moving into the Plan of God. Because of the expression of Positive Volition at God Consciousness the individual is given under the Grace polity of God, the opportunity to hear the Gospel of Christ, the GOOD NEWS that sin is not an issue for Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God. As a result of Positive Volition expressed again at Gospel hearing the individual is able to enter the Protocol Plan of God by faith alone or acceptance of the Substitutionary Spiritual Death of The Lord Jesus, The Christ alone. This salvation for each of person, Jew or gentile does not involve in any way human effort, ability,

talent or ‘works’ of any kind and is certainly NOT a result of any imagined superiority one may think he has over others. The mechanics of salvation for man from condemnation by God was planned by God the Father, was executed by The Lord Jesus, The Christ and is revealed and empowered by God the Holy Spirit, for each and every believer, JEW OR GENTILE.

If the root of the tree is Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ, a JEW, who saves the gentile and sustains him as a believer under Logistical Grace, obviously no gentile can make any claim to any level of superiority over the Jew. The principle and fact of Logistical Grace which should bring Humility to the believer, counteracts Arrogance in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul and therefore must be clearly understood by every believer. It is the root of the tree, The Lord Jesus, The Christ, who sustains both the gentile and Jewish believers in life under Logistical Grace and therefore no one has any right to any Arrogance especially regarding the position of the Jew being under the 5<sup>th</sup> cycle of Divine Discipline. The Logistical Grace Rationale can prevent the believer from entering the Interlocking System of Arrogance and also get him out when he fails and fall into it. The Logistical Grace rationale thus becomes the first stage of sanity and recovery for the believer in the Interlocking System of Arrogance.

The imagined superiority of gentiles over Jews reached a peak in the dark ages resulting in severe persecution of the Jews. The word of God clearly states that, “Whosoever believes” and this eliminates any imagined or real superiority in this life with regard to the procurement of salvation. Arrogance produces a Legalistic Self Righteousness which becomes a distraction to any Grace blessing the believer may receive and especially Logistical Grace. All Grace blessings come to believers by way of the Justice of God which directs them to the imputed Righteousness of God given to each believer at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God. This imputation of Absolute Righteousness is a Grace imputation and is judicial since man does not actually have a home for it in his being. No believer ever receives any blessing because he is superior in race, intellect, physical strength or beauty, economic status, social status, gender or any other system. The believer receives ALL Grace support and blessing from the Justice of God because of WHO and WHAT God is and the blessing is imputed directly to the Righteousness of God which is in every believer from the instant of his Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God. In fact, each part of the Equation of Hope Plan of God has a support factor which relies on the Grace of God and totally eliminates any presumed ‘deserving’ by the believer.

### Grace Support for Jew & Gentile Believers

In the Equation of Hope Plan of God, the X Radical is where every human being simultaneously receives Soul Life and Adam’s Original Sin resulting in Human Life and condemnation. This provides the potential for salvation and when one receives the doctrinal information regarding the Gospel of The Lord Jesus, The Christ he has his first Confidence (hope) of Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God. In this part of the Plan of God he has been given by God support from the Laws of Divine Establishment principles and Divine Institutions and the freedom provided therein. Man therefore has the freedom to be evangelized and then make a decision without coercion. If he refuses to accept the Substitutionary Spiritual Death of Christ he is not penalized by any legitimate government or

individual group under the Laws of Divine Establishment functions.

The Y Radical begins after Faith Acceptance alone of the Substitutionary Spiritual Death of The Lord Jesus, The Christ alone and is where the new believer benefits from the first Judicial imputation of all his personal sins to Christ on the cross which results in the judicial imputation of the Righteousness of God as a result of FAITH alone in Christ alone. This sets up the Grace Pipeline and provides the [Logistical Grace](#) rationale whereby believers must understand the RESPONSIBILITY of God for their support and the mechanics of how and why it occurs. As a result of the Logistical Grace support from God for the believer's entire life on earth after salvation, he has the POTENTIAL for spiritual advance to [Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God](#) and when he receives and metabolizes all the Bible Doctrine necessary he has the second Confidence (hope) of incredible blessings awaiting him upon his reaching spiritual maturity. In this portion of the Spiritual Life he must have support from the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions and the freedom they provide to enable him to take in Bible Doctrine on a consistent basis. Along with this he also receives Logistical Grace from God for the explicit purpose of keeping him alive and providing for his needs, including the Doctrines or thinking of Christ, ([1Cor 2:16](#)) to allow him to make the advance to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God.

The Z radical begins after reaching Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God through the accumulation of maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul. In this phase of the Spiritual Life the believer continues to have the Laws of Divine Establishment, Divine Institutions and the Logistical Grace support from X and Y Radicals of the Plan of God. Added to this are the unimaginable benefits of Spiritual Maturity as Super or Ultra Super – Grace Blessings for his support and enjoyment under 6 magnificent categories. It is the Eternal Life imputed to the believer at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God when combined with the Super – Grace blessings of Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God which results in the potential for incredible blessing in eternity which will glorify God forever. The doctrines acquired in moving toward and after reaching Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God give the believer the Confidence (hope) of actually receiving these Eternal Blessing and Rewards as imputations to his Resurrection Body above and beyond the fantastic blessing of just receiving the Resurrection Body.

Therefore it is clear that in the Plan of God there are the Laws of Divine Establishment, Divine Institutions, Logistical Grace Blessing support, Super-Grace Blessings in 6 categories and Eternal Life provided by God, so that at each step in the Plan of God each support factor is added to the prior ones in order to sustain the believer in the Plan of God in this intensified stage of the Angelic Conflict Appeal Trial. Therefore, the ROOT of the TREE, The Lord Jesus, The Christ ALONE, supports the believer, he does not support the root, and HE depends on the Plan of God but the Plan of God DOES NOT DEPEND ON HIM. The obvious rational conclusion is that to assume superiority over the Jew (or anyone else for that matter) for any reason and despite their being under the 'Great Inversion' as a result of the 5<sup>th</sup> cycle of Divine Discipline, is complete Arrogance on the part of the believer.



## The Great Inversion

Therefore, the 'Great Inversion' is defined as a reversal of position between Jew and gentile regarding client or priest nation status and the contrast is between the Age of Israel and the Church Age. This is, in fact, a reversal of position between Jew and gentile both individually and collectively. ([Rom 11](#)) The Jewish age found Israel as priest or client nation to God and gentiles were to be evangelized by Jews. The Inversion in the Church Age finds gentile nations as client nations to God and both the Jew and gentiles to be evangelized by gentiles. The Inversion of the Church Age included The Lord Jesus, The Christ as God of Israel, the God of Abraham, Isaac and Jacob, blessing gentile believers and punishing Jewish unbelievers sometimes to the intensity level called a holocaust. There are several categories of Inversion in this Church Age:

- ✧ A == reversal of the client or priest nation status where gentiles ONLY become client nations to God during the times of the gentiles in the Church Age or the Age of the Royal Family of God.
- ✧ B == reversal of relationship with God where gentile believers are Royal Family of God while Jewish unbelievers have no relationship with God.
  - There are always marvelous exceptions when any Jew believes in The Lord Jesus, The Christ and this must be encouraged and is delightful and thus Jewish BELIEVERS not involved in the Inversion but also become members of the Royal Family of God in this Church Age.
  - In the Church Age for every Jew who believes in Christ there are thousands of gentiles who do so, whereas, in the beginning of the Jewish client nation in the exodus there were Jews who vastly outnumbered gentiles as believers.
- ✧ C == reversal of position where gentiles by faith in The Lord Jesus, The Christ possess the Righteousness of God and Jews by rejecting the Lord and following and adhering to the rituals of the Mosaic Law possess only Self Righteousness.
  - The great spiritual heritage of the Jew is not in the ritual of the Mosaic Law and the ritual merely illustrates the bible doctrine which is the heritage but the Jews, in a form of [Religious](#) legalism, reject the doctrine and accept the only the ritual. They scoop off the ritual which they still follow today in Self Righteousness and reject the doctrine. However, the gentiles believed the doctrine thus they have the Righteousness of God and the Jew only their own Self Righteousness.
- ✧ D == reversal of the order where gentiles under Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God become Royal Family of God while unsaved Jews are completely excluded from the family of God and where the times of gentiles precedes the restoration of Israel in the millennium.

The uniqueness of The Lord Jesus, The Christ is in the Hypostatic Union and he is God but also true humanity blended together. The Jews, during the life of Christ on earth, actually saw him, but still, even in seeing him, rejected him and therefore tripped over him and then got up and kept going their own way. They saw him in the flesh, he was completely documented and explained in their spiritual heritage of the Old Testament Scripture in his uniqueness of virgin birth, Hypostatic Union, ministry on the earth, teaching Bible Doctrine, his trials, crucifixion and Substitutionary Spiritual Death and ultimate physical death fulfilling the prophecies of

Isaiah. Then his resurrection, ascension and session at the right hand of God the Father; and yet seeing all this, for the rest of their lives they still rejected it and he became their stumbling block.

### **The Stumbling Stone and The Great Inversion**

The Lord Jesus, The Christ is the precious stone of salvation, who provides Absolute Righteousness to the believer, which the Jews stumble over while they are pursuing the perfect adherence to the Mosaic Law which produces for them negative Self Righteousness. The Jew stumbling over the STONE is in their rejection of The Lord Jesus, The Christ and is where the necessity for and beginning of the Inversion comes from. The Rock of Salvation was given to the Jews as the Christ in Hypostatic Union. These Jews at that time were out chasing the Mosaic Law trying to be saved by keeping the law so that they stumbled over the Rock of Salvation and therefore to this day continue to be stuck with minus righteousness. The gentiles came along seeing the Rock of Salvation and said this was what they had been looking for. They then, through nonmeritorious faith alone, believed in the Substitutionary Spiritual Death of Christ and received by judicial imputation the Absolute Righteousness of God. The gentile having no heritage or background in the Spiritual Life suddenly has all the value and the Jew with all the background heritage suddenly has nothing.

The Old Testament Scripture has everything in it that God intended for the Jew to have and everything is explained regarding anything he would ever need or ever face. ([Is 28:16](#), [Is 8:14](#)) The only thing not given the Jews were the doctrines concerning the intercalation of the Church Age. Everything the Jew would ever need for fulfilling the [Equation of Hope Plan of God](#) was provided for them and explained in the Old Testament Scripture. This emphasizes the reality of the ministry of God the Holy Spirit in verbal plenary inspiration for both Isaiah and Paul along with all the other writers in both the Old Testament Scripture and the New Testament Scripture.

It is the objective of Satan to frustrate Eschatology (prophecy) and his plan is to destroy the Jew in Human History and thereby hinder any possibility of any Jew being alive at the 2<sup>nd</sup> advent or living through the tribulation or even living in the Church Age. This would prevent God from fulfilling his unconditional promises to the Jews and thus provide a WIN for Satan in the Angelic Conflict Appeal Trial. Therefore, antisemitism is a major part of the master plan of Satan to destroy the Jew and frustrate the future Eschatology of Israel. God has said that when Christ returns to the earth He WILL fulfill the promises to the Jews including giving them the entire middle eastern nations of today as their lands. It is Satan's objective to cut off this Eschatology for the Jew and anyone who becomes involved in antisemitism has simply become a pawn in the master plan of Satan. Any involvement in antisemitism is acceptance of and function totally within Evil and a major part of Inversion Arrogance. It is true there will be on occasion in history Big Blot Outs and therefore Inversion Divine Discipline for Jews but always remember, GOD does not need any help to discipline the Jews and any involvement in Inversion Arrogance with persecution of Jews is always involvement in Satan's conspiracy to frustrate the Plan of God. True Jews have always been and still are those who are regenerate through Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God while false Jews have the genes of

Abraham, Isaac and Jacob but have rejected Christ and thus are in the Big Blot Out and eventually this becomes their judgment of Inversion. Only by Adjustment to the Justice of God through faith in Christ can any Jew enter into the pattern of heritage provided by Abraham, Isaac and Jacob. Therefore, the Jew has no advantage in life or history *unless* he believes in Christ, however, Grace is never canceled for any Jew thus there is hope for all Jews in all dispensations.

### **Divine Discipline for the Inversion**

What one wants, strives for, cheats for, lies for and performs all sorts of functions from Evil to acquire, instead of getting, he receives Divine Discipline and the person who follows Grace principles comes along and acquires all these things without any effort on his part. Part of the Inversion Divine Discipline is the resultant **Jealousy** which occurs because of this. Inversion Divine Discipline always takes what one wants and gives it to someone he does not like. This is a beautiful type of Divine Discipline and is what people functioning under Arrogance get from God. Inversion Divine Discipline takes a person who is proud of some ability or attractiveness they possess and makes someone else much greater than they with ½ of their abilities. If one is a ‘plugger’ in life there is very little chance of his becoming involved in Inversion Divine Discipline. However, if one has any propensity for **Pride** or Jealousy he will feel, sooner or later, the sting of Inversion Divine Discipline.

There is constant talk about how wonderful the people in this country are and then they can be seen beating each other while standing in line for gasoline or engaging in riots and rampant looting in places like Ferguson Missouri or seeing them “sit in” as occurred in New York City or burn to the ground cities like in Wisconsin. In any client nation, once the pivot shrinks the worst animals in the world, the sophisticated, cultured, nice people of the client nation, begin to run amok and destroy what is around them. These are animals in their souls and it is an easy transition from cultured liberalism to animalism. When any client nation goes down in history the internal collapse is AWESOME to observe, and the horrible things which happen are unimaginable. There are historical records of just such a collapse from Josephus regarding the siege of Jerusalem in AD 70. This is what happens to sophisticated people when Arrogance becomes the initiating factor leading to Inversion and then moving them from Inversion to destruction. Inversion Divine Discipline resulted, for the Jews many times in history, as a result of their rejection of the Gospel of Christ after understanding the Gospel from their Old Testament Scripture heritage, so that behind this rejection is always Arrogance. Arrogance rejects Absolute Truth and Arrogance, as the sin of Satan, is how He resisted the truth. The Jews understood the Gospel of Christ before they rejected it and they were brilliant also having the greatest spiritual heritage of any nation in history but in their rejection they entered an intense period of Inversion Divine Discipline.

The Integrity of God judges the Big Blot Out in both time and eternity and does not need the believer involved in the Arrogance of Inversion nor anyone involved in Antisemitism to help him. First in sequence is Divine Discipline judgment on the Big Blot Out. Such Divine Discipline demonstrates that Israel heard and understood what they heard and rejected it as stage 1 of **Black out of the Soul** leading to **Scar Tissue of the Soul**. Having rejected the

Gospel, which they understood, they came to believe the LIE that there was no 1<sup>st</sup> advent and this is the Big Blot Out and results in maximum Scar Tissue of the Soul. The Big Blot Out is dramatized by the 'Great Inversion' and is also found in the Old Testament Scripture in which the reversal of position between Jew and gentile became the basis for punishing the Jew and blessing the gentile.

There is ongoing severe divine judgment on the Jews as a result of the great Inversion:

- Jews and gentiles change roles in the Plan of God.
  - The Jews had perfect spiritual heritage and by the time a Jew reached age 7 he had been thoroughly inculcated with the Gospel of Christ. The Jewish child thoroughly understood the Gospel and as he grew older totally rejected it and each time he rejected it he developed more Black out of the Soul and built more Scar Tissue of the Soul. What he started out understanding in the Gospel, after Scar Tissue of the Soul developed he no longer understood and therefore accepted only the LIE of legalistic false teaching.
  - The gentile had no spiritual heritage from the Old Testament Scripture and its prophets and teachers but at God Consciousness expressed Positive Volition and thus God was OBLIGATED to provide the Gospel. Many times the Gospel was presented to the gentiles by Jewish missionaries such as Daniel but most often in the Old Testament Scripture by other means. When the Gospel was presented to the gentile who had expressed Positive Volition at God Consciousness, he most often accepted the Substitutionary Spiritual Death of Christ and responded instantly with Positive Volition and because of this he entered into the Equation of Hope Plan of God and again God was required to provide more information as biblical doctrines.

Such a person is very well known in history, Cyrus the Great of Persia and his people advanced to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and had the light from Perception, Cognition, Inculcation & Metabolization of Bible Doctrine and with it had great blessing, instead of the cursing of the unbeliever Jews, who at that time were under the 5<sup>th</sup> cycle of Divine Discipline in the Babylonian captivity. Thus, there was the gentile accepting what the Jew rejected and exploiting it to the point of receiving maximum blessing while the Jew by continuous rejection only knew the extent of the wrath of God in time to be continued forever in eternity when he died as an unbeliever. As a result the Jew became Jealous of the gentiles who fulfilled this principle. The Jews were Jealous of Cyrus, Nebuchadnezzar and the Assyrians after Jonah. These are prophecies of judgment expected to occur when Jews fall into the Big Blot Out. When they reject The Lord Jesus, The Christ and blot out the 1<sup>st</sup> advent in their soul they are punished by Inversion where there is salvation and blessing for those they scorn with their Arrogance. Arrogance thereby distorts Truth into something which becomes false in their souls and despite this scorn and their Arrogance, the gentile believers have blessing from God and the Jew because of Negative Volition loses out. God wants to bless Israel but the Point of Reference for all mankind is the Justice of God and God is always fair and even uses the Jealousy of Israel and turns it around onto themselves as their discipline. Therefore the punishment for Jews occurs by means of Inversion HOWEVER, involvement in Inversion Arrogance will put the gentile believer into the line of fire of that discipline as a result of

taking on the prerogative of God to persecute, condemn or judge the Jew while he is under the discipline of the 5<sup>th</sup> cycle.

This Inversion produces a special kind of Divine Discipline which is Divine Discipline by Inversion. If one is or has been in love with another and has lost them because of Arrogance and then looks down on or criticizes the individual who has won this true love from him and becomes Jealous, vindictive, implacable and thus motivated for revenge with regard to that individual, this brings him to Bitterness and this is judgment by Inversion. Arrogance is the ONLY system which has its own mechanism of judgment initiated by the one who enters into Arrogance. Saying or thinking one is better or can do something better than other people is in itself punishment by Inversion and he becomes his own worst enemy and harbors sins from his Arrogance involvement. One of the worst things ever to happen to a smart person is to have one of inferior mentality outdo them in some way, at some time, some how. This is what happens to Israel throughout every generation because of the Big Blot Out having as its foundation, Arrogance.

What Israel was responsible to do in prior dispensations, gentile nations have responsibility for today. Inversions are always used for Divine Discipline and create tremendous systems of Divine Discipline by taking away something which one has formerly had and removing his purpose for life. This brings on attitudes which can cause incredible Self Induced Misery from entanglement in the Interlocking System of Arrogance especially from Jealousy. When the offer of Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God through faith alone in The Lord Jesus, The Christ is rejected Arrogance takes the rejector on an ego trip and he develops and functions under a self devised system of Self Righteousness involving a myriad of human effort works as the basis for pseudo salvation. When the Jew does this he moves away from his heritage and then the gentile comes along without any background and no heritage from the Mosaic Law, the The Old Testament Word of God nor the Prophets and he, by simply expressing faith alone in The Lord Jesus, The Christ alone, receives what the Jew bypassed in his Arrogance. This therefore establishes the principle of judgment by Inversion.

Since AD 70 there has not been and will not be Israel as a client or priest nation to God until the 2<sup>nd</sup> advent of The Lord Jesus, The Christ at the beginning of the millennium. The great Inversion which occurred on occasion in the Old Testament Scripture times continues throughout the entire Church Age and Tribulation. There is, continuing today, a reversal of position where gentiles by faith in Christ possess the Righteousness of God and Jews by rejecting Christ and keeping the rules of the law and following the rituals of the law possess only Self Righteousness.

### **Divine Discipline for the Arrogance of Inversion**

The more one says no to the truth like Amenhotep II did during the Exodus, the more he builds layer on layer of Scar Tissue of the Soul which intensifies his Arrogance and therefore, the greater the Arrogance build up, the greater the acceptance of the LIE from Evil. Blindness has happened to Israel but it can also happen to any believer when he rejects doctrine or any unbeliever who rejects the Laws of Divine Establishment or Divine Institutions. When this then



results in those of inferior status taking over for those of superior status in Inversion Discipline and then the inferior ones condemn and ridicule those who have lost their position or status, these inferior ones are then subject to discipline themselves for their function in the Arrogance of Inversion.

This is not always recorded in detail but it can be found it in the study of Daniel, Jeremiah and Jonah. As a result there will be in heaven gentiles in every generation of Human History who found The Lord Jesus, The Christ as savior through faith in Christ totally apart from client nation Israel as a result of Amenhotep II consistently rejecting the Doctrine of the Gospel of Christ. This is what has resulted in Inversion Divine Discipline for the Jews throughout Human History. When Israel failed to function in sending out missionaries for evangelizing of other nations where Gentiles had Positive Volition at God Consciousness, God never would let this Positive Volition die without giving the opportunity for faith in alone in The Lord Jesus, The Christ alone and he used other means and circumstances in order to reach these people with the Gospel of Christ. This Inversion which occurs whenever the Jews are in apostasy and have built up collective Arrogance results in Jealousy and many other aspects of [Mental Attitude Arrogance](#) with small petty Mental Attitude Sins and with its origin in Arrogance is most certainly not petty in its ramifications. In the rhetorical and logical order of [Rom 10:20](#) emphasis is placed on the salvation of the gentiles apart from the client nation function of Israel and is a part of the principle resulting in Inversion. This therefore emphasizes Inversion and reminds Israel that even though they are in the Plan of God, when they reject the Plan of God, GOD will get along perfectly without them. This then also reminds Church Age believers that they have no right to say in Arrogance that God cannot get along without them or that if they fail, the Plan of God may also fail, so they must do some specific things to ensure that the Plan of God continues because of their personal efforts. This is Arrogance and puts the believer so involved in line for his own Inversion Divine Discipline. This Divine Discipline for both Jew and the gentile believers should remind every believer that he has NO RIGHT to judge the Jew just because he is under a prolonged Divine Discipline of the 5<sup>th</sup> cycle of Divine Discipline.

Inversion Arrogance has 2 parts to consider. First, consistent rejection of the ABSOLUTE TRUTH of the Gospel of Christ or any aspect of Bible Doctrine can result in Inversion Divine Discipline where what one desires is given to one of less ability. Second, when one receives blessing which should have been received by another as a result of the other being under Inversion Divine Discipline, and then persecutes, criticizes, condemns this other, as often occurs in Antisemitism, this one then receives his own intensive Divine Discipline as a result of the Inversion Arrogance of assuming the prerogative of God for disciplining the rejector. Both must be avoided by the advancing believer.

Return to the [Table of Contents](#)

## Gate #47 – The Arrogance of Evil Obsession

### Achtung Minden (Attention, Mines)

There are 3 Arrogance Skills but the believer does not always enter into the use of the Arrogance Skills in life in the established order. Unrealistic Expectations makes one vulnerable to Disenchantment and Disillusion. Role Model Arrogance makes one vulnerable to the feet of clay syndrome. Iconoclastic Arrogance makes one vulnerable to the “Lucifer” syndrome which is an interaction between power and approbation lust and is one of the most disastrous things which can occur in the Spiritual Life. Lucifer’s fall began with a thought which was encapsulated in the Arrogance of Egocentricity within the 3rd Arrogance Skill, Self Absorption which came from the tremendous approbation he received from millions of angelic creatures. (Is 14:14) He began thinking in terms of revolt against God long before he did any true revolting. This was the result of Satan's Unrealistic Expectation that he could actually overthrow the most high God in total self absorption. He thus started with the 3rd Arrogance Skill of self absorption and then moved to the 1st Arrogance Skill of Self Justification which was his egocentric Arrogance combined with Self Deception. His leading the Prehistoric Angelic Revolution was designed to establish justification for his power and approbation lust. When one comes to realize how to seize power and then uses it to turn it into glorification of one's own self in approbation lust the course of action is then an Evil OBSESSION, and whomever possesses it must Justify it.

Anyone as smart as Satan cannot enter Obsessive Evil without Justifying what he is doing. Since the Fall of Satan and with the fall of man in the garden, motivation in rational creatures both Angelic and Human has generally centered in functioning under the Arrogance Skills. Self Justification is clearly demonstrated in Satan’s Appeal of the sentencing by God of Himself and all the Fallen angels to the lake of Fire after the Trial for his Rebellion and also, subsequently, his capturing of the rulership of this world from Ish (Adam). Mankind was placed here to resolve the Appeal of the Judgment of Satan under the legitimate function of PERSONAL FREEDOM, Individual Privacy and uncoerced Volition. In the Garden Adam and Ishah had only 1 Prohibition to test their volition, the Tree of the Knowledge of Good and Evil, which was the physical representation of Satan’s Plan and Policy to rule Angelic Creatures and ultimately this World during the Appeal Trial. The ONE thing that man did not need under a creation relationship with God through the Love of God was knowledge of this satanic plan and policy of Good and Evil. The moment that Ish and Ishah (Eve) partook of the Fruit of the Tree of the Knowledge of Good and Evil, thereby choosing the system of Good and Evil over the system of Grace from God, they also earned the condemnation of God which He declared in his warning to them, 'Dying you shall die'. Ish and Ishah could have lived an unending life in the garden having everything provided by the Love of God under the system of GRACE. However, as a result of their choosing Satan’s plan they died Spiritually and no longer had a personal relationship with God and would therefore eventually die Physically. This spiritual death of man thus turned the Rulership of the World over to Satan who had objectives for creating a perfect world just like the one created by God in the garden and promised by God for the Millennium. He wanted a perfect environment with a perfect government but he wanted it totally APART FROM God.

For Satan, Self Deception was the assumption that his creative genius and maximum angelic power under his plan and policy of Evil combined with creature admiration would somehow overcome the most high God in Human History. His Self Absorption eventually assumed that even in his failing to prevent the Virgin Birth of Christ, which was Prophesied to Adam and Eve, by the attempted destruction of the Line of Christ from Adam and Eve, he would have the power to head off the Substitutionary Spiritual Death of Christ on the cross by motivating the religious leaders to Stone Jesus to death. Apparently he forgot that The Lord Jesus, The Christ controls Human and Angelic History. Then at the cross God the Father imputed all human sins to Christ and all were Judged in his humanity and the payment of the Substitutionary Spiritual Death of Christ was accepted by God the Father. This resulted in making SIN, a function of the soul stimulated by temptation from the Area of Weakness of the Old Sin Nature, a NONISSUE for mankind in the Angelic Conflict Appeal Trial. The issue for all mankind remained the Plan of God, GRACE vs the Plan of Satan, Evil, Divine Good production under the Grace system vs Human Good production under the Evil system, residence and function in the Power system of God the Divine Dynasphere vs residence and function in the Power systems of Satan the Cosmic Dynaspheres. This provided mankind the option of choosing for God or Satan by accepting or rejecting the Substitutionary Spiritual Death of Christ on the cross, the Basis for Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God. Satan's self absorption syndrome and Evil Obsession is alive and well today as he continues to oppose the Plan of God and all believers who advance in the Spiritual Life to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God.

### **The Pattern of Evil Obsession**

Evil obsession combines Role Model Arrogance with Unrealistic Expectations and as a result leads to the [Feet of Clay Syndrome](#), the shock of one's created Idol not being able to live up to the standards of perfection required by his Unrealistic Expectations. This starts out with a negative reaction to the feet of clay of the Idol which begins with that Evil power of Unrealistic Expectations and then further reacts with a greater negative reaction and results in function in Iconoclastic Arrogance. This destructive function begins with malice, admiration turned into hate, revenge, vituperation, vilification, violence and eventually even murder. This Evil Obsession requires Self Justification, which then results in Self Deception, and ultimately leads to and requires Self Absorption. This is what provides the Energy for the Iconoclastic Arrogant destruction of the self made Idol. Self Absorption is an endless source of energy for Evil and keeps the soul cycling through the Arrogance Skills. Self Absorption results inevitably in intensification of the Evil Obsession.

The Discovery of a NEW Evil power in negative reaction to the self created Idol is the result of [Legalism](#) which produces a Lifestyle under this power including [Crusader Arrogance](#), [Self Righteous Arrogance](#), and any and every category of Arrogance. This Crusader Arrogance develops a pseudo self esteem which creates an idol of perfection out of self. The power derived from Iconoclasm results in a sense of perfection for the iconoclastic individual. Then, having occupied the idol's vacated pedestal in a state of Self Righteous Arrogance this new found system of power from Iconoclastic Arrogance becomes Crusader Arrogance in action. This results in destruction of the Spiritual Life. ([1John 1:8](#) + [1John 1:10](#)) This is necessary to bolster the Arrogance which confirms that the iconoclast is never wrong. This is the function

of Self Deception which strengthens Self Absorption and provides extra motivation and the expanded energy for the Evil Obsession. This Self Deception combines with the Evil of Legalism to justify the destruction of all of those in disagreement with the standards set up by the iconoclast. This escalates to the point of indescribable persecution, to the extent of deprivation of privacy, freedom, confiscation of property, murder very often all in the name of the Lord. This level of Evil Obsession is the Torquemada Syndrome, or the Nazi Holocaust Syndrome, or the Stalinist or Mao Tse Tung Communist Syndromes.

Rapid spiritual decline results from this Obsession and it all develops rapidly from Iconoclastic Arrogance. Iconoclastic Arrogance sweeps all the traces of the former idol from the pedestal replacing him with the iconoclast. Once a believer gets into the System of the Arrogance Skills he moves rapidly through [Reversionism](#) and functions constantly under the last 5 stages of Reversionism which systematically and totally destroy all the Doctrine which has ever been metabolized into the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul. ([Phil 3:18-19](#)) Ultimately the Legalistic Believer in [Reverse Process Reversionism](#) cannot be distinguished from the Unbeliever. The Fall of Lucifer, Son of the Morning, sets the pattern and precedence for all of this. ([Is 14:12-14](#), [James 4:6](#), [1Pet 5:5](#), [Luke 4:5-7](#), [John 12:31](#), [John 14:30](#), [John 16:11](#)) What the believer as an iconoclast fails to recognize and appreciate is that "God makes war against the arrogant believer but he gives GRACE to the humble believer". ([1Pet 5:5-6](#)) Lucifer as ruler of this world has placed himself on a pedestal as a role model for all producers of Human Good. Human Good is the basis for the condemnation of the unbeliever at the Great White Throne Judgment, those being the only humans involved at the Last Judgment. ([John 3:18](#)) Sin is not ever the issue in eternal condemnation since The Lord Jesus, The Christ has already been judged for and paid the penalty for all the sins of humanity. Satan believed, in Arrogance, that he could defeat God. His attempts included cutting off The Lord Jesus, The Christ from the lineage of Adam through David by angelic genetic infiltration of the Nephilim to corrupt the genetics of the Human Race. Through antisemitism he attempts to destroy the Jews thereby preventing fulfillment of the unconditional covenants of God to Israel. From his pedestal above all others he continues using the 3 Arrogance Skills, Self Justification, Self Deception, and Self Absorption to attempt to fulfill his plan and policy. Satan is in business to produce a system of Good equal to or better than God, his product is Human Good under his policy and plan of EVIL in the form of socialism, communism, welfare functions, bleeding heart do good liberalism, etc., aimed at the betterment of mankind and production of a pseudo millennium before the 2<sup>nd</sup> Advent of Christ. The total absence of Human Good is one of the greatest characteristics of the Millennial reign of The Lord Jesus, The Christ. Evil Obsession therefore gains momentum through other thoughts encapsulated by Evil, and this system must be wrapped in the Arrogance of Human Good production and Legalism.

### **Establishment & Spiritual Solutions to Evil Obsessions**

There are true solutions to all things in life and false solutions. The true solutions are Establishment Solutions to Evil Obsessions based on Limited Government with [Virtuous](#) People which is the product of the principles of Divine Establishment delineated in the Word of God. In this manner Freedom spawned by virtue is protected by limited Government as the Servant of the people and the Guardian of Freedom. There are also Spiritual Solutions to Evil

Obsessions based on the mechanics provided by the Integrity of God in Eternity Past and clearly delineated in the New Testament Scripture epistles including the use of the 2 Power Options of the [Filling of God the Holy Spirit](#) and [Metabolized Bible Doctrine](#); function under the [4 Spiritual Skills](#) which include development and deploying of the [10 Problem Solving Devices](#) and execution of the [Protocol Plan of God](#) by the believer reaching [Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God](#). This results in Maximum Glorification of God based on his provision of maximum blessing in time to the Mature Invisible Hero in the client nation.

### **True Solutions**

The Elative conclusion exemplifies the position which the believer must take in solving all problems and pressures in his life. The solutions of God are the only solutions for the believer and human solutions are NO SOLUTIONS at all. For the believer, Evil Obsession involving Iconoclastic Arrogance and other aspects of [Functional Arrogance](#) as a lifestyle destroys all ability to make proper decisions and destroys all values based on Bible Doctrine. The Key to the Evil Obsession is based on functions in the Interlocking System of Arrogance and under the Arrogance Skills along with Emotional Arrogance destroying Love and replacing it with Hate. When functioning under Evil Obsession Arrogance the believer will fragment and totally destroy his Spiritual Life. The Arrogance of Unrealistic Expectations provides vulnerability to Role Model Arrogance and this provides vulnerability to the Feet of Clay Syndrome. The Feet of Clay syndrome therefore provides entrance into the “Lucifer Syndrome”. This is the pattern of the Egocentric Arrogance of Satan’s fall elucidated in [Is 14:14](#) and demonstrates Self absorption and his development of the Interlocking System of Arrogance and Arrogance Skills.

The primary solution to Evil Obsession Arrogance begins with Faith alone in The Lord Jesus, The Christ alone thereby the unbeliever making [Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God](#). After Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God the new believer must engage in and set as first priority his Post Salvation Epistemological Rehabilitation by consistent Perception, Cognition, Inculcation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine. This enables him to function in the Spiritual Life and advance in it through use of the Spiritual Skills including especially the Problem Solving Devices to execute to completion the Protocol Plan of God by reaching Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God. Evil Obsession Arrogance can only be halted by the Spiritual Mechanics provided by the Integrity of God in Eternity Past and by function under the portfolio of [IRREVOCABLE Assets](#) provided for each believer at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God. In the execution of the Spiritual Life in time the believer must advance consistently through the [Stages of the Spiritual Life](#) in order to avoid Evil Obsession Arrogance.

Return to the [Table of Contents](#)

### **Gate #48 – The Arrogance Involving Psychopathic Disorders**

Psychopathic Arrogance is one of the most devastating fragments of the Interlocking System of Arrogance Grenade and extremely destructive to both the temporal and spiritual life of the individual. Psychopathic Arrogance is cultivated by decisions related to self based on



Selfishness, [Self Righteousness](#), [Hypersensitivity](#), ETC., which produce intensified [Motivational Arrogance](#) as any aspect of [Mental Attitude Arrogance](#) with its Mental Attitude Sins. Psychopathic Arrogance is therefore a total loss of Reality Orientation.

MANY believers who are psychopathic are characterized by a volitional drive toward unreality. Their Arrogant thinking results in irrationality and psychosis and generally starts with a Mental Attitude change so that the result of cultivating Arrogance from childhood results inevitably in psychosis. Arrogant preoccupation with self then squeezes out reality from the life and this leads to a drive toward a false object like when a psychopathic individual falls in love with someone in their periphery and makes them the object of hallucinatory fantasies. As a result of the pursuit of this object with fanatical love this arrogant psychopath loses all reasoning power and moral stability. This is the psychopathic believer under the influence of EVIL in the Cosmic Dynaspheres pursuing a false object with irrationality, unpredictability and abnormal behavior. There is also true psychosis and pseudo psychosis. ([Ps 38:8](#)) When a person is totally influenced by EVIL within the Interlocking System of Arrogance he will have the symptoms of mental illness. Psychiatrists will upon analysis of this person classify this as some sort of mental illness and as true psychosis. This is in fact pseudo psychosis and requires proper recovery with the use of the [Rebound Procedure](#) and consistent Perception, Cognition, Incultation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine, for the believer, or Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God for the unbeliever. However, there will be Divine Discipline as added pressure for this person over and above his psychosis. Psychopathic Arrogance is total divorcement from reality, [Egocentricity](#), total subjective preoccupation with self with the emotions controlling reason, and a total imbalance and instability in the soul. This is [Emotional Revolt of the Soul](#) and is stage 5 of Reversionism interlocked with Psychopathic Arrogance. In the normal person the emotion is designed to be a responder to things which are appreciated by the intellect of the soul. Therefore the intellect is supposed to control the emotion in the soul. This blends the emotional life with the intellectual life maintaining proper balance. In the psychopathic person this normal subordination of emotion to intellect is not present due to the individual declining down through [Reversionism](#) to the point of stage 5. The psychopathic personality lacks the ability to realistically orient to the object of their emotional reactions. This produces an arrogant preoccupation or drive toward a false object and through intensification of this drive reason no longer governs their actions. This is the psychopathic person who thinks they are in love with their doctor, the female bartender or anyone who is casually in their periphery and who gives them the least bit of attention. Pursuing this false object with pseudo love fanaticism the arrogant psychopath loses all objectivity and reasoning power. The psychopath under the influence of the Interlocking System of Arrogance pursues the false object with irrationality and UNPREDICTABILITY. Psychopathic Arrogance has no capacity for true love and this lack of capacity becomes preoccupation with self gratification and rejection of all authority. A teenager, when he demands rights from his parents and consistently violates their authority and ignores the teaching of his parents, will inevitably accelerate his advance into the realm of Psychopathic Arrogance. These people are so totally divorced from reality that they can never survive any major disaster.

### **Terminology of Psychopathic Arrogance**

**Psychopathy** – is a general term for mental illness, mental disturbances or mental disorders. Specifically, this is used for mental disorders characterized by Emotional Instability, perversity of conduct, undue conceit, undue suspicions, lack of self control, lack of social orientation, lack of truthfulness and lack of common sense. This is extreme abnormal sensitivity or having susceptibility to strong religious emotion.

**Psychosis** – refers to Mental Diseases or Serious mental derangement

This has no legal implication like the term INSANITY.

**Prepsychotic Personality** – Is both a subjective and inhibited individual.

These Individuals chronically worry, are always stubborn, intolerant and inflexible and lack any sense of humor. They are characterized by rigidity, acting with a neurotic defense plus Self Righteous Arrogance and perfectionism alternating with **Guilt**. They are irritable, peevish, querulous, habitually complaining thus interlock with the **Arrogance of Complaining**, unable to concentrate, depressed and full of paranoid ideas. Being filled with Anxiety and **Fear** they tend toward hypochondria as morbid anxiety about one's own health and conjure up imagery of all sorts of personal illnesses.

### **Rational vs Irrational Arrogance**

Rational & Irrational Arrogance are fragments of the Arrogance Grenade as Motivational Arrogance or Motivational Degeneracy because Rational and Irrational Arrogance are involved with processes of thinking. In all cases of Arrogance involvement it involves a system of thinking first. When there is THOUGHT occurring in Cosmic Dynasphere I it is Rational Arrogance and when there is Emotion occurring this is Irrational Arrogance. This is inevitably the result of the interlocking of many aspects of Mental Attitude Arrogance and its Mental Attitude Sins as Motivational Arrogance derived from Evil and is totally aberrant thinking.

### **Psychopathic Arrogance & Love**

Egocentricity is typical of most psychopaths and they become involved in complete and total selfcenteredness and subjectivity. The person involved in psychopathic Arrogance relates all things to self and is totally self centered with no reality except self and what self desires. True love and friendship are absolutely impossible for the arrogant psychopath. They can be extremely pious and make absurd claims for spirituality which they often say gives them supernatural powers. Very often these people, in their pseudo spiritual realm, hear the voice of God telling them to do things. In Christian schools the female often hears the voice of God telling her to go and tell some boy she is infatuated with that he is supposed to marry her. This is emotion controlling the soul and overriding the mentality of the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul. Any believer can become psychopathic through the Interlocking System of Arrogance tying Emotional Arrogance into Reversionism.

### **Psychopathic Arrogance & Medicine**

Today the medical community considers that psychopathic conditions are only the result of chemical or metabolic imbalances. They reject the concept that people can make decisions which will result in their thinking changing and thus entering into psychopathic conditions. In reality many people become psychopathic because of their own decisions in life. Normally the

Intellect controls the soul and the emotions. When this does not occur and decision are made so that emotion dominates and is running the soul and not being responsive to the intellect, this is a psychopathic condition. The normal subordination of the emotion to the intellect is not occurring because of involvement in the degeneracy of the Interlocking System of Arrogance and the apostasy of Reversionism which includes Emotional Revolt of the Soul.

### **Characteristics of the Psychopathic Personality**

**Medical Instability** == an imbalance in human biology the absence of biological equilibrium, where there is therefore a medical or physiological instability.

**Spiritual Instability** == where there is an oscillation from [Self Righteousness](#) in prosperity to [Self Pity](#), self-sacrifice, self-inflicted torment in adversity or pressure situations interlocking with [Negative Volition Arrogance](#). This instantly OPENS the doors of Reversionism and the Interlocking System of Antagonistic Emotional Hatred, Cosmic Dynasphere II into which the individual will inevitably move IF he remains under Negative Volition and in the Interlocking System of Arrogance long enough. Self Righteous Arrogance and Self Pity in oscillation result in soul instability and fuse to form a Guilt Complex of perpetuated sinfulness which when [Scar Tissue of the Soul](#) is added from deep involvement in Reversionism, it restricts the believer to believing only the LIE of EVIL from the Cosmic Dynaspheres. This results in certain social or racial groups being patronized such as blacks, Hispanics, orientals, homosexuals, etc., in order to give them a special place in society because they are black or white, red or yellow, homosexual or transgender, etc. The reality of life is and should be that people should only be given special consideration because they EARN it from their personal performance. There is nothing that ruins a great man more or faster than unwarranted accolades of greatness infiltrating his soul producing Arrogance.

**Egocentricity** == regarding everything having to be focused on Oneself with LOCKED IN Selfcenteredness therefore only making decisions to enter Arrogance. From this [Arrogance of Thought](#) results neurosis or psychosis directly related to the Interlocking System of Arrogance. This psychopathic personality lacks the ability to realistically relate to the object of their emotional reactions.

**Egoism** == an excessive LOVE of Self which divorces the individual from reality resulting in mental disorders.

**No Self Evaluation** == lack of objectivity therefore no ability to evaluate self effectively having no mirror of [Metabolized Bible Doctrine](#) in the soul in order to reflect on themselves.

**No Bible Doctrine** == the interlocking with Negative Volition Arrogance and entrance into Reversionism results in the eventual erasure of any Metabolized Bible Doctrine which existed in the soul.

**Disorientation to Reality** == having no societal objective standard to live by.

These individuals have no way to see who or what they really are and then use their volition to make the needed corrections. This is the arrogant preoccupation with self, which intensification of this preoccupation or drive results in reason NOT governing actions. The person who tends to being a sociopath or psychopath will constantly be looking for something to stimulate his emotion. If instead they would search for a greater vocabulary, they could solve part of their problem because this would give them greater capacity to think and if this

vocabulary was the result of Bible Doctrine intake it would be a source for their solutions. In these individuals Self Gratification becomes a substitute for honor and integrity and possessing any capacity for life. Here there is an interlocking with [Sexual Arrogance](#) as well.

It must constantly be remembered that insanity can be and often is based on Arrogance and in a book by the Psychiatrist [A. A. Taroui MD](#) “Psychopathic Personality and Neuroses”, the chapter “Neuroses in Light of Rational Psychology” says, “psychopathic personality is a disease of the emotional life”. She has said, in total agreement with biblical principles, that the normal person controls his emotion from his intellect. This blends the emotional life into the intellectual life for appreciation. In the psychopathic personality the normal subordination of the emotion to intellect is deficient or totally lacking therefore results in the person becoming psychotic or neurotic. Emotion takes over for the intellect and in psychoses and neuroses this is the emotion controlling the intellect, this is the Emotional Revolt of the Soul occurring in Reversionism. Therefore the characteristics of psychopathic personality include:

- ▲ Imbalance
- ▲ Instability
- ▲ Egocentricity
- ▲ Entrapment in the Interlocking System of Arrogance.
- ▲ Eventual entrance into Reversionism
- ▲ Ultimate Self Destruction

The Psychopathic Person no longer entertains any subordination to any person or system, and he is generally one who has never been under leadership but only manipulated under bureaucratic management. Today even children are managed and not led by their parents and schools no longer have the ability or legal right to provide leadership. There also very often results in a definitive imbalance in the Psychopathic Person resulting in an absence of biological equilibrium which results in physiological instabilities which cause medical dysfunctions. This is Psychosomatic Illness which has developed a whole category of people who are not ill from physiological dysfunctions but still seek and find medical help for their psychologically caused imbalances and perceived pains. When any person has any tendency toward inordinate preoccupation with self it becomes very easy for them to start into the psychopathic trend of thinking he is ill and this is one of the signs of his divorcement from reality obvious today. [Self justification](#), part of the Arrogance Skills, leads to unreality and once one moves into any area of unreality, which any involvement in Arrogance predisposes him to, then he is a potential psychotic.

The psychopathic personality lacks the ability to realistically evaluate the object of his emotional reactions producing a further Arrogant preoccupation with self and a drive toward a false object. Intensification of Egocentricity in the believer and the drive toward a false object means reason no longer guides his thinking, decisions or actions, especially not from Bible Doctrine. The pursuing of a false object with a pseudo love [Fanaticism](#) interlocks into many areas of the Arrogance complex. This may begin with simple Self Justification when principles of Bible Doctrine are heard but it eventually leads to complete divorcement from reality. This Psychopath, under the influence of [Cosmos Diabolicus](#) and Evil from demon influence, as an

attack on the processes of thought and reason, pursues his false object with irrationality and unpredictability. When this occurs in an entire society, which it has been in the United States of America, that society eventually destroys itself and these Self destructive societies take on many varied characteristics. In order to appreciate what happens to these varied categories of self destructive societies one simply has to consider the DEAD SEA. This is a monument to a THRIVING great civilization of the Pentopolis which gradually moved into total moral and immoral degeneracy. However, Degeneracy does not come instantly but requires the preoccupation with self which occurs first by the collective involvement in the Interlocking System of Arrogance. In the Pentopolis this eventually manifested itself with weird divorcements from reality such as the appearance of misogynists and along with this homosexuality and phallic idolatry which eventually resulted in it being destroyed and set under the dead sea. Therefore, the DEAD SEA is a monument to the fact that a normal civilization, within a couple of generations, can become abnormal, psychotic and totally destroy itself.

The Psychopathic personality also has no capacity for love and cannot maintain an interest in a single member of the opposite sex for prolonged periods of time. They also can not keep friends very long either and as a result of Self Justification from the involvement in the Arrogance Skills they always assign blame for any failures in romance or friendship to the other person. The United States of America for many decades has been developing a collective psychopathic culture with strong preoccupation with self and failure to see others as individual persons. Therefore, an indicator of a peak in Cosmic Dynasphere I involvement is Psychopathic Arrogance and the fragments of the Arrogance grenade resulting from this tears the temporal and spiritual life of the individual trapped here completely apart.

Involuntary Psychosis which begins with depression and then moves into paranoid ideas results in developing a prepsychopathic personality, where one is so preoccupied with self he cannot extricate self from it. He gradually becomes subjective and inhibited as a result of total indifference to Bible Doctrine thereby activating the Arrogance Grenade. The prepsychotic personality becomes very rigid and represents a neurotic defense mechanism with an Arrogance related to perfectionism and Guilt at the same time. Arrogant Preoccupation with self makes this person irritable, peevish, unable to concentrate, depressed, full of anxiety and he thus tends toward being a hypochondriac. This Arrogance has an ambivalence with a desire for both DEATH and LIFE which is a total divorcement from Reality. Psychopathic Arrogance also suffers from ILLUSION and HALLUCINATION and an involuntary paranoid reaction finds this arrogant person in the Cosmic Dynaspheres maliciously critical and always blaming others for what he perceives as their failures and justifying himself while harboring personal hypersensitivity. His involuntary paranoid reactions interlocked from Motivational Arrogance may include:

- ▲ **Jealousy**
- ▲ Lack of forgiveness
- ▲ Resentment
- ▲ **Bitterness**
- ▲ Delusions of persecution



▲ Etc.

This Arrogance may deny or reject a desire or lust but at the same time express it through delusion or hallucination thus creating ambivalence in Arrogance. Schizophrenics can consciously resist an impulse or lust but because of demon influence in the Cosmic Dynaspheres they often carry out the desires in some alternate action such as human sacrifice in phallic idolatry. Psychopathic Arrogance therefore, ultimately lives in a world of fantasy with the unrestrained expression of one's Arrogance and lusts so that he rejects his experiences or actions based in EVIL in the world of reality, claiming no responsibility for them or claiming that they did not even occur. Thus his World of Fantasy justifies actions resulting from functions under EVIL in the world of reality. This is the result of his retreating from the morality of the world of reality, so that he justifies his functions under EVIL in the World of Fantasy. This psychopath is selfish, ungrateful, narcissistic, exhibitionistic, egocentric, demands much and gives little and has no true capacity for life. The psychopath obviously then cannot regard anyone as a true person. Therefore, there can be totally antithetical forms of Psychopathic Arrogance where these individuals want attention and are boastful flippant argumentative, with wandering thought patterns, and can be easily bored and lack sustained interest in anything in life.

The believer in psychotic Arrogance distorts the functions under the Grace Apparatus for Reception, Retention, Recall of Bible Doctrine for Resistance to the Strategies of Satan. The Reception of Bible Doctrine is distorted into acceptance of ONLY what the arrogant believer wants to hear or is interested in. Retention, which is metabolization of Bible Doctrine into the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul, only occurs, IF IT OCCURS AT ALL, with regard to ONLY what the Arrogant one decides he will retain or accept. Recall of Bible Doctrine is put into a situation where Arrogance relates Bible Doctrine to both auditory and visual hallucinations. This is the Arrogant believer who has moved into Psychopathic Arrogance who claims to hear the voice of God. All believers living in the Cosmic Dynaspheres come close to or do become involved in Psychopathic Arrogance as they become more and more divorced from reality. As this occurs unchecked in any way there is only one absolute which can bring them out of their illusion, hallucination and psychosis or neurosis, and that is DEATH. DEATH is an absolute and by the time the believer gets to the Sin Unto Death Divine Discipline their life has been completely wasted.

The key defect found in Psychopathic Arrogance is the lack of control of the emotions by the intellect in Emotional Revolt of the Soul. In the normal person the intellect always knows whether the emotional responses are adequate and appropriate or not and is able to maintain a balance. The action involving this regulation is diminished or absent in the psychopathic personality. The psychopath loses all proportionality between stimulation and reaction. Emotion being controlled by intellect results in stability and appreciation while psychopathic persons, in pursuit of their false objects by emotional reaction, can instantly change from an overwhelming love response to unreasonable hatred. ONE CANNOT EVER TRUST OR DEPEND ON A PSYCHOPATH who is totally unstable and can be a friend one minute and a deadly enemy the next. This is typical of psychopaths because they relate everything only to self.

Insanity, therefore, in many cases, is simply enmeshment, entrapment, entanglement in the myriad parts of the Interlocking System of Arrogance. True love and friendship is unknown to the psychopath and they love only to the extent it is to their advantage and provides their needed gratification.

However, most criminals and insane individuals are so because of the use of their free will to become so. These people have used their volition, more than any others, erroneously and refuse to take responsibility for how they have used it. They are the ones who, with their volition, are always selfish and self centered and only think of self and never think of anyone else and are totally hypersensitive about what people think of them and totally insensitive of other people's needs. These individuals can become insane or criminal overnight and this is a part of the megalomania resulting from persistent involvement in the Interlocking System of Arrogance. When one observes insane individuals he must remain cognizant that they most likely got this way because of Arrogance and the use of their own volition to become involved in Arrogance. All people who are having difficult times in life have made their own decisions to get into these difficult times. All Arrogant people, therefore, make decisions to engage in Arrogance functions.

Therefore, the most basic cause for any form of psychopathic or neurotic personality is VOLITION + Arrogance. This is Self Centered Arrogance that is completely divorced from reality and involves the decisions which relate one to a self centered way of life. This is therefore Egocentric involvement in the Interlocking System of Arrogance as the most basic cause for Psychopathic behavior. There may be times when one may encounter some insane psychopathic individual who develops a fixation and preoccupation with him. This individual's preoccupation with one is only exceeded by their preoccupation with themselves. They are reduced to such a LOW level of reasoning power that they can only think of 2 things, self and the object they are preoccupied with, the object of their fanatic system of psychopathic concentration. **Beware!**

### **The Result of Locked In Arrogance**

Therefore ALL insane people get into the Interlocking System of Arrogance because they are totally self centered and choose to be so. This can be spotted developing in children who say they will do what they want any way they want no matter what the parents tell them. This is insanity brought about by volition over time and the rejection and defying of authority. The only thing insane people care about is themselves and what they want to do and this is how they become divorced from reality and go from being sociopathic to neurotic and then finally psychotic. Outside of chemical psychosis no one can become insane and disoriented to society without doing it to themselves through volitional action. The treatment generally used for these people is very poor and even criminally insane people are released back into society in relatively short order today. The increases in psychoses in society is a manifestation of the increase of normal people becoming divorced from reality. When this occurs the client nation is systematically destroying itself. In the past decades there have been very few people left in the United States of America who actually relate to reality and today in the 21<sup>st</sup> century it is vastly worse. The cure for this is the same as the cure for or recovery from the Interlocking

System of Arrogance. It requires for the unbeliever Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God and for believers consistent Post Salvation Epistemological Rehabilitation and the use of the [Rebound Procedure](#) whenever failure occurs in the Spiritual Life. The only other option is DEATH, the ultimate Absolute Solution!

In the Interlocking System of Arrogance a person cannot enjoy social life, prosperity or any blessing in life. Therefore, once a person enters into the Interlocking System of Arrogance he is potentially completely ruined. The Interlocking System of Arrogance is the most ruinous of things in life for the believer and is much more of a factor in the mental imbalance of psychosis and neuroses than any other cause. Once a person enters the Interlocking System of Arrogance he will move from one entry gate or Arrogance system to another until he is ground down to nothing. God has prepared for believers great protection and recovery from this trap of Arrogance but it **REQUIRES a concentrated and consistent use of positive volition toward Bible Doctrine**. However, the believer who does not recover from this trap ultimately goes down through all the stages of [Reversionism](#) until he dies a horrible, miserable death under maximum Divine Discipline. No matter what he does in life he never has good relationships in business or any other aspect of life nor in any organization, romantic or social life and his life is ruined by his own volition. This is the key to understanding the underlying cause of the degenerate society in the United States of America and the solution is only found in the historical punishment of the 5 cycles of Divine Discipline OR consistent Positive Volition toward Bible Doctrine starting with the Gospel of The Lord Jesus, The Christ.

Being in the Interlocking System of Arrogance for a long period of time results in unbearable suffering from Self Induced Misery and eventually Divine Discipline which will intensify Psychopathic Arrogance and therefore bring further increases in both. Psychopathic Arrogance also results in a distortion of Bible Doctrine from the use of one's own volition. Lacking the ability to evaluate anything in terms of historical or spiritual reality then results in a necessity to retreat into the emotional patterns of Reversionism. As this occurs these believers reject or deny the vocabulary, thought patterns, categories and concepts related to reality or distort all of this into a system of subjectivity or unreality. This results in the body changing because of the changes in the thinking from the brain. This individual loses the control of his mind over his body because of lack of properly oriented thought or distortion of thought into subjectivity and divorcement from reality and this results in his compensating emotionally. This in fact puts the neurotransmitters of the brain out of balance and this is what medicine discovers in examination of this person and is True Psychosomatic illness. All self centered people inevitably destroy the ability of the mind, brain and body to produce the normal functions which protect their physical and mental health. Medicine can help with the physical health but only change in volition can correct these kinds of mental health issues. Under the Interlocking System of Arrogance the psychopathic believer is irrational, unstable, unpredictable and is often in a dream world until some great catastrophe brings him back to reality or destroys him. This is the purpose of Divine Discipline in these cases. There is no possibility of this person under Psychopathic Arrogance having either integrity or honor no matter what his past performance has been. This person can be pious and religious and often claims these attributes and that he is close to God. This has nothing to do with the reality of relationship with God but only with

his hallucinations.

One of the hardest things for a believer to do and one of the greatest tests of flexibility is for him to be able to change his opinions when he is wrong. One must be divorced from the Interlocking System of Arrogance in order to do this. Once the thinking goes wrong degeneracy begins to set in and it does not require immorality nor criminality but only that one enters into the Interlocking System of Arrogance. Arrogance always divorces the believer from reality especially where God is concerned. In the human realm divorcement from reality is categorized as psychopathic, psychotic or insanity. In the spiritual realm divorcement from reality is an even greater problem and as a result of involvement in the Interlocking System of Arrogance the believer becomes focused on the Evil of Satanic policy and functions. Arrogance motivates antithetical functions as well and this is where self centered people are hypersensitive about self and insensitive about others. They react to all things in life involving self and are involved in a system of oscillation between [Self Righteousness](#) in Prosperity and [Self Pity](#) in adversity. Since this oscillation does not settle too long in one aspect or the other, the hypersensitivity about self increases and sensitivity with regard to reality and others decreases and this is very often how believers reach the point of committing suicide. This total selfcenteredness and total insensitivity about what anyone else thinks or feels is also what occurs in forgetting the victims of crime. The believer, in these circumstances, becomes so focused on self that it is inevitable that there comes a time when he cannot stand being in the Interlocking System of Arrogance any longer and will then attempt to take his own life. Involvement for some in the Interlocking System of Arrogance and its degeneracy results in their thinking being distorted to the point that they become involved in drug or alcohol abuses. The desire to legalize marijuana is one of the great signs of vastly increased degeneracy in this nation despite the fact that it has been clearly demonstrated to be a brain cell destroyer and is at least 20X more potent than it was in the 60's and 70's. The additional irony here is that crusaders caused tobacco companies to be taxed almost out of existence while marijuana has been shown to be 5x more likely to cause lung cancer than tobacco cigaretts. This is clearly a lack of focus on reality by the people of this nation.

Locked in Arrogance also results in a psychopathic personality in which their Arrogance is parlayed into illusion and hallucination. This Prepsychotic believer possesses the Arrogant hypersensitivity of imagining being slighted where none has occurred. Being totally fragmented in his soul he AVOIDS any aspect of REALITY. Arrogance thus becomes the catalyst for the paranoid reactions of [Mental Attitude Arrogance](#) including:

- ✧ Lack of forgiveness
- ✧ Resentment
- ✧ Delusions of persecution.
- ✧ Manic Depressive Psychosis
- ✧ Schizophrenia

In the manic – depressive the manifestations of psychosis is more obvious and many times there are paranoid hallucinations in both phases. Arrogance as a catalyst in Manic Depressive psychosis thus becomes obvious and this believer is characterized by alternating between Mania

and Mental Depression:

- Manic phase – the believer is very self righteous and self satisfied and arrogantly aggressive, exuberant, even appears to be an extrovert, critical of others, childish, proud, intolerant of criticism, irrepressible, uninhibited, effusive, and often unconventional in speech and manner. His Arrogance in the manic phase is characterized by hostility toward members of his own family and thus combines Arrogance with unreasonable and unprovoked ANGER. There is also a strong oscillation of Emotion with very Self Righteous and officious battle some attitudes telling everyone how to run their personal business and the hallucinations of manic excitement are usually Arrogant illusion.
- Depressive phase – the believer has physical complaints which have no physiological basis. This phase is characterized by a lack of confidence, lack of a sense of destiny, inadequacy and inability to stay with any job. He has a desire for violence, crime even murder often committed by believers usually involving a loved one. Very often this person attempts Suicide and the one involved with Psychopathic Arrogance can develop the psychosis of Schizophrenia.

Arrogance as a catalyst can lead to Ambivalence and / or Schizophrenia:

- Schizophrenia – a total loss of contact with reality by the disintegration of one's personality resulting in erratic sequences of behavior in the believer such as the alternation of love and hate, affection and hostility. These believers are full of hallucinations expressive of Ambivalent Arrogance which may deny or reject a lust or desire but simultaneously express that lust or desire through delusion or hallucination. Schizophrenia may explain how a person may consciously resist Evil influence but because of involvement in the Cosmic Dynaspheres he may function in phallic idolatry including human sacrifice.
- Ambivalence is uncertainty or fluctuation caused by inability to make a choice. There is therefore a spiritual Ambivalence where the believer cannot decide between the Divine Dynasphere and the Cosmic Dynaspheres. Ambivalence can be defined as the simultaneous desire to say or do opposite things. Psychologically Ambivalence is the coexistence of both negative and positive feelings toward the same person, object or action. The Ambivert, therefore, is a person whose personality is intermediate between Extrovert and Introvert. Psychopathic Ambivalence is the person living in a world of fantasy with unrestrained expression of LUST and Arrogance related to the Cosmic Dynaspheres. This results in his rejecting his sinful experiences, his moral and immoral degeneracy in the world of his reality. He finds [Self Justification](#) in a fantasy world for sin done in the world of reality. He, therefore, retreats from the reality and virtue of the world of reality. This results in justification of his actions, sinful, moral or immoral in his world of fantasy thus using his world of fantasy to justify his functions under EVIL in real life.

There is the ultimate possibility in Christians under psychopathic Arrogance of Suicide. The Manic Depressive is vulnerable to motivation to suicide having mental states of alternating extremes of mania and depression. The Schizophrenic is vulnerable also having a psychotic condition characterized by withdrawn, bizarre and sometimes delusional behavior plus



intellectual and emotional deterioration. Believers who are consistently involved in the Interlocking System of Arrogance become prone to manic depressive or schizophrenic mental diseases and in some cases they DO commit suicide. However, the Christian who commits suicide HAS NOT LOST HIS SALVATION because there is NO SIN which can cancel the 40 assets received by the believer at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God one which is Eternal Security.

### **Classifications of Psychopathic Arrogance**

Psychopathic Arrogance can be classified under 5 categories or as having 5 trends.

- Hysterical
- Untruthful
- Amoral
- Sexual
- Fanatical

Criminality is one of the greatest causes of inadequacy resulting in the stress known as psychosis and religion is another great cause. Imposed stress, primary inadequacy and acquired debility are the means by which Arrogance is parlayed into insanity. Insanity is Arrogance totally divorced from reality and no one survives when divorced from reality. All it takes to make the arrogant person insane is the pressure of great national or natural disaster or catastrophe.

### **Psychopathic Arrogance & Reversionism**

Psychopathic Arrogance is the emotion totally out from under the control of the intellect so that it does not blend with the intellect at all. This is primarily due to involvement in the Interlocking System of Arrogance and the Stages of Reversionism especially Emotional Revolt of the Soul. Therefore, the believer who enters the Interlocking System of Arrogance and becomes involved in psychopathic Arrogance inevitably winds up in moving down through all stages of Reversionism. The Divine Discipline for psychopathic Arrogance comes from 2 sources and thus is double Divine Discipline on top of double Divine Discipline. Anyone involved in psychopathic Arrogance is still responsible for their actions directly to God. Society is mixed up about this and how to deal with these people, generally having a failure to understand that these people are locked into selfcenteredness. When they become involved in Psychopathic Arrogance they are so involved with themselves they commit a tremendous number of sins and crimes against others dealing with selfcenteredness, selfishness, total indifference and thoughtlessness toward others. Thus this is always a Reversionistic problem and those in psychopathic Arrogance cannot take in Bible Doctrine therefore they have a combined involvement within the Interlocking System of Arrogance and Reversionism.

It is possible to recover from the Status Quo of Psychotic Reversionism. However, the ones who do recover are those who have had normal lives in their past. Those who are and have been involved in and cannot get out of Blind Arrogance cannot ever recover from this category of Reversionism. Their Arrogance makes it so they can only think about themselves and they want you to understand them and will follow you around and constantly talk to you so you can understand them. These people are vicious maligners and pathological liars and constantly

react to every situation in life. Psychoses are not always that bad and people have and can recover from them but when they are involved in Blind Arrogance they cannot recover from this or anything else and in fact they don't even know they are involved in Arrogance. A person often enters psychosis by becoming self centered, anthropocentric, Arrogant and disguising this with pseudo humility and simply needs to reorient their volition with a positive approach to Bible Doctrine.

### **Causes & Recovery from Psychopathic Arrogance**

Environmental difficulties such as extremely adverse circumstances in Early Childhood where parents do not regard their children as people but as status symbols or burdens can result in the child becoming psychopathic. Some are pushed to carry the family name to success and encouraged to compete in academics and athletics and every area of life where success is the only acceptable outcome. These are parents who often derive what little happiness they have from the achievement of their children and do not regard them as persons to be trained and loved. The undue pressure which these parents put on the child often divorces the child from reality so that he will retreat into a fantasy world and there will develop psychopathic and neurotic dysfunctions. However, there are other considerations for the development of Psychopathic Arrogance such as in diabetics or other debilitating disturbances of health but these are very often overrated so that the fact is ignored that Believers, and in fact all individuals, generally become psychopathic as a result of consistent personal bad decisions and Cosmic Dynasphere involvement. Therefore, Psychopathic Arrogance is the volitional DRIVE toward unreality. Children have an option of trying to escape adverse circumstances in their childhood by use of their imagination and / or [Defense Mechanisms](#) (if they have imagination and have not substituted drug abuse for imagination). Society can also put inordinate pressure on Children to achieve and out do their contemporaries in every area where their failure is totally unacceptable. Under the undue pressure for success with no option for failure the normal childhood is gone for the children of today. This phenomenal pressure on children to succeed and achieve beyond their contemporaries has resulted in young people no longer knowing what they want to do in their life and are very late in selecting a profession or business or occupation function in life. As children they are pressured to train for something and succeed in it and some 75% of the people in society today have been trained for something for which they have NO CAPACITY to function effectively in.

The psychopathic believer is therefore invariably, a product of his OWN Arrogance and many bad decisions from a position of weakness resulting from constant residence in Cosmic Dynasphere I. Once locked in Arrogance occurs the believer enters into various mental disorders, sometimes gradually and sometimes rapidly, and it can be so gradual that it is not even recognizable. In this state the believer cannot recover through the Perception, Cognition, Incultation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine following the Rebound Procedure UNTIL he has had PROPER psychiatric treatment including proper medication. Psychiatry has at its disposal pharmacological preparations which simulate normal reality for the mentally disturbed individual so that psychotic individuals can function normally. Prayer does not reverse the process which results in a believer becoming psychotic and the answer to Psychopathic Arrogance is NOT PRAYER. For a believer to become psychotic it takes a LOT OF TIME and a

LOT of Selfcenteredness and entrance into and persistent residence in the Interlocking System of Arrogance resulting in a totally fragmented life and involvement in all the destructive things related to Arrogance. This begins as the result of Motivational Arrogance including much of Mental Attitude Arrogance, especially Self Righteous Arrogance and in fact results in an interlocking and entanglement in all the areas of the Interlocking System of Arrogance, Cosmic Dynasphere I and THE BELIEVER DOES NOT GET THERE OVERNIGHT. The psychotic person under the properly administered and regulated medication to normalize his mental functions can then use the Rebound Procedure and engage again in Post Salvation Epistemological Rehabilitation through Perception, Cognition, Incultation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine. However, it is possible for a person, expressing Positive Volition at God Consciousness and Gospel Hearing who has a genetic or pre-salvation environmental mental disorder, who is consistent in Post Salvation Epistemological Rehabilitation to have his spiritual growth alleviate his mental dysfunction. It is also possible that spiritual growth of the psychotic individual under medication could alleviate his problem as well. The difficulty comes from the fact that spiritual growth requires NORMAL MENTAL CONCENTRATION under the Filling of God the Holy Spirit and this is very likely not possible when a person has divorced himself from reality as a result of a totally fragmented life.

However, as a result of entering by choice into a prolonged process of living within Cosmic Dynasphere I under [Motivational Arrogance](#) and [Functional Arrogance](#), it is unreasonable to expect God to instantly reverse the situation which has been compacted and compressed from hundreds or thousands of decisions from a position of WEAKNESS. Therefore, the Road to recovery from Psychopathic Arrogance demands at least 4 principles:

- ▲ [Rebound Procedure](#) must be used without which there can be NO spiritual growth. ([1John 1:9](#))
- ▲ Privacy of the Priesthood must be maintained for spiritual growth and using the Mechanics of the Rebound Procedure.
- ▲ Proper Medication prescribed by a COMPETENT PHYSICIAN
- ▲ Persistence in Post Salvation Epistemological Rehabilitation from consistent Perception, Cognition, Incultation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine inside the Divine Dynasphere.

This is the LONG ROAD back through consistent Post Salvation Epistemological Rehabilitation, however, if illicit drug use has been involved and is a source of the psychosis and too much of the brain circuitry has been destroyed recovery MAY NOT BE POSSIBLE and the case is hopeless apart from the Grace of God repairing that brain circuitry. The human Brain is the vehicle which GOD uses for the believer's personal spiritual growth and its normal function is necessary to accomplish spiritual growth and function within the Protocol Plan of God. This is a double warning for the believer against involvement in the Interlocking System of Arrogance and also against drug abuse. Volition will pull the pin of the Arrogance Grenade and if Drug Abuse is part of that Modus Operandi then this believer is in very serious trouble and many times these wrong decisions regarding drug abuse result in the believer becoming completely mentally incompetent. In addition, proper medical treatment requires analysis, often hospitalization or commitment to qualified institutions for effective treatment and must not be

rejected.

Return to the [Table of Contents](#)

## **Introduction to Functional Arrogance**

Functional Arrogance involves the ACTIVITY or OVERT functions derived from Evil within the Interlocking System of Arrogance which is the result of involvement in the Thought Processes of **Motivational Arrogance** also derived from Evil. When one is involved with the some aspect of Mental Attitude Arrogance such as **Jealousy** he will then function toward people motivated by this Jealousy to produce a **Public Lie** to defame or destroy them. Some aspects of Functional Arrogance include **Revenge**, **Inordinate Ambition and Inordinate Competition** to form **Conspiracy** and also Slander, Gossiping, Maligning, Judging, **Crusader Arrogance** resulting in Christian Activism which may include the destruction of property, civil disobedience, violence, and even **Murder**. Functional Arrogance may also include involvement in aspects of asceticism which can include the commitment of heresies, extreme self-denial, self-mortification, abstinence from normality, and abnormal austerity.

Functional Antagonism in the Interlocking System of Antagonistic Emotional Hatred is also derived from Evil and results in becoming Antagonistic with strong emotional hatred for Christ, God, Grace and Bible Doctrine as a BELIEVER. It is involvement with Motivational Arrogance derived from Evil which drives the believer into an Operational or Functional Modus Vivendi which is Functional Arrogance or Functional Degeneracy from Cosmic Dynasphere I involvement or the Functional Antagonism in Cosmic Dynasphere II.

Return to the **[Table of Contents](#)**

## **Gate #49 – The Arrogance Regarding Repentance or Rebound**

Being born with an Old Sin Nature man will continually engage in personal sin as violations of the standards of the Grace Plan of God. At physical birth, imputed to each human being with life is the culpability for Adam's Original Sin, thus eliminating the greatest area of potential Arrogance in life where one could think his personal sins caused his condemnation by God and are too great for the Plan of God. No one is ever condemned by any sin he commits and when he ultimately commits his first sin he has already been long condemned, in fact the commission of personal sin is the RESULT of his condemnation at birth and never the cause. If a person, especially a Christian, thinks he can commit some sin to warrant condemnation from God, by extension, he can think he can commit a sin for which God cannot forgive him and which would cause God to REVOKE his status of Salvation. This is true Arrogance and can drive the believer to resist or reject the principle of the **Rebound Procedure** (**1John 1:9**) for forgiveness of personal sin.

The mechanics of recovery from carnality for the believer must be understood and inculcated as quickly as possible after his making **Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God**. The precedent for the **Rebound Procedure** is the unlimited atonement resulting from the Substitutionary Spiritual Death of The Lord Jesus, The Christ on the cross which was total payment for all human sins. This means that Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God MUST be because of Grace, through nonmeritorious faith in Christ alone. Rebound as an adjustment to the Justice



of God in recovery from carnality can then result in Restoration of the Soul to fellowship with GOD under the [Filling of God the Holy Spirit](#). This can occur because of Grace through simply naming or acknowledging one's sin, which has already been judged and paid for by Christ, directly to GOD. The [Problem Solving Devices](#) of the Protocol Plan of God are only capable of being used by the believer when he is in fellowship with God and under the Filling of God the Holy Spirit within the [Divine Dynasphere](#) the power system of God. Therefore, the Rebound Procedure is the 1<sup>st</sup> Problem Solving Devices immediately available to the believer after Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God. Sin is the mechanism, brought on by the Area of Weakness of the Old Sin Nature's temptations, by which the believer loses fellowship with God and the Filling of God the Holy Spirit and allows the Old Sin Nature to control the soul. The Rebound Procedure, the 1<sup>st</sup> Problem Solving Device, is the only Problem Solving Device that the believer is able to use while outside of the Divine Dynasphere and not under Filling of God the Holy Spirit. This is possible because the believer is part of the family of God and in the Church Age, the Royal Family of God, and is a Royal Priest responsible personally to God for all priestly functions. Therefore, when a believer commits sin he is not to go through any other type of priest or ritual system to approach God for atonement. As Royal Family of God he must go directly and personally to God and cite the court case regarding the sins he has committed, requesting absolution based on a precedent case. The precedent case is the Substitutionary Spiritual Death of The Lord Jesus, The Christ on the cross, where he received the imputation of all human sins and was judged for them and his Spiritual Death paid the penalty for all human sin. This mechanism allows the believer to regain the Filling of God the Holy Spirit, which is [Problem Solving Device #2](#) and [Spiritual Skill #1](#), and begin again to use the other 8 Problem Solving Devices and the rest of the Spiritual Skills to function and advance in his Spiritual Life. Rebound is NOT a LICENSE to SIN but is the Grace provision from God for the perpetuation of the Spiritual Skills in the believer's life and advancement in the Spiritual Life with the resultant execution of the Protocol Plan of God. The PROCEDURE called rebound ([1John 1:9](#)), which entails Citing, Acknowledging or Naming sins directly to GOD, results in forgiveness of all Sins and involvement in Evil from the responsible believer. If the believer uses the 'rebound battalion' to recover from carnality then he can move the reserve battalion of the Filling of God the Holy Spirit back into position which will begin to reform the [Forward Line of Troops of his SOUL](#). In the procedural function of Rebound there is no place for PENANCE, Auto-flagellation, GUILT Arrogance, PROMISES to God, PURCHASING INDULGENCES, or any other human effort. The Bible says simply to NAME, CITE the CASE, ACKNOWLEDGE, THE SIN IN AGREEMENT WITH THE JUSTICE OF THE JUDGMENT OF GOD and forgiveness is guaranteed to be forthcoming.

There are 2 Categories of Sin which must be considered when facing one's failures before God. Known Sin which is activity in the realm of Hamartiology which is understood to be sinful and recognized as having been voluntarily produced by one's choices. Unknown Sin which is activity in the realm of Hamartiology which is not understood or recognized to be sinful which one again has voluntarily produced or any sinful activities which have been forgotten. The believer must study Hamartiology to be able to effectively use the [Rebound Procedure](#) for recovery in his spiritual life. The [Forward Line of Troops of the Soul](#) is put in place beginning with setting up the first battalion of Rebound. [Denial](#), which is a [Maladaptive Defense](#)

Mechanism, is described in [1John 1:8+1John 1:10](#) and is one mechanism to securely place the believer under the [Arrogance Skills](#) and out of the Protocol Plan of God. Part of the blessing mechanism of the Rebound Procedure is the total faithfulness of God to always forgive the believer's sins when he functions under the principles of Rebound and NAMES those Sins privately, objectively and unemotionally to Him. If, however, the believer enters into any function under the Arrogance Skills and the Interlocking System of Arrogance he also eventually will enter the 8 stages of [Reversionism](#) which are much more difficult to recover from. [1John 1:9](#) is the experiential forgiveness related to the believer's post-salvation life where the Spiritual Life is set back and discontinued (at times permanently because of Locked in Arrogance) until rebound takes place.

Simply stated if the believer follows the procedure outlined in [1John 1:9](#), or [1Cor 11:28-31](#) of naming sins directly and privately to God, God then forgives him for all sins, named and unnamed sins as a result of ALL of them having already been judged and paid for on the cross by The Lord Jesus, The Christ. Often the believer may not name all sins he has committed, some being related to "Wrongdoing" and some may be actually unknown to him. However, God is said to also Purify or Cleanse from all wrongdoing, unrighteousness (all things in violation of the principles of God) and all unnamed sins. God does this regarding Wrongdoing because the believer may not understand the ramifications of wrongdoing as some of the sins he has committed and these may be something such as involvement in some aspect of Arrogance. As a part of the Royal Family of God on earth when someone wrongs the believer he must put the situation into the jurisdiction of the Supreme Court of Heaven for resolution. He is to become the plaintiff of the case and relax and be comforted in the fact that JUSTICE will be done. God WILL deal with the problem and the believer may be vindicated or he may be punished depending on the facts of the problem, all of which God alone knows. It is, therefore, much better to lose out in some situation and allow God to handle and administer the punishment, but in order to do this one MUST leave the situation totally in the Lord's hands. Without Advanced Personal Love for God, [Occupation with the Person of The Lord Jesus, The Christ](#), which is functionally available ONLY to believers in [Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God](#), sooner or later, other people will make one miserable but this can occur only because this believer has his focus on the people and not The Lord Jesus, The Christ.

### **Neglect of Rebound**

Neglect of the use of the Rebound Procedure results in a life outside of the Plan of God thus a life of constant misery since God knows what irritates each person the most and under [Divine Discipline](#) provides it for him in excess, in an attempt to get him to wake up and return to the Plan of God. A perfect example of the personal nature of Divine Discipline and the intensity with which it can be provided is in [1Cor 11:30-32](#). Accuracy in use of the [Rebound Procedure](#) is necessary because one is, in effect, being honest with self about self and if he cannot be honest with self about self he is a dishonest person for the rest of his life and miserable all the time. The believer must be honest with self and get away from the unreality of things, in order to break out of the [Arrogance Skills](#) which can be the basis of one's dishonesty. If he is not honest with self then he must rationalize self constantly just to live with himself. People dishonest with self never take responsibility for their own bad decisions and because of this

they must find a scapegoat for their decisions thus spreading dishonesty to others and blaming others for their personal problems and faults. As a result of blaming others, these others must be maligned and judged because they are a challenge to the [Self Deception](#) of one's involvement in the Arrogance Skills and this causes a deep involvement in many areas of the Interlocking System of Arrogance. The [Rebound Procedure](#) is the only mechanism which will allow the believer to continue the beneficial intake of Bible Doctrine and develop the Mirror of the Soul which results in his being able to judge self effectively on the basis of the Word of God. Having thus seen self as one truly is, he may then develop and deploy the [10 Problem Solving Devices](#) under the Grace process. The only power that can truly break Arrogance in the soul is the [Power of God the Holy Spirit](#) which was given to each believer at the point of Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God and can ONLY be retained and or regained by use of the [1st Problem Solving Device](#), Rebound. The punishment for the unbeliever, which is not Divine Discipline which is only for the believer, but is based on judgment from the Supreme Court of Heaven as a result of his ignoring the Divine Institutions and Laws of Divine Establishment. However, even when God is judging a whole nation in this way, believers can still have Happiness, Contentment, Stability and Prosperity IF they are constantly in FELLOWSHIP and under the Filling of God the Holy Spirit.

The use of the [Rebound Procedure](#) is essential in order to remain under the Filling of God the Holy Spirit and make any spiritual advance and therefore it is not a license to sin but it is adherence to COMMAND LEVEL ORDERS to advance in the Spiritual Life. Without the Rebound Procedure the believer would never be under the Filling of God the Holy Spirit and would therefore be involved in continuous sin becoming perpetually carnal and eventually moving directly into [Reversionism](#) where he would react to his own carnality and enter into the production of [Human Good](#) from the strong influence of Evil while residing in the Cosmic Dynaspheres. There is nothing as bad as a person who in [Self Righteous Arrogance](#), reacts to his own life, or persists in raising hell in a lascivious lifestyle. On the other hand, the worst [Legalists](#) are the ones who react to their former activities in life and in so doing try to convert everyone they meet to their legalistic standards. The case is clear and it becomes painfully obvious that for many believers, they were nicer as unbelievers when they did not have a life complicated by the Filling of God the Holy Spirit vs their functions under control of the Old Sin Nature.

### **Rebound & Problem Solving**

Again, the true function of Rebound does not encompass remorse, godly sorrow, auto-flagellation, emotional pleas in penance, and these are not solutions to sin but do result when [Emotion](#) is made the primary criterion of the Spiritual Life. The Divine Solution to sin does not solve the sin problem by adding new problems to the original. (Example) A Believer Sins in [Jealousy](#), taking him out of fellowship and out of the Plan of God. Instead of using rebound to name jealousy to God and receive forgiveness ([1John 1:9](#)) he adds to it with [Bitterness](#) and this intensifies the original Jealousy sin by this addition and because he is minus rebound or in some way involved in pseudo rebound. Then he adds more to it with vindictiveness and implacability and again is minus correct rebound function. As this goes on he further adds Malice and does not function under true Rebound Procedures. This then leads him to [Revenge](#)

Modus Vivendi and still there is no rebound function. Consequently with the snowball effect in play this leads to his complete entanglement in and function under the [Arrogance Skills](#) and as a result the problem of Jealousy has driven him through perpetuated carnality to the point of Loss of ALL gains in the Spiritual Life and to LOSER Status as a Believer susceptible to the [Dying Divine Discipline](#) of the Sin Unto Death.

Therefore, the believer cannot solve any problems in his life without [Problem Solving Device #1](#), Rebound, naming or citing sins directly to God. No believer can solve problems in life by the use of any level of Arrogance in the Spiritual Life, ([Rom 12:2-3](#)) and the fastest way to accomplish this is to distort the Rebound Procedure. The most vulnerable point in the Spiritual Life is when the believer approaches [Spiritual Adulthood](#) and begins thinking in terms of Bible Doctrine and then becomes susceptible to the ‘thinking distractions’ of trying to solve problems with other problems. Only when involved in and functioning under the [Arrogance Skills](#) does a person seek to solve a problem with the addition of another problem. (Example) One cannot ever solve the problems of loneliness or betrayal with Sex, Alcohol, or Drugs. When the believer becomes involved with getting even with people by trying to engage in Revenge or malice, etc., this results in a totally miserable life. The Most miserable people in the world are those believers being punished by the Supreme Court of Heaven. Therefore, a person should NEVER make Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God by faith alone in The Lord Jesus, The Christ alone UNLESS he is ready for GOD to really straighten out his thinking and his Life.

When the believer gets into a combination sin of Arrogance and Emotion such as occurs with [Jealousy](#), this creates the irrationality of problem solving incompetence where one is trying to solve the problems of life or correct sins with more problems or sins. This leads to composite sins and failure to deploy and use the Tandem Problem Solving Devices of the [Integrity Envelope](#) of Personal Love for God the Father and Impersonal – Unconditional Love for Mankind. This believer functions under the 3 Arrogance Skills of Self justification, Self Deception, and Self Absorption for his own [Self Destruction](#).

### **Rebound & Wrongdoing**

Wrongdoing involves sticking one's nose into other peoples business. This involves the whole realm of civil disobedience whereby one is placing self above the laws of the nation because of his presumed position in the Spiritual Life. It encompasses [Crusaderism](#) and [Christian Activism](#) where one is using his ideas and position to force others to conform to his thinking. It is also [Vigilantism](#) where one places self outside the law in order to extract vengeance for a perceived wrong. It is paramilitary violence involving taking up arms outside the military or police establishment to control crime inside a nation or crime to a nation from outside. In addition, violations of the Principles of Freedom are part of this as well and one must understand that Freedom without Authority is Anarchy and Authority without Freedom is Tyranny both which ultimately destroy freedom. To avoid Anarchy, Freedom must have Values; and to avoid Tyranny, Authority must have [Virtue](#). Freedom without responsibility is Apathy and Apathy is related to Arrogance and indifference and loss of values. [Rom 13:1-7](#), explains that Civil Disobedience and Social Engineering Laws which mandate functions under national law which superimpose the principles of Christianity or some satanic ideology onto all people are totally

wrong and also destroy Freedom. It is Utopian Socialism which is stealing money from those who work for it and giving it to those who would vote them into power. This is the ongoing Status Quo of the government and politicians in the United States of America today. This is WRONGDOING!

### **Rebound & Arrogance**

The Rebound Procedure is designed to eliminate any Arrogance one may develop about his personal sin, any guilt complex regarding sin and also any need for penance or trying to do something for God to make up for one's failures or sin. IF one fails, after rebound, to forgive someone who does some wrong to him, he is not able to handle human relationships and is unable to switch to **Impersonal – Unconditional Love for Mankind**. If the believer fails this test on the momentum line, he then enters into Cosmic Dynasphere I, through the **Motivational Arrogance** of **Mental Attitude Arrogance**. If he thinks that he is the most miserable person on the earth even though he is a believer in The Lord Jesus, The Christ, he has a significant problem in his Spiritual Life. If he has this kind of problem, he has incredible levels of garbage loaded into his Stream of Consciousness of the Soul. If he has garbage loaded into his Stream of Consciousness of the Soul, he does not want Bible Doctrine solutions because they are God's Solutions but he wants the Self Centered Solutions of Arrogance. As a result of this occurring in Christian marriage one will not fulfill the mandate of **Eph 4:31**. Forgiveness for real or imagined injustice is a function of Impersonal – Unconditional Love for Mankind resulting from residing in the Divine Dynasphere and Believers in the Cosmic Dynaspheres have no ability to function under Impersonal – Unconditional Love. This failing results from preoccupation with self, divorcement from reality, lack of capacity for Love and these believers are functioning in the Interlocking System of Arrogance and have NO ability to forgive. Impersonal – Unconditional Love for Mankind is a function of the Honor and **Integrity** of the **Royal Family Honor Code** in the Divine Dynasphere only. Being thoughtless is NOT a sin in and of itself but it leads to sin and Arrogance. When one involve self in Sin and Arrogance which takes the believer OUT of the Plan of God, the Righteousness of God changes focus on him to condemnation and the Justice of God punishes through the Love of God expressed by the Grace of God. **Bitterness**, a also combination of Arrogance and Emotion, is one of the most destructive functions of the soul especially with regard to marriage and the Spiritual Life. Bitterness, Jealousy, and much more Motivational Arrogance will combine and systematically destroy the Believer's Spiritual Life. Bitterness can come from Jealousy as an extrapolation of it with Arrogance and Emotion combining leading to this Spiritual Life destruction.

If the believer must hurt in order to come to the point of using the Rebound Procedure then God the Holy Spirit is only in control of his soul temporarily because he moves immediately back into the Arrogance system after rebound. The one reason that the United States is in such desperate trouble today is that Believers in The Lord Jesus, The Christ have either rejected the **Rebound Procedure**, are ignorant of it, and / or have tied it into some other area such as **Guilt**, thus desiring or requiring some form of Penance to gain forgiveness. They are more involved with how they feel about sins rather than what God the Father has done to isolate the problem of Sin and provide the solution for it in the Substitutionary Spiritual Death sacrifice of The Lord Jesus, The Christ for ALL human sins. It is essential that after Rebound the believer



must follow the example given by Paul as he described how he dealt with his [Reversionism](#), “[forgetting those things which are behind](#)” and moving on to further advance in the Spiritual Life. When one fails to use the Rebound Procedure he fails to recover the Filling of God the Holy Spirit and unfortunately there can be NO Spiritual Life without the 2 power options of the [Filling of God the Holy Spirit](#) and [Operation Z](#), the Grace Apparatus for Perception. When one fails to use rebound he is proclaiming his Arrogance and insulting God saying that God alone cannot complete the function for forgiveness and purification from personal sins but must have help from the sinner. ([1John 1:9](#), [1Cor 11:28-31](#))

Arrogance is the most destructive function in human life relationships. The lust patterns of the Old Sin Nature when involved with Arrogance has a system and those functioning in the Interlocking System of Arrogance think in terms of:

Wealth without honor

Success without integrity

Promotion without ability

Approbation without humility

Love without virtue

Sex as the desire for personal gratification without happiness nor compassion for the partner

The believer should realize that ALL sinful activity, including the sins of the Interlocking System of Arrogance, require the function of Volition and the DESIRE to produce Sin. Rebound is the beginning of the solution, also requiring volition, which keeps one from being caught up with the reality of the problem and instead enables one to see the reality of the Solution as Metabolized Bible Doctrine and the return to the Spiritual Life.

### **Rebound, Testing & Divine Discipline**

For the believer who is not involved in continuous personal sin and neglect of rebound, testing will catch or overtake each believer for various reasons but this will never be anything which is unusual for mankind. The only kind of testing which is for the believer is only that which is from and about mankind. God has therefore promised to protect the believer from demonic or satanic attack and because of this protection the believer cannot be demon possessed as a result of having the Indwelling of God the Holy Spirit from the point of his Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God. However, the believer can be demon OBSESSED or under a saturation of Demon Influence because of rejection of Bible Doctrine and as a result of developing [Black out of the Soul](#) and [Scar Tissue of the Soul](#) from [Locked in Negative Volition](#) in Reversionism and intensification of Arrogance which results in VOLUNTARILY believing the LIES of Satan within his Cosmic Dynaspheres. In addition this Arrogance will manifest itself in [Self Righteousness](#) in prosperity and [Self Pity](#) in adversity or when under pressure.

There is NO credit with God in toughing it out through the Divine Discipline resulting from Carnality. This is a state of Arrogance derived from energy of the flesh or human efforts and glorifies self not God. Human strength uses Arrogance instead of the [Humility](#) demanded for spiritual strength. The choice regarding solutions to Divine Discipline is always between the

Arrogance of toughing it out and the Humility of using the Grace application of the principles of Rebound. Those who understand rebound and reject it and try to compensate for sin by their own efforts will accumulate Divine Discipline to the point of incredibly miserable physical death. In essence, in the Plan of God, the believer is preserved alive to become a witness for the prosecution in the Angelic Conflict Appeal Trial against the satanic proposition that the love, justice and righteousness of God do not work together. When he is no longer of any value as a witness then God removes this believer from this life and takes him home to be face to face with the Lord. Those who do not understand rebound have no other means of withstanding divine discipline. Therefore, Human Strength relies and feeds on Arrogance while Spiritual Strength demands humility. No matter how strong one's nature is, humanly speaking, there is no credit with God for toughing it out through Divine Discipline and one must always refer back to the Elative Conclusion "Human solutions are no solutions and the only solutions are God's solutions". The only credit one can have with God is with reference to how strong he is in the execution of the Spiritual Life of the church age. Human solutions glorify Self while Divine solutions glorify God. If one succeeds on human power, efforts or ability he glorifies Self while if he succeeds on divine power and Grace Orientation he glorifies God.

According to the [Postulates of Integrity](#), Disadvantages and Maladjustment to the Justice of God do not and in fact cannot cancel the Advantage, GOD. One cannot ever commit any sin nor enter into any system derived from Evil and change the Integrity of God. One cannot ever commit any sin, even those which shock him personally, which can cause him to lose his salvation because God being immutable cannot change which he unconditionally has given. One does not have any ability to upset God by anything which he thinks, says, or does. The Integrity of God is infinitely greater than any spiritual failure or malfunction on the part of any believer, the reality is that the individual believer is just not that important before God. Thinking that one is able to upset God or that he is of great importance in God's Plan or even in this meager life given to him by God, is the epitome of Arrogance in the believer who is totally disoriented to the Integrity of God. One should not ever think that he is so important that he can do anything, including commit any sin, and as a result lose his salvation. This is making an issue of self and ignoring the Integrity of God. Arrogance is highly inconsistent and when believers involved with Rebound Arrogance confess to God they overemphasize their importance to God when they should be emphasizing God's importance to them in salvation and the rebound Adjustment to the Justice of God in the Spiritual Life.

Return to the [Table of Contents](#)

### **Gate #50 – The Arrogance of Blindness to Self**

All believers have some level of Arrogance that is hidden to themselves, most often as a result of one's sins and Modus Operandi becoming more refined than they are with other Negative Volition believer's. The believer MUST realize that no matter how far he advances in the Spiritual Life from infancy to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and even beyond, he will, while in this life, still FAIL occasionally if not constantly. Blind Arrogance involves and

interlocks with [Self Righteous Arrogance](#) and is a partial divorcement from reality which destroys common sense, good personality, integrity, etc. Blind Arrogance is the vanity of the believer being divorced from the reality of Bible Doctrine leading to his conclusion that he is victorious, mature, spiritually great because of some unique experience or sacrificial Modus Operandi or system of [Human Effort Good Works](#). Therefore, Blind Arrogance is one of the greatest destroyers of people. This often occurs when a believer becomes involved in daily prayer which results in them becoming totally Arrogant and thinking themselves very special in fulfilling this “obligation” to pray. This and any other [Legalism](#), Apostasy from [Reversionism](#), Degeneracy from Interlocking System of Arrogance entanglement or any of the myriad of Influences of Evil, all contribute to Blind Arrogance. Blind Arrogance interlocked with Self Righteous Arrogance with total preoccupation with self is the beginning of total divorcement from reality. This believer has lost all common sense, which is orientation to reality and is the solution to unreality. Blind Arrogance interlocks with [Psychopathic Arrogance](#) and may result in psychoses or neuroses which are total divorcement from reality and nearly impossible to recover from. There is NO integrity in Blind Arrogance since it is built on being right, good, and [Moral](#). Blind Arrogance as divorcement from reality is one’s thinking that he is becoming closer to God because of some effort he performs or talent he possesses. This is the allegation of the Believer who claims unique experience in the field of [Emotion](#), self sacrifice or self righteousness or some other personal effort. Blind Arrogance when interlocked with [Legalism](#) includes attempted superimposition of personal standards on others and then judging those others based on those standards. This is where legalistic believers try to get others to function as they do in life. These legalistic believers are assuming that as long as they don’t violate their own personal standards they are close to God. ([Matt 19:27](#)) Some assume there is NO Old Sin Nature, if they even know of it’s existence. This is a system of salvation or spirituality or maturity by [Human Effort Good Works](#) related to individual Arrogance or through some special activity resulting in their becoming more spiritual through something like speaking in pseudo tongues. Whereas God’s standard for maturity and qualification for special blessing in time is ONLY advance in the Spiritual Life through maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul. Blind Arrogance is, therefore, a substitution of personal standards over divine standards for salvation and / or spiritual growth. It is Blind Arrogance for a believer to imply he has achieved maturity through some unique experience or that his life is more important than someone else’s. Blind Arrogance is an offshoot of the [Scar Tissue of the Soul](#) resulting from [Negative Volition Arrogance](#) and the apostasy of [Reversionism](#). It is developed during periods of prosperity from Self Righteousness and Legalism. In the unbeliever it can be developed through engaging in some system of salvation by human effort good deeds. Saul of Tarsus was the top in that field as a Judaiser and if salvation could have occurred because of legalism then Saul would have been the ONLY saved person on the face of the earth. Legalists always like to put themselves above everyone else and when the legalistic Jews heard the statements of the former legalistic superiority of the Apostle Paul, they must have been totally distraught since all legalism is based on a very strong driving [Motivational Arrogance](#) of [Mental Attitude Arrogance](#). This Arrogance drives the legalist to go higher and further in their setting of standards for their false personal Frame of Reference. It is the assumption by the believer that he has arrived at the pinnacle of the spiritual life because of something HE HAS DONE.

While in a state of continuous carnality the Corinthians considered themselves experts in doctrine. They assumed that they had enough and didn't need anymore and were resentful of repetition. This explains [1Cor 3:1](#) and furthermore implies a status of perpetual carnality for these believers. These were great intellectual believers who were willing to vehemently and emotionally defend their position. In their Arrogance and along with their great intellect they inserted [Emotionalism](#) into the doctrine they were taught which is not part of the Spiritual Life of the Church Age believer and this was their ultimate weakness.

Every human manifests his inherent Old Sin Nature some time after birth with his first personal sin and thereafter he never stops sinning until he dies. Man will sin as long as he lives and to think otherwise is in itself deep involvement in the Interlocking System of Arrogance. ([1John 1:8](#)) Even Believers who have reached Advanced Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and receive Ultra Super – Grace Escrow blessings such as Moses, Paul, Jeremiah, Isaiah, etc., all sinned at some point AFTER reaching Advanced Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God. The Lord Jesus, The Christ on the cross paid the bill for all human sin and provided the option for eternal salvation and man can only accept or reject it and this is the PURPOSE of and OPPORTUNITY given to every person in the Human Race. Mankind is here for the specific purpose and given the opportunity to say YES or NO, through faith acceptance or rejection of the Substitutionary Spiritual Death of The Lord Jesus, The Christ on the cross and there MUST BE FREEDOM for man to do so. Therefore, God provided the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions to ensure this freedom will continue to exist. This is the great error of Blind Arrogance since no one can earn nor work his way into the Grace Plan of God but must only make a FAITH decision. No believer is ever saved because of his talent or because God had a special job and had to use him, nor can he lose salvation because of his shocking horrendous sins. Consequently, as a result, it is clear that most salvation testimonies by believers are tied up with all sorts of Arrogance and do not in any way glorify or reflect the Grace of God. Salvation is not ever earned, deserved nor worked for and the only dramatic thing about salvation is who and what The Lord Jesus, The Christ is and what he did in substitution for us on the cross some 2000 years ago. All other systems and efforts directed to this end involve Blind Arrogance.

Also very often the believer in Blind Arrogance assumes that the Plan of God stands or falls on the basis of his behavior, success or failure and it depends on him as a believer, as a result he interlocks with [Institutional Arrogance](#). Blind Arrogance is tantamount to failure in spiritual growth from ignorance of Bible Doctrine because spiritual growth requires testing and growth from the application of Bible Doctrine under the 5 Stages of the [Faith Rest Drill](#). Advancing believers must face tests and other believers may give this believer a correct doctrine principle in their statements, having an advanced understanding of the Bible Doctrine, but then give an erroneous application which becomes a distortion of the truth. With the distortion of Bible Doctrine comes the principle of [Self Righteous Arrogance](#). Arrogant people cannot ever apply Bible Doctrine even though they may retain a great deal of academic understanding of it. Entanglement in Arrogance causes the believer to have a failure to have true norms and standards based on [METABOLIZED Bible Doctrine](#) in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul

thus a failure to have developed [Virtue](#), integrity or honor and totally lack the ability for application of Bible Doctrine. Blind Arrogance is the opposite to or the antithesis of [HONOR](#) and Honor is Integrity plus Loyalty to doctrine and thus to the Lord for all in the Royal Family of God.

### **Blind Arrogance & Self Righteousness**

When involved in Blind Arrogance many believers imply or allege that they have reached Spiritual Maturity through some unique experience or system of asceticism, sacrifice or Self Righteousness which no other has achieved. This system which is basically a “spiritual king of the mountain” process is now very popular in [Legalistic](#) fundamental Christian circles. This is the sincere holy roller who alleges to speak in tongues or have an ecstatic experience where he alone has advanced in the Plan of God. It can also be any form of selfcenteredness in the believer who assumes that his [Morality](#), [Human Good production](#), social activity, [Opinions](#) or experiences are more important than anyone else's. In this system very often a [Self Righteous](#) person dominates a group of believers through this legalism. It is very close to and associated with [Personality Arrogance](#) and [Conspiracy Arrogance](#) where a self righteous person dominates a group and sets up false standards for a group or “cell” and by running down the local authority he dominates the group using some system of legalism and [Fanaticism](#). If people say NO long enough to the Absolute Truth of Bible Doctrine, the [Laws of Divine Establishment](#) or the [Divine Institutions](#) they will exercise their voting franchise in the system of government of nations like the United States of America, for any fool and accept any idiotic platform and still think they are right when in fact they are totally wrong. This has been clearly demonstrated by the election in the United States of America of Barak Obama 2 times and Joe Biden being allowed to steal an election being totally mentally incompetent and mentally incapacitated and also by the people of this nation actually electing a mental vegetable to the United States Senate, John Fetterman in Pennsylvania. Through all of this these individuals will be unaware of their own Arrogance even though they make terrible decisions and follow leaders saturated with and functioning totally under the principles of Evil. They assume, by their poor attire or some system of self sacrifice or using certain types of language or their being nice to deprived people, that they have [Humility](#), are very humble, and therefore are great people, while in reality, this is a form of the hidden Arrogance which is EXTREMELY devastating. Their Self Righteousness is, in fact, the origin of Blind Arrogance and their Legalism is the principle of Blind Arrogance. This believer then looks into the cracked and splintered mirror of what little Bible Doctrine may be remaining in his soul and never sees his own Arrogance and thus enters and rapidly declines through the stages of the apostasy of [Reversionism](#) and the degeneracy of the Interlocking System of Arrogance. Therefore, advancing believers must always avoid following ANY PERSON and only follow doctrine and the principles of the Laws of Divine Establishment and the Divine Institutions.

Legalism puts the believer into Blind Arrogance which can involve any form of Salvation, Spirituality or Spiritual Growth or Advancement by Human Effort Works, Human Good production from Evil. Having Nothing of Absolute Truth in the soul results in this believer being sucked into Blind Arrogance from soul blindness. Blind souls are always on a quest in a [Frantic Search for Happiness](#) searching for alleviation of their own Self Induced Misery as a



result of their devolvement in Reversionism. Blind souls are pleasure seekers and hop from person to person, situation to situation trying to find happiness and they abuse almost everything normal in life to try to solve this unhappiness problem. This believer will inevitably move from [Motivational Arrogance](#) to [Functional Arrogance](#) as he progressively becomes more entangled in the Interlocking System of Arrogance. However, the one thing a believer still possesses, even when there is NOTHING of the substance of Truth in the soul, a functional VOLITION which still makes decisions, albeit mostly Bad Decisions, from a position of TOTAL weakness as a result of lacking [Metabolized Bible Doctrine](#) to make good decisions based on. Human personality cannot cope with life when there is nothing in the soul and this type of individual can lean on others and seek counseling but will still end in this life with NOTHING. Arrogance in one's thinking, whether he is aware of it or not, leads to irrationality and destroys personal capabilities and resents those capabilities in others. What one destroys in his own soul he will look out and see in others and then become [Jealous](#) of the characteristics he has destroyed in himself. This is how blind inconsistency begins in the believer moving him into Self Righteousness and Jealousy then to Self Pity all parts of Motivational Arrogance. Lacking Spiritual Self Esteem, Spiritual Autonomy or Spiritual Maturity this believer has a ZERO soul and therefore converts any aspects of [Morality](#) into Self Righteous Legalism. This believer lacks VIRTUE from not functioning in the [Integrity Envelope](#) of the Divine Dynasphere and tries to take his morality and superimpose it on others as Legalism. Therefore, NOTHING, spreads to NOTHING and Arrogance evangelizes for Arrogance and the result is terrible collective Self Righteousness. This invariably leads into [Crusader Arrogance](#) and this NOTHING in the soul must be fed and when one has a sufficient number of converts then he gathers them and looks outside and finds something to attack from his stand of morality and Self Righteousness. This is the blindness of the believer who makes unknowing bad decisions from their own volitional functions and destroys themselves with constant Self Induced Misery and thinks, based on their misery levels, that they are under incredible Divine Discipline. They think in their [Disillusionment](#) that they are under attack by Satan himself. The irony here is that these idiotic believers fail to recognize that Satan is a CREATURE and can only be in 1 place at a time. For these types, who start with Blind Arrogance and progress down through degeneracy and apostasy in the Interlocking System of Arrogance and Reversionism, Divine Discipline is the last stage of misery for them because the majority of their misery is Self Induced. What starts with a Blind Arrogance gradually builds up from the initial neglect or indifference to Bible Doctrine and progresses into an Antagonism toward Bible Doctrine, God and anything related to Christianity as they invariably move into the Interlocking System of Antagonistic Emotional Hatred.

Believers must constantly evaluate their Scale of Values to determine or reemphasize what is their first priority in this life. If they have Bible Doctrine as Priority #1 they then have a proper Scale of Values in their soul. For the believer in The Lord Jesus the Christ, Bible Doctrine must precede everything and take precedence over everything in life and the day that it ceases to do so everything falls apart in life. Maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul is the means of acquiring the perfect happiness, [Problem Solving Device #9](#), which believers are to designed to share with God as they approach and move into Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God. Many believers turn

away from the doctrine which will bring them this perfect happiness and if they, in any way, do achieve any happiness in Reversionism it turns out to be Minus H, the very temporary pseudo happiness developed in the Cosmic Dynaspheres. This is just another part of the Cosmic Dynaspheres and is the type of happiness which makes the believer twice as miserable as he was before he had the object, position or individual which he sought and thought would bring him happiness. Once his Scale of Values changes there is nothing to hold a believer to Bible Doctrine and he inevitably leaves doctrine and falls rapidly down through the 8 stages of the apostasy of [Reversionism](#). The only solution to this is the consistent use of the [Rebound Procedure](#) and then consistent Post Salvation Epistemological Rehabilitation for continued spiritual growth. The only possible way for spiritual growth to occur is through the soul and the only way to have spiritual growth is to ADD words and vocabulary concerning Bible Doctrine and the Plan of God to the soul and these MUST be meaningful and lead to the understanding of the concepts, principles and policies of God and the categories of Bible Doctrine. As this develops then Bible Doctrine becomes more and more important and there will be many times when the believer is tested regarding the various areas of Bible Doctrine he has accumulated. When the believer begins to think he is objective then his Achilles Heal will be displayed and he will be tested in that area. This testing may bring to him [Hypersensitivity](#), [Self Pity](#), irritation or resentment of some perceived injustice, and this may cause a change to begin in his Scale of Values were derived from Bible Doctrine and now begin moving to a new 'False' Scale of Values in the forefront of his soul. First, he becomes more important to self than he ever should be and this is his entrance into Blind Arrogance which is a source of great personal weakness leading to a complete change of attitude regarding many subjects and aspects of life.

Blind Arrogance invariably results in entanglement in many aspects of the Interlocking System of Arrogance and then the individual calling it something else like 'spirituality'. This Blind Arrogance can be the result of Self Righteousness and achievement in some field which is a traditional taboo rather than a biblical mandate. All of these things form the environment for Arrogance where the person can call self spiritual or mature because he adheres to these false principles, when he is not anywhere near these states. This person can believe his imagined status and persuade others to believe him also. [Self Righteous Arrogant](#) people all practice some type of asceticism or self deprivation wherein their function as a part of what they consider spirituality is complying with a system of taboos. Not only is this not spirituality but is, in fact, the degeneracy of the Interlocking System of Arrogance. This person has total subjectivity and distorts everything into systems of his personal success and creates false standards which ultimately destroy his ability to function under great pressure. In Blind Arrogance the believer inevitably becomes a legalistic self righteous person thinking he is better than others as a result of his erroneous and false Norms and Standards. Everyone develops their own personal standards and everyone has an Old Sin Nature but the believer's focus in life must be never to judge others but only consider his own position. Salvation, Spirituality and the supposed attainment of Spiritual Maturity by human effort works are all part of false assumptions under Blind Arrogance. Each person must live their life only as unto the Lord and never become involved with trying to determine how someone else is functioning in their life. Blind Arrogance always includes [Sincerity](#) which is a facade for hypocrisy. Arrogance and

Emotion out of control are the source of sincerity and instability, and sincerity is not by any consideration a Virtue. An emotional decision has no meaning and verbal or overt dedication as an emotional reaction means absolutely nothing in the Christian Way of Life and it merely expresses Emotional Reversionism, Pseudo Intellectualism and advertises that this person is trying to use others for their own advancement. This often occurs in any organization where people declare their total undying loyalty to the leader and this is the idiocy of public dedication and reaffirmation of faith.

There is never a situation where the believer is to degrade himself in the Spiritual Life in any way EVER. GREAT people are never degraded and in their souls they have principles of Absolute Truth, honorable character and integrity so that they cannot be degraded. The reality of true greatness is that not even being forced into degrading circumstances can degrade a great person. Only when involved in Blind Arrogance can one be degraded by degrading circumstances and this is a matter and sign of the Mental Attitude Arrogance of PRIDE. It is a sign of Arrogance when one feels degraded when put into a circumstance where others attempt to humiliate, ridicule or criticize him in some way. The day a person cannot learn from legitimate criticism and bonifide correction is the day they have lost all contact with the reality of life. The Lord Jesus, The Christ demonstrated this fact by the washing of the feet of the men who followed him and this did not detract from the greatness of the Lord nor remove his integrity. It did not remove anything from his soul and he continued to be even greater than he was before. Therefore, THERE IS NO CIRCUMSTANCE IN LIFE WHICH CAN DEGRADE THE BELIEVER UNLESS HE HAS THE INGREDIENTS FOR DEGRADATION ALREADY IN HIS SOUL. Poise and Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul will carry every believer through every circumstance of life. There is also an analogy presented by the washing of the disciples feet by the Lord as well. The disciples had bathed before coming to the last supper and this is an illustration of their salvation. The idea is ONCE BATHED always bathed and this is the same for salvation, since ONCE saved always saved. Therefore, they did not have to bathe again in the upper room. It is Blind Arrogance to think that one can do something to gain salvation OR do something to LOSE IT. The washing of their feet is analogous to the Rebound Procedure which must be consistently used after Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God to recover from any failures as sin.

Intensity in one's personality generally goes with Arrogance and intense people are most often very subjective and very Arrogant and don't even realize they are Arrogant. They never relax nor smile and as a result life is very difficult for them. This is the Arrogance of Emotion dominating the soul and it brings with it erroneous conclusions as to what constitutes the Plan of God. This is emphasis on personal experience not spiritual growth through Perception, Cognition, Inculcation & Metabolization of Bible Doctrine. The Emotional Arrogance of the holy roller Christians who associate spiritual advance with an obsolete, canceled spiritual gift called "tongues" is Blind Arrogance. Every person involved in the holy roller or tongues movement is a victim of Blind Arrogance. They are the most Arrogant SOBs on the earth today. They often use academically understood Bible Doctrine principles to bring others into line and manipulate people by throwing doctrine at them. However, it is not ever a believer's position to manipulate people, that is the ministry of God the Holy Spirit. Make no mistake,

when someone in authority tells an underling to do something this is NOT manipulation and NOT Blind Arrogance. When a husband sets a policy in the family the wife must adhere to it, PERIOD. Blind Arrogance is always self centered and becomes ‘what one does’ which is most important and also what is or is not spiritual. It always establishes false standards from which false conclusions arise with regard to what constitutes spirituality and other functions. It is acceptable for others to agree with and follow standards another sets up, whether they are valid or false, if they desire to do so, but this other never has a right to try to force those standards on others in Self Righteousness.

### **Requirements for Blind Arrogance**

The **Reversionist** under the influence of Evil (**1Tim 6:3-5**) is under blind Arrogant and has no true understanding of any of the principles of Bible Doctrine. Blind Arrogance is where **Mental Attitude Arrogance**, **Reversionism** and **Emotionalism** all derived from Evil meet. (**2Tim 3:2-5**)

Blind Arrogance:

- ✧ Rejects the principle of live and let live as self determination.
- ✧ Tries to tell others what they should or should not do.
- ✧ Causes great misery because those people involved cannot explain what is happening to them in life since without Bible Doctrine they cannot understand their Divine Discipline.
- ✧ Is the erroneous conclusion sponsored by Evil that the Plan of God stands or falls based on what THEY do, how THEY behave and it never occurs to these people that the Plan of God stands or falls on who and what God is ALONE.
- ✧ Emphasizes man and is thus anthropocentric instead of Christocentric.
- ✧ Results in maximum selfcenteredness in the believer who assumes that his eclectic morality, production, opinion or experiences are more important than anyone or anything else.
- ✧ Is the irrational conclusion that the Plan of God has failed because he has failed.
- ✧ Establishes false standards and comes to false conclusions with regard to spiritual greatness.
- ✧ Assumes any friendliness from the opposite sex is love.
- ✧ Interlocks with **Personality Arrogance** where the Self Righteous anthropocentric personality emerges as part of being involved in the Interlocking System of Arrogance.

Blind Arrogance can result in many erroneous assumptions including:

- ✧ **Legalism** in all its aspects
- ✧ Salvation must occur by means of personal human effort good deed works where unbelievers have their minds blinded so that they cannot accept the Grace principle of the gospel of The Lord Jesus, The Christ.
- ✧ Spirituality by works in the same way.
- ✧ Maturity by works also in the same way.
  - Here the **Emotional Arrogance** of the holy rollers is an example and they associate spiritual advance with an obsolete canceled spiritual gift, “Speaking in Tongues” which they take totally out of the context of its purpose.

These are all signs of the influence of and function under the principles of Evil. The self centered Arrogance of a believer who assumes that his life or activities are more important than those of anyone else has been refuted in [Phil 2:14-16](#). It is total Arrogance to assume that the Plan of God depends on any individual person since being a PLAN OF GOD, it CAN and DOES ONLY depend on God and never on anything any individual creature may think, say or do. There is also the Pastor Teacher who assumes that his ministry stands or falls as a result of something HE does which is totally Arrogant since ONLY GOD can dismiss or promote any man in the ministry.

All Arrogance is simply inflexibility concerning the [Nonessentials](#) of life which builds false Norms and Standards in the conscience of the individual's soul. The believer must never try to live based on the Norms and Standards of another person but must live based only on his own Norms and Standards and must therefore develop an accurate conscience and Frame of Reference with which to build correct norms and standards. This requires daily inculcation of Absolute Truth which for the believer means consistent Perception, Cognition, Inculcation & Metabolization of Bible Doctrine. The [Weak Believer](#) suffers from Blind Arrogance and has been evangelized into weakness by others who are also weak and his weakness is intensified by emulating weakness. To avoid emulation of weakness and the resultant intensifying of one's weakness requires accumulation of Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul. When this occurs consistently and results in a maximum level of Bible Doctrine in the soul it is the ONLY acceptable function which causes the believer's advance to [Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God](#). This advance is accompanied by a total overhaul of the conscience so that the Frame of Reference and Norms and Standards line up with the Christian Way of Life and [Divine Viewpoint](#) thinking. This believer can then function on the basis of the Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of his Soul and under the [Royal Family Honor Code](#) so that neither [Legalism](#) nor [Antinomianism](#) is compounded into persistent sinfulness. Therefore, the Person involved in Blind Arrogance is totally intolerant, inflexible, subjective and extremely hypersensitive. This type of person in a Local Church may enter Blind Arrogance and then decide the Pastor Teacher no longer has a biblical message and then seeks to force his opinion on others by conspiring against the pastor. If this is accomplished in a Local Church, or any organization, the church or the organization is thereby destroyed. This [Conspiracy](#) will distract those who are positive to Bible Doctrine and this type of conspiratorial person must be totally and permanently removed from the organization, ANY organization.

Blind Arrogance keeps the believer from yielding to the superior standards of God's policy of GRACE. Grace is always related to Bible Doctrine never to [Human Effort](#) WORKS. Blind Arrogance always rejects the principle of live and let live as a basic principle of life which is the foundation for [Humility](#) which is the basis for developing [Virtue](#) and capacity for life. This is the believer stuck in [Reversionism](#) who sets up his own standards rather than yielding to the superior standards of the Plan of God. It is interesting to consider that every believer has entered into a CONTRACT with, the "Capitalist of Eternity" ([Matt 20:1-15](#)), The Lord Jesus, The Christ, but it is a contract ONLY for Eternal Life and when he rejects the standards of God



and his Plan of Grace during his life on earth, therefore, all he gets after his life has ended is Eternal Life. IF the believer adheres to the standards of the Grace Plan and Policy of God during his life on earth, maybe he will and maybe he will not, after his life has ended, he gets the contracted Eternal Life but also the bonus of *greater or SURPASSING – GRACE rewards* as his escrow eternal blessings as a result of fulfilling the Plan of God.

### **Blind Arrogance and the Woman**

God regards each “lady” in the Royal Family of God as being of extreme value and because of this they must be shown the proper deference. It is the Divine Viewpoint which counts in everything and no matter how insignificant or obnoxious a female believer may be on any given occasion SHE is important to GOD. This principle of Bible Doctrine must be kept in mind for true Royal Family of God sensitivity. This is the believer being sensitive to the Divine Viewpoint and operating on that basis and ONLY Blind Arrogance ignores the fact that all members of the Royal Family of God are equally important to God. All believers must keep in mind and always remember that when one assembles with others in the Royal Family of God for any reason, they are all of the highest quality in the sight of God and therefore, this must be one’s perspective in his attitude toward them. God never has nor will ever encourage the believer to form separate judgments from his own standards. “Love for the brethren” is simply having a Relaxed Mental Attitude toward each and every believer and functioning under Problem Solving Device #8, Impersonal – Unconditional Love for Mankind. When a woman has been divorced, generally, the reason for her divorce is that she could not get along with anyone and was involved in Egotistical Arrogance. She suffers from Blind Arrogance which causes her to become a Trouble Maker. This is not necessarily true of widows but very often when a woman is divorced, no matter how sad her story is, the reality is that she is a fantastically egotistically Arrogant woman and has never, in all her life, thought about anyone else except herself and is spoiled in the true sense of it. Then, after her divorce, she is now a trouble maker for many, whereas before she was trouble for only one man, and for him now he is thankfully free and hopefully wiser.

Women, generally, have a great propensity for Arrogance, as a result of this being the reason for Ishah’s deception in the Garden, and are carried away with their own self importance, their own brand of Legalism and that their Personal Opinions are more important than any other’s opinions in life. The manner in which they attempt to or in fact do superimpose their opinions on others is a great fascination and forms a whole pattern of Arrogance. The Lord Jesus, The Christ in trying to shake the disciples out of their saturation in Blind Arrogance predicted his Substitutionary Spiritual Death and then his resurrection. The disciples, even though they had been with him for 3 years, understood only the mechanics of Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God. Were it not for the resurrection on the 3<sup>rd</sup> day the disciples would have died and gone to heaven without a single one of them having any reward or decorations as a result of their knowing NO Bible Doctrine at all. It was the resurrection which snapped the disciples out of their stupidity and Blind Arrogance. Salome wanted to bypass the objective of the 1<sup>st</sup> advent of Christ, his Substitutionary Spiritual Death on CROSS, and take part in the Crown which in the Plan of God is the objective of the 2<sup>nd</sup> advent. She failed to see the cross must come before the crown and her pride and approbation lust caused her to only listen when Jesus

spoke about the future kingdom and she wanted her 2 boys to be in the top tier of the new kingdom. Salome's Blind Arrogance totally ignored what Jesus had just said to them and she interrupted Him with a stupid request for the kingdom of the 2<sup>nd</sup> advent. This was Arrogance, legalism and idiocy in view of what Jesus had just taught all of them. If man can do ANYTHING to provide salvation then there is and can be no salvation. Man APPROPRIATES salvation by faith alone in the Substitutionary Spiritual Death of The Lord Jesus, The Christ alone but man cannot provide anything toward salvation. Blind Arrogance is a combination of the Mental Attitude Arrogance of [Pride](#) and the influence on the thinking of Evil and is totally minus any Bible Doctrine. In this particular case the doctrine had just been taught but had not been accepted by these people because of their Blind Arrogance.

The woman in her dialogue with Satan who was indwelling her favorite pet, the serpent in the garden, was socially unfaithful to her authority, Adam, and also spiritually unfaithful to her divine authority The Lord Jesus, The Christ. She suffered from Blind Arrogance and was the first case of Arrogance in Human history. She rejected Adam, her right Pastor Teacher, The Lord Jesus, The Christ, and Bible Doctrine as her authority. Her stupidity, Arrogance and rejection of authority caused her to assume she was smarter than anyone and that she could be as smart as GOD. A person under Blind Arrogance is always easy to deceive and they represent the quintessence of stupidity. Like Satan the woman was filled with Blind Arrogance and she threw over her temporal and spiritual authority and Arrogance blinded her into total [Self Deception](#), moving her directly into the function under the [Arrogance Skills](#). ([Gen 3:1-6](#)) This is the occupational hazard of the woman even today.

### **Blind Arrogance & Reversionism**

If the believer is not influenced by Bible Doctrine but retrogresses in the Spiritual Life and becomes [Reversionistic](#) he is constantly influenced by Evil and God must administer [Divine Discipline](#) while Satan tries to offset the Divine Discipline with pseudo prosperity. God will take this useless believer down and take his pseudo prosperity from him and make him miserable to the point of taking him out this life under the abject dying misery of the [Sin Unto Death](#) where he will be transferred to heaven and be face to face with the Lord but will have an unimaginably miserable time getting there. Believers must, as Royal Family of God, understand why they are here and what life is all about and their purpose in the Angelic Conflict and if they fail in this understanding they will find themselves in Blind Arrogance.

[Reverse Process Reversionism](#), the final stage of Reversionism, is where all norms and standards and values are completely destroyed and erased from the soul and one then becomes occupied with everything which is antithetical to spiritual values. Any Category I Love of Basic or Advanced [Personal Love for God](#) is replaced by Blind Arrogance. Instead of having Category I Love, but still having the vocabulary regarding loving Christ, these believers are in fact involved in [Egotistical Arrogance](#). In Category II Love or Romance, there are a myriad of false lovers and in Category III Love there are many false friends. However, there is no Blind Arrogance with the advancing or mature believer. The Reversion Recovery outlined in [Heb 6:1](#) is impossible without the consistent daily function under the [Grace Apparatus for Perception](#). It is also impossible when religious Reversionism is perpetuated and Blind Arrogance takes over.

([Heb 6:4-6](#)) Reversionism often leads to Perversion ([Rom 1:26-27](#)) and when collective in a people produces national disintegration. ([Rom 1:29-32](#), [Hos 4:1-6](#)) In addition Reversionism also intensifies suffering ([Ps 77:1-10](#)) and all the “good” things in life are remembered but are now out of reach. God’s standards for [Spiritual Maturity](#) and His required qualifications for blessing are the same for every believer and only depend on one’s advance in the Spiritual Life through accumulating maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine into the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul. There are MANY signs of Blind Arrogance and it is a subtle amalgamation of [Mental Attitude Arrogance](#), especially Pride plus the strong influence of Evil. ([Matt 19:27-30](#))

There is an occupational hazard for all members of the Royal Family of God in Blind Arrogance. Categorical Arrogance may involve sin but in combining it with [Reversionism](#) it forms a concentrated system from Evil. The strong influence of Evil and the [Mental Attitude Arrogance](#) of Pride meet to form this occupational hazard for believers called Blind Arrogance. For the believer Blind Arrogance is a hindrance to and frustration of his spiritual advance to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God. The believer under Blind Arrogance, when given a little [Authority](#), very often somehow concludes and emphasizes how important he thinks he is, and this is Arrogance, [LEGALISM](#), and Reversionism all tied together under the strong influence of Evil. This is what caused the fall of Satan and also Ishah (the Woman), the first member of the Human Race to have Blind Arrogance. This is the believer who understands Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God but is concerned mostly with his own personal reward in eternity and has assumed that his importance in the Plan of God is so great that God cannot get along without him and as a result he will be given a very special place in heaven. This believer has lost the perspective of Grace in emphasizing what he has done for the Lord rather than what The Lord Jesus, The Christ has done for him. Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul often displaces certain failings in the life of the believer but the believer who has made no Positive Volition doctrinal decisions has nothing on which to base having the potential for receiving any rewards in time or eternity. This type of believer is saved, since Blind Arrogance does not take away salvation, but his Blind Arrogance does neutralize salvation so that all he has is Eternal Security and nothing else.

The concept of ‘Godliness’ is also distorted by reversionists under the influence of Evil, ([1Tim 6:3-4](#)) and they have a form of pseudo godliness from Blind Arrogance which is another distortion of Grace. Pseudo godliness is a form of Blind Arrogance where Mental Attitude Arrogance and Reversionism meet under the influence of Evil. ([2Tim 3:2-5](#)) This involves a denial or rejection of Bible Doctrine and is a distortion of doctrine as a result of the believer being under the influence of Evil and involved in Reversionism in what basically amounts to a phony life. When involved in the Interlocking System of Arrogance most often a person is aware of his Arrogance but when one is under Blind Arrogance he is not even aware of his overriding self centered pride. This is something many believers may have and not even know they have it and it is the mechanic of the sin and ultimate fall of Satan. This person falls into Blind Arrogance because of his rejection of Bible Doctrine placing him in Reversionism under the influence of Evil at some point in his past, which then continues on through his entire life. One does not have to have or be anything special to be involved in Blind Arrogance and having great wealth, success, beauty, etc., are NOT necessary to have this fault in the Spiritual

Life. Blind Arrogance can be an automatic involvement because ALL PEOPLE IN Reversionism ARE Arrogant starting with [Negative Volition Arrogance](#) and because of not knowing they are Arrogant they are in Blind Arrogance. If a believer assumes HIS priorities are greater than GOD'S then HE IS Arrogant. The focus in the Spiritual Life must be on the fact that God's priority for one's life is Bible Doctrine and when anything is allowed to come BEFORE Bible Doctrine then a system has been set up with false priorities and false involvements in Blind Arrogance.

All Arrogant people are stupid, and Arrogance, itself, is a state of stupidity because it is inflating self beyond one's ability or capacity. It is a truth that [Reversionistic](#) believers ARE Arrogant and some will have Blind Arrogance and morbid [Obsessions](#) with regard to controversies. Beyond Blind Arrogance there hides in the reversionist the most heinous Mental Attitude Sins from [Mental Attitude Arrogance](#). Reversionism thrives on pseudo controversies and the reversionist likes to be involved in controversies and stir up controversy because of [Jealousy](#), by instigating slander or implacability. Being under the influence of Evil, Reversionism is fanned into a great flame with controversy. The reversionistic believer under the influence of Evil always is a trouble maker, using his mouth to start trouble between people and always has his nose in the business of others being always upset, disturbed, Jealous or in some other way reacting to someone. When as a result of these controversies instigated among other believers Jealousy results, it inevitably produces all sorts of Mental Attitude Sins, verbal sins and even overt sins.

### **[Human Good & Blind Arrogance & Pride](#)**

[Human Good](#) is not, will not and cannot ever be acceptable to God, and to assume that it is, is Blind Arrogance and ignorance of Bible Doctrine. ([Is 64:6](#)) Human Good is the production under the plan and policy of Satan, we were first made aware of this as the Tree of the Knowledge of *Good and Evil*, a prohibition for man in the Garden. Human Good is always linked with Arrogance resulting in boasting and [Guilt Complex](#) reactions. Arrogance is the underlying basis for the Plan of Satan known as Evil with its GOOD production. Human Good is the PRODUCTION of the Plan of Satan, Evil, and therefore cannot be part of or in any way involved with the Plan of God which is GRACE which has Divine Good as its production. Therefore, Human Good does not, will not, and in fact CANNOT, save mankind. ([Eph 2:8-9](#), [Titus 3:5](#), [2Tim 1:9](#)) Therefore, anything any person can do by his own efforts or from his own talent or ability, cannot ever bring him Eternal Life and Eternal Salvation. [Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God](#) is only according to the predetermined plan of Grace prepared for man long before Human History began. Spirituality is also not a matter of how GOOD a believer can be or how extensive his GOOD DEEDS can be, but is given to each Church Age believer at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God as the [Filling of God the Holy Spirit](#), and only maintained by the Grace process of [Rebound](#). Human Good was not judged at the cross and is not to be judged until the resurrection of believers in each dispensation and at the end of Human History and the Angelic Conflict Appeal for unbelievers, because it is the base production in the Plan of Satan, Evil, which must continue, being the foundation of the Angelic Conflict Appeal Trial. The area of weakness of every Old Sin Nature produces the temptations to sin, all which were judged in The Lord Jesus, The Christ on the cross. The area of strength

of every Old Sin Nature produces Human Good all which was rejected at the cross and reserved for these areas of future judgment. What we call “Human Good” is an integral part of the plan and policy of Satan for ruling this world and therefore cannot be judged in order to allow the Angelic Conflict Appeal to be completely resolved by demonstrating its futility. The Human Good of all Believers in the Family of God will be judged as by fire, at the Judgment Seat of The Lord Jesus, The Christ for the Royal Family of God of the Church Age, and for the other members of the Family of God when they are resurrected, so that it will be separated from the believer prior to his admission to Eternal Life with God. ([1Cor 3:11-16](#), [Rom 5:10](#), [2Cor 5:10](#)). The Human Good of unbelievers will be the basis for their judgment at the Great White Throne Judgment or Last Judgment and this is where the final instances of Human Good are removed and then with the unbeliever will be relegated to the Lake of Fire. There will be no Human Good in eternity BECAUSE IT IS PART OF THE PLAN OF SATAN, and one very often wonders why people cannot just check their desires for Human Good production at the door and allow others to just be relaxed in life.

Blind Arrogance is something which attacks people and throws them into Reversionism while they contend that they are NOT Arrogant and not in Reversionism. [Rom 4:2](#) tells the believer that there are never any reasons for him to brag to God about what he can do or has done. [Eph 2:9](#) explains salvation cannot be by works of any kind by anyone at any time. Generally people lead in life with their [Pride](#) and there inevitably is some area where one is totally blind to their own pride, this is Blind Arrogance. This is easily exposed in anyone by finding that which puts pressure on the pride of that individual and stimulating it. This pressure causes pride to be pushed down or compressed in the soul and as it goes down this pressure pushes up whatever will relieve, for that individual, the pressure on his pride. This can include judging, maligning, gossip, jealousy, vengeance, vindictiveness, cowardice, implacability, I am right everyone is wrong, etc. It is extremely important to keep this principle in focus as this is only one of the things which can cause a person to move away from Grace. Pride expresses itself in the believer in such a way that when someone else is supposedly doing great things for God and this is recognized by others, then the prideful have to exceed what that one has done. These attacks on pride set up false scales of values and lead to multiple levels of Human Good production. All Human Good produced by the believer in time drives him into the Interlocking System of Arrogance via Blind Arrogance.

Even the believer thinking he has any grounds for boasting is the great enemy of Grace and must be eliminated from the life. Since this kind of Arrogance is, in this case, blind, it does not see itself as Arrogant but calls itself, “sensitive” or some other false name but whatever it calls itself it IS Blind Arrogance. The only way to uncover and remove it is through maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine accumulated into the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul so that by the time the believer reaches [Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God](#) it should be pretty well cleared out of the soul. When the believer finally gets to [Intermediate Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God](#) and has received Super – Grace B or Bravo Grace support in the no man’s land between the status of Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and [Advanced Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God](#), this is where the real pressure is in the Spiritual Life. Then this believer having real pressure and difficulties in life from every aspect of the Cosmic



Dynaspheres directed against him, with Blind Arrogance removed, will clearly realize that he is totally dependent on God. This is when being a recipient of Bravo Grace is more than just a title or principle of Bible Doctrine but becomes a reality of life. This results because this believer will carry, with his bravo grace blessings, total concentrated [Occupation with the Person of The Lord Jesus, The Christ](#) as maximum Category I, Personal Love for God. Therefore he will know the source of everything in life and will relax and stop competing and being Hypersensitive and hating people and getting upset about people. The believer must, however, remain extremely alert so that when someone comes along with their brand of Human Good Production, he avoids being carried away in Arrogance along with them. Believers must remain very careful about following friends instead of Bible Doctrine and must make sure they continue to maintain the right Bible Doctrine established priorities in life.

### **Grace & Blind Arrogance**

That the Plan of God only depends on God is a fundamental concept of GRACE. It is the Arrogance of a believer who sets up false standards and then complies with these standards and by his compliance with these false standards concludes that he is a great believer which places him securely into Blind Arrogance. The GRACE principle points out to the discerning believer that, in reality, IN THE PLAN OF GOD THE HUMAN BEING IS ZERO / (0). The believer must be able to get to where he can listen to the nice things people say about him and not take himself seriously. If he begins to take self too seriously he then becomes an intense personality and this is Arrogance. Once a person takes self too seriously the next step is Arrogance, either overt or blind.

The believer involved in Blind Arrogance is the one who rejects the Grace means of salvation and the progress, maturity and blessing in the Spiritual Life, which is the result of maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul. Greatness and Service in the Spiritual Life are both based on [Grace Orientation](#) and that is based on Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul and the use of the inner resources provided by the [Assets](#) from God and maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine. In effect, for the Royal Family of God in the Church Age, greatness is being under the authority of Bible Doctrine. This results in avoidance of both Blind Arrogance and the Influence of Evil and this greatness has nothing to do with having a high ranking position or exercising authority over others. Therefore, divine standards demand that all believers be under and orient to the [Authority](#) of Bible Doctrine for their greatness. Thus is clear the reality of the principle of the function of the [Grace Apparatus for Perception](#) to establish the inner dictator of the soul to control the believer with maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine which insulates him from the influence of Evil and protects him from Blind Arrogance. No matter what one's station in life is, whether having maximum authority or no authority, every believer must come under the authority of Bible Doctrine. It is an absolute dogmatic truth that a single thought can make or break any believer and greatness lies in the soul not in service or any other function in life. Many Christian organizations are guilty of collectively functioning under Blind Arrogance because they infer that a believer can be or is great ONLY based on his EFFORTS or WORKS, his production as a Christian. Bible Doctrine indicates that these types are not in any way spiritual but suffer from Blind Arrogance. The true dynamics of life are not ever based on overt activity but

always found in the activity in the soul of the believer. Since it is THOUGHT which can make or break one, therefore, it is the value and importance of what one thinks which is all that matters. Today, in the United States of America, Bible Doctrine oriented thinking is GONE from American society. The vast majority of believers know little if any biblical doctrine after [Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God](#) and both they and the unbelievers are oblivious to the importance of the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions as doctrinal principles for the protection and preservation of mankind. This is what has given the United States a national Blind Arrogance with so little common sense and so many ridiculous things occurring in the nation today. This nation, as a [Client Nation to God](#), has failed in every possible way and many of these failures are the direct result of this Blind Arrogance. Believers under the influence of Evil, having rejected Bible Doctrine, like Peter and Salome, have ignored the doctrine of resurrection and are spiritually blind. They all, the 12 disciples and Salome, ignored the allegations of the resurrection and everything Jesus had taught and were anxious to do something to turn things upside down. They all wanted to do something to change the situation of their times and none understood the true issue of the importance of ONLY consistent Perception, Cognition, Incultation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine. This is what is occurring in the United States of America TODAY!

### **Blind Arrogance, Volition & the Sovereignty of God**

Free will in man never detracts from the Sovereignty of God under the Grace Plan and Policy of God. If the believer has made a Grace appeal from Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul then under that same Grace policy the Sovereignty of God says to him “What do you wish”? Under Grace, Free will complements and glorifies the Sovereignty of God and it is Blind Arrogance which is in opposition to the Sovereignty of God. Considering the 2 blind men, The Lord Jesus, The Christ as God made an issue of their free will by asking them what they desired *because* their volition was oriented to the Will of God and Plan of God and was focused in being nonmeritorious and therefore totally compatible with Grace. These 2 blind men were [Grace Orientated](#) and were the antithesis of being under Blind Arrogance. These men asked for something which neither they nor anyone else could do for them, to be healed of blindness. There is only one way to follow Christ after Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God and that is to be consistent in the Perception, Cognition, Incultation & Metabolization of Bible Doctrine resulting in maximum Grace Orientation and therefore, advance to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God. Once the believer has a command post of maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul he is then free from the influence of Evil and thus from Blind Arrogance. He sees with the perceptive Grace eyes of the soul and fulfills the phrase that the last shall be first in reward and blessing. Peter was influenced by Evil and would be rebuked while the 2 blind men from Jericho were influenced by Bible Doctrine and were given perfect sight and many other [Super – Grace](#) blessings. Peter followed Christ in Blind Arrogance and the 2 blind men followed Christ in Grace Oriented [Humility](#) and this difference is the result of being influenced by Bible Doctrine vs being influenced by Evil. Peter had physical sight but was blind in the soul paying no attention to the doctrine that Jesus had taught. Therefore a believer involved in Blind Arrogance goes from misery to more misery while Grace oriented humility goes on to great blessing, promotion and success in the Spiritual Life.

### **Blind Arrogance & the Rebound Procedure**

Since volition is involved in both known and unknown sins the believer, therefore, always makes free will decisions to get out of the Divine Dynasphere and therefore he MUST also make free will decisions to get back into the Divine Dynasphere, God's Power System for the Church Age. The Decision to reenter the Divine Dynasphere is based on the GRACE function of the **Rebound Procedure**. There is NO Arrogance involved nor legalism, no feeling sorry for sins, no penance, and the only requirement is the simple naming, citing or acknowledging the sin to God, which is in effect agreeing that God's Judgment of those sins in Christ was efficacious. (**1John 1:9**) This is all that is necessary for the believer to avail himself of forgiveness from God. NO EMOTION, no concern, just follow the procedure. God's provision of a means for the believer to avoid becoming involved in Arrogance, Cosmic Dynasphere I, resulted in all personal sins never being imputed to any human being for condemnation but were all collected with all the sins of ALL others and imputed to The Lord Jesus, The Christ on the cross. This is the basis for the Rebound Procedure, and Sin being once judged is always judged and never to be judged again. Believers who function without rebound suffer from Divine Discipline which is an issue ONLY because of Sin taking the believer out of the Plan of God. This is unbearable suffering and is the Status Quo of the believer in Arrogance. The Solution to all failure in the Plan of God is the use of the Rebound procedure however there is a universal opposition to Rebound among believers and this results from Blind Arrogance.

### **The First vs The Last & Blind Arrogance**

The believers who are guilty of and persist in Blind Arrogance are last with regard to blessing in time and have no rewards in eternity. In Blind Arrogance they will be minus their Escrow Super – Grace blessing including Dying Grace and minus their Escrow Surpassing – Grace blessings for eternity. The only thing these believers have is what they have from Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God, namely Eternal Security and the inheritance of Eternal Life and their ultimate distribution of a Resurrection Body, because they are functioning under Blind Arrogance and influenced by Evil. Those who through maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul have Grace based **Humility** and **Grace Orientation** are moving toward Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and will if persistent in these functions be PLUS their Escrow Super – Grace blessings and receive fantastic Surpassing – Grace rewards for eternity. They will enjoy true inner happiness, contentment and stability from **Sharing the Happiness of God**, Advanced Personal Love for God as **Occupation with the Person of The Lord Jesus, The Christ**, as a result of possessing Maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine for application to any and every situation in life. This also brings with it maximum capacity for life, love and happiness, and all the great temporal blessings, blessing by association, historical impact and results in this believer leaving this life by way of **Dying Grace** blessing. These are the FIRST and the LAST. The LAST Apostle was Paul and he will be FIRST with greater blessings than anyone else in history except possibly David who will have one of, if not the, highest award in heaven. Paul, however, will be the greatest decorated believer of the Church Age. These “Last” have been and will be influenced primarily by maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.

In illustration, it will be “[UNION](#)” labor who are the first in industry today becoming the last. They are in fact the best illustration of Blind Arrogance. This is what has been permitted in the United States of America and what was also in ancient Rome. Free, non-union or Scab Labor illustrates [Grace Orientated](#) humility and they will be first. In this way parallelism is established between labor unions and [Legalism](#) on the one hand and [Grace Orientation](#) and non-union labor on the other hand. The labor unions are saturated with Blind Arrogance and [Institutional Arrogance](#). In the illustration which Jesus gave concerning the capitalist, the management freely CHOSE to treat the part time workers in GRACE by paying all the workers the same wage. This is advocating both Free Enterprise in business function as well as [Surpassing – Grace](#) Blessing where God determines eternal rewards only on the basis of his policy. Labor unions are saturating American businesses today more than ever before and are always anti-establishment and anti-free enterprise, just as the American government is in its domestic and foreign policies anti-freedom. The labor unions always judge the capitalist by their union standards which are false, based on Evil and totally [Legalistic](#) rather than GRACIOUS. NO ONE receives rewards for eternity on the basis of his own legalistic standards but only on the basis of the GRACE standards of God. Believers in [Reversionism](#) and under the influence of Evil are like the labor union men in Blind Arrogance and have erroneous standards for the Christian Way of Life. Consider the [Grace Orientation](#) of the Capitalist and recognize that if the Union Labor had not bargained for their salary in the first place, maybe they would have come away with double pay. GRACE is related to Bible Doctrine and never to human effort works so that the believer focused on Grace Orientation rather than Blind Arrogance will receive blessing and reward BEYOND any possible imagination.

Therefore, rewards for believers in eternity depend on the policy of God and not the Arrogant, Legalistic, anthropocentric standards of Evil and blind fundamentalism. Arrogance is always critical of Grace; Salvation Grace, Rebound Grace, Logistical Grace, Super – Grace, Ultra Super – Grace, Dying Grace and Surpassing – Grace and when this occurs Arrogance reflects Evil. The “FIRST”, those under the influence of Evil, have Blind Arrogance, Arrogant thinking as a result of [Locked In Negative Volition](#) resulting in [Black Out of the Soul](#), and function under their own false Norms and Standards, rather than by Divine Standards, derived from Grace and Metabolized Bible Doctrine. The “LAST” are those who through Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul have true Grace Orientation therefore true Grace Humility. These last are the Mature believers who avoid the influence of Evil in time and will be the First who are rewarded under [Surpassing – Grace](#) blessings.

### **[Blind Arrogance & Mobs](#)**

Mobs cannot think, reason nor accomplish anything worthwhile in life. Mob activity and mob rule is totally antithetical to the Laws of Divine Establishment by which one gains and keeps freedom. Mobs are the historical illustration of mass Blind Arrogance. Mobs destroy freedom, privacy, property, especially authority and hinder spiritual growth. Mobs are anti-authority, anti-discipline, anti-establishment, anti-revival so that one cannot have a mob and have a Spiritual Life revival. Typical of a mob is non authorized persons sticking their noses into some other’s business, violating privacy and freedom as in the case of the disciples regarding the 2 blind men who approached Jesus for healing. This is typical of MOB Blind Arrogance.

Blind Arrogance is always guilty of judging, gossiping, maligning and sticking its nose into the business of others. Nosy people who invade one's privacy ARE [Reversionistic](#) and influenced by Evil and guilty of Blind Arrogance. No one has any right to stick their nose into another persons business except parents with regard to children and any other areas of society where Legitimate Authority is in place and legitimately placed over another. If the judgment of the mob had prevailed the 2 blind men would have been ignored because Blind Arrogance always censors, criticizes and reprimands others. However, Jesus recognized these 2 men as [Grace Orientated](#) persons, in contrast to the disciples who are rebuking them as persons in Blind Arrogance and gave them consideration.

### **Blind Arrogance & The Immature Believer**

The greatest occupational hazard of the NEW or immature believer is Blind Arrogance. The fact is that all immature believers have some level of Blind Arrogance and if enough time elapses without spiritual growth then Blind Arrogance saturation is inevitable. The only means of offsetting Blind Arrogance is the daily function under the [Grace Apparatus for Perception](#) to move up in the Spiritual Life. The Blind Arrogance trap for the immature believer is quite easy to succumb to without the consistent function of Perception, Cognition, Incultation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine under the [Filling of God the Holy Spirit](#). As a result of entry into Blind Arrogance any believer, including the Pastor Teacher, is subject to judgment, condemnation and the resultant Divine Discipline from God. Blind Arrogance hinders and frustrates spiritual growth through involvement in systems of [Legalism](#) and pseudo spirituality but it also takes a negative or limited view of Bible Doctrine communicated in the local church. This person always has some kind of limitation in his soul as to how much or what category of Bible Doctrine he will take in from his Pastor Teacher. He takes a limited view and qualifies what the Pastor Teacher communicates either agreeing or disagreeing with it. However, most disagreement with doctrine is based on preconceived notions which inevitably are in error, out of line and apostate and Blind Arrogance always prefers a zone of preconceived notions over what the Scripture actually teaches. Therefore, Blind Arrogance guarantees that the effected individuals will be influenced by Evil rather than by Bible Doctrine. This may come in the form of Ascetic Reversionism where if salvation is desired along with spirituality one must never engage in SEX and must live in celibacy and squalor. Blind Arrogance follows the pattern of the fall of Lucifer resulting in the involved believer being locked into Reversionism and the accompanying 3 stages of [Divine Discipline](#). The best summary of Blind Arrogance is [Matt 19:27-30](#), [Matt 20:1-15](#), [Matt 20:16-29](#), [Matt 20:30-34](#). Therefore, Blind Arrogance neutralizes the purest and highest authority given by God in Human History, Bible Doctrine. People involved in either superiority or inferiority complexes are always involved in Blind Arrogance. There is no such thing in the believer who has reached Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God but he lives between these with absolute CONFIDENCE in Bible Doctrine.

Return to the [Table of Contents](#)



## Gate #51 – The Arrogance Regarding Impulsive Power Abuse

This is the ABUSE of Divinely Delegated Legitimate Power or Authority in life. This is the case for most people in life, including believers, who are given authority and power but cannot handle either. Once one has authority with power he cannot be personal and subjective but must switch to being totally impersonal and objective with those under his Authority. Many people cannot handle authority because they simply become Arrogant which leads them to self-centeredness. People all have the power in their own volition to say YES or NO to anything in life but this power is corrupted by the influence of Evil and temptation from the Old Sin Nature. Many individuals cannot ever be great leaders nor successful in life because their volition is corruptible by every category of Arrogance, Sin and all aspects of Human Good Production under the influence of Evil. (1Kings 13:4, 1Kings 18:40, Matt 18:23-35) One cannot ever handle power correctly if he is petty when in any position of authority. The secret to leadership or being a great lover or having prolonged happiness and blessing is to straighten out the priorities of the soul and the ONLY way to straighten out the soul is through consistent Perception, Cognition, Incultation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine.

### In Illustration:

Elijah prosecuted against Israel to God and wanted to go right on with the authority he used to kill the prophets of Baal and use this authority and judge Israel. Since he could not find anyone who would listen to him when God came to him he went over all the human courts directly to God and in his judgment he stated accurate truth and then distorted it into falsehood. Arrogance always takes truth and distorts it to align with one's own purpose and advantage. **1Kings 19** was an accurate statement of facts but it must be remembered that Arrogance distorted these facts into something false. Elijah was so Arrogant that he not only wanted to kill the 450 prophets of Baal, which he DID, but also to kill all the Jews involved in the cult of Baal. He went to God and as a prophet said KILL THE WHOLE BUNCH OF JEWS involved in this Evil cult. At this point he was a mad dog and this is what Arrogance does even to a believer who has reached Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God who is caught in the Interlocking System of Arrogance.

David used his power and authority to place Uriah the Hittite into a position during battle where he would certainly be killed so David could have his wife and so no one would know he had been raping her and she was pregnant with his child.

Peter used his power and authority to encourage LEGALISM in Antioch as the hypocrisy of Racial Discrimination against Gentiles. (Gal 2:11-13)

Power, unfortunately, can corrupt anyone within the realm of function of his volition. The abuse of power destroys leadership and management in any organization and the people who have leadership or management ability, IF they are Arrogant, destroy their own abilities. Power CAN corrupt in marriage, the family, parents, husbands, all individuals and most certainly in government. Whether or not one has any social authority in life he still has the potential for power and in fact all do have limited power and some degree of free will. In

marriages there can and will be no major problems in this area of power, position and authority when the husbands make all the decisions in the married life.

At times establishment authority is often ghastly and it is very easy to react to this but if one reacts with Arrogance he is totally out of line. While one may not have the criminal mentality in these situations it is difficult to distinguish him from the criminal. This Arrogance bypasses the Laws of Divine Establishment authority in favor of personal retaliation, vengeance or breaking the law and believers are commanded to uphold the law. Being a mature believer does not insulate one from the Interlocking System of Arrogance especially Impulsive Arrogance. Being a mature believer does not mean one can handle authority outside of his spiritual gift and gaining any extraneous authority and power can often result in total entanglement in Arrogance.

Power and authority linked with Arrogance is destructive to both the individual and the nation. Linking power and authority to genius can result in the use of the power for the benefit of others but also can result in incredible tyranny. Extreme power and authority converted into Grace only occurred through one person in this dispensation and that was Saul of Tarsus, the Apostle Paul. However, at one point for a short time he also abused his power by falling into religious reversionism and abusing what he was given by God. Having maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul and using it properly will result in blessing for a lifetime and also for eternity. Doctrine linked with and distorted as a result of entanglement with any aspect of Arrogance will drive the believer into the apostasy of [Reversionism](#) or the total degeneracy of Interlocking [Motivational Arrogance](#) with [Functional Arrogance](#) which will, inevitably, destroy him. Therefore when the believer allows his thinking to imagine that he did something to earn or deserve the blessings he has from God, this is his ultimate downfall.

Impulsive Arrogance results from interlocking with aberrant functions within [Authority Arrogance](#). When one constantly functions under the principles of the Cosmic Dynaspheres and then gains authority or power, his inevitable abuse of it is the entrance into Impulsive Arrogance. This is one who has always rejected and resented authority over him and when he gets some authority he invariably abuses it. This person has no capacity to properly use authority and always makes a poor parent, manager, boss, officer, etc. Impulsive Arrogance as direct abuse of any authority one possesses occurs because without integrity developed from consistent Perception, Cognition, Incultation, Metabolization and Application of Bible Doctrine he cannot switch from Personal – Conditional Love to [Impersonal – Unconditional Love](#) for Mankind. This makes it impossible to sustain any personal relationships in life because the switching to Impersonal – Unconditional Love for Mankind is the means of sustaining all Personal – Conditional Love relationships in life. This also makes it impossible to properly exercise authority since objectivity and Impersonal – Unconditional Love for Mankind are essential in order to enable one to deal with those under his authority. Those under authority must always be given the freedom to respond to the authority and not coerced into doing so. This freedom also comes from their switching to Impersonal – Unconditional Love. The function of wielding Authority in life requires a very delicate balance demanding Objectivity,

Integrity and Impersonal – Unconditional Love. No one can ever exercise authority without total objectivity toward those under his command and this objectivity toward others requires switching to Impersonal – Unconditional Love. When in authority one may often need to retain people under him who are very effective in their positions, but otherwise totally useless or obnoxious, for the good of the organization. This requires a focus toward them of Impersonal – Unconditional Love and Objectivity. Impulsive Arrogance, on the other hand, avoids Impersonal – Unconditional Love and INTEGRITY but moves into [Mental Attitude Arrogance](#) especially [Pettiness](#). This is where authority is being used simply to gain power, position or acquire personal wealth. Under Impulsive Arrogance, the one in authority does not use his position in leadership to advance the policy or purpose of the organization and this always results in a disaster. This has been the United States government since the “election” of Obama, and clearly demonstrated by the underhanded tactics of the democratic party toward Donald Trump and is vastly worse today during the Biden “administration”. Failure under Impulsive Arrogance results in interlocking with [Institutional Arrogance](#) and is the disorientation to life of thinking the organization cannot get along without one or is discriminating against him. This is the person who succeeds in an organization and distorts this into a system of [Pride](#). On the other hand, it can be a person who fails in an organization but assumes that he did not get enough breaks to succeed there as others had. Authority in any institution is designed to organize and maintain focus of those in the organization on fulfilling a policy and purpose for that organization, therefore, when one has authority in an organization he must recognize that he is responsible for the decisions he makes and his decisions MUST line up with the policy and purpose of the organization. When one has authority, the proper use of that authority is for the benefit of the organization in general and those under him specifically. Having authority does NOT mean one has the power of ability to destroy those under him, nor is he to make them fear him, nor is it a popularity contest, but he is to keep their welfare in mind at all times and focus their functions on fulfilling the policies of the Organization. Therefore, for the one in authority, being disciplined by God helps in the process of LEARNING to take responsibility for personal decisions and actions.

People constantly try to attain or grab power as their basic function in life because they want influence over others. People want influence and impact in life and to be recognized for their influence and this is a function of Arrogance. Arrogance stimulates the Grab for POWER in all situations. These are often the Believers who in giving their “bragamonies” are testifying for Satan in this the most critical stage of the historic phase of the Angelic Conflict Appeal Trial. The power, derived from the Functions of Arrogance, puts these believers directly in line with Satan and his fall as a result of HIS Arrogance. The function of the Church Age Believer is to become an INVISIBLE Hero at [Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God](#) and reach the point of Maximum Glorification of God. This is where believers as Invisible Heroes have Maximum influence in history without interference from Arrogance. The more people are divorced from reality, the more they dream, the more they are involved in the Interlocking System of Arrogance, the more they have an image of self importance and therefore the greater is their megalomania and the less their ability to assume and handle authority. Impulsive Arrogance as abuse of authority is rejection of the proper function of authority and overlaps into everything in life. Being involved in Cosmic Dynasphere I, the Interlocking System of Arrogance one is

already preoccupied with self therefore in his thinking he places himself above any system of authority. This is intensified by the thinking that those in authority over him are inferior to him and, in his rationalization, he thinks they are not as good as he is, thus he is interlocked with [Egotistical Arrogance](#). This intensifies to the point of becoming both Authority and Impulsive Arrogance where he rejects all authority over him and abuses the authority he has. The abuse of legitimate, authorized, delegated power or authority, such as the husband abusing authority over the wife, is using authority to become tyrannical. This is the believer going from [Humility](#) to Arrogance by not being able to handle the authority which he has been given. This is what occurs when using any delegated power for personal advancement or approbation rather than for fulfilling the purpose or policy of the organization which has given it to him. People prone to [Pride](#) and [Self Righteousness](#) always abuse the authority they possess and also abuse those under that authority. Those who reject authority above them cannot ever use authority over others. Strict discipline in childhood is what builds respect for authority and lack of discipline results in lack of this essential respect.

With high levels of authority there must be great [Flexibility](#) and discernment in all situations. Misuse or abuse of authority means one is entangled in Impulsive Arrogance where decisions he makes are inevitably wrong and violate the principles or purpose he is supposed to be standing for. The believer should be cautious of accepting great temporal authority because it can result in his becoming susceptible to [Inordinate Ambition](#), having grandiose ideas regarding how to save the organization or even the nation or the entire world. The combination of Impulsive Arrogance and Self Righteousness inevitably results in fear and failure. Any involvement in Arrogance always interlocks with Self Righteousness and this is especially true of Impulsive Arrogance. Every believer is vulnerable in any area when he stops using the [Faith Rest Drill \(5 stages\)](#) and goes out on his own to solve his own problems. If one has any authority in any organization this becomes very easy to do and thereby becomes [Self Righteousness](#). Recovery from Impulsive Arrogance and any resulting [Criminality](#) is extremely difficult and often a very prolonged process.

When one votes in an election for a person to fill a high government or organizational office he must look at what the track record of the individual is when they had authority in a lower office or position. Rapidly acquired Impulsive Arrogance always acts on emotional *impulse* rather than rational policy and this is what results in the abuses of authority in lower positions being apparent. The only thing to save a believer like this is to use the Essence of God, Plan of God or Logistical Grace [Rationale](#) through the [Faith Rest Drill \(5 stages\)](#) and to back off and resist doing anything about those who have already been discredited. Many people cannot handle temporal authority and if they adopt the view that violence means power these people are then vulnerable to the intimidation of a greater power. When the believer resorts to violence after a victory from The Lord Jesus, The Christ he is deeply involved in Arrogance.

Some believers have responded magnificently to the word of God up to a point after which they become haters, maligners, liars, etc., because they were given more authority than they were capable of handling. One of the greatest distractions in the Christian Way of Life and greatest deterrent to advancing to Spiritual Maturity or maintaining Spiritual Maturity or

momentum in the Spiritual Life is to give a believer great authority because this often results in their developing this Impulsive Arrogance. Authority changes people more in life than almost anything including even great disasters. The amount of authority any individual can take varies considerably and some can take on none and some can take on a great deal, but to be given more than one has capacity for will always result in his personal destruction. When one has excessive authority above his capacity he is blinded, most often, by Impulsive Arrogance. Impulsive Arrogance blinds him to the doctrinal conclusions he should make in pressure situations whether these situations are from prosperity or adversity. When one is given authority, either Impulsive Arrogance makes him weak or he develops a sense of responsibility commensurate with the authority he has and therefore, functions effectively and properly.

The bureaucrat in [Matt 18:23-35](#) deserved nothing and was a rat and embezzled from the king's treasury and he would have found a bureaucratic way to find and steal money from others to repay the king. (Sounds like the government of the United States of America Today!) Under free enterprise capital is to be used to invest not to PAY TAXES ON or WITH. Bureaucracy is impossible and irrational since it cannot recognize that a person or company cannot pay a tax when they are being strangled by the regulations of the bureaucracy. This bureaucrat was in Cosmic Dynasphere I and abused his authority and was a [PETTY](#) tyrant. The King was a gracious man and canceled a \$10,000,000 debt but the petty man could not appreciate that graciousness. Believers in Cosmic Dynasphere I or II have no capacity for appreciation and no genuine thanksgiving and cannot see the integrity or honor of the one who functions toward them under Grace. This is an interlocking with [Mental Attitude Arrogance](#), [Negative Volition Arrogance](#), [Institutional Arrogance](#), [Self Righteous Arrogance](#), [Conspiracy Arrogance](#), [Psychopathic Arrogance](#), [Ignorance Arrogance](#), [Unhappiness Arrogance](#), [Iconoclastic Arrogance](#), [Emotional Arrogance](#), *ETC*.

Therefore, intensification of authority in any area of life can initiate Arrogance and misuse of this authority and the Arrogance related to it distort its function so that it is then used to produce [Pettiness](#). Impulsive Arrogance as a direct abuse of any authority one possesses occurs because the believer fails in the development of [Integrity](#) from consistent Perception, Cognition, Incultation, Metabolization and Application of Bible Doctrine and he cannot switch from Personal – Conditional Love to [Impersonal – Unconditional Love](#). Arrogance always misjudges the intentions of others assuming what is not occurring is in fact what is intended. It is possible to become so suspicious in your mind that suspicion plus Arrogance destroys any possible discernment. People involved in violence and mob action do not understand the implications of their actions. Mobs whether just or unjust in their cause lose their cause in the violence that often results. What the mob cannot understand is that it is always a well organized oligarchy which controls the mob using them and then discarding them when those in control gain the power they are seeking. Therefore it is obvious that a mob has no discernment and there is nothing good about them because they cannot think, discern nor respond to any authority.

When Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God is reached the believer must never assume that being in this advanced Status Quo gives him any right to assume authority, it does not. When



one has authority and knows it and is Arrogant he is instantly neutralized no matter how good his leadership skills may be. The neglect of Bible Doctrine and the intrusion of instant authority very often will lead to Arrogance and this will be the devastation of this believer's life. He has Bible Doctrine one moment and in the next, with the intrusion of authority, the doctrine may be instantly gone and this believer then becomes a monster. Authority is often given to fulfill some purpose but when the authority is abused or misused by bringing Arrogance into the picture, the authority linked with Arrogance destroys the purpose for the authority in the first place.

When the believer is distracted from [Bible Doctrine Orientation](#) and [Grace Orientation](#), and when he malfunctions in the 4 application stages of the [Faith Rest Drill \(5 stages\)](#) because of Impulsive Arrogance it results in an abuse of temporal power. In time of victory or prosperity it can be Impulsive Arrogance producing [Self-Righteousness](#) which motivates abuse of authority. In time of pressure and adversity this same Arrogance will motivate [Fear](#) and [Self-Pity](#). Arrogance always abandons and ultimately erases doctrine in the soul and replaces it with principles of Evil and no matter how much doctrine has been stored there, it is inevitably abandoned rather than applied in reverse concentration. Arrogance sets aside the stages of the faith-rest drill and begins to operate in the sphere Evil known as [Power Politics](#). Arrogance produces [Pettiness](#) and combines it with power lust to produce violence lust and once violence is accepted as the means of solving problems the believer has, in effect, accepted his own doom. A nice guy under the influence of the Cosmic Dynasphere I, the Interlocking System of Arrogance and power lust can become an instant monster. Violence lust means, in any situation or conflict, one is either in or out so that if he wins a fight he is IN but if he loses a fight he is OUT. Once one resorts to violence to solve problems he must remember some day someone, inevitably, will engage in greater violence and WILL beat him. Once he abuses power and authority by resorting to violence he becomes a slave to the system of power politics and therefore vulnerable to intimidation by greater power and authority.

### **Doing your Job as unto the Lord**

When no one in authority asks for one's [Personal Opinion](#) in an organization and he forces it on others he is becoming Arrogant possibly as a result of his being right. This is using one's personal authority to "buck the tiger" and criticize or overshadow those in authority above him. In any organization one's job is to carry out the purpose and policy setup by those in control and who have authority in that organization. One's job is to make the purpose and policy work in an organization in which he is involved. He is to be professional when on the inside in the organization. The principle is that when a company pays one's wages his job is to fulfill the purpose and policy of the company within his sphere of activity. He is free to leave the company but not to undermine it since this would be a distortion of authority. A husband has no right to abuse a wife EVER in any way because this is abuse of authority. In marriage the husband gets his way by gaining respect from a wife and by being firm and just. When one has authority he must look to see what the source of his authority is and all LEGITIMATE authority is established and delegated by God himself.

All capacity for life is related to authority and any rejection of duly constituted authority is

Arrogance and the most Arrogant people in the world are [Revolutionists](#). Arrogance in thinking, [Motivational Arrogance](#), results in Arrogance in action, [Functional Arrogance](#), and the Arrogant ones in a government will take over a good government and turn it into tyranny as can be readily observed in contemporary American history. Revolution is collective, mutually constructed Arrogance and it destroys capacity for life in every area and usually results in a reign of terror. Arrogance on the job or in a profession with rejection of authority will manifest itself in preventing the enjoyment of social life since Arrogance in any form always destroys capacity for life. Therefore, one cannot ever inordinately criticize duly constituted authority on the one hand and have a good life on the other.

### **Impulsive Arrogance & The Woman**

When a woman wants to put herself into some position of authority she becomes a dominate female like a homosexual dyke and rules weak little women or men. It is very difficult to give to a woman great authority and have her maintain her equilibrium. Once a woman is successful in any field, Arrogance can creep in and she can become very impressed with what she is doing, with her ability, (this also applies to men but more so to the responder, the woman) and as a result loses her ability as it is replaced with great Arrogance. Arrogance substitutes human ability for divine blessing from the Integrity of God and in the process Grace is obscured and thus the Integrity of God is blasphemously obfuscated.

Paul stated that there was an Arrogance problem in the Local Church at Corinth, especially with the women. This was the reason regulations were put into place regarding women speaking and teaching in the local church. A woman teaching in the local church to adults is abusing the teaching authority she has been delegated and this destroys her responsiveness. This is directed from the highest authority and was designed to place the women back under authority and within Authority Orientation in the [Authority Envelope](#). No one can learn Bible Doctrine, nor anything else for that matter, while talking and it is rude and a rejection of the authority of the one communicating. One cannot even talk to oneself in the soul and be able to concentrate and learn anything. When women react in life they generally talk and when they react and do not talk they have turned inward and are berating themselves and they cannot do this for very long before they start talking. Most conspiracies in a church are led by women and in the process of this revolt she must find a man to carry her will. Arrogance is a very easy thing for women to succumb to especially as they become aware of their power over men as a result of their being a responder to the man. They discover their potential for beauty which becomes obvious at an early age in life and as a result they become very susceptible to flattery. It is possible for a woman to be much smarter than some men but not her “Right Man”. Too often, and tragically, a woman has the power to destroy a man’s function in life by vicious infighting where all perspective is lost and Arrogance expresses itself by insane [Jealousy](#), [Bitterness](#) and vindictiveness. In this way the woman loses her beauty and nothing can ever cover the lines of Jealousy, Bitterness, implacability and vindictiveness. As a result these women very often die poorly being vindictive and Jealous in their [Reversionism](#).

The ambitious woman has to be subjective in life to survive under this [Ambitious Arrogance](#). In the Plan of God the woman has practically NO authority in life except over children. The

ambitious woman is the one who, from her Arrogance, wants to be well thought of in life. Unfortunately, no woman can ever have true beauty if she does not and cannot respect the authority of those over her in any area including her husband, boss, pastor, etc. When a woman is submissive she is beautiful inside and out. When a woman becomes involved with feminism she loses all her beauty. A woman cannot grow up if she rejects authority and in fact women are generally less inclined to accept authority because this is part of the curse on the woman since the fall in the Garden. In women the Old Sin Nature + Arrogance causes her to want to overthrow the authority of anyone over her. Women are designed by God as responders and the greater the potential for response the greater the potential for reaction. Women respond better to justice than to love because they respect the power and authority of justice more than love. When a woman reacts to the one she loves, she should NEVER hook up with a stranger EVER. When a woman reacts she loses all respect for all authority and accepts no authority but her own. The only thing to bring her back into line is JUSTICE never love. She will accept justice as a Frame of Reference since justice is free to both punish and bless. Discipline and authority are essential for learning and therefore, spiritual advance requires both for taking in Bible Doctrine from the one who has the authority to teach it.

The longer the woman is in a position of authority in life, gradually, over a period of time, she will bring her authority home with her and lose the ability to respond to her husband. By teaching others or being in authority over others she will lose her femininity and responsiveness. This does not apply to women teaching children in the home or in schools. When she teaches adults or is in authority over adults she uses authority in such a way that she abuses her responder functions and then cannot respond to a man physically or soulfully in any way. This is the worst thing that can happen to a woman, loss of her responsiveness. Without a responsive woman there is and can be no civilization and especially NO client nation. A woman cannot exercise authority over a man and at the same time respond to him. A woman cannot punish her children while reacting and when administering punishment she must be calm, collected, cool and totally objective.

Whenever a person is going to be deceived he will be flattered first and the woman would not be vulnerable to flattery with maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of her Soul. There are too many variables in the problems of anyone's life to solve apart from Bible Doctrine. The variables of the problems for the woman are intensified and multiplied since she is designed to and must respond all of her life. No woman can live beyond her capacity and when she tries to she rapidly enters into [Reversionism](#). Everyone in life, both men and women, have to discover their capacity and stay within it, unfortunately, very often ambition pushes one beyond his capacity and as a result destroys him. One must never be influenced by anyone else in this regard to go higher in life. Many reach a level of personal capacity in life and then, very often, try to go beyond this and as a result the accumulated and intensified variables in life destroys him. A woman living beyond her capacity loses her femininity and as she moves beyond her capacity and gains too much authority over men she rejects the authority of those over her. Therefore, any Arrogance involvement will inevitably lead to insubordination which will result in a disaster in her life.

### **Proper Use of Authority**

In any position of leadership, authority or rank the person must be sensitive to the needs of those under him. He must be wise, observant, sensitive and understand the needs of the people under his authority. He must avoid at all costs using his position for self gratification. Arrogance and [Scar Tissue of the Soul](#) will make the one in authority insensitive to the needs of others. The one in authority must provide and protect the freedom needed to allow those under authority to respond rather than be coerced into obedience. This comes only as a result of the objectivity of the one in authority switching to [Impersonal – Unconditional Love](#). The difference between greatness and failure in people who have great authority and are powerful is whether they are petty or not. A person with great authority lacking [Pettiness](#) is usually a very great person and this was the case with General Dwight Eisenhower. Eisenhower was great because he lacked pettiness and as a result rose above all his peers. The complete opposite of Eisenhower was the British General B. Montgomery. Impulsive Arrogance avoids Impersonal – Unconditional Love and [INTEGRITY](#) and moves into [Mental Attitude Arrogance](#) and [Pettiness](#). Pettiness includes the improper use of authority to gain or acquire things for one's personal benefit or aggrandizement.

Authority is a dangerous thing and must be properly oriented by involvement in the judicious application of enforced discipline so that it results in the development of self discipline resulting in [Enforced and Genuine Humility](#) in those under the authority. True Leadership and Arrogance are incompatible and will always separate and it is Leadership which usually is lost resulting in the one in charge being a bully over others. The Leadership Pastor Teacher establishes his authority through his accurate expository teaching of Bible Doctrine. This Pastor Teacher must lead with Doctrinal orders derived from information contained in his study of the scripture thus giving each individual in his congregation knowledge of his personal job in this Angelic Conflict. Generally speaking, One's job, ultimately, is execution of the Protocol Plan of God. The Protocol Plan of God for the Royal Family of God is never a system for self promotion yet believers are constantly involved with self promotion since they are constantly involved with the [Arrogance Skills](#).

[Institutional Arrogance](#) interlocks with Impulsive Arrogance and is always directly related to life because in some way everyone is under some system of authority in all areas of life. This can be demonstrated in social life where on a crowded dance floor one must exercise good manners. Without the self discipline authority in the dancers one person may think the floor is all for him and constantly bumps into all the dancers. Once a person enters the Interlocking System of Arrogance from any entrance gate he will always cause trouble in any organization. Therefore, in any organization when problems arise Arrogance is found in efficient, inefficient and dishonest people. Therefore, all organizations have 3 things which challenge Arrogance:

- ✧ Authority
- ✧ Policy
- ✧ Objectives.

### **Your Opinions & Authority**

Arrogance is what rejects the Power System of God, the [Divine Dynasphere](#), the Protocol Plan

of God with its Bible Doctrine, Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions and moves the individual believer outside of this system. When the believer moves outside the system of the Protocol Plan of God he is subject to [Divine Discipline](#), which is punishment or uncomfortable encouragement from God and / or from society to return to the system. He must accept the system and the authority of any organization he is involved with in order to have any degree of happiness in life. When under any system of authority where the policies are stupid, to attack the policies is to attack the authority and by this means destroy any possibility of advance in the system. Everyone, at times, has taken the attitude that he is better, smarter and has better policy ideas than the authority over him. In fact having maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul makes it most likely true, but knowing Bible Doctrine and all of these other things in themselves makes this believer vulnerable, at times, to entering the Interlocking System of Arrogance. The believer must avoid at all times being involved in [Self Righteous Arrogance](#) and by this involvement destroy any possibility of being able to fix the broken situations around him. He must remember that all people have the right to be WRONG about anything or everything. He must avoid Self Righteous responses to the wrong things he encounters in life. He must not react to the situations found in his nation as a whole or in his own personal life and social environment.

Arrogance and Ignorance both abuse authority whereas obedience infers subordination and submission to authority because the single best way for there to be any restraint on Arrogance is through [Authority Orientation](#). When given an option of expressing one's personal views or [Opinions](#) on any subject, at any time, by supervising authority, and they are rejected, one must still use his position to carry out the policy and purpose of the organization despite being in opposition to them. In one's job the responsibility is not to agree or disagree with the purpose or policy of the organization but to fulfill them or vacate the position. One always has freedom to separate from any organization's policies with which he disagrees but he does not have a right to criticize them or undercut the policy or authority in the system. He has no right to be conspiratorial and criticize, condemn or try to usurp the authority of those in positions over him. One absolutely no right to undermine the authority of those over him and then stay in the organization he does not agree with. Therefore, NO ONE has any right to function in any organization under any aspect of Arrogance. If this is one's mode of function then, when he is given any level of responsibility, he will never be able to handle it.

All wimpy weak personalities hide their Arrogance behind their fake or pseudo humility but are definitely Arrogant. It is very difficult for a person in [Reversionism](#) and involved in Arrogance to recover because he must get under the authority of someone else and this is a crushing blow to his Arrogance. However, there will come a point in the recovery process from reversionism where enough Bible Doctrine will remove enough of the Arrogance and replace it with respect for the authority that initially caused some short concentration on doctrine on a daily basis. Therefore, when in reversionism it is very difficult to submit to the authority of another because of Arrogance. Only when one begins to recover from reversionism is there any possibility of reviving friendships and the personal love for another. The system of reversion recovery emphasizes objectivity in LEARNING in which one's preconceived ideas and opinions



must be set aside. Everyone who has ever walked into a local church where Bible Doctrine was properly emphasized and strictly taught has had preconceived ideas which did not comply with Bible Doctrine. This again requires self regulation from self discipline which is needed to set aside inculcated preconceived notions and receive what the word of God has to say. This is essential if one is to set aside [Human Viewpoint](#) thinking and the satanic doctrines from Evil and replace them with [Divine Viewpoint](#) thinking from Metabolized Bible Doctrine accumulated into the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul. The consistent self discipline and self regulation developed as [Genuine Humility](#) from Positive Volition toward Bible Doctrine is how life is regulated to accept and subordinate to the authority and the teaching of someone else.

If self discipline is consistent and properly oriented then the greatest trap of the Spiritual Life, being involved in competition with the Pastor Teacher, can be avoided. Competing with the Pastor Teacher is the [Jealousy](#) and [Pride](#) of the believer who sets self up to judge what is being taught and who is teaching it. This is the kind of competition that inevitably keeps a believer from advancing in the Spiritual Life. This is the believer who gets close to Spiritual Maturity and thinks he knows the whole realm of doctrine or at least more than the Pastor Teacher, and as a result falls right back down into Reversionism. These believers are Jealous, Petty, Proud asses and cannot ever compete with a properly prepared Bible Doctrine oriented Pastor Teacher who is in the local church. When one has enough self discipline to pay attention to what is taught and accept it and ignore anything which makes him want to compete, then this believer is moving constantly ahead in the Spiritual Life. Competing with the Pastor Teacher puts the believer out of the race to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God.

### **Unfairness in Authority**

When there is an unfair or obnoxious “boss” in charge in a situation or organization this is, in fact, a great blessing for those under him. He will be the means by which one learns to control himself, exercise self discipline, stick to the job and to learn about authority and respect it. In 1976 too many men were leaving the military services because they could not understand the gap that occurs in peace time military where authority is turned over to civilians so that, at least in theory, military dictatorships are avoided. In these times and under these circumstances the civilian authorities often set up policies which are ridiculous and many men cannot handle them and therefore don’t endure through these times. The principle is that if one cannot stick it out in the uncomfortable situations of life then he won’t be able to stick it out in any situation in life especially the high pressure circumstances of disaster and will float from place to place looking for a soft berth or an easy job. When one functions under these erroneous concepts he forgets that God keeps all believers alive and takes care of them in the world of Satan no matter what the situation may be. Believers often complain about their job because they have no respect for authority, no understanding of life, no capacity for life and have not deployed advanced Personal Love for God, [Occupation with the Person of The Lord Jesus, The Christ](#) because they have not achieved Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God. They have the idiotic and erroneous idea that someone, somewhere has it easier than they do but this is not ever true and everyone has varied problems in every field of life and every field has incompetent IDIOTS at the top. When one thinks how he or others feel about a boss is more important than any other aspect regarding his function on the job,

especially if this boss is obnoxious or overbearing and disliked, and he thinks that this boss should be removed and a nicer boss put in his place; THIS IS ARROGANCE. One's [Personal Opinion](#) about anyone who has authority over him is totally inconsequential. No one can be a good leader until he has gone through a period of life where he has learned to respect the authority of another whether the other has been good or bad, liked or disliked in his position.

Therefore, it should be clear that the believer's responsibility to the Lord does not imply irresponsibility to establishment authority. Exhibiting irresponsibility to establishment authority is always demonstrated by the person who becomes instantly proud, vain or megalomaniacal when given more authority than he can handle. ([Rom 13:1-3](#), [Matt 22:21](#))

### **Impulsive Arrogance & The Vigilante**

An Impulsive Arrogant reaction is what causes people to become dishonest, non-patriotic and enemies of the establishment. There are a myriad of ways for a person to become dishonest in relationship to a federal government saturated with EVIL. This is reacting against Evil by producing one's own Evil, An Example:

The abused citizen who is a victim of some criminal act and who is not vindicated or justly served by the law may react by personal or individual vigilantism. See the "Death Wish" or "Obsession" Movies. He may also join an organization which takes the law into its hands for revenge or vengeance.

The overriding principle here is that 2 Wrongs NEVER make a Right and when one rationalizes that this is acceptable he has entered into the Interlocking System of Arrogance. The religious fanatic John Calvin took over the civil authority of Geneva Switzerland to force his morals and norms and standards on the people and was guilty of TOTAL entanglement in the Interlocking System of Arrogance. He formed a vigilante committee and executed people who did not agree with his sermons. A strong believer, positive to Bible Doctrine, must be alert to avoid Impulsive Arrogance and trying to get all other believers in his periphery to conform to his doctrinally established norms and standards. This is how vigilante functions begin. When Impulsive Arrogance combines with [Self Righteousness](#) and the believer is tempted to react under Impulsive or [Institutional Arrogance](#) he would do well to limit himself to imprecatory prayer **ONLY IF** he is a mature believer and on solid spiritual ground to do so or else to simply use the [Faith Rest Drill](#) (5 stages) if he is not. In either case this puts matters into the hands of the Lord and the functions of the Justice of God and the Supreme Court of Heaven.

### **Impulsive Arrogance & Child Abuse**

Child abuse and cruelty which results from Impulsive Arrogance is perpetuated by resentment and developed Arrogance from one generation of abused children into the next generation. In childhood [Defense Mechanisms](#) will allow the victim of child abuse to survive the various forms of this trauma. In the adult, especially after [Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God](#), there is no place for these defense mechanisms in the life of the believer who should be protected by his development and deploying of the [Problem Solving Devices](#) onto the [Forward Line of Troops](#) of his soul. No matter how difficult things were in childhood or in life at any time, one cannot ever become so down in life that he loses out in life. This will allow the Interlocking System of Arrogance and Interlocking System of Antagonistic Emotional Hatred to combine in

the reactions of the victim of the child abuse, which will daily create more garbage in the soul to add to the garbage existing there from the abuse. The Garbage in the Subconscious from any abuse must be buried with the memories of the abuser far out at sea and forgotten. (This is not to say that you should attempt to find and bury your abuser and does not give license for retaliation.) Sins by parents perpetrated on children, nor of wife or husband bashing, do not solve the problems resulting from prior abuse. Arrogant preoccupation with self excludes reality by adopting [Maladaptive Defense Mechanisms](#) instead of developing and deploying the Problem Solving Devices of the Spiritual Life on the Forward Line of Troops of the SOUL. The victims of prior abuse often blame everyone in their periphery for all their problems in life and they develop a very strong [Self Righteous Arrogance](#). The abuse victims who do not replace the Maladaptive Defense Mechanisms with Problem Solving Devices make very cruel parents. Cruelty begets cruelty when there is lack of Problem Solving Devices in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul of the believer or Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institution principles in the soul of the unbeliever. Temporal Judgment on those who abuse others is the function of the Supreme Court of Heaven but if the abused person reacts only one time he enters himself into the Interlocking System of Arrogance or the Interlocking System of Hatred indulging in either Arrogant or Emotional sinning and thereby brings down the judgment of the Supreme Court of Heaven upon himself.

### [Destruction of Humility](#)

Children have natural humility and child abuse destroys this and along with it teachability. This is replaced, as a result of the vacuum formed in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul, with every form of Arrogance from the Interlocking System of Arrogance. If one reacts to injustice, whether real or imagined, he enters into the Interlocking System of Arrogance especially with [Bitterness](#) and Malice and the Lust for [Revenge](#). If, as a child, one is around parents who are always complaining about things in life being wrong then this develops into a habit which the child picks up and as a result everyone except himself, becomes wrong in everything.

### [Emotional Abuse of Children](#)

Emotional Abuse of children occurs where parents use their authority and seek control of the child through the Evils of the Interlocking System of Antagonistic Emotional Hatred complex. This includes the use of or inducement of:

- ✧ Fear
- ✧ Anxiety
- ✧ Worry
- ✧ Threats
  - loss of toys
  - killing of pets
- ✧ Using Guilt as a punishment

These inevitably result in the child developing and even exhibiting

- ✧ Anger
- ✧ Hatred
- ✧ Animosity

- Tantrums
- Insensitivity
- Hypersensitivity
- Judging
- Maligning
- Vituperation
- even Rage

Authority and Love should be what is used to manipulate children but NEVER [GUILT](#) since guilt does not instill a true sense of responsibility in the child. Sensitivity toward others should always be taught and instilling responsibility for actions by the spanking of the child using reasonable corporal punishment when necessary should always occur since this removes GUILT and when this does not occur it induces neuroses. With the proper use of Parental Authority, Children must be taught about punishment under the Law of Volitional Responsibility and made to understand their failures and the reason they were wrong and then disciplined with the result that the failures are totally forgotten. The ramifications of Divine Discipline as punishment for the believer must be also taught so that both eliminate the potential for emotional abuse of future children.

Return to the [Table of Contents](#)

### **Gate #52 – The Arrogance of Self Indulgence, Pleasure or Lasciviousness**

Antinomianism or Lascivious Lawlessness is Self Indulgent Arrogance and includes deviations in life ranging from fornication to murder. Antinomianism or Lascivious Lawlessness is pseudo happiness related to gratification of the body with a search for approbation, power, prosperity, social life, social or professional status, etc., none of which are substitutes for [Sharing the Happiness of God](#), Problem Solving Device #9. Lasciviousness often results from guilt which shifts a person from emphasis on his soul to emphasis on his body and Lascivious Sins emphasize the pleasures of the Body.

The Old Sin Nature trend toward Lascivious Lawlessness is the basis for Immoral Degeneracy which entangles the individual in [Sexual Arrogance](#), [Criminal Arrogance](#) and other levels of the Interlocking System of Arrogance. Teen aged children beginning in the 1980s were in great danger and needed above all else straight Bible Doctrine teaching but today there is almost NO PLACE for them to even acquire it. Principles from Bible Doctrine are not a part of the home life, not found as establishment and divine institution principles in the schools, and especially NOT provided in the majority of the Local Churches which they do not, in any case, attend. The period, beginning in the 1980s, was the time of “JUST SAY NO”, however, the problem was that unless the person was a believer with some Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Right Lobe or an unbeliever functioning strongly under the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine

Institutions, they would not and could not ever say NO to anything. This occurs because ARROGANCE gravitates to becoming Pleasure Mad. There is nothing wrong with having pleasure and enjoying life or having leisure time in life BUT arrogance demands nothing but entertainment. This is clearly demonstrated in the necessity for the majority of individuals under the age of 50 to have instant gratification in everything. It has developed over the past 40+ years to the current generations having a NECESSITY to have and carry a CELLULAR PHONE or VIDEO GAME to entertain them constantly or to receive instant information from others and instant feedback on what information they dispense to others! These were the children in Junior High school and this has moved down into the Elementary school level and also encompasses young adults in their 20s and 30s at a minimum and they all are the people who become drug addicts. Public School is today and has been for some time, a ZOO, for keeping the little monsters out of the parents hair for a day. No children in public schools are learning ENGLISH nor MATH, nor anything about any decent literature, or the past history of their own nation. This is a strong reflection regarding the fragmentation of the lives of children based on the Arrogance of the Previous generations, their parents, the YUPPIE HIPPIE generation of their grandparents who focused in their lives on their own pleasures and opulent accomplishments. The United States of America has been in GRAVE danger since the 60s and this was exacerbated in the 80s and now may bring about the total destruction of the nation in the early 21<sup>st</sup> century.

The underlying principle is that Freedom without authority is anarchy and authority without freedom is tyranny. So that freedom without the authority from Bible Doctrine is antinomianism and authority without freedom from Bible Doctrine is legalism, therefore, authority and freedom must be balanced in the Spiritual Life to avoid Legalism and / or Antinomianism as Self Indulgent Arrogance.

### **Immoral Degeneracy & Self Indulgent Arrogance**

Lascivious Lawless Antinomianism unchecked by the believer using the [Rebound Procedure](#) results in Immoral Degeneracy. Immoral degeneracy is polarized fragmentation toward the lascivious lawless trend of the Old Sin Nature where believers are capable of sins involving antinomianism. Immoral Degeneracy among believers is expressed in categories of sin involving licentiousness, self-indulgence, and lawlessness. ([2Tim 3:4](#)) Licentiousness expresses the polarized trend of the Old Sin Nature in Sexual Arrogance and Sins, chemical sins and Criminality including rape, robbery, murder, burglary, embezzlement, con games, pimping, prostitution, kidnapping, blackmail, pilfering, and shop lifting. Immoral degeneracy follows the same pattern as moral degeneracy in post salvation Fragmentation going from Implosion to Explosion to [Reversion](#). Contrary to the thinking of Legalistic [Religious](#) believers, Christians who commit the sins of Lawless Antinomianism are saved. They have simply lost the possibility of receiving their escrow blessings for time and eternity if their pattern of life persists without correction. However, they will suffer under divine discipline. These Christians react to the judgment, maligning, and slandering of religious legalism and as a result they all



too often cut themselves off from Bible doctrine which would lead them into the Protocol Plan of God. Religious Legalism erroneously contends that believers who commit these sins involving Lawlessness and Antinomianism and who perpetuate this fragmentation into Reversionism are really not saved in the first place because they didn't add something, like lordship or commitment, to their faith in Christ. This is a totally false premise and assumes that God has not anticipated these failures when he provided the potential for salvation to this individual in the first place.

The attitude of the Lawless Antinomian believer is generally characterized by reaction. As the object of gossip, slander, maligning, and judging by other legalistic believers, they react to this self-righteous arrogance. They often associate Christians with Self Righteous Arrogance so that they reject Bible Doctrine or a local church or a ministry that could be helpful to them. Thus, because this category of believer associates self-righteous arrogance with legalism and Bible Doctrine and with confused pastors, they therefore reject all churches and pastors, as well as Bible doctrine, the only things that can actually help them. ([Eph 4:14](#)) The believer involved in Lawless Antinomianism often moves into criminal fragmentation ([Eph 4:28](#)) which includes larceny, embezzlement, blackmail, burglary, robbery, pilfering, shoplifting, kidnapping, child abuse, aggravated assault, assassination, murder, rape, etc. However, the reality of the Christian Way of Life is that Christ died in substitution for all these sins as well therefore, anyone guilty of these crimes can believe in Christ and receive eternal life BUT they must still take responsibility and pay for their crimes according to the common law regarding their violations. However, these former criminal believers still have the same trends in their Old Sin Nature, so unless they engage in consistent Post Salvation Epistemological Rehabilitation and learn the Problem Solving Devices they will fall back into these trends, back under the control of their Old Sin Nature and move again in the direction of polarized fragmentation of their trends. ([Eph 4:17-28](#)) Becoming involved in the Interlocking System of Arrogance and moving invariably through the stages of Reversionism this believer, who develops [Scar Tissue of the Soul](#), becomes motivated to engage in Immoral Degeneracy. ([Eph 4:19](#)) In fact, Scar Tissue of the Soul provides the basis for motivation and function in both moral and immoral degeneracy from polarized fragmentation. Only the [Problem Solving Devices](#) of the Protocol Plan of God can provide solutions for these problems of polarized fragmentation.

Return to the [Table of Contents](#)

### **Gate #53 – The Arrogance of Alcoholism or Hangover Arrogance**

Habitual Drunkenness as a form of sublimation and escape from reality, places one immediately into the Interlocking System of Arrogance. People get drunk because they are concentrating on themselves and the 'rosy glow' they are getting from the alcohol. This is very closely related to [Emotional Self Centered Arrogance](#). A distraction resulting from one's past must be recognized as what it is, superficial, and as a distraction it is therefore not necessary to renounce it. When one overreacts to whatever in his past has caused his distraction and then he renounces it he builds up arrogance instead of spiritual momentum. He then becomes proud

of having renounced or given up something which distracts him from what he considers is the proper Christian Way of Life, possibly what distracts him from Perception, Cognition, Incultation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine. The believer must never overreact to that which distracts him from Bible Doctrine because this brings on the potential for a huge failure. One loses a second battle when he overreacts to any distraction because it then becomes “I” will give up this or that thing for doctrine. The smart person says OK it was ‘I’ who screwed up and missed bible class and it is stupid to give things up when I am such a fool. Therefore, it simply is arrogance to give up things which distract one from doctrine since by this action one will have recognized the problem but solved it in the wrong way. When something distracts a believer from consistency in the intake of Bible Doctrine the blame must fall directly on the believer himself not the thing which distracts otherwise this will build the greatest case of arrogance imaginable. This arrogance becomes apparent when the doctrine which is taught in repetition is ignored because it has been heard before. There is more [Pride](#) and [Self Righteousness](#) in fundamental Christianity than almost anywhere else and it comes from over reaction to failures or distractions. When one engages in these overreactions he has made self the weakest person around since Arrogance involvement inevitably makes him more vulnerable to Sin, Crime, and Human Good production under the principles of Evil than anything else. The believer must be extremely careful in giving up things in life because when it concerns sins he has committed very often he gives up one brand and then he picks up another that is far worse. Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God is through Faith alone in The Lord Jesus, The Christ alone and the one involved in illicit or inordinate use of alcohol, drugs, sex or any other sublimation does not have to give it up to obtain salvation nor to be a Christian. The reality of the Christian Way of Life is that as the believer advances in the Spiritual Life with consistent Perception, Cognition, Incultation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine these things will be put aside naturally as maturation in the Spiritual Life occurs.

Return to the [Table of Contents](#)

#### [Gate #54 – The Arrogance of Complaining](#)

Moses had to face and deal with the toughness of Pharaoh, with his persistent [Negative Volition](#), while the people of Israel depended on the man, Pharaoh, to lessen their work burden instead of depending on the Lord. Pharaoh’s response to the people was [Ex 5:17-18](#), more work and less material to accomplish the tasks with. The Jews responded then during the attempts of Moses to extricate them from slavery in Egypt by Complaining and with criticism of Moses, although Moses was simply doing what the Lord had told him to do, so that the result was that:

- ✧ Pharaoh puts in place a new building policy to make it harder on the Jews to comply
- ✧ The Jewish leaders are beaten when they cannot meet the requirements of this new policy
- ✧ The Jews in Complaining to Pharaoh were thrown out from his presence
- ✧ Then they turn and Complained to Moses and criticize him

This results in some discouragement for Moses because the problem of freeing the Jews had now been made 2x as bad as before BUT Moses does not himself Complain but takes the whole thing directly to the Lord because of his promises. The Promises of God are based solely on his essence and when God makes a promise he cannot ever go back on it because of his Immutability as part of his essence. For Moses to stand under this incredible pressure from Pharaoh and from the Jews took great spiritual growth and spiritual strength. The Jews Complained and Pharaoh said no, but Moses just had to stand still and relax. God can provide this inner peace, inner happiness and inner stability under the pressures and trials of life IF the believer will stand still and watch the deliverance of the Lord, the problem is maybe he will and maybe he will not! He will receive deliverance, IF, he will use the [40 assets](#) given by God at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God and again, maybe he will and maybe he will not!

The Jews during their exodus in the desert with Moses Complained that it would have been better if they had died by the hand of the Lord while still in Egypt. They felt sorry for themselves and were filled with [Self Pity Arrogance](#) and they Complained about missing the food which they had in Egypt which included anything anyone could find dead which could be cooked and eaten. They were expressing [Negative Volition](#) and were not using the [Faith Rest Drill \(5 stages\)](#) at all. When the circumstances of Life change the believer there is something wrong in his life. The promises of God for the believer include a vast variety of principles involving Divine Provision:

- ✧ God provided for the Jews while they were Complaining and murmuring under his Grace Policy and God received the Glory for it and the same is true for believers today.
- ✧ God did not tell Moses to straighten them all out and get them in line, it is the sole prerogative of God to correct the wavering path of all believers.
- ✧ Their provision of FOOD as Manna did not depend on the people of Israel but on the Lord and NOTHING given to the believer ever depends on ANYTHING he is or does.
- ✧ ALL of the abilities and successes of the believer in life do not depend on who or what he has made himself to be but on who and what God has CAUSED him to become.
- ✧ Any greatness of the believer is from what God has done for him which is the only thing which makes him great.
- ✧ The believer does not ever earn nor deserve any of what God provides for him in time or eternity.

The Jews were receiving marvelous gifts from the Lord yet they Complained about the gifts and even expressed a strong desire for that which was left behind under SLAVERY in Egypt. In their provision of Food by God in the form of Manna, where no matter how much they gathered there was always 1 omer available for each person each day. In their 1 year of travel across the desert the last test of their ability to rely on the [Faith Rest Drill \(5 stages\)](#) before their War for the promised land was related to WATER and again they FAILED. ([Ex 17:1-7](#))

Divine Discipline for believers occurs AT THE TIME and AS A RESULT of failures to function in the Plan of God because of ANY transgression or sin which takes the believer OUT of the Plan of God. Instead of the Jews thanking the Lord for the testing and thanking him for his promised deliverance they Complained against Moses. They had eyes on Moses instead of thinking of the source of all their deliverance, the Lord himself. Believers out of fellowship, out of the Plan of God, always manufacture their own misery and then run around and blame it on everyone else by interlocking into Transference Arrogance. The Jews here made the wildest accusations against Moses and what did Moses do. He did not Complain to the Lord about his plight in trying to lead these Jews but he prayed earnestly to the Lord on their behalf. Moses struck the rock and water came out. Moses knew that God did not depend on human faithfulness but that the Lord's faithfulness ONLY depended on His integrity and not how humans functioned. God delivered the Jews even when they were rejecting his provision by whining and Complaining in Arrogance against Him and Moses, this is GRACE.

If the believer depends on his circumstances in life for happiness then he will NEVER have it. The whole purpose of the Spiritual Life after Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God is to DIVORCE the believer from the circumstances of his life with regard to his happiness, contentment and stability. The Jews were trying to get back into slavery and they desired the food of slavery which had been things which the Egyptians would never consider eating. They disliked the freedom which God had provided for them wanting to return to what was familiar and what they considered security, SLAVERY. They disliked the Manna which he provided as their food and wanted to return to eating dead carrion, rats and snakes. Moses had over 2,000,000 adults in his congregation and for 40 years he heard NOTHING except Complaining from them. The principle of function in the Plan of God is that when believers operate under the Plan of God from their own FREE WILL they will have contentment, stability and happiness but when they operate outside of the Plan of God from their own FREE WILL they will only create misery for themselves. Thus, at times, the Spiritual Life becomes an issue of Complaining Arrogance vs the Faith Rest Drill (5 stages). (Num 11:1-9)

Despite being told that the land was good and prosperous when the Jews reached the land after one year of traveling through the desert they would not go up over the hill and into the land. They were paralyzed by FEAR from Mental Attitude Arrogance which neutralized and totally immobilized them. Instead of going into the land they went back into their tents and gathered in small groups and Complained expressing Verbal Sins resulting from their Mental Attitude Sins all which began with FEAR. They Complained against the Lord and maligned Him saying He hated them despite their KNOWING from their experience after leaving Egypt all he had done to preserve them. This was the inconsistency of being entangled in Mental Attitude Arrogance which causes the thinking to be completely inconsistent. They had a total loss of the true perspective of their situation as a result of these Mental Attitude Sins which included:

- ✧ Hatred
- ✧ Jealousy
- ✧ Pride

- Envy
- Bitterness
- FEAR
- Anger
- Anxiety
- and many others

This type of believer then and today ceases to be effective for Christ and is useless to him. These types of Mental Attitude Sins occur and are emphasized first in this failure of Complaining then verbal sins and finally overt sins inevitably become part of it. What one really is, is what he thinks and what he thinks is what he will say and what he thinks and says is much more important than what he does but it drives what he does. These principles are generally ignored in Christian circles and are the primary things which ultimately rob believers of their power from the [Filling of God the Holy Spirit](#). ([Prov 23:7](#))

Dathan and Abiram Complained among the people of Israel at that time and used God's idiom of “Milk and Honey” thereby ridiculing and maligning God because Egypt, in the context they were referring to, was in fact a land of slavery and poverty for the Jews. They were inconsistent in their accusations to Moses in saying that Moses brought them out to kill them and also to rule them. ([Num 16:12-15](#)) All believers are responsible to the Lord for all of their own personal functions. Moses could not rule the Jews and Kill them at the same time. Usually, arrogantly Jealous and ambitious people Complain about what they truly want, which, as in this case, is to satisfy their Power lust and Inordinate Ambition to lead and rule the people, and therefore malign and criticize those who are ruling and leading the people. The Jews had said, being involved in Complaining Arrogance, that they did not want to go into the land and try to conquer it because the giants would KILL their children who would not have a chance against them. They rationalized and used their children as an excuse to not go into the land because of their own FEAR, just as believers today use their children as an excuse for ignoring or neglecting Bible Doctrine teaching. Then for 38 more years these Jews moved around and lived in the desert until that entire generation died and THEN their children, whom they had used as an excuse to NOT go into the land, would in fact be the ones to inherit what God had promised, THE LAND. ([Deut 1:26-28](#))

The reality is that some believers simply “mark time” all their lives and each must ask this question of himself, “Am I marking time, moving in place, with lots of action but never going anywhere?” This is the way many people and many Christians go through life and when one is marking time he is in fact retreating because he is not advancing. This is the category who are constantly Complaining, the old timer Christians who Complain, who are simply marking time. Because these 2<sup>nd</sup> generation Jews had not learned any Bible Doctrine, even from their experiences in 38 years of living in the desert, they were marking time until intensive testing comes again and when it did they again fail. People who mark time in life don’t benefit from experience and these 2<sup>nd</sup> generation Jews had 38 years of experience and learned nothing from it. When one “marks time” in life he can only think in terms of the good times of the past in



his life. Here the Jews could only think of Egypt where there were vines, pomegranates, figs, all the “luxuries” of life and also SLAVERY so that they actually could not even partake of these things. When they were at Kadesh Barnea they had freedom minus the other accoutrements of life, but also MINUS WATER, a necessity and the logistical grace test for them. Slavery plus luxury was a false consideration and there is no luxury in life which is worth slavery. The reality was that in their situation of slavery they did not have these luxuries but ate what was basically garbage and lived in total squalor but what they remembered was the glamour of Egypt available to Egyptians only, which they had not experienced but only heard a distorted perspective of from their parents in the 1<sup>st</sup> generation. Therefore, the ‘old timers’ of the 1<sup>st</sup> generation had communicated a false perspective of marking time to the younger generation resulting then in their FAILURE under testing. This is the essence of Complaining Arrogance.

### **Weeping, Wailing & Complaining**

The believer cannot ever correct any pressure or adversity situation in his life when weeping, wailing and Complaining about some terrible thing which happened to him. This is like the frustration weeping of the older Jews because the new temple was not as great as Solomon's temple. ([Ezra 3:12-13](#)) This is also like the weeping of drunkards which is a disorientation to life and reality. ([Matt 8:12](#), [Matt 25:30](#), [Luke 13:28](#)) Weeping which goes on for very long time, weeping, wailing and grinding of teeth is entanglement in Arrogance. ([Num 14:2](#)) The fact is that Complaining is simply weeping with words and [Self Pity](#) is feeling sorry for self and these are all dishonoring to the Lord. Therefore, weeping and Complaining and engaging in Self Pity Arrogance is NOT normal and not rational and certainly NOT a spiritual life function. Believers very often make excuses and rationalize not going along with the Plan of God and therefore are like the Jews who wished they had died in Egypt or the desert but were afraid to go into the land and die for their freedom. They said they were afraid for their wives and children but the children who were never hurt for 39 years living in poverty in the desert and are those who would eventually enter and conquer the land under Joshua and Caleb. Then despite all this whining and Complaining they suddenly get organized and want to vote in a new leader to replace Moses. They could not be decisive about going into the land but they could be decisive about NOT going into the land and running back to slavery in Egypt. ([Num 14:2-4](#), [Deut 24:16](#), [Num 14:21-38](#))

### **Characteristics of Complaining people**

Weak Believers first weep and wail with NO JOY and then persist in Complaining to whomever will hear them. Complaining which is weeping with words instead of tears invariably causes these believers to fall head long into Self Pity Arrogance and when a believer gets to a place of Self Pity, then, whatever he thinks or says is dishonoring to the Lord. The believer who goes through this routine of Weeping, Complaining and Self Pity is NOT normal nor rational and uses any excuse to NOT do what the Lord has commanded. When a person is afraid to do something it is always very easy to find some reason to EXCUSE his FEAR. ([Num 14:1-3](#))

### **Mental Attitude Arrogance, Reversionism & Complaining**

As a result of persistent Negative Volition and thus being unable to draw on the Bible Doctrine which has not been stored in the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul due to neglect or rejection of it, very often the believer, like ASAPH in the Old Testament Scripture, just KEEPS ON Complaining to God. Asaph could not call on Metabolized Bible Doctrine in his Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of his Soul so he had to go back and evaluate the situation historically looking at the first national crisis which came to the Jews after their liberation from Egyptian Slavery. For the Jews as they left Egypt under the guidance of Moses after **400 years** of slavery their first crisis was to come to the shores of the Red Sea with Mountains to the north and south and the swamp lands of the great body of the red sea to the east before them. Coming from the west was the Egyptian 1st Armored Division led by Pharaoh himself with 600 chariots. Here are the Jews at the Red Sea just out of slavery without any means of self defense, no weapons, no tactics, no logistics. They, at this point, realize that they are trapped and they kept on being afraid and this was a Mental Attitude of Fear resulting in them screaming in total panic. They began to immediately Complain to Moses and express from their Emotional Revolt of the Soul that they would have been better off as slaves and they will now be killed by the Egyptians. Typical of Reversionists, the Jews turned and Complained and blamed MOSES for their perilous situation. These people are hopelessly in despair as in Psalms 77 where Asaph expressed his Reversionism. They in fact considered that they would rather have been a LIVING DOG than a dead LION. Moses finally got them to shut up and stood before them and said “Stand still and watch the deliverance of the Lord, the Lord will fight for you today.” Then they say to Moses that he has manufactured out of his mind, a plot to take them from Egypt so that they can all die in the desert. They Complain that MOSES CAUSED them to be taken from Egypt when in fact they chose to do it from their own free will. It is amazing how people do things which get them in trouble from their own free will choices and then consistently blame these things on others as a result of the Arrogance of Complaining interlocking with Transference Arrogance.

When believers are under only Human Viewpoint thinking, they may be saved but are not qualified for leadership because the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of their Soul is saturated with Human Viewpoint from the LIE from of EVIL rather than Divine Viewpoint from the Absolute Truths of GRACE and Bible Doctrine. If they had Divine Viewpoint they could go directly to the Lord with all their concerns and allow him to correct the situations. Like tumbleweed which has no roots this is the believer without roots in Bible Doctrine. They cannot see Divine Good when it comes to them in the promises and doctrines of God. Having not seen nor understood these promises and doctrines they cannot use them when pressure comes to them. Therefore, believers without roots in Bible Doctrine live a dried up life of useless experiences and inhabit the parched places in the desert and a salt land of NO effective production in the Spiritual Life. Thus, irrationality plus Arrogance under pressure leads to Self Pity and later these Jewish BELIEVERS did not want to die at Kadesh Barnea, without water but Complained to Moses about it, opposing him and rejecting him. Everything they remember was from when they were slaves and the slave mentality when under pressure forgets the importance of freedom and thus remembers ONLY the things of slavery, which they hallucinate

into pleasures, rather than the tyranny of it. Because of forgetting the tyranny of slavery they enter into a state of revolt against their leadership. Instead of passing this test by the use of the [Faith Rest Drill \(5 stages\)](#) they failed by constantly Complaining about their circumstances. This is the slave mentality where by they ignore the principles of freedom and instead are willing to accept slavery to enjoy a few things in life selling their birthright of freedom for some accouterments of life. Freedom is the status of uncoerced and uninhibited human volition and the uncaused cause of human function and involves the principle of live and let live. It is legitimate self determination and exemption from necessity and is self fulfillment and the privilege and franchise of the Human Race with complete exemption from arbitrary control. However, it does not include the right to Complain against God's Provisions for Believers.

### [Mental Attitude Jealousy & Complaining](#)

[Jealousy](#) never stands alone as a Mental Attitude Sin from [Mental Attitude Arrogance](#) but is the cause of other Mental Attitude, Verbal and even Overt Sins. Much discord between individuals and in groups is caused by Jealousy and if one looks long enough at someone in Jealousy he WILL inevitably find something to malign or judge and this is DISCORD. When one is Complaining about someone else it is most often motivated by Mental Attitude Jealousy and there cannot ever be true Category II, romantic love or Category III love as friendship, when Jealousy exists. Jealous persons are therefore sowers of discord in every aspect of their lives and they always eventually involve themselves in maligning others. Jealousy is self destructive and though it is not the greatest of Mental Attitude Sins it is the strongest of Mental Attitude Sins while [Pride](#) or [Egotistical Arrogance](#) is the greatest. ([Job 5:2](#), [Prov 14:30](#)) Jealousy is according to [Prov 27:3-4](#) the heaviness of a stone around one's neck and is closely related to the suppression of pride which is part of a trigger mechanism producing both false motivation and discord. ([Phil 1:15](#))

Prior to the revolution of BC 926 the northern kingdom of Sumeria was very Jealous of the southern kingdom of Judah and this is what started the revolution. ([Is 11:13](#), [2Sam 19:40-43](#)) In David's day the 10 northern tribes were Jealous of the 2 southern tribes and when David visited Gilgal the representatives of the northern kingdom Complained that he was not spending enough time with them. Jealousy is also the source of psychotic conditions, ([Job 5:2](#), [Prov 14:30](#)) and if one remains Jealous long enough he will first assimilate the character of mental illness and then become mentally ill. [Prov 27:3-4](#) explains that Jealousy is one of the strongest of the Mental Attitude Sins and is a great motivator of both personal and collective [Revenge](#). ([Prov 6:34](#)) Jealousy is a blasphemous Mental Attitude Sin, taking real or imagined wrongs against an individual or group out of the hands of the Lord and attempting to intrude on the divine prerogative of Divine Discipline using vengeance as the vehicle. ([Deut 32:35](#), [Rom 12:19](#)) Jealousy caused Joseph to be sold into slavery ([Acts 7:9](#)), it rejects the authority of the bible and bible teaching ([Acts 13:45](#), [Acts 17:5](#)), and even produces distortions of Bible Doctrine resulting in False Doctrine. ([1Tim 6:4](#)) It is so great as a sin that [Numbers Chapter 5](#) provides a whole special Levitical offering for it alone. Jealousy is not a lone sin but a cluster which results from and in complex motivations and a strong influence from Evil. ([Hos 4:4](#))

### Complaining & Bitterness

**Bitterness** destroys the believer's life and will inevitably destroy a marriage even though there is no divorce. It begins with whining and Complaining and once it is launched in the soul all love is pushed out of the soul. Bitterness launches anger which is an aspect of **Emotional Revolt of the Soul** as part of the believer's **Reversionism**. Bitter people NEVER take responsibility for the cause of their bitterness and will never, from that point on in life, ever take responsibility for their failures. Anger is irrational and in this irrationality the only content this individual is willing and ready to recognize and hear is that which reinforces their pseudo righteous indignation. Anger inevitably becomes wrath when Hatred is added to it and this is the basis for reactionary anger based on bitterness. Clamor and slander are the logical results of Wrath and it causes the building up of a house of cards in Arrogance where the slanderer sets himself up as perfect, where in reality he is in a much higher and greater echelon of sin and failure. These all lead to Malice which is the lust to hurt someone, to inflict suffering and injury on another, which eventually can lead to violence. (**Job 7:11, Job 10:1**)

### Complaining & Psychotic Personality

The **Prepsychotic** Personality is both subjective and inhibited and these Individuals chronically worry, are always stubborn, intolerant and inflexible and lack any sense of humor. They are characterized by Rigidity, which acts as a neurotic defense, along with **Self Righteous Arrogance** and perfectionism alternating with **Guilt**. They are irritable, peevish, querulous, habitually Complaining, unable to concentrate, depressed and full of paranoid ideas. They are saturated with anxiety and tend toward hypochondria as morbid anxiety about one's own health whereby they constantly are conjuring up imaginary illnesses thus obviously locked into **Emotional Revolt of the Soul**.

### Complaining & old age

When addressing the Interlocking System of Arrogance and the various categories of Arrogance there are multiple interactions which lead to problems related to OLD AGE:

- ✧ Lack of mental acuity in the mind if Bible Doctrine has been neglected.
- ✧ Disorientation to life from the standpoint of success standards.
  - Not having realized one's dreams of success in life one will look at his life in the light of FAILURE as a result of not having met his life's goals or standards with this being the great danger of involvement in **Disillusionment**.
- ✧ An increase in Mental Attitude Sins with great emphasis on vindictiveness.
- ✧ Alpha Phobia and a perceived lack of security.
- ✧ Lack of or reductions in the ability to concentrate.
- ✧ Too much time for Complaining because of lack of motivation, lack of Right Lobe activity, and lack of engaging in something "SIGNIFICANT" in one's life.
- ✧ Taking a LONG time to decide anything.
  - Planning and executing a 5 mile ride into town is a problem for old age.
- ✧ Being OUT OF PHASE with the younger generations or the current daily occurrences in society.
- ✧ Having a dangerous trend toward hyper criticism of EVERYTHING.

All of these result in a strong propensity to Complain constantly instead of living life as unto the Lord and recognizing his provisions for one's OLD AGE.

### **Childish Believers & Complaining**

(gr) Nepios, meaning childish or fragmented, as per [Eph 4:14](#), is being totally entangled into the Cosmic Dynaspheres of the Interlocking System of Arrogance and Interlocking System of Antagonistic Emotional Hatred and coming to a dead end in the Spiritual Life, never being able to reach [Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God](#). This believer can never become an invisible hero and is never able to glorify God as a result of an inability to execute the Protocol Plan of God. This results in personality changes causing personal flaws to become a permanent part of one's life. The fragmentation of one's life resulting from entanglement at various levels in the Interlocking System of Arrogance is never resolved by the use of the Rebound Procedure, [Problem Solving Device #1](#). This believer may not be displaying the characteristics of entanglement in the Interlocking System of Arrogance at all times but whenever something puts him under pressure these flaws will pop to the surface as a result of his lack of spiritual advancement. This believer will have his life changed as a result of being deeply entangled in the Interlocking System of Arrogance and thus he will be saturated with Self Pity or Self Righteous Arrogance and frustrated by Interlocking with the [Arrogance of Unrealistic Expectations](#). He will become a chronic Complainer and people out of courtesy will stand by and listen to his whining and Complaining but make it a point to NOT engage in future interactions with him. In addition to and as a result of being a chronic Complainer he will add manipulation of everyone possible in his periphery by trying to make people feel guilty about HIS situation which has resulted in self induced misery. Manipulators, like [Arrogant Crusaders](#), are always trying to change those around them and they never understand that ONE CANNOT CHANGE ANYONE ELSE BECAUSE ONE CAN ONLY CHANGE SELF AND ONE CAN ONLY CHANGE SELF FOR THE BETTER THROUGH BIBLE DOCTRINE. Under the involvement in [Rejection Arrogance](#) and although there is no reason in the Plan of God for Self Pity Arrogance, some people, though they have not hurt for many years, still think about when they were hurting and constantly Complain about that. This is the entanglement in the Interlocking System of Arrogance of Self Pity or Self Righteous Arrogance with Transference Arrogance and [Rejection Arrogance](#) so that the believer becomes weak from the fragmentation of his life through his entanglement in Complaining Arrogance. ([Lam 3:25-26](#))

Many of these believers are like little children, they are adults who act like children, they like those who sit in the market places and sulk and Complain because their friends are not treating them like they want to be treated. ([Matt 11:15-17](#)) These are people whom one CANNOT ever please, and when doing nice things for them, they don't like or appreciate it, and when being harsh with them, they feel offended. Whether you are smiling, happy, weeping or wailing, nothing pleases them and they are IMPLACABLE and are children with small [Petty](#) minds. These believers, like little children are constantly Complaining so that their friends say that they tried to make them happy but it did not work. John the Baptist was said by Jesus to be the greatest believer to that point in history and HE WAS CONSTANTLY RIDICULED AND CRITICIZED. Both John and Jesus were constantly criticized despite all the fantastic things that they did but even they could not please all men. Legalistic religious believers and unbelievers



of that time and even now, today, criticize the principles of Bible Doctrine, like little children who cannot be pleased by anything they do not understand or agree with. Many times believers who are weak in Bible Doctrine do not listen to the Bible Doctrine presented to them but only to the Complaining and criticisms of those in opposition to it. They are not impressed with the Bible Doctrine but only with the criticism presented by those who oppose it. Those who are impressed with the criticism of Bible Doctrine must beware because God will tie their lives up like pretzels and the greatest doses of Divine Discipline are given to those believers who criticize Bible Doctrine and to those who follow along with and agree with that criticism.

### **Examples & Results of Complaining Arrogance**

During the Exodus of the Jews, Korah was responsible with 250 others to teach Bible Doctrine to the congregation of Israel, some 2,000,000 adults, after they left Egypt. He and they wanted more prominence and power therefore they Complained to the people against Aaron whom God had made leader of the priests. He tried to incite the people to remove Aaron in order for them to gain more power and prominence as spiritual leaders in Israel. ([Num 16:8-11](#))

The Logistical Grace provision of God for the people of Israel during the Exodus included food which he provided for them for 39 years every day but there was Complaining by the people concerning this ‘Manna’ from God. This was Jewish believers Complaining about the GRACE of God. For this Mental Attitude Arrogance and sin the Lord provided for them the [Sin unto Death](#). ([Num 21:4-5](#)) As a result of this Complaining the Lord burned up some of these people with fire but when Moses intervened for them the Lord stopped the burning.

However the Jews continued Complaining and whining and Moses was not pleased with them, and even he succumbed to Complaining Arrogance because Complaining is infectious or contagious. ([Num 11:10-15](#)) However, despite all their Complaining, whining and mewing to Moses and to the Lord regarding the food they did not like they still received incredible GRACE provision. The Lord provided for them Quail as meat when they Complained about Manna and dropped quail all around their camp 1 days journey out from the camp about 3 feet deep. Each of the 600,000 men in the camp gathered about 58 gallons of birds, 18 garbage bags full of birds totaling about 1.14 billion birds collected, fulfilling their desire for meat rather than manna. However the ultimate result was the [Divine Discipline](#) of the [Sin unto Death](#) so that the Complaining ones all died from a plague while the meat was still in their mouths. ([Num 11:31-33](#))

Aaron and Miriam Complained and gossiped and maligned Moses behind his back because they did not like the Ethiopian Woman who Moses had married. They did not approve of her and Moses just took it in stride but the Lord was not pleased at all, He told all three of them to go up to the door of the tabernacle and they did. The Lord told them there that Moses was His man. The appointed one the one chosen, the [JESHURUN](#) believer. The Lord then disciplined the recalcitrant Miriam for a week with leprosy and the only reason she survived at all was

because Moses interceded with the Lord on her behalf. ([Num 12:1-15](#))

From the time of their leaving Egypt God promised the Jews the ‘Land’ to be their home but the Jews Complained about the Giants and would not go into the land to conquer them and take the land for themselves. Therefore as a result of their lack of faith and their Complaining and making excuses they lived and wandered in total poverty in the desert 38 years. ([Deut 1:26-28](#))

Once one becomes aware of another person’s sins he is then vulnerable to multiple disciplinary administrations to himself. Being aware of another persons sins makes one vulnerable to becoming entangled in gossip, maligning, saying “I TOLD YOU SO”, etc., all which demonstrate that he is in fact in for intense [Divine Discipline](#) himself. It is far better to IGNORE the sins of others totally or function according to [Col 3:13](#). When one sins against their opposite gender spouse and they then Complain about the results of the sin, they are in for Divine Discipline for the rest of their lives as a result of being being stupid about such things. The believer will meet people everywhere and when he becomes aware of their categories of sin the tendency is to take that information and pass it on to everyone he knows and this always brings Double or Triple compound Divine Discipline. When the believer becomes aware of the sins of others he is far better off to forget them and thus demonstrate great character.

In the time of Jeremiah, the people of Judah were at one point, weeping in the mountains where they had practiced the lascivious phallic rituals. By their own free will they had rejected the God of Israel, The Lord Jesus, The Christ, their “Right Man” and thereby accepted the cheap substitutes of Idols along with illicit sex. As a result, on the hills while they were still “in bed” with the idols, they started to weep for God and beg for mercy. This was for them maximum misery, frustration and disappointment and thus they cry out, Complaining to God for Mercy to make it stop hurting. The combination of weeping, which is [Emotionalism](#), and supplications, which are rituals without reality, indicates NO true repentance or reversal of their volition. They had NOT turned from Idolatry back to God and they were NOT in the temple crying out to God but were still “in bed” with the and functioning according to the rituals of the idols. They were miserable but still fornicating under the rituals of the idols. They ONLY tried to come back to God because of their misery and wanted him to alleviate their suffering NOT BECAUSE THEY LOVED GOD. This is also the Christian today who has overriding Negative Volition toward Bible Doctrine and does not truly KNOW God therefore cannot LOVE God and yet Complains to him when under pressure asking for deliverance when in fact their pressure is from maximum Self Induced Misery combined with Divine Discipline. ([Ps 38:1-6](#))

### **Complaining, an Expression of Unbelief & Lack of Faith**

There is constant demonstration of failure by believers expressing their unbelief as sin which is in fact expressing unbelief toward the Lord. Murmuring in the bible is always referring to

Complaining and is an expression of unbelief and doubt regarding the Grace Plan of God. Believers receive innumerable unknown and known gifts from the Lord and yet they constantly Complain about these incredible gifts and support. Whenever the believer encounters in his life a place of “NO WATER”, like the Jews at Kadesh Barnea, it simply is because the Lord is waiting to provide “water” by HIS means to satisfy this need. Unfortunately few believers recognize this truth of Grace and seek Human solutions for their lack of “water”. These believers blame others who have responsibility and authority for their lack because when people are experiencing adversity or pressure of any kind and lack Bible Doctrine they inevitably become involved in Transference Arrogance in order to move any responsibility for their situation from themselves to someone else, even the Lord. This is the Christian who says, “Why did the Lord let this happen to me”. ([Ex 17:1-7](#))

God’s promises are given by God with no strings attached and God cannot be GOD if he does not keep his promises. This is the application of the faithfulness and immutability of God which does not depend on human faithfulness nor human stability. Again considering the Jews coming out of Egypt when they were constantly Complaining and blaspheming and deserved nothing, God gave them everything and he WILL do this for every believer. Believers need to recognize the ramifications of constant Complaining to the Lord, for the Jews who Complained about their situation the Lord sent many different systems of DEATH to them and killed all those who Complained against him which in fact was the Jews judging the Lord by Complaining. ([Num 11:1-3](#))

### **Complaining & Authority**

For the advancing believer the issue of [Authority](#) must be settled completely and Complaining against authority by the believer must be stopped immediately. People will Complain about other things but should never question delegated authority in Legitimate Organizations set up by God. When it becomes a question of the authority in the Spiritual Life, which is Bible Doctrine and the Pastor Teacher, this must be settled by God alone and no one else because when it comes to divine authority the matter of response to authority is taken out of man’s hands. When a congregation elects deacons and calls a pastor they are NOT setting up the authority but RECOGNIZING the authority which comes through the spiritual gifts possessed by these MEN. It is not a social position for the men receiving these responsibilities but an opportunity to use the spiritual gifts GOD has given to them. In the Old Testament Scripture the authority of the priests came through the family of Aaron and then through the prophets so that when the family of Aaron failed because of their failure to make Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God and their resultant overall spiritual decline, God raised up prophets to take their place. ([Num 17:5-10](#))

### **Complaining & Manipulation**

As an illustration, when a man creates a ‘sacred cow’ out of a woman she will begin to dictate how everyone in her periphery will act. When all do not act as the cow thinks they should, she will go to the bull and Complain until the bull removes the offenders. This is a woman becoming a puppet master controlling everyone in her periphery by Complaining. The man who is in authority over the woman and who is in charge of others, who allows a woman to

cause him to drive others away by constant Complaining about them, has not removed the cause nor faced the reality of the situation nor has he been just or fair in the use of his authority.

### Complaining vs Teachability

The believer who has entered into functions under the stages of **Reversionism** and is residing in the Cosmic Dynaspheres is ungrateful and lacks capacity for life and therefore never learns anything from contemporary history nor from his own adversity in life. People who are unteachable lack **Humility** and are saturated with Arrogance and they constantly are Complaining about everything. As a result of being unteachable, they are unable to learn from history and unable to learn from their own failures. These people, who come from every social area and level, do not respond to any type of authority being interlocked into **Authority Arrogance** and are totally self centered also interlocked into Self Righteous Arrogance. The positive advancing believer must not date nor marry them and should have nothing to do with them and the sooner he breaks away from them the happier his life will be. The believer must be teachable from the inculcation and comprehension of Bible Doctrine, from Divine Discipline resulting from his failures, from history and historical disaster and especially from the problems and adversities of others of which he is aware of or shares in. One must be teachable in order to have capacity in life and receive blessing from God because the timing of God is perfect and He withholds blessing until the believer has the capacity for it. Therefore, the key to life and spiritual growth is that the believer MUST BE TEACHABLE. People who are unteachable always assume that they are smarter and better than everyone else and that the only authority which counts in life is theirs and they are the only ones important in life and are therefore totally saturated with and entangled in the Interlocking System of Arrogance.

### Authority & Complaining in or by Groups

No organization can run without 2 kinds of authority, Leadership Authority & Delegated Authority. Policy makers should never have to administer their own policies and there should be others delegated to do this. In addition those who administer should not ever be policy makers but they can be advisers. When these 2 kinds of authority are blended there is inevitable confusion. This is the reason that in the Local Church the policy maker was set up by God in the Pastor Teacher who teaches the Word of God but also there must be delegated authority to administer the policies of the Local Church. When there is a problem in an organization the individual does not go to the highest authority for a solution but he moves through the chain of command to get to solutions. The Leadership Authority as policy maker should never deal with individual problems below his level of command but turn the Complaints back to the one in charge of administering that level. This principle of chain of command is a very important principle and it represents good leadership and administration. On the part of Complainers and others concerned about problems who are upset, poise, good manners and thoughtfulness must be enforced through the function of the chain of command. The chronic Complainer in any organization falls into 1 of 2 categories. The one who Complains under humorous conditions who is the objective Complainer and may have legitimate concerns and even good suggestions. The one who constantly Complains even under good and humorous situations but who is subjective and will always undermine the organization.

Leadership must always make an issue of these subjective Complainers or remove them because if they are permitted to stay in the organization they can only be allowed to remain if they stay under submission to leadership whether they agree with the policy or not.

When Leadership and authority is approached by a group, this group is, at that point, not under proper authority and therefore is functioning in a state of anarchy. They inevitably approach authority to Complain as a group but operate as individuals under fear and anarchy. The group often has a common Complaint but each Complainer has a personal interest involved and thus is in a state of anarchy as well as [Cowardice](#). The function of leadership, in all cases, does not include self justification nor defense of one's policies to those under his authority unless it is in a court of law. Today people have the idea that when people raise some Complaint about something that authority must go down to their level to have a confrontation with them. This is not the responsibility of authority and it pushes authority into a position of being democratic and this seems wonderful to the Complainers but is contrary to the proper function in leadership. When groups Complain to authority figures and leaders the only confrontation which counts is for the leadership to pick out the ring leaders and wipe them out, completely remove them from the organization. Believers must always move to higher authority and function under the [Faith Rest Drill \(5 stages\)](#) putting all matters in the hands of the Lord and making an issue out of the authority of the Lord not the Complaints of man. Complaining by groups about a lack of something denies the principles of [Logistical Grace](#) support from God. The believer must make an issue of Logistical Grace and the authority of the Lord because for the believer the issue is always the OBLIGATION of the Justice of God in providing Logistical Grace to the Righteousness of God in the believer. The conclusion simply is that as long as the believer is alive then God has a purpose for his life and as long as God has purpose for his life HE IS OBLIGATED TO KEEP THE BELIEVER ALIVE under Logistical Grace with food, shelter, clothing, water, Bible Doctrine and time. This principle applies to individual believers and believers in groups as well.

### [Institutional Arrogance & Complaining](#)

When one receives his wages from an organization, civil government or free enterprise business, he must not ever Complain or run down the company. Labor has no right to strike and when they do it is total immorality and the INDIVIDUAL laborer ONLY has the right to quit any job and then after leaving it, he can Complain as much as he wants about it. Labor NEVER has a right, as a group, to refuse to work and then keep others from filling the jobs they refuse to do. Management has the ONLY right to set wages and policy without any interference from those in labor. Any situation otherwise is Complaining Arrogance.

Every organization must have a structured system which allows those who follow the principles and policies set up to succeed. Where the individual assumes that an organization cannot get along without him he assumes he is carrying the organization rather than vice versa. One manifestation of this is Bitterness from interlocking with Mental Attitude Arrogance the other is excessive Complaining. When one enters and becomes part of any organization he must accept the purpose, policy and authority of the organization. The authority may fail or maltreat him but he must remain loyal to the purpose and policy and under the authority or LEAVE THE



ORGANIZATION. Failure in this area is more than just [Pride](#) but is a complex of entangled Arrogance demonstrated by [Bitterness](#) and chronic Complaining. The reality is that Life is unfair and one is bound to be tested in this area of unfair authority from time to time. The way to handle this unfairness in life is to show these others who are unfair that they have no reason to be unfair because of one's dedication and focus on what one is doing. To whine and mew and gripe and Complain is not the way to handle this testing.

The owner or the management of the vineyard in [Matt 20:11-16](#) made a decision to pay all the laborers, those in the labor union, who bargained for their wages at 6:00am, and also those he hired throughout the day without an agreed wage, the same amount. As a result the labor union men Complained about the men working shorter hours getting the same pay as they who worked a whole day. God rejects any aspect of socialism and promotes FREEDOM in every category as THE KEY to the Angelic Conflict Appeal Trial Resolution. The principle is that the ones who invest the money are the ONLY ONES who have a right to make the policy, but the labor union men were thinking in terms of Mental Attitude Arrogance assuming equality existed because of equality of pay. By trying to dictate policy to management about wages, labor unions are constantly guilty of [Blind Arrogance](#) and by trying to stick their nose into the policy of management and tell them how to run their own business they were guilty of the Arrogance of Complaining interlocking with [Institutional Arrogance](#).

All organizations are composed of authority structures and in that structure each individual involved has an Old Sin Nature with prejudices, standards or lack of them, understanding or lack of it. People invariably look to an organization in which they function and expects a fair deal and Americans are particularly upset if they don't get what they want and think of as a fair deal. There are a myriad of constant Complaints of discrimination today concerning NOT being recognized for talent, intelligence, ability, even race and gender or because of a lack of personal advancement in any business, professional organization, government organization, military or Law Enforcement organization or bureaucracy. These Complaints represent entanglement in the Interlocking System of Arrogance with entrance through Institutional Arrogance. When people Complain about the unfairness they perceive around them and directed toward them, it becomes a way of life and this way of thinking as a way of life causes a loss of the ability to correctly orient to life. This is especially true of believers, who have something great to orient to, who lose the cognizance of the principle that GOD CANNOT BE UNFAIR TO THEM because it is incompatible with his perfect essence and character. The believer must always recognize that GOD can only be totally fair and as long as God is fair what the rest of the world does is inconsequential and it should not deter his motivation nor inspire his involvement in the Interlocking System of Arrogance from Institutional Arrogance. In the United States of America there is a snare for both believers and unbelievers because this nation's spiritual heritage is related to the [Laws of Divine Establishment](#), [Divine Institutions](#), Bible Doctrine and Client Nation principles of function and the United States has continually violated all of these. Thus, in the United States of America, prosperity has become a trap both historically and spiritually. Historically it has been a great trap because the people have become soft from prosperity to the extent that they think in terms of saving prosperity even if it means losing a war and freedom. This is what occurred in the wars in Korea, Vietnam and

the Middle East where the people said, especially during the Vietnam War, “as long as I am safe let them die over there but don’t extend the war so that we might be bombed and hurt and lose our prosperity and security over here”. ([Ps 69:22-23](#), [Ps 35:8](#))

One very important thing regarding executive operations in an organization is to NEVER allow one to whom authority is delegated in order to run others, to bully those people under him because he is [Jealous](#), [Prideful](#) or [Petty](#). No person can be a good executive or have any authority over others without objectivity of soul. Many people are unjustly fired from a job, not because they fail to do the job, but because they did not cater to some intermediate supervisor between them and the executive boss, like the department supervisor. This is the person on the job, doing a good job, but who is under an immediate supervisor who cannot handle his authority thus the person is persecuted and becomes the object of Complaints by the supervisor to the executive, who is a complete fool if he cannot balance the Complaints with reality. An executive must learn whether the person being Complained about is doing a good job or not and if he is doing a good job he should be kept on the job and not fired. In addition, people in authority have no right to Complain about those under them and only have the right to fire them and replace them.

### [Complaining & The Military and Law Enforcement](#)

As citizens of the United States every individual citizen has a right to Complain about the government but a soldier in any service has no right to Complain about the situation in the military or the government. To Complain about any administration no matter how bad, as a soldier, is ethically invalid. No professional soldier must ever concern himself with politics and how disastrous these things are to the military. Along with Law Enforcement officers, Professional soldiers have a most difficult time in historical disaster. This also applies to anyone under any authority and if one, in any situation, wants to Complain about his higher authority then he must first resign his position, whether he is in a corporation, military organization, Law Enforcement organization or Local Church. However, citizens of the United States of America DO NOT have the right to attempt to overthrow by violence or enter into conspiracy to destroy the government. This also applies to the spiritual realm and Local Church functions. It is easy to criticize authority until one is placed into that same position of authority and is required to do perform to an effective level in that position. People who criticize authority are arrogant and usually involved in [Egotistical Arrogance](#) and their criticism makes them feel important when in fact they could not do any better, usually not even as good a job, in the same situation. Attitudes toward authority in the United States of America since the 1960s has been drawing very close to anarchy. The people generally fail to realize that without authority there can be NO FREEDOM and many pleasures or other personal interests are impossible without some authority to control and regulate them. Being critical provides a level of pseudo self importance and results in contributing to one’s own self destruction and catastrophe. When it comes to being disoriented to authority, this results in terrible personal and national discipline and is clearly demonstrated by the Irish constantly killing each other over [Religion](#). Today Americans are far worse than the Irish and want the benefits of freedom but not the responsibilities nor the controlling authority.

### Professionalism vs Complaining

Every professional, especially the soldier or Law Enforcement officer must do his job, though he may be under paid, to the best level he can, and if he is a believer as unto or for the Lord. The most important factor to the professional believer must be the knowledge in his own soul that he has done a fantastic job whether it is recognized by others or not, which to him should be of no consequence. However, often when a person does a great job and sees others getting great recognition for doing a much poorer job, it is very tempting to Complain and demand higher recognition. The fact is that the worst thing one can do professionally is to Complain and demand recognition and this is in truth total lack of professional ethics. For the believer with maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul he will know he did the job and did it right and well and that is all that should count for him.

Everyone invariably faces disappointment over the subject of being slighted or unrecognized for his accomplishments or hard work. This has and will continue to occur in athletics, academics, social life, love life, and in all professions. There are many ways for the believer to become disappointed and frustrated in life but there is no excuse for succumbing to them and falling into Self Pity and Complaining about it. When the believer lacks Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul he will be strongly tempted to Complain about the lack of recognition for his efforts and accomplishments. This is unprofessional as far as living the Christian Way of Life is concerned and shows a disorientation to and lack of capacity for life. The believer must remember, *this is the devil's world and life will always be unfair to him as a Christian*, but God will always be fair and he must always remember, “greater is he who is in you (The Lord Jesus, The Christ) than he who is in the world”, the ruler of the world, Satan. It is incumbent on every believer to throw off and reject instantly the idea that he has been overlooked and is not getting credit or is being unfairly treated in some way without recognition. Every individual has ideas about what his life should be like and he WILL live to have at least one experience where he will see someone, who is totally undeserving, take credit for what he has done. With the Metabolized Bible Doctrine the believer accumulates in his soul he has more than enough compensation for all that he does in this life. God has not intended for the believer to shed one tear or utter even one word of Complaint or to run around and act as a readjustment bureau and correct these injustices.

### Complaining & Marriage

Marriages are destroyed by Bitterness and love is thus replaced by hatred so that divorces are the function of bitterness and bitterness is motivated from the influence of Evil and is one of the greatest sins of Arrogance. Bitterness is what caused Satan to ask for an appeal trial which God graciously granted. This is what occurs when the wife is disappointed with the husband OR when the husband is disappointed with the Wife. This often beings in marriage after varying times, 1 hour, 1 day, 1 month or even years after the marriage begins. It is relatively easy to hide, except the bitter one always gossips about the one they are bitter about. This starts with whining or Complaining and leads to Anger which is irrational and this leads to wrath and ultimately Hatred. Slander is the logical result here and leads to malice and all

sorts of attempts to hurt the other. The believer must try to discover the soul of the person he intends to marry, however, this is not always possible or his attempts may be unsuccessful. The key is that one should be around the intended spouse **long enough** so that he will never have to kick himself and say “UGH I went into this blindly” or “I made a terrible mistake”, because this is a huge sign of character weakness. For a man to say he was fooled or deceived by his intended spouse, and he may have been, is weakness and if he is a real man with honor and **Integrity**, he will just carry on in the marriage. The man should never whine about his mistakes with regard to his wife and how he has messed things up by marrying, but he must just carry on and forget it.

When a man marries he must be married to a woman who understands the issue of authority in the marriage and in other areas of life and does not whine or Complain about not seeing her husband because he is busy in his occupation or profession. Married women must be very careful about other people who run down their husbands especially if they started the criticism themselves. Husbands, as male monsters, are very often the basis for legitimate Complaints but this notwithstanding, Complaining about them should never be engaged in by a wife nor allowed to begin by others in her periphery. The more authority the husband has in life the less the wife will see him and the more she must love and support him in every way. Her being involved in the Interlocking System of Arrogance will inevitably destroy her family. When a man has authority and is married the woman shares the authority in terms of understanding his responsibilities and duty. Any woman married to a professional soldier or law enforcement person must never Complain or whine about how much attention she is not getting. When a soldier is in combat his job is to function tactically or logistically and he must do his job without distraction from a whining, Complaining woman at home. One major problem perceived in the military today is the ability to instantly communicate with the wife by means of the technology available to the service man and this should be prohibited totally. The woman can be the most wonderful and most inspiring thing but must always be secondary to duty. If the woman is placed before duty there is no integrity in the man and the relationship will not last. The woman who is honorable and truly loves the man understands this principle. This is the woman who knows that second place is hers and that is the best she can have and she does not whine or Complain about it. The woman who cannot take second place to duty always winds up interlocking with **Psychopathic Arrogance**. The woman who does not take second place to her husbands business or profession is a whining mewing bitch. The one thing which most defeminizes the woman is nagging, whining, mewing and Complaining about minor things she considers inconvenient. The woman should not ever be permitted to get her way with a man by nagging Complaints and if she does she has destroyed his Integrity therefore, a man of integrity and honor will never succumb to nagging no matter how long it lasts. The woman must occupy her time so as not to be a burdensome whiner and Complainer all the time. Class and Character in a woman is a principle of feminine integrity and this great character of soul provides **Flexibility** for a variety of individual or collective disasters and gives the flexibility to endure and over come these disasters. However, the greatest distortion of these principles is when the WIFE is in the military and the husband is to remain at home, even at times with the children. THIS is truly ludicrous since the reason for war and fighting in war is to protect the nation and the loved one's left behind who would be

vulnerable to conquest and destruction by the enemy.

### Complaining & Academics

In the United States of America the system of academics is ineffective and destructive not just because the content today is bad but more so because of the POOR use or complete LACK of authority, discipline and respect in the classrooms. This has resulted because of the total permissiveness required from the teachers who must allow children to express themselves in a class. One does not and cannot ever learn anything by expressing oneself but ONLY by concentrating and listening to what is being taught. The idea that requiring strict discipline, respect and concentration in a classroom setting will repress personalities, do damage to a child and bring on subjectivity by not allowing freedom of expression, is a complete divorcement from reality. The attitude of the nation in this regard has been distorted for a very long time so that people now have Personal Opinions about everything but NO Scale of Values or Frame of Reference upon which to base those opinions. Administrators of schools at every level from preschool through post doctoral higher education must be strong and back the teachers, who in fact should be carefully chosen based on their adherence to professional principles, by requiring and enforcing discipline in the classrooms. The teachers must be strict and intense in their presentations and evaluations and when a student Complains about something in a class then he should be thrown out. The one weakness of this position is that it REQUIRES Integrity on the part of the teachers, which many times is lacking in that profession today. However, this does not give credence to allowing rampant Complaining about the strictness or intensive requirements of a class at any level of education.

Life is a system of authority and the first authority one encounters occurs when he uses his volitional contrary to the principles of life. The child is warned NOT TO TOUCH A HOT STOVE because the parent in authority knows it is HOT and that it will burn the child. When the child decides to do what he damned well pleases and touches it and gets burned he then cries for momma to make it stop hurting. However, she should instead make his gluteus maximus hurt MORE to emphasize the principle of authority. The fact is that when momma burns his butt and then bandages his burned finger, junior then learns from this that LIFE is more fun when he follows the rules whether he agrees with them or NOT. Schools, where the teachers are very tough, result in the child being forced to focus his attention and concentration on the subjects and will bring a better understanding of Authority and Responsibility to the student. When the child goes home and Complains to Momma about the teachers being mean and tough on him and then momma either tries to get the teacher removed or moves her poor abused child to another school, this causes this child to suffer for his whole lifetime. The child will suffer because the principles of discipline in the school are far more important than the academics in the school. The point is that a student at any level must recognize the authority of the teacher BEFORE he can learn anything, and this applies to and extends through his entire lifetime and Complaining about the requirements in ANY CLASSROOM AT ANY LEVEL IN LIFE destroys this principle.

### Complaining & The Local Church

The believer MUST never concentrate on who the Pastor Teacher is or what he is like because



this requires MORE than just listening to and learning Bible Doctrine. The believer often will find real friends in the Local Church and the more of these he has the greater the possibility that when they become offended by the Pastor Teacher or his message they will pass this on to him with their Complaints. People have incorrect ideas concerning Local Church administration and the Pastor Teacher must correct these and at times must do so very vigorously. Therefore, if these incorrect people happen to be one's friends they may decide to wander off from the Local Church where they can get correct Bible Doctrine and will Complain to the positive believer about the Bible Doctrine and malign or run down the Pastor Teacher. At that point the positive believer must remember and concentrate on the Authority of the Pastor Teacher which is derived from the accuracy of the Bible Doctrine he teaches and NOT the complaints of his friends. If a friend leaves the properly functioning Local Church then the positive believer will have to decide whether to follow them or maintain spiritual growth under the Pastor Teacher who presents the accurate Absolute Truth of Bible Doctrine. This test is spiritual growth vs family, friends, loved ones and this test is inevitable for every positive believer. He must therefore be able to concentrate when Bible Doctrine is taught but also when there is some Complaining conspiracy trying to distract him from Bible Doctrine in his Local Church. The command to the positive believer is to make up his mind to follow the one over him in the Spiritual Life NOT those who would distract him from spiritual growth with their Complaining. Once a believer finds a Pastor Teacher under whose teaching he can grow to maturity, one who is his right Pastor Teacher, this one will have spiritual authority over him for his entire life. This authority will persist until something removes that pastor from this life or from the believer's geographic vicinity so that it becomes impossible for him to be taught by them any longer. The command for the positive believer is to STICK WITH BIBLE DOCTRINE even when his Complaining friends GO. The point is clear that Bible Doctrine is vastly more important than any other consideration in life and it is the only way for the believer to glorify and please God in life as a result of having maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in his Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.

### Cowardice & Complaining

Cowardice is defined as the inability to think under pressure. Courage, therefore, is the ability to continue thinking under pressure and to function under pressure DESPITE fear. Therefore, as soon as things go wrong in life and pressures arise, if one is a coward he will stop thinking. While he cannot think under pressure he can still function based on Emotion and is thus motivated by Bitterness and Self Pity Arrogance to Complain. Complaining is therefore a complete lack of thought under pressure. For the believer, a [Faith Rest Drill \(5 stages\)](#) malfunction results in human reaction to pressures in life with [Mental Attitude Arrogance](#) and Sinning. Therefore, all Faith Rest Drill (5 stages) malfunctions are inconsistent, irrational and unreasonable being motivated by Mental Attitude Sins such as Bitterness, Vindictiveness, Implacability, Selfcenteredness or Self Pity. Just as the Jews Complained about Moses during the Exodus, rejecting his authority, thereby engaging in malfunctions of the Faith Rest Drill (5 stages) this includes rejection of authority such as:

- ✧ Police authority when stopped in traffic
- ✧ Pastoral authority when doctrine is presented
- ✧ Commanding officer authority when one is full of Self Pity Arrogance

- Teacher or Professor authority when one fails in a classroom setting

Authority is thereby rejected when people fail under pressure which failure results from some FEAR which is absence of normal rational thought. Mental Attitude Sins result in inconsistent and erroneous thinking. The Jews rejected Moses authority on the one hand and made demands on him inconsistent with their rejection on the other, demanding, as leader, that he must give them water. The fact was that Moses, a man, had no special power to provide water at any time. [Reversionists](#), as illustrated by these Exodus Jews, are always inconsistent in their thinking and childish as well and like a child may come and ask that one make it stop hurting. Pressure moves them away from reverse concentration in the 2<sup>nd</sup> stage of the Faith Rest Drill (5 stages) and they are not even able to claim any promises from God. One of the greatest problems in having any level of authority is being the subject of so much irrationality from those under one's authority. When in authority the leader should never explain himself for any reason and the ones under his authority should simply take his instructions and do their job while he keeps thinking but he should never try to explain why he did things the way he did. Failure of the believer to think under pressure produces [Human Viewpoint](#) and Cowardice with a lack of application of principles and reverse concentration as a result of a complete lack of organized rational thought. When people become cowards under pressure there is a total lack of discipline and this can be observed in the Ancient Jews in the Exodus and the People of the United States of America today. ([Ex 17:2](#))

### [Complaining related to Personal Opinion](#)

The believer's Personal Opinion about the one who has authority over him is inconsequential and he often Complains about his job because he has no respect for authority, no understanding of life, no capacity for life and is not functioning under [Personal Love for God](#). In Arrogance one may have an idiotic idea that someone has it easier than he does but this is not ever true because everyone has problems in every field of life and every field has IDIOTS at the top causing these problems. The arrogant individual thinks that how he feels about a boss is more important than any thing in life and if he does not like the boss then the boss should be removed and replaced with and a nicer boss. Many people today are ready to do what the communists demand but will call it some other named ideology because they have lost track of what freedom, life and capacity for life is about. This becomes obvious when they Complain about things which they have no business Complaining about. When they are inefficient on the job, the boss chews them out and then they Complain that he is unfair. A woman marries some guy and loses respect for him and then Complains about him, however, the real solution is for her to SHUT UP instead of spreading filth about him all around her periphery. In marriage no matter how much a man is a jackass he is still the authority in the marriage and when his wife Complains about him to others and undercuts him and tries to destroy him, this undercuts his authority and relegates the woman to the level of a complete jackass and a failure. In families, permissiveness has ruined children and they totally lack discipline and lack respect for authority. These are children who Complain about parents, athletes who Complains about the coach, and those who, on the job as they grow up, Complain about their supervisor. The believer is NEVER to succumb to any temptation to undercut any type of authority and if in his opinion his job is bad and he cannot stand it or his boss, he is to just leave and not

Complain about the authority or the person wielding it.

### Complaining & Revolution

Any system of ratings of one person or group by another is always unfair with prejudice inserted to some degree no matter how fair people may try to be. The world is thus filled with unfairness and because of this there is action and reaction against it and a great state of confusion so that people forget what causes the unfairness but still react against it. This is revolution and it becomes insanity no matter what the initial Complaint may have been so that the usurpation of power always becomes the real objective. Whatever they may be, the grievances always get lost in the shuffle because people always use grievances to gain power whether they are legitimate grievances or not. There will always be grievances until the millennium just like the Complaining during the gas rationing in the 70's where this put power in the hands of bureaucracies and gave scum in society the same right to gasoline as the working man. People always assume that because they have an apparently legitimate grievance they also have a legitimate cause but they inevitably fail to realize in their naivete that some smart person will invariably come along and exploit them and their Self Righteousness just to gain power. This is why the common people start Revolutions but they never control the revolution because they think only in terms of adjustment of grievances while the exploiters of those in the revolutionary middle class are only thinking in terms of power and taking it away from those who have it. To takeover a nation one simply has to pull together all the people and their grievances and build up their Self Righteousness and in a Machiavellian way organize a system to combine all these people and then turn their grievances into a takeover of the nation by this exploitation.

People with grievances, Complaints or personal needs are complimented and flattered by the pseudo interest of conspirators and revolutionists, not realizing that they are being used and exploited for the unlawful functions of Conspiracy and Revolution. These are the malcontent who are in fact a fertile field for revolution. It is only the one who functions under Humility who can avoid being exploited by the Ambitious. Humility and avoidance of involvement in the Interlocking System of Arrogance is the key to circumventing being exploited by others and drawn into conspiracy and revolution. The believer must never allow himself to get sucked into organizations which are revolutionary in order to try to right wrongs because this will inevitably simply intensify the wrongs. Most revolutions are started by the "MORAL" middle class Complaining and demanding a redress of their grievances. This is what resulted when Louis XIV removed the Huguenots from France so that during the reign of Louis XVI the new middle class had major grievances and as a result revolted. There was one of the most concentrated expressions of EVIL of all time in the resulting Reign of Terror. This was ended by Napoleon and a battery of french artillery and under his genius came the Code Napoleon, the French Code of Law, which is still in use in France today. This also occurred in the Middle Class in Russia and the result was the revolution of 1917 in Russia where 100,000 communists took control of MILLIONS of Russian citizens. This also occurred in India and in 1947 when the British gave India their independence MILLIONS were killed within a few hours and millions more died later as a result. Thousands of blacks were slaughtered by the Watusi in Africa repeatedly in a reign of terror because there was NO middle class. The middle class

is the backbone of the nation and if the middle class Complains too much the scum pick this up and have used it time and time again in Human History for revolution.

No matter how great the government may be there will always be those who are discontent even with perfect government and when government is bad smart people are discontent but when government is good and people are discontent they are generally the stupid people. There are always going to be malcontents who reject the authority of human government. If government is excellent and authority is properly administering it then it is the Reversionists saturated with Evil who object to it and there are always [Reversionists](#) in any land or group thus always someone who will always Complain. This is the purpose for the existence of discipline, policy and authority from MARRIAGE to the most complex corporation in free enterprise and in government as well, without regard to its form, in the historical entity called a nation. The reference in [Ps 69](#) is referring to reversionistic believers and unbelievers who plotted revolution against David and it refers to the pleasant things in life such as the routine things and food on the table etc., thus it refers to a secure life that the Reversionists seek to gain from revolution. This is an Imprecatory prayer from David demanding with regard to these reversionists that their EVIL BE PUNISHED and asking God that when they are in prosperity it would become a trap to them.

In a properly functioning society the middle class must be responsible to government AND GOVERNMENT must remain responsible to the PEOPLE. As is painfully obvious in the United States of America today that this has not been occurring in either direction. When the middle class becomes greedy and engages in functions within the Interlocking System of Arrogance and when believers enter the Interlocking System of Arrogance and detonate their grenade of Arrogance the nation begins a decline which, without correction, inevitably leads to total destruction. This is contributed to by the fragmented members of society electing to government positions fragmented individuals saturated with Arrogance who profess to want to correct all the Complaints the people have voiced. This is why the United States of America in the 1980s was into the 3<sup>rd</sup> cycle of Divine Discipline and today in this first ¼ of the 21<sup>st</sup> century is at the end of the 4<sup>th</sup> cycle or has already entered into the early, unrecoverable, 5<sup>th</sup> cycle of Divine Discipline with the inevitable destruction of this nation.

### **National Complaining – The United States of America**

Welfare and socialism are two of the worst forms of slavery which can ever exist in the history of mankind and in this first quarter of the 21<sup>st</sup> century the people in the United States of America are totally slaves to the federal government. The American forefathers founded a system whereby the states would have greater authority than the federal government under the principles of states rights in order to prevent centralized tyranny. The idea was to keep the federal government small so there would be little government and big people and this is totally gone today because the people in American society have been marking time for quite a few generations. In the United States of America today law is used primarily to correct social problems and cater to whichever 1% group Complains the loudest. The concepts and principles of the importance of self determination and taking responsibility for one's decisions has been lost on the people in this nation. The people in the United States of America could learn from

history if they would simply stop being so subjective and open their eyes to reality but in fact they will and are not.

In order to be able to handle any national or historical disaster believers must face and pass the simple and easy testing of life first. Malcontent is always inevitably verbalized and as the saying goes so it is now in the United States of America, “the wheel which squeaks the loudest gets the grease”. It is always the Arrogance of those who are malcontent who make the greatest noise and one of the greatest difficulties in any category of leadership is to NOT succumb to the NOISE from the malcontented people. The people who do the Complaining are most often a very small group, they are called the 1%, and they want policy changes to be made in order to solve the problems or pressures perceived by this 1%. This is how the American government now functions and has for many decades and the legislators now make law and policy to appease the stupidity of the 1% of the people and their discontent. A solid rule in life is to ALWAYS beware of chronic Complainers because they are divorced from and disoriented to life and generally totally ignorant of the principles of Grace. They function completely under [Legalism](#) and Self Righteous Arrogance and their verbalized Complaining becomes louder as their rebellion increases in relationship to the level of hidden Arrogance in their Stream of Consciousness of the Soul. Since Arrogance is an interlocking system of function in the Cosmic Dynaspheres under the principles of EVIL, any entrance into and function under it will motivate many other aspects of Arrogance such as:

- ✧ Self Pity
- ✧ Resistance to authority
- ✧ Vindictiveness
- ✧ Implacability
- ✧ Rebellion
- ✧ even the Violence of Revenge

The reality is that NO nation can succeed in or overcome disaster unless there is great motivation in the majority of the people. Majority motivation in the correct direction only comes through passing testing in both adversity and prosperity. However, people cannot ever be motivated in mass by being subject to soft training and preparation. This is the biggest problem with military training in the United States of America since the 1960's and also in the educational system of this country. When training in any area of life is not tough enough and people can Complain to their administrators or superior officers about unfairness and their mamma's Complain to their senators, representatives or academic leaders, then there is no real motivation and no proper Mental Attitude directed toward success and advancement in life. To prepare for disaster one MUST have the SIMULATED disasters of tough training or the intensity of examination problems to solve in academic situations to prepare for solving problems in the reality of life.

### **Complaining & Hypersensitivity**

A person involved in Arrogance who is [Hypersensitive](#) has many feelers out in his periphery toward the people around him and knows when people do not like him. People not involved in Arrogance always avoid hypersensitive people because nothing ever pleases these people in



any way. Hypersensitive people think only about themselves and have no capacity for love or life and cannot be pleased. They become arrogant and hypersensitive and function by either giving others the silent treatment, saying nothing when addressed or always Complaining about every thing in their life. ([Ps 38:4](#))

In the United States of America today there are no statues of idols nor places for indulging in phallic idolatry but this promiscuous society is involved in a different kind of Idolatry. Idolatry and Fornication always results in mass destruction of capacity for Category I Love, [Personal Love for God](#). When this occurs in the people of a nation, they will inevitably come into contact with God and will be smashed under the 5<sup>th</sup> cycle of Divine Discipline like the Jews in 586 BC. When they come into contact with their Right Man or Right Woman they will also be smashed in category II Love, romance or marriage. This results in it being a triple SMASH because these believers have lost their Category I Love for God and Category II Love in Romance and now they cannot keep their Category III Love in friendships when all they do is Complain about all their troubles. This brittleness of soul is vulnerability and [Hypersensitivity](#) and results in the disintegration of a society. When there are a maximum number of brittle people who demonstrate their brittleness in contact with God, Right Man or Right Woman, and with Friends as hypersensitivity this inevitably results in brittleness transferring from parents to children and vice versa, and toward all contacts and relationships in life and as a result they become totally disoriented to life.

### **Complaining & Emotional Revolt of the Soul**

Jeremiah recognized the fairness and Justice of God and still he Complained to God. This is typical of a believer temporarily disoriented with regard to Grace. It is typical of anyone who is living according to Bible Doctrine and suddenly sees someone who is everything he knows he should not be, therefore classified as “wicked”, apparently having a great time and apparently having great prosperity in his life. These people are, in fact, “apparently” living in happiness but they will die by the sword and they are part of a lawless generation rejecting freedom and the basis for maintaining freedom via the military so that they will inevitably be gruesomely destroyed. In the case of Jeremiah at one point in his life, he had a Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of his Soul filled with Maximum Bible Doctrine, so that his emotion responded to that with capacity for temporal and spiritual life and he operated under the happiness spectrum although he lacked tranquility in his life. His Right Woman, as a conspirator, was bitter, [Jealous](#), vindictive and operating under LUST and Lasciviousness trying to find a substitute for Jeremiah and was most likely convinced that trying to kill Jeremiah was Good. She, being under [Emotional Revolt of the Soul](#), was apparently having a great time in life. Jeremiah, at one point, had become disoriented and most likely his Old Sin Nature was in control at that time. Jeremiah could not reconcile the apparent or pseudo happiness of his conspirators and the fairness of God. The question for him and for every believer is “Why does God let someone whom the believer may consider wrong, wicked or evil, have any level of Happiness”? It is apparent at this point in his life that Jeremiah was very disoriented with regard to the Essence of God and its function toward him, and this is the case for any believer who whines and Complains to God about ANYTHING. Jeremiah said to GOD that he WOULD NOT talk about JUSTICE and JUDGMENTS because he does not think God was handling things

properly. Jeremiah had perfectly understood the Essence of God and had it in the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of his Soul from his consistent Perception, Cognition, Inculcation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine under the [Grace Apparatus for Perception](#) existing at that time. He brought the Essence of God doctrine into his memory center and knew it but at the same time he was disoriented temporarily under Emotional Revolt of the Soul because of his involvement in Self Righteous Arrogance. From his emotion, which lacked knowledge, power, bible doctrine and character, he observed the experiences of the conspirators, who appeared to be happy, and his emotion could not cope with this. His Emotional Revolt of the Soul had blocked the APPLICATION of the doctrine which he in fact KNEW and had Metabolized. Jeremiah's emotion, like all emotion in man, was designed to respond to the content of the mentality of the soul, especially the doctrine concerning the Essence of God, but he was not, and he was in fact Complaining about how the Essence of God was handling the wicked conspirators against him.

This is a form of Emotional Revolt of the Soul which is temporary in believers which originates from the Old Sin Nature's influence on the soul. It comes when the believer gets his focus totally on people to the exclusion of Bible Doctrine and from the recognition of the fact that very often what believers do and what doctrine says are 2 totally different things. God will not bend his character to satisfy the [Revenge](#) of Jeremiah or any believer in this status. Every believer who knows Bible Doctrine will see people and their functions and attitudes and recognize that these people and Bible Doctrine do not align and then they may get upset. The believer is not to presume to Complain to God about these people but he is supposed to stick with and focus on Bible Doctrine and if needed say "To Hell" with these people. The [Love for God](#) is the greater issue than loving or being concerned about people and when these get into conflict, Love for God must be first priority which is only able to be realized through maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul. The believer often forgets a very basic lesson when he lets his focus turn to people, God will always do things HIS way and this is always infinitely better than the believer's way. God's way is the best way but it requires [Grace Orientation](#) to understand it and orient to it. At the beginning of chapter 12 Jeremiah is the one who is miserable because no one can be in temporary or permanent Emotional Revolt of the Soul and not be miserable and he is now out from under a Grace Orientated perspective. IF God had clobbered all Jeremiah's conspirators right then, TODAY God would not have his character intact and believers could not depend on his faithfulness, justice, righteousness or LOVE. However, the character or Essence of God is perfect and therefore He cannot cater to whimsical, disoriented ideas from mankind and He will handle all injustice and pressure in the life of the believer at the RIGHT TIME and in the RIGHT WAY. ([Jer 11:22](#))

When the believer is under temporary or permanent Emotional Revolt of the Soul NO BIBLE DOCTRINE can ever be correctly applied. The fact is that God will never change His character because of any desire of man and He is always fair and just and has great love for all believers and protects his love by NOT acquiescing to their desires. The fact that the Character and Essence of God always remains intact and inviolate means His Integrity and His Love remain intact and this is part of the believer's Eternal Security. The fact is that God does not change

EVEN when the believer sins and fails miserably. The 2 quick verses of [Jer 12:1-2](#) shows what occurs when a believer gets his focus on people and off of God and Bible Doctrine and how it results in a temporary Emotional Revolt of the Soul.

### **Complaining vs Christian FOCUS**

Faith in people as an object often results in [Disappointment or Disillusion](#) and the fact is that NO ONE has any right to be disillusioned with people when they INDIVIDUALLY CHOOSE the object of their faith or trust. The believer has no right to be disappointed or disillusioned when he puts his trust in another person and then is let down by them. If the believer as the subject believes and trusts in some other person and they let him down HE MUST BLAME HIMSELF for it was HE who did the trusting. He cannot run around and weep and wail and Complain about being let down for this is [BLIND Arrogance](#) and making an issue of self. For the believer part of [Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God](#) is to take responsibility for one's own believings.

The believer with maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul is not disturbed by the Evil saturated personalities in current contemporary history. Those in control of various areas of government who are totally under the influence of Evil simply reflect the volition and thinking of the people they represent. Personal disturbance as a result of aberrant functions of those in control on a local, national or international level is simply a distraction to the learning and application of Bible Doctrine. Personal disturbance results in malfunction of the [Faith Rest Drill \(5 stages\)](#) and the whining and Complaining of [Human Viewpoint](#) thinking as a result of involvement within the Interlocking System of Arrogance, becoming vulnerable to [Reversionism](#) and everything which hinders glorification of the Lord.

Satan has a fantastic strategy which works very well with believers, it is a “focus strategy”. He constantly tries through the Cosmic Dynaspheres to get the believer to turn his focus from God, Bible Doctrine and GRACE onto People and Things. The believer must not focus on people ([Jer 17:5](#)) because when he puts his trust in man when it should be in God he has failed and the plan and policy of Satan has succeeded. When a person disappoints the believer and lets him down by hurting or antagonizing him, he must put all these things into the hands of the Lord and focus on Him. The believer must relate Bible Doctrine to his personal situations and personal failures. However, he is not to become a whiner or Complainer, feeling sorry for himself. He must not focus on self with [Self Pity](#) because relating to life and both friends and enemies with Self Pity is NOT the proper mechanism for the believer growing in the Spiritual Life. Therefore to the extent that the believer spends time in Self Pity, to that extent Satan succeeds in his tactical victory.

### **Complaining & Environment**

Arrogant people always make an issue of their environment always and invariably Complain about it. The Lord Jesus, The Christ is said to have been afflicted, which in fact meant that he received affliction instead of Justice when he did not earn nor deserve this treatment because he was not a criminal. For many different reasons the 6 trials which Jesus was put

through were unfair, unjust and not even legal yet he did not one time Complain about his situation. The silence of the humanity of The Lord Jesus, The Christ during his trials is very interesting in that when Jesus returns to the earth at the 2<sup>nd</sup> advent, his spoken words kill literally millions of people. ([Rev 19:13-15](#)) Others caused Jesus to be taken to the cross, he did not go himself. His being led to the cross is demonstrated by the analogy of the constant offerings of animals being led to the sacrificial altar in the Old Testament Scripture times. The Lord Jesus, The Christ IS the Lamb of God who takes away the sins of the world. During the entire time of Jesus being railroaded to the cross, not once did he Complain. Jesus did not resist and did not Complain but provided the mechanism by which every believer in all of human history was and is able to make Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God. Therefore, what in the life of any believer is there that he can Complain about?

### Complaining vs Happiness

The believer can do without 3 things in life with regard to being happy:

- ✧ Genius Mentality – Smart people are no more happy than dumb people
- ✧ Physical Beauty – Beautiful people are no more happy than people who lack physical beauty.
- ✧ Perfect or Improved Environment – Weather, living conditions or economic status do not bring happiness.

However, people constantly associate Happiness with these things when in fact they are the least important things in life with regard to happiness. These 3 factors cannot bring happiness to those who have them and cannot cause those who lack them to be unhappy. Having any or all of these things in abundance very often brings anxiety and selfcenteredness and overt Complaining. The reality is that true Happiness is the Absence of involvement in the Cosmic Dynaspheres especially the Interlocking System of Arrogance. Those without these 3 factors often think that if they can acquire even one of them that this will make them happy. In addition being minus any of these things often causes that person to assume that they have been neglected or abused in life. When the believer who lacks these things becomes entangled into the Interlocking System of Arrogance he merges himself into the masses of the whiners, Complainers and criers, so that by this merging, he becomes perpetually miserable and inflammatory material for use by demagogues in gaining or taking power. Degeneracy in any society is a manifestation of the fact that people are unhappy particularly from being entangled in the Interlocking System of Arrogance and this obvious degeneracy advertises their great unhappiness. The truly great society, based on the Absolute Truths of Bible Doctrine, the Laws of Divine Establishment and the Divine Institutions and which receives maximum influence from the pivot of mature believers, is the one which breaks down the barriers between the rich and poor, happiness and unhappiness. As a result the believer who reaches Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and has developed the 9<sup>th</sup> Problem Solving Device of Sharing the Happiness of God, the top floor of the Edification Complex of the Soul. This results in, whether he is smart or dumb, beautiful or unattractive, wealthy or poor, his happiness being complete so that

there is no exchange of or involvement with envy at any point. Stability in a society is based on happiness from Absolute Truth and is a state of mind not social, financial nor environmental status. Human beings are not born happy just as they are NOT born free. Being born helpless guarantees that the infant will have a total lack of freedom being under the authority of his parents. In addition infants are born totally ignorant and must depend on others simply to sustain their life. Whether one is happy or not depends on his developed vocabulary and ability to think, read and possibly even write. Therefore, happiness is acquired with or without any of the accouterments of life as a result of the accumulation of Absolute Truth which is to saturate the human soul.

### **Infectious Complaining**

Like the Exodus Jews at Kadesh Barnea who were tested first 1 year after leaving Egypt with a lack of water, the new 2<sup>nd</sup> generation of Jews, who were under 20 years old at the time of the first test, were tested just as the first generation was and they also completely failed the test of their ability to use the **Faith Rest Drill** (5 stages) functions. Instead of claiming the promises of God and using the Faith Rest Drill (5 stages) thus having perfect peace from faith they Complained and revolted against Moses and Aaron AGAIN. These people were children or not even born when the Jews left Egypt, yet they spoke of Egypt just like their parents did. They got the description of Egypt and their Complaining attitudes from what their parents told them in the desert yet their parents DIED in the desert while Complaining constantly. The Complaints of the parents were infectious into the children. They got all their dissatisfaction about their situations and called the desert an EVIL place because of their parents attitudes and they did not consider that this was the place the Lord wanted them to be, therefore, it could not be an EVIL place. This is the believer who looks at life from the Human Viewpoint. They, like the Jews, seek Egypt as a wonderful place which most of those who were Complaining had never been to and like them, the believer today often does not realize the pressures involved in the situations he desires. Children often acquire or develop or inherit characteristics from their parents and learn to Complain in their homes during their upbringing and therefore they have the seeds of failure before they ever know any differently and they often take defeatism directly from their parents. Therefore, it is the parents who have the first opportunity of training their children in spiritual things and clarifying Bible Doctrine OR of making whiners and Complainers out of their children. (**Num 20:2-4**)

In a Local Church Complaining is terribly infectious and if one is to avoid the Interlocking System of Arrogance he must accept the authority of both Bible Doctrine and the Pastor Teacher and listen during the teaching and respect the process but it is his sole decision whether to accept it or not. If one cannot respect the teaching of a Pastor Teacher he must leave that Local Church quietly without Complaint or degradation of the church or the Pastor Teacher. Complaining to others about a Pastor Teacher will undermine his authority and cause others to reject his teaching thereby destroying their Spiritual Life and it will bring the most intensive Divine Discipline to the Complainer.



### Character of God vs Complaining Believers

For 40 years the Jews had addressed God and Moses with Complaining, unbelief and dissatisfaction with every level of divine provision thus, in effect, they constantly maligned God. In 40 years of concentrated carnality and sinfulness GOD WAS ALWAYS FAITHFUL TO ISRAEL. God was constantly faithful to these Jews and God never let go of the Jews even one time and the fact that He did not destroy or eliminate them completely emphasizes the PRINCIPLE OF GRACE and the Character of God. This is Divine Faithfulness in the FACE of human faithlessness. This remains true today and He never leaves, deserts or eternally curses believers but He often will and does provide Divine Discipline, to a very severe level, to try to motivate the believer to return to his Plan. While the 2<sup>nd</sup> Generation Jews were Complaining about everything God provided for them, they did not even know that a very strange gentile believer looked down upon their camp from 3 different mountains and tried to curse them. They could not know this because of their preoccupation with Complaining, criticisms, malignings and blaspheme and did not realize that Satan was trying to completely destroy them. They did not know that The Lord Jesus, The Christ, The God of Abraham, Isaac and Jacob, was the only thing standing in the gap. This remains true of advancing believers in all dispensations and Satan hates the believers who are the representatives of The Lord Jesus, The Christ on this earth. Satan will do everything he can to eliminate a believer especially one with consistent Positive Volition who is consistently advancing with Bible Doctrine as Priority #1 in his life. Believers will never be aware of some of the greatest attacks against them in this life by Satan until these are revealed to them in heaven. This is like the Jews who were totally unaware of the situation regarding Balaam and that this was the GREATEST attack which had come upon them in the 40 years since they left Egypt and it came to them on the plains of Moab. However, God told Balaam not to try to curse these people because they were BLESSED spiritually and therefore NO FORCE OF SATAN COULD TOUCH THEM WITHOUT GOD'S PERMISSION. THIS is the status for all advancing believers in all dispensations and was clearly the case of Job. God permitted the satanic attack as cross examination in the Evidence Testing of Job because of his status in Advanced Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God.

No matter what the status of the believer, spiritual or carnal, GOD Is faithful to him every second he exists on this earth. If this were not true the believer could not stay alive on this earth for even 1 microsecond after Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God because the world belongs to Satan, the Prince of the Power of the Air, ruler of this world after the fall of Adam and he would never tolerate believers in his world IF HE COULD AVOID IT. God is, as always, completely faithful and will stand by the believer holding up his Wall of Fire and will not permit him to be removed from this earth nor permit any level of his destruction. ALL of the forces of SATAN, HELL and CONCENTRATED EVIL on this earth today cannot remove a believer from this earth unless the Lord wants to remove him. The only way for the believer to leave this world is under the Will of God. Therefore, if all the forces of Evil, including communism, religious internationalism, the present American government all gathered together to try to remove any one believer from this earth, he could not be removed unless it is the Will of God. Believers MUST consider that since God put up with those recalcitrant Jews for 40 years and provided for them and protected them, maybe, JUST MAYBE, He will put up with the Complaining believer for a time also. Believers must also realize, because of the historical

facts regarding the Jewish preservation during the exodus, that there is NOTHING which any believer today has to Complain about? If he is alive then he is where God wants him and where he will be sustained.

The reality is that the ONLY reason any believers are still here today is because of the Grace of God and Essence of God NOT because they are such lovely people and so much better than anyone else. ([1Pet 5:7](#), [Rom 8:28](#), [Is 41:10](#), [Ps 37:4-5](#), [Ex 14:13-14](#)) God, being immutable, cannot reverse His promises and being perfect justice He MUST keep his word and the closer the believer lives to the Word of God the better off he will be. God has provided more than 7000 promises in His Word which are specifically FOR BELIEVERS and He cannot reverse any one of them. The Cosmic Dynaspheres and Satan cannot reverse God's promises but would certainly like to. Therefore, since Man cannot reverse them and Satan's Systems cannot reverse them either, the only thing left for Satan to do is to TRY to obscure the promises and distract the believer from the supporting Bible Doctrine. He must try to get the believer involved with false doctrine and [Human Viewpoint](#) thinking so that there is no place for Bible Doctrine, God's promises or [Divine Viewpoint](#) in his thinking.

### [Complaining vs the Purpose and Plan of God](#)

Jeremiah was so disturbed by many of the events which occurred after God called him to teach the people that he had to constantly use the [Rebound Procedure](#). God had to say to him, "if you are going to sit around a mope, whine and Complain all the time you cannot be my mouth and speak for me to the people BUT if you use the [Rebound Procedure](#) then you can come back and be my mouth". The believer is supposed to concentrate and listen under enforced and self discipline in order to accumulate Bible Doctrine into the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of his Soul. If the believer turns his back on the Lord then all of his life he will be a whining, Complaining crybaby and go from one form of sublimation to another in a vain attempt to find some happiness as he enters Reversionism and degrades his Spiritual Life. In between he will want someone, anyone, to pat his head and tell him things will be all right. This is the STUPIDITY of Christian counseling where the believer seeks someone to tell him how to live his life. The only way to solve this situation is the consistent Perception, Cognition, Inculcation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine. The believer should reflect the *inner happiness* of the Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of his Soul and his use of the [Faith Rest Drill](#) (5 stages) to handle every problem he encounters in life. This is not putting on a facade or false front but emphasizes the issue is that NO believer can serve the Lord and be a whining Complainer. EVERYONE has problems SO WHAT, what can any believer expect living as a foreigner in this world, having made Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God and now living in the world ruled by the greatest antagonistic enemy of the Lord, Satan; WHAT ELSE IS THERE TO EXPECT.

It is extremely difficult for the believer to comprehend that nothing which ever happens is unknown to God. In truth the Essence of God is unfathomable to man, however, God has revealed as much about himself as he knows man can comprehend. It is a grave insult to God when the believer asks for help about a situation in his life as if God did not know from Eternity Past what is happening to him and what things he needs to keep on doing. The

incomprehensible fact is that God knew from Eternity Past, so long ago that the human mind cannot comprehend how long ago that was, what each individual in the entire Human Race in all of Human History would be like BUT he still started Human History with Ish and Ishah, Adam and Eve. In addition to knowing every person and every pressure or pleasant situation that every believer would encounter God also provided solutions and capacity for these things. It is far more appropriate for the believer to THANK God for his pressures in life along with the solutions, though he may not immediately see the actual solutions, than it is to Complain and whine to God for HELP regarding a situation. The believer must remember the command, "In ALL things give thanks for this is the Will of God for YOU!" It is amazing how little the believer appreciates that God not only knows him PERSONALLY and perfectly and all of his personal problems, idiocies, weakness, fallacies and failures but that He always has. Therefore, believers who cry, whine and Complain about their personal situations never appreciate the perfection of the plan they are in as imperfect creatures and just never seem to quite clearly understand this Plan of God for their lives. This is a clear demonstration of a lack of orientation to the Plan of God and Grace of God. Within His Grace plan God has already considered every cause and every effect which is related to every other cause and effect which is related to another and another so that the entire course of Human History is known to God from Eternity Past but occurs just as man thinks, wills and does within it. The point is that God already knows the thoughts, motivations, decisions and actions in this life of every individual person and he allows them to occur freely and provides for the ramifications of each of them for each and every person. The believer must understand this and when he does he will never again Complain, whine, break down, feel frustrated, sad, neglected or left out and this is the entire content of [Romans Chapter 8](#).

### Complaining & Pressures when Witnessing

This church in Thessalonika was a blue print church because Paul evangelized them and then provided for them ADVANCED DOCTRINE. ([Acts 17](#)) They were literally turning the whole world upside down, having been trained to go out and reach people everywhere, who then reached other people, which resulted in a saturation of the ancient world with the Gospel of The Lord Jesus, The Christ and advancing believers everywhere under the Plan of God. When the Gospel is presented to the unbeliever there should be NO emotional involvement because this is misleading and in addition the Gospel MUST be presented IN SPITE OF ALL OPPOSITION. The believer who witnesses can expect opposition from both within and without. Before Paul came to Thessalonika Satan tried to cut Paul off at Philippi by arousing religious people there who became upset with Paul for preaching the Gospel and they dragged Paul and Silas into the market place there they beat them and railroaded them before the judge. The judge observed how the crowd felt about these men and threw them into Jail where they were scourged with Roman whips and put into the bottom dungeon. However, while in the lowest dungeon they sang praises to the Lord and held prayer meeting and as a result God shook the jail so that the jailer himself, made Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God by faith in The Lord Jesus, The Christ that very night. In spite of all this Paul still moved on to Thessalonika and continued witnessing for Christ, he was totally faithful to the Lord and he did not physically feel good because his back had been whipped to the point of having the skin removed but he DID NOT Complain about that but moved on to Thessalonika to continue

evangelizing.

Some Christians have a bad experience when witnessing when someone embarrasses or laughs at them, ridiculing them or some such thing and they give up trying to witness for Christ as a result. Wherever one declares the Gospel HE WILL RECEIVE OPPOSITION AND HAVING A BAD EXPERIENCE OR 2 or 1000 SHOULD NOT EVER CUT HIM OFF FROM WITNESSING. When today, by way of witnessing, one finds self embarrassed or discouraged he MUST get right up and MOVE ON to more witnessing. Even after all the opposition Paul moved right down the Ignatian highway to Thessalonika boldly and continued to witness and this benefited both the Thessalonian believers and PAUL. The most wonderful marvelous message in the whole of Human History, and one which the world absolutely NEEDS, is the Gospel of The Lord Jesus, The Christ. The believer must never give up and stop because of some opposition to it. This Gospel belongs to every human being and it is the DUTY of every Christian to constantly present it whenever he perceives interest in knowing it exists.

In addition, the Gospel must NEVER be compromised or watered down because it is the most marvelous glorious GOOD news in all the world and even when Paul, who had very little personal appeal, gave it to unbelievers wanting to know God, it was very well received. There are 3 things which the believer must avoid in order to NOT hinder the enthusiastic declaration of the Gospel:

- ✧ Deceit
- ✧ Inaccuracy
- ✧ Additions to Faith ALONE

The Gospel must be presented accurately and if there is anything which will ruin the declaration of the Gospel it is to be inaccurate in its declaration. Indicating or implying that the Substitutionary Spiritual Death of The Lord Jesus, The Christ on the cross was insufficient for salvation is deception and inaccuracy. Implying that the unbeliever must experience [Guilt](#) or feel sorry for his sins, or that he must join a church or that he must be baptized, or that he must keep the law, or that he must walk the isle to the altar or raise his hands or sign a card or yield his body or give money to be saved, is irrational, self motivated and inaccurate. These things take the enthusiasm from the Gospel and it becomes NOT good news when one is led to think he has to give up bad habits to be saved. This not only makes what is presented wrong but also removes any persuasiveness one might have in making an approach with the GOOD NEWS of Salvation in the Gospel. Whatever merit giving up all these things might have, they are not part of [Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God](#). When The Lord Jesus, The Christ underwent his Substitutionary Spiritual Death HE said, at its completion, "IT IS FINISHED IN THE PAST AND REMAINS FINISHED FOREVER". Therefore, no one can ever add anything to it. The Gospel, the Good News is that all the unbeliever must do is accept this gift from GOD by FAITH ALONE IN The Lord Jesus, The Christ ALONE because it REQUIRES the total ABSENCE of merit on the part of the recipient. To make people think they must DO SOMETHING for Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God is a strong detraction and deceit from the Gospel and keeps members of the Human Race from Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God. These things must be avoided at all costs especially when pressure brought to bear during witnessing for Christ.

### Complaining & the Love of God

Despite studying the Love of God and the Dynamics of Love in the Spiritual Life the believer can still have glitches in his Modus Vivendi as a result of the intrusion of Arrogance. People very often want others to love them and dance to their tune and if they don't the person becomes critical, moody, self centered, even distorting Bible Doctrine to Complain about and condemn these others. This occurs often to the point of losing one's Spiritual Life progress and receiving Divine Discipline from the Supreme Court of Heaven, which punishment, IN FACT, comes from the Love of God with approval of the Righteousness of God delivered by the Justice of God. This, in fact, cannot and will not be diminished because of any distortions or aberrations or entrance into the experiences of Self Pity, all which become the means of total entanglement into the Interlocking System of Arrogance. In a Self Righteous Arrogant state the believer excuses self and passes the blame to others whose attention and approbation he is seeking, constantly Complaining about their lack of attention. These retrogressing believers use Bible Doctrine as an assassins dagger, twisting and distorting it, while rejecting it so that they inevitably claim that Bible Doctrine doesn't work when in reality it is working very well in condemning the quirks and aberrations originating from their Old Sin Nature. These believers become critical and Complain to friends, seeking greener pastures in other churches where Bible Doctrine is NOT taught but where everyone is "friendly". Of course, these believer attempt and often succeed in taking their friends along. In all of these distortions and failures of the believer, God's Love has not changed or diminished toward him as he settles into a life of Self Induced Misery and intensifying Divine Punishment from God. This is a result of entering into and progressing through the stages of Reversionism and developing to perfection the Arrogance Skills. As a result the True Love of the Impeccable Humanity of The Lord Jesus, The Christ for the believer is now spurned by the believer. This believer grieves and quenches God the Holy Spirit as a result of his failure to use the rebound procedure and thus becomes consistent in his residence in the Cosmic Dynaspheres. However, in all of this, God's Love is NOT diminished toward him even in the lowest point of his carnality and complaining. In Phil 1:21, Paul says to all Church Age believers, "For ME living, Christ, Dying, Profit or Gain", so the believer must Learn and Live, which is the greatest profit in life because he is to Learn Bible Doctrine and then Live by it and not whine or Complain about any situation or condition which exists in his life.

### Complaining & the Justice of God

Believers in Reversionism residing within the Cosmic Dynaspheres cannot recognize either divine nor human justice. When a reversionistic believer is being judged by the Supreme Court of Heaven, where there cannot be miscarriages in the administration of justice, he will be constantly Complaining that he is being maltreated and wronged and this emphasizes that the Reversionistic believer has no clue about justice. This was the case with Satan standing before the Supreme Court of Heaven after his revolution was judged. The believer does not comprehend that the Point of Reference and Point of Contact for believers with God, is not the Love of God nor His Emotion (which God does not possess) but the Integrity of God where the Righteousness of God dictates to the Justice of God what should be provided for the believer as the result of motivation from the Love of God. This may be blessing or Divine Discipline.



When God judges a reversionist, instead of him recognizing this as judgment and correcting his situation by use of the [Rebound Procedure](#) and beginning the consistent Post Salvation Epistemological Rehabilitation which is required for reversion recovery, he continues to claim that he is correctly functioning and is being unjustly treated. He constantly distorts fact at every turn and he becomes an awful person to be in contact with because he is so Self Righteous that he assumes he can do no wrong. This involvement in Self Righteous Arrogance and the error of assuming rightness in everything he does gives him the strongest implacability, which means he has no capacity for love, freedom, grace righteousness nor anything in life at all. There can be no worse condition than to be associated with an implacable reversionistic believer and have to listen to him Complain about everything.

### **Complaining vs Honor & Integrity**

The Integrity of God and the Honor of God, is not now and cannot ever be violated under the principles of GRACE. The Integrity of God is intact and if the believer is positive toward Bible Doctrine he is in for blessing but if he is under Negative Volition toward Bible Doctrine he is in for cursing as Self Induced Misery and Divine Discipline. However, even being under Divine Discipline cursing the Honor of God is intact and he maintains his integrity by providing this Divine Discipline *to attempt to bring the believer back into the plan, the Power System of God the [Divine Dynasphere](#)*. The believer who is whining and asking “Why does God allow these things to happen to me?”, Complaining that “God is not fair” is answered by his gaining an understanding that God allows these things to happen to him so that God’s own HONOR and INTEGRITY will remain intact.

No matter what happens to any of believer in this life there is no excuse for him to be whining and Complaining. With honor and integrity from maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul there is no disaster in life which can destroy the advancing and mature believer. In life the true greatness of a person is determined by their orientation to legitimate authority and their self discipline and concentration, therefore, if one wants to see the real person one must observe how they take their punishment in life:

- ✧ Objectively – taking it with humility and accepting responsibility.
- ✧ Subjectively – looking for excuses, someone to blame and / or rationalizing their actions.

As a result of Self Induced Misery or the punishment of Divine Discipline some believers go backward in their spiritual life entering into and progressing through Reversionism as they whine and Complain about everything and everyone. Some take their Divine Discipline punishment from the Justice of God and profit to the maximum by learning from it. No believer can ever afford any level of Arrogance from [Bitterness](#), subjectivity, cowardice, hatred or vindictiveness when they are being punished by Divine Discipline from the Justice of God. Even innocent Complaints are the mewling of arrogant believers.

In situations of employment, regardless of how incompetent or unfair people in management may be, they are to be regarded as being worthy of ALL HONOR. Regardless of personal feelings, conflicts or difficulties with management the believer is to concentrate on the principle that these people are WORTHY of HONOR because of their authority and position. Therefore, the Mental Attitude of the believer must be such that when they go to work each day their

management is considered worthy of all honor. Believers are NOT entitled to an opinion about how policy is handled or created in the organization they are employed by but are only to do their job as unto the Lord under the established policies and procedures and they have no right to Complain about anything. However, if the believer is dissatisfied with the conduct of management in administering policy in any way, he does have the option to QUIT or STAY in that job. However, he has no right to stir up trouble, raise a fuss, or to criticize or Complain about the boss or manager. If the believer cannot go to work with a good Mental Attitude there is something seriously wrong with his Spiritual Life no matter how bad the situation at his job is or may be. The believer who cannot function in this way is either retrogressing in his Spiritual Life into Reversionism or has not learned how to apply Bible Doctrine effectively. If he gripes, whines, moans and Complains about his job then his Mental Attitude is truly BAD and this overflows into every aspect of his life so that:

- His social life is bad
- He is losing integrity
- He is entangled in the [Motivational Arrogance](#) of [Mental Attitude Arrogance](#)

When one is under the influence of many varied Mental Attitude Sins his [Opinions](#) are generally not worth listening to. Mental Attitude is extremely important and is the primary means of one falling into the Interlocking System of Arrogance and if it is bad on an 8 hour job it will be bad in every aspect of one's life. When one goes to work with a bad Mental Attitude then he has no capacity for life and an incompetent or unfair boss is not the true issue, HE is the issue himself and he needs to be under some level of [Personal Love for God](#) in order to function properly in his job. The principle is that the job itself does not matter, how monotonous or difficult it may be is unimportant, but the reality is that the believer does not have any right to a poor critical Mental Attitude at his job for any reason. Management is the delegated authority on the job, under the principles of the Laws of Divine Establishment as Free Enterprise, and they may fail and distort policy but labor has no right to be distorted in reaction to their failures. ([Col 3:13](#))

Therefore, when one changes his Mental Attitude by entanglement in Mental Attitude Arrogance this change flows into every aspect of his life and he cannot shut it down when the job is over for the day. He will still carry this bad Mental Attitude with him and Complain to anyone who will listen to him about anything which comes to his thinking. A Bad Mental Attitude is the result of involvement in the Motivational Arrogance of Mental Attitude Arrogance and results in Mental Attitude Sins in many categories and thus obviously this believer has something wrong in his soul and will carry this into every aspect of his life. Social life will be ONE LONG SERIES of Complaints and NO ONE ever wants to be around one who constantly Complains. Being “worthy of honor” is to have the Mental Attitude of honor and integrity on the part of the one under authority toward the ones in authority. Sinful man often distorts these divine principles but this does not change nor rescind the principle despite its being completely abused.

### **Complaining in Adversity & Disaster**

The material things which one enjoys in time of prosperity may need to be physically abandoned and immediately forgotten when one is fleeing during historical or national disaster,

or in war. One cannot concentrate on the dangers of historical disaster if he continues to whine and Complain about what material comforts or possessions have been lost. If one finds he is in a group of people who constantly whine about what has been lost he needs to move out of this situation and find those who are focused on the situation as it is in order to be able to survive the adversity. The question for every believer is if he has to leave his home and area and leave all material things behind, is he ready to do that? Prosperity must not make the believer arrogant about his possessions and if he must leave he must simply leave. Material possessions demonstrate how the Lord has blessed the believer but if that prosperity makes him arrogant he cannot even appreciate what he has been given. When the believer faces this issue during a historical or national crisis and the order of the day is to move out he must remember he has not lost the GIVER, the source of all blessings. If the believer has the ability and means of leaving he must recognize that the Lord has graced him with this option and will never leave him.

The Adversity of [Undeserved Suffering](#) such as occurs in disaster, is imputed to the advancing believer as blessing from the Justice of God to accelerate the growth of the believer in the system of God. The believer can have great suffering and adversity and at the same time great happiness in his soul. This relegates suffering and adversity to the position of a circumstance which does not dictate to him his Mental Attitude or any other thing. With Maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul his Mental Attitude will not be a slave to circumstances in life. However, if and when he puts himself under the authority resulting from adverse circumstances in life, because of being minus Bible Doctrine, his Mental Attitude will be distorted and he will Complain and fall apart under the slightest pressures. He will become bitter, vindictive and implacable and be ruled as a slave by these circumstances. When the believer has maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of his Soul then his circumstances in life become HIS SLAVE. The Justice of God is incorruptible and cannot be unfair nor influenced by people and thus is totally fair in his provision of undeserved suffering as testing for blessing. There is no redress of grievance nor can there be any Complaint when the Justice of God provides Undeserved Suffering for the mature believer and to do so would be to claim that his brand of Undeserved Suffering is unfair however, the reality is that because it is undeserved it is meant to be endured. Undeserved Suffering demands that the believer advancing toward or in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God, STAND FAST and not retreat, Complain nor try to change the circumstances but use the confidence of the [3<sup>rd</sup> hope](#) and focus on the blessing to come at the Judgment Seat of Jesus Christ. At times the believer in [Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God](#) may lose focus on the eternal reward and blessing to come to him at the Judgment Seat of Jesus Christ and the Justice of God then provides the Undeserved Suffering to refocus the believer on eternity. The believer is to live his life in the light of eternity and any disaster or catastrophe must be taken in stride using the [Assets](#) provided by God at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God combined with maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.

When the believer gets his focus on people then he will inevitably move that focus onto things and this is logical in his distorted thinking. When one becomes preoccupied with disaster he

loses the spiritual perspective of [Personal Love for God](#). To the extent one becomes preoccupied with disaster to that extent he does nothing except build [Scar Tissue of the Soul](#). Preoccupation with disaster starts shock in the soul and the greater the shock waves in the soul the greater one becomes divorced from reality. These shock waves then go out from the soul so that the reality of the disaster divorces one from the reality of life which must revolve around the Metabolized Bible Doctrine in one's Stream of Consciousness of the Soul and his ability to recall it and use it under the [Faith Rest Drill \(5 stages\)](#) in reverse concentration. When one goes into shock because of being preoccupied with disaster this is destructive to the Spiritual Life and soul because the mind becomes numb and this is the mind of a coward without thought and with concentration focused on FEAR and Anxiety within the Cosmic Dynaspheres.

### [Complaining in Economic Depression](#)

There is no way to stave off the coming of economic depression to the United States of America in this 21<sup>st</sup> century because it is designed to eliminate the weak individual just like when the weak in a herd of animals are eliminated by predators. Without this purging, a nation saturated with WEAK citizens who have no stability of soul from Metabolized Bible Doctrine is ultimately destroyed internally by its weak. When true disaster hits the United States of America whining and crying by the people will not help in any way and the people of this nation will not ever take credit for their lack of interest in Bible Doctrine as the ultimate cause of the disaster. The WEAK in a society refers to the scum who feed off of welfare and a government who allows them to sit around and just collect a living for doing nothing. When the scum of a society becomes too large they Complain about being have-nots and eventually they will gather in groups or mobs and riot and will ultimately cause revolution and destroy the nation. The system of economic depression is a cyclic system from God where by useless people in a society are removed by starving to death so that the good functional people can work effectively again and bring prosperity back to the nation. The principle and the divine law is that in any nation, especially a client nation to God, the scum must be eliminated for the nation to survive. In the United States of America the government is composed largely of goofy, unrealistic people, themselves scum, who are there to keep some endangered animal or insect species alive while others work to keep on feeding the useless scum of society through welfare programs and socialism. The people, spiritual leaders, national leaders and in fact everyone in the nation should never second guess God in his provision of a system of purification for the nation from its own destructive people. Also, they should never second guess God with regard to the proper structure and function of the nation itself. People in the United States of America think that if 50,000 bums, the scum of society, who can but will not work for a living, die from starvation because the welfare system stops, then this is a huge travesty and reflects on the character of the nation and its people. The true viewpoint, the Divine Viewpoint is that IF anyone refuses to work for \$.50 per hour at any job, then they should die. All the people in the nation, especially those in control of the government, must

avoid [Human Viewpoint](#) thinking, ignoring divine laws regarding the function and activities under the [Laws of Divine Establishment](#) and [Divine Institutions](#), else they thereby bring about the destruction of the nation. Welfare inevitably allows homosexuals to come out of their holes as a result of its liberalism and homosexuality, when it is broadly accepted, in itself destroys nations. In addition many forms of false teaching occur to an intensified state in both historical and natural disasters. This may, in fact, be the underlying cause of the disaster and the intensification of this is a thinking trend, which imagines that if the increase in false teaching grows it will cause the disasters to go away. However, in all cases GOD protects the mature believer who has maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of his Soul in time of economic or any national disaster and he therefore has NO RIGHT to Complain. ([Job 5:20](#), [Rom 8:35](#)) Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul is the answer to every disaster in life including economic depression therefore, when there is a large growing pivot of mature believers it is the means of recovery from economic disaster for the nation since the individual believer reaching Spiritual Maturity is the only means of such recovery. ([Is 37:30-31](#))

### [Deliverance of the Lord in Adversity & Disaster](#)

When there is Deliverance FROM it is usually individual adversity or disaster deliverance but when there is Deliverance IN it is usually collective deliverance from collective disasters as with Shadrack Meshak and Abendigo in Daniels time. The United States of America must look for collective disaster deliverance to save the United States of America but always remember that for the advancing believer there will always be individual deliverance from or through all disasters. ([Job 5:19-27](#)) All normal individuals would prefer to be delivered FROM disasters and not have to endure the pain, discomfort and inconvenience of the disasters and when deliverance is NOT FROM disaster but IN disaster people often Complain about the difficulties they must face and overcome.

In the United States of America since 1830 the nation has been in debt and it peaked once in the 1980's before President Reagan came to office but his corrections were ultimately of no benefit in this country because when the democratic party gained ascendancy again they again put the country so far in debt that it is literally IMPOSSIBLE to [pay this debt](#) off EVER. This is the economic disaster stated in [Job 5:20](#) and believers WILL be delivered from or through the biggest depression there has ever been in the history of mankind. The United States of America MUST undergo economic disaster and famine if there is going to be a solution to the national crises it is facing. The problem is so great in America that it can only be solved by the nation going through some great historical or national disaster with literally millions if not hundreds of millions of people dying. If the people do not respond with the proper solution to this situation then the nation will have to go through something much worse than economic



disaster which will cause all the national problems to become vastly worse and most likely totally destroy the nation. The United States of America will never be the same nation again and may end up becoming a total welfare nation, totally socialistic or another communist nation and there will be redistribution of wealth and a terrible move of government to seize all power and control all domestic production. The real issue will be power and this will mean violence in the streets like has never been seen here in all of American history. There is no way the people of the United States can avoid some form of disaster because disaster is connected to the solution which could have been mild if the problems had been properly addressed. Now the disaster which must be faced is far greater because the problem has been allowed to get so very much worse and the nation must now break down totally. However, as per the promises of God and functions within the Divine Dynasphere and under the Laws of Divine Establishment the believer with maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in his Stream of Consciousness of the Soul WILL survive economic, national, military, natural or any other kind disaster provided he remains on the momentum line, moving through the Divine Dynasphere and functioning within his [Edification Complex of the Soul](#). The principle is that as long as The Lord Jesus, The Christ wants the believer to continue in this life he will come through any disaster. However, The Lord Jesus, The Christ uses historical disaster to remove those believers and unbelievers who continually reside in the Cosmic Dynaspheres because they are part of the degeneracy of the system and would ultimately cause the destruction of the entire Human Race.

### **Complaining vs Crisis preparation**

Believers all have personal problems and have difficulties and tragedies and heartaches and being personal in nature they should not cry about them nor make overt displays about them but carry them by means of the [Faith Rest Drill \(5 stages\)](#) in the way prescribed by the Lord. The believer is to go on consistently and persistently using the time given him as breathing space between the crises of life to take in Bible Doctrine so that he can face his personal problems with the application of Bible Doctrine. The believer is to bring Bible Doctrine into his life in a personal way and be inflexible with regard to the [Essentials of the Christian Life](#) and flexible with regard to ALL Nonessentials. In this way the believer prepares himself for disaster, catastrophe or crisis and no matter how devastating it may be, it will find him prepared. Most believers are stupid about Bible Doctrine and do not realize the value of Bible Doctrine and when these people get into pressure situations in life they cry and whine and plead with God in panic, wanting simple ideas not the complex advanced Bible Doctrine necessary for resolution of the pressures. Before the believer is ready for historical crisis he must be tested extensively and he must have accumulated the Metabolized Bible Doctrine in his Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of his Soul to handle and overcome that testing. This requires consistency in Post Salvation Epistemological Rehabilitation, from engaging in DAILY Perception, Cognition, Inculcation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine. Believers will be tested under social, professional, business, and personal issues and ALL testing is to be handled exactly the same way by proper use of the complete aspects of the Faith Rest Drill (5 stages). For the believer, pressures, problems and testing are not designed to cause him to

whine and Complain about his status or situation but to accelerate his advance in the Spiritual Life and to prepare him for disaster as a result of his successful use of the Metabolized Bible Doctrine in his Right Lobe of the Soul. God is not and in fact cannot be unfair and is not one who, not liking the way a believer may run his life, spends time spanking him constantly for his failures. In truth and in fact most misery, pressure and adversity the believer experiences in his life is the result of the ramifications he bring on himself because of **his own bad decisions** from a position of weakness, his functions outside the Plan of God and in the Cosmic Dynaspheres. No matter how many times the believer may fail on a day by day basis the key to his Spiritual Life is his attitude toward Bible Doctrine. In the Christian Way of Life SIN or Failure is NEVER the major issue for the believer but GRACE is to always be the major issue and everything the believer is and has is from the GRACE policy of God, unearned and undeserved and he must learn to realize and appreciate that.

### **Prayer for deliverance of a Nation in Crisis:**

In the United States of America there is no way that the executive or legislative or judicial branches of this government will ever save America from anything, especially because of the destruction and degradation caused by them from 2019 through to the 1<sup>st</sup> quarter of this 21<sup>st</sup> century. There is no system nor mechanism developed or thought up by man which can be used in this nation which can deliver America from the total mess which the country has brought on itself and the deliverance and solutions MUST come from GOD.

Effective prayer asking for national deliverance should begin something like this:

“Father, there are believers in the United States of America who are your children and You have a plan connected with them and this national entity and neither the believers nor the nation as a whole, as a part of the principle of divine institutions, deserve anything from you and as believers we must clearly understand and have no illusions about our personal false greatness or that of our nation.”

God only delivers on the basis of his character and not on the basis of national history or heritage and not on the basis of any other factor of human merit. If this nation survives it will do so because God intervenes to deliver it and the people who remain here do so only because of the Grace of God. When the believer asks God for anything for self or another he MUST do so on the basis of GRACE from God and when God answers the request it will ONLY be on the basis of God’s character not his merits. The believer must NEVER whine or Complain to God but simply face facts and only ever demand GRACE compassion from God. He must never become sincere with God, only address GRACE and the function of the character of God. Believers only have the right to address God based on his character and who and what he is and on the basis of the fact that believers have passed the point of propitiation and God is therefore free to love them without being inconsistent with his own holiness / integrity. God can therefore love the believer despite and along with having to clobber him from the requirements of His Absolute Righteousness and the functions of His Absolute Justice. God does not respect the whining and Complaining of those in a nation under pressure or disaster as demonstrated by the incident recorded at Kadesh Barnea where the literal crying to the Lord resulted in the Jews having to wait 39 years to get into the land they were promised. God is

not stupid and does not respond to phony self effacement and when the believer comes to God with prayer he must come with confidence and the doctrine related to God's character which allows him to demand from God that his nation be preserved and cleansed. God can do great things for the mature believer because of His [Propitiation](#) and as a result of the believer reaching [Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God](#) and His perfect Love is a constant continuous thing toward those mature believers.

Proper prayer addressed to God clears any illusion about self or the nation collectively and recognizes there is no reason or excuse for the people to go before God saying they are wonderful and the nation is wonderful and there are so many wonderful freedom principles being used here that God has to keep them alive because they are such nice people and much nicer than any other nations and God really should consider their value to HIM. Too many believers are just this STUPID in their prayers and say basically, "I am a lovely person and all Americans are lovely people therefore deliver us" and this is the quintessence of stupidity. This demonstrates a total disorientation to the Grace of God and it must be understood clearly and concisely recognize that GOD only provides, blesses and delivers on the basis of HIS CHARACTER and ESSENCE, NOT EVER on the basis of the character of the individual or nation involved or any other factor of human merit or attractiveness. IF this nation or the Ukraine in 2022 or Israel in the future of the tribulation survives it is ONLY because God intervenes to deliver. In the 1960s mature believers in this nation recognized that the country was so far down the drain with regard to engaging in socialism and communism that the nation was already slated for destruction under the 5<sup>th</sup> cycle of Divine Discipline and today in this part of the 21<sup>st</sup> century it is on the very brink of coming to a reality. The nation has remained since the 60s and is still here today and this is ONLY because of the Grace of God. Prayer is legitimate and can be applied to the situation in the nation today and also to anything the believer may ask in petition or intercession BUT IT MUST BE ASKED on the basis of GRACE. Believers must "Come with CONFIDENCE to the throne of Grace" and then God will answer on the basis of his character, who and what he is not who or what the believer may be. A prayer which can be answered is a DEMAND for compassion or mercy which is the Grace of God in action. The believer can only ask on this basis because he approaches the character and essence of God based on who and what God is and what He has provided. The believer must have the recognition that he, as a believer in The Lord Jesus the Christ, has passed the point of propitiation and therefore God is free to provide for him from the motivation of his love without being INCONSISTENT with his Integrity or Holiness. The believer must USE the Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of his Soul and exercise the [Faith Rest Drill](#) (5 stages) when he approaches God in prayer. Therefore, when the believer comes to God in prayer he can demand things from God but only based on who and what God is and has done and not because of who or what the believer may think he, himself is. He can demand that his nation, which is completely worthless today, be preserved but only through the GRACE policy and functions of the Integrity of God.

### **Complaining, Apostasy & Self Induced Misery**

The inconsistency of a woman who turns against her Right Man is demonstrated when she is negative toward him and then turns and Complains about him to others or quarrels with him.

This is the believer who turns against God and enters the Cosmic Dynaspheres. When the believer is under Negative Volition toward God and Bible Doctrine he has no right to Complain about God. Every time a believer says “Why did God let this happen to me” they are Complaining ABOUT God, about his Plan and about his provision for their life and have in fact rejected and turned against him. Just like the woman who has turned against her Right Man the believer has no right to Complain about God when under consistent Negative Volition toward him. When the believer rejects or neglects Bible Doctrine and therefore The Lord Jesus, The Christ he has no right to expect anything from him and absolutely no right to Complain about what he has received from him, especially his own Self Induced Misery and the deserved Divine Discipline when it comes to him. The people who are indifferent to and neglect or reject Bible Doctrine are the ones who Complain the most just like the Jews in the “Meribah” incidents of Kadesh Barnea. God tried to prepare the Jews to function under the Faith Rest Drill (5 stages) so that they would have the confidence needed to take the land from the Giants but they rejected his testing and Complained constantly. He tried to bring the Jews back around to Bible Doctrine and to Himself but it was totally IN VAIN. Thus these Jews, the entire generation which left Egypt, had to live in the desert for 39 years until they all died off so that the next generation could learn to live by faith and take the land. However, initially these former children of the Exodus Adults, also failed their testing but ultimately recovered and were in fact able to take the land promised them by God. When there is a generation which turns negative to Bible Doctrine and to The Lord Jesus, The Christ it always effects the children who are not taught about God and his plan. When parents do not train their children at young ages when they are most receptive to their instruction and do not communicate Bible Doctrine and Grace principles at that time but instead Complain about the church and the Pastor Teacher who teaches Bible Doctrine they inevitably ruin their children. This results in continuous ongoing apostasy and degeneracy from one generation to the next. ([Jer 2:29-30](#))

### **Grace vs Complaining**

There are 4 areas in which Arrogance rejects Grace which results in Complaining:

- ✧ The Pride of the believer who rejects Eternal Security.
- ✧ The Pride of the believer who succumbs to any pressure or adversity  
He always thinks his suffering and adversities are greater than the Plan of God. He goes through life whining and Complaining about every little thing in life and this is a demonstration of his Arrogance and any person who constantly whines and Complains is also in [Reversionism](#).
- ✧ The Pride of Reversionism  
This believer assumes that his forms of reversionism are greater than Grace blessings from God.
- ✧ The Pride of Pseudo Spirituality  
This believer thinks his system of spirituality is greater than the [Filling of God the Holy Spirit](#).

In the Grace plan and policy of God, when a mature believer has a spouse who is unfaithful he will be vindicated by the Lord through some form of personal, national or historical disaster. When this occurs and as it approaches many people will change their attitude toward this

believer and his presentation of and reliance on Bible Doctrine. This is what occurred for Jeremiah. This is a promise to a man who has to phase out his Right Woman and live under the pressures of great disaster. The point is that the mature believer can rely on the principle that he will know Bible Doctrine and Bible Doctrine will set him free in all situations. The mature believer under GRACE will be freed from the woman who has no capacity for Category II Love and lives totally involved in complete sublimation so that she will completely shatter under coming disaster.

Abraham understood and was totally dependent on the Justice of God knowing that the Justice of God had to do something about the case of Sacrificing his Son and this was Justice Demanding Justice. Abraham did exactly what the Justice of God told him to do, he had a knife out ready to cut the throat of his son and burn his body in sacrifice to God. He had moved to the point, as few people ever have, where Justice Demands Justice and when Justice Demands Justice God provides everything. His willingness to respond to the demands of the Justice of God resulted in Justice Fulfilling Justice and a substitute was provided for Isaac in the sacrifice. This is GRACE in action and believers must understand that Abraham had finally come to the point of recognizing that God always honored his promises. God said Abraham would have an Heir and his name would be Isaac and that his progeny would number greater than the stars in the sky so he knew that if he had to sacrifice Isaac then God would certainly raise him up again since it was through Isaac that the promise was to be fulfilled. The significance of the ram in the thicket is that Justice Demands Justice and Abraham had made perfect Adjustment to the Justice of God and had not Complained about what was being required of him. He had done everything perfectly according to his instructions in every way and in every situation thus his Adjustment to the Justice of God was perfect and therefore Justice Demanded Justice and so Justice Fulfilled Justice. Under GRACE because Abraham adjusted to the Justice of God then God did something about It.

When the Philippians were going to send support to Paul in Rome, Apaphroditis knew that he was very sick and that the chances of him having the ability to be able to return after delivering the offering to Paul could go either way and he might just die in Rome but knowing this he went to Paul anyway. He didn't risk his life but he recognized clearly that the Lord was the only one who could change the trend of his health and enable his return if it was to be. The Philippians were unaware of the seriousness of his illness and thought he was alright and in good shape and thus sent him. Many people spend their whole life Complaining about one little thing or another but Apaphroditis was not a Complainer and had great discomfort but did not Complain about it at all. He placed his life in the hands of the Lord and relied on the Grace of God to handle his health issues so that he could complete his task.

Also, whenever there is controversy and a believer is wronged by another he is not to retaliate but to treat the one who is offensive to him under the principles of Grace. He is to forgive him his wrongdoing and not ever make an issue of it nor bring it up to any other person. [Col 3:13](#) The Person who does this develops greater and greater capacity for love in his soul. When people hate and despise him and malign and judge him and are disagreeable in life he develops a stronger inner happiness. Capacity for Love is NOT developed by relationships with



people whom one loves and who love him but only in relationships with people who hate him. In order to cover any transgression against one, the believer must go to the Lord, not engage in retaliation and he must engage in Grace forgiveness. The person who develops this capacity for love by forgiving the transgression also then refrains from publicizing the transgression of the one who has wronged him. He keeps his mouth shut about them and does not Complain about them and tell others what he wanted to do against them.

Complainers always have a grudge and [Legalistic](#) perspective on life while the [Grace Oriented](#) believer has a generous and gracious perspective and the Complainers will try to reduce the Grace believer to their level. The Complainer judges the Grace oriented believer by his own standards which are legalistic and not GRACE oriented. The Lord Jesus, The Christ rejects the Complainers who are legalistic believers trying to EARN their way into heaven. The standards of Christ are found in his GRACE Plan and Policy and the Complaining believer is always one who engages in some level of legalism such as tithing or taboo avoidance, and thus judges others by their false standards of what is good. Grace should bring Complainers up to a higher level of function in the Christian Way of Life but the Complainers must CHOOSE Grace over legalism in order to achieve this. It is only [Divine Good](#) produced under the Filling of God the Holy Spirit by the believer which can be the only thing which is gracious.

At the end of the Church Age, The Lord Jesus, The Christ will tell his steward the Archangel, ([1Thes 4:16](#)), to call in all the laborers. The rewards for the unbeliever and Reversionistic believers will depended on who and what they are whereas the GRACE payment to the believers who make advances in the Spiritual Life during their lifetime is depended on who and what the Lord is. The purpose of this parable is to indict LEGALISM and those believers who think they should be FIRST in reward in heaven may in fact be last. Like Paul the last apostle, the worst sinner, those believers who are persistent in the Perception, Cognition, Incultation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine and reach the status of INVISIBLE HERO, will be first in reward. Legalistic believers always think they are getting an UNFAIR deal or Unfair treatment. They constantly Complain that God is not fair to them and are constantly asking God for greater and greater blessings as if he is a Genie and will grant their wishes if they rub him the right way. Their Complaints are always against the character of God. The legalist thinks, like the contract labor union workers of Matthew, that equality of reward should be based on equality of production but the production of the legalist is rarely Divine Good production from Grace but always only [Human Good](#) production under the principles of Evil and involvement in the Cosmic Dynaspheres. The fact is that those believers who produce any level of Divine Good under the Grace plan of God are made far greater than the legalist who produces a lifetime of human good under the principles of Evil in the Cosmic Dynaspheres. The point is to NEVER try to make a deal with the Lord for blessing because being under Grace is the only way to have a daily relationship with God *which brings* blessing and results in production for Him. God, under the functions of his character, GIVES to the believer His rewards and blessings, the BELIEVER does not ever EARN what God gives because the blessing gifts are based totally on God's character NOT the believer's. Therefore, how can any believer ever Complain about what he receives from God under Grace? Again, the point is that the believer NEVER RECEIVES FROM GOD WHAT HE HAS EARNED IN THIS LIFE, and he never

loses when operating on a Grace basis with God. No believer ever has done anything to ever earn or deserve anything from God, EVER! No believers are great because they have done something special in the Christian Way of Life for God. NOTHING the believer can do will ever be the basis for his being able to make a deal with God because everything from God comes based on the character of God and therefore, the believer has no right and no standing ever to Complain about his situation or the circumstances in this life.

When under pressure in life positive believers begin to truly realize that they are NOTHING at all in the Plan of God and everything they have ever been is based on their relationship with the Lord. This in fact is one of the functions of [Momentum Testing \(4 Categories\)](#) for the advancing believer. God is ALWAYS faithful to the believer whether he is in or out of pressure or is Egotistical or humble and it is all based on the character of God and ONLY GOD gets the credit. When the believer comes to the point of understanding GRACE, he invariably looks at himself and realizes that he has always known that no one else is any good but he now sees that neither is he. This produces great soul relaxation in him and puts him in a position where the Lord can begin to use him. The believer should be Totally Thankful that the Lord has never treated him on the basis of what he deserved or he would not even still be living. It is never who or what he is but is always who and what the Lord is and everything in the life of the believer after Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God is all based on the Lord's character and essence not believer's.

Blessing and Rewards for the believer in time and for eternity all depend on the Sovereign Will of God and the Grace of God and no one ever earns or deserves them. The Legalistic believer always Complains about his reward and therefore is critical of GRACE which is the only factor they cannot afford to criticize. The Grace of God does not produce an envious attitude and the fact in the Christian Way of Life is that while many individuals make [Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God](#) by GRACE, FEW continue to live by or under Grace therefore FEW are rewarded under the principles of Grace. It is Bible Doctrine which is designed to orient the believer to GRACE and the believer MUST start with an understanding of the character or Essence of God in order to understand the Grace of God and why God gives anything to man. The worst, most disoriented to grace, are believers who take vows and make promises and in fact the greatest sin of Paul was taking a vow in Jerusalem. This was the sin of involving himself in Legalism, for which he was put into prison for more than 2 years. The great enemy of reward for the believer is the great enemy of the believer's production and that is LEGALISM because the legalistic believer ALWAYS fails to understand and operate under the principles of GRACE. ([Matt 20:11-16](#))

### [Complaining vs Capacity for Life](#)

If the believer has capacity for life GOD WILL NOT FRUSTRATE IT but He will provide objects to fulfill one's capacity for life. The believer must look at his life and if he has prosperity from God and is under great pressure in life for some reason then must consider that he is obviously moving ahead in the Spiritual Life possibly even through NO Man's Land under Bravo Grace provisions, a combination of his Logistical Grace support and his Super – Grace Blessing package, and should therefore enjoy it. The believer in The Lord Jesus, The Christ must never

whine and Complain about his Status Quo in life but consider his own capacity for life and what his Status Quo is, basically where HIS OWN VOLITION has put him. There are times in history when there is great persecution of Christians but so far in the United States this is not one of those times but it could be coming. The fantastic thing about the Plan of God is that sooner or later, when the believer attains Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God his resultant capacity for life will demand an object. God never leaves anything hanging, God ties up loose ends, God never left a believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God without a place to go and God never leaves a person who has capacity dangling without an object to fulfill it and he never frustrates a person with capacity. There will always be an object when there is a reason for the object. King David is a prime example and though he failed many times, not only did David have capacity but God loaded up David's cup of life with incredible objects for his capacity. David recognized this when he said, “My cup is full to the brim with your grace blessings and CONSTANTLY OVERFLOWS”. Therefore, the conclusion is that God never leaves anyone with capacity for life with an empty cup. No believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God is ever left with an empty cup and they all are FULL to the BRIM and overflowing. (Ps 23:6) This overflowing of blessing of the believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God is association, heritage and historical impact blessing which overflows to those around him. The believer must clearly understand, in order to avoid the Arrogance of whining and Complaining, that just as David knew he had capacity he knew “prosperity and Grace and Bible Doctrine would pursue him all the days of his life and when his life was over he would dwell in the house of the Lord FOREVER”. He knew he had capacity and knew that Grace from God was always chasing him down to provide some new thing for his capacity to express itself.

### Complaining & Necessities

There is a minimum standard necessary under which the believer is to have contentment and beyond which he cannot Complain, whine or gripe about the things he may not have in life. The minimum standard of the necessities of life is indivisibly linked with one's capacity for life derived from the level of accumulated Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul. The minimum standards needed for the life the believer should bring to him total contentment and maximum happiness. This minimum standard only includes 2 necessities of life, food and clothing and these 2 should make every believer VERY HAPPY, IF and WHEN they have maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of their Soul. The mature believer recognizes that he does not have to possess very much to be very happy when he is residing in the Divine Dynasphere and functioning in the Plan of God. However, for the believer who has made Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God there is NO LIMIT to what he can have as part of the Super – Grace Escrow blessings from God for his life in time. Therefore, OBVIOUSLY, the secret to happiness is NOT what one possesses but to what level there has been accumulation of Metabolized Bible Doctrine into one's Stream of Consciousness of the Soul. The believer who Complains or is Jealous of others who have more than he, does not ever understand the principle and reality that what one possesses or does not possess minus the minimum standard needed for life, is never the issue. It is only the level of saturation of Metabolized Bible Doctrine in one's Stream of Consciousness of the Soul which will provide true inner happiness, contentment and stability, even with the barest necessities of

life. This may or may not be the status of any individual believer at this time BUT REMEMBER IT CAN BE, AND HE CAN STILL BE COMPLETELY HAPPY WITH IT. (1Tim 6:7) THEREFORE, IT IS WHAT IS IN ONE'S SOUL WHICH MATTERS NOT WHAT MATERIAL THINGS ONE MAY POSSESS. When the believer lacks food and clothing then he has a legitimate Complaint for God and if he is starving and running around naked that is the only basis for a real Complaint and for demanding that God fulfill HIS OBLIGATION and provide that minimum need. However, with the minimums of food and clothing then the believer has no right to Complain because Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul and the believer possessing minimums or maximums provides the same happiness. As the believer accumulates maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine into his Stream of Consciousness of the Soul and moves toward and into Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God he receives from God Super – Grace Escrow Blessings beyond imagination and has already developed and deployed the 9<sup>th</sup> Problem Solving Device of Sharing the Happiness of God, thus he should have complete contentment and NO Complaints.

Obviously Logistical Grace support differs greatly from one individual to another and the believer must never be upset or disturbed by another believer's level of Logistical Grace support which may be greater than his. One never has any right to Complain about those who have a lot while he is the one who has not. Being a "have not" does not mean he has failed in the Christian Way of Life and a prime example is that the Apostle Paul, the Greatest Believer in Human History, died completely broke. Every believer receives a different allowance of support in life from the Justice of God. One's occupation or profession in life and what he earns is from God and he cannot earn anything except by the Grace of God and God also has provided the health, understanding, skills and everything else needed to perform well in that occupation. When the believer begins to feel that he has been slighted in some way in life, this is a very dangerous thing for the Christian because under the Royal Family Honor Code the believer is not permitted Self Pity. Many people live a long time in ill health and do not have any terminal disease but they moan and Complain about their problems and aches and pains and this changes their whole personality. They have no Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of their Soul and have been flighty people all their life feeling and emoting through life. However, Emotion CANNOT ever carry anyone under extreme pressure in life or when he is dying, only maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul will provide the necessary contentment during Dying.

The primary question every believer should ask himself when he finds he is lacking something he desires in this life is, "How long has God known about MY NEEDS?" The only true answer is, "FROM ETERNITY PAST", and the conclusion MUST BE how can he or any believer be concerned or Complain about anything he may think he lacks in this life! People generally have the very bad habit of whining and Complaining about their situation in life and always griping about their life and this is a system of defeatism and a real PAIN in the ASS for those around them. Not only has God known about EVERY need of EVERY believer from Eternity Past, He has also assured the believer, in his Word, that He has already provided for them, AND in the Church Age he has done so in a unique manner. In the Church Age the believer has no excuse for any Complaints because this is the dispensation of the ordinary believer who

has far greater Assets than have ever existed before or ever will again in Human History. For the Church Age believer, as a part of the ULTIMATE key to resolution of the Angelic Conflict, God has provided for the needs of the believer with his very own portfolio of 40 assets for support and protection as he develops and advances in the Spiritual Life. Not only has God known about the needs of every believer from Eternity Past and provided for them but He also knows that every believer must keep his mandates and recognize and submit to his authority, therefore occasionally the believer may need a wake up call from Divine Discipline to remind him to remain in residence in the Divine Dynasphere. (Heb 12:6)

### Solutions to Complaining

The means of avoiding Complaining Arrogance is to avoid being discontented with what one has in this life. Paul said in Phil 4:11, Heb 13:5 that he has learned to "be content in what ever position I am", and that he believes these principles of God's provisions and does not Complain about anything! God does not cater to Complaining believers when He has not and cannot ever forsake or leave them, but has given them everything they need according to what is necessary for their spiritual growth. Believers Complain instead of using doctrine through the Faith Rest Drill (5 stages). Instead of using the 10 Problem Solving Devices, while residing inside of the Divine Dynasphere and thus having inner happiness. Instead they are continually dissatisfied, unless they are in fellowship and executing the plan of God, unless they are investigating with comprehension the principles of Bible Doctrine and expressing Advanced Personal Love for God as Occupation with the Person of The Lord Jesus, The Christ. Believers Complain about their spouse, their money, lack of money, their bills, their health, their jobs, their house, their church, their wants, their situations, their desires, and on and on; never remembering nor relying on GRACE. But the word of God says to give gratitude to God and "in all things give thanks", thus be thankful for everything even suffering and Divine Discipline, because "this is the will of God" for the believer who is positionally in Christ Jesus. (1Thess 5:18). Remember that Complaining about a life with all that God has provided, may end with being under the Sin Unto Death instead of Dying Grace. When the Reversionistic believer has run out of Complaints and whining, God will still be waiting and tapping his foot to bless and provide for him, and even though this person has done everything wrong he is still alive because of GRACE.

A man who goes from Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God into Negative Volition toward Bible Doctrine and Emotional Revolt of the Soul and Scar Tissue of the Soul in Reversionism will have manufactured his own misery and suffering and if he turns to God he will find no consolation. Consolation for the believer in both time of prosperity and time of adversity is ONLY FOUND in the Metabolized Bible Doctrine in one's own Right Lobe of the soul. Under pressure or disaster conditions Bible Doctrine cannot be learned rapidly enough to enable the believer to develop and deploy the final Problem Solving Device of Advanced Personal Love for God, Occupation with the Person of The Lord Jesus, The Christ. As a result this believer is going to go through the most intensive suffering and the only thing available to him is continued suffering which may diminish IF he recovers slowly and meticulously from his Reversionism. Therefore, the most difficult time to accumulate Metabolized Bible Doctrine into



the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul is when one is under intense suffering or pressure. The believer in this status has defeated himself by his own activity of neglecting Bible Doctrine making it impossible for him to use the Problem Solving Devices for blessing and consolation. There is no way to survive the winter of adversity, suffering and disaster without the inner resources of Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul, which can only be accumulated by daily function under the [Grace Apparatus for Perception](#) during times of relative prosperity. When in Reversionism under Emotional Revolt of the Soul the believer will be too disturbed to function to learn or recall any Bible Doctrine remaining in his soul and God will not wave his magic wand and take away his suffering.

Crying to God demonstrates a LACK of Metabolized Bible Doctrine and faith on the part of a believer because he should be exercising Faith and believing the promises and doctrines of the Word of God instead of crying to God to deliver him from his pressures. Most believers are chronic Complainers and cry babies instead of being believers saturated with maximum Bible Doctrine. Many true believers, who are regenerate and have made Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God, spend their entire lives crying and moaning about their predicaments when they should be expressing faith and claiming promises and using the entire Faith Rest Drill (5 stages). People who constantly Complain are not solving their own problems and NOT gaining any sympathy from anyone, especially not from God. Believers are designed at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God and thereafter to NOT lean on others or depend on them to resolve their problems and all believers are provided with all that which is necessary to effectively resolve their own problems. Therefore, believers are supposed to handle their own problems with what God provided for them from Eternity Past. There is the [Edification Complex of the Soul](#) which is supposed to be a structure in the soul built from the materials of Metabolized Bible Doctrine accumulated over a lifetime. There are [4 Spiritual Skills](#) including [10 Problem Solving Devices](#) developed from the Perception, Cognition, Inculcation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine and deployed onto the [Forward Line of Troops](#) of the soul to resist Satan's strategies for distraction of the believer set up in the Cosmic Dynaspheres. There is the mandate for believers to reside and function within the Power System of God the [Divine Dynasphere](#) and reject and avoid any involvement with the Cosmic Dynaspheres. When these things are used and functional in the life of the believer he then moves systematically and progressively through the stages of the Spiritual Life and ultimately executes the Protocol Plan of God.

The fact is that the believer cannot ever get ENOUGH Bible Doctrine and if he studies 1 hour per day on Bible Doctrine he has not gotten nearly enough for his single day in this world of the Cosmic Dynaspheres. No matter how hard one tries no believer can ever get enough Bible Doctrine, EVER. However, the more one gets the better off he will be and as he accumulates more Metabolized Bible Doctrine into his Stream of Consciousness of the Soul there will always be some idiot standing around with "[LEGALISTIC TRADITION](#)" coming out of his mouth to attempt to distract him from Doctrine or attempt to evangelize him into the Cosmic Dynaspheres. ([Job 5:1-3](#); [Phil 2:13-14](#))

Joshua lived and enjoyed his life for 40 years under the leadership of Moses and never did he Complain or have any mental attitude sins or Negative Volition. He learned Bible Doctrine and had no vacuum available to fill in his soul with Evil and its false doctrines. Moses, Paul, David and other mature believers all had failures and flaws but in the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul they guarded Bible Doctrine. They had maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of their Soul and thus had inner happiness and were almost always perfectly relaxed in every situation. When God exalts a man and another person tries to destroy him that other will suffer a terrible downfall, this was Pharaoh, King Saul, Nero, etc. This occurs because of the character of God not because of who or what these men were or did in life. It is the result of a lack of Complaining and lack of entanglement in the Interlocking System of Arrogance with a constant FOCUS on the Grace Plan and Purpose of God for their lives including consistent Perception, Cognition, Inculcation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine.

Therefore, when a believer has his eyes or focus on God and has developed both basic and advanced [Personal Love for God](#) he is able to enjoy people and be relaxed around them despite either their great stupidity or their great genius. When one's focus is on people, no matter where he is or what he does, his life will always be out of step with the Plan of God and he will be constantly miserable and constantly Complaining about the wrong things in his life and what others may have done. The believer is to keep any controversy he may have with another just between himself and them and never involve others for any reason. He should never attempt to bring others into the controversy and never Complain to others about the antagonistic person, he should not seek sympathy from others and not seek justification for his position in the controversial situation. He and he alone then must eliminate all others from any involvement in his controversy with another believer. This is one sign of a mature believer who always isolates the controversy.

### [Fear, Worry and Complaining vs Solutions](#)

Worry, not only produces Complaints but also makes a patsy of God because any time one is Complaining about anything he is blaming God for not providing solutions. A worried believer is never rational in his Complaints because worry and fear remove the ability to think and thus produce mental weakness and cowardice. Most often by overlooking the blessing of the moment as a result of trying to anticipate the future, the believer postpones the blessing of the moment or of the day and this then postpones the blessing of the future. In other words today's Bible Doctrine is tomorrow's blessings and if the believer is not happy today he is missing the blessing God gave him for this day and also perhaps postponing the blessing of the future, maybe indefinitely. Accumulation of today's Bible Doctrine with tomorrows Bible Doctrine results in great future blessings. Future blessings anticipated must never destroy blessing already appropriated and such anticipation without realization often produces Bitterness and Complaints which destroy both today's and tomorrow's blessings. Most Christians are totally divorced from reality and want and demand from God blessing in an instant. If they don't get the desired blessing instantly, then, for them, God is not real and Bible Doctrine does not work. Therefore, there is no excuse for fear, worry, Bitterness or Complaints from a

believer. It is under the meager light of a promise, which is a splinter of the light available from Bible Doctrine, that the entirety of Bible Doctrine must begin to be revealed and from effective enlightenment there can be no excuse for fear, worry, Bitterness and Complaining. Hanna had to learn the hard way about her barren status and her husband had another woman and this other woman had a boatload of children but Hanna was Complaining to the Lord because of having no children at all, this is the same situation observed with Sarah, Hagar and Abram. When Hanna finally got the Arrogance out of her soul under the direction of the Lord, she then had one of the most magnificent children of that generation, SAMUEL.

### Complaining vs The Faith Rest Drill (5 stages)

In the beginning the Justice of God toward Abram and all the blessings poured out on him only elicited Complaints from Abram. The most disgusting experience of life is to go all out to help someone and do everything one can to help them and then watch them sit back and malign and judge and Complain about what was done for them. This is the amazing experience of seeing the total depravity of man and the condition of people being NO Damned Good. All people having sinned and possessing an Old Sin Nature have certainly come short of the glory of God. Abram had not been just toward God when he Complained constantly that he did not yet have an heir as promised by God. When one is Complaining he is not waiting and waiting on the Grace of God cannot occur when there are in one's Stream of Consciousness of the Soul, Mental Attitude Sins. Believers may think and even say they are waiting on the Lord but then are constantly Complaining about the situation they are in therefore are obviously NOT WAITING on anything. The Grace of God toward Abram had obviously not caused the reciprocal response of a Grace attitude from Abram toward God in the important matter of having an heir. Believers should learn a very important lesson from observing Abram and his Complaints. The fact is that all Abram did by Complaining, something all believers should carefully NOTE, is POSTPONE the blessing from God for 15 years.

As per the Postulates of Integrity the source is vastly more important than the gift. Therefore the believer must constantly be conscious that to have the source is to have everything but to have everything without the source is nothing. Abram, OBVIOUSLY, had the source and should have been relaxed. He had the best situation in life, protection with provision and blessing, and yet he found time to Complain about some detail of life. Remember that according to David and Solomon throughout the proverbs, in LIFE for the believer in The Lord Jesus, The Christ, EVERYTHING is a detail except Bible Doctrine and its consistent inculcation. When having or lacking details in life disturbs one, the source, The Lord Jesus, The Christ, is not in focus. When the source is not in focus the believer inevitably Complains though he has everything he needs in life from protection and security to maximum blessing. The great question to believers is, HOW can one Complain when he has a guarantee of always having everything? The true answer is, Neglect or Rejection of Bible Doctrine causes him to lose focus on the Plan of God and fail in advancement in the Spiritual Life thus not developing an Occupation with the Person of The Lord Jesus, The Christ, Problem Solving Device #10. When the believer fails to reach a point of focus on the Person of The Lord Jesus, The Christ and maximum Category I Personal Love for God then he will think only of what he does not have. He stops enjoying what he has and can only think in terms of what he does not have. It is

occupation with the source of one's security and provision which is essential and this, as the source of all blessing, is The Lord Jesus, The Christ. The believer who counts his blessings and finds that 1 is MISSING is demonstrating a loss of Category I Love and he has obviously forgotten to count the BLESSOR who is the source of everything worth while in life and also for all of eternity. A Complaining Mental Attitude is a sign of a slipping Spiritual Life and to the extent one is malcontent and dissatisfied and tends to Complain or whine to that extent this is a warning that all is not well in the Spiritual Life and he no longer is making Adjustment to the Justice of God. In his Complaints Abram failed to make Adjustment to the Justice of God and the source of everything for the believer is GOD and he cannot lose the source nor salvation and having the source therefore makes NO Complaint EVER VALID.

### The Faith Rest Drill (5 stages) & Complaining Solutions

The Faith Rest Drill (5 stages) is the solution for recovery from much in the Arrogance complex and any of the myriad of pressures in life and it is simply understanding what God has provided and waiting for the solution without fear or worry. This is not sitting down and waiting for a miraculous deliverance from God but continually moving forward especially in the Spiritual Life as God provides the openings and options to do so. This demands perfect Confidence in God and claiming promises, supporting them with Bible Doctrine principles and forming these 2 into doctrinal rationales to come to doctrinal conclusions to control the situation and solve the problem or pressure. This does not mean one is to sit and wait for God to provide while he does nothing. The doctrinal conclusions as the solution means that God **WILL** provide but the believer must go about his normal business, without what he may perceive as his necessity at the time, and whatever he does, he does without it, and continues to do what he should be doing. He must be totally confident that God will provide whatever is needed at the right time and he cannot Complain about incompetent leaders or adverse situations in his life in order to ensure that the DOCTRINAL CONCLUSION DOES NOT TAKE HIM OUT OF ACTION IN LIFE.

Prior to the exodus and during the attempt to free the Jews from Egypt, when every plague failed to get the Jews out of slavery they Complained to Moses. Moses performed every plague before the elders of Israel BEFORE he went to pharaoh and performed them. In effect there was a dress rehearsal of the whole process, all 10 plagues were unfolded before the Jewish leaders FIRST. All the leaders needed to do was call together their tribe and explain to them what was going to happen each time and how pharaoh was going to constantly say no until the last plague. Then all that the people would have needed to do was SIT back and watch it happen. Instead in between each plague occurrence they Complained and hollered and said Moses was wrong and God was not with him. This is what BELIEVERS even today do, they will go to their Pastor Teacher and want help with a problem in their life and when questioned they say to him, "I know the Faith Rest Drill (5 stages) now what should I do?", and the pastor MUST simply and strongly reply to them, taking them by the arm and leading them to his door while saying "USE IT".

The only crash program which will cause the effective development of the Faith Rest Drill (5 stages) is pressure, adversity, even disaster and devastating trials and totally hopeless situations.

The Faith Rest Drill <sup>(5 stages)</sup> is the means of application which glorifies The Lord Jesus, The Christ and in the midst of great suffering and trials and heartache by the use of Faith Rest, the believer can rejoice. This results in the great inner happiness which comes to the believer in his times of great pressure as a result of his using the GRACE assets given him by God causing cursing to be turned to blessing RIGHT THERE on the spot. In the use of the Faith Rest Drill <sup>(5 stages)</sup> the reality of the Christian Way of Life must become clear in that when the believer has and uses a promise from God there is nothing which God can do except *honor it*. There may be an elapse of time before the promise is fulfilled and things may get WORSE before they get better and when this believer is Complaining about the NOW situation, this will look like a picnic in comparison to what he is begging for God to bring to him. He must relax and wait for the deliverance of the Lord WITHOUT Complaining. Like the Jews traveling out of Egypt and living in the desert for 39 years God will provide even while the believer is murmuring, Complaining and screaming for help. This is Grace which always depends ONLY on who and what God is not ever on who or what believers are. (Ex 16:2-4)

The believer must understand that he will have problems as long as he lives but all problems can and will be solved based on his function under the Faith Rest Drill <sup>(5 stages)</sup> and Complaining about his situation is counterproductive for his Spiritual Life. Functions under the Faith Rest Drill <sup>(5 stages)</sup> built up progressively from maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine accumulated in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul produce an inner happiness and mental stability which puts all problems, difficulties and pressures in life into the hands of the Lord and allows the believer to move right on past them. The most incredible thing about the Christian Way of Life is that one can and will often have many problems in life but still have an incredible inner happiness without Complaints. Too many people, especially believers, think that the only way to solve a problem is to get rid of it but this is ludicrous because when a problem is solved by getting rid of it there ends up being more problems which are far greater problems. The believer should enjoy his problems and not try to get rid of them lest he end with far worse problems to have to deal with. Once one gets to know his problems, he should simply relax and enjoy them as the Lord provides for him while he is having the problems. One should not be able to look at a believer and tell if he is having problems in his life and believers should always function just like the disciples who were told by Jesus to get rid of the sack cloth and clean the ashes off of their faces when they were under pressure. The believer should reflect the inner happiness as a result of the Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of his Soul and from his use of the Faith Rest Drill <sup>(5 stages)</sup>. This is not putting on a false front but is emphasizing the issue that NO believer can serve the Lord and be a whining Complainer. EVERY believer has problems and pressures, SO WHAT. Under the Policy of Grace and by persistent residence in the Divine Dynasphere the Believer can be the happiest, most stable most well adjusted person in this world WITH ALL HIS PROBLEMS.

### Whining & Complaining in Rebound

Rebound is the procedure for recognition and acknowledgment to God of one's personal failures in the Spiritual Life but it also requires that the believer FORGET these failures and continue to move on in his Spiritual Life. (1Cor 16, 1Cor 11:28-31) When the believer fails through carnality he must NEVER whine nor Complain about his failures. The principle is that he is



NOT EVER to cry over the spilled milk of any past failures. Use of the [Rebound Procedure](#) means his failures are totally blotted out and therefore he must forget them. ([Phil 3:14](#)) He must isolate the sin and move forward with continued consistent Post Salvation Epistemological Rehabilitation from Perception, Cognition, Incultation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine. ([Heb 12:15](#))

### [Reversion Recovery vs Complaining](#)

Believers in [Reversionism](#) are ones who are constantly and consistently Complaining about everything in their lives because they are living a life in abject misery as a result of being involved in the stages of Reversionism. The effects of Reversionism on the Believer are described in [Ps 77](#) and include:

- ✧ God listens to this believer as a result of his GRACE policy and ONLY BECAUSE OF GRACE.
- ✧ In his distress this believer can keep holding up his hands, begging God for deliverance, never tiring of this but his soul REJECTS CONSOLATION as a result of being DEVOID OF BIBLE DOCTRINE.
- ✧ This believer may want to remember about God and have confidence in God but being agitated in [Emotional Revolt](#) of the Soul he can only Complain so that his Human Spirit faints because he is overwhelmed by the suffering **which he has brought on himself** with his Negative Volition toward Bible Doctrine.
- ✧ This believer even accuses God of keeping him from restful sleep in insomnia but it is a result of the agitation of his suffering and Emotional Revolt of the Soul that he cannot even sleep.

It is typical of reversionists to then turn and Complain and blame anyone in any leadership position for whatever they perceive as their perilous situation. They are in hopeless despair and express this as part of their reversionism. The believer must stop and recognize that God has never compromised his Absolute Righteousness nor Absolute Justice in providing his Grace provisions to every believer. However, for reversion recovery to restore the [Edification Complex of the Soul](#), redevelop and redeploy the [10 Problem Solving Devices](#) requires consistent daily function under the [Grace Apparatus for Perception](#), for Cognition, Incultation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine, under Operation Z and the 4 Rs. In the situation of the Jews coming out of Egypt and out of Slavery and experiencing suffering as a hopeless situation at the red sea they screamed and Complained to God for help and even blasphemed in their reversionism. However, *despite all of this*, God under his Grace Plan and Policy delivered them to safely on the other side of the red sea and destroyed their pursuing enemies. Therefore, God can and will do the same for each and every believer in distress or under pressure in life because of HIS GRACE policy and plan. ([Ps 77:5-6](#), [Ps 77:11-12](#))

Under disaster conditions Bible Doctrine cannot be learned rapidly enough, therefore, the believer who has neglected Bible Doctrine is going to go through the most intensive suffering. The only thing available for him is this continued suffering as he recovers slowly and meticulously from reversionism by the consistent use of the Rebound Procedure and Post Salvation Epistemological Rehabilitation. There can be no removal of his suffering until he

recovers from his [Reversionism](#) and reversion recovery is never instantaneous but it must come first. The inner resources of Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul as solutions only result from consistent function under the Grace Apparatus for Perception, daily.

Return to the [Table of Contents](#)

### [Gate #55 – The Arrogance of Retaliation and Revenge](#)

When any military, business unit or any competitive group has great success and victory over its opposition this contributes to their confidence. However, very often it also contributes to their Arrogance and is an offense to the Arrogance of the defeated unit. In order to defeat an Arrogant opponent most often the victor will engage in some form of Retaliation. When the Arrogance of the defeated unit is hurt its Arrogance will retaliate in some way on the victor. This is a very convoluted situation and is very often the cause of many of the problems in local churches and other organizations.

A very important principle to remember is, *when someone is trying to insult one then he should ignore them however, when someone is trying to kill one then he should destroy them,* (Col. Jeff Cooper) and when others are engaged in maligning, one never retaliates. Knowing when to back off, when to kill or when to apologize takes [Flexibility](#) and flexibility requires total lack of Arrogance. Having no Arrogance and nothing to prove to anyone, the believer can then know when to apologize, when to back off and use Bible Doctrine as the solution. If, as a result of backing off or apologizing, people think him cowardly and he knows he is not, of what consequence is that. Being thoughtful of others and being free from Arrogance is always the truly proper and ‘manly’ thing to do. However, the Arrogant one antithetically either backs off only as a result of his cowardice or attacks in Arrogance knowing he can destroy the other in his Retaliation. When a thing is [Nonessential](#) one must never allow Arrogance to enter the picture and determine his actions regarding it.

Above all, Retaliation and Revenge is the Arrogance for vengeance, in which one basically says he can do a better job than God of righting wrongs committed against him. Any time one engages in vengeance or the practice of Revenge it is both blasphemous and presumptuous. It is blasphemous since it is downgrading the Justice of God and it is presumptuous because it assumes personal Revenge function is superior to Divine Discipline from the Justice of God. This one says in effect in his Arrogance that his punishment is better than that of God and that God does not know his business concerning how to meter out justice. He ignores the reality of the Essence of God and lowers himself to the standards of those others against whom he seeks Revenge. Personal Revenge Modus Operandi is a breakdown of the [Faith Rest Drill \(5 stages\)](#) and instead of depending on the Lord this one depends on self to handle the matter where differences exist. This ignores the fact that the Point of Reference for mankind with God is the Justice of God, which is far more capable of dealing with man than anything man can ever come up with. The [Royal Family Honor Code](#) demands that the believer leave Retaliation in

the hands of the Justice of God. ([Deut 32:35](#), [Is 35:3-4](#), [Jer 11:20](#)) One's volition must be involved in doing this but it is an entreated command and a requirement for proper Royal Family of God function. The believer must ALWAYS defer to the Justice of God when tempted to retaliate for wrongs against self. The Lord may choose to discipline the offender in private and the one wronged will not know anything about it but it must always be left in the hands of the Lord. Revenge functions, on the other hand, would make everything public and cause self, as a result of Arrogance, to be glorified by public Retaliation and proving to the world how smart and capable he is in righting this wrong. This is truly Arrogance. By taking matters into one's own hands and retaliating or seeking vengeance the believer interferes with the Justice of God and violates the privacy of the Royal Family of God. Retaliation interferes with the Justice of God punishing another and lowers the one who is retaliating to the standard of the antagonist in the Evil function of Dog eat Dog. There is no honor in this and no standard of Grace where the believer is to place the matter in the Lord's hands while treating his enemy on the basis of his own character through [Impersonal – Unconditional Love for Mankind](#), rather than the character of that antagonist. The rule for the believer is that he should never reduce self to the level of what he despises in others. Revenge and Retaliation functions lower one's norms and standards to the level of Evil resulting in pettiness, implacability, vindictiveness, [Jealousy](#), hatred, [Bitterness](#) and all sorts of Arrogance toward one's antagonist when one should be functioning under Grace. **This does not mean that you should not engage in self defense or defense of persons or property when necessary.**

Return to the [Table of Contents](#)

### [Gate #56 – The Arrogance of Criminality](#)

Universal Criminal Arrogance in the United States of America has been rapidly developing since the 1960s because of the lack of a large pivot of mature believers. As a result of there being very little restraint on the criminal community this Arrogance takes what it wants whether it is property, privacy or life. Meddling gossips, in any situation, are on the brink of criminality having intruded on the privacy of others. Once there has been intrusion on privacy that eventually leads to confiscation of property and this is the criminal and points to the criminal direction of the function of the American government which therefore is obviously criminal. The criminal mind motivates him to take what he wants. If it is a woman, then rape is OK, if it is some material object, then theft is OK, if someone prevents them from getting their way they simply murder them in their mind and this is OK. The criminal mind says that everything he wants is his and no one nor anything can or should keep him from it.

Crime by definition is a violation of human freedom with [Impersonal Unconditional Love for Mankind](#) as the means of relating crime to human freedom. Impersonal Love for Mankind does not mean that one must like, or as the baptists say in their church services 'Love' everyone or even be nice to them. The objective of Impersonal Love for Mankind is to preserve privacy for everyone one meets or knows. For the unbeliever there is the negative approach to crime and freedom with the 5 commandments which are prohibitions for the commission of Murder,

Adultery, Theft, Perjury, and Covetousness. For the believer there is also a positive approach to crime related to freedom and it is summarized within the concept of Impersonal Unconditional Love for Mankind. This is an obligation for the believer under the [Royal Family Honor Code](#) to live and let live thereby allowing others to choose their own path in life without interference whether they choose well or badly. No matter how strong one may appear to be if he is Arrogant and subjective he is vulnerable to weaknesses. The weak then control the strong and the strong become Arrogant and subjective. This is a trend of history and this is how Criminals control the law through intimidation of those who have judicial power.

This Arrogance is inclusive of both Unbeliever Criminals and Believer Criminals. ([Eph 4:28](#)) All criminality is acquired through involvement in the Interlocking System of Arrogance where Believer criminals are those who have fragmented their own lives by using their own volition to enter into the Interlocking System of Arrogance. The criminal is totally preoccupied with self and [Hypersensitive](#) about self. He is a [Self Righteous](#) person justifying what he does through the Arrogance Skill of [Self Justification](#) for his criminal actions. He is [Anti-Authority](#), Anti-Establishment, and very often Anti-God and Anti-Bible Doctrine. This believer can take or leave Bible Doctrine and usually when in serious trouble may be interested in Bible Doctrine for a while until the trouble passes. Any Lawful citizen may be irresponsible without being a criminal but all criminals are irresponsible. Believers, living within the Cosmic Dynaspheres and degenerating down through the stages of [Reversionism](#), are capable of robbery, burglary, kidnapping, shoplifting, mugging, blackmail, larceny, drug activity, prostitution, rape, murder and in effect any criminal act. Criminality often begins with rejection of authority in the home of the parents which results ultimately in rejection of ALL authority. The criminal has a basic sense of insecurity related to the FEAR of Ridicule and Peer Pressure so that he is reduced to nothing, the ZERO state, even when he is NOT actually in it. This insecurity leads the criminal to a status of TRANSPARENCY in which he believes that his worthlessness is obvious to all and everyone perceives it. In this status he often blames others for his real or imagined failures and he has no control over his [Emotions](#) especially anger and hatred. The criminal is always bored and wants excitement, stimulation and to prove his power. This desire for excitement is so great that he demands constant stimulation and living without it is a put down for him. He must have constant stimulation related to crime, sex, torture, alcohol, drugs, making others fear him and eventually only extreme criminal activity related to Torture, Rape, and Murder will bring sufficient stimulation and satisfy his boredom.

Therefore, ***ALL terrorists are criminals and NOT PATRIOTS*** who, because of their boredom, torture and abuse hostages which they have the insatiable lust to hurt. All Liars are not criminals but ALL criminals are Liars and for them, lying is a way of life and they inevitably become pathological liars. Habitual deceit and lying is the total disregard of the criminal for truth in any form and is the standard way for him to deal with the world and lying is part of criminal manipulation. Criminals are totally Arrogant and irrational and strongly motivated by the LUSTS from the Old Sin Nature and are totally involved in LOCKED IN Arrogance and therefore become extremely vulnerable to [Psychopathic Arrogance](#).

### Origin of Criminal Arrogance

Criminals originate from either demon possession or demon influence and all criminality begins with Arrogance and preoccupation with Self and includes both believers and unbelievers. The criminal is anti-authority and anti-establishment and very Self Righteous with their own special area of pseudo or non-virtuous Morality and Fanaticism but this does not restrain their crime but in fact justifies it. This Arrogance leads to sociopathic behavior, becoming a pathological liar, being filled with Inordinate Ambition and being caught up in Achievement Arrogance.

Criminal Arrogance finds its roots in Institutional Arrogance and a total rejection of authority wherever the Laws of Divine Establishment provide legitimate function for authority. As a part of Arrogance involvement criminals are so self centered that they start thinking everything belongs to them. The criminal is a sociopath and pathological liar filled with unrestrained Mental Attitude Arrogance. He is generally covered with a facade of hypocrisy and the smarter the criminal the better the facade. He has no compunction about lying or the use of violence to attain his objective. He recognizes only his own authority, and gives lip service to some of the other authorities but in his soul he despises it. Criminals are created from the DECISIONS of their own volition. There is no such thing as a person becoming a criminal because of his environment and from the worst environments some of the greatest people have arisen and from the best of the best environments come some of the worst criminals. Great examples of this are found in the Bidens and Clintons as criminal administrators of the United States and their entire families. Environment is not an issue in making a criminal and it is the same thing which takes the believer out of fellowship with God, a personal decision. This is also that which makes a Hitler and a moslem fanatic and what brought the islamized Moro people in the Philippines at Mindanao to fanatically attack American soldiers which resulted in the development and deployment of the 1911 45ACP pistol.

Criminality is one of the greatest attacks against freedom and all criminals are saturated and totally entangled in the Interlocking System of Arrogance and functioning under the principles of EVIL. Today this country is filled with criminality at every level of society and though there are probably more communist agents than there are FBI agents operating here, criminality is the greatest threat to American freedom. This is the result in contemporary history of the criminal having no enforced disciplinary restraint, they are NOT PUNISHED. Criminality as the enemy of freedom MUST BE HARSHLY PUNISHED by putting them into slavery and taking them out of society or by executing them. Criminals WILL NOT restrain themselves and their desires and needs are of maximum importance to them above all else therefore the individual citizen or the judicial system and Law Enforcement must restrain them. Criminals lust for another's property, person, and even their life and they WILL NOT restrain these lusts so very often today the law abiding individual intended as a victim must restrain them personally. Therefore in a free society there are those who in their arrogance reject the truth which provides them with freedom and MUST be summarily removed from society by their DEATH. For a very long time in the United States this has not been done and criminals are portrayed as heroes when they are in fact ARROGANT ANIMALS.

Criminal Arrogance is often insanely Arrogant and most insanity is from locked in involvement



in the Interlocking System of Arrogance. As a believer when one rejects all authority under the [Laws of Divine Establishment](#) but has responded to the gospel with faith alone in The Lord Jesus, The Christ alone, he finds himself in a great dilemma where by rejecting authority he is the enemy of the client nation but at the same time the only hope for him is in his regeneration which is the beginning of the Plan of God for that believer. Salvation cannot change the criminal unless it is followed by spiritual growth through consistent Perception, Cognition, Inculcation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine and generally the criminal fails at this point being unable to accept the authority of the one teaching Bible Doctrine. For the criminal, accepting ANY authority is an attack on the very Arrogance which makes him a criminal in the first place. The average Pastor Teacher has no chance of teaching Bible Doctrine to this type of person because he is too easily deceived by the criminal. If after Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God the criminal is genuinely under Positive Volition toward Bible Doctrine this is his only hope for rehabilitation. If he puts on a false front of being positive to doctrine then the Interlocking System of Arrogance will prevail and the career of crime will win out. Traditional psychiatric attempts to solve the problems in a criminal mind have included all the realm of psycho therapy even neuro surgery with all of them proving very ineffective. From the viewpoint of the sociologist the cause of crime is environmental with childhood trauma being its source. Dr. Yokelson and Dr. Samsenoff have disproved this theory and shown that in the same family there will arise criminals and law abiding individuals with the differences being in the soul where decisions are made for or against criminality by the individual. Therefore the Arrogance Factor in crime is the only major issue.

NO ONE SHOULD EVER FEEL SORRY FOR CRIMINALS SINCE THEY REPRESENT A TYPE OF MENTALITY WHICH IS TOTALLY DESTRUCTIVE TO SOCIETY AND FREEDOM. In the courtroom the defense lawyer very often tries to make the jury feel sorry for the criminal and use an appeal to emotion so that the crime is forgotten as well as the victim. Criminals who commit capital crimes should be either drawn and quartered or hung from a tree or lamp post in their front yard and have all the family and neighbors stand around and watch their body disintegrate. A sick society is always soft on crime and is also soft on enemies outside the nation such as communism and islam. The sick society exists because of a multiplicity of systems interlocking within the Interlocking System of Arrogance. Everyone in this kind of society is constantly trying to keep their [Pride](#) inflated despite its being constantly challenged and compressed resulting in a plethora of Mental Attitude Sins. When a whole society exists in this condition and people don't think in terms of principle this is a sign of the impending required destruction of that society.

The make up of the criminal and criminality involves irresponsibility, lack of [Authority Orientation](#), a basic sense of insecurity expressed in violence or abuse in relationships, lack of temper control, constant boredom, recycling of the [Arrogance Skills](#), constant lying and living a LIE. In every generation there are young people whose Arrogance results in immoral criminal behavior and these children must be destroyed to preserve the society. When crime is not controlled and destroyed by the judicial system then FREEDOM instead is destroyed. Criminal Arrogance can be found in all walks of life and all types and persuasions of people. Many nice

people have started their lives functioning under the [Laws of Divine Establishment](#) or in the [Divine Dynasphere](#) of Christianity but eventually move into the Cosmic Dynaspheres through some system of [Morality](#). Many moral people upon becoming involved in the Cosmic Dynaspheres have their morality distorted into Arrogance and they become either a criminal or [Crusader](#). The criminal can be a liar, murderer, revolutionist or terrorist, he uses violence for his benefit or to solve his problems in life and is totally preoccupied with self being anti-authority and totally Self Righteous. There are many believers who are or become criminals and this generally shocks most people. Their criminality can involve murder, rape, theft, and all of the accumulated functions under Evil. As with all criminality theirs is total rejection of any other authority in the life just as occurs in Institutional Arrogance. Criminal Arrogance as an extension of Institutional Arrogance presents these people as pathological liars being sociopathic, asocial or antisocial in their behavior. This becomes a pathological aberration where the criminal is altered by his own behavior.

One of the things which occurs with a people who live in a degenerate society and in fact is a sign of the existence of a degenerate society, is that people forget the victims of crime. By the time of the criminals trial there is developed, as a result of the media distortions and propagandizing, a painting of the criminal in the wrong light, which generates great sympathy on the part of the jury and others involved in the trial toward the criminal. ALL criminals should be considered as one would a mad dog and people forget that he has inevitably performed other criminal acts or murdered one or more people, for which he is NOT on trial, because criminals do not specialize. When the trial finally comes along everyone feels sorry for the actual criminal and those who come to testify against the criminal are always on trial themselves for their character or integrity. Very often the defense attorney for the criminal is given far too great a leeway to try to destroy the integrity and credibility of the testimony of the one who has the courage to speak up against crime. This is degeneracy in every way added to the degeneracy of the media in always being sympathetic toward criminals especially if the criminal is a racial minority member.

One of the great classic indicators of degeneracy in the United States of America in 1979 was the people jumping onto the band wagon of antisemitism, imagining that Israel should relinquish some of their land holdings to Arabs. One of the most amusing things of all, which returns to the Interlocking System of Arrogance and [Conspiratorial Arrogance](#), is where the inadequate teams up with the Arrogant. The Arrogant is conspiratorial toward some system of authority or nation and the inadequate is jealous and not necessarily a good partner for the Arrogant but always joins with him because the Arrogant knows how to attract and win over the inadequate with flattery. In the late 70s, Arafat of the Palestinians and Jesse Jackson who represented a black revolutionary group which is conspiratorial and totally inadequate were going to go around to businesses and make them contribute to the black revolutionaries and if the businesses refused they were going to cut off their business with the Arabs.

The criminal mind rejects all authority in life but this does not mean that a criminal does not give overt acknowledgment to some form of authority and this is a part of his machinations. He uses all authority to suit his own purpose just as he uses people in the execution of any

nefarious scheme. The criminal often appears to accept some authority, that of a psychiatrist, some spiritual authority, and often the criminal mind appears to be positive to the Gospel message and to definitely believe in Christ. Once the criminal mind believes in Christ the issues are very clearly drawn. At that point the criminal faces his real crisis in life assuming that his conversion is genuine. He may have a mind loaded with doctrine but he will not and cannot apply it under reverse concentration because of involvement in the Interlocking System of Arrogance. The Interlocking System of Arrogance cuts off all reverse concentration on spiritual phenomenon, all application of doctrine to any situation.

Criminal Arrogance therefore abuses authority and has no sense of responsibility nor of accountability and without responsibility and accountability there is Tyranny. Criminal Arrogance, therefore, inevitably uses violence to accomplish the purpose of Evil as is clearly demonstrated by the Russian Communists, Chinese Communists, Cuban Communists, islamic moslems, and the “black lives matter” and “antifa” movements and others in the Unites States of America today. In this way violence becomes the lawless abuse of power. This is the criminal who uses a weapon which gives him power over the law abiding citizen. He is misusing the weapon under the concept of illegal power, thus the fault does not lie with the weapon but with the criminal, guns do not have Old Sin Natures only people have Old Sin Natures. By removing the weapon the problem of criminal violence is not solved, however, by execution of the criminal the solution is achieved. Weapons do not kill people, people kill people because their Old Sin Nature is out of control and those who use unjustified violence in any situation MUST BE EXECUTED.

The temptation of Criminal Arrogance is always to go against the Law in cases such as theft, income tax fraud, illicit drugs distribution, and many other categories. All are part of Cosmic Dynasphere I testing and Criminal Arrogance. Criminality is NEVER a matter of environment but a matter of Arrogance and when people cannot compete and satisfy their narcissus complexes in normal things in life such as athletics or other areas, they often revert to criminality. The solution to criminality is to enforce the law, make it work, execute criminals, improve the law, and stop using the law of the nation to try to solve social problems. Criminality, by its nature, is the result of the criminal using his own volition and in Arrogance setting himself ABOVE THE RULES of society, the Laws of Divine Establishment and [Divine Institution](#) functions which protect the whole Human Race. This results (or should under the law of the nation) in the criminal relinquishing all freedoms and rights, and when conviction occurs it should be logically followed by capital punishment in any situation where the crime has resulted in any major attack against volitional freedom, privacy or property. There is a very fine line regarding involvement in the use of violence between being criminal or being justified. Violence which saves one’s life or property or that of others is and should be justified. Violence which seeks to improve the environment relates Crusader Arrogance to Criminal Arrogance.

In consideration of criminal Arrogance, the Arrogant use of power occurs in 3 categories:

- Exploitation == distortion, abuse and violence
- Manipulation == conspiracy and control

- Competition == domination and superiority.

Everything in LIFE which is competitive should stimulate NOT Arrogance but MOTIVATION. Self Righteous people always have something to hide and as a transient or permanent Psychotic the Criminally Arrogant are always Self Righteous. Insensitive Arrogant people will always become violent when given the opportunity. Love can exist with or without sex, Lust can exist only with sex therefore, Rape is a crime of Violent Arrogance not SEX.

The strong man is Arrogant when he depends on his physical strength for winning and Arrogance in the soul destroys the effective strength of his body. This is the derivation of the concept of the strong body and weak mind. The weak mind is NOT stupid but IS Arrogant. A Person very often is proud of his physical strength and this is part of the Arrogance derived directly from EVIL. This is a trend that is always found in certain categories of people and very often leads them into Criminal Arrogance:

- Bullies
- Petty Criminals
- Talented Athletes

Intrusion on the privacy of others is a basic foundational criminal Modus Operandi. It does not bother a criminal to injure others but it bothers him when he is the one who is injured. Understanding this principle brings to light the valid concept that the criminal ONLY understands violence which is perpetrated against himself GREATER than any he is willing to engage in against others. This is also true of criminal nations or societies who try to usurp the status of peaceful societies. Though he is untrustworthy himself the criminal demands that others trust him, if he gains the trust of others he always exploits it. There are more than 70 errors of thinking which occur in the criminal at a very early age from Arrogance involvement and this is a developed phenomenon. Criminals commit crimes by a deliberate act of their free will while being totally in contact with reality and in control of their behavior. They have no concern for their victims and no remorse for any injury they do. In this Arrogance they always try to justify their actions and their intrusion into the privacy of others and seek to justify being totally occupied with self. Political crimes are the worst crimes of all as seen in the Modus Operandi of all communist governments because they effect huge numbers of people. Criminal thinking rejects educational, parental and any authority around them long before they were rejected by the authorities. They rejected coaches before the coach threw them off the team. They rejected the school authority before it had to throw them out. They rejected the parents authority before the parents had to throw them out. While some become criminals others live a lifetime of Self Righteous Anti-Authority Arrogance.

### **Criminality in the Believer**

The criminal often pretends to accept spiritual authority and respond to the gospel of Christ. The response to the gospel is used to enable him to hide in churches and he even may be regenerate but this alone does not change the criminal. This is a hiding place for him until he can become involved in some other criminal activity in life. The only hope for criminality apart from severe social punishment is Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God and then always the exercise, consistently, of Positive Volition in the Perception, Cognition, Incultation,

Metabolization & Application of Bible Doctrine. It is imperative that the criminal believer function under Positive Volition to Bible Doctrine because he has both the Lord and the society to contend with regarding his escape from criminality. Only Bible Doctrine can truly change a person and the most significant change which must occur in any criminal is gaining respect for authority. The criminal must metabolize enough Bible Doctrine to break him out of criminality and to do this he must accept the authority of the one communicating Bible Doctrine. The criminal may go along with Bible Doctrine teaching as long as it is in agreement with his own ideas, however, once something is taught which goes against his prior trend of thinking his Arrogance may rise up and he will again be unable to accept the doctrine. If his Arrogance prevails and doctrine is not accepted then the authority of the Pastor Teacher will be rejected. However, if he is clear of Arrogance and will accept this teaching as from the Lord and profit from it he will ultimately break out of criminality.

Christian criminals should always, when convicted, be placed in prisons behind bars and if their crimes call for execution they should be the first ones executed. Criminal Arrogance in believers has made suckers out of many other believers. These Christian criminals are liars and are living a LIE under EVIL and use Christianity as a front and should be given maximum penalties. There are criminals however who learn Bible Doctrine and break out of the Interlocking System of Arrogance and pay their debt to society. The con artist who uses members of a Local Church and gets them to testify for his character is saturated with EVIL and deeply in the Interlocking System of Arrogance. The person who goes along with this is stupid, totally ignorant of or totally distracted from Bible Doctrine. When a person gets involved in any criminal activity and is being adjudicated the system must ALWAYS REMEMBER THE VICTIM whose rights were infringed and especially those who have had their right to life ended. *It is a total distortion of Grace to ever help any criminal.* Let the criminal pay the maximum penalty especially if he is a believer since as a believer in The Lord Jesus, The Christ he has had to break many more restraints to commit crimes as a Christian. Arrogance is a major distraction from Bible Doctrine and when a believer begins to learn about Grace he then thinks he can get away with crime from the influence of Evil BUT God will punish him for his violation of the laws of society which are derived from the Laws of Divine Establishment. Today the criminal is not at all restrained and the only restraints which have been provided by the police and judges have been completely removed by criminal intimidation, or simply by stupid LIBERALS making up their own system of laws or how to enforce the law on the street. It is possible for the criminal to be saved by Grace and break out of criminality and the Interlocking System of Arrogance but when the criminal uses Grace and the church as a front for criminality or in an effort to get a reduced punishment they are the lowest scum alive and should be punished to the maximum.

Elijah being brilliant and a mature believer correctly evaluates the historical setting he is in but he related this to his Arrogance and rejected the authority of the Lord who came to speak with



him at the cave and he rejects the lesson given him. Paul in [Romans Chapter 11](#) used Elijah as an example rather than Moses or David or another great mature believer from the Old Testament Scripture because Elijah shocked him more than anyone else. Paul as an unbeliever was the best killer of Christians totally motivated by Self Righteousness and involvement in the Interlocking System of Arrogance. He had great authority, power and incredible success in his youth and as a zealous pharisee he was the greatest persecutor of Christians and killed them by the thousands. He was a murderer and an assassin. However, as a believer in The Lord Jesus, The Christ he could understand the unbeliever doing this because he had done this as an unbeliever but he could not understand Elijah because Elijah did what he did as a mature believer killing the prophets of Baal. This was criminal Arrogance in the mature believer.

### **Criminals vs Arrogant Fundamentalist Christians**

There is no difference between the mind or the thinking of the [Reversionist](#) believer and that of the unbeliever. The same thought pattern which can cause a person to enter into criminal activity can also cause the believer to enter reversionism. Believers need to understand Arrogance completely and the importance of avoiding it as a Christian. When THE great disaster occurs in the United States of America as it must, the criminal mind will become very apparent when there is total failure of the function of law. This very status is on the American doorstep today with the calling for “defunding of the police”. This is characterized also today during the “demonstrations” occurring as the result often of the death of 1 single black man, who was himself a criminal, while opposing police. No one in Arrogance is teachable and the Arrogant ones are totally subjective, thinking too much of themselves. Circumstances of life are not a part of creating criminals or reversionists but Arrogance very much is. Criminals develop extreme deviant thinking patterns which are different than those of any other “normal” persons. Criminals are liars and deceivers with little capacity for love and companionship and they easily and readily commit brutal acts without a twinge of conscience. They disregard the rights of others to live safely while demanding others show them the utmost respect and admiration. Criminal Arrogance is Arrogance in the extreme and it can just as easily be present in the believer as in the Unbeliever. Given the opportunity the believer with this mentality will be just as vicious and vile under the strong influence of Evil as any criminal, only being restrained, as any criminal, by a strong local authority and fear of retribution from the law.

### **Criminality, Non-Systematic Evil & Freedom**

Criminality is a type of NON-Systematic Evil, and simply reflects the degeneracy in a society and the United States since the 1960s has been deeply sinking into and involved in this DEGENERACY. This disorganized Evil is found as Private Violence and is simply another name for DEGENERACY. This is what people who know each other and propose to love each other DO TO EACH OTHER.

- ▲ Child abuse
- ▲ Spousal abuse
- ▲ Rape

This is a violation of the trust on which all human relationships exist and is cruelty exercised on those closest to one, those most vulnerable, least able or inclined to defend themselves from

their supposed loving attackers. This occurs because the one perpetrating this abuse gets a cheap squirt of Approbation from having this POWER over another person. Therefore, Degeneracy is NON-organized or NON-Systematic Evil and in that realm of criminality, Private Violence is the power of Degeneracy. Absolute Truth and Degeneracy can coexist as it did in Sodom and does today in the United States of America because Degeneracy is Disorganized Evil. Therefore, there can be and is an ongoing coexistence between advancing and mature believers and disorganized evil. This results from the existence of the Antithetical functions of Degeneracy and Spiritual Advance. Disorganized NON-Systematic Evil is permitted and exists wherever there is freedom because freedom gives the individual the CHOICE to engage in crime even though this is a bad expression of freedom with wrong decisions from a position of weakness. However, this Degeneracy of Disorganized NON-Systematic Evil generally then opens the way for the rise of Organized Systematic Evil in situations where [National Arrogance](#) is developed. Therefore, Freedom, in its purest legitimate form, says OK so go ahead and commit crimes, however, if one is caught the result will be execution for them and True Orthodox Fundamental Christians readily coexist with these principles and situations. The point is that under FREEDOM when there is active Disorganized NON-Systematic Evil and its degeneracy in a nation believers are still FREE to evangelize and the criminals are also free to evangelize the believer as well and it is FREEDOM of VOLITION and CHOICE which is thereby preserved.

### **Psychology & Criminality**

There is no such thing as psychological recovery from criminality. The criminal uses the psychologist but they are not cured by the psychologist. The criminal learns how to follow the steps required by the psychologist to be released into society so that he can again be involved in crime. The only way to break out of criminality is to change oneself through Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul. No one becomes a criminal without having some aspect of being a con artist. A criminal with a facade of a great personality and sweetness uses this to hide his real purpose. The criminal uses what is acceptable in society to accomplish their criminal aims. One cannot ever treat a criminal with kindness for they regard it as weakness and will always take advantage of any gracious treatment. Criminal Arrogance often shows some limited respect for Law Enforcement but never for the judicial system in the courts. The criminal never respects the system which prevents him from continuing his criminality. Psychotherapy therefore produces criminals with insight and does not change the criminal nor extract him from criminality.

### **Jews for the Preservation of Firearms Ownership Article 2018**

Criminality is not a “DISEASE”! It is a personal choice, that quickly evolves into a “way of life.” In interviewing hundreds of violent, convicted felons over a period of several decades, a pattern of dark behavior and attitude becomes obvious:

All criminals view their lives as minute-by-minute. There is seldom any planning, even so far as the following day. They see no point in living, and are fully persuaded that they have no future and thus no fear of imprisonment, nor violent death. They are convinced that they have nothing to lose, and they are right.

All criminals are incessant whiners and [Complainers](#). They use the word ‘unfair’

constantly when rationalizing their sociopathic behavior. They never accept personal responsibility, for anything. They all insist that their ‘felon status,’ ethnicity, religion, ‘disability,’ disease, etc., forever precludes any chance for conventional success or achievement, so there is no point in trying.

All criminals have embraced non-productivity as a permanent lifestyle. None are interested in working at anything legitimate, nor in trying to find a real job. They are unchangeably non-productive, non-contributing, non-tax-paying, unemployable societal parasites. They insist that every bit of social welfare that comes their way is ‘owed’ them.

All criminals thrive in squalor! Though they whine about the places they stay, you’ll find them all living in filth and sordidness, by choice. They are uncomfortable in any kind of decent, orderly world.

All criminals indicate they have absolutely no compunction about engaging in criminal violence. They all harbor a condescending disdain for their victims. They are completely unrepentant and never express the slightest regret, nor concern, for any pain and suffering they cause.

All criminals articulate utter contempt for the middle and upper-classes. They are therefore very sensitive to being ‘disrespected.’

Every criminals is extremely dangerous! None are particularly brave, but all, under the right circumstances, will murder and maim as casually as if they were muffling a sneeze. With them, impulsive behavior is not held in check, as it is with other individuals. They don’t worry about consequences, nor any other aspect of the future. And, they will never change! ‘Rehabilitation’ is a word invented to describe a non-existent phenomenon. There is no such thing, and never has been. Those who naively claim to believe in ‘rehabilitation’ are well advised not to bet their lives on it!”

And, it is all “one-way.” There is no going back, the preceding, though true, is not accepted, nor even talked about, in most of “polite society,” because they are afraid. Operators, however, who are not afraid, must face the truth squarely. And, the believer needs to understand that whatever protection from these predators he may enjoy, he will provide for himself. Sometimes “force,” including lethal force, though regrettable, is acutely necessary and justified in order to preserve innocent life. At times, to save a life, one must end a life. It’s a bitter circumstance, but sometimes there will be no choice.

Both Criminal and [Crusader Arrogance](#) will lead to [Psychopathic Arrogance](#) and divorcement from reality. Criminals demanding rights while in jail is psychopathic Arrogance since criminals have failed to take responsibility for freedom and therefore have destroyed and relinquished their own rights by being involved in criminal activities. Criminals have by definition set

themselves outside the law and therefore have NO RIGHTS under the law. They do this because they are Psychopathic Crusaders.

### Evangelism into Criminality

The criminal knows exactly how to manipulate the normal person and if they cannot use him they will not associate with him. Once a normal non-criminal individual allows a criminal to use him, then HE will take on the characteristics of the criminal becoming bitter, anti-authority and anti-law. The criminal can make the authority which one accepts look bad and by this falsehood cause him to reject authority as well. Criminals do more than rob, kill steal and rape, their biggest function is to make friends with people so that when they are prosecuted these same people, their friends, will stand up for them as being a good citizen and when the criminal is convicted these 'friends' will then reject the law also. The humble person will kick themselves when this happens thinking how stupid they were to be conned by these criminal types. This concept is perpetuated and advanced by the media & film industry when the key character in a film, glorifies their friends, the criminals, who have been killed or prosecuted by the function of the law. The best criminals are very smart and extremely good con artists and the average person will like them and become a puppet on their strings. Not everyone who one thinks likes him and builds him up is in reality his friend. This is the story of the Reluctant Sparrow.

The pivot of mature believers is certainly not by any stretch of the imagination perfect by any means and they commit sins but generally their sins are not abnormal sins. The difference between normal and abnormal sins is the same as that between sin and crime. The person who commits sin related to Arrogance commits crimes and some of the sins related to crime are clearly delineated in the Decalogue. Stealing is a sin but also a crime since it includes the Arrogance where one thinks he has a right to property which belongs to someone else. Murder is also both a sin and crime and is thinking one has the right to take someone else's life which totally destroys their freedom. Rape is a sin and crime whereby it destroys self determination through Arrogance under the idea that one has a right to superimpose his will over someone else's. Intensified sin has an Arrogance factor and this factor is found in selfcenteredness where a person thinks he is more important than anyone else.

Many people involved in crime are not related to these categories of criminality as a result of their being enslaved. As slaves, at some point in time they are taken against their will, kidnapped, and put on narcotic drugs or brainwashed in some manner to control them and force their participation in crime. They start out free but when enslaved by freely available narcotics, which initially gives them a euphoric feeling but when this wears off then they need to come back and get the high euphoric feeling again. Then, before the slavers or kidnappers will give them any more of the narcotic drug they have to agree to do what the kidnappers want. After a while this addict loses the high and the drug simply brings them up to normal function. In this way many people can be and are controlled chemically and this is one way to infiltrate and overcome a nation such as the United States and is why the drug pusher MUST BE EXECUTED. This is a simple concept and if executions start at the bottom eventually the system will fall in on itself and Law Enforcement can find and execute the top of the system.

Unfortunately in the United States of America today and for a very long time this principle has not been understood and the judicial system simply slaps the wrists of drug pushers and releases them after a short jail term. This is a system which encourages them to continue as pushers. America and its legal system is totally divorced from reality today.

### **Restraint on Criminals**

Arrogance can carry the criminal from one crime providing motivation to commit other crimes. Once in the Interlocking System of Arrogance one can develop the criminal mind and when he gets away with a crime one time he is motivated to keep on committing crimes even to the point of murder. This is why the criminal must be executed. However, just because some are guilty and need killing does not mean out of hand killing is the way to handle this problem. Law Enforcement and courts are one way and Divine Discipline from God directly on the nation is another which in the United States is definitely coming. The Lord from his perfection as judge has all the facts in all situations and from his perfect justice sends out perfect Divine Discipline which is called historical disaster and national catastrophe. It is an incredible error of judgment to have sympathy for people who are under disaster conditions because from the Divine Viewpoint this is the higher court overruling a failing system and administering judgment. At other times, the believer may enter a state of mind called imprecation where he would like to get rid of the mad dogs but he must remember that he is not God and cannot play at being God and should not demand that God do so. Trying to do so is another form of **Institutional Arrogance** which moves him deeply into the Interlocking System of Arrogance even as a mature believer. Instead of trying to pray to God to punish the offenders, he must simply leave these things in the hands of God to correct the injustice in His time and in His way. The believer should not get down on his knees and pray for judgment from God on others in any situation because he thinks they need judging. This is Arrogance and he never has all the facts in any situation of judging. Having facts about the declining condition of the nation, especially its domestic policy regarding crime, but with any resident Arrogance or Self Righteousness the believer cannot ever deal properly with those facts. As part of the Royal Family of God in this Church Age the believer is to be informed but is not to take this information concerning life and mix it with Arrogance and distort it into imprecation. Imprecation and the attitude and motive of imprecation changes people completely and they become involved and influenced by a vicious Evil and the Divine Discipline which is directed to them destroys them totally.

When crime is not controlled by the judicial system then FREEDOM is Gone. (See the film "Interview with a Hitman" as an example of the development of criminality in the young.) The only restraint on the criminal is the fear of the legal ramifications of his crime which will deprive him of freedom or other things which he believes are his, especially loss of his own life as punishment for crime. This is a warning to all people as to how criminals MUST be handled since the criminal recognizes no authority at all in life. He is totally locked into Arrogance. Bible Doctrine teaches that criminals must be punished by a system of jurisprudence which starts with the concept that they are innocent until proven guilty. HOWEVER, once proven guilty they must be removed from society either temporarily or permanently. If they have used violence to do something then violence MUST be used to



discipline them. The criminal mind is best illustrated by the passage of scripture dealing with an incorrigible teenager where IF the child who is incorrigible and has rejected his parents authority is proven in court to be so then he is executed. This is how society is protected from the criminal mind. The parents recognize that their child has a criminal mind and will never respect any authority therefore this child must be removed from society.

Criminals are not restricted to selective parts of cities such as slums or high class neighborhoods but function in any part of the nation. This is such because the criminal is one who uses self determination, his volition, to reject Absolute Truth as Bible Doctrine or the [Laws of Divine Establishment](#) without regard to where he lives. It is even possible to be a believer in Advanced Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and by one decision go to criminal status of thinking and action. Under involvement with Impulsive Arrogance this is extremely easy. The criminal mentality always moves in fear of apprehension and being restrained or of losing his own life. Criminals have the option of committing or not committing crime. Once they enter illegal criminal activity and use violence there should always be a greater legitimate violence in some aspect of society to destroy them. This must exist as a legal and righteous violence such as in capital punishment which the criminal invariably fears and which is their only true restraint. Criminal death under capital punishment is a deterrent to others who will think a bit more before entering into criminal activity. Once one begins to think like a criminal and rejects the legal means of solving problems he then becomes criminal.

After the fall of Ish (Adam) and Ishah (Eve) the Human Race could not have continued from that point unless God had provided a new system of authority which took cognizance of the Old Sin Nature. This is why common law is against crime but not legitimate business or free will transfers of property. Crime rejects authority and destroys freedom as a result of involvement in the Interlocking Systems of Arrogance. All authority in [Legitimate Government](#) has been specifically designed to protect freedom from crime, NOT from profit making and business as is occurring in the United States. The difficulty in the United States today and for many decades is that there has been rampant crime in GOVERNMENT. Business is not criminal unless in business people cheat others. When you have a [Self Righteous Legalistic](#) degenerate federal government it always fights against correct and legitimate authority and legitimate function in business and in doing this ignores crime, which as a result, inevitably escalates. According to the government and all liberals the villain today in the nation is big business or the military and the whole system of proper Law Enforcement and Judicial functions. When there is a whole nation of people who reject the system of function and authority into which God has locked humanity under the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions, they also generally reject the principle that all people are under some authority and all have some responsibility to someone, somewhere or to some institution. Once a people gets outside this system, God must discipline them individually and when a whole nation breaks out of this system of authority then God must institute the cycles of Divine Discipline to try to motivate them to correct this, even up to the 5<sup>th</sup> cycle of total national destruction. This is what happened to the Jews ([Hoseah Chapter 4, The Book of Jeremiah](#)) where they had an incredible rise in crime and ignored Codex III of the Mosaic Law and just like the United States today, and instead of punishing their criminals, they punished those making a profit in business and

when these were punished and the criminals went free they were finally destroyed just as America will certainly be.

### **Criminal Arrogance & Violence**

Establishment violence whether involving military, police or judicial functions, will eventually win against criminal violence and all violence of persons or nations who function under Evil. The violence of criminal nations when initiated eventually destroys those starting it, as demonstrated in the history of both the Nazi and Imperial Japanese empires. Whenever any group uses violence to gain their ends they will inevitably be destroyed by it. Crusaders who ostensibly are working for the betterment of mankind who use violence will be destroyed by their violence. Even having a right, correct or productive objective will always result in these ones being destroyed by their own violence. All violence as a means of problem solving is Arrogance and Arrogance sees violence as a tool while the Laws of Divine Establishment sees reason and freedom as the primary tool. The United States of America has in the past solved problems by reason but the people today have turned to violence for this function. The tool of reason will eventually overcome the tool of violence and this is how England became ruled by parliament and the United States of America by its own constitutional government. Violence is the result of the Old Sin Nature's function in producing temptation in 3 areas under the influence of Evil:

- Sinfulness
- Crime
- Human Good

Liberalism and peace programs invite violence because their kindness and pseudo love are regarded as weakness to be exploited by criminal violence. Any nation which functions too long under liberalism invites violence and this is the current Status Quo in the United States of America. The violent will always try to take advantage of real or imagined weakness and they will torture, rape, exploit, murder, steal, destroy, etc., to accomplish their ends whether they are criminal or altruistic since both result from the influence of Evil. This has occurred in the 70s and much more so today when the media glorifies those involved in criminal activities, mob action, demonstrations, riots, and mass murders.

Whenever a person takes by violence there is always a very real possibility that it will be lost by violence as well. In this world there is always someone stronger, better looking and smarter than one may think he is. When one wins by violence he begins to think he is invincible and invincibility always gets wiped out by AGE. What one consolidates by Bible Doctrine he will never lose. The more problems one solves by violence the more problems he will have BUT the more problems he solves by the application of Metabolized Bible Doctrine from his Stream of Consciousness of the Soul the fewer problems he will have. Anything gained by Arrogance can be lost by a greater system of Arrogance BUT anything gained by application or use of Bible Doctrine from the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul cannot ever be lost and is also gain for eternity.

Return to the [Table of Contents](#)

### **Gate #57 – The Arrogance of Murder**

The motivation for the first murder in history came from Cosmic Dynasphere I, the Interlocking System of Arrogance. Cain was in Cosmic Dynasphere I, therefore he was minus both [Impersonal – Unconditional Love for Mankind](#) and Personal Love for his brother. People who have no capacity for Love are always motivated to ridicule or degrade others. The feelings of others mean nothing to them. Cain wanted God to praise him because arrogance demands praise and flattery and when God accepted his brother's offering he became [Jealous](#). Cain, however, had rejected the Gospel of Christ and was saturated with [Self Righteous Arrogance](#) and Evil.

Arrogance is always associated with Murder. The first murder in history was from a very moral and self righteous individual resulting in his possessing the tragic flaw syndrome. He was so self righteous that he could not restrain himself from murder. People by always thinking self totally right and having animosity, as a result of being saturated with Evil, justify murdering. Cain's action against Able was premeditated murder, from a distorted [Morality](#) and self righteousness arrogance. He had turned his back on the Grace principle and attempted to solve his problem of rejection by God through violence. Cain was a very RELIGIOUS person saturated with and enmeshed in Arrogance and its Evil.

There is and must exist in the thinking of the believer a clear distinction between Murder, Homicide and LEGITIMATE KILLING in the nation. Murder is unlawful killing of another human being with malice or forethought expressed or implied, from motivation of Self Righteous Arrogance in Cosmic Dynasphere I the Interlocking System of Arrogance. [Mental Attitude Sins](#) and Interlocking System of Arrogance involvement with [Conspiracy Arrogance](#), [Crusader Arrogance](#), [Political Arrogance](#), [Ignorance Arrogance](#), [Unhappiness Arrogance](#), [Iconoclastic Arrogance](#), etc., are all motivation for murder. Lawful killing is taking of human life under the direction and functions of the [Laws of Divine Establishment](#) as part of either Capital Punishment for crime or Military Service in Combat to preserve the freedom of the client nation or as personal protection of one's or another's freedom, privacy, property or life. Arrogance will always result in a soldier being a POOR killer and emotional and unprofessional in killing. Good soldiers come back from combat and make great citizens because they kill from Impersonal Love. The Professional Soldier functions impersonally and professionally to preserve the freedom of his nation and should be rewarded for doing a good job at killing the nation's enemies. ([Josh 6:20-21](#), [Josh 8:21-26](#))

Return to the [Table of Contents](#)

### **Gate #58 – The Arrogance of Suicide**

Suicidal Arrogance is absolute and total preoccupation with Self and Suicide is the absolute best

way to voluntarily stop one's momentum in the Spiritual Life and temporal life in general. Suicide is a prime example of a total and permanently locked in preoccupation with Self and total divorcement from reality which results in the taking of one's own life and attempting to usurp the prerogative and authority of God. It is unquestionably the most stupid, imbecilic, idiotic thing a person can ever do because no one can ever know what GREAT things God may have for him later in his life. In addition the facts of existence in this life revolve around the principle that NO HUMAN BEING ever leaves this life on this earth WITHOUT THE APPROVAL OF GOD. The attempt to usurp this prerogative of God is the epitome of absolute arrogance. Many times this arrogance is punished with success so that the believer involved can then stand face to face with the Lord and recognize his supreme stupidity. Many times it is punished with failure and various levels of physical debilitation for the rest of a very long life. In either case the cause is abject stupidity, total saturation in the Cosmic Dynaspheres and total rejection of the Grace and Plan of God.

Return to the [Table of Contents](#)

### **Gate #59 – The Arrogance of Seduction**

Seduction is preceded by a lust or strong desire and this indicates lack of contentment with one's status quo. Therefore believers who become unhappy, possibly miserable, inside the [Divine Dynasphere](#) are then susceptible to being deceived, led astray or seduced into the Cosmic Dynaspheres. Generally people who are unhappy and still in the Divine Dynasphere are on the verge of malcontent. Seduction is never possible without its acceptance by the volition of the one being seduced. There never has been a seduction without the volition of the 'innocent' party being actively and positively involved. No one is seduced without his own volition giving consent to the seduction therefore the excuse of being deceived is never valid. Whether he or she was deceived or NOT the seductee wanted to be seduced and was asking for it to happen. In addition therefore ignorance is NEVER an excuse because people follow volition whether in ignorance or cognizance. Seduction is not possible unless one has erroneous priorities in life therefore the obvious necessity and importance of having your first priority as Bible Doctrine. Seduction is not possible apart from a predilection to occupation with self and arrogance. Consequently, again flattery is the key to seduction and there are many kinds of flattery which can potentially deceive including:

- verbal compliments
- giving maximum attention
- deference apart from respect with hypocrisy
- fornication without love

All of these form a complex of sins involving some aspect of Arrogance. Seduction, therefore, implies Arrogance in motivation in both parties and unfaithfulness to the Plan of God. The One who is seduced spiritually has entered Cosmic Dynasphere I, the Interlocking System of Arrogance, as his motivation and very often Cosmic Dynasphere II, the Interlocking System of Antagonistic Emotional Hatred as his Modus Operandi. Therefore seduction implies an erroneous perspective on life and lack of capacity for Life, Love and Happiness as a result of rejection or

neglect of Bible Doctrine in [Negative Volition Arrogance](#) which interlocks with his entrance into [Reversionism](#).

Return to the [Table of Contents](#)

### **[Gate #60 – The Arrogance of Immorality – Sexual Arrogance](#)**

Sexual Arrogance develops from the toleration of the [Self Righteous Arrogance](#) of [Pseudo Morality](#) and is Sex without Love in arrogant preoccupation with self which results in self centered self gratification. This can be related to phallic idolatry ([Gal 5:19-21](#)) and is the ritual of the physical intimacy of sex without the reality of soul love. In other words this is preoccupation with the body without any consideration of involvement of the soul. Therefore, this precludes love as a motive for sex so that these lusts of the flesh which include sexual immorality and debauchery when combined with any aspect of Idolatry or Witchcraft are the result of demonism as strong demon influence or demon possession. All levels of this result from various levels of Motivational Degeneracy or [Motivational Arrogance](#) derived from Evil which is then active as Functional Degeneracy or [Functional Arrogance](#). This is the Lascivious Trend where people become involved in overt IMMORAL degeneracy.

This Illegitimate Sex is Sex in which total preoccupation with self disregards every factor of virtue or consideration of others. Arrogant people are generally inconsiderate and always preoccupied with self and no matter what they enter into whether it is Sex or [Crusader](#) or [Criminal Arrogance](#) they always manage to make a mess out of their lives with it. These are those believers classified in [2Tim 3:4](#) as LOVERS of pleasure rather than lovers of God. There is nothing wrong with pleasure but putting it before God by engaging in [Lascivious Lawlessness](#) brings disruption and fragmentation into one's life. The human body was originally CREATED for SEX which was originally designed for Pleasure not procreation. God designed SEX for the Human Race as an expression of one of the many manifestations of the LOVE of soul rapport in Marriage between one Man and one Woman as Husband and Wife. Arrogance is inordinate preoccupation with self therefore Sexual Arrogance is simply an extension of Sexual LUST from the Old Sin Nature. Lasciviousness is a trend of the Old Sin Nature and when stimulated by Sexual Lust and then linked with Arrogance produces 3 categories of temptation to engage in Sexual Arrogance:

#### ↪ **Normal Sexual Arrogance**

- Adultery – voluntary sexual intercourse of a married person with one, other than their spouse.
- Fornication – voluntary sexual intercourse of 2 unmarried or not married to each other.

#### ↪ **Abnormal Sexual Arrogance**

- Masturbation – Sexual Self Gratification
- Homosexuality – Sexual activity with one of the same sex
  - ↪ Lesbianism – homosexual relationships between women
  - ↪ Homosexualism – sexual relationships between men



- Incest – sexual intercourse between members of the same family
- Voyeurism – sexual gratification from watching others engage in Sexual intercourse
- ↳ **Criminal Sexual Arrogance**
  - Rape – forcing a person against their will to engage in sexual intercourse
  - Pederasty – adults having sex with children
  - Necrophilia – erotic attraction to or having sex with a corpse
  - Bestiality – Sexual relationship between a human and an animal

In Sexual Arrogance the trend toward lasciviousness in the Old Sin Nature seeks self gratification in some form of sex which is the Arrogance of Immorality or Sexual Arrogance but this does not imply loss of Salvation.

Sexual Arrogance is self centered gratification which is manifest by a variety of sexual sins or crimes. Sexual Arrogance is a devastating area of Arrogance and causes people to fail to properly evaluate situations and to understand what is important in life and thereby lose out on happiness and capacity for every category of life. Sexual Arrogance can be trying to prove physical superiority by having sex with a great many others. Ability in the field of intercourse, however, has nothing to do with a persons status as a person. The underlying principle of this is that Love and sex are related in the thinking however, sex without love is ritual without reality and Arrogance. It is therefore, selfcenteredness, preoccupation with self and involvement in the Interlocking System of Arrogance. Concentrating on self and self gratification is true Arrogance while concentrating on someone else and focusing attention on them is focus on a true love object. The person not preoccupied with self is preoccupied with the true love object and will be thoughtful of the object of his love during sexual intercourse. When this does not occur the person uses sex as a means of self gratification only. This destroys the capacity for all categories of love in this individual. In the male it is seen as polygamy, adultery or fornication and in the female it is seen as promiscuity, adultery or fornication. Emphasis on sex when there is no love is preoccupation with self just as drug addiction and compulsive eating are also preoccupation with self. When there is emphasis on love there is concentration on something totally apart from self, that is someone else. Polygamy and promiscuity are both detrimental to the Spiritual Life as well as destructive to any capacity for love and happiness and will inevitably cause the individual to enter into the Interlocking System of Arrogance. Sex can be a blessing or a distraction and is only a blessing as an expression of love in Monogamy and it is a great distraction as an expression of Arrogance in polygamy or promiscuity.

Along with trying to prove worth through many sexual intercourse activities with many people, men often think that taking advice from a woman in any area is demeaning and emasculating. However, the reality is that manhood is never in jeopardy when a man takes good advice from a woman. For women it is often considered demeaning and defeminizing to submit to a man in the situation of marriage or any other aspect of life where the man has the OBVIOUS authority. A woman's status and femininity are enhanced by submission and response to proper authority NEVER degraded. As a responder the woman is vulnerable to premarital sex which destroys the virtue and values on which compatibility and rapport in marriage are founded. Premarital sex may destroy a potentially wonderful marriage later in life. Generally both the man and the woman enter premarital sex under the Arrogance Skill of [Self Absorption](#).

In addition if a woman is not responding to her husband she will react and this involves the Arrogance skills which will ultimately destroy the spiritual life of the woman through retrogression in the soul. The vulnerable woman often enters the various stages of [Reversionism](#) and engages in a Frantic Search for Happiness where sexual gratification becomes the desired objective. This leads eventually to Blackout of the Soul and Scar Tissue of the Soul and ultimately ends with Reverse Process Reversionism and total destruction of her Spiritual Life.

Polygamy can be having a multiplicity of illegitimate sexual encounters with a number of different women and this is sexual Arrogance. This could be the male who has had multiple wives, *not necessarily at the same time*. Promiscuity as female sexual Arrogance is having multiple illegitimate sexual encounters. It should be obvious that both the male and female can be involved in polygamy, adultery and fornication with multiple sexual encounters both legitimate and illegitimate. ALL ruin the ability to engage in true LOVE. Polygamy and promiscuity are both detrimental to the Spiritual Life as a distraction from Bible Doctrine and also detrimental in the field of developing and having capacity for life, love and happiness. Polygamy is the sexual Arrogance of copulation with many women and marriage with these women is an attempt to make this legitimate. Once the male starts copulating with many women there is no legitimacy and the entrance into the Interlocking System of Arrogance is not worth the stimulation derived from these activities. God keeps many of these individuals alive to show them what jackasses they were by being polygamous. Marriage gives the right to engage in sex and remarriage allows for sex to occur legitimately with more than one woman. One may engage in marriage to more than one woman but this is still polygamy and whether he makes it legitimate sex or NOT the result is always the same. Mankind, both male and female, were designed for [MONOGAMY](#) and anything short of monogamy is going to be destructive to both the body and soul. This multiplicity of wives legalizes copulation in the eyes of the law but does not deliver the individuals from sexual Arrogance and it did not deliver David when the Interlocking System of Arrogance broke him into a shell of a man. One cannot have sex with a number of partners and have capacity for love or be a good parent. Sex can be a blessing or distraction but can only be a blessing as an expression of the true love of soul rapport in monogamy. Sex will be a distraction as an expression of Arrogance in polygamy, promiscuity, adultery or fornication and in effect polygamy is fornication.

This sexual Arrogance leads to sexual distortion and once in the Interlocking System of Arrogance the person becomes vulnerable to other aspects of Arrogance especially within the realm of distorted sex. This includes Homosexuality, Bestiality, Pederasty, ETC. These originate from the Lust patterns which stimulate the Trends and the Old Sin Nature to activate the area of weakness for temptations but they are derived from the Evil of Arrogance in the soul. Preoccupation with sex excludes any capacity for true love whether it involves masturbation, polygamy, fornication, etc., it is sexual Arrogance and results in becoming enmeshed in the Interlocking System of Arrogance. It is preoccupation with the Body and interlocks with [Impulsive Arrogance](#) in incest and fornication and with [Psychopathic Arrogance](#) or Criminal Arrogance in Rape. A nymphomaniac who is in sexual Arrogance has a pathological Arrogance which eventually leads to Reversionism and when this occurs there is

the quadrupling of Divine Discipline from the Arrogance side and Reversionism side together so that the discipline is so great that these women will very often kill themselves. All of these women who live long enough inevitably become psychotic. They are never normal and totally divorced from reality and ultimately have no enjoyment of sex. Illegitimate Sex is anything but happiness and it always includes Complications, Unhappiness and Divine Discipline for life. If sex was happiness and virtuous then the bible would have nothing to say about NOT fornicating. Also there is NO happiness in Personal Love alone and happiness in Personal Love and Sex comes only through Virtue. Personal Love is virtue dependent and is always totally dependent on Impersonal, Unconditional Love. Sexual Arrogance is preoccupation with self but this is not total subjectivity since there is only preoccupation with the frustrated body. Selfcenteredness always results in self gratification and when one cannot get gratification in Sex he often turns to Drugs or Alcohol under his preoccupation with self in Arrogance. Parents who have married based on sexual attraction never make good parents. In sexual Arrogance lust increases and then capacity for love decreases. Sex is a ritual related to the body while true love is related to the soul. Sexual Arrogance can result in destruction of one's life since it prevents proper function in every field of life.

### **King David & Sexual Arrogance**

David's mistresses and wives after he became king were many. ([2Sam 5:13](#)) This was David's primary problem. Polygamy was David's trap and he already had several wives when he began to fornicate with Bathsheba. When David became entangled deeply into the Interlocking System of Arrogance through Sexual Arrogance he became vulnerable to many aspects of Arrogance. One of the first things which happened to David, who had demonstrated throughout his life his exceptional courage starting with the Lion and Bear and moving to Goliath, was a fear of battle. When he became deeply entangled through sexual Arrogance he became an instant COWARD and this was the reason he was in Jerusalem while his armies were at war. This along with wanting to be close to all his girl friends was why he had Bathsheba brought to him and why he raped her, all part of his Arrogance involvement. Being already within the Interlocking System of Arrogance when he met Bathsheba he then became a Murderer when he arranged for her husband, Uriah the Hittite, to be killed in battle and thus he interlocked with Criminal Arrogance. He became also involved in [Blind Arrogance](#) and [Conspiratorial Arrogance](#). The Degeneracy of the Interlocking System of Arrogance involvement can occur at any time and at any level of Spiritual Growth because Arrogance Testing occurs throughout the entire Spiritual Life. Arrogance was the failing of David, Elijah, Paul and Moses all as highly mature believers. By the time David encountered Bathsheba David had already had over 20 years of prosperity as king and sexual Arrogance at this point led him into devastating troubles which included severe distributed Divine Discipline which lasted about 15 years. The last 10 years of his life were relatively quiet except for conspiracies and intrigues which ultimately resulted from his sexual Arrogance and involvement in the Interlocking System of Arrogance. David manufactured his own trouble by entering the Interlocking System of Arrogance and once he entered through polygamy he interlocked with many other areas of the Arrogance complex. Once the leader of the nation begins to commit crimes there is no court which can convict him but the Supreme Court of Heaven does and the result for David was 2 revolutions and the clear demonstration that any male or female who is sexually arrogant makes a terrible parent. This

finally changed when he settled down with Bathsheba with whom he had 4 children and these 2 people made excellent parents and in fact Solomon as a result of this union, became his heir and a great king. He was a terrible parent with Adanijah and Absalom and they both started revolutions against him. Polygamy was David's trap as a result of the many beautiful women he encountered and acquired as king. Michelle daughter of Saul, Abinoium of Jezreel, Abigail of Carmel the incredibly beautiful and intelligent one. Maakaah of Geshur was a favorite wife of David and mother of 2 of the most beautiful children ever to be seen, Absalom and Tamar. Hagath mother of Adanijah was also beautiful but ambitious and tried to use her relationship with David to push her handsome son to the inside track for being king after the death of Absalom. He, in fact, sat on the throne for a very short time in the midst of great royal intrigue and then forfeited his life. Abital and also Eglah. All these women were absolutely incredibly beautiful women among David's wives.

The Sexual Arrogance of leaders such as David invariably results in degeneracy in society in terms of mass involvement in the Interlocking System of Arrogance and thus ultimately in revolution. David was in the Interlocking System of Arrogance from sexual Arrogance and was a terrible father and all his children were potentially great but David as a terrible father never properly directed or guided them to exploit their greatness. David did not receive Divine Discipline and get into trouble within the kingdom because of Bathsheba because he was already in trouble when he met Bathsheba. Bathsheba was the magnificent straw which broke the camel's back but David was already failing in the Interlocking System of Arrogance. David in reality spent too much time in the candy store of sexual Arrogance. Bathsheba, however, was the turning point of his life in every sense of the word. She was the point of discovering what Category II love actually was. Bathsheba was the love of David's life and she bore him 5 children, 1 died at birth but the other 4 lived to be great men and Solomon and Nathan brought us the line of The Lord Jesus, The Christ through Joseph and Mary. However, Bathsheba was the source for his expression of all the Evil which comes from being in the Interlocking System of Arrogance. David had become a weak man and it only took the pregnancy of Bathsheba to bring out all that David was NOT. He was at that point a hollow person not the real man who came to the throne and he had become a coward, weak and a failure, afraid to go to battle because of his being in the Interlocking System of Arrogance. This destroyed the man who David was and left the shell. He was the replica of what his son Absalom would be in the revolution, a shell of a man, big, strong, well built, handsome, personable but having nothing inside. When Bathsheba told him of her pregnancy the Interlocking System of Arrogance functioning inside him caused David the liar, coward, criminal and murderer to come out and then God began to discipline him like no one ever has been disciplined.

Preoccupation with sex caused David in sexual Arrogance to be a rotten husband to his many wives and not even a good lover to his mistresses. It also caused him to neglect his duties as king and as military commander of the finest army of that time. He had 280,000 men and 3 battalions of rangers from the Greek sea peoples all great warriors. He had a system of military knighthood divided into 3 categories and Bathsheba's husband Uriah was a knight of the first class. While the army was besieging Rabbah David was fooling around in Jerusalem

because of his preoccupation with sex as a stimulation to make up for his cowardice. He was even aware of his own cowardice and his sexual Arrogance destroyed all honorable functions of his soul. Because polygamy is a distraction to true love in the soul, David was not capable of loving his wives. Instead David used these women for personal self gratification. Lust made David alert and vulnerable to the phenomenal beauty of Bathsheba who was on the military reservation living in the officer quarters below the great fortress of Zion. David, out on the battlements walking, saw her in her quarters taking a bath and his lust for Sex was stimulated by her fantastic beauty.

### **Sexual Arrogance & God's Gift to the Opposite Sex**

Berachah church and any other church will always have a number of males and females who think they are God's gifts to the opposite sex. To concentrate on self and indulge in self gratification becomes Arrogance while to concentrate on someone of the opposite sex is to focus attention on a true object of love. Love therefore is brought into focus as something which originates and is maintained in the soul not the bodily functions of sexual intercourse. The believer can begin to see that sex is a ritual which relates soul rapport and love to the body but it is the soul love which is the reality, therefore, sex as a ritual must reflect true love found in the soul of the individual. If one is in the Interlocking System of Arrogance God will allow him to fool around there until he is totally weakened and when God hits him with Divine Discipline he must remember that although he cannot stand up under this Divine Discipline he can handle suffering for blessing. Therefore the only real solution for that pain and pressure is to engage in function under the [Rebound Procedure](#) and return to the consistent intake of Bible Doctrine.

As a part of this type of Arrogance, people begin to think of themselves as sex athletes and consider themselves to be unusually great in the field when in reality they are complete and total failures. The only persons great in sex are those involved in monogamous Category II love relationships. This is a love relationship between 2 SOULS and sex becomes beautiful as a ritual and expression and as a satisfaction between one male and female. All the rest is a system of pornographic lies. The person who gets involved in the Interlocking System of Arrogance through sexual Arrogance generally winds up being some type of drug or alcohol abuser and ends up losing his mind or destroying his body through these abuses.

Sexual Arrogance exists in both male and female with different manifestations. In the woman it manifests itself through the seduction of VIP males such as Cleopatra seducing Gaius Julius Caesar, Messelina seducing Claudius, Aspasia seducing Pericles. Many women love to flirt and it used to be a characteristic of southern women but if and when it was taken seriously and a pass was made by a male it was, in the past, found to be just flirtation. This could be characterized as sexual Arrogance and cowardice where the individual is called a Teaser. Male sexual Arrogance is related to the development of a "harem" whether by fornication or polygamy and even involving homosexuality.

Once involved in sexual Arrogance a person enters the complex of the Interlocking System of Arrogance thus interacting and interlocking with other areas of Arrogance where this can result



in:

- ✧ **Rape** == interlocking with Psychopathic Arrogance or [Criminal Arrogance](#).
- ✧ **Christmas Party Fornication** == interlocking with [Institutional Arrogance](#).
- ✧ **Incest** == interlocking with [Impulsive Arrogance](#).
- ✧ **Promiscuity** == interlocking with Blind Arrogance or [Mental Attitude Arrogance](#).
- ✧ **Murder** == interlocking Criminal Arrogance with Conspiracy Arrogance

This is what David did in the murder of Uriah the Hittite.

### **Sexual Arrogance & Destruction of the Life**

Sexual Arrogance can result in destruction of the life as it prevents proper and effective function in every field of life. If one cannot think beyond the realm of his body he has no capacity for life and no ability to truly think, having nothing of any consequence in his soul. In the male and at times in the female, as degeneration increases it turns to criminal deviate sex. A male who looks at a woman with lust always has no capacity for love and vice versa. Males engaging in sex with many women intensify their involvement in this Arrogance. The more women there are the more intense becomes the Arrogance and the lust. This then leads to destruction of thought which leads to loss of integrity, honor, Metabolized Bible Doctrine and therefore inability to engage in application of Bible Doctrine to life. Sex, like drug abuse, destroys thinking and this, like all attempts at self gratification, will ultimately destroy the person. When one destroys thought resulting from Bible Doctrine or the Laws of Divine Establishment or whatever systems of honor and integrity one may have in life, this leaves nothing but emotion which takes over the soul. Once emotion takes over it makes a greater demand for whatever gratification system was being used. When emotion demands more sex performance than the body can handle this causes the person to go to drug abuse or some other thing for gratification and which eventually causes a total destruction of the body. Arrogance has no self discipline and no self control but is always total selfcenteredness. Arrogance in this realm thus destroys what sex is designed to be. Thus unrestrained sex destroys thought and then personal standards and once the standards are destroyed then through sex the emotions are dependent on the results in this temporary system of satisfaction. This results in frustration and then in increased desire for fun so that there is a movement from sex to drugs or other sublimation, until these people are totally destroyed. A woman so involved may not ever have this reality occur to her and she therefore becomes strictly emotional and loses touch with reality and society and destroys herself through sex. This results in total loss of capacity for life and love. A promiscuous woman then can be like a Judas goat leading many other women astray.

One of the great dangers in relationships is that a real man who worships a woman and respects, admires, has romantic thoughts about the woman, is vulnerable to what she says, thinks and writes. Therefore the woman has the greatest human power in the world with the potential of destroying the man but NOT through sex which is ludicrous but through instilling Arrogance in his soul. The woman who seeks to destroy a man by sex usually destroys herself when the man walks away from her.

### Sexual Arrogance & Society

American society is arrogant and part of this is a result of sexual promiscuity and no society ever survives permissiveness in the field of sexual promiscuity. When there is no restraint on the part of individuals in a free society they will destroy the society by sexual Arrogance. Where this sexual Arrogance exists the society is punished and destroyed by God. A society built on honor and integrity, built on standards and virtue, brings romance into focus in order for it to survive. Emotion without thought, sex without love cannot survive and is animalism. This is the history of black Africa and why they were a market for slavery in the first place. Their language was not designed for thought and was only an emotional language. This is why they had been manipulated and used for hundreds of years. If one is going to survive he must have thought and emotion must be related to and subservient to thought. Therefore, where thought is destroyed there is no way of surviving. An arrogant society will either be manipulated or destroyed and will not ever survive long in history. Only Bible Doctrine can rectify this situation through regeneration and then spiritual advance.

Any toleration of homosexuality individually or in a society is totally unacceptable and this aberrant sin is both crime and degeneracy. When homosexuals control or rule any organization the degeneracy is a cancer which will inevitably destroy the organization. To become homosexual one has to be morally degenerate and the degeneracy is totally destructive and has, in the United States, resulted in these individuals demanding pseudo rights. Homosexuals must never gain control of any area in life because the cancer of their degeneracy **MUST BE DESTROYED** lest it destroy the society. Today they are in the arrogant stage and their Arrogance always produces weakness which is vulnerable to flattery and seeks the tolerance of other degenerates. In the early 1900s the homosexual was considered the lowest form of individual in existence in society. They would beg to be jailed just to be protected from those who wanted to destroy them. Homosexuality is first a temptation and then a sin related to volitional degeneracy. In a degenerate degraded society, first there is the psychological acceptance of homosexuality then there is the legal acceptance. A Nation cannot tolerate homosexuality and survive and in a nation there can be sins of sexual lust and the nation still have prosperity but the nation cannot ever survive sins involving the moral degeneracy as homosexuality.

Governments, marriages and love all fail when there is only ritual without reality and this is why in the United States of America freedom has been disappearing since freedom has become today a ritual without the reality found in the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions. When the pivot of mature believers is too small and the incidence of Scar Tissue of the Individual Soul collectively becomes too great the result is national involvement in the Interlocking System of Arrogance which produces degeneracy in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul of the people. When [Scar Tissue of the Soul](#) and the Interlocking System of Arrogance involvement develop and expand such a nation is no longer qualified to function as client nation. This was a historical situation when Elijah became involved in the Interlocking System of Arrogance. He started into the Interlocking System of Arrogance by Impulsive Arrogance then moved into Institutional Arrogance and then to Criminal Arrogance. He was most likely involved also in Psychopathic Arrogance and was totally involved in Self Righteous Arrogance

and Blind Arrogance. However, The one thing he was not involved in was Sexual Arrogance. Sexual Arrogance is one of the worst aspects of Arrogance and it has made monsters out of the people in this nation where they have taken what God has made which is beautiful and distorted it so that they focus on sex only having become involved in [Emotional Revolt of the Soul](#). Sexual Intercourse is a biological function and activity but more than that it is emotional and therefore not rational. The only way for Sex to become rational is to have true soul rapport love and the only way to have this true love is through adherence to the Laws of Divine Establishment and the Divine Institutions. This is the reason for all of the distortions of sex seen in America today and, in fact at this point in time, normal fornication outside of marriage appears almost like morality because of the sexual degeneracy of the people in general. This is a clear demonstration that the people are totally out of line with the true keys to life and love.

Return to the [Table of Contents](#)

### [Gate #61 – The Arrogance of the Crusader](#)

The motivations and policies of politicians and the false doctrines of apostate teachers will often disturb the believer resulting in his entering the Interlocking System of Arrogance. This is where the Interlocking System of Arrogance creates the crusaders of life. Crusader Arrogance is IMMORAL and is rejection of the freedom and rights of others by intruding on another man's privacy. Christian activists are [Legalists](#) and have distorted morality into a system of bullying and persecution to gain their own ends by using others. The fragmentation of the life of a Christian is always recognizable by the individual's involvement in some aspect of activism. These activists, having a fragmented life, will do whatever they can to interfere with the privacy and freedom of others when these [Self Righteous Arrogant](#) Christians think it is contrary to the Will of God. The reality, from which they are totally divorced, is that THESE THINGS ARE NONE OF THEIR BUSINESS. The fact is that NO ONE can change another rational person's mind by standing around in public opposing something and thereby making a fool of themselves. This is not where the impact in Christianity comes from and the ONLY impact of Christianity is through the execution of the Protocol Plan of God and becoming an invisible hero. In this Church Age it must come, NOT through OVERT crusading, but only through the existence of invisible heroes.

Life and history are filled with false doctrine, policies derived from EVIL and wrong motivations and these must not distract the believer from his Perception, Cognition, Inculcation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine, his divine objective in life and the purpose for his [Logistical Grace](#) support. These concepts must not hinder his momentum in the Plan of God and he must be persistent in the intake of Bible Doctrine. Understanding and accepting the 3 areas of [Absolute Truth](#) is critically important to national life and determining the [Motivational Virtue](#) of the individuals who make up the client nation to God. When the believer or unbeliever says NO to the [Laws of Divine Establishment](#) or the [Divine Institutions](#) he will say YES to the LIE of Satanic Policy which includes such concepts as socialism, welfare or communism, etc. When

the unbeliever says NO to the Gospel of The Lord Jesus, The Christ he will say YES to the satanic LIE of atheism or religion. When the believer says NO to Bible Doctrine he can believe only the LIE of [Human Viewpoint](#) and the doctrines of demons in the policy of Satan, Evil, and its resultant production of [Human Good](#). This results in immersion of the whole national entity in the LIE from EVIL as is clearly demonstrated by the overriding functions of social action, welfare state, redistribution of wealth, acceptance of socialism, islam, and the idea of generally loving everyone, which are integral in the Unites States of America today. When these 3 areas of Absolute Truth are ignored or rejected is it generally from an overriding influence of a strong personality, false teaching and false motivation.

The one involved in Crusader Arrogance uses people to suit his needs and fulfill his plans and objectives for solving the problems of the world. He invades privacy and exhibits viciousness in his persecutions of those who oppose him. This is a preoccupation with self which results in placing personal standards above the law and other establishment principles. This is involvement in [Self Justification](#) the 1<sup>st</sup> [Arrogance Skill](#). This person supports terrorism, assassination, vigilantism, rejection of establishment, in fact anything, in order to get his way. This is demonstrated by those who want to stop such things in society as abortion by contending that there is life in the womb and then bombing to destruction the clinics that provide that service. There is NO personal Sin which is the basis for condemnation before God, it is Adam's Original Sin not ours which condemns before God. Therefore, the same Arrogance that says Life exists in the womb says that the individual is only considered spiritually dead when HE commits a personal sin. Contending that life begins at conception is Self Righteous Arrogance, combining with the [Arrogance of Ignorance](#), Crusader Arrogance, [Arrogance of Emotion](#), [Negative Volition Arrogance](#), Anti-Establishment thinking, Cosmic Panacea concepts, [Religion](#), [Academic Speculations](#) and is an integral part of Satan's System of Evil. Crusader Arrogance involves people who divorce themselves from reality, lack common sense and try to change the world to fit their model. These persons place their personal standards above the law and this interlocks with many other Arrogance systems to move them to attempt to improve life. Christian involved in, Legalistic Religion or Political Social Action or Political Activism are a prime example of this.

### **Crusader Arrogance and Fanaticism**

Eventually the believer residing in the Interlocking System of Arrogance develops an obsession under Self Righteous Arrogance where their desire to superimpose their opinion on a few is expanded to wanting to superimpose their opinions on many others. Under [Personality Arrogance](#) the believer picks something he does not like and distorts Bible Doctrine to the point of supporting his ideas about this thing and his desire to stop its functions or destroy it and claims the bible supports his position. This is rampant in American society today concerning:

- ▲ Abortion
- ▲ Equal Rights
- ▲ Gun registration and / or confiscation
- ▲ Homosexuality
- ▲ Transgenderism
- ▲ Women's Lib

These are people who are **FANATICALLY** trying to get their way so that they can possess Power over others and become the recognized Authority. The driving force for this is POWER LUST derived from the Old Sin Nature. If one can influence enough people he can control those people. This brings to mind the involvement of individuals today which has been made possible by the internet systems of social media who have “influencers” who drive people to purchase or become involved in aspects of society which are in fact inconsequential. This is generally how politicians have been made in the United States of America for many decades. With this comes a pseudo righteous indignation which is totally out of control and is superimposition of ones standards and achievements on others without their consent. This often occurs in a Reaction to some government administration and is what occurred in the Reagan and Trump administrations. In both these cases these true conservative presidents were being run down by both liberals and conservatives because they did not join the band wagon of the party and did not agree with the personal self promoting crusades of other conservatives.

### **Pivotism vs Activism**

When the believer gets away from Pivotism, that is proper functioning in Phase II of the Plan of God to reach Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God, and moves into activism they have left the Divine Dynasphere and moved into residence and function in the Cosmic Dynaspheres. These believers functioning under Crusader and Self Righteous Arrogance will very often practice civil disobedience which is, in a nation functioning under freedom, the quintessence of Arrogance. Nothing is every solved by protesting and marching but it makes small minded fanatical people feel good about their own self importance. Nothing is ever solved by violence or civil disobedience and violence is never authorized in a client nation to God and Christians involved in civil disobedience have a sense of Arrogance but not a sense of destiny. When considering the number of illegal aliens currently residing in the United States of America in the 21<sup>st</sup> century, one must recognize that this is a new field for evangelism and personal witnessing. These people may be the chance for a new pivot of believers and there are no accidents in life or history and they are here for a reason. Needless to say the United States of America needs this fresh blood.

### **Activism Disaster & Christian Nations**

There is a tremendous emphasis among evangelical Christians for the believer to enter into activism and practice social and political engineering and this trend is found in every aspect of American society. The real problem is that most of these Christians have NO CLUE as to what constitutes the actual Christian Way of Life. The ultimate purpose and function of the Christian Way of Life is to execute the Protocol Plan of God which has absolutely nothing to do with activism. Another aspect of Crusader Arrogance finds Christians involved with vigorous and often illegal activities to achieve political goals. They intrude upon the privacy and freedom of others, destroy property and indoctrinate their own small children to carry signs condemning things which they personally do not agree with. They constantly violate the constitutional rights of others and subscribe to the misconception that the United States of America is a “Christian” nation and this is a misunderstanding of the principles involved in the Priest or Client nation to God. In the priest or client nation to God there MUST BE:

- Freedom



- ✧ Privacy
- ✧ Ownership of Private Property
- ✧ Free Enterprise Economy
- ✧ Small government

In the client nation to God, there will be a certain percentage of believers, Christians, but this does not ever make the nation a “CHRISTIAN” nation. Evangelical Christians want laws passed to make all unbelievers criminals but whatever political and social systems may exist in the client nation, the people must have the right and freedom to make Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God and to be evangelized for this purpose OR to totally reject God and Christ. These rights must be protected whether one agrees with them or not and whether one accepts the Opinions of others about ANYTHING or not is NOT THE ISSUE. Believers in the client nation must be free to FIND their own Right Pastor Teacher and learn the details of the Essence, Grace and Plan of God and thus have a fantastic historical impact but this IMPACT is to be INVISIBLE and visible activism destroys this potential. The interesting fact is that there are no such things as “Christian Laws” and the Mosaic Law is a perfect example and a perfect pattern because even it is segmented into 3 parts. One part, Codex II, is specifically for the believer including the sacrifices and furniture and whole systematic spiritual development of Sotieriology and Christology. The rest of the Mosaic Law Codex I and III, the Decalogue and the Laws of Divine Establishment, are for ALL people in general to enable them to live in a system of freedom so that they can make their own decisions for success or failure under FREEDOM. Any system which is designed for Christianity is always related to the Protocol Plan of God including the Invisible Assets for the believer’s spiritual growth. Therefore, believers HAVE NO RIGHT TO INTERFERE WITH THE LIVES OF OTHERS IN ANY WAY TO DICTATE HOW THEY SHOULD LIVE, WHAT THEY SHOULD WEAR AND WHAT THEY SHOULD THINK AND SAY.

Religious activism Justifies both Sin and Crime derived from EVIL in order to achieve their religious objectives.

- ✧ Religious Arrogance + Self Righteousness == Religious Activism

When, in any area of life, the objective is destruction of human freedom and developing the resultant tyranny or when the means does not justify the end but creates Sin, Crime or tyranny from EVIL, it must be rejected. Grace and activism are MUTUALLY EXCLUSIVE and GOD never has and never will become involved in activism. Activism is a terrible system under EVIL, a part of the mechanics of the plan and policy of Satan to rule this world and create a pseudo millennium before the 2<sup>nd</sup> advent of Christ and totally apart from God. The believer in The Lord Jesus, The Christ and member of the Royal Family of God must never get involved in any level of Arrogance including activism. Jesus condemned religious activism when speaking with regard to the adulterous woman. Self Righteous Arrogance seeks Self Justification against the truth and twists and distorts the truth when ever it can. In the Church Age, the dispensation of the Royal Family of God, precedence is based on Grace which provides the greatest self motivation to live the Spiritual Life. The issue must always be Grace over Legalism and Arrogance and this is the precedent for the entire Church Age.

There is a protocol concept involved in 1John 1:9, where ‘A Right Thing can only be done in a

Right Way'. Doing Wrong is removed from us by God always at the point of using the Rebound Procedure. Involvement in and function under the Arrogance Skills leads in part to wrongdoing in several ways and ultimately will lead to Reversionism and that to the Sin Unto Death. Wrongdoing encompasses the things one does which are sin but are unknown to him as sin, and this is the greatest disaster of the Spiritual Life. It is rejection of the power of the Spiritual Life given to the believer by The Lord Jesus, The Christ just before he left this earth. Wrongdoing will occur again and again in the life of the believer until there is sufficient spiritual growth from the accumulation of Bible Doctrine in the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul. Wrongdoing encompasses such things as the sins involved in Activism and the Crusader functions of whitewashing the devil's world along with greater involvement in the Interlocking System of Arrogance and its complex of sins and much more.

### Reaction Leading to Crusader Arrogance

One's reaction to situations or individuals manufactures preoccupation with self and results in blaming others for the use of one's own volition in arrogant divorcement from reality, and total loss of common sense, wisdom and discernment. Reaction in life leads to Crusader Arrogance in the local church and the lack of emphasizing Bible Doctrine, and in life in general it leads to social engineering, utopianism, affirmative action, Cosmic Dynasphere I, Interlocking System of Arrogance involvement and in short total distraction from the Spiritual Life and total divorcement from reality. Every Believer must face momentum testing in the area of personal animosity as well as collective injustice. To maintain Integrity during these tests requires confidence toward God and courage toward man, worship toward God and morality toward man, Personal Love toward God and Impersonal Love for Mankind or focus on and saturation in the systems of Motivational Virtue and Functional Virtue. Response to God avoids reaction to mankind and Positive Volition to Bible Doctrine avoids distraction and departure from the Plan of God.

### Crusader vs Criminal

Crusader Arrogance is the opposite side of the coin of Criminal Arrogance and it very often interlocks with Criminal Arrogance by engaging in the process of supporting change through violence and vigilantism. The crusader and the criminal are as internally different as any 2 people can be. The crusader is totally Self Righteous trying to do good with the objective of helping and bettering humanity while the criminal is totally Self Centered trying to use humanity to better himself. Criminals function similarly to the crusader in that they both resent and destroy authority and they both are exceedingly arrogant. The crusader's motivation is Self Righteousness which is Righteous Indignation out of control. When they are offended by something it arouses an arrogant crusaderism whereas the criminal is only interested in self advancement or self enrichment. The crusader's Self Righteous Arrogance is a reaction to something in society which according to his standards is WRONG and must be made right. The criminal and crusader are both bitter toward society. The criminal has bitterness because if he is caught in doing what he wants to do, society is going to prosecute and punishment him. The crusader is bitter against society because they don't play according to his standards the way he wants to play.

Crusader Arrogance interlocks with Criminal Arrogance because many times those involved in being crusaders become criminals in order to gain their objectives and reforms. The Arrogance of taking the law into one's own hands by fomenting revolution, encouraging violence, assassination, kidnapping or other terrorist tactics are some of the ways crusaders become criminals. This is the Self Righteous indignation of the believer who reacts against some unfair system, such as the American evil, the illegal personal income tax system, and then he cheats on tax returns or refuses to pay taxes at all leading to a dishonest relationship with government which is NOT part of the [Royal Family Honor Code](#). The abused citizen is often very vulnerable to entering the Interlocking System of Arrogance in this way as a result of a criminal act perpetrated against himself or a loved one and then reacting with personal individual vigilante tactics as illustrated by the motion picture films "Death Wish" or "Obsession". Make no mistake, there is an individual [God given right](#) to protect one's own LIFE, Property, Privacy and Freedom or that of Loved Ones with the use of violence even to the point of lethal force when necessary and if one does not do so there is something seriously wrong with him. People who claim to be "NON VIOLENT" or "CONSCIENTIOUS OBJECTORS" to war or military service are either fantastic Cowards or the most Self Righteous and Arrogant individuals in existence to the point of Insanity. The believer's true responsibility toward the Lord does not imply irresponsibility toward establishment authority or the nation in general. However, Arrogance bypasses establishment authority in favor of personal retaliation and vengeance and results in breaking the very laws the believer is commanded to UPHOLD. This is the Self Righteousness which can lead to other very disastrous consequences for him.

### **Crusaders, Criminals, Revolution & Terrorism**

Crusader Arrogance is a superimposition of a set of personal standards and achievements on others without their consent. Many conservatives are not conservative from understanding freedom but only because they are afraid of losing something they have gained in life. Liberals are not truly liberal but they want something they do not have and in Arrogance they feel they have a right to take it. Under Arrogance they take the position that the means by which they get whatever they want justifies the end. These people are not qualified to have any more than an absolute minimum to sustain life and it is the greatest mistake in history for the United States of America to feed these low life people, the scum of society, under a welfare subsidy system. In doing so the government is creating a revolutionary scum which is a place for breeding violence as a result of their having no orientation to the [Laws of Divine Establishment](#) principles under which they should be functioning.

Without understanding and adherence to principles derived from Bible Doctrine there can be no change in anyone and when there is no change people become the product of their environment and this is the objective of EVIL. In as much as one is a product of his environment apart from Bible Doctrine he is automatically involved in Arrogance. Arrogance has 2 sides, the people in the ghettos are the most arrogant in the world when they say "we never had a chance and the world owes us" and their Arrogance comes directly from that attitude. The people who come out of the wealthy classes of society say "we have money, wealth and success and are better than most people" and this is an easy slide into Arrogance as well. However, the strangest thing is that overall the most arrogant people are the poor and

this is a result of the way they adjust to life apart from Bible Doctrine. Under this kind of Arrogance it is very easy to join any crusade to overthrow establishment in order to attempt to gain that which is perceived to be lacking in one's life.

Considering crusader Arrogance, the conservative may react to the failure of a liberal government to control Crime as a result of its saturation with Evil and take the law into his own hands to punish the criminal. Arrogance always pushes one to take the law into one's own hands and this leads to an encouragement to [Revolution](#). Therefore, when crime is totally out of control in a society, revolution becomes inevitable, and when crusades get out of control in a society then Revolution is also inevitable. Rebellion is Arrogance and Rejection of Authority whereas [Humility](#) is the recognition of and obedience to authority. Crusaders can, therefore, be nice people who become bitter in their reaction to the failures in a society. When they take the law into their own hands revolution is fomented, violence is encouraged and assassination, kidnapping and terrorist tactics are accomplished. By this means Crusaders very often in their passionate [Fanaticism](#) become criminals and both criminals and crusaders can be involved in terrorism. [Integrity](#), Honor and Justice must rule the people not flattery, Arrogance, and deception, therefore a leader in any area of society must have moral courage not immoral ambition. Revolution is inevitable when the [Arrogance Skills](#) dominate the people in any organization and it is only the incorruptible advanced believers among the people who remain uninvolved. However, Revolution can never advance beyond the Arrogance of the people involved. The crusader gains adherents through promising change while the criminal gains adherents through promising equality and in reality neither change nor equality brings happiness to the people. It takes both the crusaders, who want to solve the problems in a society, and the criminals, who only are interested in self advancement and enrichment, to engage in the violence needed to oppose the government or the society in general in a revolution. Criminals can, and often do, use crusaders and vice versa. Inevitably when the revolution is successful the criminals always kill the crusaders and take over since the crusaders do not share the self advancement and self aggrandizement of the criminals. Primary examples of these basic concepts are seen in the Russian, Chinese and French revolutions, and the destruction of Rhodesia, South Africa and other nations. Therefore, Crusader and Criminal Arrogance as part of the Interlocking System of Arrogance have the strong potential to bring about Revolution, the destruction of a system, and the destruction of establishment principles. This represents the function of Power Politics, that which destroys the system. It is important to remember always that God is not ever involved in any form of revolution. Revolution is a destructive force representing, not only the Interlocking System of Arrogance, but any form of antagonism to authority therefore is involvement in the Interlocking System of Antagonistic Emotional Hatred, Cosmic Dynasphere II.

### **Crusaders, Criminals & Manipulation of People**

The easiest people in the world to manipulate are those who cannot tell the difference between criminals and crusaders. This was President James Carter in support of the revolutionaries in Rhodesia who took over that country and also the communists who took over Nicaragua. Historically it also occurred also when Woodrow Wilson and Franklin Roosevelt allowed communism to remain strong in the world in Russia and China in particular. Conservatives in

this country have become so arrogant that they can be manipulated easily by communist conspiracies. God does not leave believers on this earth to become crusaders. Crusaders are only here to be the unwitting puppets of criminals. Labor unions in this country started out as a crusade to save laborers from unjust work environment and they have since been taken over by the criminals who force management to capitulate to their demands for wages and working environment. These unions are not only organizations to manipulate the working man but also to manipulate and control politicians and gain power in the nation. See the activities of Shawn Fain and the UAW in its crusade to unionize all auto industry workers in order to exercise political voting power to control the nation through the influence on elections. No crusade ever starts without some criminal element seeing a way to use it. The greatest thing for a criminal to use is a crusade which gives him respectability so that he can accomplish his own ends of self enrichment while presenting the appearance of being and doing good for mankind.

In any compromise by the individual of trying to function under both the authority of Evil and that of God the authority of Evil always wins out. This is due to the principle of distraction and also due to Arrogance. When the believer does this he will eventually say NO to the Absolute Truth of Bible Doctrine and thus build up intensified Arrogance and [Scar Tissue of the Soul](#) so that he then believes ONLY the LIE of false doctrine from EVIL in any category and then rationalizes it. This will position the believer to feel [Self Pity](#) when under pressure and then Self Righteousness when in prosperity and together these push him into a [Guilt Complex](#). Then he will attempt to do some 'good deed' to assuage his guilt and this will intensify his rationalization of the need for his greater efforts in doing good things.

### **Crusaders == Criminals**

Crusaders in Arrogance can obviously then become criminals in Arrogance. Elijah ordering the killing of the 400 prophets of Baal is a prime example. This was violence and murder outside the law. Crusaders can easily convert their Self Righteous indignation into terrorism. The injustice and Evil involvement on the part of another never justifies Evil involvement nor injustice on the part of the believer. The citizen who is the victim of crime and then takes the law into his own hands as a vigilante and goes after the criminal is a crusader who will turn criminal if he succeeds. This method of destroying criminals opens the door for greater crime by the destroyer. Only Arrogance wants to be a personal executioner of a criminal and one must remember that no one ever gets away with anything in life under the eyes of the Lord. Again, this most emphatically **DOES NOT** mean one should not protect life and property when necessary. This is self defense and not taking the law into one's own hands. When law abiding citizens either choose by vigilantism, or other means of superseding the law, to become criminal or when lawful citizens are made criminals by irrational and unjust laws then there is no restraint on criminality and, therefore, no differentiation between the criminal and the lawful citizen. Believers, under Logistical Grace, have a responsibility to accept the authority which God has delegated for the Human Race in the Angelic Conflict. When Arrogance is added to any false rationale it will allow one to squirm out from under the law and there will no longer be anyone who is a law abiding citizen. Once, one functions under Arrogance, one removes from his soul respect for authority and any restraint he may have. It is by this means he can then become involved in criminality. ([Rom 13:1-7](#)) There is no authority which exists



on this earth except that which has been delegated by God and those who resist authority will receive judgment from God AS WILL THOSE WHO ABUSE THE AUTHORITY GIVEN THEM BY GOD. Therefore responsibility for the believer is to respect authority wherever it is found and not involve self in anything which may be construed as resisting authority. This type of Arrogance was what occurred when John Calvin took over Geneva Switzerland and executed all of those who opposed his “Christian” standards.

### **Crusaders, Criminals & Destruction of the Nation**

When a lack of differentiation between the criminal and the lawful citizen occurs then there inevitably is anarchy. This destroys freedom, evangelism, privacy, property and the right of the individual to pursue a normal course of life without interference by the criminal. When all law abiding citizens are conditioned or caused to be considered criminals as a result of unjust treatment by government such as with the imposition of unjust taxation systems, cheating on income tax becomes the norm and the society is no longer stable but becomes weak and unstable. This society is then punished by the natural consequences of the violation of the Laws of Divine Establishment and also by the 5 cycles of Divine Discipline from God.

This is where Power Politics (See Lessons on Elijah) gets its start. A self-righteous person, being very arrogant, in his Arrogance, feels that he is an expert on how others ought to run their lives. Therefore he intrudes upon their privacy in order to set up standards for these others to follow. This starts social action, and as a result very often Christians who start out being self-righteous bullies in their own local churches wind up being crusaders. Power Politics, then, is essentially the concept of social action intruding upon the privacy and freedom of others in the name of the greater good. However, Pivot Politics emphasizes thought over action by the application of Bible Doctrine to crises in reverse concentration. Power Politics emphasizes action in the application of violence, tyranny, Arrogance, self-righteousness, revolution and assassination to the crisis, ALL under the principles of EVIL. Pivot Politics emphasizes Stability and Persistence under GRACE; Power Politics emphasizes CHANGE in every area under the principles of EVIL. It is interesting to note that almost always the first thing people want to do when they get some power is to change things in the system they are working in instead of observing and understanding the system first.

Human Good combines with Self Righteous Arrogance for the production from Evil. In the United States of America this is what has occurred for many decades and everywhere one turns people are reacting to various situations so that their Arrogance under prosperity produces Self Righteousness and under adversity or pressure produces Self Pity. Combining this with the desire to do good and sincerely wanting to help one's fellow man, is crusaderism as the result of the influence of EVIL from the Cosmic Dynasphere systems in the soul. This is the source of the bleeding heart liberal crusader attitude. If Satan as a super genius is incapable of ruling the world which he controls, and this is obvious by the overwhelming presence of sin and crime, then no man with any level of genius can do it either.

When man tries to solve the problems of life using his own ability by setting up and devising a system of Self Righteousness there is no solution. All solutions to the problems of life depend

on the imputation of Absolute Righteousness to man at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God. This is why it is essential that for a nation to be great it must have the Laws of Divine Establishment functions of Police, Military, Tough and Honorable Judges on the bench and a citizenry who function properly under these laws with honor and integrity. Man is incapable of solving man's problems by Man's standards. Self Righteous Arrogance sets up systems of Morality such as that which is found in Christian bible schools and calls it spirituality and contends that it is the Lord's standard. Self Righteous Arrogance + Human Good production results from the believer having a soul filled with concentrated Evil under systems of pseudo morality. Spirituality cannot ever be morality and these cannot be the same since the unbeliever can be very moral and anything an unbeliever can do cannot be spirituality. Spirituality belongs to the believer only and is an absolute Status Quo not a relative concept. It is the Filling ministry of God the Holy Spirit for each and every believer doing something he cannot of himself do. Morality is designed for the Human Race as a whole and is part of the function under the Laws of Divine Establishment.

A perfect example of this is the whole system of trying to clean the atmosphere of pollution and this is a fantastic demonstration of Human Good production from EVIL. The whole system of OSHA telling businesses what to do and as a result destroying their business is again a production of this EVIL. This is also the Evil American Federal Government trying to compete with Free Enterprise by taking control of industry and not being able to do it. This inability of the Federal Government is because it is composed of individuals who have no sense and less ability as a result of having been elected by those with less sense and ability as a result of the expanded voting franchise to the irresponsible. Free enterprise is made up of great men with great sense, ability and courage while government and its bureaucracies are made up of men with cowardice and idiocy totally lacking in ability. Government CANNOT compete with big business, they are incapable of doing it not being smart enough, courageous enough or honorable enough. They pass laws and pseudo laws called 'regulations' which act as laws, in jealousy telling business what they can and cannot do and by this very means show total injustice. These regulations have nothing to do with necessities for the businesses but are only related to the cheating Evil system of bureaucracies which attack big business under the guise of doing good for the greater number. It is amazing that the basis of American prosperity is still in existence in any form today in this United States of America, a teetering client nation to God, which it totally saturated with almost every aspect of EVIL.

The power of simply being involved in government systems very often produces Arrogance. Some jackass can graduate from a college with a BS degree and get into a bureaucracy and advance into an office in Washington and take their Arrogance to a business system which has been built on moral courage and genius and use this Arrogance and begin to destroy that system with idiotic 'regulations'. These people are not even elected but have moved into a bureau of government, which has been set up by idiotic politicians who do not want to actually do their job, and which is not answerable to anyone in government. Most people who become Politicians are first dishonest then arrogant and then with dishonesty and Arrogance they become hypocrites and thus amoral in their thinking. In this way people without talent or ability with nothing to offer and who would otherwise be total failures in life get into the

bureaus in government and find they have great authority or even if they don't they simply write up a system and set up the policy for the bureau giving themselves authority and power. This systematically destroys the freedom and rights of individuals and of both big and small business. In this manner America has allowed and tolerated the destruction of her military and great business enterprises such as the steel mills which can no longer produce the necessary castings or materials for tanks or artillery pieces to provide for military necessities. Instead we ship resources and scrap metals to Japan and China and have them produce the steel and other necessities for the military because AMERICANS ARE SO ARROGANT THAT THEY THINK THAT LABORERS SHOULD MAKE THE SAME SALARIES AS DOCTORS AND PROFESSORS.

### **Crusader Arrogance as Christian Activism**

Nothing is worse in this life than the supreme Arrogance of Christian Activism. It is not the mission of the individual member of the Royal Family of God in this dispensation to engage in Christian Activism. The impact of Christianity does exist through and as a result of evangelism but most Christians are INCAPABLE of involvement in personal evangelism because they do not even really know HOW to make Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God without adding some form of Legalism to the process. Therefore, to outlaw a segment of society because they do not adhere to Christian principles would be a total disaster and to force a superficial theory of Christianity on all people is simply tyranny. The ONLY responsibility of the believer with regard to other people is to provide for them a lucid presentation of the true issues of the Gospel of Christ and make it clear to them that Eternal Salvation is ONLY through FAITH in the Substitutionary Spiritual Death of The Lord Jesus the Christ for their sins, thus leaving their acceptance and salvation or rejection and condemnation up to their own volition and God the Holy Spirit.

There have been and are major issues among the people in this country but what the Christians have been hung up on has been PRAYER in the public schools and the legality of abortion which are illogical issues in the first place. With regard to prayer in the public schools, public school is not now and has never been a place for prayer but is supposed to be a place to learn how to Speak ENGLISH, how to understand MATH, the History and Geography of this nation and how to grow up as an individual and live in relationship with others. The whole point of public school is to provide all the people with the opportunity to learn academics and social interaction protocols and it is NO PLACE FOR PRAYER. The most important point here is that there should be NO prayer allowed in public school because when it is allowed then any and all RELIGIONS would expect to be able to pray in their own way publicly. There should be ESTABLISHMENT principles involved in public schools with the Pledge of Allegiance to this nation but NOT prayer. In addition it is no business of any Christian to intrude into the privacy necessary between a patient and their doctor. If a woman does not desire to carry a fetus to term and deliver a child then she should have the right to abort it. The LOGICAL and RATIONAL thinking which should be behind this includes the fact that there is no life in the womb of the mother until GOD imputes Soul Life at Birth, and the fetus can be terminated UNTIL IT HAS THE POTENTIAL TO BE A VIABLE LIVING PERSON THEREFORE THERE SHOULD BE NO ABORTIONS ALLOWED IN THE THIRD TRIMESTER OF PREGNANCY. It is therefore in Arrogance that believers become involved in politics and activism and make issues

of things like Abortion or Prayer in the Public School, which are not true issues in the nation. ISSUES RELATED TO FREEDOM and PRIVACY are what are essential in the nation and the myriad of other false issues created from activism cloud these true issues in this nation. Freedom through military victory, free enterprise, little government for BIG PEOPLE. The Power and Influence of Christianity in any nation is ONLY based on the level of Metabolized Bible Doctrine circulating in the stream of Consciousness of the Soul of INDIVIDUAL Believers. Therefore, the push in any nation under freedom should be for MORE BELIEVERS not more rules and restrictions on freedom. When Believers are minus Bible Doctrine their souls develop a vacuum within which results in the soul sucking in false information from the LIE of Evil and thus becoming filled with garbage and as a result Bible Doctrine is Blotted Out or ERASED. Consequently, these believers often become involved in Crusader Arrogance. The purpose of the Christian in this dispensation is to tell people about the Birth and Death of The Lord Jesus, The Christ as a substitute for ALL the Sins of Mankind from the fall of Adam to the end of human history. As compassion increases culpability contracts and therefore the majority of Christians are caught up in the Arrogance of Activism which is guaranteed destruction of human freedom and is misplaced compassion and a distortion of the wonderful system devised by God.

Believers must be historically informed as to the situation in their nation but must not be doctrinally or arrogantly distracted. It is possible to have the facts of history and be distracted by them and what is actually occurring around one. This is to be distracted by the Interlocking System of Arrogance. The Interlocking System of Arrogance can and does take the true facts of history and causes the believer to be distracted by them and this results in believers crusading and becoming involved in social reform functions to help their fellow man. When one tries to crusade and reform anything in any society he forgets he cannot change the function of the Old Sin Nature. It is possible to restrain the Old Sin Nature but no one can destroy or change the Old Sin Nature nor its functions. It is an absolutely total waste of time to become involved in crusades with their functions of [Human Good](#) and altruism. In addition the believer involved in these things is wasting the time given him by God, which is given NOT to change the Old Sin Nature of other people or get into altruism and crusades but to take in Bible Doctrine and grow up in the Spiritual Life and change his own life. [Logistical Grace](#) support and spiritual advance will provide sufficient opportunity for eventual production to serve the Lord (not for personal aggrandizement or blessing). What He provides is on a Grace basis and within the Plan of God and includes the functions of witnessing, evangelism, communication of Bible Doctrine and proper use of authority but NEVER crusading. Most believers, at some point, want to crusade for something and they would like to change certain things in society and given the opportunity would go wild in changing things. This is never the answer to problems in society and crusading will never save the country. The only real solutions for any country, including the United States of America, are based on consistency in Perception, Cognition, Inculcation & Metabolization of Bible Doctrine by the individual believers in the nation. The believer MUST be historically informed but it is incorrect to be distracted

by Interlocking System of Arrogance involvement where he tries to take the law or authority in to his own hands to rectify a destructive situation. Stability in life demands cognizance without Arrogance and the thinking of the believer must emphasize that The Lord Jesus, The Christ controls Human History even when it seems to be out of control. Believers must remember that they cannot change people or history only The Lord Jesus, The Christ can.

Preoccupation with disaster is one major reason believers peel off from and neglect Bible Doctrine. Disaster very often distracts from Perception, Cognition, Incultation & Metabolization of Bible Doctrine and kills momentum in the Plan of God and becomes or results in demon obsession. Such distraction results in Arrogance which becomes obsessed with problems in life and human solutions just as does every type of crusader. The obsessed person is so preoccupied with the problems and human solutions that the only divine solution is excluded. [Negative Volition](#) toward Bible Doctrine causes the believer to believe the LIE of the policy and plan of Satan, EVIL, as part of this demon obsession. The believer preoccupied with disaster becomes an arrogant crusader full of Self Righteousness which the disaster turns into Self Pity. This Self Righteousness ignores the divine solution found in the pivot of mature believers and looks for Human Good solutions from the motivation of Evil and the talent and abilities of man.

No matter how hard Satan tries to produce good his good always comes 100% from functions under his policy of EVIL, therefore, activism of any kind is completely based in EVIL. No truth can influence [Power Mad Arrogance](#) which is combined with Crusader Arrogance to destroy the impact of Absolute Truth in the souls and minds of people and this is ACTIVISM. One of the key and in fact a most important function in the Christian Way of Life is the consistent use of the [Rebound Procedure](#). The phrase, “Escape from the snare of the Devil” refers to avoidance of perpetual carnality ([1John 1:3](#)) by means of the consistent use of Rebound. Rejection or neglect in using the Rebound Procedure changes the category of a sin so that relatively innocuous sins can become very destructive sins. In this way sins change their relative importance and become a greater category as a result of greater influence from Evil when there is rejection of rebound and as a result of this every stage of [Reversionism](#) is amplified. When a believer is said to be captured by Satan he is actuality involved in perpetual carnality from lack of rebound. As a result, sins which were simple are no longer the same and become greater and greater from Evil influence, until what appears to be innocuous sin becomes a powerful sin ensnaring the believer in a pattern of Evil thinking. This is what occurs in the Arrogance of Activism and what starts out as simply dead human effort works becomes incredibly great functions under Evil. To destroy the [Virtue and Integrity](#) of the unique Spiritual Life in all of human history designed for the Royal Family of God in this Church Age, as a result of unconfessed sin, is the Arrogance of robbing self of capacity for life, love and happiness.

One thing which can destroy the Christian Way of Life faster than just about anything else is SOCIAL ACTION. The Royal Family of God, the “brethren” of The Lord Jesus, The Christ is not here for social action but for personal, individual spiritual advance and growth. To the



extent that the believer becomes involved in social action, trying to white wash the devils world, he is, to that extent, distracted from Bible Doctrine and has the Mental Attitude of [Human Viewpoint](#). He might just as well not be a believer from the standpoint of his thinking. Social action is Self Righteousness and Self Righteousness is Arrogance and it is supreme Arrogance to think anyone or any group of people can change anything in the devil's world. It is more than Arrogance to think one can outwit the devil, who is smarter than man could ever hope to be, and he will, under his plan and policy, finesse the unwitting believer directly into his camp. The believer is here to advance to [Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God](#) and he must stay out of social action and political activism. Christianity is NOT a CRUSADE AGAINST EVIL BUT IS DESIGNED FOR THE INVISIBLE PRESERVATION OF THE CLIENT NATION TO GOD. Everyone is tempted to crusade about something but this is missing the boat about what the Royal Family of God is actually for and only Metabolized Bible Doctrine will alert the believer to the facts concerning his responsibility as a believer in life. The Apostasy of [Reversionism](#) is an expression of Self Righteousness and is demonstrated by all Human Good efforts and in Paul's day it was keeping the law and today it is social action and crusading.

### [Christian Activism & the Arrogance Skills](#)

The Profile of Christian Activist is illustrated by the scribes and pharisees who were involved in both the [Arrogance Skills](#) and the Interlocking System of Arrogance focused in Crusader Arrogance. The scribes and pharisees were officers of the court, religious leaders and religious activists most likely unbelievers. The Christian activist, however, has achieved [Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God](#) with all of the benefits involved with that. Yet he is a "religious" activist, regenerated, having prejudice, involved with malice and other actions from the Arrogance skills. He has combined Self Righteous Arrogance with Crusader Arrogance resulting in christian activism which causes a greater function within the Interlocking System of Arrogance complex and the Arrogance Skills.

[Self Justification](#) is the basis for maintaining their status quo and position while they are trying to discredit those whom they oppose.

[Self Deception](#) then uses the [Maladaptive Defense Mechanisms](#) including denial and projection resulting in total divorcement from reality.

[Self Absorption](#) is the basis for projection and is based on the lust of malice and vituperation in an attempt to destroy those whom they oppose.

Christian activism is one of the great illustrations of how all three of the Arrogance Skills coordinate to distract the believer from the protocol plan of God. Under the influence of Evil functions of Christian Activism demand Self Justification. Christian activism contends that the means justifies the end, and therefore, that leads to the greatest possible Self Deception. Then the combination of Self Justification and Self Deception in the believer always results in functioning under the defense mechanisms of Denial and Projection. Denial is always Self Deception because it divorces the believer from spiritual reality and the true content of the infallible word of God. Projection is always Self Justification at the expense of someone else. Self Justification or Projection results in a phenomenal outburst of involvement in the totality of the Interlocking System of Arrogance especially within [Emotional Arrogance](#) and the [Emotional Revolt of the Soul](#) in Reversionism. This, if unchecked, inevitably leads to entanglement in the

Interlocking System of Antagonistic Emotional Hatred, Cosmic Dynasphere II. Christian activism as a part of or driving force into this, is therefore described in the Scripture as dead works or human good as the production of Evil. The inevitable result of this course of action is the locked-in Arrogance of Self Absorption. This combined with Denial and Projection results in the entanglement in [Functional Arrogance](#) with the sins of vituperation, vilification, malice, judging, maligning, gossip, the creation of the public lie, etc.. This is the true manifestation of the Arrogance Skills in Christian Activism. When this intensive entrapment in the Arrogance Skills is added to other aspects of [Motivational Arrogance](#) and Functional Arrogance the spiritual skills are then completely immobilized and replaced by the Arrogance Skills.

This illustration demonstrates that ALL distractions and deviations from the protocol plan of God are justified through the function of the Arrogance Skills. The Self Justification of Crusader Arrogance with its Christian Activism results in Self Deception. Self Deception leads to denial, a total divorcement from the reality of Bible doctrine and acceptance and voluntary function under the Evils of Christian Activism as well as other forms of religious legalism. Self Absorption rejects and reacts to any suggestion that Christian Activism is from Evil. In addition, Self Righteous Arrogance interlocking with Crusader Arrogance also results in Self Justification. Part of the inevitable involvement in Self Deception is being so divorced from reality that the believer takes his own flaws and superimposes them on those around him. ([1John 1:8](#)) This Self-deception leads the believer directly into self-absorption. ([Gal 6:3](#), [James 3:14](#)) Therefore, when the believer sows the Arrogance Skills, he reaps the most miserable life and becomes a [Psychopathic](#) believer. ([Gal 6:7](#), [Hos 8:7](#))

### [Christian Activism and Legislation](#)

When one attempts to legislate compassion he destroys freedom and this results in Pseudo compassion and the misuse of compassion in activism, tyranny, revolution, and crusader Arrogance. The Interlocking System of Arrogance thereby causes the creation of individual flaws and the justification of these aspects of Arrogance which are the motivation for the position the activist holds. Therefore, religious activism justifies sin and crime based on Evil on the basis of achieving “religious” objectives and they proclaim that “The means justifies the end”. Religious activism is most often manifest by the use of the Arrogance Skills to justify and deceive self and enter total divorcement from reality. These individuals will never use the equal privilege nor the equal opportunity of the Christian Way of Life and will never execute the Protocol Plan of God even IF they have entered it, which most likely they have not!

### [Christian Activism & Legalism](#)

The mandate to the believer is to engage in Resistance of the Devil and involves the avoidance of the Arrogance involved in Christian Activism which combines and interlocks Self Righteous Arrogance with Crusader Arrogance and Religious Legalism. To resist the devil the believer must be FIRM in Bible Doctrine and not motivated for activism. It is the Arrogance of Activism which results in the believer becoming HUMANISTIC in his philosophy and thus being caught in [Reversionism](#) where he becomes occupied with temporal solutions to man’s problems. He advocates systems to improve man’s environment, station in life and compliance with systems of legalism rather than his relationship to God. Christian Activism Includes:

- ✧ Social Gospel
- ✧ Social Engineering
- ✧ Social Crusades related to Moral Degeneracy
  - This was the failure of China Inland Missionaries accepting communism in china.
- ✧ Civil Disobedience
- ✧ Violence even to the point of murder
- ✧ Destruction of Private property
  - This is the activist bombing abortion clinics.
- ✧ Even REVOLUTION.

Therefore, one of the greatest signs of the fragmented life of the believer is the disaster of Christians sticking their noses into other people's business rather than presenting the Gospel of Christ.

Without Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul the 'loser' believer emphasizes some other mechanism for solutions to man's problems, often political, social or involving some other system and becomes involved in various aspects of Activism. The '[Cogs of Carnality](#)' are a way of referring to the meshing of the "Gears" of persistent carnality which results in moving the believer into the cyclic function of the Arrogance Skills causing him to regress from even the Status Quo of Adult or Mature Believer to that of Loser Believer. By Definition the 'loser believer' bypasses the [Rebound Procedure](#) from a position of Arrogance. As he continues down this road he becomes more involved in the Arrogance Skills and the Interlocking System of Arrogance and deceives self and becomes absorbed with self. All the while rejecting rebound repeatedly and moving down the twisted road to ruin in prolonged carnality heading into [Reversionism](#). As a result, the believer who functions under prolonged carnality very often enters into Christian Activism. Today, in the United States of America there literally are millions of believers involved in activism but this activism has in fact always existed because it goes with Arrogance. ([Prov 16:25](#), [Prov 14:12](#), [Rev 3:1](#))

Christian Activism can be vigilantism and the Modus Operandi of trying to punish criminals outside of the Law and as an emotional and arrogant sin totally wipes out the law. Social Engineering usually comes from [Bitterness](#) and results in trying to change the world to fulfill the concept of self justification from that bitterness. It includes the destruction of property and life and is totally against the word of God. Socialism of any kind including Utopian Socialism with its redistribution of Wealth is Tyranny. Socialism puts all the wealth into the controlling hands of the Government and by this attempts to prevent the FAILURE of the individual by redistribution of this wealth. This whole system was developed by a clergyman in England and is the epitome of Christian Activism. Civil Disobedience, where born again believers go against the government and the law, is also totally against the word of God and is an integral part of EVIL. The Dark side of Morality is where the sincerity of [Legalistic](#) christian activists says that the ends justify the means of accomplishing them. Therefore, Crusader Arrogance is the way to christian activism and vice versa and is justified by the crusader under the concept of helping

the country or the people.

### **Christian Activism & Conspiracy**

This is a combination and interlocking with and **Self Righteous Arrogance** producing a strong or impulsive desire to superimpose one's **Opinions**, principles and standards on others without their consent. These persons believe they have a right to do so because their cause is just under their involvement in **BLIND Arrogance**. Thus they justify using ANY means to gain their objective because their cause is in their thinking, JUST, and when Christians persist in sticking their noses into the business of other individuals or organizations they become involved in Activism which is based totally on EVIL. This often involves **EMOTIONAL** ANGER which is a terrible and destructive sin. Most people think they are RIGHT about things because they are ARROGANT, NOT because they are informed by the Word of God. In Crusader Arrogance the people think their cause is just therefore they think they are justified to invade privacy and destroy private property and even advocate civil disobedience, which is Moral Degeneracy, and will even use FORCE to impose their thinking and system on others. The destruction of private property with violence causes others to lose employment or be driven from their personal environment and this involves BELIEVERS in Arrogance expressing INTOLERANCE and STUPIDITY. Crusader Arrogance ignores the Honorable Judicial System for redressing grievances and it believes in vigilante solutions which bypass governmental law and order. Believers involved in Crusader Arrogance therefore practice civil disobedience and become involved in conspiracies such as:

- Anti Abortion
- Anti Nuclear
- Anti War
- Anti Gun
- Terrorism for Civil Rights
- Environmentalism

Therefore, the believer involved in crusader Arrogance is either:

- Ignorant of Bible Doctrine
- Has Made a false application of Bible Doctrine from EMOTIONAL Arrogance

This believer is therefore playing God and is involved in one of the worst blasphemes ever. The United States of America should not be trying to superimpose its ideals on other nations but should be providing EFFECTIVE PROPERLY PREPARED MISSIONARIES to take the gospel of Christ to them and then TRAIN those new believers to become indigenous pastors and evangelists to their own people. THIS is the greatest failure in the United States of America as a client nation to God.

### **Christian Responsibilities vs Activism**

Christians are often offended by what others do and others are often offended by what Christians do and this always is a totally false issue created by Arrogance. Today, in the 21<sup>st</sup> century, 95% of all believers have pulled the Arrogance pin and as a result have fragmented their own lives. They have become monsters by trying to have their way in many areas of life which the Christian Way of Life has nothing to do with. The Christian has the right, under

freedom, to execute the Protocol Plan of God and become an invisible hero and like all other people the right to his own opinions but must not become involved in Personal Opinion Arrogance. Christians MUST recognize also that people have the right to enter into cults or religions and must also realize that these are the Devils ACE trump card in Human History to distract people from the Absolute Truth of the Gospel and Plan of God and are also the MOST destructive things in Human History. In other words, people have a right to think, say, do and believe what they want to think, say, do or believe. Christians for many past decades in American recent history have entered into a state of insanity as a result of NOT understanding anything about the Plan of God or the Christian Way of Life. The Plan of God emphasizes that the impact of Christianity is always an INVISIBLE IMPACT from believers in [Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God](#) and not from crusaderism and activism. Christians like all citizens of this nation have CIVIL responsibilities including:

- ✧ Military Service
- ✧ Civil Service
- ✧ Paying Taxes
- ✧ Fulfilling civic responsibilities

However these do not include options for:

- ✧ Violence
- ✧ Intrusion on the privacy of others
- ✧ Destruction of private property
- ✧ Nor ANY form of civil disobedience

Yet Christian leaders constantly advocate these things. The principle of the Separation of Church and State demands that the believer understands his purpose in society in terms of the Purpose, Plan and Will of God for the Church Age believer who is part of the Royal Family of God. The spiritual impact of the Protocol Plan of God not only opposes Christian Activism but assigns it to the Interlocking System of Arrogance, Cosmic Dynasphere I and involvement in Sin, Crime and [Human Good](#) production all from and under functions of EVIL.

The real tragedy is that AS goes the believer SO goes the client nation to God where the client nation is defined in terms of spiritual activity under the [Laws of Divine Establishment](#) and the [Divine Institution](#) freedoms. The Lord Jesus, The Christ anticipated the responsibilities of the Christian in this Church Age when he said “render to Caesar the things which are Caesar’s and to God the things which are God’s”. Therefore, all believers have DUAL responsibilities but these do not include Crusading or any form of ACTIVISM. The principle of the Christian Responsibility to “Render unto Caesar” is his responsibility under establishment activity including the proper functions of:

- ✧ Divine Institutions
- ✧ Freedom
- ✧ Privacy
- ✧ Private Property
- ✧ The Right of self determination
- ✧ Responsibility to serve in the military because all freedom is through military victory
- ✧ Free Enterprise with the inevitable existence of WEALTH and POVERTY side by side.
  - The only interference in Free Enterprise should be by Law Enforcement where



criminality of function exists.

- Separation of Business and State
- Separation of Church and State

The Laws against criminality must be designed to protect citizens against criminality and not make citizens criminals for violation of arbitrary and tyrannical bureaucratic rules.

Render unto God is the Execution of the Protocol Plan of God and manufacturing of invisible heroes and the establishment of a Pivot of Mature Believers which brings blessing by association to the client nation. Christians have the right to evangelize where there is a WILLINGNESS of others to listen but NOT where the doors are shut and there is no desire to listen. The establishment of the Pivot of Mature believers as Invisible Heroes in the client nation to God, brings out the principle of Manifest Destiny which demands blessing by association with these mature believers. ALL 5 of the Jewish priest nations started out GREAT but ALL 5 failed and disappeared from history for the same reason the disappearance of the Pivot of Mature believers. The believers, even there, were involved in religion and activism and failed to execute the Plan of God for the Age of Israel. Therefore, it becomes crystal clear that Activism in the Client nation to God is a cancer and in the Church Age Christian activism is a total failure of the Christian and a sign of the fragmentation of his life. ([Rom 12:2-3](#)) Change for the believer must be in the Thinking of his Soul and based on his advance to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and Beyond. Christian Activism is part of the satanic strategy to distract the believer from fulfilling the Plan of God and is the Human Good production of the Christian trying to improve the world ruled by Satan. ([2Cor 2:11](#), [2Cor 11:3](#), [James 4:6-7](#), [1Pet 5:5-6](#)) These are believers involved in temporal solutions to life when spiritual solutions are available but have been rejected and which are in reality the ONLY solutions.

Return to the [Table of Contents](#)

### **Gate #62 – The Arrogance of Conspiracy**

Conspiracies exist whenever 2 or more people get together in this world and wherever there is one person with Arrogance there is the strong potential for a Conspiracy to exist or develop. When individuals become discontented and are flawed with Arrogance they inevitably become involved in conspiracies. When Arrogance enters into a Conspiracy CRUELTY inevitably results and Arrogant people, whether they are believers or unbelievers, inevitably become cruel and they can be found in all types of organizations. These Arrogant individuals always try to get close to other people in order to undermine someone they do not like and this happens every day and this is their life in Cosmic Dynasphere I. Therefore some of the most vicious cruel people are believers entangled in Arrogance and involved in Conspiracy. If believers involved in [Christian Activism](#) had their way and could control the country they would burn at the stake anyone focused on Grace. In fact a prime example were the Witch Hunts of the Puritans which were examples of Conspiratorial Arrogance among believers involved deeply in Cosmic Dynasphere I.

Therefore, Conspiracy Arrogance is a function of the Mutual Admiration Society in rejecting legitimate authority and forming a Conspiracy against it. Mutual Admiration Societies are conspiracies derived from Evil and based on pseudo friendships and mutual antagonism toward a third party. The overriding principle of Human History is that *the type of leadership that a nation has reflects the attitude of the people in that country*, OTHERWISE The Lord Jesus, The Christ, who controls Human History, would see that other leadership would exist there. Many of the conflicts which exist in a nation exist because there is an administration which is incompatible with the attitude of the people in that nation. This is why from 2016-2020 Mr. Trump had so much trouble in the United States trying to reorient this nation to establishment principles. This is degeneracy and this degeneration is not just IMMORALITY. Conspiratorial Arrogance occurred in the United States of America in the 1979 period where an Arab worked for Arabs along with blacks to form a Conspiracy. The Arrogant Arab and the inadequate Arabs and blacks had combined forming a Conspiracy against free enterprise. They had announced on national TV that they were going to force the giving of money by businesses to black revolutionary organizations or they were going to cut off business with them. This was a crime and blackmail and typical of the Interlocking System of Arrogance moving from Conspiratorial Arrogance to [Criminal Arrogance](#).

In any organization, institution or Modus Operandi of life some form of authority must exist. The Conspiratorial Mutual admiration society is composed of the Arrogant and Inadequate individuals and is based on [PRIDE](#). The Arrogant and Inadequate are 2 parts of [Institutional Arrogance](#) and interlock with it. These are the 2 personality factors in any pseudo love relationship:

- ▲ Arrogant == Conspirator
- ▲ Inadequate == Follower

Both are saturated with pride. The Arrogant ones think they are greater than the system while the Inadequate ones think the system has overlooked their talent and ability. Conspiracy is formed through mutual antagonism to authority and therefore originates from Institutional Arrogance. The Mutual Admiration Society exists only to overthrow legitimate [Authority](#) and therefore these 2 categories of individuals combine forces to fulfill the principle of the weak attacking the strong. The concept that opposites attract is only accurate when Evil is the basis and Conspiratorial Arrogance is Evil. ([Ps 12:2-4](#))

Therefore, Conspiracy Arrogance results from rejection of authority in Institutional Arrogance and results in the formation of a Conspiracy to overthrow the authority and leadership in an institution. It is the real or even the planned overthrow of authority in one's vicinity. This is often done in the name of Christianity, or some "greater good", or simply because one likes it better that way, he may have rejected the Laws of Divine Establishment and believes he is more important than anyone else. In the Conspiracy, the relationship between the 2 personalities is formed through mutual antagonism toward authority Z, and therefore originates as an offshoot of [Impulsive Arrogance](#). X is the Arrogant aggressor in the Conspiracy and the initiator having a Strong personality, being Anti any authority which always challenges his ego and X conspires with Y the inadequate, unappreciated or unrecognized one. X exploits Y through flattery to form the Mutual Admiration Society whose purpose is to overthrow the

legitimate authority of Z. Y is the inadequate follower and just as Arrogant as X but with a weak personality. He is vulnerable to flattery which causes him to overestimate his own value in Arrogance and underestimate Z's authority. Z is the legitimate authority and rejected by Arrogance and the target for the Conspiracy. Both Arrogant and inadequate are entangled in [Motivational Arrogance](#) and filled with [Mental Attitude Arrogance](#) and its Sins.

2 Primary Factors are invariably involved with Conspiracy Arrogance:

- A Total sense of inadequacy
- A Keen sense of competitiveness to take up the slack of inadequacy by criticizing others.

It is some aspect of Arrogance in a person which invariably leads him to join a Conspiracy against a personality who has rejected him in some way and is therefore rejected by him. These people involved in Conspiracy may be antithetical in nature but share a rejection of authority and the person in authority. Through this overt conspiratorial expression of their Arrogance they are personally destroying themselves even if their Conspiracy fails. If their Conspiracy succeeds they are in this way guaranteeing their own unhappiness and have entered into [Functional Arrogance](#) deeply entangled in Evil. All Conspiracy against Legitimate Authority is Functional Arrogance or Functional Degeneracy derived from the principles of Evil and must have a system of Motivation backing it from Motivational Arrogance or Motivational Degeneracy of Mental Attitude Arrogance. Arrogance invariably causes resentment of the authority or the person in authority, [Jealousy](#) results in joining the Conspiracy to destroy the authority. Vindictiveness and Implacability results in planning and executing a Conspiracy. [Self Pity](#) as a result of real or imagined maltreatment or injustice results in an attraction to the Conspiracy to assuage this self pity and correct the maltreatment. Therefore, ALL Conspiracy is derived from Motivational Arrogance from an intensive interaction with Mental Attitude Arrogance and results in a malfunction in thinking on a base level.

There are a myriad of places where one's use of freedom can be focused on the destruction of Authority. This inevitably is the use of one's freedom to destroy one's own freedom and it always begins with Motivational Arrogance which moves directly into Functional Arrogance. This is what becomes Conspiracy and when it moves to actually destroy authority then one has destroyed his own freedom. The essential balance between Authority and Freedom comes only under [Laws of Divine Establishment](#) or Bible Doctrine within the Divine Dynasphere and any involvement in Arrogance always destroys one or the other. Decisions can be made by those in authority to abuse their authority as a result of not knowing how to handle it so that they become a tyrant and also destroy freedom. Decisions can be made from freedom to join conspiracies and destroy authority resulting in Anarchy, also destroying all freedom. This is true in both personal life and in collective life. When conspiracies are formed by the Mutual Admiration Society this always includes Motivational Arrogance from Evil as the Aggressive Subjectivity of Mental Attitude Arrogance. Inevitably when conspiracies are formed by the Mutual Admiration society it also always includes Motivational Arrogance as Passive Subjectivity in the people who are inadequate dupes in the Conspiracy. These Inadequate individuals are always malcontent in any organization and they have no capacity for any aspect of LIFE.

The Inadequate Person proclaims “I HATE YOU”, and the fact that he hates means HE IS ARROGANT and under Motivational Arrogance. What he is in fact saying is, “I HATE YOU so I am going to GET YOU and use violence and Conspiracy to destroy you” all under Functional Arrogance both derived from Evil. This is the detonation of the Arrogance Grenade in his life:

- ▲ Motivational Arrogance or Degeneracy from Evil begins thinking in terms of Mental Attitude Arrogance and Mental Attitude Sins.
  - ▼ Jealousy, vindictiveness, implacability, Self Pity, Guilt, etc.
- ▲ The driving focus is for fun in life and this results in decisions to SKIP the Perception, Cognition, Incultation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine.
- ▲ This leads to rejection of any and all aspects of authority in one’s periphery.
  - ▼ This person lacks the result from development in the [Authority Envelope](#) of the Divine Dynasphere where he should have developed Enforced Humility and Genuine Humility and a proper Authority Orientation.

The existence of inadequacy in a person means lack of capacity for life in every category. Inadequate persons cannot handle any delegated authority nor the job in which that authority exists and therefore invariably he has been promoted BEYOND his capacity and his capabilities. One cannot have capacity for any area of life without capability in that area of function. Being minus capacity for any aspect of life or function means one also lacks a personal sense of Responsibility and HONOR. This is the person who likes the bigger salary but lacks the capability to perform the job correctly. This category of person is saturating all aspects of American government today and much of business. These are the people who cannot succeed through hard work and persistent effort but know how to flatter those under him to get the work accomplished and those above him to get more power. This is the basis and mechanism of functioning in government, especially bureaucracies today. This one also knows how to undercut those who oppose him or compete with him thereby destroying any possibility of losing his position. This person will be completely miserable in his position and there inevitably will come some situation or condition where he will be totally unable to meet the responsibilities connected with his position. The Arrogance of this person is a guarantee he will not ever be able to sustain friendships so that at some point in his life he will be very lonely. Loneliness is a result of lack of capacity for life and love and this individual cannot sustain a friendship because he is too busy wallowing in self pity.

It is the development of Enforced Humility and Genuine Humility within the [Divine Dynasphere](#) which allows the individual to relax and accept the authority of the one teaching him. If he cannot relax he cannot Learn and being Arrogant and under Motivational Degeneracy he inevitably learns nothing of Bible Doctrine and therefore will never be able to think in terms of Divine Viewpoint.

Often people get so occupied with friends or family that they become insensitive to the feelings of others come even to the point of ignoring Bible Doctrine resulting in the development of Arrogance, selfishness, etc. Often when this occurs it results in the Arrogant and inadequate becoming friends and leaving a group or organization. Thought, motivation and action are brought together in the Mutual Admiration Society. In this situation if the action involves speaking there must be a vocabulary to speak with which falls under the categories of gossip,

slander, maligning, judging, etc. This is the Arrogance which rejects authority in the [Laws of Divine Establishment](#), the Spiritual establishment and every category of authority in the framework of a nation. This is clearly demonstrated by the [Labor Union](#) functions and the problems they have created since their inception in the United States of America. This Arrogance is not only anti-authority but it seeks to destroy authority and has aggressive personalities behind it. Inadequacies, on the other hand, are a form of Mental Attitude Arrogance or Pride which suffers from hangups and is prone to Jealousy, vindictiveness, hatred, implacability, etc. [Hangups](#) in one's soul are manifestations of Evil influence in the soul. Under the circumstance of the existence of the mutual admiration society there is always some third person or group who uses his authority effectively and is the target or catalyst for their retaliation. The object of the mutual admiration society is to attack the ones in authority and usurp them so as to take their place.

Opposites attract when Evil is involved and the Evil is the motivation for their Conspiracy against authority and involves both [Self Justification](#) and [Self Vindication](#). It is very encouraging to know that the Lord eventually destroys all Mutual Admiration Societies because they are Evil in function and combine pseudo love opposites using, and coalescing through, their Motivational Arrogance of Mental Attitude Arrogance and its sins in forming a Conspiracy toward legitimate authority. As a result of this the person in authority usually becomes the target of maligning gossip and judging and even violence.

### **Conspiracy vs Humility**

There is no substitute for true [HUMILITY](#) in life and it is the order of the day for the believer along with being constantly under the [Filling of God the Holy Spirit](#). The believer must know his limitations and rid himself of the Evil of Human Viewpoint thinking that he is better than another person because this is involvement in the Cosmic Dynaspheres. The believer is in effect 2 different persons being one person when under the Filling of God the Holy Spirit and a totally different one when carnal and under the control of the Old Sin Nature. It is the [Rebound Procedure](#) which gives the believer the opportunity when he sins and fails to regain humility and keep moving in the Spiritual Life. When Arrogance emphasizes the LUST functions of the Old Sin Nature for power, approbation, recognition, then comes Conspiracy and all the mental, verbal and overt sins imaginable. Conspiracy occurs in any group of people and results in and from any of the categories of Sin:

#### **Mental Attitude Sins:**

- Hatred
- jealousy
- Vindictiveness
- Implacability
- Revenge Motivation

#### **Verbal Sins:**

- Gossip
- Slander
- Maligning
- Judging



- ✧ Undermining Authority
- ✧ Lying

#### **Overt Sins:**

- ✧ Subversion of others
- ✧ Destroying Authority
- ✧ Violence
- ✧ Activism
- ✧ Terrorism
- ✧ Persecution
- ✧ Destruction of Property
- ✧ Murder

This is a rationalization of Evil contending that the END justifies the means, which is FALSE.

People who try to legitimately improve self avoid Conspiracy Arrogance by doing so. It is Jealousy of what others have or have accomplished which motivates some to criticize others or try to destroy the one who has achieved. Conspiracy Arrogance is the attempt of the inadequate to destroy the achievers. There is a part of being in the Interlocking System of Arrogance complex which is insanity and this person may even be successful in his chosen field but when another comes along who is successful in some other field then he must find a way to degrade or destroy the other person. This leads to Conspiracy when the individual attempt to degrade that one who is the target does not work. This is an effort to destroy the authority or success of the target person by using the help of others. It is normal to be delighted when others succeed in life and enjoy their success and this reflects true Humility. The Arrogant person immediately looks for a way to degrade the successful person to discredit them, undermine their authority and success, or do something to make them look silly. This Arrogant person cannot stand for anyone else to be complimented in his presence nor to be admired or respected. The insanity of the Arrogant one despises anyone who has a good reputation and is truly successful and they therefore go out of their way to try to destroy that person so that others will despise them. This is the process of and reasoning behind the systematic undermining of authority and the one who possesses it. It is also any form of degrading of anyone who is better than the Arrogant one because he is jealous, vindictive and implacable.

#### **Anatomy of Conspiracy**

All Conspiracy is a combination of persons trying to overthrow duly constituted authority consisting of 3 categories or parts:

- ✧ **Plot** == the carefully devised systematic plan to overthrow authority which is the most deliberate part of all conspiracies. The people involved are often busy people with many things to do but often want to move into the position of authority.
- ✧ **Intrigue** == the system of scheming involving petty and underhanded Modus Operandi and is the part or type of Conspiracy which accidentally falls together. It is not a systematic plot and often occurs when people are sitting around talking and begin to criticize and find they agree in their criticism and this leads to Intrigue.
- ✧ **Machination** == the crafty and torturous processes involved to overthrow establishment and harm authority accomplished by those who have nothing better to do in life than

cause trouble.

The best or most efficiently or effectively operated Conspiracy is found where there is a PLOT as the origin and each of the other categories becomes progressively inferior in its function. Conspiracies generally have a few leaders who develop the PLOT and many common people who are pawns or dupes of these few leaders and who carry out the intrigue and machinations. These are ones inevitably manipulated by the Leaders and basically are the stupid ones. Conspiracy was the basis of the most tragic revolution of all time in the Absalom Revolt against his own father, King David. ([2Sam 15:12-13](#)) This was one of the most difficult pressures David ever faced since no one could hurt David like Absalom could. Absalom started in a Conspiracy but the PLOT was not devised by Absalom but there was intrigue where Absalom in complaining against his father was drawn into the PLOT as a DUPE, and then the MACHINATIONS of Saul's relatives who were still around completed the Conspiracy.

### **The Conspiracy of Communism**

Conspiracy has been the basis of many Assassinations in world history:

- ✧ Joash [2Kings 12:19-21](#)
- ✧ Joash's son Amaziah [2Kings 14:17-19](#), [2Chron 25:27](#); and this Conspiracy went from one generation to the next and reached a peak in each generation with the assassination of the target person.
- ✧ The Communist Conspiracy for world domination and to overthrow the free governments of the world especially the United States of America.

The PLOT in this communist Conspiracy has 2 general areas of origin, Russian Communists and Chinese Communists. The Chinese have moved into the Middle East and Africa and today into Europe where they are continuing with the execution of a Conspiracy to overthrow the United States government. In the 21<sup>st</sup> century this has taken the form of germ warfare from the Wuhan CCP virus and the function of DUPES in social unrest and revolution such as the movements of "black lives matter" and "antifa" and all 3 are based on support from Communist China. These CCP plotters have organized systems to destroy the United States and the DUPES are functioning today under Chinese support causing chaos and destruction based on false issues. The communist PLOT involves the introduction of and development of:

- ✧ Liberalism in Theology
- ✧ Socialism in Legislation
- ✧ Liberalism in education
- ✧ Anti War concepts for the nation
- ✧ Changing American culture, music, art, literature, drama, etc.
- ✧ Promoting Drug abuse and addiction
- ✧ Promoting hippies in the 60s and black lives matter, antifa and other revolutionary groups today

It is designed in 2 phases where the Thesis is to conquer by peaceful means while the Antithesis is to conquer by military action or a combination of these and the synthesis is simply the conquest of the United States fulfilling the underlying communist doctrine. The Intrigue involves bringing in the DUPES which are the people of this country who are favorably disposed toward communism or take a soft attitude toward it. The DUPES include those

involved in the machinations of social chaos including:

- ✧ Black lives matter and antifa today.
- ✧ ANYONE in the 1970s who wanted to help out the North Vietnamese and help preserve them instead of wiping them out with one nuclear device.
- ✧ Anyone in favor of the Hard Rock noise and the frenetic jumping around on a floor supposed to be dancing.
- ✧ Anyone who thinks drugs are OK to take when stimulation is desired like legalized Marijuana.
- ✧ Anyone in favor of Gun legislation.
- ✧ Anyone in favor of the big package of socialism and welfare functions.
- ✧ Anything which helps the communist degradation of this nation.

Communists DO NOT want to develop a large number of people in a local communist party in this country because they know how to use the idiotic people in groups like the national counsel of churches, the legislators in government, liberals, peaceniks, etc. They prefer to use NON-communists not related to communism so that the PLOT can continue to move ahead not being connected directly to communism. The machinations are from the communist party in the United States and they are in a long term, multi decade, Conspiracy to overthrow the government in the United States of America, AND THEY ARE SUCCEEDING!

In conspiracies the DUPES are those who run the errands for the conspirators. Today there is the biggest Conspiracy ever in history occurring, started by the Chinese communists with the Wuhan CCP virus. This has been perpetrated on the entire world especially the free nations in the western segment of the world in order to over throw their systems and bring their economies down to the level of the Chinese economy which had been failing and is now dominating several key industries in the world. The American government assisted the progress of the Conspiracy for the Chinese during the influx of the Wuhan CCP Virus and the overreaching control of the government to supposedly prevent its rapid spread. The Chinese have successfully spread this virus throughout the world and have inspired the world people to succumb to communist like rules to potentially prevent its spread. The best part is the DUPES in all world populations are succumbing to this current Conspiracy and bending over for the governments of the world to control their every move.

A sex revolution as part of a Conspiracy is what was to destroy the Jews and is what is also occurring today in America and has been since the early 60s, also instigated by the communists to overthrow this nation. In the 1970s it was factual and today still true that Russian communism and Chinese communism are in a Conspiracy along with islam to conquer America by any means possible. This has been ongoing since the middle 1920s and is now approaching 100 years of Conspiracy against the United States. In the past in this nation and most dramatically today those in administrative positions have done a great deal to further that Conspiracy. [Jeremiah chapter 11](#) is a chapter which could be the explanation of the END of the United States of America. The Register, Orange County Calif, Interview by Len Davis, of General Curtis LeMay, Ret USAF (Paraphrased and added to)

The threat was (and may still be) one of Nuclear Attack by the finest strategic weapon

system in the world, (then Russia now Korea or China). We lack superiority with which to win, the people have no patriotism and no confidence in the leadership of the nation. All racial trouble and draft protests at that time, all demonstrations and marches today are all communist inspired and SUPPORTED. We are at war with communism especially china today and we must do something about it. All the communists have to do along with moslems is to INFILTRATE our police and military systems to the point that they are in control or, as in the case happening today, cause such racial and social uprising which demands defunding and removal of Law Enforcement personnel. The people MUST quit tearing things down and believing everything presented by the liberally controlled media and the legislators and they must investigate and understand the development of the communist methods and how they are being applied today to AMERICA. Our national defense systems are a farce and we must have a system of training with RIDGED disciplinary measures in order to sustain men in combat under team operations. We cannot expect to have strict ridged discipline in the services when civilians are constantly criticizing the military and belittling those in uniform and demanding that women be placed in combat units.

In the 1970s America faced the REAL, but generally unknown, possibility that communism could have taken over this nation; again that same issue is faced today in the early 21<sup>st</sup> century but it is far more real and far more imminent. America has had since that time, and continuing much more today, conspiracies from communism toward the United States and the world in general. In addition there are rampant local conspiracies throughout the nation to solidify maximum power for conspirators in all areas of government. These conspiracies on every level are generally often caused by [Pseudo Intellectuals](#) who function on the farthest points of the Left Liberal Idea spectrum. America has not done very well with regard to the ongoing communist Conspiracy and in the 70s and far more today the Americans living in this country are the dumbest and most naive people who have ever existed. The people resent everything which has ever made America great and accept wholeheartedly everything which aligns with communist and islamic Conspiracy, brain washing techniques, and all things which would destroy America and are part of the ongoing process of self destruction.

### **Conspiracy & Authority**

Conspiracy, which is based on the [Rejection of Authority](#), means authority must break down in the soul of the conspirator first. This may start with [Mental Attitude Arrogance](#) and its accompanying sins such as Pride which entices the [Emotion](#) to revolt against the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul so that the people involved decide that they can do the job held by authority better than the one in authority. Believers cannot even concentrate on the bible message being taught in their Local Church unless they accept the authority of the one who communicates it. Once authority is accepted then their function is to OBEY, which is a part of the proper function under the [Grace Apparatus for Perception](#) for putting the information into the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul where it can be used in application. Conspiracies to be successful must have a large number of Dupes. The conspirators, of any institution they are involved in, are hard nosed and totally anti-authority and they are generally very clever. They will approach others and proclaim the dangers in the

organization or that the leadership is good “BUT”. The dupes will fall for this every time and some will get involved in the Conspiracy for the social interaction and some because they think they will become smarter than the authority figure (Remember Ishah in the Garden). Dupes are generally led astray in a Conspiracy by the wrong crowd of hard conspirators. Dupes are those believers who never attend bible study consistently and never follow through in any organization. Dupes are those believers who started in an organization with good intentions but began to associate with the wrong crowd and are then sucked into a Conspiracy and totally lose track of their objective in joining the organization in the first place. Dupes put all things before doctrine in the Local Church or in other organizations before policy and procedure. Dupes generally reject the presentation of Absolute Truth in Bible Doctrine or the procedures and policy of any organization. The bible does not compliment or condone Conspiracy in any way and both conspirators and the dupes will be dealt with by God. ([Jer 11:20](#)) The United States of America is and has been the victim and object of a great communist Conspiracy to destroy this nation for more than 100 years and the function of the local churches teaching Bible Doctrine consistently and expositively is the only true defense against it.

### **Conspiracy & Soul Slavery**

One of the signs of being involved in soul slavery is Conspiracy ([Jer 11:9](#)), and it is also a sign of [Emotional Revolt of the Soul](#). When any Conspiracy begins beware of former friends they will become the most aggressive enemies in a moment if they succumb to Emotional Revolt of the Soul and the leading on of a strong conspirator. Consequently, when Bible Doctrine is rejected there is inevitably a Conspiracy that occurs. There has never been a Conspiracy nor a period of apostasy in [Reversionism](#) without first the rejection of Bible Doctrine, some level of Negative Volition toward Bible Doctrine. Generally believers in the past and also today know that they should go to bible class under a prepared expository teacher of Bible Doctrine and some do JUST BECAUSE THEY SHOULD but they do not concentrate nor accept what is taught. Some level of [Negative Volition](#) toward Bible Doctrine in the form of having something more important to do is HOW Conspiracies START. Not attending Bible Doctrine class because, one has in his mind that there is something MORE important than Bible Doctrine means that the emotions demand stimulation and ecstasies and this demand is so strong that the emotion is moving toward ruling the soul. The emotions cannot rule the soul until the emotions get into a Conspiracy with the Old Sin Nature in Emotional Revolt of the Soul. These are the people who make all imaginable excuses for not attending or not concentrating when in attendance. Conspiracy occurs because of a rejection of authority and rejection of Bible Doctrine is rejection of the authority of God. No male has any right to be a Pastor Teacher unless he teaches dogmatically, emphatically with authority using the principles of Isogogics, Categorical Analysis and Comparison and Exegesis of the language and teaches without equivocation. When he does this some will accept and some will reject what has been taught. Once a person starts moving into Negative Volition they enter Emotional Revolt of the Soul and the Conspiracy is on.

The Apostle Paul was a victim of Conspiracy in Jerusalem ([Acts 23:13](#)) where the [Legalists](#) were involved in the PLOT in the tetrahedron as Pharisees and there were 40 Young men who said they would not eat until they could assassinate Paul and these were the DUPES. The judiazers followed Paul everywhere as part of the Machinations to destroy Paul and his ministry.



Jeremiah was also the victim of a family Conspiracy, a personal Conspiracy from his Right Woman, a local Conspiracy from his home town Anathah and also a national Conspiracy and he survived all because of the IRON of [Metabolized Bible Doctrine](#) in the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of his Soul. The people of this country have for a very long time, especially TODAY, just sit and listened to and accepted a lot propaganda from the news media, in electronic transmissions and in readable propaganda in the news papers and magazines because the 4<sup>th</sup> estate is dedicated to and sold on a system which will destroy America as part of radical liberalism. While they sit around waiting to be enslaved while the governments of Russia and especially communist China are preparing and practicing ways to enslave and destroy this nation, by invasion if necessary. They have in the past and will again, when they overrun this nation, decorate lamp posts with the bodies of people who go against their government for any of a multitude of various reasons.

When any nation especially a [Client Nation](#) reaches a point of prosperity they do so from the provisions of the Grace of God and from following the laws he has ordained for the Human Race. Once prosperity comes to them the people face the test of SOUL Slavery and it inevitably results, when failed, in getting back into overt bondage. The people of the United States of America have for many DECADES been in soul slavery and it is questionable as to whether America will survive the present conspiracies or not. The problem today in the United States is that the interest in Bible Doctrine has waned and it is unlikely that there is even a very minor pivot left to bring this nation back to its greatness. Bible teachers must begin to look for areas where Positive Volition is rising up in order to supply Bible Doctrine to these people and build a greater and greater pivot. You cannot reject Bible Doctrine and survive as an individual nor collectively as a nation. In the 1970s and again today America is at a PEAK of Conspiracy and the Conspiracy functioning today is far greater and far more overt and devastating than it was in the 70s. Every 2 or 3 hundred years some Conspiracy gets moving and runs rampant and there is always Conspiracy in the Human Race. Conspiracy started when Satan said to Ishah, “You won’t really die will you?” Our former president had for 8 years sold us out to both the communists of Russia and China and especially to the moslems of the middle east. He constantly played footsie with islam and red china and this was only stopped when Mr. Donald Trump took office in 2016. Today the democratic party in order to retake power in the government have done unimaginable things to degrade the process of elections and the progress and efforts of Mr. Trump in trying to bring America into a recovery period from the political and economic down trends and failures of past presidents. Their Conspiracy has culminated with the fraud perpetrated through illegal voting and illegal vote manipulations in the 2020 presidential election. This Conspiracy has extended to the mandates from the government for the population to wear masks, restrict their outside movement, maintain large personal space in public, etc., to offset the potential contagion of the Wuhan CCP Virus. This along with government and CCP support of revolutionaries in the ‘black lives matter’ and ‘antifa’ movements are all as a result of the false threat of the Wuhan CCP virus. The Chinese communists are the lowest form of creature on the earth and their viciousness is unbelievable and this is demonstrated by the CREATION AND THEN RELEASE OF THE WUHAN CCP VIRUS TO BRING THE ECONOMIES OF THE WORLD TO THE LEVEL OF THE FAILING CHINESE ECONOMY AND SET THE STAGE OF TAKE OVER OF THE United STATES AND EVENTUALLY

THE WORLD. They have initiated and set their conspiracies into motion to take over every country in the world especially the United States of America in this 2<sup>nd</sup> decade of the 21<sup>st</sup> century. The Chinese communists are moving now with this objective for this nation and the world and they will destroy their opposition in the most brutal ways having publicly announced to the world an “anything goes” war doctrine. The only prevention possible for this takeover is Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul of believers and that requires overwhelming Positive Volition to Bible Doctrine throughout the nation which today is ABSENT.

Never before in American history have Americans been the victims of such intense, concentrated, organized and planned deception as has occurred recently in this country. The media have come to the point of total irresponsibility and all of them are involved in this Conspiracy with VERY FEW exceptions and they can be relegated to a position of total stupidity and are in fact the traitorous DUPES of the Conspiracy. They are the intrigue executors without being plotters. This is tragic and the ONLY thing able to stop this Conspiracy is the growth of a pivot of mature believers from consistent Perception, Cognition, Inculcation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine by INDIVIDUAL believers.

### **Conspiracy & Power Politics**

By emphasizing CHANGE power politics destroys the authority of the Laws of Divine Establishment and the proper use of freedom under them. One must not ever attack the authority in his place of work because when he is under authority he never gains by changing the authority he is under. If one cannot understand authority in the work place, he cannot understand it is social life. Freedom is essential for functioning properly in and the resolution of the Angelic Conflict and power politics is designed to destroy freedom while pivot politics offers a solution to any and all national crises without tampering with human freedom. The concept and definition of Freedom under the Laws of Divine Establishment includes the principles of freedom as uncoerced and unencumbered Free Will Volition, Privacy, Ownership of personal Property and the sacredness of Life, all under Authority. For this specific purpose, God has ordained systems of authority which he has detailed in Codex I and III of the Mosaic Law to protect and preserve the Human Race. Power politics is social action, muck raking, Crusades, Self Righteousness, violence, terrorism, assassination and revolution all the things which Bible Doctrine totally rejects. Power politics disrupts normal Human Life in the name of Human Good, Self Righteousness and self sacrifice and these destroy human freedom. Pivot politics rejects social action, reforming, crusading, etc., as unnecessary radical surgery and demands the Perception, Cognition, Inculcation & Metabolization of UNCHANGING Bible Doctrine for the changing world.

Change upsets establishment principles and destroys freedom in the name of the “common good” therefore power politics in the guise of Human Good destroys the essential characteristic of life in the Angelic Conflict which is human freedom. Power politics is not only change using Conspiracy but also change using violence whenever it is needed. Whatever the form of government in a nation it is the function understanding of and adherence to the Laws of Divine Establishment principles sponsoring human freedom, whether in monarchy, republic, oligarchy

and maybe even democracy, which results in a good government. The CHANGE which occurs in the functions of power politics for the proposed purpose of resolving a national crisis, in fact destroys human freedom by attacking the Laws of Divine Establishment principles, especially authority, property, privacy and free enterprise. The PIVOT of mature believers in a nation break no laws; sponsor no violence including assassination, terrorism, crime or revolution; confiscates no one's property; do not intrude on human privacy but they will turn the world upside down through the invisible force of Bible Doctrine and the function of the [Royal Family Honor Code](#). Power politics tries to change the leopard's spots while Pivot Politics only changes the direction in which the leopard is moving. Any efforts toward CHANGE or attempted change means destruction of freedom, and both Conspiracy and any form of violence always destroys freedom. Power politics exchanges Evil in an establishment setting for non-establishment Evil and as a result tyranny prevails, clearly demonstrated in the French, Russian and Chinese revolutions. It is social action, distortion of law, Crusades, [Scar Tissue of the Soul](#), Self Righteousness and Human Good ALL derived from Evil. It is violence and [Revolution](#) exchanging freedom for tyranny. The Shaw of Iran was in fact exchanged for the unimaginable Evils of radical islam, the dictator of Nicaragua was exchanged for the tyranny of communism all as a direct result of the interference by the United States of America with the governments in those nations. Conspiracy means disruption of normal life in the name of human good and Self Righteousness and use of Arrogance and self sacrifice to destroy freedom and by this means to destroy responsible government which is changed into the irresponsible government of dictatorship and tyranny. All are vulnerable to power politics because of involvement in Arrogance in the form of [Pride](#). Power Politics uses Human Good as the production of the Evil thinking and motivation therein, while Pivot Politics used Bible Doctrine through Divine Viewpoint thinking for the motivation to produce [Divine Good](#).

Pivot politics emphasizes thought as reverse concentration, and Grace as the provider of a myriad of undeserved things which God does for the believer in time; while power politics emphasizes action, violence, tyranny, Arrogance, Evil, self-righteousness, revolution and CHANGE. Power politics is the believer on a crusade while his soul is full of Scar Tissue of the Soul, with locked in Arrogance, filled with self-righteousness, producing all manner of human good from a saturation with Evil, and distorting law through the advocacy of terrorism or revolution.

### **[Conspiracy Arrogance & Authority Arrogance](#)**

Authority Arrogance is incompetent but always alleges to do a better job than anyone else who possesses authority. In all cases Arrogance attracts Arrogance and [Negative Volition Arrogance](#) is a major part of this picture. When Arrogance has been disciplined by authority it resents authority and often becomes an Arrogant demagogue which seeks to make use of the discontent of others and stands by to sympathize with them and imply that they all receive injustice from authority. Arrogance is always promoted and advanced in an environment of Arrogance and discontent. Without [National Arrogance](#) revolution is impossible and conspirators withdraw into Conspiracy and Conspiracy can only blossom into revolution where the Interlocking System of Arrogance universally exists in a population. National Arrogance is national degeneracy which despises national authority. Individuals in the Interlocking System of Arrogance have neither

capacity for love nor for appreciation for anything in life. In Conspiracy and Revolution the malfunction of justice destroys freedom and the conspirator will eventually destroy himself.

People involved in conspiracies are those who reject authority and the Absolute Truth found in the [Laws of Divine Establishment](#). These persons have moved deeply into the [8 Stages of Reversionism](#) whether they are believer or unbeliever. Every rejection builds more Scar Tissue of the Soul and as the Scar Tissue of the Soul builds pressure increases which result in the construction of stronger Arrogance. As Arrogance increases reality disappears and these people become inflexible with regard to the [Nonessentials of Life](#). The more they say no to any part of the doctrinal Absolute Truth of the Laws of Divine Establishment and [Divine Institutions](#) the more they reject authority and the greater is the build up of Arrogance. As Arrogance builds up there is an increased development of soul [Hangups](#), Neuroses, [Psychoses](#) and therefore a greater desire to set aside anything which opposes one's hangups and Arrogance. When man becomes confused and divorced from reality he wants equality with anything or anyone which challenges his Arrogance. In essence, therefore, he wants equality with God and any other system of authority which challenges his Arrogance and in fact he demands it. By equality he means that he must be recognized as GREATER THAN that which has challenged him. The police represent authority principles and to be able to spit in the face of an officer or publicly abuse him with insulting vocatives makes the Arrogant one feel better in compensation for his hangups and represents his advanced development of [Scar Tissue of the Soul](#). This does not mean that every Law Enforcement officer is a noble part of the police. However, each officer represents a PRINCIPLE of authority which provides for internal freedom for all in a nation. It is this authority which makes it possible for one to have privacy, personal property and security for his life, and have things meaningful in life and therefore always should be given respect.

Today the police are hamstrung by Arrogance in the civil authority above them and by people who malign and abuse them and then influence the judicial system to be prejudiced against them. There has been the recent call by Marxist revolutionaries to "Defund the Police" as the extreme insult to the system of Law Enforcement. The longer this trend continues in society the greater becomes the potential for a first class disaster in revolution or civil war. America will have this disaster because overall, the people ridicule the authority in police and run down military personnel and they are demonstrating that they are total fools. Every bit of Freedom America has had and still has comes from the military and never ever from politicians. Freedom comes from battlefields and never from the halls of government. Americans have prosperity because of free enterprise and men of courage who have met payrolls and were willing to expand and compete. The reality of economics is that prosperity never comes from a government like that of the United States which is saturated with EVIL and which is destroying both business and prosperity. Real, true authority lies with the police, the military, with executives in business and with investors and stock holders but Americans have been trained to think of government as the authority and this is TOTALLY false. The American forefathers and founding fathers set up this republic to have small government and big people and today it is totally opposite with very small people who are basically slaves and very very big government which is now overtly tyrannical. In Arrogance people strive for equality with their maker and in vanity, Pettiness, Jealousy and implacability consider themselves equal with God. God can

and has given mankind overt freedom but cannot ever give equality to anyone because he has provided volition, FREE WILL, to everyone and furthermore, there is no way that the created one is or can ever in any way be equal to the creator. This was Satan's GREATEST Error of thinking.

A dogmatic principle which is essential for all leaders to understand first is that they have been promoted by God and as a result, "To whom much is given much is expected". Therefore, the believer must never get involved with vindictive criticism of ANY person for any reason with or without facts. He must not ever waste his life trying to demote someone in authority whom God has promoted, he must leave this to God. However, IF God gives one responsibility in an organization and authority, then he will have to make decisions for promotion and demotion of those under him. If he gets into a ministry he must ensure he functions in it properly and does not criticize or condemn anyone else. Always remember, when God promotes someone NO ONE can ever demote him. The Ironic fact is that when one personally tries to demote someone whom God has promoted they are the ones demoted. The believer must never use personality, maligning, gossip, or any other pseudo truth to try to demote another person for any reason else he will be placing self under incredible pressure. All too frequently, people with genuine grievances, complaints or personal needs are complimented by the flattering pseudo interest of conspirators and revolutionists not realizing that they are being used and exploited for the unlawful functions of Conspiracy and Revolution. Only the humble can avoid being exploited by the [Ambitious](#). [Humility](#) along with avoidance of involvement in any aspect of the Interlocking System of Arrogance is the key to avoid being exploited by others.

### **Conspiracy Arrogance, Criminal Arrogance & National Arrogance**

Conspiratorial criminals pretend to take an interest in people but the only real interest they have is in self advancement. As the normal individual becomes interested in people around them, they then become interested in history. The conspirator, on the other hand, is Arrogant and preoccupied with himself and gives the impression of interest in others but in fact is not. Their interest in people is in fact for using them to promote self and their agenda. Conspiratorial Criminals have not learned the most basic principle of life which is "If God does not promote you you are not promoted and If God does not demote you you are not demoted". When God promotes a person there is nothing in this world which can demote him. All attempts by individuals or groups to demote someone usually results from Arrogant Jealousy. All attempts at trying to demote a person promoted by God will bring incredible Divine Discipline to the demoters. It will be very interesting to observe the Divine Discipline on those who were constantly criticizing and degrading Mr. Donald Trump during his presidency and continue to do so even now, since he OBVIOUSLY was put into the office of president by God to give the American people a final chance at recovery. There is a huge difference between God's Divine Discipline for a person and his demoting them. When anyone is down in life and under Divine Discipline never ever interfere with them for you will bring onto yourself that discipline which they are to receive and added to that greater Divine Discipline for interfering with God.

National Arrogance is always the molding material for Revolution. The United States of



America is obviously totally saturated with and entangled in all categories of the Interlocking System of Arrogance in the early 21<sup>st</sup> century. America is bordering on an overt all encompassing revolution or civil war, unless it is first destroyed by invasion. When one removes the Laws of Divine Establishment and Legitimate Authority as detailed under them, no matter how bad they are functioning, then revolutionary catastrophe is inevitable. Things which are bad with national government will always be worse as a result of revolution.

‣ **Crusader Arrogance + Criminal Arrogance == Revolution**

Criminals often pretend to be crusaders and by this means form a facade for their own revolution. The criminal uses the crusader to foment the revolution and the differentiation is difficult to determine when these are combined in one person. Such finesse requires maximum Arrogance and leads to vulnerability to all categories of the Interlocking System of Arrogance in this individual. For Conspiracy to be parlayed into revolution the masses of people must be taught to despise establishment authority. This has been being systematically done in American public schools, by liberal media, by liberal drama, in liberal homes, in liberal churches and is a very simple process because the pupils are already Arrogant. Today liberals are even using the entertainment media to promote this and other Evil political agendas. This is accomplished through a system of Arrogance in people who have no great overt responsibility, where it is made very easy to say the government is wrong and I am right.

Arrogance always reacts in life and in reaction the believer is at his worst which usually results in his failure in the Spiritual Life. If one reacts to criminality perpetrated against him, he is on the verge of becoming a criminal. If he reacts to the Conspiracy concepts in the nation and joins a paramilitary militia he IS a criminal because valid Militia function is actually, by definition, serving in any of the branches of the military services of this country. The believer must never ever take up arms against his government. Adding Ambition to Pride results in Evil being intensified by the emergence of revolutionary leadership. In revolution the Criminal gains great power and the masses of people who revolt are dupes and eventually destroyed. The people are promised that they will gain from the revolution but in the end they always lose. In the atmosphere of revolution there is only the advancement of Evil and temporary or semi permanent profit ONLY to the hard core conspirators. Revolution is therefore the Oligarchy of Evil with the people who are forged into the weapon of revolution eventually destroyed by Arrogant manipulation principles.

Return to the [Table of Contents](#)

**Gate #63 – The Arrogance Regarding Institutions / Organizations**

Institutional Arrogance closely interlocks with the function of [Authority Arrogance](#) and [Conspiracy Arrogance](#) in revolting against legitimate organizations which always have 3 fundamental characteristics:

- Authority
- Purpose
- Policy

When one joins any organization or works for an organization he must understand these 3 areas of the organization in order to be able to function properly within that organization. There must be authority over those in the organization and there must be a delineated purpose for the organization and there must be a policy in that organization related to the individual's function in that organization to fulfill the purpose. Institutional Arrogance attacks 1 or more of these 3 principles of organizational Modus Operandi. Institutional Arrogance assigns the greatest importance to self and one's Personal Opinions and causes the individual to engage in Self Righteous Arrogance and thus undermine the organizations AUTHORITY, attacking the organizations PURPOSE and thereby seeking to destroy a Legitimate Organization. This has occurred for many varied organizations in the United States of America as a result of fragmentation of the lives of the people in this nation. In any organization, hiring people who are fragmented and functioning in the Interlocking System of Arrogance will ultimately destroy the organization. This is the terrible tyranny of the American government forcing companies to hire based on gender or ethnicity where very often these people are far LESS qualified for the positions and entangled within the Interlocking System of Arrogance in Self Righteous Arrogance at the very least. In this way the government is responsible for producing fragmented lives, destroying industry and creating management systems instead of promoting leadership and especially destroying the system of government in the United States with its original constitutional checks and balances. At every level of American government today in the 21<sup>st</sup> century there are FRAGMENTED people who have saturated their lives with functioning within the Cosmic Dynaspheres and have fallen through the 8 stages of Reversionism and THEY are making decisions effecting the lives of every individual in the nation and passing laws which have no real function except to DEPRIVE citizens of their God given freedoms. This was tragic in the 1930's, terrible in the 1980's and is a heinous reality today in 1<sup>st</sup> quarter of the 21<sup>st</sup> century. Fragmentation is in every part of American life and society including churches, businesses, social organizations, EVERY LEVEL of Government, Professions, educational systems especially Universities, Police, Fire Departments, Medicine, Engineering, Military, Social and Civic Clubs, and on and on. These people are the "friends" who stab one in the back as quickly as they can for their own benefit and advancement. When functioning in any organization, the process needed to bring about changes in the purpose, policy or operation of that organization, which engages in any function which undermines the organizational authority, is associated with some form of entanglement in Arrogance. Anywhere, in any setting, where there is authority, purpose and policy there is a legitimate organization and it can be and very often is destroyed by Institutional Arrogance.

Institutional Arrogance, is disorientation to life in the realm of any Legitimate Organization. In Education the authority of the professor and administration is rejected by the student under Institutional Arrogance. This is clearly demonstrated by the movements in 2024 of students occupying campus' across the nation in protest of ISRAEL'S position with regard to the Arabic terrorist organizations attacking it. Institutional Arrogance is the source of great danger to any member of the human race, and this includes the believer as well. It is a potent distraction to Bible Doctrine, the spiritual life, patriotism and any form of beneficial Modus Vivendi. Institutional Arrogance can result in any individual being involved in it because everyone has the opportunity of being related in his lifetime to some sort of authority, purpose and policy,

somewhere within the framework of an organization starting with Family. Any time that a person succeeds within an organization and does his job extremely well, he often receives recognition and accolades for it, is singled out for special acclaim, it is at this point he is in danger of this relatively subtle and somewhat sophisticated form of Arrogance, Institutional Arrogance. Effective training, especially military training, must be designed to destroy any Arrogance a person may have. This training must develop great physical conditioning and esprit DE corps but also must remove all illusions about personal importance to the organization. One does not have to like the boss, the supervisor or the drill sergeant nor should one be motivated to do a good job because the boss is nice. The most important factor is the policy, purpose and principles of the Organization and this cannot ever be learned by an individual saturated with Arrogance. One may do very well in an organization but he is never better than the organization. Because one achieves in an organization does not mean he is better than the organization and he must have gratitude to the organization for the support it gives him. One cannot live life without appreciating the organization from which he came.

Institutional Arrogance can exist in ANY organization at any Level. When a person in an organization becomes negative toward the Authority he will inevitably violate the Policy and therefore fail to fulfill the Purpose of the organization. Attacks on an organization's authority generally involve attacks on the person holding the authority because of some level of antagonism toward him. It is Arrogance in a person which leads him to join a Conspiracy against a personality who has been rejected and who has authority. Those involved in the conspiracy may be antithetical types of persons but share a rejection of authority and the person in authority. Through this expression of their arrogance they are personally destroying themselves whether their conspiracy fails or succeeds and they are guaranteeing their own unhappiness by having entered into [Functional Arrogance](#) from the Evil of the Cosmic Dynaspheres. This Functional Arrogance must have a system of motivation derived from [Motivational Arrogance](#) involving some aspect of [Mental Attitude Arrogance](#) and Mental Attitude Sins:

- ▲ ANY Mental Attitude Arrogance results in resentment of authority.
- ▲ [Self Pity](#) as a result of real or imagined maltreatment or injustice results in [Jealousy](#)
- ▲ Jealousy results in seeking a Conspiracy to join.
- ▲ Vindictiveness and Implacability results in joining a conspiracy to destroy the authority.

Institutional Arrogance is failure to recognize what individuals, at a minimum, owe in appreciation and loyalty to the organization they are functioning under, to the institution, to the business, to the team, to the system of discipline, to the system of authority and to the principles which originate such organizations, motivate function within them and perpetuate them. Institutional Arrogance is failure to orient to the institution and to its organizational system and to assume that because one has done well in the organization that he, in effect, makes the institution or the organization, rather than the organization making him. There is often an idea that because a person excels in some field or endeavor he is somehow a superior member of the human race, and that in his success there was no teamwork involved and no

one else had anything to do with it. It never occurs to the Arrogant person that others are involved in his success and that, in effect, it is THE SYSTEM which has caused him to succeed and the approbation that he receives is simply the result of a system or an organization functioning as a whole together. Instead of being grateful for the system and for the organization, the individual becomes not only Arrogant but a deterrent to further progress by that organization and therefore a problem.

The thing which stalls the believer in his advance in the Spiritual Life is [Pride](#) and selfcenteredness and the idea that he might be able to read a book to gain all necessary doctrinal knowledge and thereby become right about all things spiritual. Every believer MUST log time in the study and process necessary for the inculcation of Bible Doctrine and spiritual advance and must NEVER resist doctrines he does not really like. The greatest believer in the Old Testament Scripture was Moses and next was Elijah. They did not resist Bible Doctrine and had reached [Advanced Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God](#) by accepting Bible Doctrine, but still, they became involved in Arrogance, however, they did not ever resist Bible Doctrine. Elijah started with [Impulsive Arrogance](#) and then when answering the Lord's questions interlocked with Institutional Arrogance saying "I alone am left". He was thinking he was greater than the whole system and Plan of God and even the whole client nation. Because the Lord used him as the spiritual leader in the land and because fire came down from heaven when he asked for it, he suffered from Institutional Arrogance and incredible Pride. In Arrogance he looked at the system and said I am greater than the system. However, the Lord has designed life so that no one is ever greater than the institutions of life, no matter how much corruption might occur in the institution. Within the system of Free Enterprise one is never greater than the corporation which sets up the standards by which he has succeeded. No one is greater than the institutions under which they function and which have set up standards for success which are then used by the individual to reach greatness.

All organizations are composed of authority structures and in those structures individuals wielding that authority have Old Sin Natures, prejudices, human norms and standards or lack of them and some level of understanding or complete lack of it. It is amazing that American people look to an organization in which they function and expect from the organization what THEY, THEMSELVES, consider a "fair deal" and are particularly upset if they don't get what they want. This results in labor union strikes, complaints alleging discrimination because of not being recognized for talent, intelligence or being held back from advancement in any business, professional organization or government bureaucracy. The complaints represent involvement in the Interlocking System of Arrogance with entanglement in Institutional Arrogance. In life one will, at some point, invariably be passed over for someone with inferior talent, less motivation and a poor Mental Attitude, for a promotion or advance in pay. The worst people seem to be the ones who move ahead in the structure of an organization so that those with the least ability and mentality rise to the top and it seems very unfair. People then become bitter and obsessed with the unfairness they perceive as an individual, of the world or the organization they are involved with and this is Institutional Arrogance and a complete breakdown of any understanding of life. [Bitterness](#) involves Self Centered Arrogance and it reacts against any organization, authority or circumstance in life and as a result of this reaction there is no way a

believer in this condition can fulfill the purpose of God for his life on this earth. For these believers there is incredible suffering which occurs as a result of moving into [Reversionism](#). In consideration of where ALL fairness to believers comes from, it is possible to avoid the terrible Arrogance related to Bitterness since no one has any right to be bitter about anything. Bitterness is worse than all the injustice one might suffer because it reflects an Arrogant reaction to a situation. This type of reaction is only overcome through the use of the Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of one's Soul and establishing a correct relationship with the Lord.

The major problem, in general, regarding the governmental systems of the United States of America at all levels is Institutional Arrogance. In addition the majority of people involved in government function in general, are under Impulsive Arrogance where the individual in an organization is incapable of effectively handling the authority he has. When involved in Institutional Arrogance the individual is believing that he is either indispensable or maltreated in the organization he is functioning in. He believes that the organization cannot survive without his abilities OR the organization does not appreciate his abilities. However, in reality it is the principle of the organization which carries everyone in life and organizations of every type set up systems with standards by which individuals can achieve success. However, this is not the case in bureaucracies where they do not require any level of success or ability but only engage in Impulsive or Institutional Arrogance functions where one possesses an excess of power over and above one's capacity and ability. OSHA in the United States bureaucracy system is generally a prime example of Institutional Arrogance combined with Impulsive Arrogance where the individual agent makes decisions without any achievement in the area of his involvement based on emotional impulse and limited knowledge and which are the result of having more power than he has capacity for. This is the totality of the American government today and it is now and has been for some time based on incompetent and abusive bureaucracy.

In any modern society one of the most dominant entanglement areas in the Interlocking System of Arrogance is through Institutional Arrogance. This is [Authority Rejection](#) in any situation or form and when this occurs the individual assumes he is greater than the organization and seeks to destroy that authority. Everyone has been in some position where he has rejected authority and thinks he has a right to CHANGE its policies to align with his thoughts and views or to criticize the persons in authority because he disagrees with them. This is Institutional Arrogance interlocking with [Blind Arrogance](#) and these will interlock with all the other gates of entry into the Interlocking System of Arrogance. Believers must not ever try to destroy the system they are involved in even if they totally disagree with the system. Any time one tries to use violence or any other mechanism derived from Evil, such as [Conspiracy](#), to change a system, he defeats the purpose for which he had entered into that violence or conspiracy. Conspiracy is just as much from Evil as is violence and when conspiracy tries to remove an authority, if it succeeds, it destroys the system under which the authority is functioning. This is the abject stupidity of calling for "defunding of the police" by the 'Black Lives Matter' revolutionary group in America in the 1<sup>st</sup> quarter of this 21<sup>st</sup> century. Conspiracy rejects the system and by rejection of the system the conspirators ultimately either destroy the system or leave it. If they leave the system and try to establish another system, they cannot form



another system because they rejected the original system and all Authority, and they then self destruct. When one cannot abide a system or an authority figure then he is free to dislike or reject the system but never to try to destroy it and, without an expression of Arrogance, he can leave quietly and move on. If one rejects this and tries to destroy the system he enters the Interlocking System of Arrogance and ultimately will interlock with so many areas in this system that he WILL destroy himself. NO ONE is greater than any [Legitimate Organization](#) or system in which they are involved. Obviously this does not include any criminal, revolutionary or communist system. Once one enters into a system he must function within the framework and principles of that system beginning in life with family and marriage. This last concept regarding marriage does not apply when one is not the initiator of the destruction of the marriage or family system but there are only a very few legitimate reasons for leaving that system. In addition wanting to run away from a situation one does not like in life, in one's job or social life, is also Institutional Arrogance. Leaving because the work environment is unpleasant, or because of the dangers involved with law enforcement or military functions, because of the way one is treated etc., is Institutional Arrogance. Because most aspects of life are related, at some time, to some form of organization the Arrogance of running away from the organization is disorientation to life in any area of legitimate organization function.

### **Categories in Institutional Arrogance**

There are 2 basic categories of individuals in Institutional Arrogance:

- The person who is Successful who distorts his success into a system of presumption, pride or some aspect of Arrogance. This is the presumption that the organization cannot make it without him.
- The person who is Unsuccessful and who thinks his abilities and talents are not appreciated and that he is being discriminated against. This is often considered to be the result of the boss having too many relatives or friends on the job.

Both of these are systems of Arrogance in thinking, rejecting the authority of the organization, whatever kind it might be. This is the person overestimating his ability related to the organization and then becoming bitter because they turn him out for poor performance in his areas of responsibility.

In Institutional Arrogance often the individual assumes he is carrying the organization rather than vice versa and one manifestation of this is Bitterness and the other is excessive [Complaining](#). This is the person who is incompetent in his area of responsibility and because of involvement in other areas of Arrogance he assumes he is not and assumes that others are getting more breaks than he is enabling them to advance. This person overestimates his own value and becomes bitter and disgruntled. Both types of people become a liability to the organization or as a result of their poor attitudes they are careless which results in their becoming a liability to themselves and their own safety. This results from more than just [Pride](#) and is a complex of Arrogance entanglement demonstrated by bitterness and chronic complaining. No one can be happy in life and enjoy life and suffer from Institutional Arrogance and with Institutional Arrogance he will never have capacity for life. Many professional organizations suffer from this type of Arrogance including:

School Systems at all levels

Police Forces

Military Units  
Medical Centers  
Political Organizations or parties  
Entertainment Industries  
Film Industries  
Social Organizations  
Governmental Organizations  
Churches  
Teams

Law Firms  
Engineering firms  
Anti communist organizations  
Ballet Troops  
Orchestras  
Civic Clubs  
Bureaucracies  
Art  
and any other organized area of life.

### **Institutional Arrogance & the Woman**

In the Plan of God the woman's transgression occurred in part as a result of Institutional Arrogance where she rejected both the plan and policy of God thinking she could be smarter than Adam and as smart as God, while Adam under Impulsive Arrogance rejected the Plan of God to be with the woman. By this means mankind failed in part because of a combination of Institutional and Impulsive Arrogance on the part of these parents of the Human Race and this combination required the establishment, by God, of a great many rules for the protection of the Human Race. Just because one disagrees with a policy coming from someone in authority does not mean he is right and they are wrong and this disagreement can come from Institutional Arrogance. To avoid Institutional Arrogance in the Plan of God the believer must understand the Essence or Character of God.

Institutional Arrogance is a basic disorientation to life in the field of authority. Probably one of the greatest areas of malfunction leading to Institutional Arrogance today is manifest in the historical example of the feminist movement in which women are constantly given authority, especially today, which they cannot handle. Marriage is a divine institution designed for all humans, both believers and unbelievers, and is a union between 1 male with 1 female ONLY. Many of the problems of marriage revolve around one or both partners becoming involved in [Legalism](#) and some aspect of [Self Righteous Arrogance](#). This results in these believers ultimately involving themselves in the [Arrogance Skills](#) and Interlocking extensively within the System of Arrogance and its Sins and failing in the Mechanics of [Rebound](#). Women in the organization called marriage may wake up one day and discover they are totally superior to their husbands. They may find that they are smarter, better organized, make better decisions whereas he makes none at all. The temptation for such a woman is to take over leading the marriage. For believers in marriage, happiness and love in marriage depend on acquiring the 2 Categories of [Virtue Love](#) in the Spiritual Life, [Personal Love for God](#) consistently developed to the level of [Occupation with the Person of The Lord Jesus, The Christ](#) and [Impersonal, Unconditional Love for Mankind](#). These begin to be developed initially in the [Adult Spiritual Life](#) and are solidified upon reaching [Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God](#). Solutions to the problems of marriage for the believer come through taking responsibility for one's own actions and CHANGING SELF and never trying to change the Spouse. The feminist movement is the result of bitter reactions occurring in women in marriage or Impulsive Arrogance which occurs when a woman has been assigned more authority than she can handle in some field of life. This is what has amalgamated in the feminist movement. The feminist movement is

anarchy and idiocy and above all it is Arrogance. This is not to say that women do not have the ability to lead, organize and carry out complex organizational purposes as clearly stated in [Mrs. Beeton's Book of Household Management](#) published in 1861.

### Chapter I – The Mistress

Strength and honor are her clothing, and she shall rejoice in time to come. She opens her mouth with wisdom and in her tongue is the law of Kindness. ***Her children arise up and call her blessed; her husband also and he praises her.*** [Prov 31:25-28](#)

As with the Commander of an Army, or the leader of any enterprise, so is it with the mistress of a house. Her spirit will be seen through the whole establishment; and just in proportion as she performs her duties intelligently and thoroughly, so will her domestics follow in her path. Of all those acquirements, which more particularly belong to the feminine character, there are none which take a higher rank, in our estimation, than such as enter into a knowledge of household duties; for on these are perpetually dependent the happiness, comfort, and well-being of a family. In this opinion we are borne out by the author of “The Vicar of Wakefield,” who says: “The modest virgin, the prudent wife, and the careful matron, are much more serviceable in life than petticoated philosophers, blustering heroines, or virago queens. She who makes her husband and her children happy, who reclaims the one (ugh the husband) from vice and trains up the other to virtue, is a much greater character than ladies described in romances, whose whole occupation is to murder mankind with shafts from their quiver, or their eyes.”

It is the entanglement in arrogance of the woman wanting to be equal to the man and to function on an equal level with a man in all endeavors which degrades her to a position of slavery to her arrogance. Whereas she, under the principles of the Protocol Plan of God, is to be given a position of superiority and honor. When the woman organizes for the specific purpose of doing whatever men do and demands the option to do it, *this results in her losing whatever she could possibly have gained*. This produces Arrogant weak women in politics and this puts women in coal mines, steel mills, construction work and even today in combat groups. Men go to war for the specific purpose of protecting their women and families and home, what happens to this motivation to fight and win when women are in combat groups and being killed alongside the men. Women in combat would be acceptable but ONLY in situations of historical expediency where the nation is under attack and has sustained great tragic losses in the male population and had a large number of females available. Only in historical emergency is it necessary for women to assume jobs such as coal mining or steel mill work or combat units in the military. In addition there is no place in Law Enforcement for women patrolmen on the street. Women in combat outfits move the major issue in the unit from combat to protecting the woman. There is nothing to hinder a woman from success in life in any area but their drive and motivation always results from Arrogance when women organize to accomplish these types of things. It is only the inadequate male who becomes upset by the success of the female. Arrogance makes these men bitter toward the woman who succeeds in their own field of endeavor. Many of the current trends in our society are related directly to Institutional Arrogance and the solution to and means of categorization of these types of social problems is definitively related to the Plan of God.

### **Institutional Arrogance & Troublemakers**

Troublemakers exist whenever and wherever there is dysfunction in any organization. There is always someone, some individual, who is the source of the trouble and dysfunction in any organization. It is inevitable that in any group someone will start trouble once the group reaches a certain size. With the unbeliever trouble makers are inevitably maladjusted to the Justice of God at gospel hearing at which point they open a vacuum in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul and they draw in a maximum amount of principles from Evil. This replaces all the doctrinal principles and concepts related to the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions and all the common sense they ever had. This brings them to **Black Out of the Soul** and **Scar Tissue of the Soul** and eventually, even for the unbeliever **Reverse Process Reversionism**. With the believer his Negative Volition to Bible Doctrine, after Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God, takes away any restraint on becoming a troublemaker and the same process is invoked. Troublemakers are Petty, **Jealous**, and completely entangled in the Interlocking System of Arrogance, especially those individuals who have inordinate Pride or Inadequacy. These are the source of discord, strife and all the dysfunctions that can occur in any organization. It is maximally destructive to the organization when this person acquires a position of power and in this status quo uses his power as if it were his own instead of the reality of it having been given or delegated to him by the organization which he then endeavors to destroy. A troublemaker is always cunning, deceitful and treacherous in an escalating progression. A contentious troublemaker is one who has a character flaw or series of them which makes him contentious and is the one who is constantly causing strife and is the source of maximum discord. Cunning people are generally stupid but have strong instincts for deceit. Deceitful people are generally smart having an innate ability and intelligence oriented for deceit. However, BOTH are destructive to the organization they function within.

Therefore it becomes obvious that malcontented individuals are very Arrogant and filled with Scar Tissue of the Soul and the expression of this discontent is irrational and Arrogant. Arrogance having originated with Satan who now rules this world, is the basic source of all the problems of mankind. Arrogance inevitably stimulates the Old Sin Nature for the temptations which then can produce all of the Mental Attitude Sins and the people who malign or judge or criticize leadership are very often only reflecting their own condition and personal Arrogance.

### **3 Parts to All Institutions**

For all institutions or organizations in life there are always 3 parts and these include:

- ✧ A System of Authority where there is a responsibility to immediate authority to fulfill the policy and accomplish the objective of the organization.
- ✧ A Policy which is an expression of the purpose of the organization and is executed by the authority in the organization.
- ✧ A Purpose or Objective which is the reason the organizations exists.

Therefore, Institutional Arrogance is rejection and attacking of, in any system or organization, the Authority, Policy, and Purpose or Objective, any one of these or all three. The person in the organization who thinks he is better or smarter than the one in authority is very subjective and is one who overtly accepts authority but in reality only ever accepts is his own subjectivity

and whatever grows out of it especially [Mental Attitude Arrogance](#) in all of its aspects. This is easily demonstrated in any organization where there is overt acceptance of authority but underneath is found competing and looking for a chance to ridicule or condemn the one in authority. This is petty and childish and women are very often involved in this when put under pressure from authority. This is the reason some people don't like Pastor Teachers, General Officers or Company Presidents and generally why labor does not like management. Therefore, Institutional Arrogance first becomes functional in the soul and then as a result it opposes the authority, policy or purpose of the institution. For the believer in this Church Age as part of the Royal Family of God, [The Royal Family Honor Code](#) principle is to simply accept these factors in an organization and function to the best of one's ability under them. Individuals within an organization must realize the level of authority and discipline needed for all involved participants to function under in order for the organization to succeed at all. Every organization must have a structured system which allows those who follow the principles and policies set up to succeed. Free enterprise is one such area involving any business or corporation. One means of avoiding Institutional Arrogance is that in [Humility](#), for every situation in life, the believer must recognize that he is always replaceable.

In Fundamental Christianity there MUST be professionalism and this must include good manners, thoughtfulness of others, Integrity and Honor. Professionalism eliminates any Arrogance, pride, hatred, self pity, or anything which would distract the believer from doing his best in whatever job or occupation he may have. To be professional takes wisdom and great Humility. Any non-professionalism, such as is seen in bargaining for salary or benefits by labor unions, is an indication of the person or group being involved in Institutional Arrogance. The mature believer ultimately recognizes his helplessness in his day by day life and functions. The Lord Jesus, The Christ is the Lord of the armies and regardless of a believer's rank or level of function in the Christian Way of Life HE WILL ALWAYS RECEIVE LOGISTICAL GRACE SUPPORT in life, just as all men in the military receive the constant benefit of military logistics. There is a policy for the believer provided by God and this policy is GRACE and this sets up a system of order and PROFESSIONALISM in the Christian Way of Life which provides objectivity and results in a lack of Arrogance. This MUST occur in all organizations and their policies must demand professionalism.

### **Institutional Arrogance & Labor Unions**

The Laws of Divine Establishment, Bible Doctrine and The Lord Jesus, The Christ always advocate Free Enterprise. The bible opposes government interference with business or industry in ALL cases and situations. Capitalism is not a bad thing as the socialists and communists propose under their influence from Evil but is in fact a Bible Doctrine. Christ himself strongly advocated Capitalism, He as the author of the Bible Doctrine in the [Laws of Divine Establishment](#) is therefore the author of capitalism. Believers must understand that the Laws of Divine Establishment present the fact that the man who starts a business is the ONLY ONE who has the right to say anything about policy in that business. Labor has no right except to WORK and do a job as best they can. Labor has no right for bargaining except when the contract is made. In [Matt 20:1-15](#) the collective Arrogance in the labor union situation is an example of this Institutional Arrogance. In the ancient world vineyards existed exclusively to



make wine and the capitalist owned a complex of Vineyards and he invested his money in this land and his business. He went out every day at 6:00 am and contracted union labor to engage them to work for the 12 hour day. In this passage, these men in the labor union bargained and then agreed to work a 12 hour day for their wages of 1 denarius (a lot of money at that time). This was a good contract and a good bargain for a days wages. Because of the overwhelming amount of work to be done he did this again at 9:00 am then again at 12:00 noon and found more laborers then again at 3:00 pm and found more laborers to work each for what remained of the work day. He went out one last time at 5:00 pm just before the work day was over and acquired more labor to finish the job for a 1 hour day. These other groups of laborers did not have a contract and trusted management under a GRACE system to pay them fairly. Being the owner of the business he HAS THE RIGHT TO DO THIS AND PAY THEM WHATEVER HE WANTED TO. He ONLY contracted with the first group in the morning, the union Labor Men. He, in fact, decided to pay all the men from all the time periods the same amount. The capitalist can set up any policy he wants to since it is his business and his money. When men invest money in business they have the ONLY right to say anything about how it will be run. Labor is stupid and has no right to dictate policy of any kind. When the men were finished for the day and went to receive their pay the first group contracted, the Labor Union Group, were upset because the ones who worked less received the same amount as the ones who worked MORE. In [Legitimate Business Systems](#) under the Laws of Divine Establishment and Free Enterprise, Labor is not EVER to make policy ONLY Capital makes policy and it is TOTALLY a part of EVIL for labor to try to make any policy with regard to anything in any business. This always applies whether it is a small business or a great industrial complex and only the one who invests the money has any right to make policy. The management in any organization is the only one who should make judgmental decisions and NEVER ask anyone for what they think. This is especially true for the Pastor Teacher and if he is not right in his decisions HIS manager, the Lord, knows how to HURT him just right. The policy of this capitalist man was Good and Fair and his decision to pay each group the same was fair and his idea was to get the good workers even those who only worked 1 hour to think he was worth working for and then they might come back at 6:00 am the next day. Most often there is much more wrong with labor than that which is wrong in Management. This capitalist man took his money and put it into his business and had fair policies which worked for his business. The critics of the man's policies were saturated with the influence of EVIL and had an "evil eye". The eye is considered the soul's window, therefore they, having an EVIL EYE, according to the Greek idiom, were involved in thinking EVIL in their soul. The labor union workers complaining about their wages were TOTALLY WRONG and did not understand GRACE, and in fact did not have to understand the man's policies. They contracted for a pay rate for a work day and their only requirement was that they do their job properly. The fact that they drew a salary from a job did not and never does give any laborer the right to complain about the policies of management. EVIL never understands GRACE functions and what this man was doing with his laborers was GRACE. The laborers who came after those at 6:00 am did not earn nor deserve the whole days pay rate but he paid them according to GRACE the whole days wages. EVIL NEVER DOES NOR EVER WILL UNDERSTAND GRACE and unfortunately, even believers who function constantly under the influence of EVIL in the Cosmic Dynaspheres are saved by Grace and never truly understand it. This capitalist business owner's

policy represents a grace principle and he was a grace oriented man. God rejects socialism and promotes freedom in every category as THE key to the Angelic Conflict. This Grace policy was not unfair to the labor union but labor protested even though management had fulfilled its contract to them. The labor union people were thinking in terms of Mental Arrogance assuming Equality of work was a function of Equality of pay. By trying to dictate policy to management about wages, working conditions, hours, etc., labor unions are guilty of Blind Arrogance interlocking with Institutional Arrogance, trying to stick their collective noses into the policy of management and to tell them how to run the business.

By the standards of Grace ones who demand a contract before they will go to work are the same as [Legalists](#) in the Christian Way of Life and are saturated with EVIL in their thinking. They do not depend on management to be fair and must have their contract delineated before beginning work. Independent labor depends on management to be fair and works without a contract. In the case of the Spiritual Life, GOD is management, and he cannot be unfair, he is just and righteous and never has he ever been unfair even once because unfairness would compromise his character. For anyone to try to make a contract with God and to superimpose on God's wisdom and grace their ideas is like a labor union trying to impose their ideas on management as to how to run a business and how to pay labor. This is what the holy rollers and victorious life groups and legalists of every kind do, superimposing their ideas with regard to salvation and spirituality on the Grace Policies of God for the Spiritual Life. The labor union does not control the capital of management and in the current time period the labor unions STEAL from the capitalist. Then they support liberals in government who will help them and use this stolen money to worm their way into government with endorsement bribes to legislators for legislation to promote themselves. Their perspective is EVIL and they demand more when those under NO Contract have received a bonus for their work performance. Management has a right to give a bonus any way and for any reason they desire since management controls the capital and in fact management has the right to end the services of any individual for any reason at any time without explanation or justification.

It is the people in authority in any organization who are supposed to make the policy. The one who invests money as a result has the authority to say what is done with his money and therefore HE alone makes policy and any other situation or structure is EVIL. There are ORGANIZATIONAL functions everywhere in life and the one in charge or in command must make policy and if one does not like the policy that is inconsequential, but he must still follow the policy as long as he is under that command. This is why many people go astray in life and when one is under management in some area of employment, if he does not like policy, it really does not matter. As long as he is taking their money he has NO RIGHT to complain or try to stir up trouble to get his own way, but he is REQUIRED to carry out the policy. HOWEVER, IF ONE DOES NOT LIKE THE POLICY OF AN ORGANIZATION THEN HE HAS THE SINGLE OPTION, ALWAYS, TO LEAVE THE ORGANIZATION. No matter the situation labor, in trying to interfere with the organization and establish policy, is wrong in every case not management and when management has no sense of responsibility or when this has been taken from them by government regulation and labor does not like or agree with the policy, labor can leave, quit, but must, while under the system, follow the policies. The United States

GOVERNMENT and many others as well, have made management dishonest and also made labor EVIL and dishonest. Labor unions do not understand GOOD nor GRACE and they are like believers in [Reversionism](#) and the Evil influence on labor unions results in false standards and Blind Arrogance which makes them cling to their standards instead of yielding to the policies of management.

### **Politics & Capacity for Leadership and Authority**

No matter how much leadership ability or authority one possesses it is all wasted unless he is free from the Interlocking System of Arrogance. One of the great principles of leadership is sensitivity to the needs of others. (See: Leadership Articles in The Military Review, 1980). Great leadership is sensitivity toward others displaying [Humility](#) and [Functional Virtues](#) such as thoughtfulness. There may be a great potential for leadership in an individual in some area but it will never be realized if the person is involved in the Interlocking System of Arrogance. Brown Nosing, catering, suck up POLITICS in business, education or anywhere in society is a function of Institutional Arrogance. The people involved, in general, do not appreciate the system or its organization, which, in fact, gives them their potential for success and they therefore, have no capacity for prosperity. Awarding of promotions in any organization should be based on a recognition of the level of capacity for leadership in the individual and the organization should freeze promotions at a particular level of capacity for every individual. Every person has a maximum capacity level for authority and leadership and when he is moved beyond this capacity he is in Institutional Arrogance and as a result will destroy himself and possibly the system. This is what has been and still is occurring in the United States government, especially the military.

### **Institutional Arrogance & Leadership**

When there is a lack of leadership in any organization it always results in individual PREOCCUPATION WITH SELF. Those with authority in leadership positions must live and think under doctrinal principles including those in the Laws of Divine Establishment and the Divine Institutions for the unbelievers as well, not emotion, Arrogance, confusion, frustration nor reaction. Especially when functioning as a leader, a person must never lose control of his own soul. If leadership does not start in one's own soul he will never have the respect of any others especially those under his authority. Leadership is a principle which MUST thrive in the soul before it becomes an action which inspires and guides others.

In true leadership, there must be freedom from Arrogance and subjectivity and leaders must respect the [Authority](#) over them as part of [Humility](#). On the other hand, the approach of liberal "management" (just management here) is to teach Legalism and hypocrisy from Self Righteous Arrogance. Therefore, the Key to Leadership is [Impersonal Love for Mankind](#) developed as a result of consistent Perception, Cognition, Incultation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine. Therefore good leadership demands Spiritual Growth from making Bible Doctrine Priority #1 in life. Leadership must establish and clarify authority and all Authority is established through discipline. Leadership must recognize that No One is teachable without having first developed [Enforced Humility](#) under a system of enforced discipline and then [Genuine Humility](#) derived from one's self discipline and that Arrogance is unteachable because

Arrogant preoccupation with self destroys the ability to LEARN Truth. Discipline is therefore the foundation for Leadership. Management is a bureaucratic enforcement of regulations whereas Leadership provides self motivation for efficient functions in Life, Business, Military, or the Local Church. Leadership delegates authority whereas management assumes all authority and stands over a person and BULLIES him. Leadership explains the policies and the desired results and allows the mechanics to be worked out by those under him. Leadership produces Esprit DE Corps, whereas management creates dissatisfaction, conspiracy, gold bricking and dishonesty. Leadership creates Integrity whereas management creates dishonesty. Leadership Inspires Humility whereas management entangles in Arrogance. Therefore, Leadership is desirable while management is destructive. True Leadership includes attributes which must function within the framework of one's individual personality:

- ✧ Objectivity
- ✧ Humility
- ✧ Teachability
- ✧ Grace Orientation
- ✧ Personal Integrity
- ✧ Virtue First from a Relaxed Mental Attitude.
- ✧ Freedom from Arrogance and Emotional Sins.
- ✧ Honor, Integrity, Virtue & Loyalty directed to those under one's leadership or command.
- ✧ Function within one's own personality, without imitation of a role model's personality.
- ✧ Constant self examination for empathy toward subordinates vs neglect of responsibilities.
- ✧ Able to see the big picture of Life, History & Bible Doctrine.
- ✧ A thorough knowledge and professional understanding of whatever area leadership is in.
- ✧ Objectivity and loyalty to those above his level of command.
- ✧ Fairness to his command with freedom from prejudice and Blind Arrogance.
- ✧ Development of executive ability rather than managerial bureaucracy.
- ✧ Ability to Analyze, Organize, Categorize, Systematize, Synthesize and Communicate to those below and above one's rank.
- ✧ Instruction of subordinates to improve motivation and capacity for life.
- ✧ Possession of Confidence, Poise, and Thoughtfulness of others.
- ✧ Possession of Human and Spiritual Self Esteem to offset feeling threatened by pressure from either personnel or malfunctions in the organization.
- ✧ Development of a sense of responsibility for personnel & problems and this related to professional systems of organization.
- ✧ Have the ability to think under stress and pressure.

Arrogance is that which keeps any person from performing the functions of leadership when in a position of Power. Arrogance belongs to all human beings, being brought to us by the fall of Ish and Ishah in the garden and their subsequent development of the Genetic Old Sin Nature, so that the more authority and power one has over people the more Humility he must have to function under the principles of Leadership. The believer must remember that in his life, Authority Orientation does not end when he is at the top of the pile. In positions of maximum authority where there should be humility and leadership, people generally become Arrogant instead. Arrogance in powerful positions is destructive to the ones who have the power and

also to those under their power. Arrogance attached to any level of power destroys freedom and results in utter failure of leadership. Any level of power corrupts easily if not tempered with humility. Spiritual growth to [Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God](#) increases humility in the believer. God cannot ever use Arrogance since it is the basis for EVIL the Plan of Satan and Arrogance in administration ALWAYS destroys the effectiveness of any leadership which may be there. The believer must always remember the absolute dogmatic principle of the Spiritual Life; “If God does not promote one in any area of life THEN, HE IS NOT PROMOTED”.

The one in command or in a position as head of an organization must be able to think under pressure since this is the one thing that those below him cannot do and in fact are not required to do, because they are simply required to follow orders. The one in the leadership position gives orders because he can think and he has authority because he can think without Arrogance, he has MORAL COURAGE to do the right thing at the right time for the right reasons. Where many people fail in leadership is when they think and relate their thoughts to Arrogance and Pettiness. Soldiers take orders because they cannot think and do not have the necessary background in the military field and therefore are not permitted to think, just to obey. The group leader does not have to be stronger or tougher or better in any way than his subordinates but he MUST be able to think clearly in all situations. The worst thing a person can do to establish his role as leader in any group is to constantly try to demonstrate his physical ability and that he is stronger or tougher than anyone else in the group. A Leader must possess personal integrity which means virtue first and foremost with a STRONG sense of responsibility. A Leader must also possess a Relaxed Mental Attitude and freedom from Arrogance and anything which would destroy his competence. A Leader should never use his position to simply attain promotion or personal prosperity in either the military or business. A Leader surrenders whatever capabilities he may have when his Arrogance and ambition makes him a user instead of a leader.

The production of ANY great accomplishment in life takes a group not an individual. There will be one at the top who has developed a policy and system of organization and others subordinate to him carrying out the policy. It takes a team of all kinds of people to do things properly, to incur any great accomplishment in life, with someone at the top controlling things and motivating those at the bottom. In the spiritual realm, there must be a great interrelationship among believers and those with great authority must be totally sensitive to those under their authority. There must always be the overriding concept of thoughtfulness. Leadership is always an issue of necessity wherever a group is functioning. The most important primary function of leadership is to maintain knowledge concerning those under his authority and of their jobs and to enter into an understanding of their feelings, sensitivities, problems and difficulties in life so that these will not hinder the function of the team from the bottom to the top. This is group competition at its best since the “team”, being well organized, can go against any situation or challenge. People in a group must always function as a team not as individuals and they must all be flexible. Once a group has inculcated authority orientation the one in the leadership position must then recognize that those under him are human beings and in order for him to get the most from them HE must be flexible. Every great thing ever



accomplished is accomplished by a group and those carried away with their authority are functioning in Arrogance and never recognize the group which supports them. When people are carried away with their authority and are Arrogant they become [Inflexible](#) therefore, adding Arrogance to authority destroys the virtue of authority and thus adds inflexibility to it. This is the antithesis of the [Royal Family Honor Code](#) and no group ever succeeds when functioning under Arrogance and inflexibility. Leadership must always enforce discipline but must also always know and understand when to turn back, relax and engage in a sudden startling change of function; there is no book written on this process. The trouble with always going “by the book” is that leadership very often becomes carried away with authority and “the book” never takes cognizance of the people who are under authority as being HUMAN. There must always be thoughtfulness of others and the concept of flexibility which gives drive and motivation and makes a difference between having esprit DE corps and lack of it.

When there is Arrogance in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul there is destruction of capacity for life and reactions to both people and situations in life. A responsibility of leadership is to face any opposition by those under one’s command and handle the situation OBJECTIVELY. One cannot take responsibility for people in military or business or spiritual life without handling situations objectively. If one becomes subjective in any way feeling sorry for self, giving preferential treatment to some over others, getting emotionally or mentally upset, thinking things are unfair or are disturbed in any way he has lost any leadership potential he may have had. If he cannot take unfair, unjust, unreasonable or irrational criticism he has no right to be in any position of authority or leadership. If he is going to fulfill leadership functions and do it right then he must be able to handle the irrationality of subjective criticism because leaders are blamed for everything. Many of the things people blame the government leaders for are actually the fault of the American public who in their idiocy elected them or allowed them to get away with stealing elections by fraudulent voting practices. Great men are blamed for many things but go right on doing their job, ultimately for the great benefit of this nation, Douglas MacArthur, Chesty Puller, Admiral King, Dwight D Eisenhower, Stonewall Jackson, Robert E. Lee, George Patton and many more possibly including Donald Trump. This does not infer their perfection or infallibility in any way. Anyone who emerges as a great leader must have the sensitivity of a woman in love and also the hide of a Rhinoceros; this was the case with MOSES. People are displaying their personal Arrogance when blaming leadership and authority and the press in the United States of America is ABSOLUTELY Arrogant in trying to run the lives of the people using Fake News and Propaganda. The people in the United States of America have been and continue to be Arrogant in their attitudes and to continuously vote for Arrogant people and this has been and continues to be very destructive to the nation. One cannot survive in life unless he can think in terms of Absolute Truth in any of the 3 categories:

- ✧ The Gospel of The Lord Jesus, The Christ for Unbelievers
- ✧ The Laws of Divine Establishment for both Believers and Unbelievers
- ✧ The Principles and Promises of Bible Doctrine for Believers

Pontius Pilate is a good example of a great dilemma in the area of leadership where his abilities for leadership were canceled because he could not come to any conclusions with regard to Absolute Truth and therefore, his own [Scar Tissue of the Soul](#) destroyed him. Leadership in

a spiritual situation requires competent [Faith Rest Drill \(5 stages\)](#) functions.

The commander who tries to be a buddy to his men or is a martinet and uses his command to advance himself without regard to the welfare of his men, who also displays or functions according to his personal 'feelings' is therefore Arrogant. The great leader always keeps his personal attitudes and feelings out of the picture of his command entirely and he must always remember that Authority means Responsibility. When he has eyes on people and on self in Arrogance the leader therefore loses his flexibility and sense of humor and above all HIS subordination to the source of his authority. Every leader has delegated authority from someone higher than himself and the pastor teacher in this situation loses his subordination to divine authority when he entertains Arrogance in his soul. These pastors will disobey God because they become Arrogant and Arrogance makes them weak. No matter how physically, spiritually or morally strong nor how much courage he may have, Arrogance will make him weak and only one small shot of Arrogance and he has become a weak sister. NO ONE can afford to entertain Arrogance longer than it takes to confess it and be forgiven. Arrogance destroys both true and pseudo greatness and, in fact, it even destroys the greatest of believers. There are times when people deviate from the proper orientation in a spiritual situation but being out of line in these cases is in reality not the issue. When entertaining Arrogance and wallowing in Self Righteousness this person is no longer in control of his command and anything he says is abuse of his authority even though what he says may be TRUE. Even when speaking truth he is still out of line in saying it under the influence of Arrogance having lost his flexibility and sense of humor and his subordination to superior authority, which for the Pastor Teacher is divine authority.

In everything provided by God the emphasis must be on His Absolute Righteousness and Grace. When those under the authority of the Arrogant self righteous leader fail in any way this type of leader puts the emphasis on REPRIMAND and Old Sin Nature failure and NEVER on Grace. These leaders will often insert [Self Righteous Arrogance](#) into exasperation therefore become angry as he considers his subordinates. Because of anger and frustration his own personal feelings will become more important than any other issues especially when it concerns the Pastor Teacher's doctrinal instructions. Many times for the spiritual leader there is no question about the Grace of God providing any needs for him but the petty vindictive irresponsible attitude of those under him can become a snare to him and he will become preoccupied with the people inserting his own personal reprimand in place of a Grace understanding and emphasis. This is what happened to Moses when he reprimanded the people and struck the rock a 2<sup>nd</sup> time for water at Kadesh Barnea!

Leadership cannot afford to be frightened in any disaster or when under pressure and cannot ever afford Arrogance at any level. Having Authority results in a high level of responsibility and demands freedom from Arrogance in every level of leadership. Therefore, obviously, Arrogance destroys leadership in any area and in the spiritual realm one cannot be a pastor and have spiritual authority along with Arrogance. Obviously then, one of the greatest problems for leadership is to keep away from Arrogance and develop, institute and enforce an objective policy. The Lord's servant can have no illusion about himself, no Arrogance, no

involvement in [Reversionism](#) to distract him from Bible Doctrine, no ignorance of the Grace, Policy and Plan of God, no preoccupation with the Details of this life and must never ignore the Integrity of God. Leadership often cannot resist the temptations of Arrogance and often, when a person receives any level of authority, he very often cannot resist its accompanying [Power Lust Arrogance](#). In any leadership function the greater the responsibility and authority the greater must be the minimizing of Arrogance. Personal Arrogance will destroy leadership ability and also any talent and potential for success. Therefore, leadership requires the individual leader to face all opposition OBJECTIVELY never subjectively so that by subordinating all opposition to policy, when it is properly expressed, as in a political situation, will allow the leader to perceive the thinking of those under him objectively. Objectivity requires total freedom from personal Arrogance and total lack of subjectivity.

Leadership appointed by God must be totally dependent on God and Arrogance as an issue in the life must be settled and removed before assuming the leadership role. One cannot have Arrogance with authority and to the extent that anyone in authority in any area is Arrogant to that extent there is ineffectiveness in his leadership. No matter the talent of the one in leadership in any area, if Arrogance is present he WILL fail. Being in a position of Leadership means Arrogance cannot exist in the individual and, in fact, leadership demands humility because leadership always has great authority. Any system of leadership includes authority and there is an accompanying responsibility to use that authority properly. In some cases that authority is used by delegating it and in some cases it is used to protect the weak from bullying by the strong and sometimes the strong from maligning by the weak. Therefore, Authority in leadership must always be properly used and it must be accomplished under a Mental Attitude of total [Humility](#). In leadership one must never become personally involved in use of authority over others since it must always be used under conditions of total objectivity. In the proper use of authority everyone under the authority must be treated alike whether the leader likes or dislikes the individual. When in a leadership position one may dislike some who do a good job but leadership should keep these unlikable ones on the job and often even promote them BECAUSE OF THEIR ABILITY. He may like some who are failing miserably in their jobs but these must be removed lest the organization also fail. Once a person accepts any authority in any situation, at that moment, the leader must instantly set aside any personal prejudice for or against others as well as personal feelings of love, admiration, likes and dislikes. When there is Arrogance present in the individual who has the authority this authority cannot ever be properly handled.

[Bitterness](#), as part of [Mental Attitude Arrogance](#), wipes out leadership potential in all cases and some of the greatest leaders in history lost out because of bitterness. This has occurred in the military, corporations, education, and many other areas. LOVE YOUR WIVES is God's mandate to husbands and NO ONE can love anyone while involved in bitterness. Bitterness is Arrogance seasoned with emotion and it always results in irrationality. Leadership means that there must be wisdom not irrationality and without it there can be no leadership. A person who is free from Institutional Arrogance will never be troubled by Mental Attitude sins especially bitterness. Bitterness is the aftermath or coincident function with Institutional Arrogance. Moving from Institutional Arrogance to Bitterness may cause the infiltration of thought patterns which are

sociopathic in nature. The authority in an organization may fail or maltreat one but this one must remain loyal to the purpose and policy of the organization and under that authority or leave the organization.

A great commander should never even offer to explain or justify his actions or decisions to his subordinates. The subordinate must learn to trust the judgment of a leader so that there will not be necessity for his explaining decisions and actions. There is no place, nor any call, for any subordinate to set self up to straighten out those in authority over him in their thinking or actions. God, himself, will give these leaders a corrective answer and it may or may not come from a believer who has reached Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God but it will always be based on Bible Doctrine principles. It is always tempting to criticize Arrogant people, however, once one starts this criticism of Arrogance or tries to correct it, it is infectious and he most likely will become Arrogant in criticizing them. Instead, the believer must realize that there is nothing that angers a petty person more than ignoring their [Pettiness](#). When a person has a roadblock for the application of Bible Doctrine they usually end up with pettiness and Self Righteousness as part of the Interlocking System of Arrogance.

Often, uniqueness in one's makeup is associated with the development of Arrogance in that it may cause one to assume that he is in some way special therefore indispensable. God will isolate this believer from the rest of society in order that he may inculcate the principles of [Grace Orientation](#) and their by-product of true Humility. God does not use publicity and public relations gimmicks therefore publicity is no substitute for divine power; it merely becomes a distraction leading one into the various Arrogance functions. Therefore, the true training program of leadership for the crisis demands isolation. Grace orientation produces humility while occupation with people or things and with, or reaction to, disaster produces Arrogance; and in disaster Arrogance produces fear and fear as part of [Emotional Revolt of the Soul](#) destroys all leadership potential needed in disaster.

In the coming inevitable crisis for the United States of America, which has been seriously developing since the beginning of the 21<sup>st</sup> century, the nation will need both great moral and physical courage in both the individual citizen and especially in those with authority in every area. Believers must maintain the knowledge of the SOURCE of both physical and moral courage. Moral courage is by far the greatest asset one can possess in disaster and crisis because THOUGHT is always greater than action. Moral courage is demonstrated by the person who keeps thinking and talking to relieve the pressure of an intense situation. The Greatest moral courage in American history was seen in General Dwight D. Eisenhower and General Douglas MacArthur two of America's greatest national heroes. Moral courage is very hard to spot in individuals. Harry Truman, considered a great American president, was in fact on the other hand, a stupid loud mouth individual who could not, by any stretch of the imagination, understand the genius of Douglas MacArthur. Being clever is not being smart and cleverness can and usually does result in personal self destruction. The believer must have effective thinking for action to be meaningful and physical courage without thinking is Emotionalism and Arrogance. God never uses Arrogant people [EVER](#). A person with Arrogance and physical courage is usually a loud mouthed bully. Believers must have both physical and moral courage

and moral courage must come first from Metabolized Bible Doctrine and be totally minus Arrogance. To be smart and Arrogant is little better than being dumb and Arrogant because Arrogance neutralizes superior intelligence. God's prepared person must have MORAL courage and thus be able to think in terms of principles related to the entire realm of Bible Doctrine. Therefore, the most important attribute for good leadership is Moral Courage first because physical courage, which simply requires action, is always a simple extension of it. Therefore, whether one is male or female, when a crisis comes, the most valuable thing to have is moral courage and it is developed best from maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul. Moral courage will invariably express itself in correct action when it is needed. Therefore, Positive Volition to Bible Doctrine – Arrogance == Moral Courage.

Leadership cannot afford to become socially dependent on those under one's command because decisions regarding them will then not be objective. Leadership under social dependence tends to OVER REWARD good work and OVERLOOK poor work and results in lapses of discipline in these individuals. Eventually a crisis will occur where leadership must make an independent, objective decision else he becomes simply a bureaucratic spokesman. However, Leadership MUST listen to opinions and advice from others but without having too great a dependence on conferences or group input since this will destroy the ability to make sound independent decisions. The Gift of Leadership is designed to allow the possessor to make the right decision when the group under him could not make that decision for itself. Leadership must never be sucked into bad advice nor manipulated by flattery or patronizing from ambitious underlings. This is a bad influence which should never be considered in decision making lest it result in bad leadership. For the Good of the ORGANIZATION, the Leader must motivate and encourage but not allow any underling to take advantage of any real or assumed friendship which would allow the organization to be used as a personal service for other things. Over involvement and personal familiarity with those under one's authority can lead to destruction of the distinction between leaders and followers through the concept of equalization where everyone becomes a leader. When everyone's opinion is more important than that of the leader the leadership is destroyed. Leadership must function within the realm of one's own personality without his authority being used when there is NO need for it.

The assumption of authority in leadership positions means one is also assuming responsibility for those under his command. No one has the right to accept leadership in any area without having capacity for the resultant responsibility. Having authority over many people but without capacity for life or a sense of responsibility for those under one's command puts that person in total misery. In life this includes areas of Marriage, Athletics, Academics, Business, Military, Government, etc. Each advance or promotion in rank or position means additional responsibility and the individual involved must be ready and have the capacity to accept this additional responsibility. People who have too much authority, beyond their capacity for it, cannot ever live a normal life. No one can live a normal life when he constantly accepts more and more responsibility with greater and greater authority. This clearly delineates an important facet of leadership requirements which is having capacity for the required level of responsibility. Always remember, *“IF THE LORD DOES NOT PROMOTE ONE, HE IS NOT PROMOTED”*. Along with this remember that the Lord does not promote one until he has



capacity for the RESPONSIBILITY involved in the promotion. One gains capacity as a result of spiritual growth from Metabolized Bible Doctrine and also temporally from studying, learning and developing in one's field or occupation. Leaders in all areas of life must and should be limited in their advancement by their capacity for RESPONSIBILITY.

Arrogant leadership wants the authority and rejects the responsibility commensurate with the authority. It is therefore obvious that many people should not advance beyond a certain level, or rank in the military, which is commensurate with their capacity for assuming responsibility. This is why some men should never accept any authority beyond Marriage. The ultimate example of good leadership is the Centurion who asked The Lord Jesus, The Christ for healing for his First Sargent (possibly his son), and understanding authority he told Jesus that Jesus did not have to journey 30 miles to the barracks but just say he was healed and he would be. The ultimate in leadership is strong character and a stable mentality using authority without abuse or distortion while remaining flexible and free from Arrogance using common sense and good judgment derived from Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul. The truly great leader must be flexible knowing when to crack down and when not to, when to use the book and when to throw away the rule book. The true leader must know when the rules apply and when they can be circumvented. A Good leader is loyal to his subordinates and he assumes responsibility for all those under his command being alert to their function and welfare. This is often a most unusual function of the [Faith Rest Drill \(5 stages\)](#) exercised on behalf of others for their benefit. Believers must use the Faith Rest Drill <sup>(5 stages)</sup> to benefit those in their periphery and it is designed to stabilize one's periphery. Faith Rest must be beneficial to others as well as self and this combines faith rest with the 3<sup>rd</sup> category of the [Super – Grace Escrow](#) blessing package for the believer who has reached Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God which is Blessing by Association.

### Institutional Arrogance & Military Leadership

In a leadership position one cannot ever afford anger or [Jealousy](#) which are part of [Emotional Arrogance](#) nor [Self Pity](#) or Self Righteousness. Anger as part of Arrogance is demonstrated as such when the spiritual leader comes to the point of expressing solutions for whatever problems may exist with his subordinates by the use of violence. The personal feelings of the one in command are not ever the issue in command functions. The principle is to never become personal in leadership since this is an abuse of authority and the ongoing tragedy of many functions in this nation today. Personal feelings can become the basis for abusing people with obnoxious personalities by bullying, restricting advancement, etc. Now that the military recognizes homosexuals and is recruiting transgenders these degenerate individuals should not take on authority because as a homosexual, functioning under Emotional Arrogance in degeneracy, if there are other homosexuals under his command he will exclude them from obnoxious or compromising duties and the normal individuals will get all the difficult details. Homosexuals cannot be in a military organization without a breakdown and destruction of authority and objectivity. If an officer is a normal heterosexual and there are abnormal homosexuals in his platoon they very well may get ALL the dirty details if he is opposed to homosexuality. As a result of homosexuals now being accepted in the military the United States is now defenseless since this situation destroys all the authority structure set up within

the services. This same situation also occurs when women are allowed into combat units because their commanders may have strong feelings about females and not give the frail females the difficult assignments or duties nor put them into situations which would compromise them in any way. In both situations objectivity and unit cohesion are totally lost and the units so involved become completely ineffective.

Victory in war depends on the function of professional regular army, line outfits, while special limited tactical success depends on the elite military units. There are places for regular, elite and reserve units in properly organized and conducted warfare. There must be discrete lines of distinction so that the person in charge can determine when to use each type of unit. Any person with authority must be able to think categorically in terms of his personnel and their use. One must never take on leadership positions unless he can think categorically about people, and unless he can divorce his emotion from becoming involved with people to whom he must delegate authority. He must understand that he must be able to trust people he does not like based on their abilities and skills not his personal attitude toward them. It takes teamwork and cooperation between line outfits and elite corps to win victories and elitism can become a form of Arrogance unless the concept of team work is maintained. It is acceptable, even good, to have strong Esprit DE Corps but it is completely wrong to become Arrogant about special abilities, functions and special organization membership. Arrogance on either side of the elite or line outfit destroys teamwork. Each sub group in an organization must understand its own worth and its contribution to the desired total overall outcome. Each person has a right to his own military preference but no group or unit can be rejected and not allowed to function to its maximum ability because of Arrogance or stupidity in the leaders. Therefore there must be Esprit DE Corps not Arrogance.

Every group of people in the world have had a better record of great leaders than the United States of America has ever had. The Mongolians, French, Prussians, Swedes, ETC., all have had great leaders as documented in history. The thing which destroys the emergence of a great leader in the United States, apart from a national crisis, is a result of our overriding national characteristic of [Pettiness](#). Patton and MacArthur were always resented and both were truly great leaders. This characteristic of pettiness is why [Legalism](#) is such a strong Anglo Saxon characteristic. Pettiness leads deeper into Arrogance and one cannot have either and be a truly great leader. True Leadership cannot occur where there is Mental Attitude Arrogance and its accompanying Sins because Mental Attitude Sins destroy both moral courage and battle courage as clearly demonstrated throughout history.

Anyone who expresses being disgruntled or dissatisfied and then tries to undermine authority in an organization is enmeshed in the Arrogance Complex. They have interlocked Institutional Arrogance with, at a minimum, [Blind Arrogance](#) and / or [Conspiracy Arrogance](#). When situations occur which cause the believer to be dissatisfied he is to switch to [Impersonal Love for Mankind](#) or he is to physically separate from the individual or organization he is dissatisfied with to prevent the compromise of Bible Doctrine and his entanglement in the Interlocking System of Arrogance. One will never be able to count on anyone who displays any aspect of Arrogance when the pressure is on them. In this status these Arrogant ones will swing to the

other side of the coin which includes Cowardice, Jealousy, Bitterness, etc. When one depends on the comments of others for motivation and function in life he has serious soul kinks and is in real trouble.

One of the great responsibilities of leadership is to face opposition from those under one's command and handle the situation objectively. MacArthur, Eisenhower, Lee, Jackson, Robert Frederick, Sprague, are all examples of men who showed great leadership in the most difficult of times and situations. The ability to think under pressure is not learned in the basic training of military boot camp but is learned as one receives more and more responsibility and authority with rank promotions. Without the ability to properly think under pressure there can be no moral nor battle courage. Leadership MUST always have MORAL COURAGE to do what is right without regard to the consequences or opposition whether in the military, in business, in government, or in the family when raising children. No leader, in any area of life, can be Arrogant and fulfill the RESPONSIBILITIES of leadership. When there is opposition to leadership in an organization the one in command, who has the authority, must be objective and this demands total freedom from Arrogance. Once Arrogance creeps in and the leader takes opposition personally he becomes subjective and loses control and therefore fails and this is why many military men in American history have failed. Because great military men of genius and ability in American history had become subjective and their subjectivity entered into their decisions, to that extent, they became wrong and failed in their functions. Consider the great leadership of Dwight D. Eisenhower and the constant opposition he received from politicians in the United States of America and England and the small minded officers over whom he held command in World War II. Unfortunately, the American military hierarchy and government systems have a way of putting mediocre people in command then have them foul things up totally and then allow them to get away with it; it is extremely fortunate this did not happen in World War II with Dwight D. Eisenhower.

### Institutional Arrogance, Manliness & Femininity

Arrogance is found in the emphasis of the overt physical attractiveness of a person, the level of authority they have above others or their overconfidence. People who are self confident are not Arrogant people and those who possess confidence in their abilities are not Arrogant; only the insecure and petty are Arrogant and it is Arrogant people who assume that confident people are Arrogant. This is the reality of correct thought and its application where one reaches out by faith using a principle with doctrine behind it. The male recognizes his manhood from doctrinal understanding while most men stupidly think they are not really men until they are their own boss. A male cannot be a MAN and be Arrogant at the same time and Arrogance deprives the male of manliness just as Arrogance deprives the female of femininity. Females cannot be feminine and not become 'Ladies' and males can never be manly men with Arrogance in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul. Contrary to the average person's thinking, submission to authority is not lack of manliness nor lack of femininity.

The good leader, to some, appears to be Arrogant when he is handling situations and pressures and is so confident that people equate this confidence with Arrogance. This is irrationality. They consider his exterior presentation of being stern and tough and call this Arrogance but, in

fact, it is complete confidence. It is the combination of true humility with confidence that brings true greatness in life. The great leader has confidence and exercises authority properly because he is humble. He may not appear to some to be humble and might talk out of the corner of his mouth and speak toughly to the people under him and yet he can still be most humble. Women must always be aware that they have one of the greatest problems of life which appears when anyone who opposes or speaks down to them is considered by them to be “Arrogant”. This confuses manliness in the male or confidence in anyone with Arrogance which are two completely different things. One of the greatest traps for modern women is the problem of assuming that any man who takes charge and straightens them out in their thinking is Arrogant. Women prefer their bible teaching to be from little deprecated, mealy mouthed, sweetness pastors and they want to be wooed and caressed by words instead of having Bible Doctrine and its principles being presented in a straightforward manner blatantly thrust into their face. Never can there be a happily married woman who thinks and functions in this way. An unhappily married woman who intends to stick it out in the marriage, and who should, is the first to take offense at the use of any authority toward her, resenting it and screaming for equal rights and as a result gets involved in other erroneous groups and efforts in life.

### Leadership & Morality

When evaluating leadership, whether spiritual or temporal, *the individual's morality is not ever the issue*. The real issue is integrity and wisdom along with Doctrinal or Laws of Divine Establishment understanding, viewpoint and function. The wisdom of the Mature believer results in his ability to handle maximum authority with minimal Arrogance. This gives one the ability to have extra thoughts about those under their authority concerning their weaknesses, how they feel about things, their strengths and any problems they might be dealing with. Remember, Great People are not necessarily the nicest or sweetest people. In contrast, some of the people most influenced by Evil ever to live have been extremely ‘NICE’ people. Nice people very often have a facade of Self Righteous Arrogance and sweetness and light. Leadership must possess integrity and wisdom along with doctrinal viewpoint or viewpoint from the principles of the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions. Rulership does not have to have, nor can it be expected to demonstrate, perfect character since all people have and USE their Old Sin Nature. In rulership integrity and understanding the necessity for freedom are the true essentials.

### Institutional Arrogance & The Unites States of America

Arrogant people who have lost power and try to regain it are not interested in the people or the nation which they serve they only want to regain the power. People who seek to gain control and power in their own nation and seek rulership and power for the sake of assuaging their own Arrogance come up with policies which inevitably destroy freedom and the nation. This is currently and has been the status of the United States of America from before World War II and is especially true today. American foreign policy should have prevented us making treaties with any communist nation which are totally based on the principles of Evil and the only treaties the United States should have had should have been with South Africa and Rhodesia in the 70s. Richard Nixon should never have gone to and recognized the Communist Chinese as a legitimate government. American foreign policy was and still is totally divorced

from morality and reality and only related to expediency and assuaging the feelings of other nations who are totally saturated with Jealousy concerning America. This demonstrates the cowardice and Arrogance of those people establishing the policies. Arrogance in power today leads to degeneracy in power tomorrow, this is demonstrated by the sexual misconduct of Bill Clinton in the White House and the possession of Cocaine by the Biden family in the White House. Arrogance always attacks law and order and establishment oriented organizations and when this attack occurs and is coupled with the inevitable degeneracy there is total disaster. It becomes obvious then that the United States of America since post World War II has for the majority of this time been totally ruled by Arrogance.

### **Institutional Arrogance & The Local Church**

The “management” Pastor Teacher encourages a reliance on himself by regulating the congregation, encouraging counseling, setting up church programs, etc. This congregation tends to either rebel or over respond to the Pastor Teacher and this Pastor Teacher, who has set himself up as a role model, tends to distract them from learning Bible Doctrine. He tries to coerce the volition of all in his congregation invading their privacy by teaching Legalism and hypocrisy from Self Righteous Arrogance.

No one can lead without [Authority Orientation](#) and personal self discipline and all enforced discipline must be endured while training for leadership whether it is fair or unfair. Believers with a spiritual gift involving Leadership can go very far in business or in any organization. Spiritual Growth to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God is the greatest help to anyone in any organization especially the leader. There are times when a lack of preparation in a field of endeavor makes a person extremely prone to Arrogance. The more preparation one has in his field the less he will be disillusioned by self and the greater will be his humility, whereas the less preparation the individual has, the more Arrogance presents itself. Leadership is something which one prepares for all of his life and includes the accumulation of technical data in a field along with maximum Bible Doctrine. Good leaders strengthen their professional abilities and those with the spiritual gift of leadership can go to any organization and rise to the top. Paul was the most spiritually prepared man in history and he did not have the worst kind of Arrogance. His lack of [Inordinate Competition Arrogance](#) shows what a truly magnificent person Paul was and no one ever had a greater privilege than Paul, he being the one who actually revealed the entire mystery doctrine for the Church Age.

### **Institutional Arrogance & Family**

Parents are the authority over children and to the extent that they have Arrogance they will fail to use their authority properly in rearing their children. Authority in the parents is the first organization one encounters in life and is in the home and its purpose is to bring the children to adulthood as responsible individuals. The policies by which this is brought about should include the institution and inculcation of the Laws of Divine Establishment, the Divine Institutions, the Gospel of Salvation and the entire realm of Bible Doctrine. This is true also about marriage and the husband’s authority over the wife as well.



### **Gate #64 – The Arrogance of a Lust for Power**

Power is a major issue in life and power lust and power madness are one of the major tragic flaws of individuals involved in the Cosmic Dynaspheres. Power means control and being in control satisfies or assuages the Arrogance of both man and angelic creatures. One of the major forms of pseudo happiness in the Interlocking System of Arrogance is exercising control over others in one's environment. This is the direction and function of Cosmic Dynasphere I, the Interlocking System of Arrogance in Satan's plan and policy. Arrogance factors are always present and when people desire, above all else, power, they have a saturation of their soul with Arrogance. Some aspect of Arrogance is always easy to become entangled and involved with and what matches it and is much more difficult to obtain is POWER. Arrogance destroys all talent, beauty and intellect more effectively than any other thing and even perfect environment, as demonstrated by Ish and Ishah in the Garden of Eden, will not prevent Arrogance and sin. From the start of his life Satan had total perfection being created an adult in perfect intellect, perfect beauty, perfect environment and still he made a bad decision desiring POWER beyond his capacity. Beauty is useless unless someone recognizes that beauty and if great intelligence is possessed but no one recognizes how smart a person is what good is it? If one's status in life is not seen as being above others how is that supposed to satisfy one's Lust. Satan had all these things from the start of his life and he got tired of hearing how great he was and decided he was just as capable of running angelic creation as God and therefore wanted to be as powerful as God. Arrogance was the new factor introduced into creation and Arrogance promotes [Inordinate Ambition](#). The lust for power has its roots in Arrogance and is much more than having the ability to manipulate people. Power Lust does not begin with trying to exercise authority or influence over people but the Arrogance which starts it all is based on preoccupation with self always saying, "LOOK AT ME". It is an inordinate desire for recognition in life and therefore interlocks directly with the [Demand Syndrome Arrogance](#). When one takes the Law into his own hands for vengeance he extracts POWER from the bonifide system of the Law. This creates a Pseudo Pride from this extraction and by this creates a power with which he cannot cope and this sets self up as the law when he is certainly NOT the law. This is true Arrogance. However, this is NOT the case nor the issue in situations of self defense where every individual has a right to defend himself against violence.

The most unstable form of life on earth today is PEOPLE IN MASS and this is clearly demonstrated in the early 21<sup>st</sup> century by the antifa and black lives matter radical revolutionists and their "demonstrations". When people in mass Strike, March or Assemble as a Mob they are the most unstable form of life on the earth. These assemblies allow those involved to be recognized as part of a group but prevent them from being recognized individually. There is nothing more disgusting than a mass of people pulled together by their Arrogance and lust because they associate being thought important, demanding response and being recognized with gaining happiness. Mobs in society cannot function normally for work, in marriage or for the accumulation of wealth but they can rob, steal, rape and murder. Far more dangerous to the

earth than nuclear weapons are MOBS and their functions all start with Arrogance. Mob functions, under the guise of labor union strikes, are declarations of Arrogance and lack of integrity. Being abnormally self conscious about one's personal ability, talent or intelligence is the means for developing Arrogance, and by this, failures in life of the greatest proportions. If one joins into a group in order to make an impression on others, that is Arrogance. When one is Arrogant he loses his [Humility](#) and all happiness in life is related to humility.

Therefore, as a result Power Lust interlocks with Inordinate Ambition Arrogance and [Conspiracy Arrogance](#). There are Christians who do things for others in order to try to make them their slaves or puppets and this tragically is also a demonstration of their Arrogance. This is disguised by their sweet, kind personality but behind it the individual is suffering from POWER LUST Arrogance and is CONSPIRATORIAL in his going about systematically accumulating puppets. This is how fragmentation of lives under the Interlocking System of Arrogance destroys the Local Church, Business corporations, Military organizations, Law Enforcement groups and the entire National Entity. There is always someone who does not know or properly evaluate his limitations and under [Limitation Arrogance](#) joins up with a LUST for power and wants to control his peripheral area whatever its size. Life is too short for this crap and if God wants any believer in power he will put him there and then he will have to WORK diligently to exhaustion to do his job properly there as unto the Lord and to his best ability.

Return to the [Table of Contents](#)

### **[Gate #65 – The Arrogance of Revolution](#)**

[Revolution](#) is the forceful overthrow of [Divine Establishment](#) not just a government or political system by the people governed. It is an overthrow by violence of established authority resulting in a fundamental change in a policy, political organization, a constitution, or a Government and its purpose. It is a form of Evil as a [Conspiracy](#) formed in secret to overthrow the established authority or government which is enacted with the violence of revolution. The American War for Independence of the United States of America was **NOT** a revolution because the American forefathers did not overthrow the established government of England nor did they plot to or try to kill George the king of England, nor did they disturb the parliamentary process of the government of England. The obvious contrast to this is found in the French, Russian and Chinese revolutions and how the leaders of the established governments were in fact publicly executed. Louis was executed in the french revolution and the whole Romanov family was executed in the Russian revolution and in the Chinese revolution any individual who opposed the communists was publicly executed at times by the hand of their own children. The United States of America, however, was born from FREEDOM through MILITARY VICTORY. The Constitution of the United States, which has now been severely violated and almost completely set aside, was and still is the basis for establishing and maintaining FREEDOM above all else for the citizens. In the War for Independence the United States prepared a Declaration of Independence which expressed the grievances of the colonies and which was totally ignored by England and her government. This is the pattern for proper

redress of grievances by a group in a nation ESPECIALLY THIS NATION, and is not EVER to involve the marching and demonstrating which has occurred too often in the United States since the 1920s with the Suffrage movement, and which is the epitome of revolution in the United States today in the 21<sup>st</sup> century.

Very often Revolution can and will occur which no historian will call revolution. The situation and events will contain the secret plan of the Conspirators which is the PLOT and the means of carrying out the PLOT which is the INTRIGUE. In all revolutions there is the antagonism of Evil toward the Laws of Divine Establishment (Prov 17:11). Therefore, in addition, all revolutions are Anti-Establishment and since the Laws of Divine Establishment are from God all revolutions are Anti-God. In a LEGITIMATE Government system the Laws of Divine Establishment provide a correct balance between Authority and Freedom. The Constitution of the United States provides a LEGITIMATE form of Government but the current American government is not following it's guidelines. The principle of Establishment freedom is simply put as:

↳ “Freedom without Authority is Anarchy and Authority without Freedom is Tyranny”

When the balance of Freedom and Authority is destroyed it always results in anarchy which ultimately leads to tyranny. Bureaucracy in government is never held responsible to the ones who appoint them but only to the tyranny it forms within itself. The “rules” it makes are not legitimate laws of government yet they are used to control, coerce and even destroy legitimate functions and freedoms in the nation. In the United States of America to establish law the process is to go through the 3 branches of government and bureaucracy side steps this process and makes up rules of its own without government oversight. In the American system of government when a person violates the law it is the responsibility of the government to PROVE HIM GUILTY. The Internal Revenue Service as a bureaucracy has stepped outside the laws and says the citizen is guilty of rule violation until THE CITIZEN has proven himself innocent. The Bureau of Alcohol, Tobacco, Firearms and Explosives constantly sets up rules to govern the disposition of firearms in public hands totally against the 2<sup>nd</sup> amendment of the constitution and without legislative action. The government of the United States was not ever to be a democracy but was established as a Republic with a Constitutional Government based on 3 houses of Government under a system of Checks and Balances defined clearly in a constitution ALL WHICH HAVE BEEN SET ASIDE.

Revolution uses freedom to destroy freedom, whereas the Laws of Divine Establishment never divorce freedom from Authority and Law. The Laws of Divine Establishment are designed to provide the system for a form of LEGITIMATE Government which establishes authority and law to PROTECT FREEDOM. In contrast, Revolution is anti-establishment, anti-law, anti-authority and ANTI-GOD. Totalitarianism or Socialism is an attempt to destroy freedom and provide EQUALITY, a myth, which is a REAL impossibility. Revolution is ALWAYS a combination of Criminal and Crusader Arrogance, the crusaders provide the motivation for the masses and the criminals provide the leadership and when the revolution is successfully completed the criminals usually destroy the crusaders. Leon Trotsky after the Russian revolution is estimated to have murdered between 25 to 50 million people.

In order to effectively destroy a government, one never attacks the leaders, he must always attack the Establishment Law and Jurisprudence systems through [Public Opinion](#) and destroy them first and then the government will fall. To gain support for the revolution the revolutionary gives pity to the malcontents and allows them to talk about themselves by engaging in functions under the [Arrogance Skills](#). He then exploits the instability in these people, by being friendly and showing pseudo compassion. This moves public opinion to his cause or purpose. There are several things which make a person a revolutionist. Power Lust causes them to become a lawless person, a criminal, while Approbation Lust causes them to become a Crusader. A lawless person finds it easy to sympathize with others and out of their lawlessness the weapon of revolution is forged in the masses of people.

Forceful or violent removal of the Laws of Divine Establishment authority, no matter how poorly it has functioned, WILL result in revolutionary disaster. However, NO Government has any right to infringe on the [Laws of Divine Establishment](#) rights of the individual including and especially the right of Self Determination, the sacredness of Privacy, Property and Life. In the atmosphere of revolution there is, and can only be, the advancement of EVIL. This includes all forms of Socialism, Welfare State functions, all Redistribution of Wealth, all Destruction of law by diluting it with social programs, environmental nonsense and attempts to solve social discontent, the downgrading of the military establishment and the destruction or degradation of Law Enforcement and its functions by going easy on criminals and crime and condemning and ridiculing officers in the judicial system. In revolution the masses of people are promised that they will gain from *change* or revolution and the ones who accept this promise are forged as a weapon for revolution by the arrogance and power lust of getting something for themselves ultimately resulting in increased power in a government devoid of checks and balances.

### **The hard core revolutionist**

Often the hard core revolutionist is a combination of the crusader and criminal with a strong lust pattern. Power Lust, Greed, Ambition, Criminal Lust, Crusader Lust, etc., are all part of his makeup. In revolution the propaganda of Crusader Arrogance is [Equality](#) while the propaganda of [Criminal Arrogance](#) is Freedom from law. Equality and Freedom are both promised to the people in Revolution but neither is ever given. Crusader arrogance functions through socialism which destroys the economic benefits of true Establishment Freedom which always involves Free Enterprise. When the government, as occurs in the United States of America today, produces more jobs and employment opportunities than industry then the people are enslaved. An arrogant nation is vulnerable to revolution and [National Arrogance](#) produces national instability and national irrationality. This is the mechanism for manipulating Public Opinion and drawing the general public into the revolution and the proposed *change* unprotected by the Laws of Divine Establishment. Criminal Arrogance functions through the principle of confiscation and violence destroying the spiritual and establishment benefits and protections for the people and the nation. Human freedom is extremely vulnerable to deception whenever Absolute Truth has been rejected. Revolution is inevitable when the Arrogance Skills dominate the people and only the incorruptibles remain uninvolved. In revolution or any other aspect of life, an arrogant person will only accept an arrogant leader therefore Arrogance Skills

combine with [Defense Mechanisms](#) to provide [Strong Delusion](#) in the people and move Public Opinion into the realm of revolution. Arrogance destroys the ability to lead and also to follow legitimate authority. (2Sam 15:6) Therefore, arrogance attracts arrogance and revolution is promoted by arrogance in its desire for change.

Return to the [Table of Contents](#)

### **[Gate #66 – The Arrogance regarding Political Ideals \(The Jacobin Mentality\)](#)**

Political Arrogance distracts the believer from Bible Doctrine and causes them lose their true purpose as a result of their involvement in politics. Being a politician does not mean one IS Arrogant but it does mean that he will constantly be tempted to it and too many in politics succumb to this temptation. LEGITIMATE Legislation put into effect by politicians must be designed to function according to the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions. In the United States of America the congress of the United States is able, and supposed to ONLY, pass laws which are to protect freedom, privacy and property from crime and to define crime and protect the lawful citizen. Governments can and should only go this far with law because when a nation develops a legislative group who in Arrogance with [Scar Tissue of the Soul](#) believe the LIE of satanic doctrines from Evil, and think that they can solve the problems of society with legislation, the nation begins a spiral into degeneracy and destruction. These kinds of laws in effect require all citizens to be nice to certain categories of people because this has been made a law. They must also do certain things for the underprivileged, the minorities and those with particular deviant proclivities, who cannot or simply do not want to, take responsibility for themselves. This is the use of legislative force to change the citizens through interference by the government. In effect these types of laws are designed to destroy the honor of the nation by saying citizens must be nice to the SCUM which are White, Black, Yellow, Red, homosexual, etc., who, in reality, add nothing to the society. Labor Laws are the epitome of Political Arrogance, [Authority Arrogance](#) and [Institutional Arrogance](#). Investors and Management have all the right to set all policy and make all decisions in a business and labor has NO RIGHTS with regard to how a business runs. Political Arrogance which interlocks with [Crusader Arrogance](#) and various Panacea's are both egocentric and anthropocentric resulting in political liberalism. This is man's preoccupation with self and rejection of the [Laws of Divine Establishment](#) solutions to problems of society. Political Arrogance is manifest in such systems as socialism, communism, welfare functions, liberalism, etc. It is a rejection of certain necessary separations for the proper function of freedom including separation of church and state and also of all aspects of free enterprise and state. It is clearly seen in the decline of the integrity of political theory and the political function in the United States of America.

Modern Liberalism is man's preoccupation with self to the exclusion of the Laws of Divine Establishment and the [Divine Institutions](#). Modern Liberalism rejects proper separation of church and state, Free Enterprise and state, maintaining a strong military establishment to preserve freedom and much of the concepts of FREEDOM in general. The United States of America has almost destroyed itself several times by subscription to these principles and much



of it began with Woodrow Wilson who was said by Sigmund Freud to be the “greatest Jackass in History”. Man, in political Arrogance, is constantly, by his own efforts, through politics trying to solve the problems of mankind. Modern Liberalism, with its Human Good solutions, is the quintessence of this Arrogance. Liberalism was once a great system and was based on the underlying principle of tolerance of the views of other’s but is now something totally based on and influenced by Evil and blasphemous. Modern Liberalism today is man’s playing or assuming the role of God. This Arrogance is now totally focused in and saturating the leaders of this nation. Liberal political tenets include socialism, communism, welfare state functions, Arrogant blasphemes rejecting divine truth in the area of establishment and the substitution of human function and human talent for divine solutions. Man's preoccupation with self to the exclusion of God and doctrine forms the basis for Political Arrogance. It destroys human freedom because it attacks Legitimate Establishment authority and the privacy of the individual. This is demonstrated clearly in the bureaucracies of the American federal government and the concepts of big government and little people.

Utopianism is the nihilistic Arrogance of trying to recreate and / or refashion all forms of human existence. This ALWAYS leads to violence, terrorism and revolution under the principle of Social Engineering. These groups claim to want to reshape the world for the betterment of man. Today they exist as organized terrorists worldwide and currently in the Unites States of America as “black lives matter” and “antifa” Marxist revolutionists. This is a result of the State seeking to train children in the public education system to be oriented to the dictates of the state instead of to those of their parents and is always what occurs in Communism, Marxism and Nazism. Human utopia is impossible without Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God through faith alone in The Lord Jesus, The Christ alone. Freedom, for Utopian socialists, does not provide the desired result. Utopian socialism is totally misguided and based on EVIL and is total Arrogance and the premise of this thinking is anti God and anti freedom. In addition the economic concept of socialism is totally false. The underlying principle of the economy of socialism is that if profit making is removed from the public or individual and given to the government then poverty will be eliminated. The basic falseness of this revolves around the concept that politicians, who also have Old Sin Natures, who are full of Arrogance and greed, know better what to do for the individual than he does. The system of socialism means redistribution of wealth which itself is colossal Arrogance. Eradication of private wealth for the public welfare has NEVER worked in in all of Human History. Freedom, however, allows a person to succeed or fail based on his own motivations and decisions. Socialism seeks to PREVENT Failure and create EQUALITY, which is itself a myth.

In the Unites States of America the principle of States rights represents the Divine Viewpoint and the ongoing overriding federal control represents the Arrogance of tyranny and Evil. Political Arrogance is related to concern about one’s image instead of concern for upholding principle. This Arrogance cannot exist without, and must interlock with, [National Arrogance](#). It is the result of grass roots Arrogance where people vote in Arrogance and elect Arrogant individuals to serve as representatives in political office. These Arrogant elected people could not ever rule in any nation unless the majority voted them in therefore this Arrogance of the majority must be punished by the 5 cycles of divine discipline. Trying to do something to

appease the voting block to gain their vote, making promises to provide things for them which are in fact bad for the country, and, therefore, compromising and destroying the nation is the essence of Political Arrogance. The Arrogance of this and all tyranny overlooks the principle that man was designed to cope with problems and only God is able to solve problems. By abuse of establishment authority all freedom, privacy, property, profit motivation in life, and the whole system of free enterprise is destroyed. Then the nation soon follows.

Return to the [Table of Contents](#)

### **Gate #67 – The Arrogance Regarding the National Entity (Ex 7:10-11:end)**

There were 5 Jewish client or priest nations in the history of the Jews including the:

- ▲ Theocracy from Moses to King Saul
- ▲ United Kingdom from Saul to Solomon
- ▲ Northern kingdom from Jeroboam to Hoshea
- ▲ Southern Kingdom from Rehoboam to Zedekiah
- ▲ Judah from Zerubabel to 70 AD

ALL 5 of these Jewish priest nations started out as GREAT nations but ALL 5 failed and disappeared from history. All failed for the same reason, the disappearance of the Pivot of Mature believers. The failure of any client nation to God is a result of the failure of the people of that client nation and it occurs when they become ACTIVISTS instead of Biblicists. All Jewish client nations and all gentile client nations are destroyed in Human History as a result of rejection of the Absolute Truths of Bible Doctrine, and the doctrinally derived [Laws of Divine Establishment](#) and [Divine Institutions](#). When the believers focus on Perception, Cognition, Inculcation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine the pivot expands and the nation is preserved and prospered as a result of both Historical Impact and Association blessings provided for the mature believers. Therefore the truism is, “As goes the believer so goes the client nation to God”!

### **The Modus Operandi of a Client Nation**

The 1<sup>st</sup> client or priest nation to God was Israel beginning about 1500 years before Christ from BC 1441 to AD 70, persisting some 400 years longer than the Roman Empire. The Client Nation system was put into operation at the beginning of internationalism which began with the fall of the tower of Babel. God selected a group of people the JEWS and pulled them out of slavery in Egypt where they constantly complained about their situation while they were in slavery. The Jews as smart people, these being always the best complainers, being in slavery constantly complained that they did not have freedom. However, the fact regarding the orientation of the Human Race is that people always want something they do not have. So, when God sent Moses to free them their complaining did not stop even though they then had freedom. Although they wanted freedom, having been in slavery for 400 years they could not fight for their freedom themselves and were therefore incapable of gaining their freedom by their own efforts because they were in essence a totally helpless people. Therefore, God, having chosen them to be his people and serve as his priest nation provided freedom for them

in a miraculous way. Then, as is the nature of human kind, with their freedom they constantly complained about everything imaginable, the food, weather, pursuit of Egyptians, etc. They had been given freedom with a complete change of environment and being out of slavery they wanted what they actually never had in slavery but knew was available back in Egypt. These loser Jews were saturated with Arrogance and their Status Quo was no different in or out of slavery.

Before Client Nation Israel or ANY Client Nation can ever function properly they must win their freedom by fighting for it on battlefields. Because of their saturation with arrogance and their inability to even begin to fight for their freedom God had to remove one entire generation by means of the Sin Unto Death in order that the next generation could be taught to fight for their freedom and to rely on God. 40 years after gaining their freedom, when the Jews occupied the land there were still enemies in the land which was promised to them and the bible explains that this was for the purpose of EVERY GENERATION learning how to fight to preserve their freedom. The newly freed 1<sup>st</sup> generation of exodus Jews were an unhappy people who had rejected the system which God had provided for them and as a result they created their own monumental Self Induced Misery. People, individually or collectively, who create their own Self Induced Misery then search for the balm of Egocentric Arrogance and look for someone to blame for their failings and misery.

Therefore, the first thing which can be learned about Client Nations is that an unhappy people cannot ever form a Client Nation. God has always provided a secular system to stabilize the Client Nation in addition to the Plan of God for the believer. This is a stabilized system in order to enable effective custodianship and dissemination of the Absolute Truth of the Word of God. A Client Nation to God can be any nation at any time in history at any place in this world, and it is distinguished from other nations by God providing for them Absolute Truth as the Laws of Divine Establishment, Divine Institution, Gospel of Christ and the whole realm of Bible Doctrine, which then they can accept or reject. The whole concept of the Client Nation to God is for a group of people to have a stabilized system to handle the Truth provided by God. The first generation of Jews, having been given freedom could not be used to form a Client Nation because they never understood the Decalogue, which was NOT designed to produce a system of legalistic Self Righteous Arrogance like the pharisees used it for, but its purpose was to define FREEDOM:

- You will not steal
  - ▲ Recognizes property and privacy
- You will not commit Adultery
  - ▲ Recognizing privacy and property again
- You will not murder
  - ▲ Recognizing the right to life and sacredness of Life under self determination
- You will love God
  - ▲ Recognizing that he provides everything in life according to his GRACE Policy which you cannot earn nor ever deserve.

The Decalogue defines the sacredness of Life, privacy, property and volition, however it also has concepts of morality in it but the morality here is of no value without that which is not

mentioned in the Decalogue, VIRTUE. The individual must have Virtue First or the Decalogue will not work at all for either the believer or unbeliever in the nation. This is illustrated by the United States Constitution which defines an effective system of legitimate government based on the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions but requires INTEGRITY among the people and WILL NOT work without INTEGRITY FIRST! “You will love your neighbor as yourself” is not in the Decalogue nor is “You will respect your parents” and these are demonstrations of Freedom which require a strong sense of responsibility and greater authority than slavery ever did. Authority in slavery comes from force and violence while authority in freedom comes through wisdom, self restraint and a sense of responsibility. The Client Nation to God can never function effectively as a Client Nation until and unless the balance between freedom and authority with responsibility in both is understood and accepted as Truth.

Once the 2<sup>nd</sup> generation of Jews who came out of slavery into freedom had learned, after 39 years of living in the desert, the lesson of individual restraint and individual responsibility they who were left alive were to form a Client Nation to God and were required to FIGHT to establish their freedom and then to preserve it. Once any individual or group of people establish a system based on individual restraint and responsibility then they must fight to gain and maintain their freedom. They ultimately discover that one cannot keep freedom without fighting those who seek to destroy it and this results in the development of the entire concept of the military establishment. Economic functions which sustain a nation must also be free so that each individual must be free to decide for himself whether or not to accumulate capital and to take his capital and go into business. He must be free without any interference to expand it if he has the ability even to the level of Monopoly or to cause it to fail so that another can take its place. In the system of government currently functioning in the United States of America the elected legislators have developed a system which is based on the concept of continually passing laws to justify their existence. In justifying their existence they have lost their sense of responsibility. In fighting for freedom the people recognize that everyone has a right to go as far as their ability and volition will take them economically in business without being dishonest or criminal, the only areas where government interference in business is to be permitted. The people who take the greatest risks in business are those who provide capital and pay wages in payroll. Those who seek employment from these individuals as Labor have ABSOLUTELY NO RIGHT to interfere in any way with the options and decisions of management or capital in setting policy for the business. Under any system of true legitimate freedom there will always be those who become GREAT and those who fail miserably and the fact is that those who become GREAT are always a minority. Once an individual or group has fought for freedom they add, or recognize, something which has been occurring coterminously, the 2<sup>nd</sup> category of Absolute Truth the Gospel of The Lord Jesus, The Christ. FREEDOM is what provide the People in the Client Nation with the opportunity to use their freedom as uncoerced volition to accept or reject The Lord Jesus, The Christ as savior. This is the Plan of God, the Purpose of the Existence of Man on this earth and the ultimate solution to the Angelic Conflict Appeal Trial.

### **The United States of America & Arrogance Today**

The people of the United States of America have lost the real perspective of life and of this

nation because Americans have become a totally Arrogant people. They have lost the concept of being in the right place at the right time with the RIGHT SYSTEM, the Power System of God, the Divine Dynasphere. With Rejection of the Right System, and living outside it in the Cosmic Dynaspheres this paradise of the United States of America has become totally miserable. The historical reason, which has been systematically removed from the perception of the people, that the United States of America has had such great prosperity in every area of life, such as the best food, best medical care, best education system (long past), etc., is that this country was based on principles of the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions derived from Bible Doctrine and the individuals in the country carried their own happiness with them wherever they went.

Under Client Nation arrogance in a governmental system such as was originated in the United States, the problem originates with extending the voting franchise to the irresponsible people. This inevitably results in silly laws because silly people are elected to government office by silly voters. This production of Demigods and arrogant bureaucracies for this nation has resulted in abject distortions, often total rejection, of the constitutional principles upon which this government was founded. Functions in a client nation demand INTEGRITY, HONOR, VIRTUE, A SENSE OF JUSTICE and A SENSE OF RESPONSIBILITY UNDER FREEDOM in a maximum number of people, and these are to be the voting people, the RESPONSIBLE part of the people. Involvement in the Interlocking System of Arrogance neutralizes integrity, caters to the privileged or more vocal groups, demands equality for those who do not deserve it at the expense of everyone's freedom. Therefore, Client Nation Arrogance destroys human freedom, all functions of evangelism, accurate bible teaching, and indigenous missionary enterprise. Client Nation Arrogance is the collective involvement of the majority of the Client Nation's citizens in the Cosmic Dynaspheres. The primary principle is "AS GOES THE BELIEVER SO GOES THE CLIENT NATION TO GOD". Therefore, it is the individual believer, with his personal decisions, who determines the future of the client nation for his children and grand children and all of the people who come later.

### Pivotism in the Client Nation:

Pivotism describes the believer in The Lord Jesus the Christ living in the Divine Dynasphere, the Power System of God, and advancing to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God to form the pivot of mature believers which provides blessing for the client nation. It is this blessing by association which results in blessing and prosperity for ALL kinds of people in that nation. When the pivot of mature believers shrinks then the spin off of immature or apostate believers moving into the Cosmic Dynaspheres eventually destroys the nation. In any declining nation, especially a client nation to God like the Unites States of America, historical circumstances can be observed as the nation degrades but these are only the symptoms of the underlying problem of failure of believers to consistently reside in the Divine Dynasphere and make advancement in the Plan of God. Therefore, the true cause for the decline of a Client Nation and its involvement in National Arrogance is indifference by the individual believer to Bible Doctrine which results in consistent residence and function within Cosmic Dynasphere I, the Interlocking System of Arrogance. In the contemporary history of this client nation, the Unites States of America, which IS saturated today with National Arrogance, and whether it survives as a Client



Nation at all depends totally on the believers in this nation. Labor Unions, management bureaucracy, government bureaucracy, poor education systems and crime are not to blame but ONLY the believer who neglects or rejects Bible Doctrine.

The establishment of the Pivot of Mature believers as Invisible Heroes in the client nation to God, brings out the principle of Manifest Destiny which demands blessing by association with these mature believers. The tragedy is that for some time now there have been very few MATURE believers in this nation. The United States of America needs a large pivot to deliver this nation and in 1985 (the time of this lesson being taught) the nation was already into the 3<sup>rd</sup> cycle of Divine Discipline. Today in the first quarter of the 21<sup>st</sup> century the United States is either at the very end of the 4<sup>th</sup> cycle of Divine Discipline or actually in the unrecoverable position of the beginning of the 5<sup>th</sup> cycle of Divine Discipline and ultimate destruction of the United States. Looking back on history it is clear that in 1985 the United States gained a reprieve from God under the 5 cycles of Divine Discipline because of the development of a larger pivot but that has again shrunk to almost nothing today and there is, in fact, no pivot only a bare remnant of mature believers as [Jeshurun](#) left.

Francis Chafer said Christians should join activist groups and become involved in civil disobedience and this was a statement reflecting total EVIL. Chafer proclaimed that the power of Christians comes from being a groupie joining a group of activists and storming city hall with their demands. The ideas of Chafer involved getting a group together and getting power from the group, this is EVIL, just like is clearly illustrated in the Black Lives Matter and Antifa movements and whoever rises up next for liberalism. These are the idiotic people even fundamental Christians who MARCH to Washington or any other government center to protest or demonstrate (which in fact is an unconstitutional action tolerated by this illegitimate government since the early 1900s and especially in the 1960s). In reality under the Protocol Plan of God, the [Power System of God](#), the only thing which can save the United States is the individual believer's personal attitude toward Bible Doctrine. If there is a resurgence of a pivot, then the nation will be perpetuated but if it continues to shrink as it has been since the 80s the believer can join any group he wants to and he will not get accomplish anything toward the deliverance of this nation. Pet ideas and political candidates whether bad or good or even GREAT cannot and will not save this country, it is only the individual and his attitude toward The Lord Jesus, The Christ and Bible Doctrine. According to Pastor R. B. Thieme III, "One man cannot destroy this nation and One man cannot deliver it".

Teen aged children in the 80s were in great danger and needed above all else straight Bible Doctrine as they do today but today there is almost NO PLACE for them to even get it. It is not available in their home, not in school, and especially NOT in most of the Local Churches which, in any case, they do not attend. The 80s was the time of "JUST SAY NO" but unless the person was a believer with some Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Right Lobe or an unbeliever functioning strongly under the doctrinal principles of the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions they would never say NO to anything. This results because All Arrogance gravitates to becoming interlocked with [Pleasure Arrogance](#). There is nothing wrong with having pleasure in life or having leisure time in life BUT Arrogance

demands nothing but entertainment. This has developed to the point over the past 40 years so that this current young adult generation has to have a CELL PHONE or VIDEO GAME in their possession to entertain them constantly and they demand instant gratification for everything they desire! These are the children in Elementary and Jr High schools who become drug addicts. Public School is today, and has been for some time, a ZOO for keeping the little monsters out of the parents hair for a day, but none of them are even learning ENGLISH nor MATH, nor NATIONAL HISTORY nor anything about any decent literature or music of the past. This is a strong reflection of fragmentation of the lives of children based on the Arrogance of the previous generation, their parents the YUPPIE, HIPPIE generations. The United States of America has been in GRAVE danger since the 60s and this was exacerbated in the 80s and now may bring about the destruction of the nation in the new millennial 20s.

In the United States of America we have prospered for our whole history as a result of following principles of Free Enterprise, the Laws of Divine Establishment, Divine Institutions, Free Evangelization and moreover by the formation of a pivot of mature believers in The Lord Jesus, The Christ. It is possible that some other nation will become the client nation to God in the near future and when this occurs there will be great envy and jealousy throughout this nation. One can see this in a small part in what happened as a result of the Liberal American attitude toward Rhodesia and South Africa and how liberals, being very jealous of these nations, instigated their ultimate downfall. No nation especially a client nation must ever establish foreign policy whereby it tries to change the government systems in other areas of the world. This is what the United States under the influence of the national and world counsel of churches has constantly done and it has absolutely no right, just like the individual who functions under legalism has no right to try to change people. The Client Nation with its freedom of evangelism and the build up of the Local Church with positive believers is established so that it will send out missionaries to provide the information regarding the Gospel of The Lord Jesus, The Christ and for those who accept The Lord Jesus, The Christ the Bible Doctrine for their Spiritual Life. Then this provision of absolute Truth from the Gospel of Christ, Bible Doctrine and the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions, to the believers in these other nations will, while retaining all 4 categories of freedom in that nation, allow the people there to begin to change their own nation. When a nation cannot function under the principle of the “Freedom – Authority” balance, without regard to the type of government they may have, they simply cannot make it and can never be a Client Nation to God or IF they have begun under this principle and cannot maintain that status then they will not be able to retain their Client Nation status.

The application to believers in the Church Age is that when both believers and unbelievers can be led astray from the protecting rules and principles of God, this WILL result in destruction of their client nation status. This is the means of destruction of and ruin for the believer, involved in apostasy and degeneracy, and unbeliever both and the client nation itself. The Interlocking System of Arrogance especially Self Righteous Arrogance in both foreign and domestic policies has produced incredible degeneracy in the American people and the government. Therefore, what is actually wrong with this country is generalized involvement in the Interlocking System of Arrogance. The people today are not the American people whose

Humility was manifest so many times in the past but now the people are saturated with Arrogance which destroys the true nature of anything. A Nice person who becomes Arrogance is no longer nice and a nation which becomes Arrogant no longer has the characteristics upon which it was built. Arrogance destroyed Israel several times in the past and resulted from this same pattern whereby the people generally became Arrogant and entered into the Interlocking System of Arrogance and were thereby deprived of Bible Doctrine by their own volition. Americans today like the Jews of the past have been led astray by rejection of Truth and believing only the LIE of Evil. The Jews were repeatedly ruined under the first 4 cycles of Divine Discipline and at least 3 times historically and they were then destroyed under the 5<sup>th</sup> cycle of Divine Discipline:

- ✧ 721 BC the northern kingdom was destroyed by the Assyrians
- ✧ 586 BC the southern kingdom was destroyed by the Chaldeans
- ✧ 70 AD Judea the last Jewish client or priest nation was destroyed by Rome and remains so even to this very day.

All of these followed the same pattern which the people in the United States of America are following today which has been saturating the citizens for many decades. Americans have developed and persist in entertaining greater and greater Arrogance and complete entanglement in the Interlocking System of Arrogance. The interesting thing is that many people like to relate this Arrogance to the level of national prosperity but such is not the case. The reality of life is that the MOST Arrogant people in Human History have come right out of the slums and gutters of society and the Scum of Life have more Arrogance than the aristocracy ever has. Historically, aristocracy is formed based on ability and in that respect has some excuse for a high degree of self confidence, which the scum do not have. The SCUM of society, right out of the ghettos and gutters, are always the most Arrogant people alive.

Witnessing by believers in The Lord Jesus, The Christ to the unbeliever gives the unbeliever the opportunity to make Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God, these regenerate people who then ultimately advance to contribute to the pivot of Mature believers preserve the nation. However, the size of the spin off of reversionistic and Arrogant believers cause the nation to be disciplined and even destroyed. Divine Discipline is designed as a warning to the believer that he is functioning outside of the Protocol Plan of God for this Church Age. He is possibly carnal, reversionistic or both and may also be Arrogant and thus is not functioning under the Will of God, therefore, his status is displeasing to God. Believers are either executing the Spiritual Life of the Church Age and preserving the nation through the blessing which comes from association with them or living in perpetual carnality and under the Evil of the Interlocking System of Arrogance, Cosmic Dynasphere I. This inevitably results in individual and collective degeneracy contributing to the self destruction of the nation. There is a National Arrogance which is almost completely incomprehensible and yet is blatantly present today in the United States. It is the Arrogance of thinking that by doing ‘good things’, as bleeding heart liberals, man can solve the problems of this country and also those of the world. Client Nation Arrogance is often demonstrated when the people of the client nation, think they are better than any other nation because of their PAST greatness. This involves the individual citizens of the nation and the Government of the nation being without any shred of honor,

integrity or adherence to the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions. This is the United States of America today. American integrity was once based on relationship with the Integrity of God and when a man, under his own integrity, gave his word this was his bond based on his honor. This has long since been lost in this nation. The principle of national integrity is to be focused with an emphasis regarding the FUNCTION of a Government not the TYPE of the government. Monarchy, Oligarchy, Republic, Democracy (this latter one is NEVER good) it does not matter the type but it is the function of the people of the nation thinking they are above other nations which contributes to National Arrogance.

Nations, like individual believers, become strong through the collective consistent Perception, Cognition, Incultation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine by its citizens and are weakened by the influence from and saturation with the Evil policies of Satan in the citizens. Satan is responsible for the condition of any nation where God must eliminate them from history under the 5<sup>th</sup> cycle of Divine Discipline. If an Evil nation is not to be used to judge or discipline other nations then it must be removed by God lest it infect the nations of the world with its saturated Evil. Nations can start with great spiritual revivals and become spiritual giants with great prosperity and global impact and in some short 200 years become totally saturated with Evil. It is then that the 5<sup>th</sup> cycle of Divine Discipline is called for and inevitably administered. This occurs when Evil becomes the Modus Operandi of the nation. This is the Status Quo of the United States of America today in the 21<sup>st</sup> century.

Wisdom and Honor in its population is what makes any nation great and both come from consistency in Post Salvation Epistemological Rehabilitation by Perception, Cognition, Incultation, Metabolization and Application of Bible Doctrine. When the government of the nation attacks doctrinal positions and principles, the mature believer MUST NEVER BACK DOWN. When there is a government functioning under the influence and principles of Evil, they always attack the rich. This is what occurred in the French and Russian revolutions and like our government in the United States of America has been and continues doing to both wealthy individuals and big business since the end of World War II (unless they are supportive of the liberal socialistic – communistic agenda, ie George Soros and others). This is evidenced as principle from Bible Doctrine and a documented fact of history. The rich become rich by being a blessing to the nation and establishing Free Enterprise economy and the largest percentage of those who become rich have become rich because of common sense, courage, integrity and honor. The rich in the United States of America have been attacked by the government since Franklin Roosevelt. It is Evil in the policies and procedures of the American government which has destroyed the initiative of the natural gas companies, oil companies and for that matter, all industry in the United States of America. The immoral Evil government has prevented oil and gas exploration for many years and industry has been forced to employ incompetent, unmotivated individuals who have formed labor unions demanding higher and higher wages and shorter and shorter working hours. Then industry is blamed instead of the interfering government with the inability of American industry to compete in the world market. Today the government is forcing the closure of fossil fuel electric generation plants to save the environment which will inevitably cause electrical shortages throughout the nation and contribute to its collapse. The American government has become saturated with EVIL as a

result of allowing the expansion of the voting franchise to stupid, ignorant, irresponsible, Arrogant people. In a reality based government, only responsible people, those who own businesses, real property or have served in the military should ever be able to say what occurs in the government by any means, especially voting to elect representation. As there is a continued growing movement in the United States of America toward socialism one can recognize that the welfare state functions which are engaged in today are the exact antithesis of what should occur in life and in a good government. People who will not work for their living should be allowed to starve to death and rid the country of themselves. CHARITY is a wonderful and beneficial aspect of the function in a properly functioning client nation but LIFELONG welfare support is completely IDIOTIC.

Lawlessness in any nation is the population rejecting Truth in the 3 categories of, the Laws of Divine Establishment, the Gospel of Christ and Bible Doctrine. The people inevitably therefore, fall into the Interlocking System of Arrogance which is degeneracy and into Reversionism which is apostasy. These believers fail to fulfill the principle of [2Thess 1:12](#) “that The Lord Jesus, The Christ may be glorified in You”. In national and individual apostasy and under national Arrogance the people enter extreme lawlessness as a Self Righteous reaction and the function of involvement in the Interlocking System of Arrogance. National Arrogance places an emphasis on government administration in terms of Arrogance as opposed to [Humility](#) and also the population’s function under Hoi Poloi Arrogance as opposed to the Laws of Divine Establishment.

There is no possible means by which the Evil influence of today’s media can be changed without the people in general developing a positive attitude toward Bible Doctrine, which in fact is the only thing which will turn this nation around. As a result of a lack of a pivot of mature believers, all of the things which are developing today will end in the total destruction of this nation and God will raise up another new client nation in the world. The reality is that very few Mature believers will ever be in any history book but it is these unknown mature believers in all periods of Human History which create, turn around and provide for the perpetuation of client nations and their influence and impact results in great prosperity for the generations to come.

### **Client Nation Arrogance vs Political Arrogance**

Client nation Arrogance must be distinguished from [Political Arrogance](#). Political Arrogance involves individuals with [Inordinate Ambition](#), people seeking power and position or both in the client nation or any nation, but doing so from inside the Interlocking System of Arrogance. Client nation Arrogance is much worse and is the COLLECTIVE grass roots Arrogance of the citizens of the client nation. Political Arrogance is a specialized group in Arrogance while Client Nation Arrogance is generalized in the whole population. However, individual situations of Arrogance are also part of client nation Arrogance. This occurs in the people who think the government owes them something in life when in fact the only thing the government owes a person is freedom to succeed or fail.

To orient to reality in a client nation one must recognize that client nations to God are always



under attack by the false concepts of racism and class distinction. This should never be an issue in the United States of America under the American Constitution, however, the Constitution of the United States of America has been almost totally set aside in the 21<sup>st</sup> century. The American Constitution, if it were followed as the supreme law of the land, would prevent ever making an issue of race or class and when a person or group makes these an issue it is their deep seated Arrogance and stupidity merged together. These groups totally lack an understanding of the Laws of Divine Establishment functions and Divine Institutions within the United States.

It is very difficult for God to bless gentile nations of the world through a gentile client nation. Gentiles are difficult to bless because the demonstrations, marches and riots, which have occurred in the past and are very prevalent again today in the United States, are focused against the policies of government, motivated by Arrogance, in order to destroy the things which are the most profitable and provide the greatest benefit for ALL citizens. Socialism being accepted in any nation makes it very difficult for God to bless the gentiles and it is a destroyer of nations not a reason for blessing. A gentile client nation has a great deal of difficulty blessing gentiles both in the nation itself and also outside the nation as a result of these things. In the declining gentile client nation there is inevitably malfunction of its missionaries which become corrupt because of their stupidity, which is as a result of their lacking Bible Doctrine in the Right Lobe of the Soul. Along with this there is the inevitable distortion of evangelism, which occurs in the nation itself, for the same reasons, thereby limiting the size of the pivot of mature believers to support the nation and the missionaries.

The United States of America, as a client nation, has principles on which it must depend which can result in the preservation or destruction of the nation. This nation has overwhelmingly failed in its missionary function of presenting the Gospel to other peoples of the world. The government here then tries to apply socialist principles to these other peoples, and in their unmitigated Arrogance tell their leaders how to run their own culture. In addition there has been miserable failure by missionaries where after their presentation of the Gospel they are lost in their purpose. Missionaries today don't understand that their job is the presentation of the entire realm of Bible Doctrine and the building of indigenous ministers to teach their own people. Both seminaries and local churches have saturated missionaries with Self Righteousness and Legalism and they have failed miserably. This results in the missionary bringing a spiritual curse after Gospel presentation by including hypocrisy and Self Righteousness in his missionary functions. There is NEVER compatibility between Grace and Self Righteousness and American missionaries have gone to other countries and taken the Gospel but have also taken incredible Self Righteous Arrogance. If American missionaries had not done this exact thing in China, the Chinese would not today be under communism. Missionaries, inevitably and undeniably, put their nose into things they do not understand nor need to be involved in and then FAIL in teaching Bible Doctrine after the presentation of the Gospel of Christ. In essence they provide the Gospel of The Lord Jesus, The Christ and then try to turn these people into the imbeciles Americans have become.

In addition the American government has totally failed the people by building up bureaucracies

which have no ability nor experience in business but are in positions to control business both big and small and are not accountable to the voters of the nation for their decisions and actions. Those who are in charge of these bureaucracies are Self Righteous little demigods in their realms, controlling and bullying the industry of this nation. These are all things which are based on and motivated by Evil in this nation and the source is the Arrogance in the nation permeating the vast majority of the people. Under the Plan of God the uncontrolled Arrogance of a nation especially a client nation requires either total destruction and removal from history or devastating national disaster to change the attitude of the people. In the United States of America the people in general are and have been a totally petty and saturated with pettiness even from the time of George Washington to the present. American people try to bully others into thinking, saying, doing, wearing and acting as they do. They stick both their individual and collective noses into the personal business of others and constantly, on a more grand scale, other nations. Believers, people in general, and nations as a collection of people, with the wrong type of thinking in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul from Arrogance will always bring judgment from the Justice of God.

The believer must be able to determine the difference between Patriotism and Arrogance. Believers who are under consistent Positive Volition toward Bible Doctrine and who have advanced in the Spiritual Life love this nation and have a right to and in fact must criticize its policies when they are wrong. Patriots who love the United States of America and would die for it, as believers, must recognize that the foreign and domestic policies of the United States have been and continue to be motivated by, derived from and saturated with EVIL beyond description. The believer must be patriotic but also OBJECTIVE and he must not be Arrogant about the United States of America. The believer oriented to reality must not ever think Americans are the greatest people in the world, since obviously they continue to prove they are not. When one is objective about something he will not be Arrogant about it. In the United States of America the overriding collective Arrogance must be removed to preserve this nation and ONLY the Justice of God can do this.

The word (gr) Shub = Stupidity and is entrance into Cosmic Dynasphere I the Interlocking System of Arrogance with its myriad of systems or gates of entrance and / or into Cosmic Dynasphere II the Interlocking System of Antagonistic Emotional Hatred. These are Satan's power systems to control this world and the Human Race in it. When enough believers (as has occurred in the United States of America) have entered into the Cosmic Dynaspheres the nation WILL BE DESTROYED as a client nation to God IF it does not recover. This had begun long ago with the restlessness of the communists in Russia, China, Cuba and Korea and lack of moral courage in the United States to engage them and destroy them. There has been a fantastic desire of the people under communism for Absolute Truth. They are in a vacuum and realize that a state under Marxist principles cannot do very well and there is a very GREAT hunger in the souls of these people as demonstrated clearly in recent contemporary history in the Ukraine. There has been, and will continue to be, a tremendous evangelistic ministry into communist countries as demonstrated by what has occurred in the Ukraine because God always honors Positive Volition at God Consciousness and the desire to hear the Gospel of Christ. Now all that is needed are missionaries who have a strong foundation in Bible Doctrine and

understand clearly their true purpose and function.

### **Factors involved in National & Client Nation Arrogance**

Instead of penetrating into the depth of the Mosaic Law, where The Lord Jesus, The Christ is revealed, the Jews simply scooped off the surface superficialities of the law and combined these superficialities with their own Arrogance and Self Righteousness causing for them, a total disaster. This same pattern is what has been occurring in client nation United States of America. Americans became first an Arrogant people, then a Self Righteous people. Americans go to nations of the world and say “Become a democracy like us!” despite the fact that **America is not and never was supposed to be a democracy at all** and democracy is in fact the absolute worst form of pseudo organized government. People wanted to know why the Iranians attacked our embassy, why Arabs destroyed the world trade center towers, crashed a plane into the pentagon and why for 40 years they and many other Arabic groups have become terrorists against everything America stands for. These Americans do not realize that America has shown them how to do this. America has shown them and all the nations of the world how to be Arrogant and Self Righteous and this is a total disaster for any people. Under the Plan of God with The Lord Jesus, The Christ controlling history sooner or later disaster will come to any Arrogant Self Righteous people; this is with a total certainty the people in the United States of America especially today.

Never in the history of man have so many Bleeding Heart, Do Good, Liberals been gathered together in one geographic location as in the United States of America since at least the 1960s and more likely since Woodrow Wilson was in office. The fact is that the number of these STUPID people, today in the beginning of the 21<sup>st</sup> century, has FAR exceeded any nightmare expectations which could have occurred in the 1960s. Never have there been so many confused people wondering why things are happening and what in fact IS happening to this nation and the world. The people in this nation are SOFT in their soul because they are under a maximum Influence of EVIL, the policy and system of Satan for ruling and controlling this world. EVIL is the sum total of the genius of Satan related to his **BLIND Arrogance** and never has nor can ever work effectively. However, notwithstanding this principle, the people of the United States of America continue to pursue a course of Evil in every aspect and facet of life. The welfare state of 1975 was the worst in American history to that point, there never has been a good one, but the principles of the welfare state which are in practice today supporting illegals and all other scum is FAR, FAR Worse. The communists use welfare state ideals and functions to destroy western societies BUT when they take over a people and have individuals who cannot be used in their concept of society they EXECUTE them or put them in work camps to starve to death while they work and DIE. The welfare state is a totally vicious system based on and motivated by EVIL and creates, out of the people, an incredibly CANCEROUS group who are totally and completely WORTHLESS, willing to do nothing as long as the government provides for them. Then they SCREAM to the liberals in government, who will always listen, about their rights if the government does not provide for them. These people are LEACHES and the greater the number of leaches in a nation the faster a nation goes down in history. When this leach population is encouraged by government handouts eventually they turn around and destroys the nation which feeds it through revolution. This is

HISTORICAL FACT and the United States has the largest leach population ever present in all of human history, far greater than what existed in the 1960s and 70s and far greater even than in ancient Rome before its fall.

The population in the United States has great influence on the molding of thinking, policy and attitude in the nation BECAUSE the government has allowed an expanded voting franchise to go along with the leach population. As a result of this, people are shocked when terrorists strike, or nations destroy American embassies, or use forbidden weapons on United States soil or when illegals just walk in and take up residence and demand to be totally supported by the government. The United States has historically invited the smallest, weakest nations in the world to attack it. This has occurred because of a lack of understanding that National STRENGTH is the secret to freedom and world peace. Americans are deluded with social Gospel concepts and therefore are SATURATED WITH EVIL and because of this have failed to understand in any way that these disasters have been invited and there has been a universal BEGGING for the small nations in South America and Africa to shake their fists in anger at the United States. They have been invited to do this by showing them that America is weak and pathetic and the great power which existed in 1945 is just a hollow shell today. America invites envy and violence and BEGS for it in the manner in which both domestic and foreign policy is conducted. Never has a nation had so much blessing and not known what to do with it, clearly demonstrating a total lack of national capacity for life as a result of overwhelming rejection of all Bible Doctrine principles. The facts that in 1975 the Cambodians took a US merchant ship and in 2001 terrorists bombed with planes the world trade center towers and that idiots constantly kill in mass innocent people on the streets and the elected officials are constantly wanting to get rid of guns, and in fact want to repeal the 2nd amendment, and many other global incidents clearly demonstrates a total lack of understanding of what freedom is and how it must be conducted and protected.

If a nation does not have universal military training and does not show toughness and moral courage with its law and does not have people oriented to REALITY in government but only caters to LEACHES this means that eventually the people all think like LEACHES and eventually they will be destroyed by the LEACHES. ***When Americans revel in idiotic pseudo music like RAP and the representatives of the nation BOW to islamic leaders and cow tow to communist leaders. When governmental officials participate in illegal unconstitutional marches and demonstrations and the state department leaves ambassadors to be killed when they could be easily saved. When the person responsible has the unmitigated GAUL to think she is qualified to be president of the country. When the president during all this is not even a citizen nor an American in any semblance of the term. The nation, as a whole, has demonstrated lack of capacity for living and a desperate BEGGING to GOD for TOTAL destruction.*** Americans have done everything needed to bring upon this nation the types of disasters which are occurring today and there WILL BE FAR MORE AND FAR WORSE. Americans have invited these national disasters with the same stupidity which gives the people in this nation NO CAPACITY for life. They have had for many decades, generation after generation of IMBECILES, hatched by generation after generation of LEACHES. This is the reason it is a shock to Christians when they realize that the application of Bible Doctrine REQUIRES TOUGHNESS and COMPASSION at

the same time. The problem is being tough and compassionate at the same time is confusing and difficult and it in fact depends on WHICH DOCTRINE one uses for which application. Just because there are apparently a great number of believers in this country does not mean they have any knowledge or understanding of the principles of the Doctrines of God, or if they do have it, know which to use in which situation. Christians do not generally know when to be tough and when to be compassionate. When the believer can straighten out this principle of when to be tough, compassionate, aggressive or passive and when to speak or not speak, then they have learned the principle in Ecclesiastes that there is a time for everything.

- ~ *There is a time for war and when it is the time and it is a JUST war it is then GOOD*
- ~ *There is time for peace and when it is the time and can be maintained by STRENGTH it is then GOOD*
- ~ *There is a time to LOVE within the Integrity Envelope of the Divine Dynasphere*
- ~ *There is a time to FIGHT under the Laws of Divine Establishment principles of FREEDOM*

Fundamentalist Christians have generally lost the understanding of the variations in doctrine and their varied application and they must maintain Flexibility in dealing with all facets of life and in applying doctrine properly.

In considering client nation functions there is a principle which must always be recognized and addressed. There will always be provided by God, *Bible Doctrine Before Disaster*. In other words, there must always be recognized the importance of Pre-Disaster Bible Doctrine Teaching for the stability and continued existence of the client nation. The Lord Jesus, The Christ, the God who controls Human History, never disciplines, destroys or brings catastrophe to any portion of the Human Race without first providing a chance to avoid it. This means there will ALWAYS be a PRE-DISASTER PRESENTATION OF Truth in all categories. For any student who can properly interpret contemporary history this is what had occurred in the United States in the later 60s through the 80s and into the 90s when this nation should have been destroyed. At that time many members of the liberal media presented clear and proper secular descriptions and elucidations of the principles of the Laws of Divine Establishment more than ever before. This along with an intensive presentation of accurate Bible Doctrine from a few properly prepared and oriented Pastor Teachers was America receiving Truth through the News Media, Periodicals, Television media and the rare local church. This nation, at that time, was being saturated with the presentations of Bible Doctrine from the principles of Establishment Truth and Biblical Theology. This was PRE-DISASTER Bible Doctrine Teaching. This resulted in a build up of a strong and large pivot which provided a reprieve temporarily for the United States of America. When this Bible Doctrine presentation occurs, as it will again, to reject this Truth, by both the believer and unbeliever, will result in the nation ignoring the last trumpet call to save itself. These are like Wake Up America programs but America was not then and is not now actually asleep but had in the past and today has again rejected these Truths. This was then and will be at some point, the presentation of the Gospel of Christ, the entire realm of Bible Doctrine and the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institution Truths throughout the nation and when this occurs again, the people with their own volition will determine the fate of this nation. When a nation's people consistently and continuously say NO to the Truths of the entire realm of Bible Doctrine including the Gospel of Christ and the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions, they will come to believe ONLY the LIE of the Cosmic



Dynaspheres derived from EVIL. Once the LIE is believed and Truth is again heard it is absolutely meaningless to the hearers. This is why so many women are excited about and join into the feminist movement, which is the most unfeminine thing for any woman. This is why White people join with the Black Lives Matter groups. This is why people are accepting islam, homosexuality, democratic party concepts of socialism and bureaucratic rules set above CONSTITUTIONAL LAW, and so much more. What was and is wrong with America was and is not Carter, Kennedy, Clinton, Obama, Pelosi, Biden, Sanders, Fonda or Nader or any other individuals who are anti-American to the core and who do not have the best interest of the nation at heart from the standpoint of the Constitution and the Word of God. It is the American sitting at home or in bible study rejecting Truth constantly and consistently. These people become BLIND to Truth as a result of having believed so much of the LIE over so long a period of time. The principle remains though, that the widespread presentation of Truth especially by liberal media will be the last trumpet call of deliverance for America. God never judges a person or client nation unless first the people have had opportunity of “repentance”, which is a change of thinking, with regard to Truth and to accept Truth and to recover and perpetuate their recovery.

When a nation is not prepared for a crisis it takes much more effort to come through the crisis. America is not prepared in any way to maintain its national sovereignty today. This is demonstrated clearly by the trend of accepting law and military oversight from international organizations like the United Nations, a complete system of insanity from EVIL. When a nation goes into economic crisis and there is no preparation such as no gold standard to fall back on nor any true concept of economics the nation will take a very long time to recover, if it can recover at all. This is evident in the obvious failure of the European Union, the collapse of the Greek economy, the collapse of the economies of several of the South American nations and the continued down trend in every aspect of America’s national function. Under the American Constitution, Americans do not work for the national government, it is supposed to be what works for the citizens to protect freedom, privacy, property and life. When the unbelievers reject these principles of the Laws of Divine Establishment and Believers follow the trends of their The Old Sin Nature it results in perpetual carnality, Arrogance, all motivated by Evil, with the Old Sin Nature controlling the soul at all times. Therefore in such a nation very few Believers reach the high ground of Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God, the time of attainment of maximum blessing from God. This results in unrestrained criminality both nationally and internationally and in the client nation this destroys:

- ✧ Establishment freedom of uncoerced volition
- ✧ Privacy which is the basis for self determination
- ✧ Sacredness of property
- ✧ Sacredness of life
- ✧ Legitimate Law which is to provide freedom and self determination rights for citizens
  - (this has certainly occurred in the United States of America today)

As a result the citizens in a client nation without Bible Doctrine and the principles of the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions live in a situation of unhappiness with their freedom totally destroyed by tyranny, criminality and terrorism. This results in a loss of vigor

in the people and lack of the recognition of each day being the Day that the Lord has made. These people are the epitome of Arrogance, Selfcenteredness and [Self Absorption](#), degeneracy and depravity. In addition this results in the suffering in the animal kingdom and the Divine Discipline punishment for this situation takes the form of drought and lack of proliferation of both domestic and wild animals. This Arrogance from Evil destroys the strength and virtue of the people in the nation. The irony is that under the Laws of Divine Establishment the Believer and unbeliever both have used the freedom provided by these same Laws to reject them and destroy themselves. This is the actual means of destruction of the client nation to God.

In the 5<sup>th</sup> cycle of divine discipline to the client nation the overriding principle is, “as goes the Believer so goes the Client nation to God”. The application of true Bible Doctrine from God totally contrasts legalism which is false doctrine. When Believers are in a state of Arrogance, perpetual carnality, fragmentation and [Reversionism](#) instead of Spiritual Growth, judgment from God WILL bring escalating Divine Discipline. This is the state of affairs in the United States of America today and the Pivot of Mature Believers no longer exists and this nation will ultimately crash and burn without it. Most Believers, Unbelievers, and Politicians, all live in a state of Living the LIE, which results from Outside Pressures of Life being converted into Stress in the Soul. ([Hos 4:2-3](#)) [Time Magazine #29 Oct 1979](#), in the book “Breaking Ranks” by Morgan Podhoretz; his statements illustrate the saturation of the Interlocking System of Arrogance in the United States of America and the Blind Arrogance of the smaller groups in radicalism. This has been permitted to VASTLY expand in the 1<sup>st</sup> quarter of this 21<sup>st</sup> century. The Interlocking System of Arrogance is devastating to the believer not only with regard to his lacking Bible Doctrine and lacking the functions of the [Faith Rest Drill \(5 stages\)](#) involving reverse concentration but it also destroys common sense and the ability to associate reality with Divine Viewpoint and eventuates in [Psychoses](#) and Neuroses and total divorcement from reality.

The IDEA that crises will change people is FALSE and they never have or will change people overall. The only change which can come into the life of anyone is through believing Truth instead of rejecting it. The CRISES of life will make no change in the basic weaknesses and Human Viewpoint anthropocentric philosophies of individuals. A clear definitive demonstrated of this in United States history is that for some 100 years NO ONE EVER REMEMBERS THE VICTIM IN CRIME. When the court procedures begin and are dealing with an obvious criminal no one remembers the victim but they want the criminal to only serve a light sentence or NONE and somehow to get out of his punishment altogether. People forget the victim for the same reason they are not changed by crises, they are emotional and hypocritical putting on a great front but NEVER changing. Our jails are full of some of the worst criminals in history but these are rotated back onto the streets constantly instead of being executed for their crimes. This constantly occurs because ONCE people believe the LIE they will NEVER remember victims of crime. When people believe the lie they are overly concerned that the criminal’s rights be observed. The disillusion of these people resides in the fact that the CRIMINAL HAS NO RIGHTS. As a result of setting himself above or outside the RULES (LAWS) of SOCIETY under the Laws of Divine Establishment, he forgoes and relinquishes his RIGHTS by the function of his own volition. When a person falls into believing only the LIE his IQ goes down to about

minus 20 and his stupidity level is unbelievable. The only hope for the United States is positive response to personal witnessing and evangelism and the subsequent Perception, Cognition, Incultation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine by all believers. This is the only way to bring the people back to the Truth of the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions. The FACT is that rejection of Truth in the client nation has both personal and national consequences. Personal consequences for the individual can mean the Lake of Fire for the one who rejects The Lord Jesus, The Christ as savior. For the individual rejecting the Laws of Divine Establishment it can mean national degeneracy, becoming enmeshed in the Interlocking System of Arrogance or national reversionistic apostasy along with the unbeliever's rejection of the Gospel and believer's rejection of Bible Doctrine. National Consequences for the client nation to God can mean historical crises where God administers the 4 cycles of Divine Discipline to the nation. It can mean also total historical and national disaster where God administers the 5<sup>th</sup> cycle of Divine Discipline to the nation completely destroying it.

When a nation gets out of line with the Plan of God for the Angelic Conflict Appeal Trial as a result of too much degeneracy from entanglement in the Interlocking System of Arrogance or too much apostasy from Reversionistic rejection of Truth and it stays out of line, then God punishes it with national capital punishment. One of the signs of Evil and Arrogance saturating any nation is the fact that the government, whether an individual ruler or dictator or a group governing body is saturated with, motivated by and functioning totally under Evil and Arrogance. This is the underlying reason the Nazis came into existence because Hitler would never have gotten anywhere near to ruling Germany without he and Germany in general being totally under EVIL influence. Part of Germany's national Evil was antisemitism and in connection with this there was murder, rape, theft of property and the destruction of many people and this was heinous sin. Evil can express itself in Sin, Crime and Human Good productions but Antisemitism in every aspect is a true and overt expression of PURE EVIL. This is one of Satan's strong policies, to destroy the Jews, so that God cannot keep the covenants he has made with them. The fact that the German people were ready to become antisemitic was indicative of the EVIL already existing in Germany and Hitler merely became the representative of the majority of Germans. Therefore it is obvious that Evil responds to Evil. It is also obvious that a people get what it deserves in its form of Government Administration.

It is important to remember that a national Administrator, Ruler or Leader ALWAYS represents the attitude of the people. In Germany the people say they did not like Hitler but this was a total lie. The German Army liked Hitler because they surrendered their marvelous Prussian Honor Code, which was designed from the Word of God, to be under Hitler's rule. Prussian generals were predominately strong protestant Christians from the end of the 30 years war starting with the Teutonic Knights who were very strong with regard to Bible Doctrine. They then built up one of the most fantastic officer corps codes ever devised based on Bible Doctrine but they sold this out to Adolph Hitler. They sold out because they had something which Hitler also had and which ruined both of them; Arrogance! Dictatorships in any nation demonstrate that the Nation is Suffering from Arrogance. The dictator is always Arrogant and represents the principle that though he may have gained his Arrogance in one way and the

people in another the nation in general is Arrogant. Arrogance is the Basis for all degeneracy and a dictator cannot come into power unless the people have degenerated in their mental processes and overall activities. When a dictator exalts himself he is reflecting an attitude which could not exist in any national entity apart from a common malady with the people; Arrogance. The Interlocking System of Arrogance explains why people in a nation ALWAYS deserve the leadership which they get. When any nation is going to be destroyed it “Stands in Line” to be destroyed just as the Jews ‘Stood in Line’ to be destroyed by Hitler. This is something which inevitably happens to a people and as a result they then always seem to stand in line to be destroyed when it is going to occur. There is a category of national representative in the United States depicted by Carter, Clinton, Obama, Biden and Pelosi, which drive the democratic party and many others before them, which the people SEEM to resent. Yet the majority of the people in the United States vote in this type of representation which brings in Carter, Clinton, Obama, Biden and these others and the representation which has repeatedly made completely insane Pelosi speaker of the House of Representatives. Therefore, WHAT IS PRESENT in American representatives in government, AMERICANS DESERVE and while they can blame the representatives for ‘THEIR’ plans and policies the people must in fact collectively blame themselves.

The Interlocking System of Arrogance involves the historical principle that no nation has a leadership or administration which it does not deserve and if it does not deserve its leadership for some reason then that leadership will be removed. This is the explanation for Mr. Donald Trump being forced out of the presidency of this country in 2020. This is why there are passages in the Old Testament Scripture where the people are told to HUMBLE THEMSELVES. Believers are to consistently engage in repentance and develop Humility, meaning a change of thinking and attitudes from Arrogance to Humility. Inside Arrogance was the first sin committed by any creature, Satan’s original sin of [Pride](#). The first sin committed by a human creature was Rejection of [Authority](#) or Disobedience. Both are a result of the infiltration of Arrogance into the thinking. The rulership or administration of any nation, spanning the spectrum from democracy to dictatorship, always represents the attitude of the People of the nation. The dictator is no different in principle than the people in his country and Hitler was a dictator and represented an attitude in Germany, as did Stalin in Russia, as did Mao in China and Castro in Cuba and Khomeini in Iran and Carter, Clinton, Obama, Franklin Roosevelt, and many others in the United States of America with this nation leaning strongly toward socialistic democracy. Sooner or later the Arrogance and wickedness of those in any nation, here in the United States; the moslems, Pakistanis, communists, the leaders in the democrat party; will catch up with them. The Lord Jesus, The Christ controls human history and the Justice of God will right all wrongs one way or another. In Iran the Shah of Iran, although a dictator, did a great thing for his people and brought them out of the Stone Age with the development of their natural resources and if these were destroyed those people would end up starving to death and falling back into the stone age from whence they were dragged. This is in fact what the great Barry Goldwater suggested be done during the Iranian crisis of the 1970s. Before God disciplines a nation especially a client nation there is PRIDE or some other form of Arrogance which precedes national destruction under the 5<sup>th</sup> cycle of Divine Discipline. In fact before any kind of a fall there is always Arrogance underlying it. ([Prov 16:18](#))

There was a dictator in Nicaragua, an HONORABLE man, but his people were totally Arrogant and he was removed by the American CIA to make way for the Sandinista regime, a group totally saturated with Evil under agrarian reform which was a communist conspiracy, and this honorable man moved to Florida to make way for this Evil parallelism. The Shah of Iran was removed because he was TOO GOOD for the Iranians and he had done more for Iran than anyone since Cyrus the Great, but he did not reflect the attitude of his people, thus he had to go. No people ever have a leadership which they do not deserve. These were Honorable Men as DICTATORS and the Arrogance of the people required that they be removed so that their Arrogance could be manifest in their leadership. This is a consistent principle of history and The Lord Jesus, The Christ controls history and this principle demonstrates his perfect justice. No nation ever gets into a status it does not deserve including places like Vietnam and Cambodia which have been a centers for demon possession for a very long time. These, along with India and Africa, have been the demon possession centers for all of the 19<sup>th</sup> & 20<sup>th</sup> centuries. Believers must not ever succumb to and sympathize with the weeping and wailing of others for people in oppression throughout the world without understanding some doctrinal principles related to this situation. Everyone is sympathetic to starving, suffering people, even animals, but this does not change the facts of history and the fact is that no people have leadership which they do not deserve including Client nation United States of America. This is a general principle such that the attitude of the majority of the people is reflected in their leadership as is clearly demonstrated today by the total mental incompetence of Joseph Biden and the abject and obvious INSANITY of Nancy Pelosi and this again was clearly demonstrated by the total rejection of Mr. Donald Trump.

Those who control the politics in this nation form the real conspiracies which exist in this country including the realms of both Communism and Religion. The National Counsel of Churches is and has been for more than 50 years, the most conspiratorial and Evil oriented organization of people in the United States totally functioning under communist ideals. The most vicious conspiracies in any nation always involve religion or some other form of fanaticism. [Fanaticism](#) implies that the people involved have the ability to concentrate on one main idea and the fanatic with this ability to concentrate always wins over the person who does not have any such concentrating ability. Therefore, a people get what they deserve in history EXCEPT where a pivot of spiritually mature believers is large enough to overrule this principle and make GRACE the issue. This is how a client nation is preserved to have another chance and is what occurred with the Northern Kingdom of Israel, in the time of Elijah, being perpetuated for another 150 years, NOT because of Elijah who degenerated into Arrogance, but because there were 7000 mature believers in the pivot. ([1Kings 19:18](#)) People in a nation must humble themselves with regard to leadership and must retain Humility to drive out Arrogance and keep good leadership.

When nothing of the Grace provisions from God are applied in a nation then the Integrity of God expressed through the Justice of God from motivation by the Love of God must judge the nation according to the direction of the Righteousness of God. In this type of nation there is always extensive involvement in the Interlocking System of Arrogance which starts with Self



Justification and continues through Self Deception and then cycles back through all the Arrogance Skills. Considering this nation and its government saturated with Evil, the only thing that has preserved it to this point is (Heb) Jeshurun, the small remnant of mature believers because the pivot has declined and disappeared. This was the case in 1997 concerning the United States of America and its government and its population of pseudo Christianity and it has become far worse in the early 21<sup>st</sup> century. (Hosea 4:2) This has been the result of the overwhelming outside pressures of life being converted into inside pressures of universal stress in the souls of the citizens. When there is no pivot and no (Heb) Jeshurun as occurred in the Northern kingdom of Israel, there is nothing left in the nation to preserve it and this status inevitably results in overwhelming violence as has been being clearly demonstrated in the illegal and unconstitutional demonstration marches of the ‘black lives matter’ and ‘antifa’ revolutionary movements. (Hosea 4:3)

In the United States of America since the early 20th century the foreign policies have been designed to destroy any conservative establishment oriented government and to turn over such nations to communism. This is the ultimate of national Arrogance and stupidity. National Arrogance was about to destroy the United States of America in 1979 and it was also present in the 1960s with the rise and Arrogant functions of minorities with their concepts of Racism. This again occurred, but at a far greater level, in the early 21<sup>st</sup> century with racial riots, mass shootings, and idiotic governmental desires to include Illegal Aliens in society without any accountability. When people demand things for their race, gender or sexual preferences they make an issue of those things and they reject the system under which all must live and this becomes a point of Arrogance. This is liberalism, it is a ghastly Self Righteous Arrogance and these people want to CHANGE the function of the American way of life and by so doing to ultimately totally destroy the system and the nation.

### FAKE News – The Lie

AGAIN!! When the believer neglects or outright rejects Bible Doctrine he can easily be led astray into believing the LIE of Satan’s plan and policy and thereby enter into either the apostasy of Reversionism and / or the degeneracy of the Interlocking System of Arrogance and / or the antagonism of the Interlocking System of Antagonistic Emotional Hatred. The Interlocking System of Arrogance resists the gracious opportunities believers have been given to see personal problems along with national problems and start their own solutions based on the Bible Doctrine which has been given to help analyze and resolve these situations. Arrogance rejects Bible Doctrine and when in the Interlocking System of Arrogance individuals and groups can take true facts and convert them by distortion into false conclusions. In the United States of America the news media always does this since the 1960’s and is vastly worse today and they totally slant the news and even edit out the true facts. The Interlocking System of Arrogance is one mechanism which tries to destroy the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institution systems which are the basis for all stability in life and the logistics by which believers are supported so that they can choose to advance in the Spiritual Life.

There will be periods of historical disaster in client nations throughout the Church Age and there cannot be client nations to God without them facing historical and national disaster at

some time. When involvement in the Interlocking System of Arrogance, which forms degeneracy in the Spiritual Life, or involvement in the Interlocking System of Antagonistic Emotional Hatred, which forms antagonism toward the Plan of God, is added to the apostasy of Reversionistic rejection of Truth, this disaster is inevitable. In a client nation to God when the Laws of Divine Establishment, including freedom and its relationship to Authority, Uncoerced Volition, Privacy, Property and Life, is rejected by the people becoming anti Law Enforcement, anti Military and anti Free Enterprise, as has been occurring as a result of the functions of our government, then both believer and unbeliever accept the LIES of satanic policy because of having first rejected Truth. When the unbeliever rejects the Gospel he has rejected absolute Truth related to his eternal salvation and thus believes a Lie in fields related to it such as the many varied forms of religion, and this also contributes to national disaster. When the believer rejects or neglects Bible Doctrine then he comes to believe the Lie of satanic policy, such as being nice to moslems and communists, supporting social action and socialism, redistribution of wealth, welfare state functions, toleration of homosexuals, black lives matter more than others, etc. All these Lies which people come to believe under demon obsession or demon influence or in some cases demon possession, belong to the plan and policy of Satan, EVIL. No one ever believes the LIE until they have first rejected the Truth. Any time collectively the population of a nation enters into gross entanglement in the Interlocking System of Arrogance it becomes vulnerable to any of the aspects of Arrogance, therefore, there will be periods of disaster and this IS degeneracy which is the state of the collective souls of the people.

When people believe only the Lie, they may move from one category of Lie to another but the people never truly change in any way. Any observable change is only a superficial manifestation of the resulting hypocrisy. As long as people reject Truth they will continue believing the LIE and although there may be a sweeping storm of emotion in their lives this will eventually calm as a result of being drained by crisis. As a reversionist or functionary in the Interlocking System of Arrogance they may react to obvious injustice but such reaction does not change the pacifist, liberal, criminal, socialist, communist, revolutionist or radical because they still believe the underlying LIE from EVIL.

The greatest negative impact on Human History and one of the greatest tragedies in the United States, from before the 1960s on through today, is that believers continue to reject and resist Bible Doctrine. Bible Doctrine is Absolute Truth Divinely inspired and put down in writing and preserved for more than 3500 years of Human History. When anyone says No! No! No! to the Absolute Truth of Bible Doctrine he builds greater and greater Scar Tissue of the Soul in his Reversionistic functions. Each layer of Scar Tissue of the Soul increases his entanglement in Arrogance in the Stream of Consciousness of his Soul and also intensifies it as well. This combination of Scar Tissue of the Soul and Intensified Arrogance means that the believer inevitably begins to be able to ONLY believe the Lie. One of the greatest of these LIES, which has been perpetrated on this nation, is that social action is the answer to social problems. As a result many believers, instead of having an individual personal life before the Lord, get involved in social action systems and this results in many believers becoming bleeding heart, do good liberals. This is the reason in the 1970's so many problems in the central government of the United States of America appeared where there were a series of believers administering the

government and each had believed only the Lie from EVIL and had become victims of the trends toward social action and of their own Arrogance and [Sincerity](#). Many Christian or Religious organizations are simply designed for social action and the largest is most likely the National Council of Churches of America which is in fact a communist based social action organization and has been and still is systematically destroying this country. The parent organization of the world council of churches has been documented to support the most Evil systems of violence in the world while claiming and promoting pacifism. Social action is a vicious thing where man collectively, by his own efforts, tries to solve his own problems. Christianity however, always emphasizes the individual and says that the believer can do something for his country and for others but it must be done individually. The individual believer must start at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God and grow in grace through Perception, Cognition, Inculcation & Metabolization of Bible Doctrine until he reaches Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God where he, as a result of receiving his Super – Grace Escrow blessings from God, supports his nation through Blessing by Association and Historical Impact Blessing. This is how the Jeshurun maintain the failing nation. Because social action and systems of group therapy have become so popular today the unbeliever is very distracted from the necessity for Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God and subsequent spiritual growth.

### Universal Military Training

As a result of the prominence of liberal concepts from involvement in Arrogance, nations become saturated with principles from EVIL and enter into degeneracy. AGAIN!!! Man by mans efforts cannot solve his problems individually nor collectively, and thinking that he can is the Evil of Arrogance demonstrated by [Political Arrogance](#). This Arrogance in the client nation cancels the principles of freedom through military victory. The principle of Freedom through military victory is set aside or stomped on by the degeneracy of Political Arrogance which thereby destroys the ability of a people to defend their country through the military establishment. A nation can be a prosperous business nation like Ammon or the Hittite Empire and still lose everything through military defeat. The only prosperity that is safe and solid and continuous comes from Free Enterprise combined with Universal Military Training. Universal Military Training as well as the concept of the essential nature of military training is a biblical principle. Under the Laws of Divine Establishment pertaining to Divine Institution #4, Nationalism, all freedom comes through military victory. Human panaceas to the problems of life are anthropocentric, degenerate and Arrogant. When a nation is infected with liberal solutions to life's problems, degeneracy from the evil of the Interlocking System of Arrogance results. This is exactly what has occurred in the United States of America which has become an incredibly Arrogant nation. This results in inevitable divine discipline where Evil is brought against Evil which has been demonstrated clearly in the increase of home land terrorism (9/11/2001 and many others) and civil unrest (Mass Shootings, Black Lives Matter & Antifa revolutionary tactics). The United States of America has become an Evil, Arrogant nation and MUST be disciplined by God. Therefore, individual involvement in the Evil of the Interlocking System of Arrogance results in collective involvement in the same and this results in national degeneracy. Degeneracy of a nation means that only The Lord Jesus, The Christ can deliver such a prideful and Arrogant nation IF it can be salvaged. This is a pattern of the nations of mankind and has occurred throughout history all the way back over 4000 years. Such

deliverance, as in our current case, does not depend on the military but only on the size of the Pivot of Spiritually Mature Believers which today the United States is seriously lacking. At the writing of this 4<sup>th</sup> edition of the Interlocking System of Arrogance, the United States of America in 2024 does NOT have a pivot but only a remnant of [Jeshurun](#) believers left. When a nation is in a state of national Humility, all freedom in the nation comes through military victory. However, being in a state of National Arrogance sets aside the Laws of Divine Establishment so that freedom and deliverance must come directly from The Lord Jesus, The Christ who controls history. ([James 4:6](#), [1Pet 5:5](#)) Therefore, as an Arrogant client nation the United States of America today can only be delivered by the Lord, Jesus Christ, by the people, individually, entering into a relationship with him and then growing inside the Grace Plan of God and gaining knowledge of God and using EFFECTIVE prayer. In ancient times the horse was the best weapon for a nation's military, however whether in ancient times or current modern times, no victory can be accomplished without blessing from The Lord. The war horse can be equipped for battle, but the victory for the believer or the client nation is dependent on the Lord and when there is involvement in Arrogance the best military equipment is totally useless.

### Disaster Survival

God often also judges a nation by various forms of disaster and this is a category of judgment against Arrogance in the people. In time of disaster or pressure one cannot ever make an issue of self and survive. Arrogance emphasizes the importance of man whereas Bible Doctrine emphasizes the importance of God. Therefore, the believer must come to the place of thinking Bible Doctrine in order to overcome all pressure in life and survive disaster situations. If the pressure is not truly a real disaster then the people will not face their Arrogance and gain Humility but will continue to be involved in and even increase their saturation and entanglement within Arrogance. Natural disasters, such as hurricanes, volcanoes, tornadoes or earthquakes, and National Disasters such as economic disaster of depression or recession, civil unrest even to revolution or civil war, and military defeat can all be judgment from God for National Arrogance. Suppose these judgments are from God for the explicit purpose of bringing people back to sanity and Humility in a specific region of a nation. Then, the bleeding heart, do good liberal government comes along under extraordinary EVIL and says that they will take up the slack for all the losses people have experienced so that there is no sting from the judgment, this then results in NO check on that regional Arrogance. The United States of America has experienced this exact situation repeatedly during the disasters of hurricanes Sandy 2012 in New Jersey and Katrina 2005 in Louisiana and also the disastrous oil spill off the Padre Island in TX in 1979, and many others. These were unquestionably a part of the cycles of Divine Discipline for those parts of this nation and this has been and continues to be the way our government interferes with Divine Discipline for a region of this nation with its system of social action. In the Plan of God, the government which interferes with Divine Discipline is then eventually and inevitably destroyed and the whole nation goes down along with it. The only way the reality of this becomes clearly visible is when it is viewed from the standpoint of National Arrogance. Americans have become an extremely Arrogant people. Historically and based on biblical principles, when the people in a nation collectively become saturated with Arrogance then God MUST remove them from the Human Race in order to prevent the world

wide spread of their Arrogance, like a cancer, which can universally spread and thus ultimately destroy the whole race. God must remove nations saturated with Arrogance so that their Arrogance will not spread to other peoples of the world and cause them to reject opportunities for Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God. Just as Satan fell so nations fall for this reason. Many passages of scripture explain that by being a 'stiff-necked people' it is Arrogance which will bring their destruction.

The existence of a pivot of mature believers along with The Lord Jesus, The Christ controlling Human History overrules the failure of other believers and unbelievers in a nation. However, when the pivot declines, as it has today, with a waning of interest in God, Grace, Christ and Bible Doctrine, then the nation is subject to serious Divine Discipline. Believers must keep in mind that no matter how incompetent man (Joe Biden, John Fetterman) is The Lord Jesus, The Christ is totally competent and overrules all false motivation in Human History to bring about his will and execute his plan. This occurred with the Dutch and British going into South Africa where there was greed as motivation but The Lord looked down on this area and converted this into a great establishment system where missionary function flourished converting many of the indigenous blacks to Christianity. God can convert any and all human bungling or intentional deception in history to allow his perfect will and purpose to be accomplished. The believer must remember this when he tries to get onto a soap box and crusade for anything. If the spiritual leaders fail, as they have been, and IF the pivot of mature believers is still large enough, then The Lord Jesus, The Christ, who controls Human History, will preserve the client nation in historical crisis.

Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God is THE prerequisite to becoming a member of the pivot of believers who in maturity provide support for the nation and there must be a major part of the population in this status for the nation to be a client nation to God. One reason a Pivot of Mature Believers is needed is that the demand for power always exceeds the need for power in any area. The United States of America has power in government in the 3 branches and in local governments and because of distortions and abuses of this the governmental system has developed extensive, uncontrolled bureaucracies which usurp power. The authority in American government is based in only a relatively few individuals. The people in the nation constantly cry for recognition and special treatment and by this manifest complete Arrogance in their demands which are designed specifically to cause a change thus make an impact on the nation and its policies and functions. When Arrogance is added to this demand, violence and other unnecessary actions occur, as observed in the demonstrations and riots which have been occurring with increased frequency and greater violence since the 1960s and dramatically more so since 2008. In addition the excess of power existing beyond the demand results in conflicts for that power. Conflict for power always results in 2 destructive categories of activity in Human History. Self destruction of the nation as we see occurring here in the United States of America since 1946. Overt destruction of the nation from outside enemies and this has been coming to us since the 1960s. Self destruction of the nation results from a maximum number of bad decisions from positions of weakness and Arrogance in the struggle for power. Overt destruction is a failure to see the need for integrity and moral strength in the Judicial and Law Enforcement functions and especially in the maintenance of an effective military establishment



in the nation. This is clearly demonstrated today with judges becoming sociologists and the judicial system's failure to execute criminals and the most recent idiotic release of criminals as a result of the imagined dangers of the WUHAN FLU VIRUS infection. Law Enforcement is the only protection from enemies within the nation and all criminals are enemies of the nation. The Military is the only protection against enemies outside of the nation. Therefore because the United States of America is universally despised internationally and not respected by even the smallest nations today she NEEDS a very strong military establishment. The Biblical principle of Freedom comes from the idea that a nation must be functioning under Humility and not universally Arrogant and thus must have proper Law Enforcement and proper function of the Military Establishment. Both the overt and self destructive actions in the nation can only be averted by the existence of a large pivot of Mature Believers in the nation, which the United States does not possess today. The principle is and always will be where there is a Large Pivot there is blessing and where there is a small pivot there is destruction. In the REALITY of Human History there are no true tragedies because a person and a collective people are the result of their own decisions, good or bad. Legislation cannot ever be designed to control the Interlocking System of Arrogance which is incredibly devastating. Control of Arrogance must always be a matter of personal volition, authority orientation for people in general, and grace orientation through the perception of Bible doctrine for the believer specifically. NO NATION IS INVINCIBLE. No nation ever survives its saturation and complete entanglement in the Interlocking System of Arrogance and resultant collective degeneracy. It takes both Arrogant believers and Arrogant unbelievers to destroy any nation.

No one can have Arrogance involvement and properly handle a disaster. The correct principle to function under is to always be historically informed and never be doctrinally distracted. Stability in life especially in disaster demands cognizance without Arrogance. In any pressure or disaster situation the thinking of the believer must emphasize the fact that Jesus Christ controls Human History, personally and collectively. As part of the Royal Family of God the believer must remember to be informed but never be distracted by historically relevant information because the reality is that only Christ can change history. It is Arrogance for any believer to think he can even change any small aspect of history. In a believer's individual lifetime, when historical disaster threatens any of the categories of life, the believer must not become distracted by his occupation with the apostasy and human failure which has resulted in and perpetuates the problem. The believer should always be thankful for and rejoice in the fact that The Lord Jesus, The Christ controls Human History through the mature believers, which when numerous enough, will perpetuate the client nation. Preoccupation with disaster is demon obsession and the individual believer or collective population in general can become demon obsessed and in Arrogance become occupied with the pressures and problems in life instead of with Christ the solver of problems. Preoccupation with hovering disaster always is a distraction to the Christian Way of Life because it is only Arrogance which permits disaster to become a distraction. The darkness of preoccupation with disaster as a distraction for the believer from Bible Doctrine and the principle of Logistical Grace provision must be dispelled by residing in the light of the Word of God. Every form of hovering disaster is a threat to some principle in Logistical Grace but it is in the doctrinal principles of Logistical Grace where the believer will find absolute protection in disaster. Preoccupation with disaster starts with

Arrogance and produces more Arrogance in the form of selfcenteredness which branches into Self Pity and Self Righteousness. Negative Volition toward Bible Doctrine as a result of distraction causes the believer in the Royal Family of God to come to believe the LIE of the policies and plan of Satan rather than the Grace Plan of God and Arrogance is the major causative factor in this. The believer preoccupied with disaster also becomes not only distracted but also preoccupied with Human Viewpoint PSEUDO SOLUTIONS requiring his time, energy, money and everything about his whole being. This has repeatedly occurred in the past and is now occurring again in the United States because the nation has one obvious hovering disaster of an overwhelming national debt and a government of administrators who STEAL elections. Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ controls Human History and as goes the believer so goes the United States of America and the only thing which has kept hovering disaster from becoming historical catastrophe is the Jeshurun mature believers. However, the reality is that there is no longer a functional Pivot of Mature believers remaining and the nation is teetering on the brink of absolute total disaster.

### Arrogance & Revolution vs Humility

As has been explained over and over again, the cause of National Failure starts with Believers and spreads to everyone in the nation and ultimately Arrogance is the underlying issue. God has a plan for the lives of every believer after Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God and God is perfect therefore his plan is perfect. It is impossible for a Believer with his The Old Sin Nature to execute the Spiritual Life of the Church Age on his own power. God's plan demands that the Believer, when he fails, use the [Rebound Procedure](#) and keep moving forward in the plan by means of consistent Perception, Cognition, Incultation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine under the [Grace Apparatus for Perception](#) and [Filling of God the Holy Spirit](#). God has therefore provided the means of execution of the plan and these means are delineated in Bible Doctrine. Arrogant types also never think before they act and as a result they never really get ahead in life until they acquire the antithesis of Arrogance, [Humility](#). Doctrine CAN bring the believer to the point of Humility but this is not always the result. Many believers can learn Bible Doctrine and understand it clearly then stimulate Humility or Arrogance. In a declining society there will always be maximum Arrogance and when a society is declining and degenerates the balance of Arrogance is profoundly greater in the lower class of the people and the most Arrogant people are LOWER CLASS people not the wealthy. Relaxed Mental Attitude, self discipline, orientation to discipline and authority are signs of true Humility. There is more Arrogance among the poor than the rich because there is less self discipline and authority orientation among the lower classes. This does not mean that the poor cannot pull themselves up and make great leaders. Today the issue in the lower classes is the world owing something to them and seeing this attitude the bureaucracy of our government comes along with their bleeding heart do good liberal functions and agrees that this is correct thus FEEDING their Arrogance. Arrogance is most evidently found in the scum of societies and mobs and the ones who March in opposition to authority as we have seen in the 2012 "OCCUPY" groups and the Black Lives Matter and Antifa groups today. This is why revolutions occur and this low class Arrogance is the inevitable origin of revolution. Revolution is the [Impulsive Arrogance](#) of scum and lower classes or like in the French Revolution, the middle classes, and Revolution always starts from Arrogance and is always impulsive.

Conspiracies are a combination of both Arrogance and a loss of freedom. As a rejection of authority, conspiracy is Arrogance and this Arrogance as a loss of freedom will be replaced by 1 or more of 5 things:

- Anarchy
- Power Struggles
- Revolution
- Violence
- Many aspects of Evil

### Rejection of the Laws of Divine Establishment

A Young man marries his teenage sweetheart right out of high school then he gets a movie contract and becomes famous. Once he becomes famous and the babes with more sophistication start flattering him he immediately dumps his high school sweetheart wife. The nation under the Laws of Divine Establishment functions made him successful and his wife and sweetheart stood by while he as an Arrogant idiot without talent kept trying but once he became successful he drops her. This same pattern exists in every field and profession today. The system in the military of Officer Efficiency Ratings is totally based on Evil and does not promote leadership ability in any way for officers. This is still a system and the definition for success is still here but it requires incredibly great patience in order to move ahead and much more character to do so than if the system functioned properly and focused on leadership. Men who are persistent and patient in this system will be shocked when they are the only ones prepared in unusual ways for war. This same thing occurs in the Free Enterprise system today with regard to young executives and their promotion. The system may be bad but if one is persistent and determined he can still succeed.

The system which is comprised of the full structure of the Laws of Divine Establishment is still to be found in:

- Marriage
- Honorable function of Law Enforcement
- Honorable function of military
- and other areas as well

The norms and standards are still there but this is a difficult time and the person who has character as an unbeliever or Bible Doctrine as believer will make it if they are persistent. This system is still in every part of life but the problem is that when people reach the top of their profession they reject the system and this is one form of Arrogance which is very destructive. Today when a man becomes king or president or a legislator he thinks he is above the law while these are the ones who should be stringently for the law more than anyone else but in order for this to occur they must be minus Arrogance.

Arrogance makes the individual have a greater opinion of self than he has any right to. The counter balancing system for Arrogance of having an objective sense of humor is gone because good humor is now replaced by vulgarity and suppressed by political correctness and hypersensitivity. Vulgarity is poor humor and is the easiest to produce and requires no

thinking or ability at all. The unbeliever has only his sense of humor to level himself off in this system of Arrogance. The believer has the whole structure of Bible Doctrine to keep him in line if he is willing to accept and apply it. Very often a good sense of humor is all that can offset discouragement with the historical or national situation when degeneracy is prevalent. The younger generation today is much more prone to discouragement than the World War II generation and there was much more then than now to be discouraged about. The people in general have lost track of good humor and the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions orientation today. In addition there is less Bible Doctrine taught today than ever before therefore both the believer and unbeliever find themselves at a distinct disadvantage when trying to cope with the rampant national degeneracy.

In the United States there has been and continues to be the attempt at total destruction of the Divine Institutions and the Laws of Divine Establishment including Freedom, Privacy and Property by criminality and by Governmental interference including the imposition of immoral and illegal taxation and arbitrary unconstitutional legislation. Loss of Freedom, as it has been and continued to be occurring, inevitably results in loss of national strength and is a result of rejection of both the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions along with Bible Doctrine. Divine punishment for a nation in this status quo in the Old Testament Scripture times took the form of Drought and Weather Difficulties and today this country has been having the strangest weather patterns ever. Spiritual Freedom is what is given to the believer by God to execute His Plan, Will and Purpose for his life and it is systematically being lost as a result of his Negative Volition toward Bible Doctrine and the Plan of God. Without spiritual freedom there can be NO temporal freedom since the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions will have also been destroyed. Therefore, when the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions have been universally rejected there is always destruction of national freedom. Freedom is DEFINED in the Laws of Divine Establishment for both believer and unbeliever and also in the [Royal Family Honor Code](#), which is exclusively for the believer. Freedom is defined and related to and cannot be divorced from privacy and property and must function under the umbrella of authority. In the United States of America in the 21<sup>st</sup> century freedoms have been and continue to be taken from the people slowly, insidiously, gradually and surely by the functions of a federal government saturated with EVIL. At every turn privacy is violated and property is confiscated, with the authority of government being totally abusive in Arrogance clearly demonstrated in the functions of each and ever bureaucracy.

The Laws of Divine Establishment sponsor freedom as the basic function of the Human Race and never divorce freedom from authority, privacy or property. When one seeks in any way to destroy authority, privacy or property that one is opposed to freedom and has given support to tyranny. Freedom cannot exist without a system of delegated authority nor without privacy or property. For many decades, which is particularly obvious today, the American government has continually tried to destroy freedom by infringing on property and privacy in many areas of life. The deprecation of the police officer and the people being permitted to call them pigs as they did in the 60s is part of this and based in EVIL. The people so involved committed the worst crimes imaginable in the destruction of their own freedom. These idiotic people could not do these things and claim police brutality were it not for their living in the atmosphere of

freedom, however, in the course of saying and doing such things they were and are in fact destroying the system which allows them to engage in this idiotic behavior. In the Laws of Divine Establishment there is also the concept that profit is a legitimate system and motivation for life. This is the underlying basis for Free Enterprise as a legitimate economic system. For the federal government to continually try to destroy profit systems is totally based in EVIL and based on this fact alone the federal government has been for many decades totally ANTI-GOD. The Laws of Divine Establishment allow people to live and let live under privacy. Privacy is the environment for the function of freedom and possession of property and is the legitimate system of possession under freedom and everyone has the right to own whatever property he may desire and can afford to legitimately possess. Both Logistical Grace and Super – Grace blessings are very often related to property as part of the Laws of Divine Establishment system and includes ownership of all types of tangible things. In other words under freedom the individual has a perfect right to his things as his own property as long as he has not acquired them by violating some other persons property or privacy and is not a criminal.

### Liberalism & National Arrogance

Since World War II the people of the United States of America have been degenerating in thought as individuals and as a nation. Manifest destiny has become degeneration in this time period. The prime example is the liberal Pseudo Intellectual who is completely divorced from reality and always cries peace when there can be no peace. The American people have lost perspective as a nation and priorities as individuals in the nation. They have constantly and consistently allowed national integrity and freedom to be compromised in every way possible and, in fact, have done everything possible to totally destroy it. Political representatives cannot be totally blamed for this since they reflect the majority thinking of those who vote them into office. Always remember the principle that NO nation ever has a leadership or administration that it does not deserve. It was the United States of America which rearmed Russia in WWII and it is the United States of America which had caused at least 2/3 of the people of the earth to enter into the slavery of communism since at least Franklin Roosevelt was in office. Americans have totally lost sight of the fact that all freedom comes from military victory and freedom has always been purchased by the blood of those in military service just as Salvation is purchased by the ‘blood’ (the Substitutionary Spiritual Death) of The Lord Jesus, The Christ on the cross. The believer must remember that Freedom is a principle of Bible Doctrine and the invention of God in order that the Human Race can have the option to fulfill its purpose in creation and continue its destiny until the Lord is finished with human history. There is no freedom in China, Russia, Cuba or any nation under islam and this is by the design of Evil, the System of Satan. It is often correct to blame politicians and their policies of liberalism for the destruction of freedom as they continue to push this nation into socialism, which is tyranny and the first stage of destroying any nation. Socialism is based totally on Evil with its welfare state functions and the inevitable rise of Self Righteousness. The underlying idea is to attempt to improve man’s environment by interference with industry and confiscation of property as evident in any graduated taxation system above a straight 10% or 15% and many more such functions from EVIL.

Liberalism produces Arrogance and assumes the prerogatives of God and thereby destroys



freedom with the ploy of [Equality](#). This MYTHICAL Equality is the greatest enemy of freedom and these 2 principles cannot coexist. Freedom and Equality cannot coexist because they are mutually exclusive. People today have been propagandized and brainwashed to think that equality must replace freedom and the individual must surrender his freedoms for the betterment of the majority of people in society. Equality is simply a system which destroys Freedom and the necessity for taking responsibility for all personal decisions. It is a system of Arrogance for those who want instant success without the process of gaining it by working for it in any area of life. Equality is a ploy used by communism and socialism and brings on eventual slavery and tyranny whereas freedom brings with it the uncoerced use of volition to allow one to go as high or LOW as he may WANT to go in life. This is also reality in the spiritual realm where after Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God, the only true point of equality in human existence, the attitude of the individual believer toward Bible Doctrine determines his direction and level of advancement in the Spiritual Life. With consistent Positive Volition toward Bible Doctrine he can move to [Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God](#) and receive phenomenal escrow blessing in time and for eternity. With Negative Volition toward Bible Doctrine he can move into [Reversionism](#) and eventually reach the ultimate in Divine Discipline, the [Sin Unto Death](#), where he is taken out of this world in total misery, totally useless to God. (The individual EXISTS in this life for the purpose of God in resolution of the Angelic Conflict and demonstration that his character is indivisible therefore, if the individual believer is of no use in this endeavor he is summarily removed from this life.) In eternity, after the Judgment Seat of The Lord Jesus, The Christ, the evaluation setting for all believers in this dispensation of the Church Age, there will be incredible variations in the Status Quo of believers because there is no EQUALITY on earth nor is there to be EQUALITY in heaven. Equality is a MYTH and the variations that exist in life under freedom are based on decisions made from the use of personal volition by the individual.

Freedom demands that no government have absolute power ONLY LIMITED DELEGATED POWER. Limited Delegated power means there will be responsibility in government where as absolute power corrupts and makes government irresponsible. So it can be seen in the government of the United States of America in this 21<sup>st</sup> century. The American government has been infected by the liberal insanity of Marxist socialism, welfare functions with the inevitable resultant destruction of human self determination. The basis for prosperity is and has always been Free Enterprise in business without government control but the government of the United States has constantly tried to usurp the function of business throughout the nation. Some of the manifestations of this insanity include the attitudes with regard to illegal aliens, southern border security and islam invading this nation today. In addition there has been a dramatic decline in the size and preparedness of the military in all areas. As a direct result of government interference in domestic business there has been a decline to the point of complete inability of the United States to produce and maintain the logistics needed for a strong military. There has been also the rise of cults, holy rollers and Marxism (black lives matter and antifa) along with the government interference with business. In addition there are the constant attempts, some successful and some failing, at legislation restricting Gun ownership and possession in all forms which ultimately makes it easier for criminals to themselves acquire guns and commit crimes and for the government to totally and tyrannically control the people.

In the realm of “gun control” there is the rise of the debaters technique where people use terms and concepts such as the “Saturday night special” and “assault weapons” to cause emotional, irrational responses in the public to promote the idea that GUNS are bad and the cause of crime. There is also rampant disrespect for police officers and insanity from the courts in their judgments which include such things as recognition of homosexual marriage and transgender rights in institutions and in addition the early release of criminals who should have been executed in the first place. As a result of all this and more in this nation today the whole economic system is collapsing with a current federal national deficit of some 30 TRILLION dollars so that the nation stands on the brink of destruction economically and militarily and as a result of the idiocy of the present domestic and foreign policies. The United States of America is in grave danger of and has actually already entered into minor revolutions with greater revolutions on the horizon and this nation is in fact in terrible times.

The down trends in history and difficulties found in any nation are explained by the functions of the individuals who reject the Absolute Truth of the Laws of Divine Establishment, the Divine Institutions and the believers who reject properly presented Bible Doctrine. This is why the people are overtaxed and overburdened and have lost Free Enterprise along with the status of America being the greatest nation on earth. As a result the nation is vulnerable to and in fact is being systematically destroyed by communism and islam. At the same time it is destroying its friends as a result of having no effective foreign policies all while destroying itself internally because of a lack of effective domestic policies. The administration today by constantly overruling logical military functions, gives away to enemies the physical means by which they can destroy the American military. This is just the same as before World War II when America sent scrap metal to Japan loading it onto ships in San Pedro harbor and it was later used to kill Americans. Mr. Nixon gave away the inertial guidance system for controlling missiles, computers innovations and knowledge in every tactical and strategic area to the Russians and this was total insanity. Liberal religious organizations, like the National and World Council of Churches, believes this is a great thing and that there will be peace in the world as a result of giving away the means for the self defense of this nation. People operate this way because of the development of Black out of the Soul and Scar Tissue of the Soul from falling through the stages of [Reversionism](#) and deep entanglement in the Interlocking System of Arrogance. No matter how smart or how great the talent and ability these people may have, they will only believe the LIE from Evil because of residing in the Cosmic Dynaspheres. They distort Absolute Truth to form false concepts and this is the basic reason there is so much trouble in this world. The majority of people in the United States are hardened in their souls from maximum [Scar Tissue of the Soul](#) including the minorities, illegals, the congress including the senate and the judicial representatives and except for very rare historical instances the president of the United States and they believe ONLY LIES. Mr. Trump almost salvaged the presidency from this failing.

Authority is abused by a central or federal government saying that if one has used his freedom to accumulate much personal property this is wrong. In reality, individuals possessing great amounts of property including financial wealth demonstrate that they have used freedom properly. The government is designed and supposed to guarantee the SECURITY of that

property TO THOSE WHO HAVE EARNED IT. The big objective of all bleeding heart, do good liberals is to take the property from the wealthy and give it to the downtrodden poor scum of society. This was Robin Hood, Friar Tuck and Little John and they were in fact criminals, not heroes. Even Jesus has said that we would have the poor with us always since some people in societies are never motivated to work and accumulate property but, instead, they just want to be critical of those who have it. These poor, pathetic, worthless critics are saturated with Arrogance because they see others pass them by in life. They are highly competitive although very inefficient and as a result of lacking self discipline they never advance to any significant level in life. Therefore, they spend their time complaining about those who do and try to find ways to confiscate or steal the property these successful others have accumulated by their hard work or intelligent application of the principles of Free Enterprise. This is the function of the bureaucracies in the American government. In this nation, the most stable organizations are focused on Free Enterprise. Free Enterprise is the greatest and most stable thing mankind has ever had and the American federal government is constantly stealing, through illegitimate taxation and legislation, from all citizens and businesses thereby subverting this stability. Corporate tax is stealing, graduated income tax is stealing, taxes on savings and retirement is stealing and a straight percentage income tax is the only fair system since it does not destroy the incentive for advancement in life.

The bureaucracies of the government of the United States of America such as in OSHA, BATFE, EPA and ALL the others are totally saturated with Arrogance and liberal and very often feminist and they set standards and rules and play God with the freedoms of the people in this nation, individually and as groups and businesses. They accuse based on “rule” violation on the one hand but defend their positions based on liberal anti-establishment legalism on the other. They crack down on industry for rule breaking and as a result they destroy it and along with it, the prosperity of the entire nation. All bureaucracies in general are a terrible national disaster and demonstrate a decline in a country because degeneracy of the nation sets in through bureaucracies which are not responsible to anyone. Bureaucracies are a system of complete Arrogance and being not responsible to the people or government they are systems of overt tyranny. Liberalism is based on Evil, the Satanic policy of ruling this world, total Arrogance and is blasphemous against the Integrity of God. The Integrity of God tells us that Legislation must come from duly elected governmental representatives and is to be against criminality and specifically designed to preserve freedom but it must never be a system of appointment and rule setting outside of law which would inevitably outlaw any system of courage or Free Enterprise and this is what the United States government has constantly done. Men of courage and integrity and honor who put all that they have on the line to build a business into a conglomerate even into a monopoly, which is, in fact, a great establishment organization, should never be penalized for this courage and integrity with corporate or business taxation. All of the greatness and prosperity of this nation has come from capitalism and Free Enterprise and none has ever come from liberalism nor EVER from politicians. The federal governments constantly steals from the people, this overtly occurred by removing the nation from the gold standard backing for currency and then by printing money which has no value and represents nothing of value, both which are based on EVIL, dishonest, even criminal. The proper function of government is not to ever seek to destroy or take over any business enterprise because it is

successful or to support it when it is failing. The government is supposed to protect the rights of business and their property and freedoms in order that they can go on and on, as far as possible under a free economy or fail completely and collapse from not being able to handle better organized competition. ONLY when there is dishonesty in business should the government crack down on it. A properly functioning government does not link with organized crime, as our government has, and leaders must never open doors for criminals, such as the Middle Eastern or African terrorist groups or the resident labor unions, all headed by criminals. All criminal syndicates in the world are supported directly or indirectly by the United States of America and this similarly applies to the communists of the world even islam, all whose primary objective ironically it to destroy this nation.

### **Mass Arrogance**

When a people become Arrogant it is clearly demonstrated by the acceptance of things which are anti-establishment such as homosexuality, transgender individuals, live ins vs marriage, legalized 'recreational' drugs, interference with the freedom, privacy and property of lawful citizens and businesses, and many more factors. There also arise great masses of people who are totally lazy and refuse to work making demands for government support and subsidies. The people who have authority inevitably become irresponsible because of being intimidated by these groups. This is mass Arrogance. Only Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul and the return of the national function under the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions can act as a catharsis as well as insulation against this Arrogance. The United States of America is today faced with its total national failure as a result of total locked in mass national Arrogance. The working man demands greater and greater wages which they very often are getting and most certainly do not deserve. This occurs even to the extent of their salaries being greater than that of professionally trained individuals despite the fact that the professional has to sacrifice and prepare and work hard to attain and keep his position. When this occurs there is mass Arrogance in the land and this results from the working man overestimating his own worth in terms of the functions of the Laws of Divine Establishment. When the working man has a greater income than a college professor or doctor or engineer or a company or field grade officer in the military there is something seriously wrong in the nation. God's judgment is then seen in the form of economic recession or depression. In the United States of America the government has been holding off depression by false systems of manipulation of the currency, therefore, as a result of this, in order to correct this Status Quo, God is going to have to override the government and thereby bring the nation roughly and forcefully back to its senses. When the United States of America finally has its coming inevitable economic depression it will be horrendous.

When a brick layer makes more than the dean of a college there is Arrogance in the nation. Laborers can be very content in doing great work and have great happiness as believer or unbeliever under the Laws of Divine Establishment but in this nation labor has been brainwashed to think that having a large income is the only road to happiness and a fat bank account is the only indicator of success. This nation has universal mass Arrogance today and this is demonstrated in the widespread overestimation of one's worth. This can be observed in all areas of society not just labor, it occurs also with the lawyer or doctor who charges tens of

thousands of dollars for their services when they should be charging much less in order to serve the public better. All individuals at all levels have overestimated themselves almost out of existence, to the point that God cannot afford to keep us in this world. National Arrogance in the United States has even overestimated the value of this nation out of the competition in world markets. In the United States of America today it costs \$7-\$10 to ship a small package across the country while similar materials can be purchased from China or India with little no shipping costs at all, despite these items also having to be shipped in this country when they arrive here. Americans can count on the fact that although America may destroy itself with mass Arrogance, the world will continue on without it and as a nation it will be totally forgotten by history. Remember, there is no biblical reference to the United States of America in the book of Revelation! People, very often in Arrogance, use other people for their personal advantage and then drop them immediately from memory and so will it be that no one will remember the United States of America since, historically speaking, America is a very young nation. American is at this time no longer the greatest nation in the world but is still the youngest nation but it is also the most Arrogant and stupid nation of history because of pseudo National PRIDE. Be assured, the Plan of God rolls right on despite all the Arrogance of the individual unbeliever, immature or mature believer or any nation involved in mass Arrogance.

Malfunction of the [Faith Rest Drill \(5 stages\)](#) produces Arrogance which includes the worst of all Mental Attitude Sins and it makes weak people out of strong people. With this comes [Selfcenteredness](#) which attaches erroneous importance to the individual who engages in it. Malfunction of Faith Rest results in rejection of duly constituted authority and as a result the individual becomes his own authority, even when in an organization or group. In American society this is what has been done to Law Enforcement since the 1970's by the people and courts saying that the average citizen, especially the criminal, is much more important than the police officer. Thus in America when a criminal is involved in a crime Law Enforcement has to be extremely careful to observe the 'RIGHTS' of the criminal, and the people and judicial system need to be nice to them because the villain is not the criminal who is lying, stealing, raping, murdering, and cheating it is the honorable police officer who is at fault. The FACT of life is that the criminal as such PUTS HIMSELF OUTSIDE OF THE SYSTEM OF RIGHTS IN ORDER TO ENGAGE IN CRIME THEREFORE DOES NOT HAVE ANY RIGHTS AT ALL EXCEPT THE ASSUMPTION OF INNOCENCE UNTIL PROVED GUILTY. Because occasionally some innocent person is erroneously arrested or convicted the American judicial system requires that everyone must now be nice to all criminals and judiciously recognize their rights. This is TOTALLY irrational and completely idiotic but above all this is MASS Arrogance. Every large city and even many small cities in the nation have suffered since the 1970's from mass Arrogance aided by the media and the false reporting of crime and glorification of criminals. The reality is that by requiring police and courts to cater to the criminal and his "rights" this system has turned these human beings into animals and allowed them to function as animals.

The mass Arrogance in a society in time of disaster goes instantly into mass hysteria. This has been clearly demonstrated by the incredible inordinate FEAR instilled in the population by the false and exaggerated media reporting related to the mortality rate caused by the Wuhan CCP Virus in 2020. In disaster those who have run down the police and spit on them and ridiculed



them invariably will shout “HELP POLICE”. The Authority which is rejected and destroyed in Arrogance is authority unavailable under disaster conditions and this status in the United States is far beyond how bad this was in 1980 at the time of these lessons being taught. The police should be honored since they are the last stand for protecting life, freedom, privacy and property and the judicial and governmental systems MUST allow the police system to handle its own failures and never should the public or the courts be involved especially using civilian oversight. The police system must be allowed to regulate themselves so as to maintain good professional standards similar to how the military must also regulate itself. If there is failure for Law Enforcement to regulate themselves properly then those in police authority, the chiefs and captains, MUST be relieved and prosecuted. Also, there should never be any category of “minority” individuals as a majority in any police department. In the American system of Law Enforcement even the lowly patrolman on the beat is an OFFICER and should be respected and treated like one and when they get out of line the Law Enforcement system should courts martial them just like the military. One of the absolute worst and in fact most tragic things involved in regulation of police function is a civilian oversight or review board inevitably made up of goofy bleeding heart do good liberals. In addition an incomprehensible situation today in Law Enforcement is the unionization of the police so that the criminals in the union hierarchy now control the police and enforce the laws. The same officer who is respected, honored and trained in normal times, in time of disaster will be there to help. However, under the public review system present today as a result of the Arrogance of the involved people being beyond comprehension, when disaster occurs the police will certainly ignore the pleas for help by the people. This occurred in 2020 with the cry by the revolutionary protesters of the black lives matter and antifa movements to disband the police and it resulted in over 100 officers resigning in the Seattle Police Department alone with the result that those in charge were now scrambling around not knowing what to do without sufficient officers on duty. American society has lost its respect for authority and has allowed for the training of its children by the most insane people in the world, liberals. This category of individual is in total divorcement from reality, which thereby causes the children also to lose respect for authority.

This is today, in the United States of America, Mass Arrogance and the only solution is found in Absolute Truth in the form of Bible Doctrine for the believer or proper understanding of and function under the Laws of Divine Establishment and the Divine Institutions by everyone. The only way to get the Metabolized Bible Doctrine into the Stream of Consciousness of one’s Soul is through Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God. Therefore, the only answer to mass Arrogance is a spiritual solution composed of Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God and Temporal Adjustment to the Justice of God by the consistent Perception, Cognition, Inculcation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine or focus on and orientation to the Divine Institutions and the Laws of Divine Establishment.

### Real Degeneracy & Mass Arrogance

Real degeneracy is not sexual in nature nor does it involve murder or other heinous acts but REAL degeneracy is MASS Arrogance. It is the news reporter or news group overestimating their power and setting themselves up as God trying to manipulate the outcomes in the nation through distorted reporting rather than reporting the FACTS of incidents in the society. It is

the mass of people in the nation overestimating their worth and value apart from the Principles of the Word of God. This is the underlying principle of socialism which has opened the way for communism to conquer this country. It is amazing how many people accept this as the correct or proper way of life and do not recognize that the only difference between communism and socialism is simply the communist application of violence to control the population. As time passes in our nation, more and more violence or threats of it are used erroneously by government to intimidate and control the people by the instituting of illegitimate legislation. A prime example is the threatening of the population with removal of government benefits or incarceration if there is lack of compliance with the unconstitutional “RULES” regarding the false attempts to contain the spread of the Wuhan CCP Virus of 2020. Just before total violence is to be used to control the people and when a government is going to go the way of communism they first intimidate then confiscate. Then when that runs out and becomes ineffective they use violence to remove dissidents. The major problem among the people in free societies today is Arrogance in the “have-nots” who are those who feel they have been deprived of the “better things” in life. This is vicious and there is absolutely no reason people should ever think they should have a better position in life than they have earned on their own initiative. People should never have a guaranteed income from the government or from any industry under labor union demands, demanding better living conditions just because they have been raised in a ghetto all their life and as a result refuse to work for their livelihood. The Arrogance from liberal theology along with the interaction with the EVIL of socialism has driven these concepts deeply into the thinking of the people of this nation. The whole process of American education has been distorted into a system of brainwashing from liberalism and socialism. It is liberalism which says man is the most important thing in human history. Socialism says that the individual is important and because of that he should not have to work for a living if he does not want to and the state should provide a living for him. However, communism, which is the ultimate end game of socialism, says the individual is very important but only as a deceit and in that system they exploit Arrogance in individuals and their system turns men back to animals. Communism says the individual is important as long as he can work according to the requirements of the state and when he cannot or does not comply with state developed rules they are to be either executed or forced to work until they die in labor camps. Communism has exploited American Arrogance from Franklin Roosevelt to present day with incredible success and for more than 100 years the plan for the conquest of America has been constantly advancing.

Degeneracy is Arrogance which begins with the [Motivational Arrogance](#) of [Mental Attitude Arrogance](#) and Degeneration is the overt manifestation of this Mental Attitude. This is clearly demonstrated in our recent history by the people who would vote for or accept socialized medicine on the basis of having very little money to pay for medical care. This IS the Arrogant selfcenteredness of the people in this country today. Individuals must be free to choose their own doctors and most people do not appreciate what a doctor in any field must endure to complete his education and reach his goal. In all cases, Free Enterprise medicine means quality medicine but many would prefer to sell out for socialized medicine and accept the poorer quality free service all the while destroying the nation. The true fact is that socialized medicine can, in itself, destroy a nation in as little as one (1) generation. It is far

better to have freedom and medical bills which need to be paid in installments than have FREE medical care.

The believer involved in Arrogant self centered suspicion transfers his own motivation to those who are innocent in his periphery. The perfect illustration of this were the Prosecutors of the Watergate Incident who transferred to innocent people their own selfcenteredness, Arrogance and motivation and were simply out to destroy anyone and everyone related to Richard Nixon. This is again demonstrated in current times in the special investigations first by Mr. Mueller concerning President Donald Trump and later in the FBI raids on his residence and subsequent prosecutions while allowing Joe Biden and his son to go on without investigation and unpunished for their corruption. The press was out to ostracize Mr. Nixon because he prosecuted Elger Hiss who was a hero of the Press but a blatant communist and traitor to the United States of America. They finally got Nixon and when they did, everyone associated with Nixon no matter how innocent, were also prosecuted. This is exemplified by the situation of a personal friend of Col. R. B. Thieme Jr., Pastor of Berachah Church, who paid over 250,000 dollars in lawyer fees to clear his own name. However, the accusations, although he was eventually cleared of all of them, ruined his political career. The evil of Watergate was incredible and the law was twisted and distorted and the guilty went free and the innocent were destroyed. This is what always occurs where Arrogant self centered suspicion transfers their own motivation to the innocent. This is the travesty of the media and democratic party opposing every good thing Mr. Trump had tried to accomplish for this nation and now 3 years later they are attempting to duplicate what he actually was accomplishing but cannot.

When there are a large number of people functioning under the Interlocking System of Arrogance in society it results in the general public being vicious and degenerate as a part of Mass Arrogance. In the United States of America today there is killing of domestic animals for “FUN” without reason. The degeneracy and depravity of people, therefore, results in suffering in the animal kingdom without their understanding why and without any recourse. Domestic Animals have no ability to understand cruelty, neglect, abuse and rejection by their masters to whom they give the utmost loyalty, love and devotion. The Interlocking System of Arrogance effects all social life, including marriage as an institution and every organization in life. When in the Interlocking System of Arrogance the [Faith Rest Drill \(5 stages\)](#) malfunctions in every stage. The Interlocking System of Arrogance not only loses control of all situations and circumstances but also of self so that individuals, whether in Reversionism or any level of spiritual growth even up to [Advanced Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God](#), reacts in the same way. Therefore, one cannot tell the difference between a spiritually mature believer or Reversionist when they are under the influence of the Interlocking System of Arrogance. There is in fact no way to even tell if the person is a believer or an unbeliever. The Interlocking System of Arrogance also destroys capacity for life and happiness. The believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God can have already received the 5 immediate categories of the Super – Grace blessing package, including great wealth and promotion and social life and still be completely miserable without capacity to enjoy any of these because of his involvement in the Interlocking System of Arrogance. When this occurs as a generalized condition in the population of a nation, it is doomed.

One reason for such degeneracy today is mass Arrogance related to the vanity of people in the form of the pseudo racial issues, which, in the United States of America, cannot and do not really exist. They are promoting the idea that “We are as good as you”, when no one has said they are better than anyone else in the first place. This is the “black lives matter” group of revolutionists. The people who think they have a right to the wealth someone else has accumulated through great planning and effort, these people are totally under the influence of EVIL and involved in Mass Arrogance. The idea in the 80s that the oil companies need to share their wealth with the people was insanity and EVIL and pure Arrogance. The principle of reality is, if you don’t want to work what right do you have to demand from anyone or any business a piece of the profits. Consider the Curse which the Lord put on Adam in the Garden after his Fall ([Gen 3:17-19](#)) where man is to work at physical labor for the sustaining of his life until he dies. If a person won’t scrub floors for 10c per hour he has no right to anything except to starve to death or die of exposure. The downtrodden are Arrogant and are those who won’t work for a living but will steal for a living to make a dollar, these are ones who are saturated with Arrogance. One individual’s failure, even the greatest of men, does not and cannot hinder the Plan of God nor does it destroy a nation. Neither will one individual’s successes, EVEN A TRULY GREAT MAN, help the Plan of God nor can it save a failing nation. However, the United States of America is today faced with National failure and National locked in Mass Arrogance and in the Plan of God is almost certainly slated for imminent destruction as a direct result of National Arrogance.

### **Freedom & National Arrogance**

Again, Freedom is a principle of Bible Doctrine and the invention of God so that the Human Race can fulfill its divine purpose and destiny in the resolution of the Angelic Conflict. Freedom must be understood in terms of the sanctity of Life, Volition, Privacy and Property under legitimate delegated Authority. In the United States today there is a conflict of vision between what the bible says; individuals must take responsibility for their own decisions; and what the liberal says; the government must make all decisions for the people. This eventuates in freedom being given away by those who acquiesce to government demands for security and therefore law abiding citizens become criminals as a result of choosing for themselves. This destroys the major Issue for which man was put on this earth that being the Freedom to Choose in all aspects of Life, especially for or against the Plan of God and The Lord Jesus, The Christ and subsequently the Christian Way of Life. The only solution to the development of this system of tyranny in this United States of Socialism with its Laws designed to appease 1% of the population, with activism and overdeveloped compassion is the enlargement of the Pivot of Mature Believers developed ONLY by execution of the Protocol Plan of God in the Sophisticated Spiritual Life.

Freedom has as its basis privacy, property and an umbrella of divinely delegated and properly functioning authority. Antithetically, equality is a system for conquest leading to the development of tyranny. Believers can choose to function to advance in the Spiritual Life by consistent Perception, Cognition, Incultation & Metabolization of Bible Doctrine or be under Negative Volition to Bible Doctrine and enter Reversionism. This can only take place IF people

possess freedom. There is, therefore, as a result of true freedom in both time and eternity, great inequality on earth and will also be in eternal heaven. Equality is a mechanism used to destroy freedom and is a myth while freedom is a reality as an invention of God to demonstrate his position in the Angelic Conflict as superior and correct. As a client nation to God, the United States of America, and any nation in reality, by ignoring this fact puts that nation on the agenda for great national crisis and disaster. The basis for American prosperity is and always has been big business under Free Enterprise, and not government control of business. Some of the manifestations of this national insanity include:

- ✧ Graduated Income tax not 10% or 15% for every citizen.
- ✧ Evil Foreign policy as the attitude toward Rhodesia and South Africa in the 70's
- ✧ Evil Appeasing Attitude toward China, Russia, Cuba, and all Arabic Countries
- ✧ Evil Critical Attitude toward ISRAEL especially under Obama
- ✧ Weakness toward Iran
- ✧ Weakness with regard to criminals and capital punishment
- ✧ Weakness with regard to illegal aliens and southern border security
- ✧ Weakness with regard to all countries supporting terrorism
- ✧ Evil Functions of OSHA, EPA BATFE and all Bureaucracies in general
- ✧ Liberal Motivated Decline of the military
- ✧ Cancellation of the B1 Bomber under Carter
- ✧ Evil use of the military for social experiments with homosexuals and females in combat
- ✧ The rise and toleration of religious cults
- ✧ The rise of holy rollers and the "tongues" movement in Christianity
- ✧ ALL restrictive Gun legislation
- ✧ The EVIL INSANE derogatory attitude toward police and military
- ✧ Allowing an illegal president to be elected and continue in office and to make executive order laws without judicial or legislative interaction
- ✧ Persistently permitting the violation of constitutional mandates for the redress of grievances by citizens by allowing marches and demonstrations
- ✧ Allowing a communist backed political party to STEAL elections
- ✧ Allowing mentally incompetent individuals to hold high political office such as Joe Biden, John Fetterman.
- ✧ Many many other areas.

Freedom in its simplest form is found in the principle of Live and Let Live. Freedom is a legitimate system of self determination and the environment for the proper function of volition. It is self determination and exemption from necessity along with self fulfillment as the privilege and franchise of the Human Race. It is exemption from any arbitrary control as is generally found in most of the laws of the government of the United States of America passed in the past 70 plus years which are arbitrary controlling and tyrannical. In the United States of America there is now a very EVIL and immoral government demonstrated by the democratic party control and failure of the theoretically "conservative" republican party to do anything to oppose them. Freedom is based on 3 principles, any of which, if nonexistent, causes destruction of freedom. These include self determination in free use of volition, privacy and the right to possess lawfully and legitimately acquired property. In scripture the whole purpose



of the Palestinian Covenant is the designation of property which will belong to the Jew during the millennial reign of Christ on this earth. Today and throughout [The Church Age](#) only what the Jew can conquer and hold in the middle east can belong to him. Both today and in the past the Jews had to use their military to HOLD their property as all other people and nations have had to do. This is the purpose of the military establishment, to maintain the ‘property’ of the national entity and to ensure the FREEDOM necessary to have privacy and to individually possess property in the national sphere. Functioning properly under military establishment principles also means that there must be established a system for protecting the property of all individual property owners in the national entity. Unless a person owns real property or has some personal possessions he will have no sense of responsibility as a member of the Human Race. It is not a necessity to own “real property, land” but simply owning anything will provide the first concept of responsibility. This is in fact one very good reason for making teenage children work for something they want so that they appreciate possessing and take responsibility for properly using that which they have worked for. Property is a truly great issue in life, much more than most people realize, and is a fundamental underlying issue of freedom and responsibility. This is the reason government confiscation of ANY property is truly a function based in EVIL, including the theft involved in an arbitrary system of taxation such as in the United States of America. If an individual is irresponsibly free he can be either a moronic idiot or psychopath, having the idiotic concept that freedom means he can do whatever he wants to do all the time. Property, monetary wealth, personal possessions, etc., all are a part of freedom and instill the concept of RESPONSIBILITY. This is why the Swiss have the greatest government in history with total states rights where the cantons in Switzerland are practically self governing and along with this, universal military training which goes from age 16 to 47, unless a person volunteers for longer terms. There is constant weapons training for the people and the soldier takes his issued weapon HOME with him even after being discharged and when on active duty they have a pass book which records where they have trained weekly and qualified monthly with their weapons. Every male is part of the military with great military fortifications so that no country wants to interfere with their system and their Free Enterprise functions. When the United States goes out as a client nation to God, the only nation which could possibly qualify for client nation status would be Switzerland where there has been an incredible evangelical movement. When the United States of America goes down as client nation there will always be another nation which is elevated to that status because The Lord Jesus, The Christ is still controlling Human History.

Why does the United States, as a client nation to God in the times of the gentiles, malfunction? It is not based on the president nor the congress but on the people themselves and their total lack of integrity and disorientation to the Laws of Divine Establishment, Divine Institutions and Bible Doctrine. The United States is a nation of individual freedoms and as a result of its failure as a nation, blame must be placed on the people since the nation’s Status Quo reflects the way the people are thinking. It is painfully obvious that the people of the United States of America, having in the past had great freedoms, do not in any way any longer understand freedom. They don’t even understand the status of human volition as the uncaused, cause of human function, ie. the principle of live and let live. The people fail to understand the principle of privacy which is the environment for the function of freedom. When a person

makes a decision to accept the Substitutionary Spiritual Death of The Lord Jesus, The Christ, it is not required that they do anything else. They have a right to make this decision on their own without any interference which, in fact, would be a form of tyranny. Every believer has a right to come to bible study and inculcate Bible Doctrine and decide for or against Christ and bible doctrine without anyone interfering or intruding on their privacy no matter what they do for a living, their economic standing, how they dress or for any other reason. Every believer and also every unbeliever has a right to privacy and if the unbeliever is interested in the Gospel or the believer in Bible Doctrine they have a right to come to where it is proclaimed and hear it without interference. The only exception to this is the criminal who has, as a result of his own decisions, NO RIGHTS at all under the system of authority in a society, having voluntarily violated the concept of freedom and moved himself outside the RULES or Authority of the society. The American has forgotten the principle of property and this principle has disappeared in the United States of America. This is not only land but property is anything that is legitimately acquired or possessed. The right to use and enjoy, benefit or dispose of anything that can be subject to individual ownership is property, it is the right to ownership of tangible things. Americans have lost track of the issue of property and the basis for the great prosperity in the United States is PROPERTY. The confiscation of property by the government and destruction of private property is therefore, obviously, an attack on freedom. Government regulations regarding anything which one can possess or use is a violation of freedom and privacy in all areas of property. If anything attacks privacy it attacks property and in attacking these it destroys freedom. Americans have lost the concept of PROPER function of LEGITIMATE authority which is actually designed to protect freedom not regulate individuals. Authority such as is delegated by God to governments is NEVER to be used to try to solve social problems with legislation but to simply protect the Life, Volitional Freedom, Privacy and Property of its citizens from enemies within and outside of the nation. This authority is there ONLY to execute criminals and destroy aggressive nations. Freedom is based on the understanding and observation of the mandates of God found in Bible Doctrine including the Divine Institutions and the Laws of Divine Establishment.

The alleged objective of socialism is to make everyone equal and accepted. However, no one is ever born equal to any other but he is born free as a self determining individual. In the United States of America, citizens are born into a (relatively) free nation, a client nation to God, therefore they have (in the past had) great personal freedom but not at birth nor any time thereafter do they ever have equality. Socialism alleges to make everyone equal and under this concept they reduce everyone to the lowest common level, moron status, and then come in and conquer them installing communism as their function. Freedom is the reality which must exist for the proper appreciation of and function under both spiritual and human heritage. Freedom cannot and does not guarantee equality but guarantees OPPORTUNITY and thereby ensures INEQUALITY. Under a system of freedom one can use his freedom to advance to success or go down to failure and the government must NEVER interfere with this process.

Equality says there is no success and no failure and therefore provides no motivation for improvement. This is the current system in childhood athletics where every child receives a trophy or award for PARTICIPATION. Equality says everyone will be made the same through

legislation and every person will be forced to be this way and as a result this totally destroys freedom. The problem in the United States of America is that the people have for many decades been brainwashed to think in terms of equality. This has become a form of Arrogance and divorces one from reality. With freedom a person can take his freedom and move with it and his rights under common law in society, which is beautifully defined by the American constitution, to a level of greatness or failure BY HIS CHOOSING. Unfortunately, for a very long time, the courts have been defining things in society in terms of equality and possessing 'civil rights' which is good as long as this does not distort or destroy freedom. However, in the process they have consistently tried to make everyone equal. Any system of trying to tell people that they are all equal is EVIL. People, while being unequal, can be very happy and this has been demonstrated many times over in history, in the times of the Antoine Caesars, in the Edwardian era of England, etc. Under a system which forces equality on everyone nothing in any area of life would be of any interest to anyone as a result of everyone completely lacking motivation since there would never be winners and no losers. There is and must be under freedom, therefore, inequality in all areas of life, clearly demonstrated by training, intellect and motivation, so that some can be better than others at various things from athletics to business to academics and science. Legitimate competition in any area produces and demands inequality and in competition a person must DEMONSTRATE that he is better than others in some specific area. Consequently, in every aspect of life the secret to contentment and stability is in the mentality of the soul, so that under Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God, KNOWING in an ABSOLUTE way that when one dies he will be face to face with the Lord provides freedom from fear and confidence in the future. Knowing that one can face death means that he can also face life and as a result of Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God dying is in fact as Paul has said "extreme profit". Because of this and understanding that people are not equal, Bible Doctrine gives, to anyone who is consistent with its intake, inner peace, happiness and blessing. This is the solution which will bring about national success and it must structure the whole underlying concept of the nation and when this occurs there will be quality in evangelism, missionaries and local church functions and great national stability.

The Umbrella of authority is of no value in society without the individual adhering under enforced discipline to it developing thereby Enforced Humility as virtue. The concepts of bleeding heart do good liberals like Ralph Nader, today's environmentalists, and their ilk, who want to save all of mankind from being killed on the roads or by what is in our medicine cabinets or under our kitchen sinks, are [Self Righteous](#) and an incredibly great danger to freedom and these people personally have no concept of freedom nor of authority. They are totally Arrogant and self centered and freedom is, in their thinking, only for themselves not anyone else. They consider the individual not competent to control his own life by his own decisions. God, knowing how man would be, gave to the Jews in their Mosaic Law the definition of freedom in the Decalogue which is, in fact, the Freedom Code by defining violations to freedom such as:

- ✧ Stealing == attack on property
- ✧ Murder == attack on privacy and the freedom of self determination
- ✧ Love of God == encouragement of authority

Equality is the device of the Arrogant and the conspiracy of Satan in disorientation of the sociopathic individual while freedom is the true motivation of the Grace or Establishment Orientated good citizen whether believer or unbeliever. Forced or Legislated equality is the policy of tyrants and also the desire for the realization of a pseudo millennium of Satan. Freedom is the underlying principle of the policy of God in creation of the Human Race to resolve the Angelic Conflict and is therefore totally opposed by all aspects of the EVIL policy of Satan. God placed man on this earth in order for man to have the opportunity under freedom to make the decision for his plan of Grace in the Divine Dynasphere or for Satan's Plan of Evil and Good under the tyranny of the Cosmic Dynaspheres. Freedom must have divinely oriented content of thought and this is spiritual and revealed in the bible as Codex I and III of the Mosaic Law. Freedom without authority is ANARCHY and authority without freedom is TYRANNY. Freedom without the authority from Bible Doctrine is antinomianism and authority without freedom from Bible Doctrine is legalism. The people of any nation must be mature to enjoy freedom and this is the basic function of the client nation to provide the freedom and means of maturing under responsibility to authority for all citizens in that nation.

This overflows into the spiritual realm, the only area where any equality can temporarily exist in life. All believers begin their Spiritual Life EQUAL in union with The Lord Jesus, The Christ and there is no racial nor gender nor social distinction. However, as will occur in all things in life, some will advance in the Spiritual Life and some retrogress in the Spiritual Life, therefore, they are not in any imagined way ultimately equal. There is also a principle under freedom in the function of the local church of never asking for financial support, money. If the Lord wants the Local Church to continue the congregation will give from freedom and if he wants it to shut down as a result of failure of the Pastor Teacher to properly present Bible Doctrine then lack of funds will do just that. This is how the local church must operate in order to properly serve the Lord.

In Israel there had been some truly great failures in the past recognized by Paul:

- ✧ Failure of unbelievers to attain Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God by faith alone in The Lord Jesus, The Christ alone as he was revealed at that time but instead trying to obtain salvation by the human effort works of keeping the Mosaic Law.
- ✧ Failure in every generation of believers who did obtain Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God to advance to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God, because of their involvement in the Interlocking System of Arrogance and interest in power politics rather than pivot politics, thereby contributing to the degeneracy which brought on the 5 cycles of Divine Discipline the last which removed the client nation status of Israel in 70 AD.
- ✧ Personal degeneracy of both believer and unbeliever as a result of their involvement in the Interlocking System of Arrogance.

The United States of America today, like Israel of the past, is saturated with Arrogance and trapped in the Cosmic Dynaspheres. In Arrogance the American government assumes that it has a right to tell other nations how to run their business despite the fact that it cannot run this nations business properly. American foreign policy is one of Self Righteousness and hypocrisy and is designed to tell other nations who their friends should and should not be. In the United

States of America there is this Arrogance which vacillates between [Self Pity](#) as communism and islam close in and Self Righteousness as it tries to tell the world how to run their business despite, having miserably failed in its own society since the at a minimum the 1960s. America has had the constant escalation of both crime, youth gangs and today now the influx of terrorism both foreign and domestic in origin and finally the beginnings of overt revolution in the actions of the “black lives matter” and “antifa” revolutionists. There are now social and political uprisings and the interference of the democratic party with legitimate national functions in elections and judicial functions. Arrogance and insanity are involved with each of these functions. It is the volition of the individual which brings him to insanity and also to criminality and behind both is found the Interlocking System of Arrogance in the general masses of the people.

The Jews could not get away from the Interlocking System of Arrogance and their Self Righteousness of attempting to keep the Mosaic Law for salvation. They, in their own minds, were individually more important than any system of authority and they rejected the Laws of Divine Establishment and all the systems of authority ordained by God. They thereby destroyed their own freedoms, privacy, property and the umbrella of protection from ordained authority. They then discovered that freedom without authority is anarchy and anarchy cannot maintain national integrity. The United States of America is about to discover the same lesson. Then they gave authority to the pharisees and discovered that authority without freedom is tyranny. America has already accomplished something very similar to this in giving authority to those who function in society OUTSIDE the rules of our system, criminals. The Jews oscillated from a system of anarchy to one of tyranny. Between these extremes is found the solution and there must be a balance between authority and freedom just as that which is laid out in the Constitution of the United States. The Jews, and many other nations as well, went from anarchistic freedom to tyrannical authority and when one part is knocked out the other fills the void. This is what occurs in people saturated within the Interlocking System of Arrogance. The Interlocking System of Arrogance first rejects freedom then when there is only authority and no freedom under tyranny Arrogance rejects the authority and this then results in REVOLUTION. Then this again causes the rise of anarchy and with it constant national instability which can only be stabilized by the spiritual factors in the founding principles and which are the basis of the constitution of the United States of America.

### **National Arrogance and Prosperity**

Prosperous people can very easily get into the Interlocking System of Arrogance beginning with [Motivational Arrogance](#) and its [Mental Attitude Arrogance](#) and then moving through any of the entrance gates. Prosperous people minus authority enter into the Interlocking System of Arrogance and become conspirators to overthrow good government so that they can have more power. This is George Soros, Bloomberg, Nancy Pelosi, Romney and Cuomo of New York to mention only a very few. These types fail to see in their selfcenteredness and megalomania that every blessing they have is from this good government UNDER GOD. Because they have rejected the source of their blessings they only want the power and authority provided by it. This is what has happened in the United States for decades and the trends in this direction are found in Labor Unions, People in general, Government officials, prosperous business men, etc.



One of the great tragedies of the Vietnam war was that the people here at home had great prosperity and did not want war to spread here thinking that they might lose their prosperity and have to make sacrifices. This occurred first in the Korean War and was the reason Truman made one of the most awful decisions in history when he pulled MacArthur off from one of the greatest tactics of all time in the Inchon Envelopment. This completely destroyed the military of the north Koreans and they were out of the war when china intervened. The United States could still have wiped out China and North Korea but harry Truman in his supreme stupidity and incredible political Arrogance did not want to disrupt prosperity at home. He was AFRAID that there might be a much larger war and would not permit bombing across the Yalu river and thus restricted the war to a brush war which only the Chinese communists could win. Chinese communists are a vile people saturated with the principles and functions of EVIL and persist in being the greatest enemies on every front of the United States. When America joins with them in any way or any American administrators even smile at them or drink with them or even shake their hands, this is a sign of true degeneracy in this nation and this country has given millions in tax payer's money to them and other enemy nations to try to bribe them into friendship. The United States could have destroyed Red China in the Korean war and the Inchon envelopment was one of the most brilliant tactics in history and it became, at that time in the past, an objective of the press and government mediocrity to suppress the incredible genius of Douglas MacArthur.

As a result the controllers in this nation kept the prosperity here and our prosperity advanced to more prosperity so that in the Vietnam war there was a double standard of warfare. American troops were subjected to situations where they could only be defeated and annihilated while the public could continue its Arrogant degeneracy ignoring the fact that in war it MUST BE an all out effort of all citizens to WIN. The people should have demanded the use of nuclear weapons and there should be a deep hole in North Vietnam where the south china sea could flow in. There should be no such thing as North Korea and there should be NO North Vietnam and there should be NO CUBA and America should not only still control the panama canal but have put all of those people back in the jungle where they belong. The people in this nation have not had this type of thinking since the end of World War II and the people here are restrained by their own degeneracy. It is how a person thinks which determines degeneracy what he does is a reflection of how he thinks whether it is patriotism, conspiracy or the revolution of power politics in any form.

Prosperity becomes a trap to a nation when it results in entrapment of the people in the Interlocking System of Arrogance. When people are prosperous and lose their focus on the source or the origin of that prosperity they lose the ability to have dominating thought expressed through sub-dominate emotion. They fail to combine thought with emotion properly and this is reflected in their culture, Modus Operandi and their lack of spiritual function, and ultimately then the nation destroys itself. No nation is ever removed from Human History by an outside source but national destruction is always the result of internal degeneration and all nations destroys themselves from inside first before conquest occurs. When any nation is destroyed in history the believer must remember that there was an internal principle or factor of degeneracy which led the way to their destruction. Therefore, in any nation, prosperity

becomes a trap when it results in the collective involvement in the Interlocking System of Arrogance and lust for power, recognition and inordinate authority. The people of the United States of America MUST open their eyes because this is the status of this nation today and in fact has been for a very long time.

There is a snare in the United States of America where its spiritual heritage, being related to Laws of Divine Establishment, Divine Institutions, Bible Doctrine and principles of client nation function, has been in the past and is continually being set aside and violated. In the United States of America prosperity has become a trap both historically and spiritually. Historically it is a trap when people become soft from prosperity to the extent that they think only in terms of saving prosperity and maintaining security even if it means losing a war engaged in to preserve freedom. People said during the Vietnam War, “as long as I am safe let them die over there but don’t extend the war so that we might be bombed and injured and lose our prosperity”. Virtue as courage toward man and circumstances is only developed in the [Divine Dynasphere](#) and therefore, Arrogance prohibiting residence in the Divine Dynasphere destroys virtue. This inevitably produces cowardice so that the executives in most of the Free Enterprise companies in the United States today are cowards and are afraid to use their economic influence to change government functions. In the United States, Americanism has been lost and will continually lose more by allowing illegals aliens into the nation and giving them welfare benefits and the right to vote and more rights and freedoms than even citizens. No matter how great the government, or magnificent the freedom or how much prosperity exists from Free Enterprise or how great the military establishment is in protecting freedoms and no matter how great the Law Enforcement and jurisprudence functions are in protecting the rights of the individual citizens NO NATION CAN SURVIVE COLLECTIVE Scar Tissue of the Soul from mass Reversionism and Mass Arrogance.

### **National Arrogance and the Integrity of God**

The United States of America has been in the same status from 1970s to today and the people want political reform without relating it to the Integrity of God. They want peace and prosperity based on the Self Righteousness of liberalism rather than [Adjustment to the Justice of God](#). The answer to the problems in the United States of America is not in political reform or contacting the government administrators with mail or phone messages but only in the functions of large groups of people making Adjustment to the Justice of God. Political reform is meaningless without the Integrity of God no matter who the administrators of the nation are. Nations rise and fall, especially client nations, based on their relationship to the Integrity of God. The United States, became a great nation based on its citizens having a relationship to the Integrity of God, and many past generations had a large pivot of maturing believers which were adjusted to the Justice of God. There is no system of government or political reform which can do anything except destroy a nation unless it is related to the Integrity of God. Believers in The Lord Jesus, The Christ are missing the boat totally if they constantly function as political activists. Perception, Cognition, Incultation & Metabolization of Bible Doctrine is the only answer for the situation in these United States since this alone relates the individual and thereby the nation to the Integrity of God. Anyone who thinks they can change the American government is a FOOL since it has been for a very long time and continues to be

immoral and completely under the influence of Evil. Assassination, as a method of change, is a stupid, sinful, idiotic concept as well. When any leader is assassinated one of two things happens, either the one who takes over for him is FAR WORSE than he was OR he is considered a martyr and his agenda is wholeheartedly followed even by those who opposed him. There is not now and has not ever been any way to change the American government not even by casting your ballot since from before the time of Franklin Roosevelt up to today voting has been extended to the irresponsible in the nation today even to non-citizens and the entire system has been subverted by FRAUD. The only true way to preserve a nation, especially the client nation of the United States of America, is for the people to collectively relate to the Integrity of God properly and recognize that The Lord Jesus, The Christ controls Human History. This is essential at this time because when a nation fails to function under the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions, as the United States of America has been doing, the only means of deliverance is from intervention by The Lord Jesus, The Christ. History shows nations rising and falling and until the people in the United States understand that the basis for their national heritage is spiritual, this nation will continue failing. The only reason our system of government ever worked was because of the believers in the nation who were related to the Integrity of God and Adjusted to the Justice of God.

In the United States of America in 1976, and much more so today, it was and is not possible to elect someone to the presidency who can change the direction of this nation because the problem is NOT in the White House ONLY nor the congress, nor the supreme court but it reflects the infection of [Reversionism](#) and Arrogance in the diseased souls of the people. It is unimaginably worse today so that the only thing which will change this situation is Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God, consistent use of the [Rebound Procedure](#) and attaining [Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God](#) by the INDIVIDUAL BELIEVER. The only way to change things in the client nation is to accumulate a maximum level of Metabolized Bible Doctrine into the Stream of Consciousness of the Souls of individual believers with the resultant development of the Pivot of Spiritually Mature believers who collectively support the nation by means of blessing by association with them. These mature believers will receive their Escrow blessings for time in the form of 5 temporal categories of Super – Grace blessing which will be the support of the nation. The only way for a nation to prosper and advance in history is for there to be this relationship by the people in the nation with the Integrity of God. There must also be the Unbeliever's relationship with the Integrity of God through thorough comprehension of and consistent adherence to the doctrinal principles of the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions above all other concepts. All the problems in our society related to homosexuals, gun control, violence, abortion, etc., are manifestations of what is below the surface in every individual in the form of apostate Reversionism and saturation within the degeneracy of the Interlocking System of Arrogance. Education is not the answer to these problems but has been at every level, formed into a system of contribution to them by the systematic indoctrination of children and young adults with principles derived directly from EVIL. The fact is that some people should not be highly educated because when a person is educated beyond their capacity, intelligence or potential they become unhappy for the rest of their life. People who are educated beyond their capacity or level of intelligence find themselves with college degrees and when employment is not forthcoming in their field they

cannot bring themselves to do what they consider menial jobs. This is a situation rampant in the United States today. The fact and reality is that these people should have learned a trade and worked at it to enable them to have a life of contentment and this would have been, for this person, proper adjustment to life with stability and true inner happiness. Legislation is also abused in this way and legislators try to solve the problems of life in society by creating laws to force people to function under what they consider a proper standard for living. These things all contribute to National Arrogance.

There have been national social difficulties in the United States of America for many decades just as had occurred in Judea in the time of Christ and the people there were enthusiastic and sincere just as the idiotic liberals are today. People, especially in mass, are NO DAMNED GOOD because man, as an individual, is totally depraved because of the existence of his Old Sin Nature so that by gathering people together that multiplies this tendency toward total depravity. The failing of American society and this nation is found in catering to this depravity because of involvement in Reversionism and saturation with Arrogance in the average individual and especially the representatives in the government. The ONLY answer is the Integrity of God. The true principle with regard to the Plan of God is that times of prosperity, happiness, depression, disaster, whatever the historical climate, either pleasant or adverse, are inconsequential to the Justice of God, THEREFORE, the Plan of God rolls on whether man, individually OR collectively, fails or succeeds. The believer who follows the Plan of God, will in all historical circumstances be blessed, especially during adverse circumstances. In times of adversity and disaster, Arrogance always comes up with human solutions such as the federal government under FEMA trying to take up the slack for regions of the country experiencing disaster situations, legislators trying to solve social problems with legislation, the Supreme Court trying to do Human Good in the sense of encouraging socialism instead of properly adhering to and maintaining the principles of the American Constitution. The concept of a greater good for the greater number is a system of functioning under incredible and tyrannical EVIL demanding the production of incredible levels of Human Good. This influence of Evil in the United States of America is the motivation for the function of both believers and unbelievers. When there are attempts made to try to establish EQUALITY in a society, freedom must first be destroyed and then there is supposed to be equality. However, people, despite these overwhelming efforts, are still not equal but instead there is a new system of Evil in tyranny which exploits all of them. Therefore, logically, a government trying to solve social problems by making everyone equal is functioning under a system which is saturated with Evil and devoid of freedom.

When Abraham Lincoln, as president of the United States and as believer in The Lord Jesus, The Christ, violated the constitutional principles that the federal government is to be the servant of the people and does not make any earth shaking decisions, this was the beginning of the failing of the United States as a nation. Today the federal government acts as a GOD in the United States and uses federal funds, which are tax payer's money, to destroy the freedom of the tax payer and blackmail the states. This money is used in the establishment and continued function of bureaucracies which destroy the tax payer's ability to pay taxes by destroying businesses. Lincoln started this by calling up 50,000 volunteers to force several

states into a form of action which HE desired purely for his political expediency. The issue for Abe Lincoln was never freedom for black slaves because he did not consider them his equal as was clearly demonstrated in the Lincoln – Douglas debates. Every state had a right to have or not have slavery and the federal government had NO RIGHT to start political reform under a system of violence. The fact is that VIOLENCE only has a valid use when police use it for stopping the criminal's Modus Operandi, when Courts use violence as punishment for certain "capital" crimes and when the military is defending the integrity and freedom of the nation. The federal government had no right to invade the south to force the southern states to do what Lincoln wanted them to do. Under the American constitution the states had the right to independently decide what they wanted to do concerning slavery. Whenever the federal government uses violence once and gets away with it that is, and it was for the United States, the beginning of tyranny and from 1865 to the present America has had growing tyranny in the federal government. Lincoln started a precedent which says in effect that political reform without the Integrity of God is acceptable. John Wilkes Booth attempted to fight this EVIL with the unmitigated EVIL of assassination. Fighting Evil with Evil is always wrong and the only true power and dynamic for this nation, a client nation to God, and for every believer individually is spiritual and based on GRACE. As a people, Americans are too full of Arrogance and their own temporal solutions and must recognize the essential nature of the Integrity of God as the ONLY SOLUTION. The only thing which will either save or destroy this nation is the Integrity of God. The ideas of the people in the United States of America are totally saturated with the EVIL of LIBERALISM and Marxist Socialism and are not in any way related to Bible Doctrine, the Integrity of God nor to even freedom but focused on seizing greater political power by appealing to the irresponsible masses and promising desired things to one or the other of the most outspoken groups. The 2 greatest and most detrimental attributes of these people are Self Righteousness and involvement in the Interlocking System of Arrogance which are inevitably cowardly and as a result the United States of America has become a nation of cowards in Self Righteousness and constantly strives to appease and acquiesce to both communism and islam. American should have never sent one grain of American wheat to Russia, she should never have gone to Russia with any aid or help and not one ford motor company representative should ever had shown them how to build trucks. America should never have given them the atomic bomb information nor should Nixon have ever given them the inertial guidance system for ballistic missiles, nor should anything ever have been given to the Chinese communists who now constantly STEAL whatever military and scientific technology they can without any repercussions. When American military commanders met with the North Vietnamese at the conference table in Hanoi they should have slapped them silly and when they were told to sign a treaty on our terms and they refused they should have put a knife through their hand and nuked them out of existence. America is today a nation of Self Righteous Arrogant cowards and the only thing saving this nation is the relationship of the remaining few [Jeshurun](#) believers to the Integrity of God.

If the Integrity of God is not involved in the prosperity and historical blessing of a nation then that prosperity is false and built on sand. All welfare, socialism and communism are attempts at political reform apart from the Integrity of God so that no nation under these systems can ever enjoy freedom and possess historical prosperity. Socialism, liberalism and welfare are an



illusion and the fantasy of maladjustment to the Justice of God. As all Arrogant people, the citizens in the United States, manifest themselves with Self Righteousness and Liberalism and these are always interlocked together. No person who is politically or theologically liberal can ever understand Bible Doctrine as a result of having rejected the Absolute nature of Bible Doctrine and / or the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions. Liberalism is from and based completely on Evil and is an enemy of freedom and an infection in the nation which must be destroyed for the nation to survive. Liberalism is a whore, soliciting your freedom, and then taking it from you. The key issue in this nation today is the Integrity of God vs the Self Righteous Arrogance of the liberal because ALL true freedom and liberty, having been invented by God, comes from the Integrity of God. A Person could be a slave picking cotton on a plantation in the south and have liberty and freedom because his master has evangelized him and he is now part of the Royal Family of God under spiritual freedom. There were many slaves before the civil war who were Adjusted to the Justice of God and had better environment than their great grandchildren have TODAY. Half of the people in the first century of the Roman Empire were slaves and many of them went all the way to the point of Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God. ([The Book of Philemon](#))

Liberals provide the propaganda from Evil which gives the impression that the whole system of freedom approves of being without house, home or job and running loose in the streets. Today Blacks and Hispanics have been and continue to be exploited by politicians functioning under a saturation with EVIL and they are manipulated in the name of freedom and civil rights, being used to bring about political reform without the Integrity of God. Until the people, both individually and collectively, are adjusted to the Justice of God they cannot ever understand this. The simplicity of the Plan of God is that there cannot be a nation with prosperity or freedom without relationship with the Integrity of God. The American holiday of Thanksgiving is based on a principle of not being able to have freedom and prosperity in a nation without relationship to the Integrity of God. Neither communists nor moslems have any integrity and Americans must never trust them because they make treaties and agreements ONLY for the purpose of using these to gain time to increase their momentum to defeat their enemies, the United States of America. Therefore, there can never be any such thing as freedom or national blessing apart from Adjustment to the Justice of God in every possible category.

### **The Stages of Development of the Client Nation:**

Once a nation has a system of government and functions based on Virtue then they must learn to fight in warfare to gain and maintain their freedom through military action. In additions there must be consistent function under the Laws of Divine Establishment to maintain and protect freedom both internally with Law Enforcement under Legitimate Judicial systems and under a strong Military Establishment for protection against external threats to freedom. To sustain itself there must be developed a legitimate economic system in the Client Nation where people must not be prevented from accumulating capital and must be FREE to start businesses based on their own initiative without government interference even if the business develops into a monopoly. Economy under freedom takes care of itself and is self regulating and some people go broke because their system of business is inefficient and some people make a big success because their system of business is efficient. Inevitably all monopolies break up

naturally in the course of legitimate economic activity. However, when the government comes in and breaks up a monopoly this is a sign of Self Righteous Arrogance in the government which is far more destructive to freedom than any economic monopoly. The legitimate government should not and must not even attempt to regulate business but MUST regulate crime and when there is crime in business it must be dealt with summarily.

Freedom is difficult for people to enjoy because free people must be relatively mature to enjoy it at all. The fact is that freedom requires more self restraint and self imposed responsibility than ever is needed in slavery. In the freedom of the United States of America the arrogant individual finds himself constantly demanding that the government regulate people with whom he disagrees or dislikes. These arrogant twits desire that the government pass laws to regulate the social interactions of people NOT involved in crime and to solve all of their problems. As is occurring today when there are too many frivolous laws and laws which violate freedom and make lawful people criminals, the people ignore them all and thus become lawless. Therefore for a nation to become and remain a Client Nation there must be:

- ▲ A strong economy
- ▲ Dedicated honorable public servants especially in the Judicial and Military systems.
- ▲ Concepts of Freedom & Authority with individual responsibility and integrity ([Romans chapter 13](#))

Putting all of this together does not create the Client Nation but simply provides the structure under which it can exist. It is the understanding and development of principles for function under the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions which make whatever the system of government set up may be, LEGITIMATE, and this can lead to establishing the function of the Client Nation to God.

Freedom is in fact designed specifically to allow people in the Client Nation to HEAR the Gospel of Christ and then Accept or Reject it. Then they are enabled under freedom to take the Gospel outside the Client Nation in missionary functions to other nations. Also, under freedom every person who accepts the Gospel of Christ then has a right to function in his life to advance to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God by the consistent inculcation of Bible Doctrine. This is to occur within any given national entity which functions under any Legitimately Based system of Government and is the sole basis for resolving the Angelic Conflict. This then results in the development of the Pivot of Mature believers who then sustain the Nation under their Escrow Blessing package. Even with effective development and function under the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions no nation can be sustained without the development and understanding of the Bible Doctrines of God from scripture. This is, in fact, what establishes the Client Nation. The separation of church or religion and state or government is essential in any legitimate nation because this provides the OPTIONS of freedom regarding Christianity and religion. Once church and state are amalgamated the great option for freedom along with evangelism is destroyed. This has been the great mistake of many European and South American countries whether the adopted system of 'religion' was good or bad and is illustrated and exemplified by the muslim dominated nations of this world. Freedom must extend self determination in the area the spiritual life and enable the free presentation and hearing of the Gospel of Christ and the free acceptance or rejection of it.

### **Proper Government**

In the United States of America under our system of Constitutional Republic, many Believers enter the Interlocking System of Arrogance by advocating democracy, oligarchy or tyranny as a desired form of government. The United States of America has this National Arrogance from the failure of its representatives in allowing a build up of bureaucracy which has no accountability to the people and which cannot, does not want to and will not, uphold the Constitution. This demonstrates the Decline of the HONOR and INTEGRITY of the People and therefore their elected Representatives in government.

There are 3 forms of “GOOD” government and 3 forms of “BAD” government from a biblical perspective.

#### Types of government

<u>Good</u>	<u>Bad</u>
<b>Monarchy</b>	<b>Dictatorship</b>
Rule of one man for the good of all	Rule of one man for his personal benefit
<b>Aristocracy</b>	<b>Oligarchy</b>
Rule of a group for the common good	Rule of a group for personal benefit
<b>Republic</b>	<b>Democracy</b>
Rule of responsible people for the common good	Rule of irresponsible people for personal benefit
	<b>Anarchy</b>
	Lack of Authority and Rule by anyone

Tyranny under dictatorship is the system used by the Russians all the way back to the czars not including Catherine the Great. Democracy, which is constantly erroneously touted as the American system of government, is just controlled or bribed Anarchy and Anarchy is lack of rule by anyone. It is interesting to note that invariably when Anarchy occurs it will ultimately collapse and its collapse DEMANDS Dictatorship and Tyranny to replace it.

The American education system is and has been preparing the children of this nation to accept the total tyranny of the out of control federal government and its agenda of socialism ultimately leading to communism. The American system was set up in such a way that the federal government is supposed to be the SERVANT of the people with certain administrative responsibilities but no jurisdiction over the people except in time of war to provide the army and fulfill certain governmental responsibilities such as collection of taxes to maintain a standing army, etc. The federal government was the servant of the people and the power of government was to reside in the states but the Lincoln by instituting the war between the states destroyed the principle of state's rights totally. As a result of a lack of understanding of this 2<sup>nd</sup> war for independence, the erroneous concept entertained by the people is that it resulted in blacks being freed from slavery, whereas, the Truth is that all races, black, white, red, yellow and brown were actually placed into abject slavery to a federal governmental system which sets itself above the law of the American Constitution. The federal government has taken the power designed to reside in the individual states and put that concentrated power of government in Washington instead of retaining the decentralized power in the states.

In addition there is a basic underlying failure of the people to understand communism, socialism, democracy and anarchy. *Communism is simply ENFORCED Socialism while Democracy is DEMAND Socialism. Communism produces Dictators while Democracy produces Demagogues.* Whatever the form of Socialism, it always destroys FREEDOM. Socialism is a mess of pottage whereby ignorant people exchange their freedom for perceived pseudo security. They give up what is real for what is unreal. Under socialism there is no freedom and where there is no freedom there is neither security nor prosperity therefore the importance of Truth as in [John 8:32](#). Under any form of socialism Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God and

ability to execute the Protocol Plan of God, is lost to all.

In the United States of America today, for the majority of the people, their freedom is not important to them only their security and safety and when disaster occurs because of invasion or revolution they will be shouting, “better to be red than dead” or “islam is for peace”. The people of the United States of America have for many decades no longer considered freedom important. They want security and safety and to be bought into one of the worst systems in history, SOCIALISM, which is in reality saturated Satanic Evil. Socialism does not guarantee security and Social Security is the very basis of total insecurity for the older citizens in this nation. There is no economic security in it because the government does not have the ability to properly administer any funds and they have long ago dissipated the social security funds which people have contributed to. They used the funds for other reasons and they now have to pull in funds from other areas and charge more for it and this is a total disaster from every conceivable perspective. Socialism is trading freedom for pseudo or alleged security since there is no security in socialism or any other government form of that sort. Americans have, therefore in fact, traded their heritage of freedom for the mess of pottage called socialism. In the name of peace these people focused on socialism are also guaranteeing another great world war to come and this started with Jimmy Carter and had become much worse under Obama and is almost certainly inevitable under Biden. Peace making overtones are simply a form of political hysteria because the people of this nation, since the 60’s, are frightened and insecure and fail to see that freedom demands RESPONSIBILITY at every level. One cannot ever think in terms of human security and appreciate freedom because personal safety is and can never be an issue when freedom is in danger. Thinking security over freedom is the slavery mentality and the slavery mentality is always Arrogance, vanity, selfcenteredness and security consciousness and in the United States of America since the 60’s the entire population has had the slavery mentality. From this combination of Selfcenteredness, Arrogance, [Self Pity](#) and [Fear](#) comes the irrationality of the slavery mentality. The slavery mentality belongs to Americans of all racial backgrounds in the apostasy of the 20<sup>th</sup> and early 21<sup>st</sup> centuries. As a result of this it is inevitable that government representatives will be blamed for the sinfulness, pride, fear, panic, Self Pity and cowardice of the people.

When man is under pressure he always forgets the value of freedom and if he is given freedom after slavery there must be developed capacity for that freedom but capacity for freedom demands relationship to the Integrity of God through Metabolized Bible Doctrine or Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions. The more childish a population becomes the more that capacity for freedom disappears from their souls. A childish population is saturated with [Pettiness](#) a status which has existed in this country for a very long time. Freedom must have content of thought which must come from Absolute Truth and this is what gives freedom the highest possible value. Only Perception, Cognition, Incultation & Metabolization of Bible Doctrine OR understanding and adhering to the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions can provide for the individual such appreciation. The people, in the United States of America, have developed the slavery mentality and thus live under the slavery fostered by big government and little people rather than the way and purpose for which the American fore fathers founded the nation. This saturated Arrogance destroys any true or valid scale of values



resulting in the slavery mentality. The believer cannot have a system of priorities which are compatible with the Plan of God and remain under occupation with self in Arrogance. The subjectivity of the unbeliever can only be remedied by the objectivity of Perception, Cognition, Incultation & Metabolization of the Bible Doctrine principles contained in the Laws of Divine Establishment, Divine Institutions or in the Gospel of The Lord Jesus, The Christ leading to consistent concentration on the entire realm of Bible Doctrine and the functions of the [Faith Rest Drill \(5 stages\)](#). No Government can prosper without freedom loving people. No freedom loving people can be perpetuated without Truth, related to Economy, Government, and every part of the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions. No aspect of Truth can influence power mad Arrogance which when combined with [Crusader Arrogance](#) functions to destroy the impact of Truth in the souls and minds of people, and is what occurs in all [Activism](#). Where the influence of Truth brings freedom to people the government becomes the servant of the people instead of their MASTER. This was the foundation for the beginning of this nation. When any group of people become unruly, in a state of revolt, they have used their freedom to reject [Legitimate Authority](#). This is abuse of freedom and once legitimate authority is rejected it will always eventually result in anarchy. When a group becomes a revolting group they are under the influence of FEAR, Arrogance AND Self Pity. It is because of involvement in Arrogance that believers reject Bible Doctrine and unbelievers reject the Laws of Divine Establishment. Because of pressure from adversities they fill up with Self Pity from fear and from operating under the slave mentality. Their fear results in succumbing to overriding emotion so that when under pressure and they lack courage as a result of being unable to think under pressure and having given up residence in the [Divine Dynasphere](#) for residence in Cosmic Dynasphere I.

Prior to World War II, Madam Chang Kai Shek was the wife of Chinese General Chang Kai Shek who was one of the greatest men in that period of history. She was very supportive and defensive of her husband since many things were said about him which were very derogatory. In her comments she had pointed out that General Stillwell did more to arm and support Chinese communists than any other single person and was probably responsible for the eventual take over of mainland china by the communists. It is unfortunate that Americans don't know more about their own history and the players in it and how stupidly this country has handled itself in the historical period since World War II. Both Madam and General Chang Kai Shek were mature believers in The Lord Jesus, The Christ and understood more about history and what was occurring in their contemporary history than most other people, especially those in the American military. They, in fact, predicted many of the disasters which have since occurred. Many men, like Stillwell had, take the attitude that they, being men, are infinitely more superior to all women and thereby fail to recognize brilliance and establishment Truth in superior females. There have been incredible heinous crimes committed by American governmental representatives in ever politically recognizing COMMUNIST CHINA as a nation and this should never have occurred in any way, at any time. These crimes are only exceeded by the stupidity of the thinking of the American people who no longer think like Americans but demonstrate incredible Arrogance found in both low and high classes of people in this country. Americans have developed an incredible Arrogance in this society and especially in the representatives in government and the United States now has the same difficulties which existed

in China during Stillwell's tour there. The principles which caused the disasters in China and the take over by communism are the same principles which have been operating in this nation for decades. The primary cause of these difficulties is the involvement of the people in general in the Interlocking System of Arrogance. If anyone has inordinate ambition and is then accelerated into a position where inordinate ambition can relate to Arrogance it makes him blind to the true impact of his life which, in effect, is causing the greatest production of Human Good totally based on the influence of EVIL. It is the Self Righteousness and complete Arrogance of the believer in The Lord Jesus, The Christ at this time which has caused many contributions to the disasters now faced in this nation.

Evil, as a process of thought, is the ultimate source of national destruction and it inevitably brings on the 5<sup>th</sup> cycle of Divine Discipline to the people of a nation collectively saturated with it. When divine judgment occurs on a recalcitrant nation and the Divine Discipline reaches the level of the 5<sup>th</sup> cycle it cannot be averted. When the 5<sup>th</sup> cycle begins HELPLESSNESS is the only thing which can function and it cannot in any way be averted. There is no way to understand any disaster in history if the believer is under the influence of Evil. In addition being under the influence of Evil he cannot ever cope with any disaster and the only result of trying to cope with disaster in this status is to ADD disaster to disaster. This is the source of drug abuse where these people have no understanding of real problems and only seek an easy way out of their problems under the personal stimulation of sublimation. Evil therefore never understands Grace functions and divine discipline or divine deliverance.

### **Government Function & National Arrogance**

The ideal and only legitimate forms of government are the existence of organized civil power compatible with human freedom under the Divine Institutions and Laws of Divine Establishment and free of social opposition from Evil with its Human Good productions. The ideal government type is one which follows the Laws of Divine Establishment and enforces these principles to protect individual and collective life, freedom, privacy, property and the pursuit of happiness where one can accumulate things for self. Power and authority must be based on and regulated by the principles in the Divine Institutions under the overriding mandates of the Laws of Divine Establishment and not seized by an administrator for personal aggrandizement. The greatest trouble which can occur in any nation from its government is from either a self serving tyrannical dictator or functioning in a democracy.

A tyrannical dictator, who is not enlightened and does not follow the Laws of Divine Establishment, in Arrogance, assumes that he is an authority in himself often equating his power with that of GOD. He does not consider that his authority comes from God and as a result he takes freedom away from citizens based on his own whims. He cannot, however, ever destroy the blessing to the believer who is under his rule who has reached the status of Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God.

In a democracy the people rule by popular opinion and voting and direct the functions of the nation based on their personal desires, whims or wants for their own personal benefit.

Our system of government in the United States of America is designed as a Constitutional Republic and the only way public officials can be elected PROPERLY is to limit the vote to RESPONSIBLE INDIVIDUALS who have demonstrated their responsibility. The voting franchise should be restricted to MALES over 25 years of age who have served in the military, who run a business or own real estate property. Bringing anyone else into the election process results in the voting becoming immediately meaningless because the imbeciles who run for office are voted for and elected by their own kind, imbeciles who vote for them. This is and has been the status of the United States of America today and for some time which is demonstrated by the BLACKS who voted for Obama just because he was BLACK and the women who voted for H. Clinton just because she was a woman and people who vote democrat or republican just because their parents did. Client Nation Arrogance is related to the function of Government in the nation but in the United States of America it is also invariably related to the form of Government. This has resulted because American citizens and representatives make constant reference in every area of government to the 'Democracy' which is, in fact, the result of the degradation and degeneration of the status of the American Republic. This degeneration has been caused by the failure of elected representatives and Arrogance in the formation of and government function under bureaucracies, all as a result of the phenomenal Arrogance in the franchised population. This type of situation always results in loss of freedom, break down in Evangelism, lack of Bible Doctrine teaching, and failure in Missionary Enterprise which is the whole purpose for a client nation existing.

It is, therefore, extremely destructive for the client nation to have people running for office who are irresponsible. It is also supremely destructive for the client nation to have people casting their votes for these people running for office who also are totally self centered and irresponsible. When the nation gets to the point of the population being collectively involved in the Interlocking System of Arrogance, the status of National Arrogance and the resultant degeneracy, the people and therefore those in political office are totally irresponsible. Irresponsibility in government administration is always a reflection of the status of the people of that nation, especially in a democratic form of government such as a Republic, where people express themselves through the voting franchise.

*Article:* Charles Reese, Pensacola Journal, Nov 10 1970. "The "GAME" of government in Washington is to appeal to greed, envy, and stupidity to mask a massive theft of liberty by government. The question with regard to capital is 'WHO should spend earned capital?'"

The government under Jimmy Carter pushed in a "windfall profits tax" which is completely unconstitutional and totally motivated from the influence of EVIL. TAXES on profits are taxes on MONIES already earned and ALREADY taxed and do not effect the gross revenue of the companies being taxed. Under LEGITIMATE Free Enterprise systems businesses DO NOT PAY TAXES but simply collect tax monies from Consumers! In reality all business or corporate taxes are taxes on the American people as INDIVIDUALS. Contrary to the propositions of socialism, the imminent threat to the freedom of the American people is from GOVERNMENT not from private industry at any level. The representatives in the American government today do not believe in liberty and constantly try to subvert the underlying principle of the American War for Independence which is that ALL POWER AND ALL RIGHTS RESIDE IN THE PEOPLE.

They try, many times successfully, to constantly sell to the people the idea that all rights reside in the government and that the government will dole out whatever portions it chooses. In order to SELL tyranny and dictatorship they paint industry as evil. Not only is liberty indivisible so also is power indivisible. A society in which the corporation is NOT free is one in which the PEOPLE are not free. If government is given power to rule corporations it has also been given power to rule the people as slaves. Socialism and Communism infiltrating the thinking of Americans has built an inherent trust of government and a distrust of corporate business. However, the reality is that it is Government not business which is the threat to life and liberty. This is a simple expression of the Laws of Divine Establishment. When this nation was founded, the founders distrusted central government, and in forming a federal government they gave it almost NO POWER. What power it possessed was diversified in a system of checks and balances between the 3 branches of the new American government. The power actually was given to the states and once this States Rights power was reversed, initially by Lincoln and more emphatically by Franklin Roosevelt, this was the beginning of the end for all American freedoms. If America still had states rights the governor of a state could ORDER all federal income taxes to be diverted to the state treasury and held in escrow until the federal government stopped oppressing the people. In this way the federal government could no longer practice the immorality of bribing states with federal funds. Taxation is not wrong but the money taken from the citizens as taxes was, at the time of this lesson, being used to bribe the states to enforce a 55 mph speed limit on major roads. Whenever federal tax payer's funds are provided for any reason to any entity, including state governments, they always come with conditions. As a result of this trend in the American governmental system freedoms have been removed and very few remain.

When civil power contradicts the word of God it subverts and denies the source of its own authority. One of the most difficult and dangerous things in Human History is to hold rulership authority in a national entity on any level because the ruler is responsible directly to the source of that authority. And whether he knows God and that God exists or not, he WILL BE called to task for his responsibility to God and receive Divine Discipline if he has not carried out his duties properly. This is obviously completely ignored today in the government of the United States of America. It is impossible to determine which is most difficult in life, being a Pastor Teacher or being a ruler of a nation at any level. Human Arrogance and rejection of authority leads to anarchy and human power in anarchy leads then to despotism and tyranny. Christian obedience to the defacto authority inevitably leads to true civil and spiritual freedom. The elevation of honor, integrity and virtue in compliance with the Laws of Divine Establishment will accomplish more than revolution ever could no matter how justifiable the revolution appears to be. An excuse can always be found for revolution because people have Old Sin Natures and one can always justify revolution on the basis of any corrupt authority which exists. As the believer assimilates Bible Doctrine he controls his own Old Sin Nature a little better but even with Bible Doctrine in the soul he can still be corrupted by the allure of great power and as a result engage in anti-doctrinal activities. Power always corrupts Arrogant people and when given power the Arrogant become tyrants. Corrupted power is the foundation of communism or fascism and both are systems of socialism which inevitably turn to and rely on violence for control of the people and both are systems of collective Arrogance.

The Nazi holocaust is a red herring and the Russian and Chinese communists use this historical event to distract the world from the Evils which are the basis of communism and the Nazis are basically gone but communism, along with islam, are the greatest world threats today.

United States of America which began its history as a republic has become a socialistic democracy through the degeneracy of collective involvement in the Interlocking System of Arrogance. There is gross lack of Humility in all the people and a permeation of Arrogance in the citizens. This condition is necessary for [Political Arrogance](#) to exist and therefore interlocks with Political Arrogance. In the United States of America today the level of degeneracy and Arrogance of the people individually and also collectively as a nation can be observed by looking at those elected by the people. The Arrogance of the elected representatives, considering themselves to be above the law and they being ELECTED to office, reflects directly the Arrogance of the people of the nation. If, over the years, people in a nation have said NO to the Absolute Truth of the Laws of Divine Establishment, then when it comes time to vote and elect a government they will always, in Arrogance, vote for advancing their own self interest and gaining more personal support from the government. If you open a voting franchise to irresponsible people in a society, it is inevitable that you will get irresponsibility in government and this is the status today of the United States of America. This had its beginning in the early 1900's and now is suppurating with the desire by liberals to allow non-citizen "ILLEGAL ALIENS" to vote as well. Any system which gives the majority an opportunity to express itself in time of apostasy and degeneracy is obviously going to result in the wrong people in control of the system. The American government has been failing in its function as a government as a result of trying to adjust people in their social life to each other in order to appease the population and for the elected to retain their elected office. This is not, by any stretch of the imagination, the purpose of government.

The Constitution of the United States of America is the most perfectly devised instrument of government in modern history. This Constitution demands integrity from all citizens of the nation, especially from those who exercise the voting franchise. The American Constitution is greater than the Magna Carta because it demands more INTEGRITY from the citizens than any other document in Human History outside of the Word of God. The terrible Truth and overriding fact is that it cannot and will not ever work without personal integrity residing in the people. It stands as a CHALLENGE and if any generation of the citizens of the United States of America completely lack integrity the nation will be destroyed and the first stage of this imminent destruction is degeneration into some form of democracy. Without integrity on the part of both believer and unbeliever as citizens the Constitution cannot and will not function. The Magna Carta demanded integrity on the part of the Barons of England, the RULERS, not the people. Therefore, it cannot in any way be compared to the Constitution of the United



States of America so that in fact, there is no statement of freedom, responsibility and integrity in Human History which can compare to this American Constitution. When the people of this nation lose their integrity, which they obviously have, they have in effect lost their loyalty to the United States of America and above all their honor. The Constitution of the United States of America demands HONOR in every stage or phase of American life, whether you live in the ghetto, a highrise condo or a vast estate, and the people of this nation have LOST this.

A man who has maximum authority or power is no stronger than the people that advise him. When a person has great authority and is weak as most of our presidents have been since Theodore Roosevelt, these men are no stronger than the advice they receive. This authority thus falls to the advisers not the elected representatives and these advisers have been running the United States of America for a great deal of its history, and has been the status totally and completely in the majority of this 21<sup>st</sup> century so far. These people, who are by default in charge of the government, are conspiratorial, socialistic, communistic, now even moslem and all are anti-American. All have and continue to sell this country out for their own personal benefit because of their divorcement from reality thinking that communism or islam is greater than freedom and Americans, for some incomprehensible idiotic reason, admire one or the other or both of these. Many individuals and government administrators are under pressure from the national council of churches or the united nations both a cancer to all societies in human history, especially American. Weak people are thereby elected by weak voters and the advisers to these electees are stronger than those they advise and by their advising assume control of the power of the nation. Only very rarely can strong people be elected because the voting population generally fear them and this is another reason why Donald Trump was a good candidate for president and was a great president and also why he has had so much continued opposition by both political parties and much of the people. This is why any election system never has and never will work properly and why the perfect form of government is an enlightened absolute monarchy such as when The Lord Jesus, The Christ rules the earth for 1000 years in the millennium.

What is 'BEST' for this country has not been an issue to the representatives in the United States government since Herbert Hoover left office and since Hoover the nation has survived ONLY because The Lord Jesus, The Christ controls Human History and because of the number of mature believers in the pivots and because America has, in the past, properly fulfilled specific client nation functions. This client nation is in a state of hovering disaster today and descending rapidly into that disaster. There never was a gasoline shortage in the 70s and it was totally a department of energy conspiracy or system for controlling the people just as the panic instilled by the government concerning the Wuhan CCP virus was in 2019. Rationing of anything and restricting public gatherings is totally a manifestation of Evil and rationing means that any useless person can receive at any given time the same thing that any contributing person can get. These both destroy freedom and set up a system of equality making everyone equal to the scum and dregs of society who get the same consideration as honorable contributing members of society get. Rationing is always from Evil but may be a necessity during time of War, as a temporary measure, to prevent depleting of essential resources for the

war machine but otherwise is totally based on EVIL. This situation of the 70s is the same as the current requirement by the government for Auto or Health Insurance purchased either voluntarily on the open market or mandated through the government. It is the same as the government through their “rules” or “regulations” telling the people that they must wear a mask in public or keep 6 feet away from other people or receive a vaccination for the pseudo emergency caused by the Wuhan CCP Virus of 2019. Rationing and forced compliance is a system of tyranny against the people of the nation. Americans have been under hovering disaster since the 1960’s and the people of this nation either don’t know it or know it and react to it by ignoring it with a total divorcement from reality.

The Sole REAL purpose of government is to protect and guarantee freedom, self determination, privacy, property and life to the individual and to support Free Enterprise and protect it from [Criminality](#) and [Crusader Arrogance](#). This provides the environment for attaining what ever is related to one’s own motivation and volition. This proper government purpose is always totally destroyed by the principles of socialism. For mankind, freedom mainly exists in 2 spheres:

- ✧ Human Life – as a result of the Divine imputation of soul life to the biological life of the fetus at physical birth.
- ✧ Spiritual Life as a result of the Divine imputation of the Righteousness of God at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God through faith alone in The Lord Jesus, The Christ alone.

Therefore, believers have human freedom and spiritual freedom and both are courtesy of:

- ✧ Military victory whenever the nation is functioning under the principles of God detailed in the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions
- ✧ The Lord Jesus, The Christ controlling Human History.

Always with Self Righteousness comes hypocrisy. There are police officers in Law Enforcement who now have very little power and when they unionize, which they all have done, the unions being controlled by criminals now result in the police being controlled by criminals. People who use violence in committing crimes, kidnap or take hostages, push drugs, should be publicly executed no matter what is promised to them to get them into custody and secure their cooperation in arresting others. A moral government always honors its Law Enforcement officers and encourages them, and does not discourage them by honoring and giving criminals rights which in reality they do not have. A moral government builds up its military and does not degrade it and use it for social experimentation. A moral government never gives handouts to scum nor tells companies that they have to give jobs to hippies, stupid and unqualified people, or people to fill a racial or gender quota and that they have to hire them and then can’t fire them. American is immoral in government and in the citizens as well and is Arrogant, Petty and Self Righteous and therefore, the United States deserves to be destroyed. The ONLY things which can deliver this nation from its own self induced destruction are the development of a large pivot of mature believers and the fact that The Lord Jesus, The Christ controls Human History.

Freedom as an invention of God is an underlying principle permeating all Bible Doctrine and Freedom must exist with privacy in order for their to be free, uncoerced self determination.

This is, in fact, why the human soul is invisible. It is essential that individuals possess property and the government NEVER have a right ever to intrude on the property of citizens in any way with any rules and even if a person wants to kill himself by driving junk vehicles without brakes he has a right to do that and if others die in the crash it was their time to leave this life under a Divine decision. There is an ongoing attack on police officers by the citizen who is the first one to call police when there is trouble in his periphery. Today there is a fulfillment of the principle that people are ON THEIR OWN having destroyed Law Enforcement by acquiescing to liberal bleeding hearts being concerned about criminals. The people have been encouraged over and over again to take the steps needed to protect and defend themselves in what ever way they can by CONSERVATIVE Law Enforcement personnel and government representatives because of the violence of criminal gangs, terrorists and now overt revolutionists on our own streets. Today there is not enough presented in the media about the cases where people kill criminals when they have been attacked. There has been an ongoing effort by liberals to confiscate firearms which is totally unconstitutional and an invasion of freedom and privacy by taking away personal property. Over all these abuses is an authority and all the authority situations in this society have been distorted by giving authority to those who should not ever have it, such as labor and their unions, students and enlisted men.

Administration in the government in this country (it is certainly not LEADERSHIP) instead of following the Laws of Divine Establishment available to both believer and unbeliever and instead of standing by principles of freedom, is producing the superimposition of the tyranny of socialistic order and welfare state functions on the nation through deception of the American people. The People applauded when the government forced parents to bring their child for medical care when they opposed it, this is an attack on freedom. During the “Wuhan CCP Virus ‘pandemic’” people felt safer because the government told them to wear masks in public, stay at least 6 feet away from other people, and to not leave their own home unless it was essential, all which is a total overreach of government and total infringement on freedom. If government can force medical care on the people then there is a precedent for legally usurping parental authority and jurisdiction over the child which may become crucial because even now there is the ongoing propagandizing of children with socialism and communism and sexual deviance in the public education system. The courts can and will use this precedent to say that the individual has no self determination in what they will accept or reject and thereby have no control over their own children. The next step is that all children belong to the state and this is the end of a nation’s freedom. When parental authority is destroyed the most basic orientation to life is also destroyed. The home, school, church are all legitimate places to exercise authority over children and in these entities it is not to be done for bullying as a device of Evil but for TRAINING as a preparation for life. It will not be long in this United States before the STATE in big government will remove any opportunity to TRAIN one’s own children. Counteracting this trend is the purpose of preparatory bible classes in the local churches. In properly training a child whenever one or a group of children become unruly they MUST be corrected and a lesson taught about the principles which have been violated and it is this correction which gives them orientation to life and a chance to develop capacity for all aspects of life. These children will become great as a result of their orientation to authority

and to freedom. However, they must also be thoroughly inculcated with what constitutes LEGITIMATE Authority in any given situation. When the church has no chance to bring the Gospel or Bible Doctrine to the children and parents have no chance to exercise authority over their children and train them there WILL be provided welfare state functions in which all children will belong to the state. This is superimposed on the people through deception and an appeal to the people in this area has been and still is a simple one, where everything the government wants done to deceive the people is said to be “the greater good for the greater number” which is ABSOLUTE TOTAL EVIL. It has been people like Ralph Nader who have instigated the removal of freedoms for just this purpose with the pushing in of more and better “safety” features in consumables such as:

- Seat Belts in cars
- Air Bags in Cars
- Child proof caps on medicines
- and much more.

Instead of Free Enterprise making adjustments, the ‘Naders’ of society have instigated them. Therefore it is painfully obvious that as government becomes bigger and bigger there is and will continue to be less and less freedom and greater and greater tyranny.

The American government is infected by the insanity of Marxist socialism, welfare state functions and destruction of self determination through bureaucratic agencies such as OSHA, EPA, BATFE, etc., which in fact intend to destroy everything they touch. This government is immoral and it is illegal according to the constitution for our representatives to do most of the things they have done since long before the 1970s. If one owns have a gas field or oil field one can sell that gas or oil for any price he wants and the government should not be able to regulate it, but they do. There should be incentives to look for other fuel or other energy sources and there should be thousands of atomic energy plants and foundries but these are not compatible with OSHA and EPA ‘rules’ so they do not get constructed or when they exist they are shut down. These rules were put into place without the proper governmental system of LEGISLATION through elected representatives. Having firearms is part of the individual’s right to defend himself against criminality, but ever so much more than that, it is essential to keep government tyranny in check and the government has no LEGITIMATE legal right to regulate firearms in any way. If a person is in agreement or supportive of ANY TYPE OF GUN CONTROL, including registration, licensing, requiring training, etc., such as already exists then HE IS SUPPORTIVE OF TYRANNY.

The Modus Vivendi of strong delusion leads to the function of Error so that every client nation in the Church Age destroys itself through the ERROR of national [Black out of the Soul](#) and [Scar Tissue of the Soul](#) and degeneracy from involvement in the Interlocking System of Arrogance, long before some outside nation administers the 5<sup>th</sup> cycle of Divine Discipline. The 5<sup>th</sup> cycle of Divine Discipline is not a sudden national military disaster until the nation, over a period of time, destroys itself from within. In today’s world, all embassies in all nations are spy centers for intelligence gathering for their parent nation. Every nation who accepts an embassy from another recognizes that in that embassy there are a number of intelligence operatives. Since 1945 the World has been spying on each other through their embassies. But NO nation in the

world has ever 'ACCEPTED' and permitted another nations master spy system to function without reprisal except the United States of America. In addition to the embassies America has accepted, in its total imbecility and divorcement from reality, it has accepted and HOUSED the UNITED NATIONS the greatest master spy organization ever to exist in the history of the world. None of this is by any stretch of the imagination 'proper' governmental function, especially not for a client nation to God.

### **Individual Integrity & National Arrogance**

There is NO decision of any INDIVIDUAL which ever hinders the recovery of a national entity because the recovery depends on who and what God is not who or what any individual or group is. No matter how great a believer ever becomes spiritually he must never assume that the Plan of God revolves around his success or failure. This is the epitome of human Arrogance and makes it impossible for this individual to function properly with any level of authority. The individual believer's success or failure during a national crisis has an effect on the client nation status based on whether he has reached Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God or not. Upon reaching Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God he receives his Escrow Super – Grace blessing package which is supportive for the nation but IF he fails in his Spiritual Life and in the Plan of God and is required to be the recipient of Divine Discipline from God this is also reflected in a loss of support for the nation. People who have fear in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul will not help the client nation either in prosperity nor in disaster. This is typical of people who reach the top in life and have great prosperity or success but do so without Bible Doctrine. They constantly run frightened and fear losing what they have gained. No matter their rank or position they are totally insecure. As a result they become preoccupied with the potential for their own death from their developed Scar Tissue of the Soul and increased Arrogance. Loss of collective public integrity is the direct result of national entrance into the Interlocking System of Arrogance. The Interlocking System of Arrogance is degeneracy and in the collective population of the United States of America it has distorted this republic into an Arrogant socialistic democracy. This is the final step before the fall of this nation into total anarchy and revolution, the reality of which, in fact, has been demonstrated by the illegal and unconstitutional riots and 'demonstrations' of the past decade.

Things in the United States of America have been so bad politically since the 1960s that now every small group wants a piece of the power and everyone is saturated with Arrogance. The level of involvement in the Interlocking System of Arrogance in this country is almost unbelievable and lack of professionalism and responsibility in government had reached a high in 1979 but in this 21<sup>st</sup> century has far exceeded that. Some believers are so prejudiced and so mixed up that instead of seeing and following doctrinal principles they are distracted by selfcenteredness in their own field of interest. If they are in labor they are focused on labor and the benefits they can extract from being in labor. If they are in federal bureaus then they focus on that and the power they can derive from establishing rules for others to follow. Even Free Enterprise conservatives are very mixed up and have failed to assert themselves and take a stand against government interference in business. Therefore, even before the 1979 period the oil companies and big auto manufacturers had been pushed around like little children. Those like Nader and the liberal press have had more influence on the nation than anything else in



American history, all to the extreme national detriment.

Student protests in the 1960's and the 80's demonstrations against the draft and war and the 'antifa' and 'black lives matter' movement demonstrations in the 21<sup>st</sup> century and the fomented riots resulting from these were and are illegal, unconstitutional and absolutely Arrogant to the core. Among these protesters there was and is NO OBJECTIVITY. During these 80's protests the students involved sounded like the citizens of Iran speaking against Shaw of Iran in the United States of America. The student protesters of the 60's were totally subjective and did not understand the principles of the Laws of Divine Establishment in any way and the necessity to totally support their nation when at war. In 2024 the students protesting in support of establishing a totally EVIL islamic Palestinian nation and opposing Israel defending its national sovereignty are clueless as to the reality of the principles behind these situations. A Military Draft is not slavery as they had claimed in the 80s, it is an essential function of government along with universal military training that must exist in order to protect the freedoms in a nation. The republic demanded by the Constitution of the United States of America is honorable. The democracy which results from the involvement of citizenry in the Interlocking System of Arrogance is based totally on EVIL and is a fine vernier over anarchy. Because America has become an Arrogant it has become a nation with its every function based on and influenced by EVIL. The level of Evil underlying every function in this nation is clearly seen in the interference and the ultimate destruction of the people of Rhodesia and South Africa and by the support of those communists who terrorized the people in those nation and others in South and Central America.

A nation always gets what it deserves under the principle of The Lord Jesus, The Christ controlling Human History. The United States of America has been, for at least 70 years, begging for its destruction. The people are actually appealing to God through their attitudes and actions, asking that he destroy this nation in the most horrible of ways. They generally have not learned the abilities needed, nor developed the capacity, to go it alone in life and they instead remain constantly dependent on other people and use them as crutches in life. They depend on situations and when they find a nice situation then they don't want it jeopardized and don't want the boat rocked by such things as the principles of freedom and fighting, stopping and destroying communism and islam. Communist leaders know very well that most people in this nation are afraid of fighting for freedom and deathly afraid of war and as a result of this know they can be blackmailed by means of their fear of difficulty and disaster. Just as the people have lost the ability to go it alone when they are hurt and when they face personal disaster, they can no longer, as a nation of individuals, make decisions based on honor in times of difficulty and no longer have the ability to both live and die with honor and integrity. The United States of America is obviously an apostate nation with its only hope found in Bible Doctrine. The only preparation for the disasters coming to this nation and which it is presently on the very brink of, is found in Metabolized Bible Doctrine which must be saturated into the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul of the individual believer. This is the only source of the ability and capacity to be able to go it alone. The believer must be able to go it alone in life and this can be wonderful when there is capacity as a result of maximum Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul which results in a gain of prosperity

in all areas of life. Without capacity for life and the prosperity which one may gain, life is meaningless and in fact brings misery for him. The believer must avoid selfishness and Arrogance and MUST BE inflexible about the [Essentials](#) of life which are based on Bible Doctrine, and totally inflexible about all nonessentials and must totally avoid divorcement from reality which is the inevitable result of involvement in the Interlocking System of Arrogance.

### **National Integrity & Its Leadership**

There is a historical principle that every nation has a leadership which it deserves and if it does not deserve its leadership for some reason then that leadership is removed. Past Leaders, although being dictatorial, in Iran and Nicaragua were removed from their countries because the people did not deserve them as leaders and these leaders were too good for those people. The Truth of this was observed when the Iranians in the United States in the late 70's constantly were demonstrating against the Shah of Iran. The Shah had to be removed because he did not reflect the attitude of his people in their incredible Arrogance. This is why there are passages in the Old and New Testament Scripture commanding the people to HUMBLE THEMSELVES. Repentance (a change of thinking) and Humility actually mean changing one's attitude from Arrogance to [Humility](#).

The greatest testing is still to come to believers in this nation and the greatest test of distraction is where believers become very enthusiastic in the election process about some candidate who they perceive as one who will solve all or their problems. The choice for believers is generally between 1 of 2 evils and in effect becomes putting trust in a man and as the bible clearly states, "Cursed is the man who puts his trust in Man and blessed is the man who puts his trust in the Lord". It is also very easy to become distracted from Bible Doctrine in times of disaster. This nation has been living during times of hovering disaster for a very long time where many disasters have already touched down and now the beginnings of many devastating future disasters can be observed. There have been Political disasters in the treaties with communist and moslem nations. Also military disasters in the Korean war, Vietnam war and Afghanistan War and the dramatic reduction of military strength and still there is total failure by the people to realize that all freedom comes from military victory and America now has a military which is smaller than what existed prior to World War II. America has constantly compromised with communism in Russian and China, two of the absolute greatest systems from Evil in the history of the world, along with the single greatest system of Historical Evil found in islam and this can only bring disaster to the United States.

America has had bureaucracy disasters, the greatest tragedies in the nation for the lives of the people, where the government has been competing with big business since Franklin Roosevelt. However, the government cheats in this competition by passing bureaucratic 'RULES' against Free Enterprise and big business so that the inefficiency of big government wins every time over the greatness of big business efficiency and Free Enterprise. In Free Enterprise those who are inefficient are punished with failure and bankruptcy and destruction. Those who are efficient move on and up to great success and profit. Free Enterprise is therefore a system of the courageous and efficient surviving and the men with brains, courage, and power are the only survivors in big business. Our federal government is the antithesis of this where the

inefficient and those saturated with EVIL survive and do so by cheating and using the legitimate legal system and distorting it into tyranny based on EVIL against big business. The pseudo oil shortages and rise of oil prices starting in the 1970's was not caused by the oil companies but the Evil inefficiency of the government bureaucracy, the department of energy, which was one of the greatest Evils in government at that time. Because people realize that this and many other such things are the result of government failure, they will focus on trying to find the solution to the problem by promoting their chosen candidate for office. There is no candidate nor any person in the entire history of the world who can solve the problems of this nation because it is functioning totally under the Satanic Cosmic Dynaspheres. There is however a very definite solution but this is readily set aside by the distraction caused by elections. Many believers enter into political involvement and become enamored with different candidates and various social action propositions as a result of becoming INVOLVED to the point that they will be distracted from the real solution. The only true solution to a nations difficulties is related to the Doctrine of Election and the function of the believer in moving from [Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God](#) to [Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God](#) by consistent Post Salvation Epistemological Rehabilitation from daily Perception, Cognition, Inculcation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine.

### **5 Cycles of Divine Discipline & National Arrogance**

[Flexibility](#) is what the believer absolutely must have in life especially the Spiritual Life. It keeps him from becoming demon obsessed but because he is a believer, he cannot ever be demon possessed. However, he can and very often is demon obsessed, believing ONLY the LIE of Evil, Satan's plan, policy and function through involvement in the apostasy of [Reversionism](#) and the inevitable development of [Scar Tissue of the Soul](#). By consistently saying "NO" to Bible Doctrine and building up Scar Tissue of the Soul in Reversionism he also builds up a deeper involvement in Arrogance and as greater levels of the LIE enter his soul and he believes ONLY the LIE and this is the "strong delusion" of [2Thes 2](#). The threat of historical disaster for any generation can hover for a full generation without occurring and today it can be observed to have been hovering every day for many decades but it has not occurred yet. The believer must be very careful when he observes disaster hovering over the nation as it does now and since the 1960s. Today it actually hovers over the entire world and though it hovers it does not strike. Disaster is only restrained in a client nation to God by the pivot of mature believers and by the fact that The Lord Jesus, The Christ controls Human History through that pivot. Since 1932 when Franklin Roosevelt came to office disaster has been hovering over the United States and gaining in destructive power but this country has never really had it strike as yet. The people of the United States have never really suffered in this country as other nations have since the great depression of the 30s, although during World War II there was a degree of sacrificial suffering with God as the motivation. Americans have not known what it is like to have total lawlessness where one can only rely on one's own abilities in order to protect himself. This situation now seems to be on the very near horizon today in this first quarter of the 21<sup>st</sup> century.

### **Divine Discipline for National Arrogance**

Any nation which falls into national Arrogance MUST BE PUNISHED. If the pivot of mature

believers is large enough then the nation will survive if it is not then it will be destroyed. If the nation under discipline is to survive then it will be punished SEVERELY and in so doing the INCOMPETENT people will be brought to the top. God uses highly incompetent and terribly Arrogant people to discipline any nation saturated with national Arrogance. One only needs to observe the Obama and Biden administrations and Democratic party functions for more than 16 years to clearly see this trend in America. The combination of greatly incompetent people in civil or temporal administrative positions and a totally competent spiritual leadership is what is essential for the cycles of Divine Discipline to result in the nation being preserved and NOT destroyed. In the United States of America today there is very little in the way of competent spiritual leadership but that can change. God will use any available competent spiritual leader in order to provide the discipline for the nation but maintain the client nation's survival. There must be a great Humility factor in any chosen leader of the spiritual life. No nation is invincible and no nation survives its population's involvement in the Interlocking System of Arrogance and the resultant national degeneracy. The believer under Positive Volition toward Bible Doctrine and the Plan of God, must always consider, "Am I an Arrogant believer contributing to the fall of my nation", if so he must focus more on Bible Doctrine and this is the only effort which will deliver the nation.

### Reasons for National Destruction

As a nation the United States should have been destroyed many times over as demonstrated by:

- ✧ The Arrogance of the media
- ✧ The imbecility of the administration
- ✧ The insanity of bureaucracies
- ✧ The violation of every principle of the Laws of Divine Establishment
- ✧ The violation of every principle of the Divine Institutions
- ✧ The overall acceptance of Welfare state functions
- ✧ The Rampant Socialism in government
- ✧ The Systematic degradation of the military
- ✧ The Catering to minorities who have no understanding of freedom
- ✧ The Systematic Destruction of Free Enterprise
- ✧ The Soft attitudes toward communism and islam.
- ✧ The IDIOTIC Support of islamic and communist nations
- ✧ The population totally divorced from reality
- ✧ The propagandizing and brainwashing of children throughout their public education
- ✧ The toleration of Marxist revolutionists unconstitutionally "Demonstrating"

As a result of these and many other factors the people have been and are now subject to any petty dictator who comes along such as R. Nader, F. Roosevelt, B. Obama or J. Biden and N. Pelosi because of the apostasy and degeneracy of this country. In this country both believers and unbelievers live life in the apostasy of Reversionism and divorced from reality in various stages of the degeneracy of the Interlocking System of Arrogance. This is a nightmare for all apart from consistent inculcation of Bible Doctrine. Treaties made with communist or moslem nations are sell outs by the American government to these countries and will never bring peace but only slavery to the citizens here. The norms and standards of the Integrity of God are

perfect and eternal and transferred from infinity and eternity into concepts which man can grasp as the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions. In order to honor the Integrity of God the believer must fight for his freedoms against the communists and moslems and any others who want to take them from him. In spite of the incredible disasters, which are hovering like tornadoes waiting to blow this country away, the people here still exist and function to some degree normally because The Lord Jesus, The Christ controls Human History. Apparently there is still enough of a small remnant of mature [Jeshurun](#) believers to sustain the United States for a little more time. The United States has had some military disasters in the Korean, Vietnam and Middle East Wars but never the total disaster which it is on the brink of today. Because of a nonexistent pivot and because The Lord Jesus, The Christ now controls Human History and because America generally still has a good attitude toward the Jews along with a very few good missionaries the nation has been sustained as a client nation. However, when a nation absorbs into its culture the concept of the importance of "What is Appropriate" it causes the people to lose the dynamism of their culture. When a person cannot say something because he might or will "offend" someone and there are a maximum number of people standing around waiting to be offended, the nation is involved in maximum National Arrogance. This is the Status Quo in the United States of America today.

Contradictions cannot exist in the Plan of God and anything which contradicts the Spiritual Life hinders the Believer in his attempts to execute the Plan. Arrogance is a major contradiction of the Protocol Plan of God for the Church Age and a primary reason for failure of the Church Age Believer and by extension his nation. Arrogance wipes out any wisdom accumulated in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul from Metabolized Bible Doctrine. Wisdom cannot coexist in any way within the Arrogance Complex and Arrogance as a complex of sin and degeneracy is insidious and pervasive and all encompassing. All distortions of the Spiritual Life result from the Arrogance of the Believer who rejects the life of Wisdom under the Protocol Plan of God for the Church Age and the [Royal Family Honor Code](#). In Arrogance there is always a pervasive compromise with carnality which is destructive to the individual Believer and the client nation because there can never be a compromise with God. True wisdom, which is the result of consistent Perception, Cognition, Incultation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine, cannot survive or coexist with the Arrogance systems derived from EVIL. In order to learn this concept many times the Believer must suffer intensive divine punishment as a result of rejection of and failure to use the [Rebound Procedure](#) while the Lord is bringing down the national entity as a result of the attack of religion. This rejection with involvement in religion brings judgment from the Integrity of God in order to preserve the next generation of the client nation. Those who seek wisdom as a result of the execution of the Spiritual Life get their warnings from the failure of other contemporary Believers. Unfortunately in the United States of America today the children are indoctrinated in a myriad of aspects of Evil and do not receive any input of Bible Doctrine in their homes or Local Churches and thus the "next generation" seems to be lost already.

As part of the human race, all having the genetic old sin nature, every individual is prone to overrate his successes and enter into the Interlocking System of Arrogance. People are prone to overemphasize what they do and relegate it to being the cause of their success whenever



possible. Even one small success in the life of most Christians will last them all their lives as a motivation to promote more of their own success. All of the Human Race is in a system designed by God called the Laws of Divine Establishment which defines success and when a person does succeed and thinks they are the reason for their own success they have rejected God's system entirely. A primary example are entertainers who financially succeed and gain tremendous approbation in a system where people can without coercion go to be entertained by them and then these entertainers reject the establishment system which has brought them success and turn to liberalism, socialism, communism and anti-establishment concepts and principles. This is CLEARLY and OBVIOUSLY evident in the constant liberal dribble which comes from Hollywood with regard to the status of this nation and the function of the Trump administration. Any person who is a citizen of the United States of America and a communist is an Arrogant SOB. This is the one country in the world where the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions can give a person success and yet these people once they have become successful then turn around and reject the system. If this is not ARROGANCE nothing is.

In the Age of Israel many of the prophets could clearly see the coming of the fall of Israel while today in the United States of America the mature believer can clearly see the coming of the fall of the United States of America as it continually degenerates into a socialistic communist country. This is easily observed in the liberal press coverage and promotion of Obama, Biden, and other idiotic high administrators in this government and their coterie and their agenda for the destruction of this nation in all areas including the military degradation. In addition there have been a plethora of unconstitutional demonstrations which degenerated into great riots and disasters. Also there is the failure of most American men to understand their DUTY to serve in the military. This has grown much worse since the Vietnam war where POLITICIANS held the military back and allowed south Vietnam and Cambodia to be overtaken totally by communism just as the government did in eastern Europe after WINNING World War II. There is the destruction of industry in all areas in the United States since that same time and until the Trump Administration it had been impossible for American industry to compete in the world markets and is now again that way. There has been the insidious consistent attempts at the nationalization of industry which always results in greater failure of industry overall. There exists in the American government systems of bureaucracy which are responsible to no one but only to the Arrogant ideas of those in control of them and this colossal Arrogance absolutely demands national destruction. The United States of America will go down as a nation if the people continue to permit the continued existence and function of these bureaucracies in the government. It should have been clear that bureaucracies were of absolutely no value and could do nothing good by observation of the Bureau of Indian Affairs and how it functioned and the corruption which started during the administration of Ulysses Grant and which has come down to the present times in all other bureaucratic functions. There can never be bureaucracies in a properly functioning republic based on the integrity of the people since the bureaucracies do not answer to the people. Both cannot survive together and either bureaucracies will destroy the republic or the republic will stop bureaucracies. This is exactly the same as the principle that there cannot be tyranny and freedom in coexistence and a Republic as a government promotes freedom and Bureaucracies are in their very nature

tyrannical.

When the civilians in government permitted the United States Army to be an experimental ground for psychologists and psychiatry they began the destruction of the first line of defense for freedom. In the United States there are constant attacks by the government on Free Enterprise and business, on the military and on the freedom, privacy and property of the individual. It is painfully obvious that American citizens are being squeezed daily into a tighter mold of tyranny as they constantly lose more freedom and this is aided by a socialistic Marxist media. The nation faces disaster in all areas of society and no one seems to realize that almost everything which public officials have done in the last 70+ years has resulted in greater and greater tyranny and betrayal of their own nation. In this light Benedict Arnold looks like a saint. Things had improved to some small extent under the administration of Mr. Trump but with the theft of his reelection the United States is now back on the very brink of total disaster and national destruction and it is a question of which will come first, a communist takeover of the nation, another all out World War or a Civil War in this country. If it is a War, this WILL destroy America because the young people of America have no will or ability to fight and the people in general have no character or ability to become involved in supporting a war effort. The American people do not believe there is anything worth dying for and this is seen because they generally have no ability to truly live a rewarding life. No nation can win a war against communism or islam unless the whole nation is involved in and supportive of such a war. America will not be able to maintain its freedoms in the next big war unless the civilian population along with the military are both totally involved. At this time the United States of America is surely being methodically and systematically destroyed as a nation and unless The Lord Jesus, The Christ who controls history overrules the folly of this nation and there is a revival in the sense of unbelievers turning to the Gospel of Christ and believers returning to Bible Doctrine to become part of the pivot, America will most certainly EXIT history in total disgrace.

In the United States of America the foreign policy has been and still is like Ephraim was, like a silly dove making friends with or bribing the nations functioning under Evil, and kissing the feet of those who oppose the customs, principles and Judaeo-Christian heritage of America. This passage in Hosea describes the United States of America totally and perfectly today. This analogous position is observed in the fall of Moab. ([Is 16:6](#), [Is 28:1-3](#), [Ez 7:10](#), [Hos 7:10-14](#)) The loss of “priest or client nation” status is from individual and collective Reversionism and saturated National Arrogance. The United States of America as a priest nation is following the pattern of maladjustment to the Justice of God as detailed in [Rom 1:18-32](#). Production is needed to maintain the priest status of the nation and this can only result from the consistent, accurate teaching of Bible Doctrine by Pastor Teachers and the Positive Volition response to this by the Royal Family of God in the nation. In addition, this effort must be broken down into congregational organizations never Denominational organizations. Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God by the Royal Family of God in the nation can and, in fact, is the only means to maintain the status quo of a priest nation. The question ultimately becomes “how large is the pivot of mature believers and is it large enough to preserve the priest nation?” For the United States of America, so far today in the 21<sup>st</sup> century the overwhelming answer is clearly NO.

The Justice of God will not tolerate sin in the individual believer nor collectively in the client nation therefore the importance of the Rebound Procedure for the carnal believer and his recovery from the Interlocking System of Arrogance and Reversionism. This applies to the Church Age believer just as it did to the Jewish believer in Israel and GOD will not tolerate carnality nor Interlocking System of Arrogance involvement nor Reversionism. When the believers collectively become involved in Reversionism and the Interlocking System of Arrogance there are 2 systems from God which work under the Justice of God to remove them. Under Reversionism as a result of consistent Negative Volition to Bible Doctrine, there is a shrinking of the pivot of mature believers and an expansion of the spin off of negative believers which WILL BE destroyed by the Justice of God with administration of the 5<sup>th</sup> cycle of Divine Discipline on the nation as a whole. This is the status of the United States of America today as she stands on the brink of such disaster. However, the believer under consistent Positive Volition, who forms the Pivot or is part of the remnant of [Jeshurun](#) believers, however small or large, is protected and preserved by God in all cases. Entanglement in the Interlocking System of Arrogance produces a degeneration in the individual and the nation as a whole. This plus the enlarged spin off of unbelievers and reversionistic believers is a guarantee of historical disaster and destruction for the client nation. Once the [Rebound Procedure](#) ([1John 1:9](#)) is universally being used by the individual believers the Divine Discipline from God can be removed ([1Cor 11:31](#)) OR it can be continued as a cursing which will result in greater blessing. In historical disaster when there is a large enough pivot of mature believers in the client nation, national cursing can be turned to blessing and there can be national recovery. This can result in collective rejection of the Interlocking System of Arrogance and recovery from Reversionism by the individuals in the population. In this case there must be a sort of collective and consistent use of the rebound procedure by individual believers with a continuation of the disaster or catastrophe for a time as they continue to recover with persistence in Positive Volition toward Bible Doctrine. In this case, once there is recovery the 3<sup>rd</sup> and / or 4<sup>th</sup> cycles of Divine Discipline may continue but from that disaster comes a very great blessing resulting in a very strong generation of people.

In the United States of America the government and the banking system have worked very hard to prevent economic depression, this has been and continues to be an INTERFERENCE with the Divine Discipline from God and this is never tolerated by God. Economic disaster is exactly what this nation needs to cause it to wake up. No gentile believer will be spared Divine Discipline from the Justice of God for sin, antisemitism or any involvement in Evil, however, involvement in these things and any resulting Divine Discipline for believers does not entail loss of their salvation. Neither will any gentile client nation to God be spared the cycles of Divine Discipline for national failure and rejection of Bible Doctrine, the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions.

In this period of history in the Church Age, there is restraint on EVIL from the ministry of God the Holy Spirit and The Lord Jesus, The Christ controlling Human History through the believers who reach Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and form a pivot in a nation. The loss of this restraint with regard to any nation can be related to the Interlocking System of

Arrogance producing a category of degeneracy such as was demonstrated by Hitler's Nazis, the Russian, Chinese, Cambodian, and Cuban Communists, Islam, and the myriad of other "religions" and organizations like the national and world counsel of churches. The destruction of the peoples who are taken over by these systems is not because of a lack of restraint in these historical times but because The Lord controlling Human History MUST administer discipline to these nations for reasons essential to perpetuation of the Angelic Conflict and the Human Race. This disciplinary destruction is essential in order that others can be free to choose to advance to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God under their own individual Positive Volition. This dispensation of the Church Age has such divine restraint on Evil as a result of the function of Client Nations, whereby God the Holy Spirit makes it possible for believers to reach Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and from this pivot for the client nation to properly function. In addition and most especially because the Lord is in control of all of human history.

No nation is ever destroyed and removed from history without their overwhelming collective entanglement in the Interlocking System of Arrogance by the population first. Some will be guilty of one category of Arrogance and some another but overall the population will be seriously entangled in the Arrogance complex. In a crisis these individuals cannot stand together. When any group decides to resist the enemy because they have things in common and if there is any one of the categories of the Interlocking System of Arrogance involved with any of the people, when under combat conditions or in guerrilla warfare they will fold up and destroy each other. One of the best things involved in a good military system of training is that there must be the inculcation of discipline to the point of extreme boredom in order to prepare people for the antithesis of boredom which is the great crisis of any combat. Every organization has discipline in some form but it is RARELY inculcated discipline except in some parts of the military or places like Berachah Church in Houston Texas. Inculcated discipline is essential for handling any situation under pressure especially that of combat. If at the end of military basic training one still resists authority he is not fit for combat service and is unquestionably saturated with incurable Arrogance. National Arrogance is a fundamental source of and very often the reason for war as divine judgment against the nation. Arrogance is first the result of a saturation of the individual's soul with influence from Evil, and this is often related to a nation's pride. When pressure is put on that nation's pride it submerges and pushes to the surface Arrogance, vindictiveness, and implacability. This results in war under false pretenses and is the ultimate demise of Arrogant nations. Nations should always fight for Freedom never for Arrogance.

This may seem to be a cruel, harsh statement but remember, when it is one's turn to face personal disaster or for his nation to face the greatest historical disaster of all of its history and national life, when under the greatest pressure in crisis or disaster, loved ones cannot help no matter how close they may be or how wonderful the relationship. Saving money for a rainy day brings one to the rainy day not knowing what to do. The believer must put first priority on Perception, Cognition, Inculcation & Metabolization of Bible Doctrine and must depend always on the inner resources of Bible Doctrine. The best thing one can do for his children is to make sure that they have Bible Doctrine in their Stream of Consciousness of the Soul and

that this will be the foundation for their very personality. Often parents say they want to leave a better world for their children but in reality all one can really do is leave them the best of this world which is Bible Doctrine. Parents must do things for the children based on the absolute necessity for them being Bible Doctrine saturating their Stream of Consciousness of the Soul. There is no substitute for it and no substitute for making it available. Arrogance blinds believers and it must be realized that the only hope for any child is Metabolized Bible Doctrine as a foundational resource in their soul. If one has children who completely fail in life he can very often blame himself as a parent, especially if he allowed them get involved in one of the “christian service” organizations, because these will never give anyone enough Bible Doctrine to face even minor personal disaster.

The believer in The Lord Jesus, The Christ as part of the Royal Family of God, must always remember he is a part of a greater perfect plan where he makes up only a very small part of that plan. When any believer tries to promote himself above the plan by entering into the Cosmic Dynasphere I the Interlocking System of Arrogance or Cosmic Dynasphere II, the Interlocking System of Antagonistic Emotional Hatred, saying in effect that he is more important than the plan, and then allows this to filter down to other believers, these are all saturated with and functioning in Arrogance. The believer must consider that to him has been given the greatest opportunity in human history. This is why it is very often necessary for the slate of history to be cleaned and a Client Nation to be totally removed and a new nation brought up to take its place and begin again with the spiritual vigor necessary to fulfill the Plan of God. When Individual believers in this client nation to God fail in any way, they must not stay out of fellowship under carnality very long nor ever run contrary to the Righteousness of God. Being part of this Plan of God the believer must never promote self beyond the Plan of God for his life and must always remember that IF GOD DOES NOT PROMOTE HIM, HE IS NOT PROMOTED. If one imagines self to be greater than the Plan of God for his life he IS in the Arrogance Complex and therefore not in support of his nation.

One of the signs of coming destruction of the Client Nation to God is degeneracy of the People which results in animal abuse and suffering without any recourse on their part. This is a sign of degeneracy and the imminence of the 5<sup>th</sup> cycle of Divine Discipline to the nation. Divine punishment on a nation in the Old Testament Scripture times often took the form of Drought and Famine which dramatically effected the animal kingdom and explains how the 5<sup>th</sup> cycle of discipline was described with regard to animals. However, domestic animals suffer in a more personal way through cruelty from degenerate owners. Domestic animals have no ability to understand cruelty, neglect, abuse and rejection by their masters to whom they give the utmost in loyalty and devotion. The degeneracy of this type of person results in animal suffering without their being able to have understanding and without any recourse on their part. In addition, when God judges a nation under the cycles of discipline, all consensus regarding freedom is gone in that nation, and in any such ‘group’ the ‘consensus’ reduces thought and decision making to the lowest common denominator. In this case the Arrogance of self preservation takes precedence over the principles of the Laws of Divine Establishment and Bible Doctrine pertinent to the Gospel and the Church Age. Thus the involvement in the Interlocking System of Arrogance results ultimately in involvement in the Interlocking System of Antagonistic



Emotional Hatred and destroys the strength, integrity and virtue of the people both believers and unbelievers. ([Hos 4:3](#)) Unbelievers, in rejection of authority under the Laws of Divine Establishment principles, convert the outside pressures of life into inside pressure of stress in the soul. Believers who reject Bible Doctrine also convert the outside pressures of life to inside pressure of stress in the soul so that neither can ever deal with the pressures of their own lives. Therefore, no nation can ever survive the rejection of the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions nor the rejection of Bible Doctrine by believers.

The Interlocking System of Arrogance involvement destroys the ability and function of reverse concentration therefore blocking or eliminating any application of Metabolized Bible Doctrine to the experiences and situations of life. Reaction against Evil is normal but over reaction makes the believer vulnerable to involvement in Arrogance. The believer has the right to be incensed by the degradation and degeneration of the United States of America today but not to become so involved in overreaction that he puts himself into the Interlocking System of Arrogance by joining organizations which propose revolution. When within the Interlocking System of Arrogance the believer cannot properly interpret the facts of history. Spiritual stability demands cognizance without Arrogance therefore overreaction to disaster and Evil is a matter of Arrogance. Weak leaders in the hands of unscrupulous men are the tools for the destruction of a prosperous nation. This is the national situation in the United States under Joe Biden as a fraudulent president. Arrogant people always underestimate others, especially those with authority or power. Therefore Arrogance is a vicious sin which divorces one from the reality of life. When this is applied to Arrogant nations they are inevitably humbled by the nations which they insult and underestimate just as the United States of America is today.

Freedom and Authority must coexist and authority must always come before freedom. Love must come before desire and if these are reversed the believer is in Arrogance. If love precedes desire this one is in some stage of Humility. When the general population mixes these concepts up it results in the client nation endangering its status with God. This is another principle under which the United States of America may be removed as a client nation to God. America is held together today only because of the status as a client nation and because of a Constitution which sets freedom above all else but the representatives in government and judicial functions consistently choose to no longer follow this phenomenal system because of their involvement in the Interlocking System of Arrogance. This is a loud harbinger of the coming of national destruction to the United States of America.

### **5 Cycles of Divine Discipline on the Client nation**

In the destruction of the client nation divine punitive action is divided into 5 cycles of divine discipline, the first 4 which are designed to WAKE the people of the nation to their degenerate Status Quo and the imminent destruction about to be unleashed upon them in the 5<sup>th</sup> cycle. These are found in the [Old Testament Scripture](#):

- |                       |   |
|-----------------------|---|
| ↗ <b>Lev 26:14-17</b> | 1 <sup>st</sup> cycle a warning that the nation is in trouble |
| ↗ <b>Lev 26:18-20</b> | 2 <sup>nd</sup> cycle intensified divine punishment           |
| ↗ <b>Lev 26:21-22</b> | 3 <sup>rd</sup> cycle intensification of punishment 1&2       |
| ↗ <b>Lev 26:23-26</b> | 4 <sup>th</sup> cycle intensification of punishment 1, 2 & 3  |

↪ **Lev 26:27-46, Deut 28:49-67**

5<sup>th</sup> cycle the complete destruction of the nation.

However, no nation, especially a client nation, is ever destroyed and removed from history apart from a saturation within the nation of national Arrogance and not without a GRACE period as last call for recovery.

### **1<sup>st</sup> Cycle**

In the 1<sup>st</sup> cycle of Divine Discipline on the nation Authority is the greatest issue and the Laws of Divine Establishment must be followed. Free Enterprise goes hand in hand with Christianity in Human History and it must be preserved and adhered to above all other economic considerations to avoid this Divine Discipline. In the first cycle of Divine Discipline one of 2 things will occur, some level of Military Disaster in Defeat or some level of Economic Disaster.

### **2<sup>nd</sup> Cycle**

In the 2<sup>nd</sup> cycle of Divine Discipline on the nation all of the things mentioned for the 1st cycle of Divine Discipline are **Intensified 7 fold**. Arrogance and the misuse of authority and power under Evil always go hand in hand. This results in the degradation or destruction of the legitimate government of the client nation. This nation will be again more intensely defeated in battle and ALSO then suffer greater economic disaster. Many times war or economic adversities are supposed to be a catharsis to cleanse nations of Arrogance as degeneracy and Reversionism as apostasy.

### **3<sup>rd</sup> Cycle**

The 3<sup>rd</sup> cycle of Divine Discipline on the nation results from consistent generalized Negative Volition to Bible Doctrine and national involvement in the Interlocking System of Arrogance. This results in an **ADDITIONAL 7 fold increase** in the Divine Discipline previously mentioned in the 1<sup>st</sup> and 2<sup>nd</sup> cycles. In addition to this, there is unrestrained violence and subjection to terrorism added to the Divine Discipline for the nation.

### **4<sup>th</sup> Cycle**

In the 4<sup>th</sup> cycle of Divine Discipline on the nation (**Prov 3:34, James 4:6, 1Pet 5:5**) the nation is saturated with Arrogance and the other cycles have not stopped the advancement of Arrogance in the nation and as a result God will again increase all the discipline on the nation from the first 3 cycles an **ADDITIONAL 7 fold**. This nation is basically no longer in control of its own destiny or functions and is under the outside control of one or more other nations, physically or economically. In a nation in this Status Quo, when individuals die their remaining loved ones become very upset and disturbed.

### **5<sup>th</sup> Cycle**

In the 5<sup>th</sup> cycle of Divine Discipline on the nation once entered there can be no recovery. There is extreme prolonged suffering and eventual removal of the client nation status which God had graciously provided. Under the 5th cycle of Divine Discipline God breaks the Arrogance of the nation. When a client nation has in its population a maximum number of people saturated with Arrogance who instead of perpetuating Truth in the world through missionary activity they perpetuate Arrogance throughout the world so that this could eventuate

in the degeneracy of the entire world, then God MUST remove them. God cannot permit the subversion of the entire Human Race with Arrogance and the resultant termination of the Angelic Conflict. God will never permit this therefore He WILL first destroy that nation as he did with the Hurrians, Hittites, Amorites, Canaanites, etc. Genghis Khan wiped out whole regions of people not because he wanted to but because of their Arrogance and as a judgment from God. However, God did not permit the Great Khan to go into all of western Europe even though the Khan already knew about all of western Europe from his fantastic spy system.

The salt principle of national preservation is emphasized by the fact that knowledge of all the realms of Bible Doctrine for the believer and the doctrinal principles of the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions for the unbeliever are what preserve the nation under the overriding control of The Lord Jesus, The Christ. When people become animals this results in all animals being out of control. When there is no capital punishment in the animal kingdom then all animals are out of control. When there is no capital punishment in human society then the people are also out of control as well. Lack of consistent presentation of the Absolute Truth of Bible Doctrine results in social degradation in the nation and national Arrogance. *When the 5<sup>th</sup> cycle of Divine Discipline is engaged the Lord first removes those who teach Bible Doctrine then separates the believers with consistent Positive Volition and spiritual advance from those in the apostasy of Reversionism and the degeneracy of the Interlocking System of Arrogance.* God often uses a powerful nation saturated with EVIL to destroy a nation which has lost its salt through the apostasy of Reversionism and the degeneracy of the Interlocking System of Arrogance. This is Evil 1 being used to destroy Evil 2.

### **National Arrogance, Reversionism & Pride**

**Pride** rejects the principle that The Lord Jesus, The Christ controls history. In [Dan 4:37](#) Nebuchadnezzar rejected the control of history by The Lord and was severely disciplined and his recovery allowed him to recognize the Truth of history. There are [5 cycles of Divine Discipline](#) which occur as a result of National Arrogance and [Reversionism](#) and the 2<sup>nd</sup> cycle is Divine Discipline against the economy of the nation where Pride is the greatest untoward aspect. In a nation in this status, when there is economic depression or recession, when the economy is falling apart, the chief characteristic sin of the people related to this failing is PRIDE ([Lev 26:19](#)) The most frequent reason for RECESSION or DEPRESSION is government administrators interfering with the economy in some way trying to avoid the depression or correct the failing economy. They try to juggle the monetary system, they interfere with business by the formation of regulations to control everything, they interfere with supply and demand with pseudo supply, and most importantly they support failing businesses with taxpayer funding. The Laws of Divine Establishment say that in any viable economy Free Enterprise MUST PREVAIL. When there is a recession or depression under Free Enterprise it is to eliminate the unfit and improve the quality of SERVICE rendered by craftsmen and labor. An economic recession or depression should NEVER be interfered with EVER because it is for the good of the nation but in the United States of America for many decades there have been ‘children’ in Washington D.C. trying to juggle the economy and prevent economic disaster. They interfere with the economy and then blame every failing on big business. They do not even realize that when there is government interference with Free Enterprise, that in itself is

making the situation far worse and the nation is preparing for a far more devastating cycle of Divine Discipline. THIS IS PRIDE which is one of the major causes of this type of Divine Discipline judgment. The United States of America will have another great depression whether the ‘children’ in control of the government interfere or not and whether they like it or NOT. When they try to solve a recession or depression by manipulating inflation by the printing and distribution of more currency (which value is based on NOTHING), all this does is make the situation far worse and ultimately will make it last longer when it finally occurs. ([2Chron 32:26](#), [Is 9:9](#))

The true answer and solution to these distortions by government is Humility in government, a far fetched dream for American government today. In this floundering economic case, in government, there is pride when there is no pressure on the nation but when pressure is put on the nation then government begins to violate the Laws of Divine Establishment in trying to regulate economy with legislation and steal taxpayers finances to solve the problem. Legislation is not designed to solve social problems NOR to REGULATE ECONOMY. Legislation is specifically and only to be designed to protect FREEDOM so that people have the option of FAILING or SUCCEEDING, having every right to do either. Legislation also ensures the continuation of the right to privacy and property and to carry on legitimate business, WITHOUT GOVERNMENT INTERFERENCE. When these principles are violated it is the result of national pride and always is related to the destruction of the nation. The United States of America today is either at the very end of the 4<sup>th</sup> cycle of Divine Discipline or already in the beginning stages of the 5<sup>th</sup> cycle. In looking at the level of government interference with business, personal life and freedom during the Wuhan CCP Virus fraud this pattern is clearly demonstrated again. The people administering government now believe they can regulate and control everything in life and this is bringing the nation to the brink of destruction and outright conversion to communism.

This National Pride can be demonstrated by looking back in scripture to MOAB for a prime example. ([Is 16:6](#)) In this case Pride was there and without pressure there is no problem in the nation, however, when pressure is put on the nation then pride releases both mental and verbal sin complexes. Anger is the mental sin but with it there is IDLE BOASTING. Whenever there is Arrogant pride among a people in a national pride situation there will always be [Counterpart Sins](#) present including boasting and anger. National pride is intimately related to the administration of the 5<sup>th</sup> cycle of Divine Discipline. ([Is 28:1-3](#), [Ez 7:10](#), [Hos 7:10-14](#)) This is what occurred in Ephraim because they were a very proud tribe. As long as there is no pressure when a person or nation is under pride things are functional. Many times pride under the pressure of Divine Discipline prevents the reversionistic person or nation from turning around and going back to God. This was the obvious problem clearly demonstrated in the United States of America after the terrorist disaster of 9/11/2001 when Americans began to turn to God but within 6 months fell back into their patterns of Arrogance. Pride is a sin where the person is begging for trouble and will make all the trouble he, himself, can handle without anyone adding to it. All proud people are SILLY people, all proud nations are also SILLY nations and they are both lacking any sense. There is also a totally unknown quantity concerning what may ‘sprout’ from the pride being pressured by adversity or crisis. This is the

foreign policy of Israel calling on Egypt in ancient times and today our foreign policy in the United States of America for many decades making treaties with communists and giving money and support to enemies. This is reversionism and pride is a sin of reversionism and a part of [Motivational Arrogance](#) of [Mental Attitude Arrogance](#). The result for Ephraim was that Assyria was then sent by the Lord to subdue them. The result for the United States of America might be Russian or Chinese communism being sent for subduing American or even Arabic islam.

### **Preparation for the Crisis**

The crises and coming disasters for the United States of America are real and the signs of this can be observed in the daily news media reporting unconstitutional demonstrations, riots and mass shootings where there is total rejection of and opposition to authority with an acquiescence and even support by government officials for this EVIL. All this occurs as a result of mismanagement by the government and its idiotic policies as a result of no one in government administration today having any moral courage to oppose these things. The American economic system is on the brink of total collapse and overall the people in general have no concept of the reality of this. In June of 2023 the government is proposing raising the DEBT ceiling for the United States federal government to 51 TRILLION dollars and today in August of 2024 the federal deficit is beyond 31 TRILLION dollars. This is so ludicrous that it is absolutely incomprehensible. To repay this debt, IF YOU could repay \$1,000,000 per DAY, would take 139,726 YEARS. Every working American would have to pay more than \$11,000 per year for the rest of his or her ENTIRE LIFETIME. The crisis or disaster when it comes to the United States of America is going to be unbelievably devastating and the people keep hearing from the government that there is no real problem and life keeps moving on in a pseudo reality fog of ignoring the problems as they keep presenting themselves, multiplying and ultimately becoming increasingly worse. Just as the storm came suddenly upon the disciples and Jesus in the boat without warning so great disaster comes suddenly without warning. ([Luke 8:22-24](#), [Mk 4:35-39](#), [Matt 8:23-26](#)) Only a person with maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul, like the man who sees a great calm on the seas, would know that when situations are so very calm, like they have been for 4 or more decades in the United States of America, things are in reality desperately difficult and a terrible disaster will be forthcoming. The reality of success vs failure in disaster is that the believer does not need knowledge of the nature of the impending disaster nor of the proposed or imagined human solutions but only maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul to enable him to deal with it.

The United States of America has been receiving warnings for DECADES about the disaster to come to this nation. She is now face to face with it in the form of economic collapse, invasion by illegals, moslems, criminals, terrorists and spies, potential war with China and Russia, the usurping of power and authority by a prior non-citizen president and his cronies in government, the fraudulent taking of power through a manipulated election and installing a mentally incompetent man in the office of president, the destruction of the core freedoms of the nation and the total ignoring and subversion of constitutional law by members of the congress and the judicial and executive branches of government. These warnings are and have been totally ignored and the disaster looms on the immediate horizon. Believers will only be able to ride



out this storm with maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul and this could be great FUN for these mature believers. There are many means of preparation for disaster and many ways to make plans to weather the coming storm, most which are inevitably destroyed by the disaster, so that when people prepare for disaster their preparations are very often swept away. They may accumulate wealth for disaster, gold or diamonds or isolate themselves from society moving to a secure place where they have provisions for the storm but these all can be swept away in an instant. The only real help in time of crisis is what the believer has stored in the Stream of Consciousness of his Soul. God uses prepared people and this is what is demonstrated in great crises where the prepared people are inculcated with maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul. No human preparation can avoid catastrophe in time of disaster it is ONLY divine faithfulness and divine deliverance which counts.

Current Law Enforcement, in general, is so cut off from interracial interaction that they do not and will not go into certain ghetto areas of cities today which have become totally lawless areas. Because of this there is a level of despair on the part of many of the people who live in these areas which cannot be appreciated and which can potentially turn into Positive Volition toward the Gospel and Bible Doctrine. This despair results from being victims of gangs in a totally lawless situation where law cannot and does not protect them and where liberalism has made it almost impossible for the law to function properly there. Liberalism wherever it goes creates Arrogance and when one reacts to that Arrogance with his own Arrogance it does not solve but in fact intensifies the problems. This can be observed today in the “black lives matter” and “antifa” groups, where the revolutionary potential of these people is absolutely phenomenal and many are already organized and armed for that purpose and this is one sign of their great despair. The Laws of Divine Establishment explain clearly that for people to arm for the purpose of trying to resolve national problems by violence and force is ridiculous and totally unfruitful. Revolution is a great form of Evil and the United States of America is and has been on the verge of a number of revolutionary situations since before the 70’s. This is the result of having the weakest of all governments which caters to any special group or minority thereby creating a huge problem of potential revolution. One possible reason for this problem being allowed by God to be created may very well be the provision under freedom for the opportunity for proper evangelism in these volatile areas of this nation. God makes even the wrath of man to praise him and the Liberals have created a disastrous situation which can result in bringing many to Christ. It takes a disastrous situation for certain types of evangelism to exist and have a positive effect on the unbeliever. The believer must never allow personal prejudice, Arrogance or the intensity of a problem to cause him to lose his spiritual alertness. Involvement in Arrogance will destroy the ability of any believer to reach these people who must be reached with the Gospel of Christ. The believer must avoid Arrogance to do this job and also must be [Flexible](#) in order to solve the existing problems there. Neither the color of skin nor the origin of the race has anything to do with Old Sin Nature functions when it comes to the efforts based on Evil being used to solve national problems.

The resolution of personal small inconveniences will be what determines whether the believer can make it or not in the inevitable national disasters coming to America. In the United States

of America individuals have these petty problems constantly because of simple rejection of Absolute Truth in one form or another and then believing only the LIES from Evil while residing in the Cosmic Dynaspheres under strong delusion. Unfortunately for many people the only thing which will count in the coming disasters, which in fact they will not possess, is Bible Doctrine. There is no sense in being upset at the inconvenience and pressure caused by disaster because if the believer understands anything about history he has seen historical tragedies which most people cannot imagine happening in their time. However, it is possible these may be coming to this nation in the very near future. The mature believer must have a sense of humor and must keep a low profile until the Lord promotes him or brings him to the point of stepping in to handle things in disaster. Meanwhile his primary objective and priority must always remain that he is consistently learning Bible Doctrine. When pressure and adversity comes in normal life the believer must not fail these simple tests because of Arrogance and he must never overestimate his worth in relationship to the things around him. He will often feel that what he thinks, does and feels must be heard and that his opinion is important and must be heard. This is Arrogance and he must remember that he must keep a low profile until and if the Lord puts him on the white horse to run things.

Preoccupation with disaster produces Blind Arrogance in the form of FEAR and Self Pity, selfcenteredness and distortion of the Truth in any situation leading to Self Righteousness. When people become preoccupied with disaster no matter how good they are they become sociopathic and some even become Psychopathic. Therefore, preoccupation with disaster in effect becomes demon obsession. This type of Arrogance becomes obsessed with the problem rather than with the problem solver, The Lord Jesus, The Christ. The believer cannot be demon possessed but he can be demon obsessed when there is too much occupation with or focus on the things which are occurring in this life. Preoccupation with disaster is a distraction to the understanding of both Logistical Grace and Super – Grace blessings because it is a distraction to Perception, Cognition, Incultation, Metabolization and Application of Bible Doctrine. The thinking of the believer must be in terms of Bible Doctrine not in terms of historical catastrophe. The Arrogant person will always vacillate in life depending on the circumstances of life since every Arrogant person is a slave to his circumstances. This is personal instability and when anyone vacillates between Self Pity and Self Righteousness this person is a sociopathic, neurotic or psychotic individual and, unfortunately, this is the majority of American society today. Arrogance inevitably rejects the Truth and one cannot avoid being a sociopath if he does not understand and function under ABSOLUTE Truth. If the Truth is incredible and beyond one's ability to comprehend with faith, he will move invariably into the realm of sociopathic Modus Vivendi.

At Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God, God sets up the grace pipeline for the believer to be able to provide support for his advance to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God. This spiritual advance of believers is the only hope in the United States of America for recovery from the rampant degeneracy and apostasy of this nation. The reality of the situation is that America is totally helpless and caught up in a disaster of its own making and the Interlocking System of Arrogance has blinded the nation to its situation. The only hope is that believers will continue advancing to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and thereby, from the

benefit of their historical impact and association blessing, support the nation. This, unfortunately for this nation at this time, is not an instant miraculous occurrence where the situation will be all sweetness and light but, on the contrary, there will be very hard times. However, EVEN in hard times the believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God is still blessed by the Justice of God and this is the basis for preservation of the nation in any times of disaster. Unfortunately, for the United States of America today, being a nation almost totally divorced and divested from the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions the only hope left for the nation is deliverance by The Lord Jesus, The Christ himself.

The oscillations which constantly occur in life always cause the individual to ignore the divine solutions to both individual and collective problems or pressures found in doctrinal perspicacity and the establishment of the pivot of mature believers. ([Rom 11:4](#)) Distraction means lack of concentration and lack of concentration means cowardice which is absence of thought under pressure. In contrast, courage, the ability to think under pressure, is what is called reverse concentration. Elijah, as a mature believer, became a coward and ran from Israel when he became subjective about the warning threat of Jezebel. Instead of applying the doctrine of [Logistical Grace](#) he applied selfcenteredness and preoccupation with apostasy. Instant distraction became instant ignorance and this became instant Arrogance, which became instant selfcenteredness and this became instant cowardice. Ignorance is Arrogance and Arrogance cannot cope with life and under pressure like that of Elijah, Arrogance becomes Self Pity alternating with Self Righteousness as the pressure subsides. For the believer, as part of the Royal Family of God, life is to be based on Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul because, “as a man thinks in the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of his Soul so he is” ([Prov 23:6-7](#)).

All historical disaster is also related to Negative Volition to Bible Doctrine and The Lord Jesus, The Christ. Rejection of Christ as savior means rejection of Bible Doctrine which is the mind or thinking of Christ. ([1Cor 2:16](#)) The longer or more often people say no to evangelism and thus to Christ the more they build [Scar Tissue of the Soul](#) and therefore the more Arrogance saturates the soul so that when the LIE comes along from Evil, they believe it and the Lie in the time of Elijah was the religion of Baal brought into Israel by Jezebel. When the believer believes the Lie of the Cosmic Dynaspheres he turns against Christ, the God of Israel and Lord of the Church. In rejection of Christ and the Thinking of Christ in Bible Doctrine (1Cor 2:16) the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions are set aside and thereby any principles related to these are destroyed. This is demonstrated in the madness of a population and when they begin to take lives and rampantly destroy or steal property as we see in the riots in our recent past and the unrestrained looting which was permitted to occur. This is madness and to permit this madness means that there is nothing remaining of the Laws of Divine Establishment restraint. There has not been, but should have been, police coming on the scene to kill the looters in mass, shooting them down right where they are found. Shooting pillagers and looters is the only viable means of controlling riots because these people are insane and when they steal, loot and find vulnerable people, they always maltreat these people, resulting in Rape and Murder. This has occurred many times in the history of the world and it is a viciousness from Evil and a terrible anarchy brought on by Scar Tissue of the

Soul and Arrogance. It starts with sane people but Arrogance and Scar Tissue of the Soul takes these normal sane and often nice people and turns them into the monsters who loot, pillage, rape and murder. This is the CLEAR OBSERVABLE DEMONSTRATION today that there is NO DIGNITY OF MAN EXCEPT WHERE GOD HAS PROVIDED RESTRAINT THROUGH THE LAWS OF DIVINE ESTABLISHMENT AND MORAL AND SPIRITUAL COURAGE FROM BIBLE DOCTRINE. ON THE CONTRARY, MAN AS HE FUNCTIONS UNDER THE CONTROL OF HIS OLD SIN NATURE, IS VICIOUS, EVIL AND VILE AND THERE IS ONLY THE TOTAL DEPRAVITY OF MAN.

### Evil --> Arrogance

EVIL produces Arrogance which results in SIN, CRIME and / or Human Good. In fact Evil is a system of thinking, a plan, a policy belonging to Satan to rule this world and control the Human Race. Evil as thought results in Arrogance leading to either Sin and Crime, a secondary desired result of Satan's plan or Human Good the production and primary desired result of his plan. Since the citizens of the United States generally no longer possess honor and integrity, the constitution, in reality, is not functioning at all and in its place is both EVIL and the DEGENERACY of the Interlocking System of Arrogance. The total Arrogance of the public is what has set aside and destroyed the function of the constitution of the United States of America. There is only one way to perpetuate honor and integrity in this nation and that is through Bible Doctrine and PRIVATE education and neither is doing the job because of rejection of both by the people. In the beginning of the 21<sup>st</sup> century Private Education has been on the rise in the United States and this is for the benefit of the nation but it is not encompassing enough of the children who, being under public education systems, are constantly being indoctrinated with the concepts of Evil found in liberalism and socialism.

All liberals have a large coloring of Arrogance because of their relationship with the principles of Arrogance. It is impossible to divorce an Arrogant principle in Motivational Arrogance from an Arrogant function in Functional Arrogance and this is why the dominance of liberalism in any nation inevitably leads to degeneration and destruction. The only solution to all of this again is Maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul of each individual Believer. All Conspiracy is rejection of authority and in this nation today it is the authority of God which has been constantly rejected. Believers today reject, ignore, or otherwise substitute something for Bible Doctrine which is the authority of God. Rejection of authority is more than Arrogance it is the inevitable destruction of whatever area of life is involved.

Sin and Evil are totally different in many ways fundamentally Evil is an overriding policy while sin is the result of succumbing to the influence of evil. However, there are situations where Sin and Evil meet. Invariably these meet at the point of Arrogance which joins Sin through Evil under Revolt. Fortunately the Laws of Divine Establishment and Bible Doctrine actually meet as well for the positive believer to combat this situation. Welfare state functions are from EVIL and in fact have destroyed the whole population of nations. Welfare state functions are TOTALLY REJECTED BY THE WORD OF GOD WHILE CHARITY IS TOTALLY ACCEPTABLE. Welfare destroys the moral fiber and character and integrity of the citizens of the nation.

Welfare state functions produce slaves to government and result in a degenerate people. However, where Bible Doctrine and Laws of Divine Establishment meet it is both a product of Evil and sinful for the believer to neglect destitute members of his own family. The bible always rejects socialism which inevitably leads to government intrusion on the privacy of the people in a nation and therefore destroys the freedom therein. Therefore it is obvious that welfare is derived from Evil and sinful while charity is Christian and a Laws of Divine Establishment function and this orientation must not be distorted in the nation.

The British have had a system in the past which put them far ahead of the United States. It was their system of aristocracy where the Aristocrat becomes great through a system of honor and integrity. Despite England currently having a far worse state of government, they have at least some perpetuation of honor and integrity in their people. The United States has done this through the teaching of Bible Doctrine and through education and both of these have been failing as a result of a lack of interest by the people on the one hand and the corruption of liberalism on the other. The greatest Arrogance in societies is not found in the aristocracy but in the so called common man. The common man when led by Arrogant others very quickly thinks of self as being persecuted. They are or quickly become Arrogant people and very easily moved to this Arrogance by pressure from instigators or as a result of their demand for equality. The common man today demands executive pay for menial jobs OR executive jobs and promotion to the top of an organization without any qualifications or ability OR demands that the government take care of him and this is deep seated Arrogance. The greatest Arrogance in life is found in 2 areas of societies. Usually not in the aristocrat since it is stupid for him to be Arrogant since he has already achieved and having Arrogance is totally unnecessary for him. This does not mean that the aristocracy does not have Arrogance from time to time and it usually comes to aristocracy in the generations which follow and inherit from the achievements of the preceding Aristocrat. The common man is by far a greater snob than the aristocrat. The unattractive person is also guilty of terrible Arrogance but this is usually hidden. People generally assume that attractive persons and aristocrats are Arrogant because everyone envies them. This, in effect, says that only aristocrats and attractive people have Old Sin Natures and this is obviously false. Nothing is worse than a government, media or a dramatic culture glorifying the common man. A prime example is the 1978 film "The Deer Hunter" which is typical of our society's trends glorifying those who have no motivation to advance or think and have no meaning, definition or purpose in life except to prove they are something when they are nothing. The answer to this trend is found in Christianity which takes a believer out of the gutter, palace or any area of Arrogance and puts him in a place of meaningful living and the development of [Humility](#). Life has meaning and purpose and definition for the believer as a member of the Royal Family of God and in the last ½ of the book of Romans the [Royal Family Honor Code](#) can be found. This Royal Family Honor Code answers every problem of government, society or spiritual life in every nation.

The plans and machinations of nations whose function is based totally on Evil, if unhindered, would result in a world of slavery for the entire human race or its inevitable complete destruction. In the creation of the Human Race it is the purpose of God to demonstrate that his character is always totally integrated in its function. He uses mankind to demonstrate that



his LOVE motivates his functions which must be based on the Norms and Standards of his Absolute Righteousness and which are executed by the absolute FAIRNESS of his Absolute Justice. Therefore, when a nation becomes so saturated with Evil and so involved in the degeneracy of the Interlocking System of Arrogance and the apostasy of Reversionism, God must remove them from history. This Evil has come to the United States of America in the form of:

- ✧ Terrorism
- ✧ Socialism
- ✧ Communism
- ✧ Welfare State functions
- ✧ Pseudo Equality of mankind
- ✧ Redistribution of Wealth
- ✧ Man by his own efforts trying to solve his problems
- ✧ Slavery
- ✧ and much more!

### **National Arrogance & Christian Values**

The believers greatest enthusiasm must be related to the provisions of [Logistical Grace](#) support from God for his life. This world is ruled by Satan, the believer has rejected Satan's plan and policy and functions under the plan and policy of God. Therefore the primary question is, how long could a believer last in this world under the control and rulership of such a VASTLY superior antagonistic creature? Without Logistical Grace the believer could not last even one single moment in this world ruled by Satan after making Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God. God provides the time, atmosphere, environment, life support systems, doctrine, purpose, motivation and momentum for the Christian Way of Life. *It is imperative to recognize and realize that after Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God, He, God, is responsible for the life of the believer and obligated to provide for his support with Logistical Grace whether he is advancing or retrogressing in or totally ignoring the Spiritual Life.* Considering this, it is clearly easy to realize that the vast majority of believers are kept alive by God in order to test those few who advance to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and beyond. This client nation United States of America is still in existence not because of big evangelistic meetings or revivals nor because people all over the nation go to church on Sundays. It is not the number of believers in the nation which matters but the number of believers who are advancing to or have reached or exceeded [Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God](#) and are contributing to the support for the nation. The ONLY way to accomplish this advance is through consistent, persistent, daily Post Salvation Epistemological Rehabilitation from Perception, Cognition, Inculcation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine under the teaching of one's own right Pastor Teacher. There are only a very few reasons why this nation has been preserved for the last 65-75 years:

- ✧ The Lord Jesus, The Christ controls Human History
- ✧ There are enough believers to form a sustaining remnant of maturity in the Plan of God.
- ✧ In general this nation still provides proper consideration for the Jews.

Even when the nation is under intensive divine discipline there are always those who still reach Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and come to the point of [Occupation with the](#)

**Person of The Lord Jesus, The Christ.** The Justice of God extends to and provides for believers in a client nation in 2 ways, Fantastic Grace blessings for the believer who reaches Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God OR incredible Divine Discipline for those who fail in the Spiritual Life. The believer must always remember that God has provided the mechanism for recovery from the devastation of the degeneracy of the Interlocking System of Arrogance or the apostasy of Reversionism through the use of the 1<sup>st</sup> Problem Solving Device, the **Rebound Procedure.** Believers, therefore, have been given the option of living the Spiritual Life provided by God or not doing so and whichever way they go totally depends on their own personal volition and how long it takes them to get the 3 Spiritual Skills on line in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul. The Alternative to the Spiritual Life is to use the **Arrogance Skills** and produce the “Wood, Hay and Stubble” of Human Good, Sin, or Crime from Evil as a result of becoming involved in liberalism, activism, socialism and all systems of whitewashing the world ruled by Satan. The believer has incredible options for the Spiritual Life based on his attitude toward Bible Doctrine. Unbelievers are to live and function under the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions, which are, in fact, based in Bible Doctrine for them, while the Believer is to be executing the Spiritual Life through consistent Perception, Cognition, Inculcation, Metabolization and Application of Bible Doctrine. If this does not occur the client nation is destined to failure and destruction. The United States of America today is in great trouble and believers should recognize that in the eschatology of the coming dispensation of the Tribulation there is NO MENTION OF THE UNITED STATES of AMERICA.

The greatest unexplored form of degeneracy is **Arrogant Self Righteousness** and it is the person who is motivated from Self Righteous Arrogance who has found a cause to espouse who adds more to the degeneracy of the nation than any immoral person. The immoral person is at least honest and not so much providing for extreme national degeneracy but keeping others busy and giving them something about which to gossip. America has been in desperate times since the 1960s and the situation is far worse today with regard to national degeneracy. Historically many of the people who had accepted socialism in Germany were fantastic believers and some of the most establishment oriented people in the world before the Nazis. Some of these as believers in The Lord Jesus, The Christ included the commander of the German army making the first breakthrough of the Maginot Line, Erwin Von Vitzlauer who was in fact in command over Rommel. Other believers who were in the German high command included General Ludvick Beck, Count Von Bernstorff and others. Many of the military leaders of Germany gathered together to draft a government declaration which was to be announced after the death of Hitler. Book: To Kill the Devil, Attempts on the Life of Hitler by Herbert Maloy Mason Junior. They put a government policy together written in 1944 but it was never publicly read. This was to be the new policy of the German Nation which was never to be heard:

- ✧ The restoration of the full majesty of the law.
- ✧ Government must avoid arbitrary fact and follow the law just as the people.
- ✧ Restoration of Justice.
- ✧ The Judge is not to create law but to apply and administer the law.
  - *(One of the great failings of the judicial system of the United States of America.)*
- ✧ Lawbreakers will receive just punishment and individuals and property will be protected.
- ✧ No Mob Justice no personal revenge.

- ✧ End corruption restoring the foundations of a moral society in every sector of life.
- ✧ No more persecution of Jews.
- ✧ Molding the family again into the nucleus of the national community
  - This requires parents, home, Christianity and cooperation of churches.
- ✧ Clearing up Nazi lies regarding economic and military facts.
  - Lies of government are borne on cowardice and lust for power.
  - Success and maintaining a national position and happiness of the people and individual's peace of soul can only be built on Truth.
- ✧ Freedom of intellect, conscience, faith and opinion is to be restored.
- ✧ Complete separation of Church from the State with operation based on the individual's own beliefs.
- ✧ The State itself shall be based on Christian attitudes in word and deed.
  - We owe to Christianity the evolution of the white peoples and our capacities to contend with the bad instincts within us.
- ✧ Tolerance toward other faiths and free thinkers as demanded by Genuine Christianity.
- ✧ Churches given full leeway to be active in Christianity, education and public welfare.
- ✧ The press under a code of honor must observe the laws of decency.
- ✧ A new Education System based on Children having a natural recognition of true and false.
  - This system will relinquish first to parents and then the schools and will give simple basic elementary knowledge to children honestly and without divisiveness.
    - (*this is NOT the system of the United States of America today nor in recent past*).
  - This education will be based on Christian foundations without violating Christian laws of tolerance of other beliefs. It will be allowed to evolve quietly and protected from constant basic changes and upheavals.
    - (*also not the United States of America's system today*).
- ✧ Courage and responsibility must be what drives the administration of the state.
  - Clear lines of responsibility must be restored and the freedom for independent decisions.
  - There must be a minimum of writing (paperwork) and administrators must do the right thing in the simplest way.
  - Luxury has no place in public office and the place for comfort is in private dwellings.
- ✧ We must remember that the state has no inexhaustible means and lives only by what its citizens accomplish and make available to it and it cannot give out to individual citizens more than it has available from the productive power of its citizens
  - (*Where comes the 51 trillion+ debt in the United States of America?*)
- ✧ Promises true or false must not be made about economic well being.
  - Cheap promises that the state can do everything are unscrupulous demagoguery and the state is YOU with your resources and strength and the administrators of the state are merely YOUR trustees.
- ✧ Restoring the German nation can only occur in a climate of LAW, DECENCY and FREEDOM.
- ✧ Stable currency restoration.
- ✧ A sound public budget, a basic prerequisite of a stable economy (*NOT IN THE USA*) with

expenses maintained within the limits of the REAL income of that state and its regions drawing from the citizens.

- To reestablish a sound fiscal order will require will power, renunciation and struggle but the fiscal order is most important and an indispensable basis of sound currency and economic life.
- Sound currency depends on the value of all savings and without it there cannot be foreign trade which is essential.
- Taxes will be high but there must be careful decision as to how that tax money is spent and done so thriftily.
- Greater importance on leaving citizens the necessities of life rather than the state administering supplies to them.
  - (*This is the Welfare of the USA*).
- Removal or cutting off of all bureaucracies and their spending including the Nazis.
  - (*BATFE, OSHA, HEW, EPA, ETC.*)

The voice of true Germany and the United States of America must demand that the order and the commandments of God be respected. The voice of true Germany and the United States of America is the voice of Christian doctrine our Bible Doctrine. To assume that the future could be built on unhappiness of others is in error and suppression of human dignity is a terrible error and these roots go back to the treaty of Versailles. Along with Freud we must agree that Woodrow Wilson was the silliest man ever to live. We must always allow each person a sense of honor and what we want for self we must grant for others. For peace to last international confidence in the new Germany is essential. Confidence cannot be forced or attained by talk and we understand that all leaders of state must want the best for all their people and an end of conflict with constructive prospects for the future. We must be guided by God's commandments and must follow these even when extremely difficult. {Signed by Field Marshal Eric Von Vitzlaben written by the Prussian Officer Corps which had as its most basic tenet Christian doctrine from the days of Prussian knights in Poland.}

This was never published because Hitler was not killed and because The Lord Jesus, The Christ controls Human History. This document lines up with Bible Doctrine and the thinking of the forefathers of the United States of America in establishing the government on this continent. This document was 11 years too late for Germany and after the "Night of the Long Knives" was the last chance that Germany had to change. This night was the last warning Germany had that they were being exploited by SOCIALISM just as occurred in 1917 when the Russians were exploited by it. The systems were the same and the Evil was the same and there is no difference between Bolsheviks and Nazis.

This is the warning Americans have been living under in the United States of America for many decades even before World War II. These ideas had resided in the minds of famous German officers for many years and yet even though they could think these things their country was led astray. The one overriding thought found in these words was the fallacies of SOCIALISM and WELFARE STATE, and this same disease has infected and spread throughout the world and its

contagion is beyond description. The people begin their degeneration in 2 areas, they accept socialism in the welfare state and also Christian doctrine with the 2 being antithetical. The wall of what is right and wrong between these is broken down by part of the Interlocking System of Arrogance. This wall breaking is demonstrated in the rise of social action like that fostered by the national and world council of churches since the 1920's, and this was only hindered in its advance by World War II which brought a relief from the implications of this policy but not from the preaching of it. The Methodists ultimately led the way in the United States with many others followed along. In the 1970s there had been a Neo-Arrogant Self Righteousness which is based on social action and welfare state function and has nothing to do with Christian doctrine. It requires one to 'become involved' and stick one's nose into other people's business and tell them how to run their lives. This has been magnified and infiltrated from pseudo Christian roots into the American state department where there is the presumption to tell other nations how to run their governments. Every nation the United States tries to tell how to run their business is ultimately taken over by communism. The United States of America presumed to tell Cambodia how to run their business and their people have been exterminated by Chinese and North Vietnamese communism.

No nation ever goes down under the 5<sup>th</sup> cycle of Divine Discipline without complicity from the people of that nation. Adolph Hitler had absolute control of Germany through the violence of the Gestapo and SS. However, Austrians voted to have Hitler come in and take over their nation when they were in economic crisis. The people of Germany put Hitler in Power and long before Hitler became an evil dictator the people had rejected Truth which in fact opened the door for Hitler. This also occurred in Russia where the people rejected Truth Long before Lenin and a measly 100,000 hard core Bolsheviks came into power. *Therefore, national leadership reflects only what the people are willing to accept or believe and therefore reflects the thinking of the People.* In a republic which has degenerated into a socialistic democracy (the United States of America) NO ONE can attach full blame to any failures of the nation to the representatives in the government since having such representation is the decision of the majority of the people in the nation (until recently with the advent of blatant election fraud being the new system of gaining power). When the majority of the people consistently reject Truth in any of the 3 forms they then can ONLY believe and accept the LIE which is the policy and plan of Satan, EVIL. From their faith in the Lie, such as welfare or socialism, they elect to power those who will promote the Lie thereby resulting in the imminent destruction of the nation. There is a LIE which has been around for at least 3000 years expressed best by the Romans in "Vocs Populii Vocs Dae", "The Voice of the People is the Voice of God." This is saying basically that majority public opinion is Truth. However, the reality of such a statement is found in the contrary position of "The voice of the people is a voice and NOTHING MORE". Society and nations must function under the Status Quo of the principle that "Truth Must Prevail" and thereby life will have virtue, freedom, purpose and definition as far as the client nation is concerned. Unless Truth prevails a Nation lives in vain. To the apostate in the client nation the Romans also say "Life without learning is DEATH" and learning must be with regard to Absolute Truth. Learning Bible Doctrine believing Truth, receiving the Gospel is, therefore, the true strength of any nation.



Life today is that which is in a cruel world where satanic policies are dominant and only slightly frustrated by Bible Doctrine. Life in this client nation to God has been in the process of self destruction for many decades and history demonstrates that every client nation has done this long before any military conquest occurs. Every time there is a problem the government comes up with a human based solution which in fact simply intensifies the problem because it is not based on Establishment Principles. There can be no solutions to the absolute dysfunction of this nation until many people die from starvation or are killed in mass in natural or military disaster. The problem in the nation is based on the THINKING or lack thereof in the people individually. This is what the federal government causes when people, through their own Arrogant thinking, Arrogant public opinion and misguided voting, allow the hypocrisy and Self Righteousness of the welfare state to exist, it being one of the all time greatest hypocrisies of history and life.

In a client nation to God there must be the ability and freedom to set up the Local Church so that Bible Doctrine can be taught so that believers can advance to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and form a pivot, the key to prosperity, blessing and preservation of the client nation IF THEY DESIRE THIS. The Local Church is also to send out missionaries for evangelizing other nations. This breaks down when the government, like that in the United States, sends out state department people, congressmen and senators to tell other nations they will not receive financial help unless they do what they are told to do. Woodrow Wilson did this first in Mexico and forced American standards on them in his incredible Self Righteous Arrogance and hypocrisy. It is now interesting to reflect on how Mexico in the recent past was demanding so much from the United States of America at the border and was and is still sending criminals to America in mass and is in fact demanding they be accepted unconditionally. That is until Mr. Trump took office, but that time is now past again. It was this nations pride, vanity and Arrogance in telling Rhodesia and South African how to run their business when they were in fact the greatest bastions of freedom in Africa if not the world at that time. The funny thing is that America does not try to tell Russia or China how to run their business and totally ignored the devastation which occurred in Cambodia and ignored the travesties of having lost the Vietnam and Korean wars to communism because of a lack of moral courage as a nation. The inconsistency, hypocrisy and Self Righteousness of the government and this nation as a whole is completely obvious and this is a major part of the degeneracy in this client nation. These functions are as degenerate in their Self Righteous function and Modus Operandi as is the immorality in the form of the sexual distortion in homosexuality.

Client nations are also required to send out missionaries to give other peoples a chance to express their Positive or Negative Volition toward the Gospel of Christ and Bible Doctrine but are not to try to tell those people how to run their business. One of the overwhelming mistakes of the United States has been allowing missionaries to go to other countries who confuse Christianity with civilization and then try to “civilize” the people and get the tribal chief to give up his extra wives, or clothe his people, etc. This same thing also occurs in local churches in America where the people and pastor try to tell the congregation how to dress or groom themselves or engage in other social interference. The only thing necessary in going to

any local church is to go in with Positive Volition for learning Bible Doctrine which provision in fact is the ONLY purpose for the Local Church. The client nation also is to provide a haven for Jews whether believer or unbeliever because God punishes antisemitism in every case and demands protection for the Jews. The believer in The Lord Jesus, The Christ also is responsible to present the Truth of the Gospel of Christ without coercion or distortion added and let the results remain with God and this is how the functions of freedom can be observed and preserved in the nation and prevent national arrogance from arising.

### **Virtue, Honor, Integrity & Client Nation Arrogance**

The greatest issue involved in the factors regarding the status of the Client Nation is VIRTUE. It is Virtue Morality vs Arrogance Morality or Self Righteous Arrogance in the people. Virtue is always the major issue with the formation and continued existence of the Client Nation and as long as virtue exists the Authority – Freedom interaction under the Laws of Divine Establishment will function properly and morality will be based on virtue. However, if Virtue is lost by an arrogant generation in a Client Nation living consistently within the Cosmic Dynaspheres this causes special Divine Discipline in the 5 cycles for the nation.

National Arrogance produces a nation of restless and unhappy people who lack integrity, honor and objectivity and can neither appreciate nor evaluate the accouterments of happiness or prosperity for they are without capacity for either. The United States has been approaching and is, in fact today, in crisis because the people are in the disaster of saturated public Arrogance. The missing link in American life is Integrity and Honor based on the principle of Humility and freedom from the Interlocking System of Arrogance. This nation was founded on the principle of Integrity and Honor in the population and is failing today as a result of a lack of these attributes in the overall population.

### **Attitudes of People under National Arrogance**

**Self Serving** characterizes both believers and unbelievers being derived from Self Absorption.

**Entitlement** results in blinding people concerning their functioning under the Arrogance Skills where they feel entitled to do whatever they want, to pursue any lust pattern, even to engage in Criminality.

**Self Gratification** as the need to fulfill one's wishes and deepest desires instantly without consideration for others or the ramifications of such fulfillment.

**Outside Problem Solutions** coming from big government instead of from personal volition, freedom and privacy based on Metabolized Bible Doctrine.

Unrealistic Expectations results from becoming a society obsessed with solutions based on magical thinking.

**Unrestrained Modus Vivendi** feeling exempt from the rules of God so that one can pursue any desires and fulfill any personal wish which results in:

- ✧ Murder and other serious crimes against freedom which must be, but are not, punished by execution
- ✧ Incorrigible Teenagers who when found guilty must be, but are not, executed.
- ✧ Activism in all forms and venues which reject freedom, privacy, sacredness of property and life, and exists on the basis of the irrationality of Emotionalism and basically supports Socialism whereby the government has solutions for all problems.

The only thing which can preserve a people in any great city, state or nation where Arrogance develops is MAXIMUM level of Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul of one (1) or more believers. If the United States of America is to be preserved from the impending historical disasters which are overtaking it there must be a change in the attitude of the average believer so that Bible Doctrine can be accumulated in their souls. One can do great things for others who are experiencing personal adversity but these others can have an attitude of being totally ungrateful when their personal crisis is over. One president of the United States of America, having an attitude of bleeding heart do good liberalism, pardoned the men who ran from military service during the Vietnam War, this made him also a traitor. To pardon anyone who refuses military service is to make self a traitor and demonstrate total ignorance of the principle that all freedom comes through military service and their victory in battle. There is widespread universal ignorance of the fact that all the blessing that exists in this country is as a result of those who have given their lives through military service. This was CLEARLY demonstrated in the ungratefulness of the population toward those in the military returning home during the Vietnam war. Politicians in the United States being focused primarily on maintaining their political position, almost always ruin the nation, whereas, it is the man in the military uniform which delivers the nation. People may be ungrateful toward those who serve and protect their nation but God will remember these men who have functioned in life under the doctrinal principles of the Laws of Divine Establishment and have served their country in the armed forces. Inevitably, historically, especially in the United States of America, once the national crisis is past no one appreciates the doctrines related to the ones who delivered them from the crisis. The history of the United States of America is that of a single politician destroying all the good done by military victory. If the United States of America is to continue as a nation it will be because of Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul of the believers and not because of any politician.

### Degeneracy & Divine Discipline

Historically every instance of Divine Discipline which occurs to the United States, as a client nation to God, as well as each believer individually in this client nation, is related to these principles:

- ✧ Being saturated with National Arrogance which has replaced the correct function under the Laws of Divine Establishment in this nation.
- ✧ Abandonment of the Free Enterprise system.
- ✧ Rejection of the principle of freedom through military victory and downgrading even degrading the Military.
- ✧ Subverting and Liberalizing the jurisprudence system which is specifically designed to

control crime.

Everywhere one may look, in all segments of society and all functions in the nation, the Interlocking System of Arrogance is destroying this client nation to God. In every corner of the world there is a degrading and destruction of the nations of the world, including this nation, because of their degeneracy. DEGENERACY is not immorality, and immorality is only a manifestation of it. Degeneracy lives in the soul of every individual as the Interlocking System of Arrogance. Just as God has in the past used Assyrians and Chaldeans to punish client nation Israel so in this time in history He has used and will continue to use the communists and moslems to scourge the nations of the world, especially the United States of America. Many of the nations which have been destroyed internally and which have fallen to tyranny and with which, in our liberal policies, the United States sympathizes, in reality are degenerate and have entered nationally, collectively, into the Interlocking System of Arrogance. Nations existing under these conditions, including the United States, must be destroyed so that future generations have the freedom and opportunity to receive The Lord Jesus, The Christ as savior. As a result of the degeneracy of the nations in the western hemisphere, the United States is now cut off to the south because all countries south of our borders, from Cuba across central America including El Salvador, Nicaragua, Guatemala, Panama and Mexico are all locked in as a ring of communism.

Anyone who has the attitude of wanting something for nothing and who does not want to follow the Laws of Divine Establishment in earning their own way is Arrogant. Anyone who goes on and continues to live by welfare support is consistently Arrogant. These are the people who are most inclined to snobbery and have formed their own aristocracy of WORTHLESSNESS. When labor unions can negotiate with management and win so that if they work they receive full pay but if they do not work they still get 80% of their pay there is an aristocracy of EVIL developed there. These form a snobbery under the Interlocking System of Arrogance which is what has occurred in the United States. People in this nation have rejected the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions overall and elected those who neither understand nor accept establishment freedom. This is epitomized in Carter, Clinton, Obama and especially Biden. When there are irresponsible and totally incompetent people elected to government offices in the legislative and executive branches and when there are those appointed to the Courts in the judicial field who do not enforce the law in terms of the United States constitution but interpret it in terms of socialism and welfare function then there is total irresponsibility in government. THIS is the United States of America today. Because this trend has not turned around as a result of believers in the nation having Positive Volition toward Bible Doctrine and forming a larger pivot there have already been 4 stages of degradation in effect for the United States. This is the case which can be observe today with the people of the nation being:

- Deprived of Truth as a result of individual personal Negative Volition
- Led Astray as a result of rejection of Truth being only able to believe the LIE from Evil
- Ruined under 4 cycles of national Divine Discipline, the current status quo
- Destroyed under the 5<sup>th</sup> cycle of national Divine Discipline, coming soon to a neighborhood near you!

### The LIES of Evil

The United States of America has lasted longer than the 5 years predicted at the time of the presentation of these original lessons. This was, apparently and obviously, a reprieve from God based on the Positive Volition in believers generated at that time. HOWEVER, the country is right back, with greater intensity, to the same situation which had been occurring in the late 1970s and early 80s. There is again such incredible Negative Volition toward Absolute Truth and total acceptance of the LIES of EVIL with disillusion and deception rampant in the society so that the nation is literally on the very BRINK of self destruction. The Lord Jesus, The Christ controls Human History and no nation ever falls without his approval and there is degeneracy in all nations but that which exists in the United States of America today is a far greater and more devastating degeneracy. Consider Iran from the 70's and Czechoslovakia, Hungary, Romania, Russia and China and that all were saturated with degeneracy from the Interlocking System of Arrogance and once the degeneracy set in nothing could stop the destruction of those nations. This is the Status Quo in the United States of America which was given a final opportunity for recovery, to some extent, with the election and strong administration of President Trump. However, this has passed because the people have failed to wake up and collectively have had NO change of thinking and believers continue to express a strong Negative Volition toward Bible Doctrine and fail because of making only minuscule if any advances toward Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God. In effect this was most likely the FINAL warning from God. Believers must persist in doctrinal intake forming a greater pivot and on the part of the unbeliever there must be understanding and function under the principles of the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions else the United States will follow other fallen nations. However, have confidence, the downfall of the United States as a client nation will not stop Human History nor even slow the Plan of God in any way. The Plan of God will not terminate because of an individual's or nation's failure and fall nor will it be stopped by any presumed World War or nuclear disaster. History will ONLY end with the 2<sup>nd</sup> advent of The Lord Jesus, The Christ and the completion of his millennial reign on this earth. The earth will eventually be destroyed but not by man or any of his devices, inventions or stupidity but only by Christ who controls Human History.

All Divine Discipline comes from the Justice of God which is ½ of the Integrity of God and the Omniscience of God knows all facts of all things and the Justice of God is perfect in its fairness in his execution of Divine Discipline. God never has even one time in all of Human History ever judged any nation or individual in an unfair way. The Justice of God is perfect and he is eternal and his justice has functioned properly from Eternity Past. The rise or fall of America will not effect the continuation of Human History since Jesus Christ will not permit any nation or individual to go beyond a certain point of degeneracy from the Interlocking System of Arrogance and this has been put into the Divine Decree from Eternity Past. Since the early 1900's the Lord has been tapping his foot with impatience and holding back the collective national Divine Discipline for the United States, but it WILL come whether from economic, military, natural, outside historical disasters or pressures from communism or islam, or all of these combines, but understand, most certainly IT WILL COME. It will come to America because the people of the United States of America are no longer the American People of the past but today are saturated with degeneracy from the Interlocking System of Arrogance and



apostasy from [Reversionism](#) and as a result, this nation MUST be disciplined.

### [Labor Union Attitudes](#)

There are cliches of Socialism which have infiltrated the thinking and function of the people of this nation one of which is the right of labor to STRIKE. The whole system of unionism and striking is one of the greatest attacks of the EVIL of socialism on Free Enterprise which is part of the Laws of Divine Establishment. In the work force of any business there are no 2 people doing the same job who should receive the same wage since one will most certainly be better at his job than the other. Because of unions there is a superimposed system of tyranny called Equality of Wages which has been developed. This destroys all incentive for labor in business to be doing a good job. Everyone knows the inconvenience and dangers of labor strikes and few question the right to strike but in reality this is based totally on EVIL. The blame for abuses of this pseudo “right” are most often placed on the bungling and abuses of men who are in control of the strike. The right to strike has been legalized in the United States of America but it is impossible to find a moral, ethical or biblical sanction for labor strikes in any code. Under the biblical principles of the Laws of Divine Establishment the worker has a right to quit his job even workers in mass or in unison but this is not striking unless some force or threat of force is used to prevent the business from filling the vacated jobs. The essence of a strike is BLACKMAIL in the form of a coercion to force an unwilling exchange or inhibit a willing exchange. No person nor any group of persons has any moral right to force themselves on an employer at a price which they have set for themselves nor to forcibly preclude the employer from hiring others at the price he chooses to set. No 2 people are equal in any aspect of life, nor are they entitled to the same wage for even the exact same job and no 2 people have the same mental attitude on the job when doing the same thing and no 2 have the same ability or skill for doing that job. The whole underlying concept of a labor strike is a system of tyranny which hurts the striking man much more than the business. When one believes in the right to engage in labor strikes this is comparable to saying one endorses monopoly power for the sole purpose of excluding business competitors. It is like saying Government control over business is preferable to voluntary exchange between buyers and sellers who are free to accept or reject the offering prices set by the sellers. Sanctioning the right to strike says “might makes right” and deep in the concept of the right to strike is the notion that an employee has a right to continue an engagement once he has begun it as if the engagement is his own personal property. The reality is that the right to a job which has been vacated, even temporarily as in a strike, is no more valid than the right to a job one never held. The inconvenience to individuals and dangers to the economy as a result of labor strikes should not be blamed on the bungling, ignorance or evil of the men manipulating the strikers but the censor should be directed at the FALSE IDEA that there is a Right to Strike. This whole idea is sloppy ridiculous thinking of the so called moral individuals saturated with [Self Righteous Arrogance](#) for their own causes.

### [Slavery vs Freedom](#)

Slavery in all nations which function under a system of freedom will eventually be voluntarily eradicated but should NOT occur through legislation and NEVER through violence. When violence is used to free slaves it always gives a very erroneous impression to those being freed.

The American 2<sup>nd</sup> War for Independence gave a very bad impression to the freed slaves in the south and it was totally and completely wrong. It was exploited by radical republicans clearly demonstrated by the disastrous things which occurred in the south after the war. These enslaved people were told that they were equal with all others as a result of having been freed. However, they did not ever learn to understand the “Responsibility” which comes with freedom. There have been great exceptions to this lack of understanding including Booker T. Washington, or George Washington Carver who, understanding the responsibility of freedom, tried to warn their people but their warnings went unheeded. These people, as will all in Arrogance, only listen to flattery and not ever to the Truth and these negroid peoples have, since the end of the civil war, been constantly flattered by legislators, who only desire to stay in office and keep them under another form of total government slavery. They have never understood the Truth that under the principle of freedom one has a right to advance in life and can advance but never by being given anything for nothing. What most people fail to understand about freedom, whether they have been slaves or have always been free, is that each individual also has a RIGHT to FAIL totally and destroy himself. Free people have responsibility which goes with freedom and individual self determination must in a nation be merged into collective self determination. When engaged in a position of employment and not doing the work properly that individual should and MUST be terminated from the job because of lack of competence in that job. Never is there a right to be compensated for incompetence in a free society. The American free society has wiped out its own freedom by giving monetary and logistical help to those who are incompetent. When the government supports these incompetent people, in effect they are told that they are owed a living and they have no responsibility for their failures under this system of “freedom”. When these categories of people, under this type of a system of government support of incompetence, learn that there is responsibility which goes with freedom they inevitably must learn it the hard way by starving to death or dying in the streets from their own violence. American current ongoing domestic policy is totally anti-constitutional and anti-Laws of Divine Establishment and anti-Divine Institutions and when any person is fired from a job he has absolutely NO RIGHT to be reemployed despite his incompetence. People must learn responsibility and that having freedom demands responsibility. When fired from a job it should not and must not ever be because of race, gender or any other factor except that the worker is an incompetent, poorly motivated person or because that particular job requires too high a level of function or skill for him and he should be placed in a lower level job. In our society under the present conditions, Arrogance is the problem and collective racial Arrogance is what we see in the United States of America today instead of collective self determination. There should be no [Hangups](#), [Pride](#) or [Bitterness](#) but only the use of self determination in doing a good job and advancing in the temporal realm and also self determination in consistently taking in Bible Doctrine to advance in the spiritual realm.

Revolution appeals to [Mental Attitude Arrogance](#) especially Bitterness and these MAKE A GREAT COMBINATION DERIVED FROM EVIL. There are no black, brown, red or yellow men in this country who have any right to Bitterness about anything. Arrogance is what makes these people bitter as a result of their having listened to constant political flattery. Everyone in this country has a right to freedom and self determination but all must recognize the problems

which Freedom brings as a result of every person having an Old Sin Nature. It is too easy to fall into Mental Attitude Arrogance resulting from Evil and express Bitterness toward anyone in authority. God has a plan for the life of every believer and it does not include Arrogance, in fact, in the Plan of God, his system of function excises these trends. Anyone who comes from an economically insufficient background has no right to any Mental Attitude Arrogance especially not Bitterness. For the believer in The Lord Jesus, The Christ, God has a perfect plan for his life and this never goes contrary to any government where any form of freedom exists as a result of functioning under the Laws of Divine Establishment. Rome, as a republic, had no freedom and only as an empire did freedom flourish in Rome similar to what occurred under the monarchy of England. The United States of America as a republic has had great freedom but this freedom can only continue to exist and persist as a result of Honor and Integrity in the people. Unfortunately for America, there is a greater and greater lack of Honor and Integrity in the people. Freedom can exist under all forms of government and is precious and far more important than Arrogance, Hangups and even than life itself.

### Mental Attitude Arrogance

Even the most Arrogant of people whether intelligent, ignorant or even stupid eventually realize at some time in life that they have failed, most likely AGAIN. Of all the sins or failures possible in the Human Race the ones a person pays for the most are those in the Interlocking System of Arrogance and within that realm, Mental Attitude Arrogance with its Mental Attitude Sins especially Pride which encompasses the worst of all. More believers are disciplined for Mental Attitude Sins than anything else in life and most of them are not even aware that they and their Mental Attitude Sins are a pain in the neck for God. For most of these believers there has to be one real crisis or some unusually tragic event to allow them a final chance to straighten out their thinking and remove themselves from Arrogance. Arrogance has better hindsight than foresight and as a result of saturated National Arrogance in the United States of America the people have been taught to relate to things after the fact especially by the entertainment media. This country desperately needs graphic public execution of criminals by hanging from lamp posts or the trees in their own yards or by drawing and quartering them on the sidewalks of their home towns. Liberalism in all forms is Mental Arrogance and is therefore not related to reality with liberals always being:

- ✧ Anti Law Enforcement
- ✧ Anti Law and Proper Judicial Function
- ✧ Pro Criminal and ignore the victims of crime
- ✧ Anti Military

### Impulsive Thinking & Actions

When a society degenerates the majority of the Arrogance is found in the lower classes and is the real reason revolutions occur. This situation is, in fact, the origin of revolution. Revolution is the Impulsive Arrogance of scum and the lower class of citizens or, like in France, the middle class. Revolution always starts from Arrogance and is always impulsive and once begun it becomes impossible to withdraw the impulsive actions. An impulsive action cannot ever be withdrawn or apologized for and it will never help to try to reconcile the results of the impulsive actions. One will always pay dearly for impulsive acts and the only

way to NOT repeat impulsive actions is the consistent Perception, Cognition, Incultation, Metabolization & Application of Bible Doctrine.

The point and lesson here is to always THINK BEFORE ENGAGING IN ACTION. If one is moved to action by impulse as motivation 9 out of 10 times he will be wrong and the 10<sup>th</sup> he will have only slight justification if any. If one is considering doing something impulsive or violent he must think first because everything he does in life which is good must come from thought not impulse and emotion. If one is motivated by thought with regard to his actions he has a chance in life because it is inevitable, if he has inculcated Bible Doctrine, that he will be motivated by Divine Viewpoint. Arrogant individuals never think before they act and they never make any advances in life until they acquire Humility. In all cases the consistent Perception, Cognition, Incultation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine can bring one to the point of [Humility](#) if he retains residence and function in the [Divine Dynasphere](#). However, many believers often become Arrogant about the Bible Doctrine they learn and Doctrine, when learned, can stimulate either Humility or Arrogance. The day for the toleration of impulsive action is gone and it is inevitable, in a declining society such as in the United States, that there will be maximum Arrogance and maximum Impulsive Actions as a result.

### [Invincibility & Client Nations](#)

The believer in the client nation, especially here in the United States of America, often receives the erroneous impression that they are invincible and that God is on America's side. Nothing could be further from the Truth at this time in history since America is in fact under the Cycles of Divine Discipline. The people of the United States of America have an Arrogance which infers that they cannot be destroyed or conquered. Both nations and individuals who are Arrogant and or Self Righteous always feel that God is on their side and that the Justice of God will always rule in favor for them against anyone else. The only way for God to change this erroneous opinion individually or nationally is through the administration of very severe Divine Discipline which NO ONE should ever desire. This especially applies to the Jew, who because of past relationship with God, often assumes, in Arrogance, a partiality toward them by God. They assume an invincibility and that the Justice of God will always rule in their favor in history. Because of past relationship with God the citizens of the client nation United States of America always assume that God will never judge this country and the United States of America will go on forever. Both are erroneous. God is impartial in the function of his justice. Blessings, both individually and nationally, come from the impartiality of God and the believer should thank God for his impartiality. It is the impartial person who has capacity for life and love and all greatness, in any area of life, starts with impartiality, while Arrogance is the thing which will destroy everything in life. Therefore, one cannot be Arrogant about anything in life and be good at anything.

### [Liberalism & Minorities](#)

In the United States of America as a result of the population being saturated with Arrogance there is the overriding rejection of authority and abuse of freedom by the people. America has, as a result, adopted welfare systems, socialism and communist functions as solutions to national social problems. These things have chipped away at freedom destroying it bit by bit with only

abusive authority left. The situation is such that whoever the national representatives may be they take more and more power without accountability and this once great nation moves closer to absolute tyranny in the name of the greater good for the greater number. This can only be changed by the development of a pivot of mature believers to become the preservative of the nation. Unfortunately there may not be sufficient time for this to occur in the United States today. In the past the United States has been one of the most stable nations of the world but since the early 1900s it has been extremely unstable. This has occurred as a result of allowing people, in their Arrogance, to call themselves “minorities” and to demand things be given to them which they do not deserve and cannot on their own earn. This is WRONG and based on EVIL because they should be required to prove themselves in society in order to receive the things they are demanding. The majority of people in “minorities”, including illegals aliens and moslems, today are disruptive, criminal and disoriented to reality in life and if their standards are accepted this nation will end up being no better off than THEIR fore bearers in Africa and the middle east. America will then become part of the animalism of their enslavement. This is the reason that the communist conspiracy has encouraged the people in the United States to reject and depart from America’s Anglo Saxon heritage which accepts Jews and all races and welcomes them in the name of freedom WITHOUT LOWERING ITS STANDARDS OR CHANGING ITS HERITAGE. Most of the crime occurring in this nation occurs by blacks, browns, illegals and moslems and their standards of life do not come up to the standards America has had during its history. Educationally, public schools have been required by federal funding and guidelines to lower their standards, demonstrated by the Common Core principles instituted under Obama. Americans had been told many decades ago that a second inferior language must be accepted and used in the public schools and as a result of this, the nation will fail as has occurred historically in all multi lingual nations and the people will be reduced to living in a social jungle. There are rumors of teaching children in history that the American War for Independence occurred because ENGLAND did not want slavery and the United States did. This is the Arrogance of blacks trying to rewrite history to gain greater ascendancy in the nation.

The American bleeding heart do good liberal has been destroying the United States of America since the early 1900’s. While the sincere, do good liberal who is pleasing of personality, the promotional people of Self Righteousness, the maudlin emotionalist of distorted love, always impresses others and themselves, GOD is never impressed and never approves of them. At the very moment that one becomes involved in the Interlocking System of Arrogance at any level and jumps onto his Self Righteous high horse, he loses the approval of and relationship with God. As his Self Righteousness is stimulated by others he starts to think he is great and the next thing to occur is that he now judges and maligns others who do not measure up to HIS greatness. The people in general, in the United States of America are a Petty, Arrogant people and are very unamerican, without good common sense and without a relaxed sense of humor having no ability to laugh at self and other aspects of life. Americans today are a Self Righteous people and have the temerity to go to other nations and blackmail them into compliance with America’s demands, clearly demonstrated by what occurred in Rhodesia, South Africa, Nicaragua, etc. Americans today are full of Arrogance and Self Righteousness and this nation today is, in reality, a socialistic welfare state. The American government at every turn



is throttling and destroying every form of freedom and is a tyranny to the people. The government constantly caters to the so called “minorities” and these have become a ‘[Religious](#)’ Self Righteous people saturated with Evil. American believers are an extremely Arrogant people with the average fundamentalist Christian explicitly showing this in HIS [Emotional Revolt of the Soul](#) functions. These believers are proud of their own sacrifices and their erroneous opinions and are in desperate need of truly relaxed Enforced Humility but this is only developed within the [Divine Dynasphere](#) which they do not, in any way comprehend. Americans must stop having illusions of greatness and stop overstepping authority and becoming tyrannical and abusing others. With the development of Humility the people can stop being critical, gossipy vindictive maligners, and stop trying to build happiness on another’s unhappiness learning to live and let live under true freedom. It is only with Humility that people can begin to see a true perspective of life.

Doing good for others is a competitive game in this country and when one person or group is doing good then another has to out do them with more good. This is what is demonstrated in government representatives seeing one person start to try to save the children by opposing the 2<sup>nd</sup> amendment then another one has to try to do more good such as adding taxes to ammunition and firearms and requiring federal licensing for purchase privileges, ETC. This is what has occurred in every area of American Constitutional freedoms as they are regulated, eroded and destroyed. [Human Good](#) is a competitive production system and a wrong kind of competition being totally fueled by the principles of EVIL under Satan’s plan. This is again one politician trying to start a system of helping the people and then others try to out do that person and when everyone tries to help, the people who are the object of this ‘help’ become totally HELPLESS. When there are not enough things to do good about these liberals dig up things to FEEL good about. They engage in doing such things as giving homosexuals special rights including the idiocy of the right to homosexual marriage or gender transformations based on a young child’s desires. The Jews in the Old Testament Scripture followed the word of God and simply executed homosexuals and even God executed whole city states in Sodom and Gomorrah and the many nations derived from the Canaanitish Religion. Believers under consistent Positive Volition toward Bible Doctrine are out of the competitive market as a result of the Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul and must never try to out do others.

[Negative Volition Arrogance](#) is the general trend and major problem in any client nation which begins the client nation on its path to failure and downfall. Client nations have great prosperity from following the Laws of Divine Establishment related to freedom and Free Enterprise in the economy, with sanctity of privacy and property of individuals and leaving charity to individual volition rather than trying to force charity on the general population through the tyranny of welfare state functions as the liberals constantly do. This is what changes the patriotism of citizens in a client nation into resentment. This is where there abounds [Scar Tissue of the Soul](#) development and therefore Interlocking System of Arrogance involvement and the ramifications on the nation are far reaching. Then there develops rampant immorality with general acceptance of all varieties of sexual distortion from bestiality and homosexuality to gender modification along with others trends which are not ordinarily

accepted in a society (this is not inferring that these do not exist in all societies). As a result of generalized Reversionism and Arrogant degeneracy, society accepts these things and becomes very sympathetic to crime and criminals and antagonistic toward Law Enforcement with the result that there is intimidation and thus failure in the courts to uphold justice. The judges being intimidated no longer enforce the law but make their own law and turn back into society criminals who have no respect for law and thus no restraint on their tendencies to crime, the result is immoral degeneracy. This has been occurring in the United States of America since, at the very least, the 1960's and criminals generally have their way in court since the people won't convict and remove them from society by execution. Liberal ideas permeate society and the courts and they will not execute criminals and as a result crime is rampant and prisons are overcrowded with criminals who should have been executed. As a result the prisons have become a training ground for more effective CRIME. This makes Law Enforcement terribly difficult with officers being caught between intimidated judges and the resentful general public and always being considered the ones in the wrong. It is much more difficult to be in Law Enforcement on patrol than it is to be in the State Department or function as President of the United States. It is very easy to become bitter about this and this no one can afford this Bitterness at any time in history. Bitterness is one way in which people slip into Blind Arrogance and then interlock into the entire System of Arrogance.

### Bureaucratic Attitudes

In the American government today, small minded, inconsequential people, who have no right to pride or any level of Arrogance, enter into the bureaucracies of government and immediately have the greatest Arrogance imaginable. This has formed a bubble in our society which must break and when it does there will be disaster throughout the nation. Whether it is the bureaucracy related to health and education or firearms and explosives or environment or welfare or even the American Indian, they are all inherently destructive to the nation and not authorized by the American Constitution. It is possible to ultimately balance the American budget by canceling all bureaucracies and firing all their employees along with canceling all federal grant programs. The underlying problem in this Constitutional Republic is that the American government has extended the voting franchise much too far and needs to limit this franchise to responsible people as it was originally designed. It must remove the irresponsible from voting since they have been and will continue to always outvote the responsible people for their own self interest not having a care about the welfare of the nation. The people in government offices are as imbecilic as those who have elected them and they don't usually know much about the nation and how it is supposed to function but they are constantly panicking with regard to their own position and what they must do to keep it. In past history, by not supporting Rhodesia against communism, America is responsible for the deaths of millions of wonderful white and black people. This same thing also occurred in South Africa, Russia, China, Korea and many other areas of the world.

### Anti-Free Enterprise Attitudes

Many people fail to recognize that it is someone's ability which makes it possible for many others to have jobs and materialistic things in life. People have lost the ability to be appreciative of these things, as a result of having lost capacity for life. When a person is truly

appreciative he is not jealous of the one who makes it possible for him to succeed. Petty people run around and say that large companies do not, but should, SHARE their profits with the people and the people claiming this are truly saturated with Evil. These great companies must put their profits back into equipment and not give them to the people nor the government. Since they have not been able to do this and because of the trend toward Arrogant jealousy and vindictiveness, and because of the arrogance of labor unions, businesses in the United States of America have totally lost out in world markets and manufacturing. This also occurred in England before and after WWI where their machinery was totally degraded and needed to be replaced and because the industry could not do it they were failing in world markets. America is now where England was at that time. However, because of the efforts of Mr. Trump and his administration the United States of America began to bring business and manufacturing back into the country, however, the fraudulent theft of the 2020 election by the democratic party curtailed this completely. Germany rebuilt their machinery with new equipment and outproduced England in world markets after World War I. This also has occurred in Japan, where the American military has proposed moving their warship construction to at this time, and is occurring today in China both WHO have been outproducing America since the 1970s. This is the result of the American government forcing companies to give all their profits back to the people or to the government via corporate taxation thereby being unable to put anything back into upgrading the companies. The average person has a hard time seeing life from the executive view of capitalism and from the view of those who have to meet the payrolls and as a result they become imbecilic people encouraging EVIL in the nation.

### Tyrannical Attitudes

The tyrannical dictator at any level will always “exalt” himself from the incredible Arrogance which comes with exercising too much power. This is the basis of function of all tyrants. Any time a nation has a tyrannical dictator the people may not have voted or selected him for his position but still he represents the Status Quo of the thinking and attitudes of that people in history. ([2Thes 2:4](#)) A dictator always represents the attitude of the people of his nation with regard to Truth in the form of the Laws of Divine Establishment, Divine Institutions or Bible Doctrine. [Dan 5:20](#) is the classic passage of the word of God which relates [Scar Tissue of the Soul](#) to the Interlocking System of Arrogance in the tyranny of Nebuchadnezzar. Involvement in the Interlocking System of Arrogance results eventually in total rejection of Bible Doctrine, the Laws of Divine Establishment, the Divine Institutions, and any Absolute Truth in any category and thereby builds concentrated Scar Tissue in the Right Lobe of the Soul. This was the revolution which overtook Nebuchadnezzar and it was punishment from God for his Interlocking System of Arrogance involvement related to Scar Tissue of the Soul. One of the final Jewish kings, Zedekiah, in the southern kingdom of Judah just before the 5<sup>th</sup> cycle of Divine Discipline was administered is also related to this subject. ([2Chron 36:12-13](#)) Jeremiah had authority in the spiritual realm which the king did not possess and when he went to the king and taught him doctrine Zedekiah did not accept that authority nor the doctrine. The Interlocking System of Arrogance produced rejection of Bible Doctrine so that Zedekiah said ‘NO’ over and over again and this intensified his Arrogance and demonstrated that in the cases of Negative Volition Arrogance, the Interlocking System of Arrogance and Scar Tissue of the Soul always go together and this combination is the basic interaction of degeneration and

apostasy. Apostasy is the Negative Volition toward Bible Doctrine of Reversionism and when combined with involvement in the Interlocking System of Arrogance degeneracy it destroys the individuals or nations who engage in it.

### **National Arrogance & Public Demonstrations and Marches**

The very IDEA of publicly demonstrating against some concept or idea is an EVIL system and these people are simply MOBS, thoughtless, useless mobs, controlled by someone who has a plan and wants power. Public Demonstrators always reflect total involvement in the Interlocking System of Arrogance and many, even though they think they are doing things right, are involved in Blind Arrogance. Nothing is accomplished by demonstrations or marches and the correct way to redress grievances, issues and problems in our government under the United States Constitution is through written opposition as petitions and the use of the principle of Debate of Issues and opposition to policy and redevelopment of policy which are legitimate functions involving intellect, rationalism and thought. However, DEMONSTRATION is a mob function which goes forth based on Emotion and Arrogance and is totally EVIL.

It is ultimately the people who control the Status Quo of a nation and by watching the media interviews of people in the nation one must recognize that the IDIOTS he sees being interviewed for their opinions are the majority. If these people actually even have a rational logical thought they cannot express it. This is the mechanism behind how revolutions get started, when the majority of the people have thoughts that things are wrong but cannot express these and then they get excited and emotional about them. This is the result of stimulation by someone who wants more power and who moves the people to violence for correction of their perceived wrongs. Unfortunately, violence cannot ever solve anything. If there is some actual cause for grievance and the people become involved in marching and demonstrating against it, with rioting and looting added it, there is something seriously wrong with that cause. When people can demonstrate against government it is an advertisement of Arrogance in the nation and an abject failure of that government domestically. The American forefathers founded a nation and set up a system for the redress of grievances and never should there be redress grievances by marching or demonstrating, which is in effect a mob action and is totally unconstitutional. This 'mob action' is irrational and divorced from reality and intensifies whatever problems are thought to be involved. Individuals should be able to make their grievances known personally and groups should select a representative to present their petition for redress but no American President nor any other government official should ever be intimidated by a mob no matter how good or bad they may seem to be. Whatever a demonstrating mob's desire may be, the demonstration alone should tell the representatives in government that they should move in the opposite direction to what the mob wants. If the mob does not disperse immediately when told to do so the true reason for the demonstration, a desire for greater power, will begin to be understood more by the government. The demonstration mob is designed by [Conspirators](#) for intimidation no matter what the cause may be. When people gather in a mob for any reason it is to try to intimidate other people into their viewpoint and they are saying in effect "we have no logical arguments and want simply to scare the hell out of you", This is illogical, irresponsible, irrational and based completely on EVIL and must be dealt with harshly just as Captain Napoleon Bonaparte did in the French

revolution.

### **National Arrogance and Abuse of Those Under Divine Discipline.**

There is a great deal of involvement in the degeneracy of the Interlocking System of Arrogance in “3rd world” nations. The problem is not that they lack prosperity and not that America should be sharing it’s with them. Their problem basically is that they are a totally degenerate block of people on the whole with very few exceptions and this collective degeneracy expresses itself in great [Jealousy](#) and the HOPE of and DESIRE for the destruction of the United States of America. In their Arrogance they stand by as vultures and wait for the fall of the United States and hope to come in during the fall and steal and rape and appropriate and thereby gain from the fall of America. They fail to comprehend that the communist powers in the world are waiting to enslave them and use them in any way possible when the road block of the United States of America is removed. They do not in any way understand this principle of reality because they are collectively locked into the Interlocking System of Arrogance. They stood up in the UN and applauded Castro in his insanely Evil anti-God, anti-United States propaganda speeches full of communist ideals, all antagonistic to the United States. This is the result of being in the Interlocking System of Arrogance and when America is down and the momentum seems to be going in the direction of communism then the most obvious characteristic of Arrogance is to ‘kick’ the one who is down. The United States since the 60’s has become more and more weak in military, spiritual, establishment and governmental functions. When the Jane Fondas and ‘Black Lives Matter’ people of this world have a voice and are given attention by the media this trend becomes blatantly obvious. When little upstart rulers like Castro can ‘kick’ the United States of America and get away with it then it is even more obvious that the Interlocking System of Arrogance in the 3<sup>rd</sup> world is expressing itself in a typical way. This Arrogance divorces even the believer from reality and causes him to participate in any form of mass cowardice against those who are down.

Believers in the United States of America are even now being constantly ‘kicked’ by 3<sup>rd</sup> world nations and they have discovered that with [Antisemitism](#) they can ‘kick’ the Jew. To interfere with the function of Divine Discipline in any area in history is to invite disaster to self plus a life of future misery and punishment. This is why believers are commanded to NOT gossip or malign others. No believer can afford to be antisemitic but the inadequate believer in his Arrogance must find some way to compensate for his inadequacy by finding something to ‘kick’ and therefore he ‘kicks’ the Jews who are historically under the ongoing 5<sup>th</sup> cycle of Divine Discipline. Arrogance is also Jealousy of true success and the true successes of Jews in western Europe and the United States of America arouses the antagonism of many believers in their Arrogance. The Palestinians have done nothing with the land they occupied in Palestine but when the Jews turned it into a paradise then they wanted it back. Today in the entire world and especially the United States of America Antisemitism is being fomented and demonstrated by protest marches in support of the Palestinians and AGAINST the Jews and this is not only individually and nationally suicidal but is complete stupidity and a person can be very smart and do something very stupid by becoming involved in it.

Jewish Arrogance began with rejection of the Laws of Divine Establishment which was a



destruction of their freedom. It resulted in involvement in the Interlocking System of Arrogance where some believed in The Lord Jesus, The Christ but instead of advancing to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God they entered into reversionism from rejection of Bible Doctrine Truth. They had a complete breakdown in the areas of degeneracy within the Interlocking System of Arrogance. This has been the situation in the United States of America at the very minimum since the 1960's. Apart from individual regeneration during the Age of Israel the Jew cannot participate in the covenant promises of the future for Israel. They are historically under Divine Discipline because of the Interlocking System of Arrogance and they make a perfect target for the Arrogant person to 'kick' while they are down. This was the grave error of Adolph Hitler who was weak and functioned under Psychopathic Arrogance as a predominate part of his involvement in the Interlocking System of Arrogance in which he lived under demon possession.

The true conservative is NOT the individual who owns property and is trying to defend it nor one who has children and is now trying, out of a guilt complex, to provide something better for them nor one who realizes suddenly that the world is not good. The true conservative, as an unbeliever, must have a clear understanding and adherence to the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions and their functions and these must be related to freedom and its 5 interlocking concepts of the sanctity of:

- ✧ Life
- ✧ Uncoerced Volition
- ✧ Privacy
- ✧ Property
- ✧ Functioning Under the Umbrella of Authority

In addition they must avoid any tampering with the Jew in any form of Antisemitism, personal or collective. It has become very popular in this United States of America to be antisemitic and this is always a result of involvement in socialism. One of the greatest socialistic experiments in Human History was Nazi Germany in 1932. Read the Book or see the Movie "The Blue Max" and the sequel "The Blood Order". This book details how Bruno Stachle gets back into the German Luftwaffe and is anti-Nazi to the core and then joins a group to help get Jews out of Nazi Germany. All the way through this narrative there was conservatism accepting socialism not fighting it and as socialism continued and began to snowball the Jews then were persecuted. The welfare state which alleges to redistribute wealth always despises the Jew. Jews are generally successful and even if not they make a perfect goat to cover the mistakes of socialism. Attacking the Jews individually and nationally is a sure fire way to complete national destruction.

### National Arrogance and Organized Evil

All dictatorships always come out of DEGENERACY which destroys Laws of Divine Establishment principles and this is Disorganized NON-Systematic Evil but this Degeneracy brings Organized Systematic Evil into play. So that when any nation comes to the point of degeneracy, where there is this uncontrolled Arrogance factor and destruction of the Laws of Divine Establishment functions in that nation as Non-Systematic Evil, then usually some tyrant or dictator moves into power and the Crime from EVIL is now primarily committed by the

Government under his systems of Organized Evil. This is the situation in many South American, Middle Eastern countries and Communist Russia and China. ORGANIZED Evil is demonstrated in a tyrannical dictatorship or any other form of tyrannical government. In these systems, petty crime does not generally occur and violence and all degeneracy and all disorganized evil is eliminated by tyrannical Government because all CRIME becomes BIG crime which occurs on an organized basis by the Government itself under Organized EVIL. This was Nazi Germany, Russian Communism and especially the ongoing nature of Chinese Communism. Organized Evil always tries to produce GOOD and invariably uses a facade of Pseudo or Human Good and tries to become a substitute for Regeneration and thus it produces or inevitably becomes some form of RELIGION and both domestic and foreign Policy is based in that religion. Therefore this organized Evil which occurs as the result of the total breakdown of a nation under National Arrogance removes private or public violence and petty crime and petty criminals on the streets BECAUSE ALL crime and ALL violence is then perpetrated by the GOVERNMENT. This was the appeal that the communists who were taking over China made to the missionaries there promising to stop the degeneracy in the society if they endorsed communism to the people. Therefore it becomes clear that the one thing the dictator always does is take away individual FREEDOM which is what allows disorganized evil to operate. In addition his system must destroy all sources of Truth because Evil in an organized form is composed only of LIES and cannot coexist with Truth. The individual believers, who are set apart by their personal level of Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul, are the people Organized Evil must remove.

Legitimate Government can only be a power for God when Category I Truth of the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions are the basis for the principles and policies under which it operates and which are carried out by those in control of the government. Therefore, legitimate government must provide military establishment to defend the freedom of the nation against crime from outside its borders as well as Law Enforcement and Judicial functions to protect from crime within the borders. Thus the importance of the Pivot comes to light because when there is no pivot in a nation there can be NO legitimately functioning Law Enforcement and Judicial system to protect the rights of the people in the nation. There will inevitably be PRIVATE AND PUBLIC VIOLENCE and from these 2 there will be degeneracy and apostasy and this is used to put a tyrannical dictator into power. This was the case in Germany with Hitler, Russia with Lenin, China with Mao, Cuba with Castro and many other nations. For these nations in degeneracy there can be 2 results:

- ▲ God can give a DYING Divine Discipline and destroy the nation as he did with the 5 cities of the Pentapolis of Sodom and Gomorrah.
- ▲ God can give a LIVING Divine Discipline where there is developed a tyrannical dictatorship as is clearly illustrated in the communist nations and moslem controlled nations.

### Organized Systematic Evil persecutes Truth.

The principle is that while Bible Doctrine Orientated believes can coexist with Disorganized NON-Systematic Evil under a system of Freedom, however, they cannot coexist in a society where there is Organized Systematic Evil under a system of tyranny. There has been a total

and complete social degeneracy in the United States of America since the 60s and mature believers have been able to coexist with it even to this point of the 21<sup>st</sup> century. There is ability for this coexistence to occur because FREEDOM is the overriding factor. Disorganized NON-Systematic Evil MAY persecute the Truth but this occurs under Freedom. However, when Organized Systematic Evil comes into play it ALWAYS persecutes the Truth and Bible Doctrine and is the reason many believers are then martyred. The Organized Systematic Evil of the French Government persecuted the Huguenots and almost totally destroyed France by removing their entire middle class industrial base. Once Organized Systematic Evil comes along and the believer tries to evangelize the government then seizes him and executes him. Lenin and Stalin when they were in power they murdered 20,000,000 people almost instantly. The Chinese communists through the People's Courts murdered somewhere 20,000,000 people in 1 year and somewhere in the neighborhood of 120,000,000 after that. This was not Disorganized NON-Systematic Evil which can and does function in a free society but was Organized Systematic Evil which shut down freedom in those societies. The "strong man", the tyrant, rises out of Disorganized NON-Systematic Evil excesses because ALL PEOPLE are going to SIN and ARE going to choose degeneracy and he suppresses this by destroying the freedom which allows them to engage in it. By doing this the dictator substitutes Organized Systematic Evil where the government suppresses sin in private life but engages in sin as a function of Government.

### **The Power of Organized Systematic Evil is Government**

When a Client Nation (The United States of America today) has too much degeneracy and Disorganized NON-Systematic Evil and this is not controlled by the Laws of Divine Establishment under the Divine Institutions and the people go soft on crime and homosexuality then a dictator WILL rise up to suppress the degeneracy. This is what occurred with the American missionaries of China Inland Missions who HELPED the Chinese communists take over china because the communists closed down the opium dens and houses of prostitution and gambling. It was the DEGENERACY in china which allowed the communists to take over China.

All islamic countries with their strict laws against crime and strict punishment for it, have in these same countries the GOVERNMENT committing unspeakable crimes. The Organized Systematic Evil of government uses governmental authority to destroy freedom, confiscate property and execute and murder behind the facade of the greater good for the greater number. Therefore, Organized Systematic Evil is characterized by Self Righteous Arrogance in the rulers of the nation when there is uncontrolled collective National Arrogance in the people. Disorganized NON-Systematic Evil is characterized by Criminal Arrogance when there is a legitimate government system under the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions based on Freedom. Therefore, it is only an enlarged pivot of mature believers and the effective function of the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions with Free Enterprise and both an effective Military and Law Enforcement establishment developed which function to hinder the effectiveness of Organized Systematic Evil and thus prevent the rise of dictatorship.

### **National Arrogance Factors & Solutions**

The client nation and in fact every nation depends on the Divine Institutions and the Laws of

Divine Establishment, as found in the Mosaic Law, for sponsoring freedom under properly delegated and administered authority in mutual support. Freedom without authority is anarchy or Antinomianism and Authority without freedom is tyranny or Self Righteous Legalism. In addition to the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions there must also be the spiritual factors of Evangelism, advance to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God, correct and effective missionary activity and provision of a haven for the Jews during the times of the gentiles in any client nations. These principles concerning the observance of the Laws of Divine Establishment and the preservation of the Jews are related to the entire population of the nation. Evangelism results in individuals becoming believers and their subsequent spiritual advance to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God forms the sustaining pivot which preserves the nation and the preserved nation functions to evangelize other nations with missionaries. It is the PRIVILEGE given by God to believers, unknown, obscure, obfuscated by Evil, to live out their lives in unknown areas of the nation to take in Bible Doctrine and reach Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and form the pivot, the true basis of the preservation of the nation. While God sees the whole picture and heaven knows the totality of events, the world will never know of these effects because the Christian privilege is not a public relations or front page news function. The believer must never try to advertise himself with social action because this is only Human Good production motivated from EVIL like the Methodists and world council of churches constantly do. This results in distraction of the believer from Bible Doctrine by social action which produces Black out of the Soul and Scar Tissue of the Soul as a result of neglect of Bible Doctrine and therefore results in intensified Arrogance and believing the LIE of the social Gospel.

Beyond AD 70 the Jews cannot function as a client or priest nation and it was national involvement in the Interlocking System of Arrogance which destroyed their privilege to function as such. In this Church Age if the pivot of mature believers is large enough the nation will be secure and prosperous and functional as a Client or Priest nation to God. In historical crises the size of the pivot determines the outcome of the catastrophe. If the pivot is large enough the client nation is delivered either from or through historical crisis and the facts of Bible Doctrine are then fulfilled because The Lord Jesus, The Christ controls Human History in this case through the pivot. However if the pivot is too small and the spin off of Reversionism and involvement in the Interlocking System of Arrogance is too large, the nation is destroyed by the administration of the 5th cycle of Divine Discipline as historical disaster. The 5<sup>th</sup> cycle of Divine Discipline always culminates in an outside nation conquering the client nation. However, long before any outside nation conquers a client nation the people have destroyed themselves from within so that their ability to resist an outside power is nullified. This is what occurred in Poland, Norway, Latvia, Estonia and all others in central Europe when attacked first by German Nazis and then by Russian communists. However when a nation is destroyed by this 5<sup>th</sup> cycle of Divine Discipline the COLLECTIVE PIVOT OF MATURE BELIEVERS OR THE INDIVIDUAL (Heb) JESHURUN BELIEVERS ARE ALWAYS DELIVERED. In May 1940 when France was easily and quickly overrun by the Germans some escaped and became the FREE FRENCH. This also occurred in Poland, Norway and Holland and always there will be those who survive the disaster of national destruction and may even turn the tide of the 5<sup>th</sup> cycle. By returning to fight for freedom and reestablish the principle that FREEDOM only exists and is

maintained by MILITARY Victory under the Laws of Divine Establishment the nation can be reestablished. This is also the story of Jeremiah and the remnant pivot of 586 BC. ([1Kings 19:18](#))

In addition the principle of GRACE before JUDGMENT is ALWAYS in play and includes a period of intense doctrinal teaching (R. B. Thieme Jr. 1959-2002) before judgment occurs in the nation. The Pivot that preserves the nation in national crisis and disaster is formed in the client nation as a result and on the basis of the teaching of Bible Doctrine which precedes the disaster. This is most likely what occurred in the United States of America after World War II up to 2002 in the 53 years of the ministry of R. B. Thieme Jr., and is what the Pastor Teachers of today must be considering as their responsibility! Very often historical crisis and disaster is a good thing since it acts as a catharsis for the nation, cleansing the client nation of its spin off of apostate reversionism and those involved in the Interlocking System of Arrogance degeneracy. With historical crisis and disaster the nation is supposed to be humbled which then results in removing from within it the degeneracy of the Interlocking System of Arrogance. It then must become positive toward Authority under the Laws of Divine Establishment and the Divine Institutions for it cannot recover without this. This can be military recovery with victorious fighting for freedom as a result of those who have the ability to lead emerging and their authority being respected and their policies and principles put into operation. There must also be the function of labor, without the interference of union regulations, working hard to produce the weapons of war under their respect for the authority of supervisory management so that production reaches a maximum level under this system. As a result of all of these things, at the level of the general population, there is recovery and the believers involved come to realize, through this adversity, the importance of Perception, Cognition, Incultation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine and respond to it. This is the totality of national recovery and a complete analysis of how these principles pulled together can be found in "The Assyrian Crisis" Lessons from [R. B. Thieme Jr. Bible Ministries](#).

In any client or priest nation when the pivot is too small and Negative Volition toward Bible Doctrine with its resultant incidence of involvement in Reversionism and the Interlocking System of Arrogance involvement is too great, then the nation MUST be destroyed. In the Church Age such a client nation must be removed by the 5<sup>th</sup> cycle of Divine Discipline and replaced by another gentile client nation who is qualified from the standpoint of having an overriding emphasis on FREEDOM and the proper function under the Divine Institutions, the Laws of Divine Establishment, evangelism, spiritual growth, missionary functions and security for Israel. Therefore, there is no substitute for Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul and happiness comes from Absolute Truth in the Soul which brings capacity for life and whatever blessing may come. The human mind is helpless to cope with life apart from Absolute Truth and it is the failure to accept Truth which brings about individual and national pressures, adversities, catastrophes and disasters.

The United States of America is inevitably headed for great historical disaster. No one knows when or how soon it will occur since this is a command decision by the Sovereignty of God alone. Since The Lord Jesus, The Christ controls Human History He has held back from the



United States great military, economic, social, and political disaster for a very long time but when they finally touch this nation there will be unimaginable disaster. He has given positive believers an opportunity to reach Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God in the Grace period when these disasters have been blocked and with persistence any believer can reach and occupy the pivot of mature believers through consistent Perception, Cognition, Incultation & Metabolization of Bible Doctrine. When the historical disaster and catastrophe hits this nation those in the apostasy of reversionism or saturated in the degeneracy of the Interlocking Systems of Arrogance will be totally destroyed by the disaster. The Divine Viewpoint is that one cannot perpetuate a client nation without an occasional catharsis because the nation must be cleansed of that which would destroy it. Therefore, the apostate and degenerate must be removed by historical catastrophe or disaster if the nation is to be perpetuated and this perpetuation depends on the size of the pivot of mature believers just as it did in Elijah's Time with the 7,000 positive believers hidden in the caves. If the nation is destroyed under the 5<sup>th</sup> cycle of Divine Discipline, the Pivot always survives and it will ultimately join with or form another client nation to God.

It is a privilege for the believer to participate in saving the nation he lives in and to evangelize and send out missionaries. He will know that by Perception, Cognition, Incultation & Metabolization of Bible Doctrine and advance to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God he can have maximum impact on Human History without publicity and without recognition or approbation. This is a Grace system which demands complete and total Humility on the part of the believer who must maintain his residence and function within the [Divine Dynasphere](#). To accomplish the desired end each believer must function under Humility and accept the authority of their individually chosen "right" Pastor Teacher. The Bible Doctrine he learns will constantly challenge him under the ministry of God the Holy Spirit and tear down his Arrogance, vanity and pride and expose him for what he is as weak, helpless and hopeless without The Lord Jesus, The Christ. The result is that without any fanfare, publicity, recognition or approbation from the government, society or friends that individual believer can save the nation. Not by crusading, voting or running to change it all and especially not by violence, revolution or rejection of the Laws of Divine Establishment but by learning Bible Doctrine and growing in Grace and forming the unseen but historically real pivot of mature believers. Rhodesia, South Africa, Israel and Taiwan all went down in history because of a lack of Evangelism and then Bible Doctrine being taught, along with many other nations which were honorable in their beginnings, because no nation can survive without their pivot of mature believers. This is what it means to be "elected to privilege" ([Rom 8:28](#)) and these believers will never be rewarded, accepted or approved in their own historical time but this is not why they should strive for Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God. Every believer should do this for glorification of The Lord Jesus, The Christ as part of the Plan of God under Humility not Arrogance and not from [Inordinate Ambition](#). Ambition when under control is desirable but it can become a distraction to the Plan of God when it relates to [Crusades](#) and approbation. Those who build up ideas into a crusade for anything are in fact only seeking approbation for themselves.

In life some reality is visible to believers and some not and they must avoid being preoccupied

with the wrong reality of life. When one sees the distorted things which are occurring in life he can become preoccupied with what he sees around him. When he is preoccupied with what he sees around him rather than what he knows from Bible Doctrine his life becomes utterly useless. This creates a vacuum in the soul and into this vacuum comes the desire for approbation, recognition or greater power and its use to correct the distortions occurring in his periphery. This results in trying to prove something and developing a multitude of Hangups along with saturation within the Arrogance complex. Therefore, under these conditions, not only has he failed as a believer in The Lord Jesus, The Christ but in addition to that failure he has abused his privilege as a believer and thereby contributes to the DOWNFALL of the client nation of which he is a part.

All Believers have the opportunity to advance to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and fulfill the “election to privilege” functions as a result of the imputation of the Absolute Righteousness from God at Salvation and the provision of Logistical Grace support. When many believers do this, the conditions in the nation improve. However, the believer in Reversionism is always trying to change history by joining some group for a crusade or using some human effort system comparable to salvation by works and as a result expends a lot of wasted energy and has a complete failure to use and recognize the Plan of God under the concept of “election”. In the failing client nation preoccupation with disaster by the believer will rapidly destroy him and preoccupation with disaster inevitably leads to Arrogance involvement. Arrogance under pressure leads to [Self Pity](#) which destroys by distortion Absolute Truth converting it into something false. In addition being preoccupied with disaster leads to distortion of any possible accuracy of analysis of the situation turning it also into something false. There usually is no single individual who keeps a nation going but it is the whole pivot and the pivot is all that prevents any hovering disaster from touching the nation. Thus the obvious precarious position of client nation United States of America in this early 21<sup>st</sup> century.

In this early 21<sup>st</sup> century historical setting, with the United States of America still as a client nation, the situation is unbelievably horrible and far worse than it was in 1979 when then there was even then impending or hovering disaster. Considering this Truth the application to the problem and answer is found not in trying to solve the national problems with human solutions nor in trying to ensure the election of a prominent conservative to the presidency, but is found in [Rom 11:5](#). It is the existence of the pivot of mature believers which does the preservation. The “elect” have a potential privilege to save their country by advancing in the Plan of God through consistent persistent Perception, Cognition, Inculcation & Metabolization of Bible Doctrine so as to saturate their Stream of Consciousness of the Soul with maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine. Their reaching Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God does 2 things:

- It fulfills the part of the Plan of God which glorifies God and thus provides 6 categories of Super – Grace blessing for that individual believer.
- Part of this blessing includes Historical Impact and Blessing by Association with benefits that deliver the client nation from disaster.

**The historical reality of mankind is that God ALONE delivers and man, as a result of his**

**involvement in Arrogance, Emotionalism and Reversionism, manufactures the disasters and failures from which he must be delivered.** It is the incompetence of man and his Old Sin Nature functions under motivation from Evil stimulating his Lust Patterns with power and approbation lust which creates the problems. When man makes the problems ONLY God can solve the problems. No social action is of any benefit as the solution to historical disaster and the church, the Royal Family of God, has not ever been called to social action, only to spiritual advancement to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and beyond. Unless the individual believer is motivated to consistently learn Bible Doctrine on a daily basis there is no hope for the client nation United States of America. As goes the believer's attitude toward Bible Doctrine so goes this client nation. The United States has already drifted too far off course to rectify the national crisis situation by any other means except through the pivot concept found in Elijah's time ([1Kings 19:18](#)). There were 7000 believers at that time who perpetuated the northern kingdom of the client nation Israel for 150 years NOT Elijah who failed miserably. The Lord Jesus, The Christ controls Human History and the Integrity of God cannot permit the United States of America to continue indefinitely under the degeneracy of the Interlocking System of Arrogance and the apostasy of Reversionism in rejection of Absolute Truth and believing the LIE from Evil. Therefore, any possibility of national recovery now depends on the believer's attitude toward Bible Doctrine on a consistent basis and the sovereign decision of The Lord Jesus, the Christ in his control of human history, however, it may very well be too late to change the trends of the overriding Negative Volition of both believers and unbelievers to Bible Doctrine principles.

Return to the [Table of Contents](#)

#### **Gate #68 – The Arrogance of Antisemitism**

Antisemitism is certainly entrance into the Interlocking System of Arrogance thinking GOD needs help in disciplining the Jews and assuming superiority over the Jews and ultimately trying to destroy them. The longer one says no to any form of Absolute Truth the greater is the Arrogance in his Stream of Consciousness of the Soul and that Arrogance which rejects the truth also believes the LIE of Evil, Satan's policy to rule humanity. Once one believes Lies about the Jews he is subject to incredible Divine Discipline under the principle of Antisemitism. Many people think they can solve the problems of this nation by getting rid of all who are part of a specific group such as homosexuals or Jews or moslems. The problem today in the general population is the total involvement in the Interlocking System of Arrogance and this is what has brought the United States so close to the point of national destruction. ([Rom 11:19-20](#)) The gentile believer, as part of the [Great Inversion](#), assumes superiority over the Jewish unbeliever because the Jews are the branches of the God's olive tree of his Plan which have broken off. Because God continues to discipline the Jew the spiritual RED NECK gentile believers look down their noses at the Jewish unbeliever saying they are getting what they deserve because of the crucifixion of Christ. God put the judgment of the 5<sup>th</sup> cycle of Divine Discipline on Israel as a result of many things especially but not limited to their consistent violation of their own system of law but NOT THE CRUCIFIXION. Because Jews are under the

5<sup>th</sup> cycle of Divine Discipline it does not infer that they are inferior to gentile believers. Contempt for those under a historical 5<sup>th</sup> cycle of Divine Discipline is the same Interlocking System of Arrogance which divorces the believer from all other forms of historical reality and repudiates the [Royal Family Honor Code](#). The crucifixion was a RESULT of the Interlocking System of Arrogance collectively among the Jews and this is the exact same situation demonstrated clearly in the United States of America but more so today than ever before. The terrible fact is that if The Lord Jesus, The Christ would come to the United States of America today he would be crucified here as well. None of these concepts holds any weight in the false justification for the formation of or involvement in Antisemitism.

The gentiles as believers in Christ are wild olive branches grafted in to the olive tree of the Plan of God by means of Grace and, as a result, immensely benefit from Grace. Grace is often distorted by the Interlocking System of Arrogance which often makes it impossible for the believer to even benefit from Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God in life on this earth. Gentiles, who are in fact racially inferior to the Jews, erroneously assume superiority to them because they have been benefited by Grace and this is a distortion of Grace. This is the same as the criminal who tries to get out of paying the penalties of the law for his crime because he is or has become a Christians and a 'Grace' person. This assumption in all disillusioned believers is based on Arrogance arrived at because of receiving divine blessing and unless the believer continues to inculcate Bible Doctrine he rationalizes Grace blessing into a system of human superiority. For the person, who is blessed by God because of Logistical Grace and then at spiritual maturity receives from God his Escrow Super – Grace blessings, to suddenly have all these blessings and then look at them and say 'I am better than you' because of the blessings, is totally entangled in Arrogance. No one is superior because he has received blessings but Arrogance assumes superiority, as a result of the accumulation of greater temporal accouterments, and inevitably takes credit for the blessings. Arrogance also is the source of hatred in despising those who are superior and as a result the gentile believer falls into the trap of Antisemitism. The believer must not let the Interlocking System of Arrogance lead him into the trap of Antisemitism. It is the worst of all sins leading into many other Mental Attitude, Verbal and Overt sins, and WILL result in EXTREME Divine Discipline for that believer.

Very often, when God starts to impute Logistical Grace support or Escrow Super – Grace blessing from his justice to his Righteousness, which He has given to believers at Salvation, believers forget that the Righteousness of God in them is the recipient and assume that some personal system, talent, function, [Self Righteousness](#), [Morality](#) or even their effort in coming to church on Sunday is the basis for it. The fact is that people assume that by doing things they think are good, God will give them good luck and good fortune. By faith ALONE in the Substitutionary Spiritual Death of The Lord Jesus, The Christ the believer has been grafted into the Plan of God while the Jewish unbeliever is broken off from it by his lack of FAITH. This clearly illustrates why the believer should never ridicule or attack Jews in Arrogance or become in any way Antisemitic nor in any way ever do anything which glorifies Adolph Hitler. In World War II the United States Military should have been tasked with totally destroying Hitler and then destroying the Russians. The Russians only had strength to fight Hitler because the

United States provided everything for them to do so. Any Neo-Nazi movement today is as totally derived from and saturated with the principles of Evil as anything can be and Nazis are based on the same Evil as communists and the fact that they fought each other means nothing. They stand for the same principles of welfare and socialism and eventually using violence to control the people, and both came up through tyranny and the Interlocking System of Arrogance.

Paul in Romans anticipates the Arrogant thinking of gentile believers, distorted from involvement in the Interlocking System of Arrogance, and expects that it will evolve into many historical distortions. One such distortion is that the Jews have failed and as a result they have been broken off as branches so that gentiles can be included as it were grafted onto the tree of God. In addition Arrogance distorts and destroys any concept of blessing and its source so that gentile believers involved in the Interlocking System of Arrogance distort their Grace blessing converting it into Divine Discipline for their [Egotism](#) and Self Righteousness as the reason for receiving such blessings. Once the gentile believer enters the Interlocking System of Arrogance, he, with his Arrogant presumption resulting from such residence, will conclude falsely, without logic or reason, that everything related to blessing is due to his personal efforts. Not all gentile believers are Arrogant or become involved in the racial Arrogance of Antisemitism where this Arrogance is also a manifestation of their [Reversionism](#). This is only those gentile believers who are distorting Grace blessing into racial superiority. Interlocking System of Arrogance involvement both exploits and abuses those under Divine Discipline. When involved in the Interlocking System of Arrogance one has a tendency to bully and who is easier to bully than those individuals or groups obviously under Divine Discipline. When under Divine Discipline people have been robbed of any strength or retaliation ability by the very nature of their Divine Discipline.

Arrogance not only divorces the believer from reality but also causes him to participate in the mass cowardice of 'kicking' someone or some group when they are down. 'Kicking' or abusing by malice or maligning, Jews, when they are down under the 5<sup>th</sup> cycle of Divine Discipline, is one of the most disastrous and destructive and suicidal functions of Human History; just ask Adolph Hitler or the Assyrian Empire. God does not permit man to interfere with his Divine Discipline of any individual, group or nation under the 5<sup>th</sup> cycle of Divine Discipline, this, as Antisemitism, brings down severe repercussions directly from God. These repercussions are a part of the Abrahamic covenant from God to Abraham and that is an UNCONDITIONAL promise. ([Is 54:17](#)) To interfere with Divine Discipline from God on another is to invite disaster to self and begin a life of unimaginable misery and punishment. Therefore, no believer in The Lord Jesus, The Christ can afford Antisemitism, unfortunately, this is one of the most common problems for the believer entangled in the Interlocking System of Arrogance. Believers involved in the Interlocking System of Arrogance are often also inadequate and to compensate for this inadequacy they become Antisemitic. No matter how great the IQ, Arrogance not only divorces one from reality but guarantees stupidity even where great potential perspicacity exists. Antisemitism is often a demonstration of the abject stupidity of those with a high intelligence. For any BELIEVER to assume that the problems of this world are caused by the Jews is not only inane and fatuous but idiotic and imbecilic. Therefore it is obvious that Arrogance



destroys perceptive ability, capability, rejects the authority of scripture and its teachers and resents ability in others. Therefore, any entrance into the Interlocking System of Arrogance results in irrationality and interlocks instantly into the whole realm of Mental Attitude Arrogance.

Ignorance produces Arrogance and therefore it is the ignorance of the spiritual heritage of Israel which produces the Arrogance of Antisemitism and this has destroyed the conservative position in the United States of America. Since Franklin Roosevelt the conservatives have had very little to say about government in the United States of America and only the bleeding heart do good liberal, the imbecile, the stupid, the person who takes Human Good production based on Evil and parlays it into government operations, has had any impact on government, while the conservatives have become mixed up in Antisemitism. In the 70s and 80s every good media source of conservatives had some very good conservative articles and then they would publish some article about Antisemitism which canceled out all the good. Antisemitism has been destroying all the conservative groups in the United States for many decades and as a result they do nothing for this nation because they are a bunch of mixed up conspiracy oriented people. This is a system of Arrogance where those involved imagine, 'we are right and the whole world is wrong', but no matter how right anyone may be he cannot ever become Antisemitic and stay right about anything. Antisemitism TOTALLY wipes out any clear thinking about conservative issues. Therefore the conservatives are as responsible for the destruction of this nation as the worst wild eyed radical liberal. When there is lack of understanding of the Jew there can be no understanding of history at any level. The liberal academic idea that the Greeks must be understood is imbecilic since they became immorally degenerate in their own time and their men of genius were MORONS in comparison to the Jews. All western civilizations are a farce and meaningless apart from the Bible Doctrine of the scriptures and this is the unique heritage of Israel. The great men of Greece cannot ever stand up in comparison to Moses, Isaiah, Jeremiah, David or Paul, they don't even come close to being in the same ball park with them. It is satanic influence from the Interlocking System of Arrogance which turns people against the Jew, especially in this dispensation of the Church Age, when he is down under the 5<sup>th</sup> cycle of Divine Discipline. God is disciplining Israel for their failures and because of the Big Blot Out and he does not need help from any disoriented, mixed up, believer and if the believer does not understand Israel he is truly in grave trouble.

### Antisemitism & Salvation

The Jews collectively today are under Divine Discipline and God needs no help in that discipline and it is Arrogance to think one can help God in this area or any area where He holds the totality of the prerogatives. This idea of helping God was prominent thinking in the Roman believers, however, in this Church Age gentiles are not saved by God because they are better than Jews. The fact is that racially Jews are far superior to gentiles and with regard to Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God, race, gender nor social status has never had anything to do with salvation. Therefore, the inferior gentiles, are saved because of the Grace Plan of God and when The Lord Jesus, The Christ was on the cross all human sins were imputed to Him and then Judged in Him and he paid the total required price of accepting all Divine Discipline for them. Because of Positive Volition at God Consciousness unbelievers are

given, as part of the Grace Plan, the opportunity to hear the gospel of Christ, to understand its significance, and to respond to it by faith alone. This is the same system for the Jews now in this Church Age, the time of their Big Blot Out, where they have consistently rejected Christ. Faith in The Lord Jesus, The Christ results in salvation, not any human effort works or superiority one may assume to have.

It is Christ who sustains the gentile and Jewish believer in life under Logistical Grace and thus no believer ever has any right to the Arrogance of presumed superiority over anyone else especially the Jew. The rationale associated with Logistical Grace can prevent the believer from entering the Interlocking System of Arrogance and also get him out when he falls in. Gentiles are saved because of who and what Jesus Christ is and what he did on the cross, not because of some imagined superiority over the Jews. Jews are saved in this exact same way. This imagined superiority inevitably results in persecution of the Jews. Salvation as a Grace issue is based ONLY on the Substitutionary Spiritual Death of Christ on the cross for all races. The bible simply says, "Whosoever believes" and this eliminates any consideration of superiority or inferiority in this life as the means for acquiring eternal salvation. Arrogance produces a Legalistic Self Righteousness which becomes a distraction to an appreciation of the Grace blessings received and the rationale of Logistical Grace. All Grace blessings come to the believer by being directed by the Justice of God to the Righteousness of God imputed to him at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God. This, for EVERY believer, is a Judicial Grace imputation not an imputation because of some attribute possessed or some reason the recipient may think he deserves it. No believer receives any blessing because he is superior in race, economic or social status or for any other reason. He receives ALL Grace blessing from the Justice of God imputed directly to the imputed Righteousness of God, motivated by the Love of God and based on the Sovereign decisions of God, and for NO OTHER REASON.

### Equation of Hope vs Antisemitism

Each part of the Equation of Hope Plan of God has a support factor. These support factors are not based on the believer deserving anything from God in any way.

In the X Radical the fetus receives Soul Life imputed to its format soul AT PHYSICAL BIRTH, a Grace gift from God, and also receives Adam's Original Sin imputed to its genetic home in the human body, the Old Sin Nature, resulting in Human Life in the newborn and the simultaneous condemnation of Spiritual Death. This results in every human being having the potential for salvation and in this part of the Plan of God there is the total support from the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institution principles and the Freedom delineated therein, in order that he can be evangelized and make a decision without coercion FOR or AGAINST God and his plan.

In the Y Radical after the expression of Faith ALONE in Christ alone the new believer has benefited from the 1<sup>st</sup> judicial imputation of all his personal sins to Christ on the cross and then the 2<sup>nd</sup> judicial imputation of the Righteousness of God to him at the very moment of HIS Salvation. Judicial imputations do not have a home or target in the recipient and the imputation is not and cannot be earned or deserved by the recipient.

In this aspect of the Plan of God, Logistical Grace is the support from God and gives believers the needed life sustaining provisions for his spiritual advance to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God while living in the world ruled by Satan. In this area the believer must have support from the Divine Institutions and the Laws of Divine Establishment and the Freedom provided therein to enable him to take in Bible Doctrine on a consistent basis. This accumulated Metabolized Bible Doctrine, in addition to the Logistical Grace from God to keep him alive, provides for his needs to allow him to consistently advance to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God.

In the Z radical, after reaching Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God through accumulating maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine into the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul, the believer still has the support from the Divine Institutions, the Laws of Divine Establishment and Logistical Grace. Added to this is the unimaginable blessings of his Escrow Super – Grace blessings which can merge with Logistical Grace blessing forming Bravo Grace support for his continued progress through the No Man’s Land of Intermediate Spiritual Maturity to the point of qualifying for his Escrow Ultra Super – Grace blessings. These Grace blessings directly from God are in 6 magnificent categories where the Eternal Life imputed to the believer at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God is added to the 6 categories of our Super – Grace blessings and results in the potential for great blessing in eternity and thus to glorify God forever.

Therefore, in the Plan of God the believer has the Divine Institutions, the Laws of Divine Establishment, Logistical Grace and Super – Grace in 6 categories and at each Incremental Step in his spiritual growth a support factor is added to sustain the believer by the Plan of God under the increased pressures from life in this world ruled by Satan. Therefore the ROOT of the Tree, The Lord Jesus, The Christ, supports the believer and THE BELIEVER DOES NOT SUPPORT THE ROOT. The believer depends totally on the Plan of God, THE PLAN OF GOD DOES NOT DEPEND ON THE BELIEVER. Therefore, Antisemitic focus by anyone, especially a believer, is a rejection of the entire principle of Grace, by which he is saved in the first place, and a booming, screaming, begging request for enhanced Divine Discipline from the Justice of God. (Is 54:17) Not all gentile believers are Arrogant and not all gentile believers become involved through Interlocking System of Arrogance in Antisemitism but those who do suffer immensely.

### **Antisemitism & Divine Discipline**

Antisemitism at any level brings down severe repercussions on those individually or collectively who engage in it. (Is 54:17) To interfere with Divine Discipline from God is to invite disaster to self and is a request for a life of great misery and punishment. Antisemitism is one of the major thrusts of Satan to destroy the Jews and thus prevent God from honoring his unconditional promises to the Jews and to enable him to introduce his pseudo millennium to the world and it includes the whole realm of socialism and the welfare state functions. It is a satanic plan, anti-God, anti-Christian and a saturation of Human Good with entanglement into the Interlocking System of Arrogance all from the influence of EVIL.

The gentile believer who in Arrogance becomes guilty of Antisemitism causes a shrinking of the Pivot of mature believers in a nation and therefore loss of client nation status with the result of both individual and collective:

- Divine Discipline for carnality
- Divine Discipline for reversionism
- Historical disaster in time
- Loss of maturity blessing in time
- Loss of eternal blessing and reward
- Loss of client nation status because of a shrinking pivot of mature believers
- BUT **NOT** loss of salvation.

However, there is no implication regarding the loss of salvation for any believer at any time since this is impossible. Therefore, gentile believers must avoid Antisemitism and the Interlocking System of Arrogance in order to protect and preserve their client nation. Since God has judged Israel in the past he must also judge the gentile, whether believer or unbeliever, and his nation for Antisemitism. This is similar to God punishing the believer for Gossip, Maligning and Judging others. The unbeliever Jew will be punished in time and then in eternity in the Lake of Fire but the believer who engages in judging Jews will be judged only in time albeit very severely. The primary failure of the Jew was rejection of The Lord Jesus, The Christ, the God of Israel, and involvement in the Interlocking System of Arrogance which produced national degeneracy. This is the same national status currently in the United States of America. In this country the people in general are in a saturated state of involvement in the Interlocking System of Arrogance and therefore in total moral or immoral degeneracy. If God judges the unbeliever in his Arrogance and degeneracy, and he does, he certainly will also discipline his own children the believers. If God judged Israel with the 5<sup>th</sup> cycle of Divine Discipline he WILL judge the gentile believer and the gentile client nation especially for Antisemitism. Antisemitism is part of a whole system of degeneracy under the Interlocking System of Arrogance. The only difference in the administration of judgment for this by the justice of God is that the believer will never be judged in eternity and the unbeliever will be judged in both time and eternity. Therefore, one of the heaviest, most intense systems of judgment from God is with regard to Antisemitism. God has stated emphatically that He will never tolerate anyone but himself dealing Discipline to Israel. ([Is 54:17](#)) Neither will He ever tolerate any interference with the 5<sup>th</sup> cycle of Divine Discipline as he administers it. Therefore, He will never tolerate anyone or any group trying to get into the action of discipline for the Jew with Antisemitic activity. Both the individual Jew or any Jewish nation being singled out for some form of retaliation is absolutely forbidden and anyone who becomes involved in this gets maximum Divine Discipline. This is what has been happening with conservatives in the United States of America who have in the past been stupid and guilty of Antisemitism.

The issue before God in this Life is not ever race, social status or gender but the issue is always Grace. Grace is the policy of the Justice of God to bless or provide for the believer in The Lord Jesus, The Christ in time under 2 categories, Logistical Grace and special Escrow Super – Grace blessings. Divine blessing to the gentile should never be distorted into the Arrogance of racial superiority. On the other hand Divine Discipline, such as Jewish

PUNISHMENT from God, does not imply Jewish racial inferiority but does point to their denial of the Jewish spiritual heritage and rejection of the God of Israel, The Lord Jesus, The Christ. Jews in [Reversionism](#) have caused the loss of their Priest or Client nation status in history and the periodic recurrence of Holocaust situations for the Jews. The believer especially must never look down his nose at those who are being punished by the Justice of God. Focus and emphasis should and must be FEAR, NOT Arrogance as one examines others and their situations involving Divine Discipline. Just like the Jewish unbeliever is maladjusted to the Justice of God through rejection of The Lord Jesus, The Christ as savior so the gentile believer becomes maladjusted to the Justice of God through rejection or neglect of Perception, Cognition, Incultation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine. The major difference here revolves around the consequences which are to the Jewish Unbeliever the Lake of Fire for eternity while for the neglectful believer it is Divine Discipline in time.

Antisemitism is always subject to severe Divine Discipline and when combined with reversionism and involvement in Interlocking System of Arrogance this is doubled. If one finds self in the Interlocking System of Arrogance and moving down through the Stages of Reversionism as a result of Antisemitism this is Double Double Toil and Trouble. The Lord Jesus, The Christ is the only savior, He is the origin of the Jews, the preserver of the Jew, the disciplinarian of the Jews and the God of the Jews. Therefore, when the Jew rejects Christ, he is rejecting all his heritage and everything related to history, his origins and in fact HIMSELF. This is why when too many Jews in this way reject themselves, they step out of self and into the Interlocking System of Arrogance and end up standing in line in some holocaust, such as under the Nazis, to die. Antisemitism is motivated by both the Interlocking System of Arrogance as national degeneracy and Reversionism as national apostasy. Divine blessing from the Justice of God often lulls the believer into rationalization and distortion of Grace into a system of Arrogance in the Interlocking System of Arrogance thinking he deserves the blessing and the Jews deserve the suffering. Once Arrogance sets in Grace, as a policy, doctrine and system of thought, is ignored, resisted, rejected and at the very least distorted. People expect to be “Graced out” of their difficulties when they defy authority and become Antisemitic. The fact that any believer remains alive in this world one instant after making Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God is a result of the Grace of God and because both individually and collectively he treats the Jews properly. The use of authority by those in power positions or rulership positions is also a Grace function and holds with it incredible responsibility to God DIRECTLY who constantly evaluates their functions therein.

The loss of client nation status in the church age by the Jews results in only gentile nations being called to be client nations in this dispensation. The dispersion and holocaust judgments occur for the Jews when there exists a concentration of [Blackout of the Soul](#) in individual Jews in any period of Human History such as occurred in the period of the 3<sup>rd</sup> Reich. This eventuates in the all encompassing belief of the LIE from Evil with development of a hardness of the Right Lobe of the soul from the production of maximum [Scar Tissue of the Soul](#). This eventuates in the INABILITY to believe Truth even when faced with it. This results in consequences to the gentile believer, who in his Arrogance becomes guilty of Antisemitism.



If a believer rejects what is taught in Bible Doctrine, especially about Israel, and believes Antisemitism, saying NO to the Bible Doctrine, then he will come to believe ALL the LIES about Jewish conspiracies to conquer the world. Once he believes that LIE from Evil he will not only want to attack the teacher of Truth but will enter into Antisemitism which is much more dangerous and is what has been in the process of destroying the United States of America. Much of the Antisemitism of Human History has come from believers NOT unbelievers, therefore the believer must veer off when he starts to become antagonistic to Jews. Antisemitism is merely a perfect pattern illustration for what happens to people who reject the teaching of truth in any venue and who go out and gossip, malign and try to destroy the truth presenters.

Return to the [Table of Contents](#)

### **Gate #69 – The Arrogance Involving Possessions**

When the believer is given prosperity he must be able to leave it all behind when he has to flee in the face of disaster or revolution. Some love their possessions so much they will never leave them and this is Possession Arrogance. Possessions, all of these and much more, Books, videos, antiques, cars, guns, paintings, etc., are simply details of life and at times must be left behind when it is necessary to flee during disaster or crisis. Flexibility gives the perceptive application to separate self from things which have been enjoyed and loved. It is imperative that life continue in order to fight to rebuild in disaster, crisis or against a conspiracy and revolution to see that these things do not happen again, therefore the believer must be able to walk away from possessions. At some time in life one may have to face the issue of whether he is doing the Will of God and following Bible Doctrine or Sitting with his possessions.

It takes great humility to realize that possessions and treasures are temporal blessings from GOD and God can replace them in greater kind. The greater the capacity from Bible Doctrine the more one will enjoy possessions as the GRACE Blessings which they are. However, believers must be always ready to say that he will follow the giver and can leave behind the gifts. The one who gave these things to be enjoyed for a while is infinitely more important than that which has been given. If one is too slow in deciding to retreat when disaster occurs he may get caught while trying to leave and lose both possessions and even life. In any national or natural disaster believers must remain alert and must remain totally flexible. The key to this alertness and flexibility is to always choose the giver not the gift. The positive believer cannot lose the source unless he becomes too preoccupied with the gifts and cannot leave them. The Believer must be flexible enough to walk out of the house with what he can carry and be gone. There is nothing one possess which the Lord cannot take from him in a moment and neither is there anything which one can lose or which can be taken from him which the Lord cannot replace EVEN BETTER in a moment of time. The believer cannot afford to allow any THING he possesses to occupy his soul to the extent that he forgets the giver ([Postulates of Divine Integrity](#)).

Metabolized Bible Doctrine saturating the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul causes the believer to appreciate the giver and this is the same thing which tells him to ‘Get the hell out of Dodge’ when the situation requires it. If he follows the one who is the source of all things in and including his life he will never lose the source. There is nothing he possesses which he can indefinitely hold on to in life and if the Lord decides to take something from him it is simply gone. The source of all logistics and all blessings for the believer is the Lord and no one likes to be torn from their prosperity and possessions but in national crisis one must be able to leave it all behind if necessary. Whatever one is and however he has succeeded in life all of his prosperity is from the Lord and he must be ready and able to leave it. Prosperity should not and MUST NOT make the believer arrogant about his possessions. Possessions simply show how the Lord has blessed the believer but if prosperity has made one arrogant he will not even be able to appreciate what he has been given. When the chips are down and the believer faces this issue in a national crisis and the logical order of things is to move out he must remember he has not lost the giver the source of all blessings. The Lord always provides GRACE Solutions for the positive believer in disaster and crisis and will never leave him, therefore, by leaving possessions behind he is in fact losing nothing. [Humility](#), [Flexibility](#), objectivity and the application of Logistical Grace, the Plan of God and the Essence of God rationales to name but a few are the key to survival in disaster and crisis and also in future prosperity.

Return to the [Table of Contents](#)

### [Gate #70 – Iconoclastic Arrogance](#)

Iconoclast – An Icon is an Idol therefore an Iconoclast is a person who destroys Icons, Images or Idols. Iconoclastic Arrogance is to worship, idealize, over emphasize a single person or small group with a different or “BETTER” idea for improving man’s or one’s own plight in life. Then to turn on them when they do not fulfill the expectations of what should be done and destroy or attempt to destroy them. When this occurs it is very often totally without the image even knowing of the existence of the idolatrous worship. This Arrogance takes people in one’s environment and forms them into IDOLS. Then the Idolized person or group with Old Sin Natures shows their Old Sin Nature and shocks the IDOLIZER so that the IDOLIZER looks for flaws and when they are found the IDOLIZER tries to destroy the FLAWED IDOL. This Arrogance is one of creating out of unreality one’s very own idol and relating it to reality and then reacting to its supposed failures and then destroying it. This is all done in one’s own thinking and makes anyone who comes in contact with him a potential victim when he seeks to destroy them. This is one’s Arrogance in assuming that a person or group can make him happy therefore interlocking with the [Arrogance of Unhappiness](#) and it results in his setting them up as an idol in his soul. Disappointment with people in general always results from the [Arrogance of Disillusion and Disenchantment](#). The more one is around the idol he has created the more he sees that they are just like the rest of the people around him and in seeing the flaws of the idol, he then goes about developing a process for destroying the idol.

This person who has been made into an Icon has an Old Sin Nature like any other person and when the iconoclastic individual discovers the flaws of the idolized victim his own [Self Righteousness](#) and [Legalism](#) and becomes disenchanted with the victim and begins the process of destroying them. This is the Arrogance of Disillusion and Disenchantment, Iconoclastic Arrogance and the [Feet of Clay Syndrome](#). This is a part of People Testing which is caused by a problem of the displaced [Virtue](#) of worship directed toward people. The only reason to recognize the flaws of another person is to ignore them and practice the virtue of [Impersonal Love](#) by keeping one's mouth shut about them. When considering the creation of an idol out of someone else, the [Arrogance Skills](#) can only do 1 of 2 things, put self on a pedestal of pseudo greatness or put someone else on an iconic pedestal. Usually this Arrogant person places self on a pedestal and then looks for some other qualified person to be up there with him. This eventually ends when the feet of clay of the other are discovered and they are then rejected and even destroyed figuratively in the mind of the Arrogant one or literally in life through the verbal sins of gossip, slander, maligning or the overt sins of violence and criminality. Iconoclastic Arrogance and the Feet of Clay syndrome are the inevitable result of the Fragmented life of the believer living in the minefield of Carnality always living under the control and function of the Arrogance Skills of [Self Justification](#) and in the blindness of [Self Deception](#). The Arrogant reaction of Idolizing and then rejecting one's own Idol is the vanity of transferring the blame for one's fragmented life to an innocent party by operating under [Denial and Projection](#) interlocking with [Transference Arrogance](#). Once this blame begins as disillusion, disenchantment or disappointment with the Idol there is created the motivation and Modus Vivendi for slander, maligning, judging and every form [Motivational Arrogance](#) from EVIL which is destructive to the Idol. The Feet of Clay syndrome is the Arrogant Irrationality of rearranging the Doctrine of [Hamartiology](#) to be compatible with personal Self Righteousness and Legalism just as the Pharisees did with Jesus and the Apostles. When Iconoclastic Arrogance is parlayed into evil obsession it totally abandons the greater Grace of of the spiritual life for the EVIL of the Cosmic Dynaspheres.

Self justification is the first of the Arrogance Skills and the power source for Iconoclastic Arrogance and the desired destruction of the Idol. The Idol was created as a role model but the only justification for the believer looking for or finding a Role Model is in the Person of The Lord Jesus, The Christ while he was in Hypostatic Union. Seeking and developing any other role model ultimately results in Self Righteous Arrogance and a believer who functions totally under the influence of Evil in the Name of Good. This is what ultimately brings Self Justification to the Iconoclast. Self Justification leads to Self Deception and inevitably results in [Self Absorption](#) and then these cycle back to the beginning of the Arrogance Skills, repeat and even reverse. This continued cycling of the Arrogance Skills very often results in the [Crusader Arrogance](#) of christian activism and doing pseudo or [Human Good](#) in the name of God so that Evil is thereby justified. The result is the attempt to bring all others into line with one's way of thinking and even to the point of killing any who oppose that one way of thinking. This is the Modus Operandi and Modus Vivendi of islam and communism both. Stalin in the name of the good for the greatest number killed many more than 12 Million people and Mao did the same thing killing more than 25 million.

Believers who enter the status of loser begins with reaction which is where Arrogance destroys what Arrogance creates. A prime example is this Iconoclastic Arrogance where the believer who creates the idol, later destroys it. This is subjective preoccupation with others resulting in disenchantment and disillusion with a role model when the actual humanity or feet of clay of the idol is seen. Whether there are real or imagined sins or flaws in the idol, it always results in attempted or actual destruction of the person who is the Idol. Iconoclastic Arrogance in transferring the blame of personal failures to the Idol to justify self and to blame another is the dark side of [Morality](#) found in [Legalism](#) related to the 3 Arrogance Skills. This is therefore, lying to self and becoming totally preoccupied with self. Iconoclastic Arrogance, therefore, destroys friendship, romance and marriage and the true christian fellowship of Bible Teaching from the right Pastor Teacher along with Fellowship with God the Father and The Lord Jesus, The Christ.

In divorcing self from reality, Arrogant thinking creates an image of perfection superimposing it on a person or organization creating an idol of illusion and enchantment. The illusion is Self Deception through Arrogance. When one over rates people it is a sign of personal Arrogance and divorcement from reality. This created Icon is an unreal and misleading image created by the Arrogant volition and thinking of a person who IS Arrogant and may not recognize he is Arrogant in [Blind Arrogance](#). This Arrogant person has abnormal illusions because Arrogance is always subjective and inflexible with regard to [Non-Essentials](#) and it must be creative in the field of subjectivity and it, completely alone, creates an image in another for worship. Accompanying the illusion created by Arrogance is the state of being enchanted by the illusion which is created from one's Arrogant subjective thinking. These illusions can in fact take this person to the point of [Psychosis](#). Once the illusion disappoints the Arrogant one, his reaction is disillusion and disenchantment and this Arrogance ignores the reality of universal human sin or failure because it has created an image of this other person without it or without realization of it. Therefore it is creating an image which does not and, in reality, cannot exist. It is possible to have this imaginary image of a person so strong in one's thinking so that when they die before the feet of clay are seen the Arrogant person then falls totally into a completely psychotic state. This has to be classified as maximum subjectivity in Arrogant thought. Arrogant subjective people in preoccupation with self spend their lives following this pattern of ignoring reality and engaging in serious levels of [Hamartiology](#). Love, respect and admiration related to [Humility](#) and reality are normal and not to be confused in the understanding of this concept of Iconoclasm.

Arrogance and Iconoclasm tend to depart from [Impersonal – Unconditional Love](#) and move to Personal Love resulting in the rejection of many people. The real secret to capacity for love, life and happiness is to have maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine saturating the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul, in the sphere of Humility. Love, respect and admiration relate to reality, humility and capacity, therefore, humility is the protection against the most subtle and common place functions of Arrogance. Humility never destroys romance and true love but Arrogance fantasizes romance, honor and integrity into an image of unreality which cannot and does not exist in the devil's world and then, when disappointed or disillusioned by it, destroys or attempts to destroy it. Once this occurs and the image has been destroyed the first new

person who comes along who is nice and sweet as a person is then latched onto and the whole system starts over. When frustrated Arrogance like this occurs as a result of finding the feet of clay in another, one chooses the first person who soothes that frustration to replace the destroyed idol. This Arrogance then again creates an idol of perfection, the image of unreality, then again discovers the reality in the idol and again reacts to it. The greater the Arrogance and Self Righteousness the greater the demand for perfection in others. The Iconoclast never has capacity for Love because there is no capacity for true personal love without having Impersonal – Unconditional Love for Mankind in general and maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul. Arrogance is never the basis for Personal Love but results in reaction to the sins of another and demonstrates that this Arrogant person has no capacity for love and is in fact dangerous.

Once a believer as an iconoclast reacts to the Idol he has created and there begins the cycling through the Arrogance skills, this involvement results in vituperation, malice, vindictiveness, revenge Modus Operandi, etc., to destroy the one set up as an idol and this may go even so far as violence and murder. Antagonism toward the feet of clay of the Icon is caused by Self Righteous Arrogance. The Arrogant believer takes the believer who is spiritual and observes him at some time out of fellowship in some form of presumed lasciviousness and the Arrogant believer sees this and enters the trap of the obsession of the Arrogance Skills. This entrance begins a system of destroying the Icon and eventually destroying any others who are like him through some activity involving [Christian Activism](#). The most devastating effect of Iconoclastic Arrogance is for the Iconoclast to create the Idol, worship the Idol and then seeing flaws in the Idol, destroy the Idol. Iconoclastic Arrogance often results in a life of permanent fragmentation and perpetual misery and these believers always end up as heretics. The Arrogance of the Iconoclast is blinded to the reality of HIS total failure established in trying to set up and then destroy the Idol.

The principle is that Arrogance Destroys what Arrogance creates. [Unrealistic Expectations](#) and [Role Model Arrogance](#) are both part of Iconoclastic Arrogance. When anyone departs from the Role Model pattern set up by the Iconoclast they are then destroyed by the iconoclast. The individual who functions under Iconoclastic Arrogance destroys his own Spiritual Life and is subject to Divine Discipline from the Supreme court of Heaven and often this is double and triple compound discipline and it results in incredible misery and suffering. It involves the rapid march through the 8 stages of [Reversionism](#) with total destruction of the Spiritual Life. This is a great tragedy when one realizes that all believers in this Church Age as Royal Family of God have been given the same equal opportunity and equal privilege to execute the Protocol Plan of God for their life in time. This problem is one which can only be solved by the provisions from and function of the Essence of God in Time.

### **Principles involved in Iconoclastic Arrogance**

The job of Christians is NOT to become involved in Crusader Arrogance by interfering with religion or destroying its property in the form of Icons or Idols. Believers as Ambassadors for Christ are to communicate the truth of the Gospel of Christ and accurate Bible Doctrine and NOT destroy property. The Iconoclast is an idiot who destroys property because he resented it



or was offended by it or thinks he is serving GOD. Iconoclastic Arrogance today is different than in the past and iconoclasts today are civilized enough to NOT destroy the property of religious churches and they, at least to some small degree, respect the property of others and to some slight extent authority as well. Today Iconoclastic Arrogance it is best defined as subjective preoccupation with OTHER PEOPLE and is the counter part of the Arrogance of Unhappiness which is SUBJECTIVE preoccupation with SELF.

This basically involves resenting anyone whose sins are different from one's own SINS. Iconoclastic Arrogance is thus completely divorced from reality in human relationships where the Arrogant believer uses romantic illusions or some other form of admiration or deluded idealism and fashions in his mind an idol of perfection which ONLY exists in his own mind and does not even approach the true reality of the person idolized. This idol created by Arrogance could involve a romantic, spiritual, physically beautiful, personable, kind or good image which results in disillusion when it fails to fulfill the expected results. The connection with the Feet of Clay syndrome results in an idolatrous delusion based on the Arrogance of Subjectivity.

For happiness, contentment and blessing the believer must realize that he cannot change others but can only CHANGE SELF. Many believers often try to change people they love and people they can't stand being around in hopes of improving both categories. This is an Arrogant attitude and results in them being so busy with involvement in Crusader Arrogance that they never think of changing self. Changing self requires function in and execution of the Protocol Plan of God. IF the believer is functioning under the progressive levels of Personal Love for God then he will take people as they are but IF he is not functioning under Personal Love for God at any level then people will make him miserable as long as he lives. One cannot change people to conform to one's personal standards and IF one tries long and hard enough he will become as childish, stupid, foolish, imbecilic as the infant believer and if he has any spiritual advance developing in his life it will be wiped out. ([Eph 4:14](#)) The changes one can make in self are those which make it possible to live with other "OBNOXIOUS" people and tolerate and love people and MUST be related to Bible Doctrine. Only by changing self through advance and execution of the Protocol Plan of God can the believer avoid Iconoclastic, Unrealistic Expectations and Role Model Arrogance and all of the levels of their interactions in the Interlocking System of Arrogance. These are all pins in the Arrogance grenade which will result in the believer having a totally fragmented life if they are pulled. Changing self is a matter of consistent Positive Volition toward Bible Doctrine and consistent Post Salvation Epistemological Rehabilitation from consistent Perception, Cognition, Inculcation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine. There are no vows or promises to start doing something to change self and one DOES NOT do it on his own but it is done FOR HIM by the Grace of God and his fantastic provisions under the Mystery Bible Doctrine of the Church Age IF the believer will be self disciplined enough to be consistent with his intake of Bible Doctrine. Changing self is a matter of learning and relying on the Omnipotence of God, the [40 assets](#) given at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God and the [4 Spiritual Skills](#). Changing self is a matter of execution of the Protocol Plan of God by which the believer is manufactured into an invisible Hero. One cannot change people by imposing on them impossible standards as a part of Role Model Arrogance, using standards which one cannot and does not keep himself. This is why

marriages explode because each spouse has a grenade and each pulls the pin and rolls it under the other causing fragmentation of the marriage. The believer cannot react to the failures, flaws and sins of others through Iconoclastic Arrogance. A shocked wife tries to change or destroy the idol she created when she married. A shocked husband goes to the local pub and tells the bar tender that he cannot understand women. In addition, having children very often means the children will roll their mini grenades every day under both parents.

### **Mental Attitude Sins & Iconoclastic Arrogance**

Iconoclasm also interlocks with [Bitterness](#) and [Mental Attitude Arrogance](#) as [Motivational Arrogance](#). This is the vanity of blaming someone else for the fantasizing of one's own Arrogance. This believer shifts the blame for personal failures to any other when in fact HE did the fantasizing and HE is the Arrogant one having created the idol and then having gone about destroying it. This is the most subtle but most vicious form of Arrogance which takes the Arrogance one possesses, no matter his IQ, and turns all aspects of his thinking into subjectivity. It is impossible to have any capacity for life or love with this thinking in one's soul. This is one easy way to enter [Psychopathic Arrogance](#). It is impossible with this type of thinking to appreciate Bible Doctrine because this thinking is subjectively distorted into one's own Arrogance system. This is also the function of creating an idol out of Arrogant thinking, then worshiping it in the sphere or circumstances of unreality, then blaming it for not being God and then destroying it with one's own Arrogant reaction of disillusion and disenchantment. Only God is perfect and man is not only imperfect and sinful but falls under the category of [Hamartiology](#) called total depravity. Depravity is the possession of totally Arrogant thinking. Degeneracy is not actions or vulgarity but is thinking in terms of categorical Arrogance. Therefore, entering Iconoclastic Arrogance is first accomplished totally by a person's own thinking and entering into Motivational Arrogance; this could be called AUTO-Arrogance.

### **The Interlocking of Iconoclastic Arrogance**

When in the Interlocking System of Arrogance the believer can 'interlock' with all systems of both Motivational Arrogance and [Functional Arrogance](#) and ultimately shock himself with what he does.

### **Self Righteous Arrogance**

Iconoclastic Arrogance interlocks with the instability of the Arrogance complex which is oscillation between [Self Righteous Arrogance](#) and [Self Pity](#). Self Righteous Arrogance can perform many types of good deeds but cannot compete with the imputed Righteousness of God the basis for justification at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God and the basis for divine blessing after Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God. The book of Romans defines the role of the imputed Righteousness of God so that there is no excuse for being distracted into a system of Self Righteous Arrogance which competes with the Plan of God.

### **Authority & Institutional Arrogance**

Since the idol created by this Arrogance is often associated with authority this makes the person vulnerable to [Institutional Arrogance](#) and [Authority Arrogance](#).

### Disillusion, Disenchantment & Unhappiness Arrogance

Since the person involved in Iconoclastic Arrogance is also involved in the Arrogance of Disillusion and Disenchantment and is basically unhappy he must also be associated with the Arrogance of Unhappiness. Often when people are unhappy they look for someone to make them happy and that someone becomes the idol and when that idol lets them down they become disenchanted with it and are again unhappy and then destroy it and look for another to make them happy. It is very difficult to go into the Interlocking System of Arrogance by Iconoclastic Arrogance and not be involved in Arrogance of Unhappiness. Nothing can make these individuals happy and they always inevitably react to the target which they think will make them happy.

### Iconoclastic Arrogance & Crusader Arrogance

The reaction of Disillusion and Disenchantment also links with Crusader Arrogance since the crusader is a frustrated, Self Righteous Arrogant person. He is one who has shot down so many idols he has given up on idols and now wants to reform groups or improve the world. The object of the crusade is to punish the idol or idol group for being human and sinning, or offending his Self Righteousness when he discovers their feet of clay. This is the greatest distraction to the study of Bible Doctrine since teachers of Bible Doctrine are very often made into idols but all have an Old Sin Nature which is inevitably discovered all too quickly.

If one puts a person on a pedestal because of romance, friendship, marriage, etc., he surrenders his happiness to that person. They WILL disappoint him because of his admiration of them and he will become disillusioned regarding them if he is lacking sufficient Metabolized Bible Doctrine in his Stream of Consciousness of the Soul. Then he will lose or destroy his own Spiritual Life. He then will have no capacity for life, all because there is no response in the soul of the other to all the situations or problems in the life of the Arrogant one. This is Disillusion and Disenchantment, and when one creates the pedestal and puts a person on it he will eventually see their feet of clay and become Disillusioned and Disappointed and try to destroy them. Love then turns to hate and this believer is so far from the Spiritual Life it is disgusting. He often starts with the Arrogance Skill of Self Absorption and when he sees their faults and is totally disappointed then he pulls them from the pedestal and attempts to destroy them. He will judge, malign, and even come to the point of malice in his attempts to destroy them. He thereby moves from Love to motivation for Revenge for the disappointment they have caused him. Then he cycles back to the 1<sup>st</sup> Arrogance Skill of Self Justification and moves again into Self Deception in order to complete his destructive dealing with this individual who may well have done nothing wrong. This is a true danger to the Spiritual Life and the Arrogance Skills will cycle both forward and backward until this believer is not distinguishable from the unbeliever. Reacting in this manner to someone makes the reactor the loser in the Spiritual Life and when he thinks he is right under self justification he then becomes the greater loser.

The person whom has been placed on the pedestal and then torn down and has become the subject of attempted destruction will be far better off than the iconoclast because they will be receiving blessings due to his reaction to them. This is where iconoclasts enter Denial and

rejection and do not see self in the doctrinal mirror of the soul since in this state, the [7th Stage of Reversionism](#) is destroying and erasing all Metabolized Bible Doctrine and the mirror of the soul no longer exists. When Iconoclastic Arrogance has resulted in malice and the true desire is to destroy the idol it often leads to violence and even murder. There is now no distinguishing the iconoclastic Believer from the unbeliever. This has become obsessive EVIL and will truly destroy the Arrogant believer. This Obsessive EVIL can again become Crusader Arrogance from self absorption again cycling back through the Arrogance Skills. This Status Quo lacks capacity for Life and has Evil motivating and influencing emotion which then takes over control of the soul in [Emotional Revolt of the Soul](#) as a response to improper thinking from the Arrogance Skills. In the Arrogant one moving back to Self Deception strength is added to his Legalism and Arrogance because the one on the pedestal is wrong and the iconoclast is convinced he is right and thus enters into [Christian Activism](#) and by this means fragments his own life. As a result, he will receive warning discipline from God under the law of volitional responsibility as a result of his involvement in reversionism continuing. His reaction turns love into hatred, bitterness and vindictiveness and disillusion become malice and lust for revenge, and by this means from his own volition he allows another to control his life and emotions.

This kind of reaction to another person based on Unrealistic Expectations, Role Model Arrogance, and / or Iconoclastic Arrogance, results in the rate of forgetting exceeding the rate of learning and the 7 compartments of both the Left Lobe and Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul being covered up by [Scar tissue of the Soul](#) resulting in a LOSS or ERASURE of all Metabolized Bible Doctrine from the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.

### [Iconoclastic Arrogance & Maladaptive Defense Mechanisms](#)

The believer who enters the process of Iconoclastic Arrogance creates a system of Self Righteousness and constructs from this new environment the inability to use the [Problem Solving Devices](#) and sets himself up as a role model. This comes from [Denial](#) and [Projection](#) as well as pseudo self esteem. These 2 false principles cannot ever win the [4 Battles of the Soul](#). Iconoclastic Arrogance results from the syndrome of getting eyes on people thereby creating a role model out of someone until reaction to them occurs and then SELF is set as the role model which can do no wrong. This Self Righteous Arrogance always contradicts the Protocol Plan of God and always ends up in Denial. This Self Righteous Arrogance creates an environment with denial where the Arrogant one cannot be wrong. Their idolized role model is then inflated under the defense mechanism of [Idealization](#). When this occurs while in Self Righteous Arrogance, unreality is created to keep this role model on the pedestal but, sooner or later, the feet of clay start kicking. Then when the flaws are seen the iconoclast finally wakes up and reacts to the one set as role model which results in disillusion, Disenchantment, and eventually denial.

This very often results in [Autistic Fantasy](#) which as ineffective daydreaming is a substitute for reality. Now the Self Righteous Arrogance of the creator of the role model, does everything possible to run down or destroy the role model who unwittingly showed their faults. In essence they go out of their way to totally destroy them, because as a result of living under the

influence of the [Maladaptive Defense Mechanisms](#) these Arrogant iconoclasts are unimaginably vicious. Then as a result of the rejection of the role model or discovery of their feet of clay this Arrogant iconoclast uses the Interlocking System of Arrogance and Interlocking System of Antagonistic Emotional Hatred as well as the lust pattern system of the Old Sin Nature to accomplish a total loss of at least 3 of the 4 Battles of the Soul. This results in Unrealistic Expectations where the one in Self Righteous Arrogance expects all others to share their views and when this does not occur they enter into a greater level of Self Righteous Arrogance where they blame others for their own faults and flaws. These flaws must be corrected and the only possible way to do so is to look long and hard into the mirror of Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul. The Unrealistic Expectations of the believer under Maladaptive Defense Mechanisms of [Repression](#) and [Denial](#) not only blames others for their visible state but becomes aggressive under legalism to change others to conform to their expectations. Unrealistic Expectations and the Maladaptive Defense Mechanisms in an individual cause him to fail to realize that there is only one person he can change and that is himself.

### **Biography of the Aggressor**

Through the [Lust Patterns](#) of the Old Sin Nature 2 systems of Obsessive Evil are Manufactured which go together and reinforce each other functioning generally under one or more of these Arrogance entry gates, Unrealistic Expectations, Role Model Arrogance or ICONOCLASTIC Arrogance. An Obsession is the domination of one's thoughts and feelings by a persistent image, idea or desire. The Image is the Role Model created from one's Arrogance of soul. The Idea is that this role model is the greatest thing ever to come into the world and this thinking is counterproductive to the Spiritual Life. The Desire is a lust from the Old Sin Nature which rejects the mechanics of the Spiritual Life and includes Power Lust and Approbation Lust. The mechanics involve finding a believer who is loved, honored and adored by others. This believer or any person for that matter, is put on a pedestal in the mind of the Iconoclast which, at first, seems innocent, but is definitely misguided love or admiration for another person because of one's personal [Legalism](#).

The problem here is that when a person is placed in the position where it is now assumed that they do not have an Old Sin Nature and are in fact perfection incarnate then the person placing them in that position begins to assume that they also are perfect because they have created or recognized this perfection in the idol. Then, at a later time, the discovering of the feet of clay or failings of this icon results from their supposed position of Superiority. Admiration of others who have made great accomplishments is a good thing as long it is related to [Humility](#) and the Norms and Standards from Bible Doctrine. However, this well intentioned function has a dark side where the Old Sin Nature gains control of the soul and the 3<sup>rd</sup> Arrogance Skill emerges, [Self Absorption](#), and without the consistent use of the [Rebound Procedure](#) that believer finds himself set deeply into the Arrogance Skills and Cosmic Dynasphere I, the Interlocking System of Arrogance.

The shock wave occurs for the iconoclast occurs when it is discovered that there is no Old Sin Nature compatibility with his created Idol. This is a negative reaction and sinful in discovering the feet of clay and turning disillusion into malice. It is the trend of the Old Sin Nature



toward Legalism and Arrogance which reacts to the shock of seeing the incompatibility with the idol where the idol seems weak and immoral while the iconoclast sees himself as strong and moral and he then becomes MORE Arrogant and uses all his efforts to destroy this Role Model Idol. It is primarily the shock of seeing the Idol fail in any way that destroys the precept of the perfection of the Idol and from this then comes the whole system of Vituperation and Vilification creating Malice, Bitterness, Implacability, Vindictiveness, Public Lies, etc, to punish the idol for failing to fulfill the standards of the iconoclast and thereby hurting the Iconoclast. This Arrogance, therefore, can be the basis for all the worst sins and even the basis for Murder as the worst of the Overt Sins.

This magnified Arrogance places a Bitterness in the Soul which is only satisfied by destruction of the Idol. This then results in the discovery of tremendous power never seen or used before and the iconoclast becomes stimulated by it and this power becomes the evil obsession of Arrogance with the attitude that the Idol deserves destruction. When this attempted destruction works it then stimulates the Legalistic Arrogance of the iconoclast and is a great part of the 2<sup>nd</sup> Arrogance Skill of Self Deception. This stimulating power DEMANDS use and thus the Arrogant believer now demands stimulation from the use of this Evil power to destroy all the bad things in the world. The iconoclast now looks for other experiences of [Revenge](#) from this Evil and the destruction of others who are in his eyes obviously wrong in life. This results in the Justification of Sin and Crime derived from Evil in the name of doing good things. These Arrogant believers now AGGRESSIVELY LOOK for people toward whom they can react and then destroy. By this means they then justify their Evil coercion to bring as many as possible in line by any means possible. However, this always results in an empty throne but the power is still there to destroy others and the use of this provides great approbation for the job the iconoclast is doing in getting rid of these bad ideas, bad people and bad things. When Role Model Arrogance is followed by Iconoclastic Arrogance in the Aggressor there is Self Fragmentation of the Spiritual Life in the Minefield of Carnality. God the Holy Spirit therefore no longer controls the Soul of this believer but the Old Sin Nature controls the Soul where there is then carnality and entrance into the 8 Stages of [Reversionism](#).

Very often when others see what has been done to destroy the idol and when they condone it, this adds to the approbation lust of the Iconoclast. A single and often simple thought can make or break the believer and the power of Evil Influence is so strong it can attract the best believer and the resulting Arrogance then attempts to destroy or align all others in his periphery to his false standards. A great part of this problem for the believer begins with building Doctrine on Experience rather than on the study of the Word of God. This legalism and the power of Evil introduces new stimulation into the life of the Self Righteous Arrogant believer and if this evil power becomes admired by others it is then disguised as being “GOOD” for everyone. This approbation results in the Self Righteous Arrogant believer being totally entangled in Cosmic Dynasphere I, the Interlocking System of Arrogance and rejecting the necessity for involvement in Perception, Cognition, Inculcation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine which is the true Spiritual Life. The Admiration of the ‘Mob’ then makes an idol of the Arrogant Iconoclastic believer and the power of Evil multiplies the functions of the [Arrogance Skills](#) in all of these people. This explains the unimaginable tyranny which occurs

when a FEDERAL government becomes too powerful and takes over a country by systematically enslaving its people as has been occurring in the United States of America. The more power the government takes from the people the more Evil it becomes involved with. This is clearly stated in the Constitution of the United States of America which does not trust Big Government and does everything possible to prevent its existence. Unfortunately the great American Constitution has been largely set aside today for bleeding heart liberal socialism and welfare functions, ie giving greater power to the federal government.

### **Iconoclastic Arrogance & Reality**

All Arrogance is subjective and subjectivity divorces self from reality to varying degrees especially in human interaction. This Arrogance takes normal people, all who possess feet of clay, flaws or faults in some area of life, and assigns to them a role which they cannot possibly perform because no one is perfect, despite the Arrogant person wanting to see them as perfect. Reality is that NO human being ever enters this life apart from possessing a genetically transmitted Old Sin Nature and NO ONE has lived their life without at some point, probably many, having acquiesced to the temptations thrown up by the Old Sin Nature. Some who are involved in this Arrogance may even have to go back in history to find their idol when they are wallowing in some level of psychosis. Even the most totally subjective, self centered, Arrogant people will have at some time an OBJECT for their personal worship. In this way, by the use of their own volition mixed with their Arrogance and their unrealistic perspective of life, they create their own Idol monster. Obviously, this is always an illusion created by foundering in unreality, but all Arrogance is always divorced from reality. Arrogant people are often under the illusion of Self Deception and as a result of being subjective these illusions are created within their human soul. This illusion and the Arrogant misconception about another person, becomes the delusion of imposing on the conscious mind an IDOL which cannot, does not, and will never exist.

This is not normal human admiration or respect and all normal people admire things which are compatible with their Norms and Standards but this is the antithesis of normal admiration, respect and love for others. This is an Arrogant delusion and the subjective creation of an idol in the thinking and emotion of the Arrogant soul. Not only does the Arrogant person take another HUMAN BEING and create this idea of perfection around them but also he becomes fixed in the illusion that the idol he has imagined in his soul, can do no wrong. When one loves other people in friendship or romantic love he does so knowing their flaws and failures and accepting them for who and what they are. No one ever loves another without sooner or later finding the flaws, faults and fallacies of the other. In every case in order to perpetuate that love one has to treat the object of love as a PERSON not as a IDOL. It is Impersonal Unconditional Love for Mankind as a **Functional Virtue** developed in the Power System of God, the Divine Dynasphere which causes one to treat those whom he loves, those who fail him personally and those who fail generally in sin, AS AN INDIVIDUAL PERSON. If this person has made Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God through faith alone in The Lord Jesus the Christ alone then the additional consideration is that they too are recipients of the imputed Righteousness of God. In every case, when one has illusions about another person and creates in his soul an IDOL based on this other person, sooner or later the idol will crash in one's

thinking when they unintentionally ignore or offending him in some minor way. All Arrogant individuals, being intrinsically hypersensitive, will invariably find what they consider the FEET of CLAY, flaws or faults, of their self created Idol and then begin systematically to engage in processes to destroy that Idol.

The true insanity of Iconoclastic Arrogance is BLAMING the IDOL, which one has himself created, for what he has done in his own soul. Invariably people will be disappointing but it is the Arrogance of the person who becomes disillusioned and disenchanted with other persons. The one who has put this other into a position as an idol, is offended by his own exaggeration of their ever present flaws and becomes antagonistic toward them. It is almost humorous were it not so destructive that this Arrogant person always blames the Idol for having been created by HIM and principle is that Arrogance never takes responsibility for being Arrogant. Thus the decision to create an Idol centered around another human being is a decision from a position of weakness, from residence in Cosmic Dynasphere I the Interlocking System of Arrogance under Iconoclastic Arrogance.

Iconoclastic Arrogance is the old story of Arrogance inevitably solving all its problems by violence, physical, mental or verbal, and this is solving a problem with another problem. Arrogance has no patience and does not believe in any parliamentary form in relationships and therefore always resorts to some level of violence. It is a violence of thought from some aspect of [Motivational Arrogance](#) which follows into the development of Iconoclasm. Therefore, it is Arrogance to idolize people and a production from Evil as [Functional Arrogance](#) to engage in Iconoclasm. Admiration of others is normal, LOVE of others is normal and an expression of Honor, Integrity and Good Norms and Standards in true love is NORMAL. Disappointment is normal and people inevitably disappoint, but Disillusion and Disenchantment is abnormal and involves the creation of something which does not exist and the Iconoclast has thereby gone from reality to unreality. God is to be worshiped because he is PERFECT, people are to be loved even though they are NOT perfect. To be disenchanted with people is Arrogance and to be disenchanted with God is Blasphemous. Therefore, subjective preoccupation with self interlocks with Iconoclastic Arrogance as subjective preoccupation with others.

### **Results of Iconoclastic Arrogance**

Whenever the believer engages in iconoclastic Arrogance his own Tragic Flaw is displayed and HE DESTROYS HIMSELF. Receiving Divine Discipline can add to his misery but is designed to awaken the believer to his status in a fragmented life. The believer destroys himself with sin and Divine Discipline is designed to wake him up from this sinful status. Every sin has its areas of violation of natural laws and has repercussions and when one sins he subjects SELF to these laws and repercussions and many times this person thinks he is under Divine Discipline but he is simply wallowing in his own Self Induced Misery resulting from the violation of the natural laws from sinning. Divine Discipline is actually a GRACE function from God designed to give the believer a shove back toward the Plan of God and the Spiritual Life functions. Divine Discipline is a reminder that the believer must be objective about life and therefore use the [Rebound Procedure](#) and recover instantly from failure or sin. Sin results in manufacturing one's own unhappiness and misery from DECIDING to Sin and thus leaving the System of God,

the [Divine Dynasphere](#), and entering into the systems of Satan, the Interlocking Systems of Arrogance and Antagonism. The Arrogance of rejecting one's own idol or icon is the vanity of [Transferring](#) the blame for one's own failures to an innocent party. Thus, disillusion combines with the Hypocrisy of Idol manufacturing and then transfers the blame to the idol. The IDOL is innocent of what he is being blamed for and even if the idol has sinned, that is a problem only for the IDOL, NOT THE ICONOCLAST, nor is it his prerogative to evaluate the Idol. Therefore, residing in a fragmented system under strong Evil Influence the iconoclast destroys what he has created.

Arrogant romantic women can Idolize Men and even Marry them to later discover their Old Sin Nature and after close intimate contact they clearly see the feet of clay and REACT to them which may result in divorce in a very short period. In every case the creation of an idol out of another person results in the believer beginning the fragmentation of his life by entering the Interlocking System of Arrogance. The Arrogant reaction then becomes vindictive, implacable, bitter, filled with hatred and antagonism and resentment. When this happens to a woman in marriage toward her husband who is her authority she destroys not only her marriage but also her own life which becomes a life of total misery.

Christians may idolize the Pastor Teacher or Evangelist (the evangelistic spiritual gift has an aspect of attractiveness toward people and a leadership quality which draws people to them). This often occurs when the individual believer idolizes the Pastor Teacher who feeds the congregation Bible Doctrine accurately. However, the Pastor Teacher is not a very good icon or idol because his feet of clay show quickly as a result of his being observed frequently OR this occurs as soon as he teaches something with which that member of the congregation disagrees or dislikes. This brings strong reaction, disillusion and disenchantment resulting in turning away from the correct accurate teaching of Bible Doctrine. Destruction of this Pastor Teacher idol means rejection of the Bible Doctrine he is teaching and thus rejection of the Plan of God, Will of God and Purpose of God for one's life. This is one reason that a large percentage of apostate believers exist today and is a major cause of the rejection of Bible Doctrine.

When a child does this regarding parents and becomes disillusioned with parents and rejects parental authority that child is going to have the most unhappy miserable life imaginable and the only thing which can change this for him is execution of the Protocol Plan of God. For the unbeliever the only solution to this kind of Arrogance is to function within and under the Bible Doctrinal principles of the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions and this is a HARD road to recovery because this person is filled with antagonism, hatred and motivated for revenge.

Therefore, Iconoclastic Arrogance destroys:

- ✧ Friendship
- ✧ Romance
- ✧ Marriage
- ✧ Business Relationships

- Professional Relationships
- Local Church Relationships

### The Bad Combination

The Arrogance of Unhappiness inevitably interlocks with Unrealistic Expectations and Role Model Arrogance moving the individual into Iconoclastic Arrogance. Here these combine to form the tragic flaw of the double standard in the Christian Way of Life by which people justify their own sins while judging, slandering and condemning the sins of others. In addition the tragic flaw of Self Righteous Arrogance interlocks with this entangling the individual believer into Legalism, Personality, Morality, Authority, Compulsive, Conspiracy, Crusader, Christian Service and Transference Arrogance.

### Prevention or Avoidance of Iconoclastic Arrogance

First and foremost, Arrogance never takes the responsibility for being Arrogant and many areas of involvement in the Interlocking System of Arrogance interlock directly with Blind Arrogance. For the believer in spiritual adulthood there should never be any reaction to other people with Disenchantment and Disillusion because the spiritual adult believer must take all people as they are including other believers. Each stage of spiritual adulthood is characterized by increasing Personal Love for God to the point of Occupation with the Person of The Lord Jesus, The Christ, therefore ‘God Emphasis’ must take precedence over ‘People Emphasis’. Therefore, the ultimate protection against Iconoclastic Arrogance is for the believer to advance into the realm of Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God.

Return to the [Table of Contents](#)

### Gate #71 – The Arrogance Regarding Role Models

Role Model Arrogance is in reality part of Iconoclastic Arrogance. The “ROLE” is the proper or customary function of a person, where society and people in general have assigned proper, customary functions to certain activities in life such as husbands, wives, teachers, politicians, Law Enforcement officers, Military men, Pastors, public servants, ETC. When one departs from his Role Model he is condemned, ostracized, criticized, judged, slandered, rejected, and maligned. People in a society in general have a predilection for everything to be in its proper place and to be operating under its “proper function” and invariably resent any deviation from what they have set as “proper function” in any form. Thus society invariably always develops a double standard, one for the Role Model and one for the Role of Self. While a person may excuse himself for his own sins, failures, and flaws he inevitably condemns any Role Model for identical sins, failures and flaws thus this is another aspect of Iconoclastic Arrogance or an interlocking into Iconoclastic Arrogance. Role Model Arrogance under the feet of clay syndrome of Iconoclastic Arrogance results in the believer imposing impossible, unrealistic or unreasonably perfect standards on others which he should never do because it ignores the fact that every individual has an Old Sin Nature and continues to use it even after Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God. ([1John 1:8-10](#)) Therefore, this system of Denial, justifying one’s own sins and



condemning the Role Model's Sins, is failure in the Christian Way of Life.

In every soul of every person the Old Sin Nature's trends are antithetical and a person can oscillate between these trends. The trend toward Legalism results from entanglement in much of the Arrogance complex especially [Self Righteousness](#) and ends in the [Dark Side of Morality](#). The Old Sin Nature trend toward legalism is the conversion of morality into a pseudo Spiritual Life by combining it with Arrogance. This is the Arrogance which comes to those who try to keep the Decalogue, the 10 Commandments, for salvation or spirituality. Legalism is a Self Righteousness, which is part of both the Interlocking System of Arrogance and the Arrogance Skill of [Self Justification](#) which is the beginning of the entrance and cyclic function within the [Arrogance Skills](#). Legalistic, Arrogant, Self Righteous people are always users. The Old Sin Nature trend toward lasciviousness results from the Arrogance of Self Indulgence and inevitably interlocks tightly with [Pleasure Arrogance](#).

Role Model Arrogance gravitates to the Old Sin Nature trend of Self Righteous Arrogance and Legalism and manufactures a hypocrite out of oneself and a victim out of the Role Model. Role Model Arrogance rejects the fact that one cannot change anyone but self and an outstanding example is the believer who places emphasis on the pastor over the message. Iconoclastic Arrogance results in [Unrealistic Expectations](#) and combines these into Role Model Arrogance. Thus, the double standard of Role Model Arrogance originates from the Old Sin Nature's trend toward Legalism. The bad combination of Unrealistic Expectations, Self Justification and Role Model Arrogance with [Self Deception](#) results in a polarization of the Old Sin Nature trend toward legalism resulting in total [Self Absorption](#), thus completing a cycle in the Arrogance Skills functions.

Role Model Arrogance manufactures legalists, hypocrites, and Self Righteous Arrogance all as a result of the formation of its victims in its function. Role Model Arrogance is a part of the fragmentation of Arrogance in the life and also manufactures LOSER believers who not only have their eyes on self but also on other people in general. This removes the possibility of using the greatest of all Problem Solving Devices, [Personal Love for God](#), in its varying progressions of development up to and including [Occupation with the Person of The Lord Jesus, The Christ](#). Role Model Arrogance, therefore, creates hypocrisy in the clergy and legalism in their congregations. When functioning under Role Model Arrogance the clergy and congregations of any Local Church will be distracted from what is important, the mystery Bible Doctrine of the Church Age, and by which the Protocol Plan of God is executed. Without the consistent Post Salvation Epistemological Rehabilitation from persistent Perception, Cognition, Inculcation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine there can be no solutions to nor understanding of the combination of Unrealistic Expectations and Role Model Arrogance which interlocks with Iconoclastic Arrogance and HOW THEY WORK. Therefore, Role Model Arrogance distracts congregations from Bible Doctrine by placing emphasis on the personality of the pastor rather than the content of his message. The only [Essential](#) in any Local Church congregation is the accurate content of the expository teaching of the Word of God by the Pastor Teacher which is the only means of spiritual growth and execution of the purpose, plan and Will of God for one's life. Simply put, it is never the man but ONLY the message.

Role Model Arrogance interlocking with Unrealistic Expectations has 3 focusing results:

- ↪ **Eyes on Self**
  - A Double standard used to justify self by rationalizing one's own sins and ignoring both moral and immoral degeneracy in self.
- ↪ **Eyes on People**
  - Condemning their sins and failures with envy, bitterness hatred, revenge, gossip, maligning, slander, [Inordinate Ambition](#), Inordinate competition.
- ↪ **Eyes on Things**
  - Arrogant resentment of others who possess greater material assets or have more approbation from people which one does not receive.

One terrible result of this is the Arrogant frustration of the resentment which results from seeing the wicked prosper which very often distracts the believer from consistent Perception, Cognition, Inculcation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine and execution of the Protocol Plan of God.

[Heb 12:2](#) mandates that the only Role Model for the Believer is The Lord Jesus, The Christ in Hypostatic Union, and to make anyone else a Role Model is entering into Iconoclastic Arrogance, Role Model Arrogance, and Unrealistic Expectations Arrogance. This will also inevitably result in his function totally in the Arrogance Skills and is basically the origin of [Christian Activism](#) and [Crusader Arrogance](#). As a result, Christian Activism and Crusader Arrogance are 2 of the most destructive systems in Life destroying the Spiritual Life and Freedom simultaneously.

When a believer puts any other person on a pedestal he surrenders his happiness and control of his life to that person. If one gives love to another and that person disappoints for any reason so that he becomes disillusioned he is in danger of losing his entire spiritual life in one shot. In the Spiritual Life wealth is measured in terms of the quantity of Bible Doctrine available as the thinking currency of the soul and any reaction to someone who is loved is like being trapped in a mine field full of explosives any one of which could fragment both the believer and his Spiritual Life. The REAL Danger comes from involvement in the 3 [Arrogance Skills](#) since any reaction to others always includes Self Justification, Self Deception and Self Absorption. Being involved in Unrealistic Expectations, Role Model, and Iconoclastic Arrogance the believer can easily, often instantly and entirely, destroy his own Spiritual Life. A Reaction as a result of having Unrealistic Expectations makes him vulnerable to [Disillusion and Disenchantment](#). A Reaction related to Role Model Arrogance makes him vulnerable to the [Feet of Clay Syndrome](#). Iconoclastic Arrogance makes one vulnerable to the power and [Approbation Lust](#) of the Lucifer syndrome where one locks in to the idea that he is completely right and as a result he comes to the first 2 Arrogance Skills and ultimately total Self Absorption. When one surrenders the custody of his life and happiness to someone he loves or admires he permits them to control his responses in life and as a direct result of this 2 things invariably happen:

- ↪ God the Holy Spirit does not control his life and he is in a mine field and anything he does will be destructive apart from his use of the [Rebound Procedure](#).
- ↪ The Old Sin Nature controls his soul and anything he does in this status is like stepping

on one of those fragmentation mines.

Rectification of this status quo always begins with [Rebound](#) and the recovery of the [Filling of God the Holy Spirit](#) and the Spiritual Life and above all recovery of [Humility](#) from engaging again in consistent Perception, Cognition, Incultation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine. ALWAYS remember when involved in any aspect of the Interlocking System of Arrogance, “God makes war against the Arrogant believer” ([James 4:6](#)) and nothing is more Arrogant than a believer who has tried to solve a wrong doing with a Sin of Arrogance. This results in the soul becoming covered with [Scar Tissue](#) which will destroy all personal relationships including marriage.

Any society has applied perfunctory status’ to functions in life and when there is deviation from these general patterns the people then begin to try to destroy those individuals involved in these distortions and deviations. Therefore, societies always have a double standard and this becomes a destruction of the Grace Principles of the Plan of God. By this means, Role Model Arrogance causes believers to fail due to lack of Personal Love for God and Impersonal – Unconditional Love for Mankind including and especially the one whom they have set up as an icon. These believers have not reached [Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God](#) and are NOT functioning under [Occupation with the Person of The Lord Jesus, The Christ](#) and as a result they begin to self destruct. The SELF – Destructive principles of Role Model Arrogance include:

- ✧ Role Model Arrogance manufactures hypocrisy in the clergy and legalism in the congregation therefore the evil function of the Feet of Clay Syndrome and Iconoclastic Arrogance.
- ✧ Role Model Arrogance ignores the basic Bible Doctrines that all believers must have and as a result continues a rate of personal sinning which is compatible with their ignorance of Bible Doctrine or compulsive from the lust pattern stimulation of the Old Sin Nature.

Without consistent Perception, Cognition, Incultation, Metabolization and Application of Bible Doctrine the freedom of self determination is destroyed. Both the privacy of the priesthood and the environment for cognition of Bible Doctrine is replaced by some form of spiritual tyranny which drives people away from Christianity. Role Model Arrogance often distracts whole congregations from Bible Doctrine by by emphasizing personalities within the congregation or the personality of the Pastor Teacher over the doctrinal message. This is one result of entanglement in the Interlocking System of Arrogance where believers always get hung up on personality and forget about Bible Doctrine. Therefore both Role Model and Iconoclastic Arrogance are a total lack of taking responsibility for anything, including everything which they are doing to destroy their own Spiritual Life and that of anyone who knows them.

Role Model Arrogance is one of the easiest of all ways to get out of fellowship and loose out in the Spiritual Life. Grace is the means provided by GOD, by which the believer can begin to use his volition and relate that volition to the Spiritual Life. Therefore, the believer must never use his volition to put any person on a pedestal above God or his Word, since this will inevitably cause a [Reaction and Distraction](#) in his Spiritual Life plunging him head first into the stages of Reversionism. Everyone likes to be loved but no one wants to be manufactured into

an Icon since, and having any level of common sense, he should know he will assuredly disappoint someone at some time.

Return to the [Table of Contents](#)

### **Gate #72 – The Arrogance Involving Christian Service**

Christian Service performed within the Cosmic Dynasphere as Human Good is motivated by and the production from Evil and glorifies only self. It is considered spiritually useless wood, hay and stubble to be burned at time of the resurrection of believers in each dispensation, prior to the believer entering eternity. For the Church Age believer this occurs at the Judgment Seat of Jesus Christ, where each believer is evaluated as to what he has done with his time provided by God in this life. Christian Service is NOT the means of fulfilling the Plan of God but it is the result of fulfilling the Plan of God by consistent residence and function in the [Divine Dynasphere](#). The Arrogance involved in Christian Service occurs when there is a LOSS of momentum in the Spiritual Life from lack of consistent Perception, Cognition, Incultation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine and a focus on doing things for God or for pseudo spirituality. Even legitimate Christian Service can be a distraction to momentum in the Spiritual Life. When this occurs the service being performed will CAUSE further loss of momentum and destroy the Spiritual Life and the quality of the production as well. In fact, Christian Service is often erroneously substituted for momentum in the Spiritual Life. However, Christian Service MUST ALWAYS be the RESULT of momentum in the Spiritual Life and its efficacy requires first passing [Momentum Testing](#). Christian Service must NEVER BE perceived as spirituality, a means of spiritual momentum or the means of advancement in the Spiritual Life.

Inside the Divine Dynasphere the [Power System of God](#), there can be NO [Human Good Production](#) or “Works” and ALL PRODUCTION in the Divine Dynasphere is the RESULT of momentum in the Power System of God from maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Right Lobe and the Filling of God the Holy Spirit AND not the cause of momentum or spiritual growth. The Power System of God and the Protocol Plan of God cannot allow any Human Good production to infiltrate it BECAUSE all human good is the production of the individual when residing and functioning under the Plan of Satan in the Cosmic Dynaspheres. Therefore, the Power System of God pushes out any Human Good production or “works” so that the Christian Way of Life is NOT PRODUCTION of any kind. The Christian Way of Life has PRODUCTION which is only the RESULT of momentum in and advancement by means of consistent residence in the Divine Dynasphere. The real point is that there can be NO LEGITIMATE OR ILLEGITIMATE CHRISTIAN PRODUCTION AS A MEANS TO ANYTHING in the Protocol Plan of God. The Protocol Plan of God does not say “DO IT” but it does say “LEARN IT”. The Plan of God, the Power System of God does say IF one advances in the system from consistent Post Salvation Epistemological Rehabilitation by Perception, Cognition, Incultation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine then the production he engages in will count for some level of blessing for Eternity, ([1Cor 3:12-15](#)), Gold Silver, Precious Stones.

Christian Service Production within the Plan of God has a proper place but it requires momentum from Metabolized Bible Doctrine and power from the Filling of God the Holy Spirit which results in advancement in the Plan of God prior to engaging in ANY production. Therefore, there is NO SUCH THING as Salvation or Spiritual Advancement because of Human Good Deed Efforts, Works or Production. Those who work for salvation or relative advancement in spirituality cannot ever answer a single simple question which is “HOW MUCH OR HOW GOOD MUST YOU BE TO BE GOOD ENOUGH”? In Christian Service arrogance when the believer engages in Human Good Production being out of the Protocol Plan of God this cannot be part of the Plan of God simply because this production is part of the Good from Evil of the Plan of Satan and is motivated by the principles and policies of EVIL. This does not imply that ALL Human Good Production is of no value but on the contrary Establishment Human Good efforts are essential for the preservation of mankind but still of no value in the Plan of God. However, ALL production which occurs while in residence in and functioning under the Plan of God is Divine Good which is based on consistent Post Salvation Epistemological Rehabilitation and the Filling of God the Holy Spirit. When the believer tries to DO something to maintain his status in the Plan of God and to receive enhanced blessing from God he is WRONG. For the believer, ALL spiritually beneficial service, works, production, morality, dynamics of personality, etc., are results of living and advancement under momentum in the system of God, the Divine Dynasphere. Therefore, life for the believer outside the Power System of God then becomes a hopeless mess and when people start working to gain approbation from God they ARE totally OUTSIDE his system.

### Christian Service Arrogance & Cosmic Dynasphere I

The total preoccupation with self which occurs with involvement in Cosmic Dynasphere I the Interlocking System of Arrogance inevitably interlocks some believers into the Power System of Satan through Christian Service Arrogance. This generally results from an interlocking with Self Righteous Arrogance motivated by Evil thus has an involvement with the Motivational Arrogance of Mental Attitude Arrogance such that working for God is considered the Christian Way of Life. The level of arrogance a person must have to consider that he can DO anything to gain entrance into or add to the Plan of God or to gain approval from God and thus EARN his way into heaven is beyond imagination. These people, including many believers, do not comprehend the idea of SPIRITUAL DEATH and being totally unable to do anything, to have any association with or relationship with God. The believer at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God is GIVEN spiritual life in order to have relationship with God but NOTHING he can ever DO can advance that relationship. In Christian Service Arrogance, the Human Good Production involves learning how to be NICE to people and find new areas where one's efforts can be considered good deeds to assuage one's guilt ridden conscience. Therefore, preoccupation with Christian Service and Christian Fellowship IS Arrogance and results in a LIFE entangled in the Interlocking System of Arrogance. This results in a total LOSS of any momentum in the Spiritual Life, assuming some existed at some point, and because of preoccupation with self these believers reject Bible Doctrine. This especially occurs when Bible Doctrine contradicts their focus on the necessity for and validity of Human Good efforts to maintain spirituality and advance in the Spiritual Life.



These people have rejected The Lord Jesus the Christ or neglect Bible Doctrine as believers but are not all out raising hell and partying but many are out working for God and doing what they consider great things for God. Since they do not have time for Bible Doctrine their neglect is Negative Volition Arrogance and entrance into the 8 Stages of Reversionism. In the Spiritual Life, it is not what one DOES but what he thinks which motivates, inspires and results in momentum in the Spiritual Life. This is the reason that the development of Humility under the Authority Orientation is so very essential in the Plan of God. Authority Orientation makes it possible for the believer to be teachable and understand that GOD is perfect, his plan is perfect and God is not depending on ANYONE to engage in puny Human Good efforts to make his plan work. Once the believer loses momentum from neglect or rejection of Bible Doctrine he will inevitably develop a GUILT complex as a reaction to his terrible lifestyle and all his failures. Then a Cosmic Dynasphere Evangelist will come along, some friend usually, and explain to him that his problem was spending all his time listening to Bible Doctrine and no time DOING THINGS for GOD. This is Christian Service Arrogance. (However, understand that there is Human Good Production which involves legitimate necessary functions in life but it is production OUTSIDE of the Protocol Plan of God for the believer. It occurs when any believer or any unbeliever functions in life based on adherence to the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions and which production is always rewarded by God but ONLY IN TIME.)

### Full Time Christian Service

EVERY believer in The Lord Jesus, The Christ is in full time Christian Service, from the point of his making Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God to his death, by virtue of simply his being a Believer. There is no such thing as dedication to full time Christians service and this is an emotional suckers stunt designed to focus the believer's attention on some type of work or effort needed around the Local Church. Dedication to full time Christian Service does not and cannot make one any closer to God nor does it put one in full time service because he is already there. Being part of the Royal Family of God in this Church Age, means full time service for all, but it requires Post Salvation Epistemological Rehabilitation to enable the use of one's Production Skills effectively in this service. Before a believers can function in any Christian Service capacity he must learn how to properly and effectively SERVE. Putting the service before the accumulation of Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Right Lobe of the Soul will result in a HUGE bonfire at the Judgment Seat of Jesus Christ where all that effort and work will be deemed Human Good and burned. There are 5 categories of Christian Service and all are related to a maximum accumulation of Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.

### Spiritual Gift Related

Every believer is provided with one or more different spiritual gifts by God the Holy Spirit at the point of Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God and some spiritual gifts require extensive preparation to begin to function properly like:

- ✧ Evangelism – which functions OUTSIDE the Local Church for the presentation of the Gospel of Christ to GROUPS of unbelievers.
- ✧ Pastor Teacher – which functions inside the Local Church for the presentation of all aspects of Bible Doctrine to the congregation of believers.

As the believer grows in the Spiritual Life and accumulates a maximum level of Metabolized Bible Doctrine in his Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul he becomes aware of what his spiritual gift is and it becomes more and more functional.

#### Local Church Related

- ✧ Administration in the Local Church
- ✧ Service in the Local Church
- ✧ Prepschool Bible teachers for Children in the Local Church
- ✧ Deacons as Policy Enforcers in the Local Church.
- ✧ Christian Organization functions.
- ✧ Helps as assistance for the sick, handicapped, afflicted, poor.
- ✧ Mercy for the persecuted, neurotic and psychotic
- ✧ Giving Sacrificially for support of the Local Church.

#### Royal Priesthood Related

- ✧ Prayer
- ✧ Normal Spiritual Giving
- ✧ Representing Self before God.
- ✧ Execution of the Protocol Plan of God and becoming an invisible hero.

#### Royal Ambassadorship Related

- ✧ Every aspect of one's life while he is representing The Lord Jesus, The Christ to mankind.
- ✧ Personal Witnessing

#### Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institution Related

- ✧ Military service
- ✧ Law Enforcement Service
- ✧ Government Service

All aspects of legitimate Christian Service must be performed while the believer is residing within the Divine Dynasphere and under the Filling of God the Holy Spirit and then is rewardable at the Judgment Seat of Jesus Christ. All service of any kind when performed within the Cosmic Dynaspheres is classified as Human Good and will be destroyed “as if by fire” at the time of the resurrection of the believer, for the Church Age believer at the Judgment Seat of Jesus Christ. (1Cor 3:11-16) Consider and clearly understand that the Cosmic Dynaspheres are the mechanics of rulership devised and used by Satan to control mankind in this world and part of this is the production needed to counterfeit the millennium before the 2<sup>nd</sup> advent of The Lord Jesus, The Christ. This production from the source of Evil is Human Good and obviously then CANNOT be part of the Grace Plan of God in any way. All legitimate Christian Service is most effective when the believer has spiritual momentum and has moved through the Sophisticated Spiritual Life and the stages of Spiritual Adulthood of:

- ✧ Spiritual Self Esteem
- ✧ Spiritual Autonomy

## ✧ Spiritual Maturity

It is upon reaching Spiritual Maturity where the spiritual gifts of believers become truly functional and effective in the Protocol Plan of God. However, believers must understand clearly that their Service is no substitute for MOMENTUM in the Spiritual Life which ONLY comes from the consistent [Filling of God the Holy Spirit](#) and Perception, Cognition, Incultation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine. The believer MUST understand that his Christian Service DOES NOT FULFILL the Protocol Plan of God and hustling and doing good things in a Local Church or Christian organization DOES NOT MEAN he is engaged in spiritual advance. Spiritual Momentum and Advancement in the Christian Way of Life only comes from the accumulation of a maximum level of Metabolized Bible Doctrine into one's own Stream of Consciousness of the Soul. Service efforts are NOT spirituality and they are all too often executed when out from under the Filling of God the Holy Spirit causing them to be only Human Good productions most often from the influence of Evil. The Arrogance of Christian Service results from involvement in the Cosmic Dynaspheres and functioning in the various stages of [Reversionism](#). However, even legitimate Christian Service, mandated by the word of God, very often becomes a distraction to the execution of the Protocol Plan of God through the Arrogance of the believer substituting that service for Perception, Cognition, Incultation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine. The fact is that the average Christian involved in the Cosmic Dynasphere is a doer without Metabolized Bible Doctrine in his soul and his works are thus DEAD WORKS production resulting from Evil influence as part of the Cosmic Dynaspheres function. ([Heb 9:14](#)) Since the "dead works" are Human Good production under the Plan of Satan, Evil, the believer obviously cannot serve God with dead works. ([Heb 6:1](#)) Therefore, all Christian Service without momentum in the Protocol Plan of God is Human Good production from Evil and DEAD Works. It is, therefore, the quintessence of human arrogance to assume that Christian Service, apart from Metabolized Bible Doctrine and the Filling of God the Holy Spirit, is pleasing to God. It is involvement in the Interlocking System of Arrogance which substitutes service for the legitimate execution of the Protocol Plan of God and thus produces Human Good dead works emphasizing service to the exclusion of Perception, Cognition, Incultation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine. By this means Arrogance destroys the true priorities of the Protocol Plan of God and substitutes Human Good which is never the means of execution of the Protocol Plan of God. Therefore, there are 3 categories of Production, Works or Service executed by the believer in the Church Age:

- ✧ Service as a MEANS, being Human Good Works under motivation from Evil as the Arrogance of Christian Service as illegitimate *spiritual* service not rewardable and the issue in the Indictment of the Unbeliever at the Great White Throne Judgment.
- ✧ Service as a Result, being Human Good Works based on motivation from and adherence to the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institution principles as legitimate *temporal* service rewardable in one's lifetime.
- ✧ Service as a RESULT, because of [Progression in the Spiritual Life](#) from accumulation of Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul as Divine Good Works and legitimate *spiritual* service rewardable in both time and eternity.

There is nothing wrong with working or production as Christian Service. However, God does not evaluate the production based on its RESULTS but based on its SOURCE. God considers whether production by the believer is the RESULT of functioning within the Divine Dynasphere or the result of functioning outside of the Divine Dynasphere and in the Cosmic Dynaspheres. God looks at whether the production is the result of the believer operating under the Plan of GRACE or the Plan of EVIL. Christian Service when it is Divine Good is legitimate and rewardable in the Spiritual Life and there are mandates regarding it but the principle is that the END result does not justify the Means, the result of production does not justify the source of that production. If the Means of Production by the believer results from the plan and policy of Evil under the Cosmic Dynaspheres the production is spiritually useless though it may be temporally beneficial, but it will ultimately be destroyed for the Church Age believer at the Judgment Seat of Jesus Christ. If the Means of production results from the Plan and Policy of God, GRACE, under the Divine Dynasphere then the production is valuable for the believer for both temporal and eternal blessings. The Divine Good Christian Service production which results from advancement in the Spiritual Life DOES NOT destroy momentum in the Spiritual Life. Therefore, it is the consistent daily Perception, Cognition, Incultation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine which guarantees:

- The Purity of motivation and service.
- The Quality of production in that service.
- The Humility of function in that service.

Christian Service outside the Plan of Satan, Evil, Cosmic Dynasphere I, is legitimate production with glorifies God because God can only be glorified by the believer's function within the Divine Dynasphere. Christian Service within the Plan of Satan, Evil, the Cosmic Dynaspheres is illegitimate production with only glorifies SELF thought it may very well be temporally beneficial and rewardable in time.

Momentum in the Christian Way of Life is dependent on consistent function within the Power System of God the Divine Dynasphere not getting out and DOING THINGS USING ONE'S OWN EFFORTS. Christian Service is a legitimate function but is and must be a RESULT of spiritual growth and advance in the Protocol Plan of God. Living and functioning in the Divine Dynasphere will provide the motivation, energy, function and ability to fulfill the mandates regarding production in the Spiritual Life. God may provide the believer with a wonderful ministry in one of the Christian organizations or in a Local Church and it very well may be one which is not public in any way but is based on proper motivation so that he will reach a higher capacity for Christian Service. Whatever service is rendered as a Christian it is to be as unto the Lord and not for praise, recognition, self glorification and it must be the INEVITABLE result of consistent Perception, Cognition, Incultation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine which is the motivation from the Word of God. However, if and when the believer does receive recognition for his efforts and Divine Good production he must be very careful not to destroy the fine balance between residing and functioning in the Power System of God and his production being the result of this residence and succumbing to Arrogance.

### **Succumbing to Christian Service Arrogance**

Many succumb to Christian Service Arrogance by focusing on witnessing or serving a church or

missionary functions in some way and neglect Bible Doctrine and Spiritual Growth. This is putting the Cart before the Horse. Many service organizations are legitimate but are often staffed by loser believers who function in the Cosmic Dynaspheres leading others into spiritual decline. In contrast to the arrogance of service and as a result of [Perception, Cognition, Inculcation, Metabolization and Application of Bible Doctrine](#), Gate #5 of the Divine Dynasphere, many wonderful Christian works can occur. All Christian Service to be meaningful MUST come from the believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God where the Royal Ambassadorship has the power from Spiritual Maturity to function properly in service when placed in its proper priority. Perpetuation of Christian Service in or outside the Local Church when not accompanied by maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine will result in the Arrogance of Christian Service. Many outside organizations make the huge mistake of discouraging Believers from learning Bible Doctrine under their Right Pastor Teacher. This results in an emphasis on production and service to the exclusion of spiritual advance from consistent Perception, Cognition, Inculcation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine which thereby prevents proper Application of that doctrine to production and service. Service without Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God is the disaster of Christian Service Arrogance.

Christian Service Arrogance is one of the worst and the most subtle distractors to fulfilling the Plan of God and glorification of The Lord Jesus, The Christ. It is an arrogance and ignorance of doctrine which assumes that man's actions can please God and therefore bring divine blessing. Arrogance substitutes human ability for divine blessing from the Integrity of God. In the process Grace is obscured. Christian Service is NOT momentum for advance in the Spiritual Life, nor spirituality, nor glorifying to God, nor, in fact, of any value to the immature believer. Therefore, Legitimate Christian Service is ALWAYS the result of momentum and spiritual advance not the cause of it. Momentum in the Spiritual Life ONLY comes from Perception, Cognition, Inculcation, Metabolization, and Application of Bible Doctrine. The results of momentum include [Personal Love for God, Occupation with the Person of The Lord Jesus, The Christ](#), finding the Right Man or Right Woman, [Advanced Impersonal Love for Mankind](#), Personal Love for Friends AND Christian Service.

There is no spiritual merit in Christian Service when it is conducted under the umbrella of the Cosmic Dynaspheres. It is, in fact, highly combustible material for the Judgment Seat of Jesus Christ (I like to think of it as FUEL for the Lake of Fire which I am sure it is NOT!). If one is functioning in the Cosmic Dynaspheres when he tries to function in Christian Service it becomes completely meaningless. It can be a huge distraction when it is part of [Self Righteous Arrogance](#) and Preoccupation with self. It can occur in or out of the Local Church and even legitimate service, until the believer reaches Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace, is basically of no spiritual value. Arrogance will always emphasize SERVICE of many and various kinds to the exclusion of the incultation and application of Bible Doctrine to circumstances in life.

The believer who properly functions in ranks may be out of sight in the Christian community and may not have any worldly recognition but is never out of God's Sight. His production reflects the Metabolized Bible Doctrine in his Stream of Consciousness of the Soul. He is free



from arrogance and its counterparts and from the influence of Evil and Reversionism. He serves the Lord in his own quiet way without trying to brag or impress others about what he is doing. He is free from approbation and power lust and his head is never turned by complements. He is unknown to others but is well known by the opposition, Satan and the Fallen Angels or Demons. He carries his generation in history as a spiritual atlas and is a blessing to all those associated with him and enjoys perfect happiness and blessing in life. The believer in ranks has a true perspective regarding service as a believer. He knows that Christian Service is not what HE DOES FOR THE LORD but what the LORD'S Grace DOES FOR OTHERS THROUGH HIM. He sees Christian Service as a channel for an expression of Grace rather than the means of making points with the Lord. Therefore, Christian Service must reflect spiritual growth and progress in the Spiritual Life and this only occurs when there is maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in his Stream of Consciousness of the Soul. Maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul therefore exploits the balance of residence of the Filling of God the Holy Spirit and Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul. *Therefore, the Christian Way of Life is **NOT** activity nor productivity but is CONDUCTIVITY where believers are transmitters of the Grace of God not creators of production.*

### **Results of Christian Service Arrogance**

As a result of involvement in Christian Service Arrogance, Believers who are often involved in legitimate service functions in organization in and outside of the Local Church neglect or become inconsistent in the Perception, Cognition, Inculcation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine, being carried away with what they are doing as "SERVICE". This is often a result of being propagandized through flattery, being told how wonderful their service efforts are. If the believer puts their Christian Service before the Perception, Cognition, Inculcation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine they are living fragmented lives and ARE involved in Cosmic Dynasphere I, the Interlocking System of Arrogance. Apart from consistent Perception, Cognition, Inculcation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine there can not be execution of the Protocol Plan of God and therefore NO distribution of Escrow Blessings for time thus no Glorification of God no matter how many human good deeds or acts of service are performed. The Arrogance of Christian Service is the erroneous conclusion from the false doctrine that Human Good efforts and works helping mankind ARE the MEANS of fulfilling the Plan of God for one's life. When any service, legitimate or not, results in a loss of the daily Perception, Cognition, Inculcation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine, this believer, in arrogance, has substituted his own HUMAN GOOD EFFORTS for learning Bible Doctrine which means loss of correct priorities and thus failure to fulfill the Protocol Plan of God. Works and Production in the Spiritual Life MUST ALWAYS be the RESULT of spiritual growth and are NEVER the MEANS of it. [\(Luke 14:11\)](#) Involved in Christian Service Arrogance will be the loser believer, living a fragmented life under Divine Discipline, who is HUMBLLED by God. It is the believer who humbles himself who will be exalted because he is TEACHABLE and has inculcated a maximum amount of Bible Doctrine and will thus become an INVISIBLE Hero with both visible and invisible [Divine Good](#) production.

### **Gate #73 – The Arrogance of Disregarding One’s Limitations**

The fragmentation grenade of life is the Interlocking System of Arrogance, Cosmic Dynasphere I. Every believer is a walking grenade with the potential for a totally fragmented and destroyed life and any entrance into the Interlocking System of Arrogance, Cosmic Dynasphere I pulls the pin to begin the fragmenting of his life. One way to pull the pin on the grenade and fragment one’s life is to NOT KNOW ONE’S LIMITATIONS! Everyone has personal limitations to his physical and mental abilities and MUST recognize them. It is no disgrace to have limitations but it is the arrogant individual who does not know his limitations and who always crosses the boundary into areas he does not have capacity to handle as a result of influence from his Old Sin Nature’s LUSTS. If one does not know his own limitations he will sooner or later pull the pin of the Arrogance grenade and totally fragment his own life. Knowing your limitations transfers your dependency on self to dependence on the Grace of God. Not knowing your limitations leads to intensification of one’s involvement in any level of Arrogance especially [Inordinate Ambition](#) related to the “cosmos” the devil’s world and Inordinate Competition related to [Legalism](#) and self-absorption. Not knowing one’s limitations results in an emotional dependency and distraction from the protocol plan of God which becomes the tragic flaw of the adult believer. The adult believer is vulnerable to the most subtle yet powerful temptations to become distracted from God’s will, plan, and purpose for his life. The distraction failure of the adult believer becomes the rapid decline to the loser believer.

Arrogance, as a real or imagined sense of superiority, distorts life and the true [Perspective](#) of human frailty and it never recognizes its limitations. These are ones who have an IMAGINED sense of superiority and they are the ones who become [Psychotic](#) because they are intrinsically flawed. One day they profess love for another and the next they won’t even carry on conversations with those near them. From Arrogance comes presumption and from presumption comes [Self Righteousness](#) and a false sense of superiority and destiny. A False sense of destiny means the believer will never execute the plan or purpose of God for his life. This as part of [Mental Attitude Arrogance](#) is thus part of the MOST BASIC motivational sin of human life and the foundation for all the fragments in the life of the believer. This not knowing one’s own limitations also includes extending beyond the barrier of professionalism. This is subjective preoccupation with self, [Self Absorption](#) and therefore involvement in the [Arrogance Skills](#) which destroys capacity for [Happiness](#) and also frustrates the execution of the Protocol Plan of God for the Church Age.

### **Knowing Your Limitations**

There is a subtlety to the Arrogance seen in the person who feels threatened by someone else who in some way seems superior and as a result never knows his own limitations. The person who feels threatened by others will never know his limitations or understand his rapid decline from the adult to the loser believer. This is because the believer who feels threatened by people or circumstances lives in the status of the [Arrogance of Unhappiness](#) through perpetual carnality and never knows his own limitations. Therefore, he never relates his limitations to

problem solving devices. Not knowing one's limitations also interlocks with the Arrogance of Inordinate Ambition and Inordinate Competition, which means it is impossible to pass Providential Preventative Momentum Testing Suffering <sup>(5 Categories)</sup>. However, a person who knows his limitations will never feel threatened by others or circumstances and transfers the false dependence on self to dependence on God and Metabolized Bible Doctrine in his Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul. True [Humility](#) is knowing one's limitations and living with them in contentment. Contentment is part of [Problem Solving Device #9](#), Sharing the Happiness of God, and is deployed onto the [Forward Line of Troops](#) of the SOUL in the [Spiritual Autonomy](#) stage of the Sophisticated Spiritual Life. Sharing the Happiness of God belongs to all believers who fulfill Spiritual Adulthood and reach [Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God](#). The person who feels threatened by people or circumstances lives in the status of the [Arrogance of Unhappiness](#) through 2 factors:

- ✧ The status of Perpetual carnality related to the function under the [3 Arrogance Skills](#), the Interlocking System of Arrogance and the Interlocking System of Antagonistic Emotional Hatred minus any use of the [Rebound Procedure](#). ([1John 1:9](#))
- ✧ Not knowing his own limitations he never relates them to the function of the [Problem Solving Devices](#) and this leads to emotional dependence on others and developing and believing false doctrine.

Without the 10 Problem Solving Devices developed from Metabolized Bible Doctrine and deployed onto the Forward Line of Troops of the soul the believer goes NOWHERE in the Christian Way of Life and in fact loses his Spiritual Life [Reverting](#) back to a status identical to when he was an unbeliever. God's thoughts ([1Cor 2:16](#)) and ways are clearly delineated in Bible Doctrine and believers are not left in the dark about them. When the believer begins to think how great he, himself, is he begins to destroy his own Spiritual life by using the [3 Arrogance Skills](#) to think with. The great challenge to believers is to begin to think with Bible Doctrine and then to make their ways God's ways. The Arrogance skills and Arrogance and Emotional sins, mingled with unreality in life, destroy the things in life which make the individual important in life, the [Virtue](#) and Morality based on [Metabolized Bible Doctrine](#) in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul. Any time the believer inserts [Human Good](#) as Human Effort Works into the Divine Plan he will succumb to the Antagonism and Arrogance Complexes, their Sins and Skills.

### **Illustrations of Limitation Arrogance**

The Application of [Humility](#) in one's own life is to KNOW one's own limitations. This was Napoleon's Arrogance failure in invading Russia. Hitler was involved in a fragmented life totally in the Interlocking System of Arrogance and Interlocking System of Antagonistic Emotional Hatred along with being under demon possession and did not know his limitations and constantly interfered with a BRILLIANT German General Staff and was the direct cause of Germany Losing World War II in Europe. He was afraid, because German Armor was so very successful in the invasion of France when they moved so rapidly, that the allies had formed a TRAP for them as they moved forward and thus transferred his FEAR to his commanding officers and made them STOP. This was the ONLY reason Dunkirk was able to be evacuated and more than 250,000 men were saved. Hitler's invasion of Russia and his refusal to allow German retreat from Stalingrad was also part of his Limitation Arrogance interlocking with

## Transference Arrogance.

Moses was probably the greatest all around genius ever to have lived and one of the physically strongest men ever to live yet he entered into the Interlocking System of Arrogance when he attempted to Liberate the Jews the 1<sup>st</sup> time. He tried to eliminate them from slavery by turning to violence and force thus entering into the Interlocking System of Arrogance and becoming a fragmented person. It took God 40 years to put Moses back together so that GOD not Moses could liberate the Jews. He had to learn his own limitations and learn humility to become God's servant and then liberate the Jews.

Return to the [Table of Contents](#)

### Gate #74 – The Arrogance of Personal Achievement

In the Plan of God and System of God, Achievement belongs to God, [Happiness](#) belongs to the believer but this is only true for the believer functioning in the [Divine Dynasphere](#). Achievement belongs to GOD while contentious selfish ambition belongs to the individual residing and functioning in Satan's Cosmic Dynaspheres. The believer is not commanded to be an OBVIOUS achiever and inspire people to live in the Cosmic Dynaspheres, he is here to be an invisible achiever relaxed by promotion from God and wary of the Interlocking System of Arrogance. Instead of Occupation with the Person of The Lord Jesus, The Christ and living and advancing in the Divine Dynasphere this Cosmic, Obvious Achiever is more concerned with the OPINIONS of his contemporaries and is susceptible to flattery from others and Arrogance becomes his Motivation from Evil. Arrogance motivates him to strive to get ahead beyond his friends and to compete with them striving to surpass them. For this reason, all his decisions made are from a position of Weakness in Achievement Arrogance. ([James 3:15-16](#)) Living in the Cosmic Dynaspheres under Demon and Evil influence causes the believer to be focused on his own success and trying to keep up with others in Achievement Arrogance. This is the blaspheme of taking achievement and promotion away from God and putting it into one's own hands. Achievement Arrogance destroys human happiness and replaces it with ambition and contentious selfishness. Arrogance motivates the individual to strive for success and to "Play the Game" to get ahead in life. In the process of playing the Success game and the believer trying to move up in that system, Bible Doctrine is neglected. His Royal Priesthood is neglected as is representing himself before God, and VIRTUE development is ignored. Happiness is distorted and this believer may come to Pseudo Self Esteem because of his success but it is an EMPTY Self Esteem because the soul is empty of the TRUTH of Bible Doctrine. This is not the concept of Working Hard to get ahead in life which is the reality of doing your job as unto the Lord. This is the Arrogance of competing in every aspect of life from [Inordinate Ambition and Competition](#) with the anything goes attitude, so that success and achievement are false and characterized by great personal unhappiness which extends to others in one's periphery. When achievement comes from God He provides happiness with it and ONLY God can provide these together in his power system of the Divine Dynasphere.

The believer's only real Achievement must and always will be measured in terms of his execution of the Protocol Plan of God, OR NOT. Achievement belongs to God and if God does not promote the believer he is not promoted. ([James 4:8-10](#)) Achievement Arrogance pulls the pin in the Arrogance Grenade in the believer's life and inevitably fragments his life as a result of his having invariably become interlocked with Inordinate Ambition Arrogance and Inordinate Competition Arrogance. Achievement Arrogance, as all Arrogance does, destroys capacity for life, happiness, contentment and mental stability and replaces it with the fragments of Arrogance as a result of the Old Sin Nature controlling the soul. The Old Sin Nature lust patterns stimulate the Trends of the Old Sin Nature to motivate for the production of Sin or [Human Good](#) from the Area of Weakness or Area of Strength respectively. Every believer has the potential to be a walking Arrogance grenade ready to explode into a myriad of categories of Sin or Human Good and when he CHOOSES to pull the pin and enter into Arrogance, he does explode and fragments his entire life. Involvement in the Interlocking System of Arrogance at any level is pulling that pin which allows the Old Sin Nature to freely tempt to produce Sin or Human Good related to the lust patterns and trends therein. When Arrogance entanglement begins and the life becomes fragmented then all Legitimate Christian Service is destroyed and any production which the believer engages in is then converted into the Human Good of "Wood, Hay and Stubble" to be destroyed at the Judgment Seat of Jesus Christ. Fragmentation of the Christian Way of Life must be avoided and the believer must recognize that the entire Interlocking System of Arrogance has the potential to activate the process of fragmentation of one's life just like pulling the pin of a fragmentation grenade.

Failure in developing [Motivational Virtue](#) in the Divine Dynasphere results in [Motivational Arrogance](#) from [Mental Attitude Arrogance](#). ([James 4:6](#), [1Pet 5:5-6](#)) This results in involvement in Achievement Arrogance and [Inordinate Ambition and Competition](#). Therefore, all the decisions which he makes are from a position of weakness in Achievement Arrogance and any happiness derived from his residence and function within the Divine Dynasphere is set aside. Then obviously there is a huge difference between the relaxed personality which comes from living in the Divine Dynasphere and the Brittle personality which is the result of living within the Cosmic Dynaspheres. Although these differences may not always be obvious to others, they become clearly apparent when the Arrogance Grenade fragments one's life. Inevitably, once the believer starts thinking in terms of Arrogance under Mental Attitude Arrogance, his life will fragment along the lines of his predilection for subjective or objective manifestations of Arrogance. It is by this means that the believer may become a [Fanatic](#) or a fool or maybe even both. The believers lust for ascendancy and success destroys his true Scale of Values related to Bible Doctrine and is the direct result of his desire to outdo his contemporaries or to compensate for his real or imagined inferiority. Many people in society have deep seated inferiority complexes and this cannot occur without them being Arrogant and involved in some area of Inordinate Competition. This period of the Church Age is one of the most exciting times to live in Human History and many individuals waste their time with envy of anyone doing better in any area of life than they. It is acceptable to compete in any field but NOT from the basis of involvement in Arrogance because this always distorts and destroys the achievement. Competing objectively with hard work and persistent self discipline is an effective means of achieving success in any field. However, there is no permanence to any success or



achievement, even in personal relationships, when there is involvement in any level of Arrogance because there is a LACK of Capacity for the success based on Truth.

Flattery exists as a LIE from Evil or part of a LIE and once one believes any LIE they enter into the Interlocking System of Arrogance and as a result they are then vulnerable to being controlled by anyone who flatters them. In avoidance of involvement in the Interlocking System of Arrogance care must be taken to ensure not going overboard and thereby failing to complement the great successes of those who have excelled in achieving in life. Complementing people who do things which are great is something which all believers should do in recognizing those who have great achievement. However, the believer who achieves great things in life must recognize 2 principles:

- Whatever was accomplished, was accomplished because of the involvement with and support from the Lord.
- Without the Lord there is no achievement whatsoever for believers.

Achievement must never be a source of Arrogance because the believer is only able to achieve because of his application of the Metabolized Bible Doctrine and its principles stored in his own Stream of Consciousness of the Soul and as a result must not be susceptible to spiritual failure because of his achievement. Remember, Moses, David, Paul and Elijah all failed after great achievements because they walked through an entry gate into the Interlocking System of Arrogance.

The believer must accumulate his own Metabolized Bible Doctrine into his own soul and when he makes bad decisions to reside in the Cosmic Dynaspheres he begins with involvement first with Motivational Arrogance. This most often begins with some aspect of Mental Attitude Arrogance but inevitably moves into the [Functional Arrogance](#) of Inordinate Ambition and Competition Arrogance. This believer feels threatened by all sorts of people for all sorts of reasons in all sorts of circumstances. He tries to find security in success and achievement and it is false because he lacks the ability to conceptualize principles to support him, which only comes from maximum Bible Doctrine in the Right Lobe of the soul. The believer must come to realize that his only security is the Lord. Involvement in Mental Attitude Arrogance is Motivational Arrogance and this motivates him to strive for success and compete with his friends. Motivational Arrogance causes him to use people to excel and surpass his contemporaries and he believes he will never be happy until he does and he assumes his only happiness comes from accomplishing this. He wants to wield power and control people and accept admiration and approbation from them. The believer who fails to accumulate Metabolized Bible Doctrine into the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of his Soul rejects Logistical Grace and exchanges Spiritual Self Esteem for Cosmic Dynasphere functions. He tries to transcend, surpass, out do, achieve and attain ascendancy by living in the Cosmic Dynaspheres. This Arrogant lust for success destroys his true Scale of Values derived from Metabolized Bible Doctrine and blasphemes the very priesthood which has been given to him by God. He cannot function as a royal ambassador representing The Lord Jesus the Christ to mankind because he has no Spiritual Self Esteem nor [Functional Virtue](#) in any category thus he is a LOSER. In his desire to out strip his contemporaries he destroys his [Personal Sense of Destiny](#) which helps develop his Spiritual Self Esteem. Therefore, entanglement in Inordinate

Ambition Arrogance thus becomes a disaster for him. There is nothing wrong with wanting to succeed and this is normal but when linked with the Interlocking System of Arrogance then the whole system of Christian epistemology and conceptualism is lost.

Of course people do things on their own and get promoted and become prosperous but this is most often NOT God promoting them because God only promotes to the level of one's capacity and capacity can only increase as a result of consistent Post Salvation Epistemological Rehabilitation from Perception, Cognition, Incultation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine. Therefore, Capacity and Happiness belong to the believer who reaches or exceeds Spiritual Self Esteem. Spiritual Self Esteem, Spiritual Autonomy, Spiritual Maturity are possible only for the Believer WHEN he is operating in the Divine Dynasphere and has reached the Integrity Envelope of the Divine Dynasphere. Living under the Interlocking System of Arrogance and the influence of EVIL the believer can be exceptionally and unusually prosperous and can succeed but he has no capacity for this and it only produces maximum Self Induced Misery. When a believer leans on any other individual or some form of success, prosperity or achievement for happiness it will always elude him. He may acquire these things in his life but will never have happiness because his soul is BLANK lacking Metabolized Bible Doctrine and, in fact, acquiring these things with a blank soul subverts ever getting into Spiritual Self Esteem, Spiritual Autonomy or Spiritual Maturity. When one achieves without Spiritual Self Esteem, Spiritual Autonomy or Spiritual Maturity his achievement is invariably empty and by this means Achievement Arrogance destroys human happiness and replaces it with goading ambition. The major thrust of the Christian Way of Life under the royal priesthood is for the soul of the believer to be saturated with Metabolized Bible Doctrine. Since Achievement belongs to God only GOD can provide Achievement with Happiness but this can only occur with consistent residence inside the Divine Dynasphere, the Protocol Plan of God, and maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.

Return to the [Table of Contents](#)

### **Gate #75 – The Arrogance of Pseudo Generosity**

The arrogance of pseudo generosity finds a person giving or being generous because of his preoccupation with himself, his desire for attention, his desire for approbation, his desire to ingratiate himself with others, or his attempt to buy happiness or friendship. This also occurs very often to ingratiate himself to others, in order to “buy” friendship and happiness. This bribing for friendship is engaged in for the ultimate of self promotion in life. Pseudo Generosity Arrogance is trying to buy friends by giving them something. The Motivation for giving anything to anyone must always be Virtue dependent. The principle of genuine generosity and the function of genuine generosity are found in 2Cor 9:7+11 which says you will be enriched in all things because of your generosity of mind. Generosity is a mental attitude rather than a function in giving. Generosity, therefore, is in the soul, not in the overt function. But arrogance ignores the soul and distorts generosity into a system which satisfies preoccupation with self. The courtesy and generosity of a truly noble individual may render

him vulnerable to unscrupulous manipulation by those he is generous toward. The arrogance of pseudo generosity, is in effect, where people try to buy their friends. When one is buying friends he is obviously living in a world of arrogance rather than in the divine Dynasphere. Outside the divine hydrosphere the believer resides in the Cosmic Dynaspheres where he is hypocritical and double dealing, and cannot practice the virtues of life such as love and generosity. Legalistic believers often give under human good functions, then turn on the recipient of their generosity and throw it up to him saying, “after all I’ve done for you!”. Therefore, Arrogance destroys capacity for life, for love, for happiness, for blessing, for generosity, and for development of any virtue.

True Generosity is from the Soul or Mind and therefore is something inside coming out to those in one’s periphery. Appreciation of generosity always results in believer recipients giving thanks to God for those who have been generous toward them. Generosity is a part of the design, the plan and the purpose of God and is a commemoration of Grace. Christ generously gave Himself on the Cross to provide the potential for the salvation of mankind and both His Divine and Human character were involved. God gives in Grace because of His character because of who and what He is. Therefore, to avoid the Arrogance of Generosity the believer must also give on the basis of his own character which must be based in Metabolized Bible Doctrine accumulated into his Right Lobe of the Soul. Consequently generosity is both an extension and a manifestation of what is in one’s soul. Giving thus reflects Grace does not make an issue of the gift nor of SELF. Generosity derived from Arrogance or Emotional Revolt of the Soul reduces the generous act to a bribe for love, advancement, approbation, good behavior, etc., and results in giving with strings. Therefore, true generosity expressed Impersonal, Unconditional Love which emphasizes the character of the giver, not that of the recipient.

“Generosity of mind” then results in an overt manifestation of giving which is a mental attitude inside one’s soul. Consequently, because of one’s generosity of soul, there is the act of thanksgiving to God from those who benefit from it. Giving is often a test when one gives to something he instinctively does not like. Generosity can include giving of money, love, manners, thoughtfulness, etc. Therefore, the whole concept of capacity for life in the mature believer is generosity. The generosity of the believer who has reached Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God is like him banking treasure an honorable foundation for his future in Phase III of the Plan of God, Eternity.

Therefore, generosity, giving expresses the principle of grace which depends on the character of the giver not the recipient. Therefore Generosity is extended because of who and what one is, not because the needy deserve it. The primary issue in true generosity is one’s stability of character under operation Grace. Therefore the more generous a person is the more often he is reminded of GRACE and a generous person gives without strings or hope of gain. For the believer to produce divine good requires maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul and the Filling of God the Holy Spirit therefore Grace Generosity construction of the Edification Complex of the Soul as a result of consistent function under the Grace Apparatus for Perception. Generosity is a system of thinking, from which one makes decisions based on the proper attitude of Grace Orientation.

Generous people habitually give because they already have a generous mental attitude and for them it is simply a matter of deciding where to give and when. People without this generous mental attitude are calculated or stingy in their giving, expecting something in return for their generosity. ([Prov 11:24-25](#))

Return to the [Table of Contents](#)

### **Gate #76 – The Arrogance of Martyrdom**

There is always one ARROGANT system open to every believer and it is found in Martyrdom Arrogance. Under Martyrdom Arrogance the nice thing is that one does not have to be killed for it but, in fact, he makes everyone around him wish they were dead. Martyrdom Arrogance interlocks readily with the [Arrogance of Unhappiness](#), [Self Righteous Arrogance](#), [Self Pity Arrogance](#) and many other areas. This unhappy person is the martyr and he knows that no one loves him, cares for him, is ever even a little bit nice to him or pays any attention to him. He develops a [fanatically](#) subjective introversion and the only possible way for him to receive any attention is to develop this martyr attitude where he seeks to control his environment by making everyone else miserable unless they comply with and are answerable to him, the martyr. He tries to make everyone miserable by developing [GUILT](#) in them because they neglect him or pity him. Every organization of any kind has someone involved in Martyrdom Arrogance and they are the ones who vacillate between Self Righteous Arrogance and Arrogance of Unhappiness.

The Martyrdom Complex always is found accompanying the Arrogance of Self Righteousness. Martyrdom lives under the illusion of ongoing personal unjust treatment. These believers feel sorry for themselves and seek sympathy from anyone and everyone. They believe that they are never treated fairly but they are extremely critical and judgmental of others who *obviously* didn't know how badly these believers are abused. They suffer from [Jealousy](#), possessiveness, moodiness, Self Pity, and many of the other aspects of Arrogance. Martyrdom Arrogance must have a HERO who can do no wrong to match the view of themselves.

Rarely does martyrdom accomplish anything for anyone or any system. The consistent use of the [Rebound Procedure](#) to keep moving in the Spiritual Life with Perception, Cognition, Inculcation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine is the Key Solution to the Martyrdom complex ([1John 1:9](#), [1Cor 11:28-31](#)). The Martyrdom Complex is constantly redefining human relationships and misinterpreting fellowship with GOD in terms of always being right and everyone else being wrong. These believers are never more frustrated than when someone is convinced that they are wrong about something. Involvement with Christian Activism, Civil Disobedience, Social Engineering, and therefore Attacking the State or Government interlocks these believers with [Crusader Arrogance](#). [Rom 13:1-11](#) tells us that God has ordained Government for a purpose and it may fail but the believer is not ever to even try to superimpose Christianity over Government because presenting and teaching the Gospel and Bible Doctrine must occur without coercion toward the hearers so as NOT to destroy freedom, which

is a KEY issue in the Angelic Conflict Appeal Trial. Freedom is under attack when Christians try to Christianize government. No government can be half slave and half free and maintain freedom and this has destroyed France, Spain, and is currently destroying the United States of America.

Christian Objectives are to Grow in grace, to witness for The Lord Jesus, The Christ and to execute the unique Spiritual Life of the Church Age INDIVIDUALLY. As long as there is separation of Church and State freedom for witnessing and spiritual growth is in place. England is no longer a client nation to God because there is NO LONGER SEPARATION OF CHURCH AND STATE AND THE CHURCH IS SUPPORTED BY THE GOVERNMENT. France, Italy, Spain, and other nations have had the government supporting the Church which is a total compromise to FREEDOM. In the United States of America there has been a push by Believers under the “Moral Majority Movement” trying to destroy separation of Church and State which will totally destroy freedom in the same manner as slavery would. Witnessing for The Lord Jesus, The Christ, which is the responsibility of all believers, can never involve coercion, badgering or trying to force others to believe. All responsibility to the unbeliever stops after the issue of the gospel is made clear to them and then it becomes a private matter between the unbeliever and GOD and every person must make their own individual decision. Martyrdom often comes from trying to Christianize the state instead of witnessing for Christ. Blessing for the believer and the State comes from Believers who EXECUTE the Spiritual Life under the [Filling of God the Holy Spirit](#) and from function under the [Grace Apparatus for Perception](#), in consistent Perception, Cognition, Inculcation, Metabolization and Application of Bible Doctrine.

The self humiliation of believers trying to please God is ridiculous and blasphemous. Self immolation by burning as martyrdom is a destruction of the physical and Spiritual Life but boasting about the proposed martyrdom is yet a stronger destruction. Neither of these is any way to glorify God and both are systems of Arrogance. There are the 3 [Arrogance Skills](#) and sins of the Interlocking System of Arrogance which are all involved in Self Immolation as pseudo martyrdom and self glorification. Martyrdom becomes a system of Arrogance when the believer performs, attempts or boasts about it while in carnality in an attempt to glorify self. Martyrdom was popular in the early church where believers who wanted to be forgiven sins or to advance in stature in the Church would give themselves up to martyrdom for self glorification. When the Supreme Sacrifice of Martyrdom is suffered by any believer without his function under [Virtue Love](#) and the Filling of God the Holy Spirit it is NOTHING, gains nothing, or is even worse than nothing being blasphemous.

No ONE has freedom without the Privacy and right to make his own personal decisions without being scrutinized by the State. Believers who keep trying to Christianize the state are in fact destroying human freedom rather than witnessing for Christ and allowing God the Holy Spirit to do his work. True Martyrdom Principles are key to understanding martyrdom:

- ✧ Self imposed martyrdom is NOT martyrdom.
- ✧ True Christian Martyrdom involves and depends on the antagonism of those who are against Christianity and therefore involves the volition of Others.
- ✧ Carnality includes Arrogance in the functions of Activism and by this develops the wrong



reasons for antagonism.

- The American Government today is NOT overtly antagonistic to Christianity YET. (It was beginning to be so under Obama).

What is often claimed as martyrdom is NOT martyrdom but only the misunderstanding of the disoriented believer. The believer is not here to Christianize the government which would then be a system of destruction of human freedom which would result in crusader violence in the name of Christianity. He is not here to enter into social activities which would persecute others for not believing in The Lord Jesus, The Christ. As a believer in the Royal Family of God in the Church Age he is here to make the Gospel of Christ clear to all unbelievers who express an interest, by word or action. The Motivation of the Spiritual Life should be all aspects of [Motivational Virtue](#) directed toward God to develop and operate under [Functional Virtue](#) directed toward man. 2 Key aspects of this system include [Personal Love for God](#) and [Impersonal Unconditional Love for Mankind](#). When the Supreme sacrifice of the DEATH of the Human Body glorifies God it is ONLY by the believer under the Filling of God the Holy Spirit and as a result of maximum persecution by others.

Return to the [Table of Contents](#)

### [Gate #77 – The Arrogance Regarding Personal Opinion](#)

Privacy as a principle demands freedom of thought and the preservation of the right to one's own opinions about anything and everything. Just as one can possess money and other tangible personal property which belongs to him personally, he also has thoughts in his Stream of Consciousness of the Soul which belong to him exclusively and no one has a right to attempt to change them. In possessing these personal opinions, which may be false, he must never let them become a matter of Arrogance and refuse to turn loose of them when he perceives they are wrong. Holding to wrong opinions results in his becoming subjective in his approach to Truth especially Bible Doctrine, the Divine Institutions and the Laws of Divine Establishment. Freedom of thought is one of the greatest principles of freedom and not only does one have a right to his opinions but if he remains objective in his thinking he has a right to change them as the Absolute Truths of Bible Doctrine enlightens him. It is easier to be [Flexible](#) when objective about thinking and thereby change one's opinions when they are corrected by Absolute Truths. False impressions or opinions must not ever be corrected by the outside influence of spiritual bullying which violates the [Royal Family Honor Code](#) and produces a permanent casualty in the Angelic Conflict.

The expression of his opinion by a student in a classroom, or any other person for that matter, is worth nothing to anyone unless their opinion is REQUESTED and if it is NOT requested they should simply KEEP THEIR MOUTH SHUT. While a person may value his own opinion it is not necessarily the view of the rest of the world that they also value his opinion. Even possessing good judgment one must never assume, from [Blind Arrogance](#), that his opinion matters for any reason. The erroneous idea that personalities will be repressed and damage

done to them bringing on subjectivity by not allowing freedom of opinion expression has resulted in the collective attitude of the United States being distorted for a very long time so that people who have opinions but NO Scale of Values feel justified in expressing them constantly to everyone.

It should not be one's position to want to change anything in his periphery based on his personal opinion. The only opinion which ever counts is God's opinion. The selfcenteredness of Personal Opinion Arrogance seeks to establish personal opinion over doctrinal or organizational standards or policy. When a citizen votes for and elects someone into public service office this is his right and in fact his duty to express his opinion by his vote. Since all individuals have opinions which are personally developed, God has made this concept a command as part of the Royal Family Honor Code. When a believer begins to think his opinions are more important than those of others, which is normal if he has very strong opinions, and he is dogmatic about things because he has come up with this personal opinion and has nurtured it and display it as frequently as possible, this is a form of Arrogance. The believer must remember that *Arrogance + any Personal Opinion == a human jackass*. [Disillusion](#) or Disenchantment Arrogance places personal opinion above Bible Doctrine and ignores the universal implications of hamartiology (SIN). There is a great difference between Bible Doctrine and personal opinion about anything. When thinking is based on Bible Doctrine then the believer must stand fast under those principles but if the thinking or opinion is of his own making then it must be subject to change and modification from the influence of Bible Doctrine. This requires from the believer flexibility and understanding of the differences between [Essentials and Nonessentials](#) in life and especially the Spiritual Life. The Royal Family of God is specifically prohibited from ever being entranced by their own thinking or opinions, which may be fantastic to the individual believer but in fact are simply pseudo wisdom. The believer must be careful to not be confused, thinking that learning something is only his personal accomplishment and that no one else can ever learn these same things. He must learn to distinguish what is Bible Doctrine and what is personal opinion. BIBLE DOCTRINE IS ALWAYS CORRECT, but personal opinion may not EVER be correct and one's opinions about people can often result in schisms between them. One often thinks that because he has an opinion he is smarter than others and being so much smarter his opinion is on a par with Bible Doctrine and therefore he will never tolerate any antithetical opinion of any sort. This prevents believers from fulfilling the Royal Family Honor Code and they, thereby, set aside the [Integrity](#) of the Royal Family of God and get into some kind of conflict with other believers. This occurred in Rome and the Roman Christians were some of the weakest believers of that time. The Roman churches needed a smart strong man and as a result Paul was assigned to Rome and because he was an authority in the ancient church he was placed there by God to stop all the schisms in the groups in Rome.

In the profession of Law Enforcement and in the Military an officer has no right to sound off and criticize his superiors or the policy of his commanders while he is part of the profession or organization he serves in. If he wishes to criticize he must first leave the organization, resign, and then he can criticize the organization based on his experience. In any organization if, while one is serving the organization, he considers it correct to criticize the organization then

he is totally saturated by Arrogance. The believer must always consider his position before he speaks his opinion because often this expression will stimulate the thinking of others or result in other inordinate criticism. Therefore, he must not express personal opinions about anything whenever it suits him. He should not even criticize others when they oppose, with their opinion, Bible Doctrine. He must also be responsible about giving opinions and never give opinions to stupid people. He must not express his opinions if they might destroy authority or if they may occur in a situation which would result in rudeness. Many if not most personal opinions are best not expressed at all, especially when one gains the Status Quo of [Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God](#). This is especially true regarding proper respect for authority regarding the police officer or soldiers in the military if one has at some point been treated poorly during interaction with them. Often these situations result in one expressing a right opinion but being wrong in doing so simply because he chose to express it at a wrong time.

The believer cannot function under the Royal Family Honor Code by being an Arrogant wimp. Wimpy people have nothing to offer and when other people agree with them they are all off and running having the most subtle Arrogance imaginable. Take Arrogance away from anyone and they are [Teachable](#) but in contrast, being entangled in Arrogance is why many people are not ever teachable. These Arrogant people have a thought, idea or opinion and think it is so great that they believe they are the smartest people around. This is what hinders fulfilling the Royal Family Honor Code and destroys a good sense of humor, one's relationship with the Lord and is also how [Legalism](#) creeps into the picture. This is how the believer becomes Legalistic and tabooistic and, in fact, how whole denominations are developed around this status quo. When a pastor becomes involved in this, it begins with his opinion, and he then pushes it on others and this ultimately becomes a denomination. The only thoughts of any person, at any time, in any situation, which are significant are those founded in the Absolute Truths of Bible Doctrine. When this has been removed as a result of [Negative Volition](#) or some other consideration they are thereby robbed of any thoughts regarding Truth and the only thing left is personal opinion which comes from their Reversionism. Therefore, Arrogance + Personal Opinion == [Reversionism](#) resulting from the strong influence from Evil. As Royal Family of God one's Spiritual Life demands that he face the reality of the devils world and the fact that there must be superimposed on and saturated into all believers, the thinking of The Lord Jesus, The Christ, Bible Doctrine. ([1Cor 2:16](#))

In contrast dominating personalities in any organization or profession must beware of setting their personal, and too often erroneous, opinions against the legitimately constituted and delegated authority or policy of the organization. This is the selfcenteredness of Personal Opinion Arrogance rather than focus on the Truth. These people seek to establish personal opinion over doctrinal or establishment standards, or the policy or authority of any organization. This is where there is an interlocking of [Personality, Blind, Institutional](#), Personal Opinion and [Conspiracy Arrogance](#). The believer must avoid allowing PERSONAL OPINION to become at odds with Bible Doctrine and the unbeliever must avoid allowing PERSONAL OPINION to become at odds with the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institution principles. This is one mechanism whereby people become involved in the absolute EVIL of [Antisemitism](#).

Often a male, through his great Arrogance and false norms and standards, creates an image of masculinity from some stupid strong clod he admires. This “HE MAN” image is in essence a nonessential personal opinion and his being inflexible about such an image results in huge distortions in his life. This is one of the most stupid things any person can do, that is to set up an image of someone he admires and then try to emulate that image. Instead of emulating the overt flair of another person one should try to emulate their plodding consistency in learning their job and functioning effectively in it. This Arrogance has become blatantly obvious in women who want to be firemen, coal miners, combat soldiers, police officers, etc., and they are always Inflexible With Regard to Nonessentials.

### **Personal Opinion Arrogance – Weak vs Strong**

Believers are weak because of some aspect of Negative Volition to Bible Doctrine and thus are in some stage of Reversionism. They cannot distinguish between Essentials vs Non Essentials in their Spiritual Life and are totally flexible with regard to the essentials of Bible Doctrine and totally inflexible with regard to non essentials of the myriad DETAILS of life. This is the believer who gets into the tongues movement and any believer who is consistently under Positive Volition toward Bible Doctrine must totally separate from this apostasy since they are an Emotional disaster. The Arrogant person divorced from reality is the weak believer who has frustration from his own Mental Attitude Arrogance and Sins saturating his thinking. He is carried away in Arrogance with the importance of his opinions and is very inflexible about his opinions despite them being divorced from reality and 99% in error, inaccurate and totally incompatible with the Absolute Truths of Bible Doctrine. He is motivated to bear grudges and function under Revenge and therefore is a sociopath having no Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of his Soul. Reversionism has shut off any possibility of implementing principles from Bible Doctrine and he is ignorant of the Royal Family Honor Code thus unaware of the imputations and structure of the Plan of God. This believer does not understand nor use the principles of Logistical Grace designed to support his advance to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and is ALWAYS flexible, choosing what he thinks is acceptable and what is not, with regard to the essentials of Bible Doctrine. There is therefore always an error in his application of Bible Doctrine with no common sense and no understanding of reality and he MUST be avoided by the believer who functions under consistent Positive Volition at all times.

Personal Opinion Arrogance is one of the great occupational hazards of the weak believer. Strong believers are oriented to reality while the weak believer is not as a result of the weak believer being Inflexible about the Nonessentials of opinions and totally flexible about Bible Doctrine. The weak believer is always trying to convert the nonessentials into a rigid form of orthodoxy instead of recognizing them as a ductile system of opinions. This inflexibility with regard to nonessentials keeps him from being oriented to reality and therefore, being divorced from reality, he will tend to judge, malign and criticize others based on his nonessential opinions. Being divorced from reality involves a form of Arrogance in which he thinks that his most inconsequential opinions are the most important things in life. This means that his superimposition of nonessentials over Bible Doctrine causes him to be forced into the position

of judging, bullying, intruding on the privacy of other believers and rejecting the concept of live and let live under the [Laws of Divine Establishment](#) Freedom principles. No advancing believer can live life as unto the Lord with such interference from weak believers which becomes like high volume static on the radio and a great distraction to the Spiritual Life. This attempted Arrogant superimposition of the weak believers standards over those of God and onto the Royal Family of God is the epitome of Personal Opinion Arrogance.

In addition and obviously, weak believers are minus Bible Doctrine being unquestionably more interested in their own nonessential opinions while strong believers are plus Metabolized Bible Doctrine from daily consistent Perception, Cognition, Incultation & Metabolization of Bible Doctrine. Each of these has an occupational hazard regarding the [PRIDE](#) they develop as a result. The Pride of the strong believer is that he knows so much Bible Doctrine that he has learned to distinguish essentials from nonessentials. Unless this pride is countered by [Impersonal Love](#) he will have a very intolerant attitude toward weak believers. On the other hand weak believers don't recognize their lack of Bible Doctrine as a weaknesses but consider this a strength and assume this because of their ignorance of Bible Doctrine. The strong believer assumes that his strength is in effect the weakness of the weak believer, which is in fact a Truth, but then he loses his objectivity and fails to realize that God has accepted both weak as well as strong believers into his plan. The strong believers pride results in him looking down on the weak believer with contempt.

The more one advances in the Spiritual Life the more flexible one must become with regard to application concerning Nonessentials and the more tolerant one must become of the weak believer. The advancing and mature believer becomes more aware that weak believers are confused about what to be flexible about and what to be inflexible about. Weak believers are invariably flexible about the essentials of Bible Doctrine, the Divine Institutions and the Laws of Divine Establishment because of ignorance of any or all of these. They are inflexible about nonessentials, all the details of life, which they are totally aware of and which are tantamount to personal opinions because of false norms and standards and involvement in Arrogance and subjectivity. As a result they think they must show others how strong they are and always take a stand on inconsequential or stupid things.

Although Alcoholism can be a source of national disaster ([Joel 1:4-6](#), [Is 28:1-9](#), [Jer 13:12-17](#)), and drunkenness is related to the sins of Arrogance and often the motivation for drunkenness is in fact involvement in some area of Arrogance, there is no biblical prohibition on drinking alcohol. If eating and drinking certain foods was sinful, then it would be virtuous to avoid these things BUT this is not the case. Therefore, to observe such a taboo, which in essence is a personal opinion, would be virtuous IF these things were actually a part of EVIL, however, they are NOT! Unfortunately these things are often distorted by Evil, and the truth is that avoiding them is not [Virtuous](#) since there is no prohibition on eating or drinking anything. Eating and drinking are not functions from Evil but [Legalism](#) always latches on to these forming taboos with its opinions derived from Arrogance. All legalists are Arrogant and have rejected some form of authority and substituted their own authority in some nonessential matter. When one comes into contact with a believer who makes essentials flexible and rejects the dogmatic



inflexibility of them then separation from him is Essential. However, when these disoriented believers make nonessentials inflexible they can be tolerated **IF** they are consistently growing in the Spiritual Life.

There is an additional command to the strong believer, that he should be sensitive and thoughtful, exercising the Virtue of [Impersonal Love for Mankind](#), and awareness that others have feelings and even though these others may be Arrogant or subjective they still have feelings. The strong believer is able to be sensitive and consider the circumstances of the weak believer whose ignorance of Bible Doctrine results in numerous nonessential opinions and judgments. As one grows up in the Spiritual Life and becomes aware of other people and their feelings, he is commanded to make the feelings of others a greater priority than his own feelings. It is a great temptation to obliterate Arrogance in others especially when one has greater physical and mental strength than they, however, the greatest strength is required to not destroy them but to tolerate them.

Always remember and consider that overt confidence and self consciousness in the soul of the mature believer is not Arrogance since he is acutely aware of the true fact that he is a mature believer. To the mature believer it is quite a burden to see and hear weak believers babbling nonsense based on ignorance of Bible Doctrine. The weak believer is weak because he possesses minimal Metabolized Bible Doctrine in his Stream of Consciousness of the Soul which is combined with maximum Arrogance to enable the formation of inconsequential opinions about the superficialities and details of life. Therefore the strong mature believer must carry a heavy burden by tolerating the silly and inconsequential without refuting these nonessential opinions in order to make the issue ONLY about Bible Doctrine.

### **Personal Opinion Arrogance & Arrogant Presumption**

Personal Opinion Arrogance, which occurs extensively among people who are considered to be successful, comes from an Arrogant presumption of the success or superiority of people who have qualified by some nonessential standard as being successful. They may have been interviewed, they may be wealthy, they may have won some contest, they may have come into public notice and achieved public attention for some inconsequential reason, like entertainers. This injects them into Arrogance when they have been considered successful and have achieved some pseudo success in life. Very often people who are brilliant or successful in certain fields and ignorant in others assume, as a result of their Arrogance, that they are or can be expert in any field or subject. Being brilliant in their field and as a result of their developed Arrogance they feel qualified to express an opinion on any subject which may arise. For these people it is absolutely impossible for them to simply say “I don’t know”. Very often there is a great entertainer or artist who becomes inflexible in nonessentials by assuming in Arrogance he is an expert on politics or sex or some other field. In reality he knows less than anyone else about these things and anyone who is as divorced from reality as entertainers certainly knows nothing about either politics or sex.

Momentum for this flaw comes from success in one field which when linked with Arrogance assumes expertise in every field of endeavor or interest. This Momentum is most often linked

with the pride in their success, assuming that they are actually an expert in some field. American news media has contributed to this fiasco by constantly interviewing successful or famous people and interrogating them concerning things about which they know nothing and about which they are not qualified to express any opinion. Because they are famous, successful, generally wealthy, Arrogant and inflexible with regard to nonessentials they come up with far fetched ideas which are then taken for being Truth. Only Personal Opinion Arrogance presumes, when one is successful in one area, that a person is qualified or expert enough to express opinions in other areas.

Return to the [Table of Contents](#)

### **Gate #78 – The Arrogance Regarding Public Opinion**

*Vox populi non adaequalus ut Vox Dei*, that is, the voice of the people does not equal the voice of God. The proper attitude is *Vox populi adaequalus ut vox et prater a Nehile*, that is, the voice of the people is equal to a voice and nothing more. Very often the voice of the people is a voice of nothing more than the expressions of the Old Sin Nature. The voice of the people is the sum total of the function of their Old Sin Natures in the area of arrogance, selfcenteredness, selfishness and the vicious Evil of [Self Righteousness](#). Public opinion is a voice stuck in the throat. Public opinion cannot change anything any time especially in a historical or national crisis. Public opinion never has changed anything nor solved any problems in all of Human History. Public opinion is the Self Righteous Arrogance and justification for bureaucrats to change things without going through the functions of proper thinking and proper legislation. Public opinion is one of the most meaningless aspects of Human History. Mobs are formed in response to public opinion and they are always destructive and are used to overthrow establishment authority and power. A Mob is the most vicious evil thing that any person can become involved with. Public opinion is one of the greatest weapons of the Mob but as a force for change it is no greater than the weakest person who has an opinion in the masses. The weakest person is always a moron thus public opinion is the expression of morons.

The Old Sin Nature is always the instigator of unrest in any nation where a saturation of Evil results in Sin + Arrogance from this Evil and also results in Human Good + Arrogance with Revolution being the quintessence of these actions from the Influence of that Evil. [Crusader Arrogance](#) provides the motivation and justification for all forms of unrest and revolution. It is [Criminal Arrogance](#) which provides the leadership for all forms of revolution which is derived from Evil. Dissatisfied people always exist in any organization as malcontents and these dissatisfied people who function under the [Arrogance Skills](#) provide the power for revolution. There is incredible power for EVIL when public opinion rejects the function of authority orientation and substitutes on an individual basis the 3 Arrogance Skills, the Interlocking System of Arrogance and its Sins and the Interlocking System of Antagonistic Emotional Hatred and Emotional Sins. This is Public Opinion Arrogance and Lust and it creates a power which some demigod will come along and snatch up. This power has no virtue, no facts nor reason

and is a weapon forged from strong delusion. Truth from Bible Doctrine, the Laws of Divine Establishment and the Divine Institutions are the only protection against that public opinion arrogance and revolutionary arrogance. [National Arrogance](#) which results in or from Public Opinion Arrogance is, therefore, the molding material for revolution.

The arrogant individual who is sensitive to public opinion will often go through formalities of requesting his desires from those in authority above him and even show deference and respect for them but being sensitive to public opinion will always follow and place the expectations of the public and his own needs above those of his organization. Many people spend their whole life bending this way and that to make sure everyone thinks well of them. They are divorced from reality and no one can go through life having everyone think well of them. A person cannot spend his whole life falling apart because someone dislikes him. If one, especially as a believer under Positive Volition to Bible Doctrine, is disturbed because someone does not like him, he is not living life as unto the Lord and will never have happiness nor understand the Christian Way of Life. These people inevitably became entangled with and distracted by public opinion and the “protocols” of their society. They are distracted from exercising consistent Positive Volition toward Bible Doctrine because of potentially being ostracized by society. Unfortunately, ignorance is the basis for the overall general functions in society, especially today, but this type of believer thinks more of the approbation he receives from people than the approbation available from God. Invariably he is a sweet, humble, nice person but with his own type of raging arrogance.

Return to the [Table of Contents](#)

### **Gate #79 – The Arrogance of the Public LIE**

What removes the FEAR of Divine Discipline? The obvious answer is, entrance into the Interlocking System of Arrogance, because when people lose their fear of God and Awe of His Integrity and His Divine Discipline they have become locked into Arrogance. There is a GREAT difference between Advanced Personal Love for God, [Occupation with the Person of The Lord Jesus, The Christ](#) and the false assumption that you can be “BUDDY BUDDY” with God saying “Jesus is my friend and he would never hurt me”. God’s Grace plan demands that the more mature the believer becomes the GREATER and MORE INTENSE his Divine Discipline must be. When a mature believer gets out of line by leaving the Grace Plan of God and moving into the Cosmic Dynaspheres, his Divine Discipline must be severe else all the infant and adolescent believers will think that this is OK and they will follow him. People of the United States have believed the LIE of the Satanic plan and policy of Evil with its Human Good production, because they have rejected Absolute Truth in all 3 categories for a very long time. The American people accept liberal, communist, islamic, religious propaganda LIES. Roman catholic followers accept mandates from the Pope of the Roman church almost as if he is GOD while the Truth is that he may not even get to heaven upon his death. The people accept these along with many other LIES of the Cosmic Dynasphere systems of Satan. People everywhere REVERE, believe and accept the LIE of EVIL but this cannot occur if one believes the Truth.

The great struggle in the United States is at the grass roots level and a reflection of this struggle is demonstrated by the overpowering success of liberalism, radicalism and all forms of anti-Americanism with its total irresponsibility in government. This would not be possible if the people accepted Absolute Truth because when one accepts the LIE it enslaves him in the worst type of slavery, Soul Slavery, but the ABSOLUTE Truth of Bible Doctrine will set him free. Therefore, when Absolute Truth is rejected ONLY the LIE is and can be accepted and inculcated and the soul is put into slavery under the LIE and under Old Sin Nature control. The issue at this time in the United States is whether or not a person accepts any Truth. If there is a principle of Truth with which one disagrees he must fall back on his respect for [Authority](#) and accept the point of Truth and endeavor to understand it better. He must never reject the authority of those over him, especially those teaching Bible Doctrine in the Local Church. It is extremely important to understand and realize that in any area where one rejects Truth they will believe the LIE first in that area. This explains why so many fundamentalist Christians have involuntarily become stupidly eclectic and why there is so much inconsistency in what Christians believe because they accept one principle as Truth and reject others as part of believing the LIE from EVIL. In the failing Christian the conflict of these various concepts being accepted or rejected is only resolved by accepting a compromise from EMOTION which is illustrated by the false doctrine of “Loving the Brethren” or “Loving Mankind”. There is a true doctrine of loving the brethren but this is not with an emotional love but with an [Impersonal Unconditional Love](#) thereby allowing all others to exercise their own volition in their own lives. Unfortunately, this is the only way to reconcile the great conflict of thought in the average believer who accepts some Truth and rejects other Truths and as a solution it is universally rejected. Once the LIE is let into the soul it compromises all Truth. This is why most Christians with their great conflict of thinking find it necessary to get involved in some emotional social life or some helping mankind organization to compensate for their inability to reconcile their Truths.

Principle of the Public LIE is that anyone can say anything about anyone else and someone will always believe it. (Review the first several years of the Trump Administration and the allegations of Russian collusion, the false impeachment attempts, his responsibility for the incursion into the congress and many other claims posed against him). The originator of a Public LIE is either irrational from emotional sins, saturated with Evil from the Interlocking System of Arrogance involvement or mentally ill and a pathological liar. Regarding the person who originates the Public LIE, their volition is always involved and therefore, the law of volitional responsibility applies even to the mentally ill who obviously have a strong divorcement from reality. However, this liability does not terminate with the originator of the LIE but extends inevitably to those who believe it also. The myriad of reasons for anyone believing the Public LIE are found in the Interlocking System of Arrogance. Therefore there is an Evil motivation in the origin of the LIE and also in believing it. The Public LIE is the place of compatibility for every form of Evil and the saturation of every form of garbage into the subconsciousness. If one originates the Public LIE, [Power Lust](#) and [Emotional Lust](#) are the source of it and his desire or intention is to control the people concerned in the LIE. The LIE is designed to create an environment to control and manipulate others. There are several categories of the Public LIE:

- ✧ Spiritual destruction with slander
- ✧ Implacable believers taking revenge
- ✧ Political destruction of enemies by vilification
- ✧ Ideas that socialism works
- ✧ Ideas that the planet will be environmentally destroyed
- ✧ Freedom can exist without military victory
- ✧ Antisemitism
- ✧ Freedom means and requires EQUALITY

Only Perception, Cognition, Inculcation & Metabolization of Bible Doctrine can offset the Public LIE.

### **Arrogance & Living The LIE**

To tell a LIE is a sin, to BE a LIAR is living a STATUS QUO involving Sin, Crime and/or Human Good from Evil in Cosmic Dynasphere I, the Interlocking System of Arrogance or Cosmic Dynasphere II, the Interlocking System of Antagonistic Emotional Hatred. In the Cosmic Dynaspheres the believer will live a LIE, although he has been designed for the Divine Dynasphere and Absolute Truth. Believers thereby live constantly under the system of Satan. Unless the believer resides and functions in the Divine Dynasphere his LIFE IS a LIE, and he is living as any unbeliever would live. Being a Liar the believer resides and functions inside Cosmic Dynasphere I the Interlocking System of Arrogance where he grieves God the Holy Spirit and also in Cosmic Dynasphere II the Interlocking System of Antagonistic Emotional Hatred where he quenches God the Holy Spirit. ([1Thes 5:19](#)) Under these circumstances the believer IS a LIAR and also is living a LIE in contrast to having engaged in the Sin of Lying. The Sin of Lying makes the believer Carnal while being in the Status Quo of being a LIAR and living a LIE inevitably and ultimately makes the believer Anti-Christ and entangled in the Cosmic Dynaspheres.

Arrogance lives on flattery, a LIE, and therefore always believes THE LIE from Evil. Anyone in the Interlocking System of Arrogance, no matter how he enters, becomes weak spiritually and mentally and is vulnerable to universal Interlocking in the Arrogance system and especially susceptible to FLATTERY. This is why in the mutual admiration society, the inadequate individual always joins in a conspiracy against authority with the Arrogant individual as a result of being led astray by flattery from the Arrogant. However, flattery is only the first step and once the LIE of flattery is believed, then the next step is to vote in an election as a liberal or to begin thinking he is going to fix all the nations problems by following some liberal agenda. Once flattery is believed then one comes to believe whatever the current LIE is. The LIE changes from generation to generation, an example is a quote from Hillary Clinton: “We simply have too many guns and if as many people were dying from a disease as are from shootings we would have been doing something about it”. The reality is that the deaths in this country from gun violence is VASTLY exceeded by the deaths from MEDICAL MALPRACTICE MISTAKES. Once one believes one LIE he will believe the rest of the LIES one at a time. When he begins to believe LIES his mind freezes up when Truth is presented in any form especially Bible Doctrine Truth. His buildup of [Scar Tissue of the Soul](#) causes the Truth



to literally bounce off of the soul in total rejection. Arrogance must then go on the offensive and move into flattery and apologies for all sorts of supposed wrongdoing and these types of people can be sincere yet live totally in a LIE. When presented with the antithesis of flattery, the insulting dogmatic reality of who and what a person is, this causes these [Hypersensitive](#) individuals to begin to spread LIES about these Truth sayers. Arrogance on the offensive becomes critical of others and maligns, judges and intrudes on the privacy of others.

Especially those individuals who are involved in the “[Big Blot Out](#)”, who have rejected the Truth of the Gospel, can only understand and believe LIES. Once a person thinks in terms of LIES no matter how brilliant they are, they are completely handicapped by this thinking and this is why so many smart people are totally divorced from reality. This is why college professors are LIBERAL having had great educations but having believed so many LIES as a result of their Arrogant rejection of the Truth. When one starts with a good IQ and strong perspicacity and builds LIE upon LIE his entire premise for life is a LIE and all of his conclusions are LIES whether he reaches them logically or illogically. He might do this syllogistically, illogically, inadvertently, or even deliberately but the conclusions are still erroneous even as the process and rationale is erroneous. This is the problem in the United States of America and is what turns Americans into duplicates of frightened eastern European people. This anticipates opposition, which in fact is good, because people do not change easily and need outside pressures to do so (the actual reason believers receive [Momentum Testing](#) from God). People may change their speech, mannerisms, clothing, houses, means of transportation but they cannot in fact change their Old Sin Nature which resides in every human being today and has also resided in every person’s ancestors back to Adam and Eve. The Old Sin Nature never changes and when you say no to the Truth it is inevitable that you will build up Arrogance from rejecting Truth and this is a natural law of function and the Modus Operandi of Homo Sapien. However, the Old Sin Nature can be suppressed in its functions by saturating the soul with Metabolized Bible Doctrine the Absolute Truth from the Thinking of Christ. ([1Cor 2:16](#))

When believers reject or resist Bible Doctrine they cause [Blackout of their Soul](#) and built up [Scar Tissue of the Soul](#) allowing the LIE from Evil to saturate the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul. This explains the Christian movements of Holy Rollers and pseudo speaking in Tongues and why Christians run roughshod over Pastor Teachers as a result of legalism and try to control them. When people say no to what is being taught in the local church as accurate Bible Doctrine they will try to undercut the Pastor Teacher wherever Truth is taught. The basis for this is Arrogance and the more they say NO to Truth the more they pump up personal self esteem and parlay this into strong Arrogance, very often [Blind Arrogance](#) hidden to the person himself, the deeper they become entangled in the LIE and the Interlocking System of Arrogance. Most people are not even remotely aware of the all encompassing principles of Arrogance and as a result not aware of their own personal Arrogance. Arrogant people who don’t recognize Arrogance in themselves are constantly calling others Arrogant who don’t agree with them or who have used legitimate authority to direct or control them.

This is a constant ongoing problem which makes it understandable as to why friends turn

against one another and oppose the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions. This is the reason that people who start out oriented to the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions end up becoming liberal in their thinking and Modus Operandi supporting socialism. With their own self determination they reject Truth and then believe the LIE. A situation can occur when even the unbeliever seems to change his thinking when he has been exposed to the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions Truth and has rejected them totally. They then come to believe the LIES of Evil in communism, socialism, welfare state functions, Equality, Criminal Rights, etc. There is more to this than just the Old Sin Nature being involved and there will always be someone who is out to destroy the believer who functions under the Absolute Truth of Bible Doctrine and also the unbeliever who functions under the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions. However, the believer must never take time to have concern about those people because as part of the Royal Family of God with The Lord Jesus, The Christ his business is to learn Bible Doctrine from the Pastor Teacher who teaches it properly while ignoring those people who try to destroy him. Anyone who teaches Truth will be despised by those who live within this system of LIES. When a person says no to the Truth of Bible Doctrine or the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions, sooner or later, as Scar Tissue of the Soul builds up, the Truth is no longer the issue but the person who teaches it becomes the issue. So that once one believes the LIE they spend their whole life living in the LIE. Every human being has an Old Sin Nature and his function under the influence of Evil through the Old Sin Nature is never the issue but the true issue is Absolute Truth. No one will ever be perfect in this life and sins as a result of Old Sin Nature function are only an issue between the believer and God so that when he simply cites or names or acknowledges them to God, He, GOD, ALWAYS forgives them. ([1John 1:9](#)) No one can resist Absolute Truth without believing the LIE and the LIE may vary from time to time but once one believes one LIE he will believe any LIE. As a result of rejecting the Truth, once one builds up Scar Tissue of the Soul it is far easier to believe what is the LIE than what is Truth.

Return to the [Table of Contents](#)

### **Gate #80 – The Arrogance of Pseudo Spirituality**

Spirituality is simply and ABSOLUTELY the [Filling of God the Holy Spirit](#). The Filling of God the Holy Spirit is essential for Spiritual growth and provides the momentum for achieving the objective of Spiritual growth and is the POWER of God for the believer, its being the first gate of the [Divine Dynasphere](#). This is the ENTRANCE of the believer into the Power System of God which occurs immediately at [Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God](#), which unfortunately he can lose as a result of any carnality. Human power is not and cannot be the energy for God's system and a numb skull believer can be under the Filling of God the Holy Spirit just as quickly and easily as a genius. ([2Pet 2:1-5](#)) One cannot enter or move ahead in the System of God without INCULCATION of KNOWLEDGE of God through Perception, Cognition, Inculcation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine which can only occur under the Filling of God the Holy Spirit. All knowledge of God, even the comprehension of the reality of the Gospel of The Lord Jesus, The Christ, comes through the ministry of God the Holy Spirit

under the [Grace Apparatus for Perception](#), Operation Z. Grace and Peace for the believer are multiplied through the KNOWLEDGE OF GOD not through:

- ✧ Working for God
- ✧ Witnessing for God
- ✧ Human self sacrifices
- ✧ Personality changes

### **The Breath of the Spiritual Life**

The Filling of God the Holy Spirit is LIKE breathing and is analogous to breathing. Either one is Alive and is breathing or he is DEAD and Not Breathing. Either one is in the Divine Dynasphere under Gate #1, the [Filling of God the Holy Spirit](#), or is outside in the Cosmic Dynaspheres. In Cosmic Dynasphere I, one is grieving God the Holy Spirit and being out of fellowship in carnality under Operational Death, NOT breathing. In Cosmic Dynasphere II one is quenching God the Holy Spirit and is actively Antagonistic to God and again NOT breathing. **Therefore the believer must understand that physical LIFE and physical DEATH are mutually exclusive and that he is either ALIVE and BREATHING or DEAD and NOT BREATHING. If he is dead he is not alive and if he is alive he is not dead! Spirituality is analogous to physical LIFE and DEATH and is an absolute and being Spiritual is mutually exclusive from being non-Spiritual. EITHER one's soul is under the control of God the Holy Spirit or one is Carnal and under the control of the Old Sin Nature. These are mutually exclusive and there are NO DEGREES of Spirituality.** Therefore, Spirituality is NOT relative and when people make Spirituality relative it results in very few of these people executing the Protocol Plan of God and thus being unable to RESPOND to any outside pressures in life but always reacting to them and fragmenting their own life. One's state of fragmentation and living in the Cosmic Dynaspheres is analogous to cessation of breathing. The ONLY recovery for the believer who has stopped breathing in the Spiritual Life is the CPR (Christian Procedural Rebound) of the Spiritual Life, the [Rebound Procedure](#) and to then keep moving in Post Salvation Epistemological Rehabilitation. The principle is that the believer MUST NOT hold his breath by rejecting Bible Doctrine.

### **Spirituality vs Emotionalism**

Godliness is synonymous with true Spirituality, momentum and maturity in the system of God and Spirituality is NOT emotional nor ecstatic and both Romans chapter 16 and 2<sup>nd</sup> Corinthians chapter 6 are serious warnings regarding this. Most evangelism related to Cosmic Dynasphere I, the Interlocking System of Arrogance, comes from believers who are under Emotional Revolt of the Soul in reversionism such that their emotion has Priority #1 in their life. This is not normal emotion which is designed to respond to the MENTALITY functions of the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul. Emotion cannot, in fact is not designed to think and does not contain Bible Doctrine, is not logical nor rational and feels its way through life to ascertain what is real or unreal, true vs false and therefore CANNOT be involved with the Spiritual Life nor Spirituality. ([Rom 16;17-18](#)) Believers do not need to glad hand others or be part of social organizations to move forward in the Spiritual Life and those who are, are emotional slaves, like those who are in slavery being addicted to narcotic drugs. ([2Cor 6:11-12](#))

The Corinthians received FACE TO FACE teaching from Paul and others and as Paul and these others continually learned Bible Doctrine and taught them it had NO EFFECT on these people. This is the status of most believers today in the United States of America being, like the Corinthians, in Emotional Revolt of the Soul. Emotions are DESIGNED to respond to Knowledge, Norms and Standards, Priorities in the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul and this is not the Church Age characteristic of the Filling of God the Holy Spirit, which is the ABSOLUTE of Spirituality. There is NO EMOTION with the Filling of God the Holy Spirit and the believer can be in pain, depressed, elated etc., and be under the Filling of God the Holy Spirit and Spiritual. The bottom line is, HOW THE BELIEVER FEELS ABOUT ANYTHING HAS NOTHING AT ALL TO DO WITH THE CHRISTIAN WAY OF LIFE IN THE CHURCH AGE. Only in the millennium when The Lord Jesus, The Christ is again present and reigning on earth will ecstasies and emotion be part of the Filling of God the Holy Spirit and Spirituality. All passages in the scripture regarding emotion and ecstasies related to Spirituality are millennial and eschatological passages.

In the Church Age The Lord Jesus, The Christ is absent from the earth, seated at the right hand of God the Father in heaven and therefore the Filling of God the Holy Spirit is related to the absence of Jesus Christ from the earth and has been given to believers in this Church Age to INSTRUCT them in all the aspects of the System of God. In addition as a result of the Baptism of God the Holy Spirit, which occurs ONLY in this Church Age, every believer is in union with The Lord Jesus the Christ and part of the Royal Family of God. In fact, this dispensation was intercalated or inserted into history separating into 2 parts the Age of Israel for the explicit purpose of extracting a Royal Family for The Lord Jesus, The Christ.

### Distortions of Spirituality

The difficulty with true Spirituality is making the believer understand the ABSOLUTE character of Spirituality so as to not engage in false standards for Spirituality as:

- Considering Dress and Clothing – people are judged by their dress in several ways:
  - Rich vs Poor – in the 30s no one wore jeans unless they were poor but today some IDIOTIC females will pay HUNDREDS of dollars for a pair of jeans with manufactured HOLES in them.
- Considering Grooming – this does not apply today either since even the film industry in the 21<sup>st</sup> century has taken to making their males in starring roles appear on screen unshaven looking DIRTY and UNKEMPT, and the females to wear male clothing and have unkempt hair styling.

Spirituality is not determined either by DRESS or GROOMING but only by the Mental Attitude of the individual and his functions to remain under the Filling of God the Holy Spirit. What rags or fine accouterments one puts on his body for dress nor whether he bathes regularly or not has anything to do with Spirituality. This is obviously only a matter of good or bad judgment but is not ever an indication of Spirituality. Some actually consider that wearing only black is Spiritual and bright colors indicate a lack of Spirituality. Others consider that Women wearing makeup to enhance their looks indicates a lack of Spirituality and that these women are “SCARLET” woman, prostitutes. The reality is for the woman, wearing or not wearing makeup is only a matter of personal choice and has nothing to do with their

Spirituality or lack of it. Neglecting Grooming is thought by some to indicate Spirituality as seen in the hippy culture. These were in reality children, who never oriented to life regarding one of life's major principles, authority. Their reaction to authority and rejection of it was shown by their disdain for society in their dress and grooming but one can dress and groom like a hippie and still be Spiritual. The only true issue and exception to this is for young people whose parents INSIST on a dress code and children living with parents must follow the dress code set up by the parents. Also when a person accepts employment with a company who has a dress code he must also follow it along with students in an educational institution who must follow the dress code of the institution.

The content of one's speech is not an indication of Spirituality but some consider that the use of cliches or 'Spiritual' language or biblical vocabulary is an indication of Spirituality such as:

- ✧ God willing
- ✧ Praise the Lord
- ✧ Old English pronouns of Thee and Thou etc.

Many consider it necessary to engage in special mannerisms, posture and facial expressions and develop or demonstrate a sweet personality to be Spiritual. However, it is essential that Believers learn to distinguish between mannerisms, speech content, posture, facial expressions and personalities and the true Spirituality of other believers. The principle is that Personality and Spirituality must be distinguished from each other. Believers are MANY in personality but Spirituality is the same for all and is ONLY the Filling of God the Holy Spirit. There are a myriad of misconceptions about How to be Spiritual including:

- ✧ Yielding
  - This is in fact the use of the Rebound Procedure when needed to restore instantly the Filling of God the Holy Spirit.
  - [Rom 6:13](#), [Rom 6:19](#), [Rom 12:1](#) are not talking about YIELDING but they involve the concept of maturity from momentum in the Spiritual Life so that yielding is legitimate to use in these passages but it is much better translated OBEDIENCE and God has a system and believers must obey the mandates of the system.
- ✧ Dedications
  - To full time service is ridiculous and indicates ignorance since ALL believers from Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God in this Church Age are already in full time Christian service as Royal Priests and Royal Ambassadors for Christ.
- ✧ Methods of Prayer
  - Prayer has a protocol which must be followed and there are no variations in how prayer is to be offered and for what reasons it can be offered.
- ✧ Giving, and other production efforts
  - The truth is that production never results in Spirituality but is always the RESULT OF CONSISTENT Spirituality. Divine Good production, production involving GOD, the only production in the Christian Way of Life which has any spiritual value, is only the RESULT of Spirituality and momentum in the Spiritual Life, NEVER THE MEANS.
- ✧ Self Crucifixion
  - This confuses positional truth which results from the Baptism of God the Holy



Spirit with Christian Modus Operandi and this is not ever an experience at all.

- Adhering to Taboos
  - No drinking, smoking, dancing, mixed bathing, etc., the interesting thing is that people living under the Taboo system who discover that Taboos are not Spirituality instantly slough off the taboos and become involved in lascivious lawlessness and constantly raise hell in their lifestyle.

The reality of the fallacy of Tabooism is that anything an unbeliever can do cannot be the Christian Way of Life. The Christian Way of Life is a supernatural way of life executed by the believer when “SPIRITUAL” ie. *under the Filling of God the Holy Spirit* in the system of God the Divine Dynasphere. No two believers have attained the same level of Spiritual growth and the distortions of ideas of what spirituality is come from the fact that the Filling of God the Holy Spirit will *manifest* itself in different ways at different levels of Spiritual growth. The Legalistic bullying which occurs by Tattooists is a great deterrent to salvation and spiritual growth in others and spreads confusion as to what constitutes Spirituality and Christianity. The result is that those who respond to this become involved in Self Righteous Arrogance while those who react to it become involved in conflicts, Bitterness, Disillusion and often antinomianism. Reaction to taboos and other aspects of pseudo Spirituality will put the new believer into the Cosmic Dynaspheres and he will be starved of Bible Doctrine and will have been driven from the Christian Way of Life by legalism.

### Spirituality by Relativity

This system is used by those who consider themselves Spiritual because their sins are more respectable than the sins of others. Here, subtle sinfulness is compared to OBVIOUS overt sinfulness which results in false rationalizations concerning Spirituality. This includes the delusion that there are DEGREES of Spirituality when in fact Spirituality is an ABSOLUTE Status and there can be NO degrees. However, the manifestations of Spirituality in Christians may be very different based on the DEGREE or LEVEL of their Spiritual Growth. Any sin instantly puts the believer out from under the Filling of God the Holy Spirit and into the Cosmic Dynaspheres thus the importance of the understanding of and consistent use of the Rebound Procedure.

### Spirituality by Ecstatics

This is also a false pseudo system of Spirituality illustrated by the tongues movement and it is based on the emotions not being under control of the mentality of the soul. Emotions as responders are to be under the control of the mentality of the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul for appreciation of thought regarding many things in life. Emotional Revolt of the Soul results in ecstatics which are simply stimulation without thought or Norms and Standards and this is assumed, by the holy rollers and tongues Christians, to indicate Spirituality. In reality what is regarded as being a Spiritual experience is simply a state of being involved in some level of the Cosmic Dynaspheres, under extreme demon influence or, as unbelievers in the tongues movement, under demon possession. These are also the believers who very often think they may have lost their salvation because they do not feel saved. Emotion is not a criterion for Salvation nor for Spirituality and the Christian must ALWAYS ONLY evaluate his Christian experience and life by what the bible says NOT by what he feels. Whenever there is a conflict between these two things, the BIBLE IS ALWAYS RIGHT.

Therefore, Christians can be Spiritual and depressed or despondent or jumping for joy and dancing in the streets (Like David did but hopefully not naked) and many Christians have even have tried, and some have succeeded, in taking their own lives as a result of their confusion. Spirituality is therefore not a ritual and not related to participation in programs but in fact is the true LINK between the moment of Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God and the true function of the believer in the System of God, the Divine Dynasphere.

Return to the [Table of Contents](#)

### **Gate #81 – The Arrogance Regarding Prayer**

Prayer is a weapon for the believer that he must learn about and know thoroughly so that he can be effective when using it like any other weapon. Most ineffective prayer comes from Arrogance and false motivation resulting in improperly using it. One must know the weapon and also have proper motivation else the weapon will be totally ineffective. Arrogance produces both false motivation and discouragement with regard to effective prayer function. Prayer can be incredibly effective but the believer must know what he is doing when he prays to God. Therefore, there is a Prayer Arrogance which often involves people who pray a lot who do it simply to glorify self. When prayer is not answered it is usually the result of involvement in Arrogance, carnality or [Reversionism](#) causing failure to be under [Filling of God the Holy Spirit](#). ([Eph 6:18](#)) This can include any aspect of [Mental Attitude Arrogance](#) and its accompanying sins ([Ps 66:18](#)) and is a real problem for people who are very Arrogant and are not even aware of their own pride and vanity under [Blind Arrogance](#). It often takes some pressure in life to bring out their Arrogance and selfcenteredness. When involved in this Blind Arrogance there is the insidious infiltration of the Influence of Evil into the believer's thinking. ([Job 35:9-13](#))

### **Malfunction of Prayer**

The teaching of Bible Doctrine initially results in (gr) 'gnosis' or academic knowledge entering the Human Spirit and being moved instantly into the Left Lobe of the Soul by God the Holy Spirit under the [Grace Apparatus for Perception](#). Attempting to apply 'gnosis' to situations and circumstances in life results in [Legalism](#), [Inflexibility](#), insensitivity and intolerance all which compounds one's Arrogance. At the 'gnosis' stage of assimilation of Bible Doctrine, the Believer understands the concepts of Bible Doctrine and then faces the issue of faith, the acceptance or rejection of these concepts. Rejection of Bible Doctrine is one of the reasons for malfunction in prayer as a result of:

- ✧ Lacking understanding of the mechanics of prayer
- ✧ 3 categories of Ignorance from rejection of or indifference to Bible Doctrine
- ✧ Wrong Priorities in life
- ✧ Involvement in the Labyrinth of the Interlocking System of Arrogance

Therefore, the resultant [Black out of the Soul](#) with the inevitable influence of Evil explains why prayer is not answered. If one prays when frightened or in a state of Cowardice, [Self Righteousness](#), [Self Pity](#) or [Guilt](#) his prayers will not be heard. [Mental Attitude Arrogance](#)

with its Mental Attitude Sins and any involvement in the Interlocking System of Arrogance resulting from any form of carnality and [Reversionism](#) destroys prayer effectiveness and these are the greatest enemy of Prayer. ([Ps 66:18](#)) As Arrogance intensifies the believer can only believe the LIE of the Satanic Policies in EVIL, many which include the principles of socialism, communism and liberalism but also old false concepts regarding prayer. Therefore, when one is involved in Self Righteousness he has false superficial concepts about prayer and will judge others in their function of prayer. When one is involved in Self Pity he will use prayer groups to unload his problems and try to get others to pray for him. This is an abuse and distortion of prayer and a lack of understanding of the greatness of the weapon God has given us. No one under the influence of Evil ever asks for God to guide or help them and because of the Arrogance from Evil in man, God never answers when they cry out for help and in this Status Quo Arrogant man shares the discipline of Satan. ([Job 35:9-13](#)) When the believer says NO to the Absolute Truth of Bible Doctrine and the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions he is building up [Scar Tissue of the Soul](#) and by this means intensifying Arrogance resulting in his being restricted to believing only the LIE from EVIL. This completely cuts off the function of prayer in his life.

Return to the [Table of Contents](#)

### [Gate #82 – The Arrogance of Idolatry](#)

The 1<sup>st</sup> commandment prohibits soul slavery the 2<sup>nd</sup> commandment prohibits the overt manifestations of soul slavery. Idolatry both mental and overt is forbidden for the believer. ([Ex 20:3-4](#), [Ex 23:24](#), [Deut 4:28](#), [Deut 5:7](#), [Deut 6:14](#), [Deut 7:16](#), [Deut 8:19](#)). Idolatry, as spiritual adultery, is an attack on Category I Love, and beyond God there is nothing. ([Jer 3:8-10](#), [Ez 16:9](#), [Ez 23-33](#), [Ez 23:24-28](#), [Rev 17:1-5](#)). Soul slavery or idolatry of mind precedes idolatry of practice. ([Judg 2:10-14](#), [Ez 14:7](#), [Ex 20:3-4](#)) No one ever practices idolatry unless they are first in soul slavery, therefore, in every case in every country where there are idols they do not need a flag. A flag symbolizes freedom whereas idols symbolize slavery. India, China, and many other nations being inundated with idols are nations of slavery. Idolatry results from rejection of The Lord Jesus, The Christ producing [Black out of the Soul](#), [Scar Tissue of the Soul](#) and [Emotional Revolt of the Soul](#). ([Rom 1:18-25](#)) Demons operate to control man through idols and idolatry, ([Zech 10:2](#)) therefore Idolatry is the devils communion table. ([1Cor 10:19-21](#)) Since Idolatry is associated with Emotional Revolt of the Soul and soul slavery it produces a [Psychotic](#) condition and this FEAR psychosis is described by [Jer 50:38](#). Idolatry is also related to the [Sexual](#) sins of the phallic cult and all idolatry seeks to separate Right Man from Right Woman thus destroy Divine Institution #2. ([1Cor 6:9](#), [Ez 22:3-18](#), [Ez 23:37-49](#)) Idolatry causes national disintegration and is a basic reason for the administration of [National Judgment](#). Phallic Idolatry is the overt expression of soul idolatry and the soul in slavery is not at all interested in the concept of Right Man / Right Woman and has moved beyond God. God designed Divine Institution #2, Marriage between one *Right Man and Right Woman* and moving beyond God results in rejecting this concept. Both freedom of soul and freedom of body are gone when involved in any form of Idolatry. Phallic idolatry involves sexual indiscretions and aberrations

and total rejection of Divine Institution #2 principles with sublimation in place of true happiness.

### **Entrance into Idolatry**

Idolatry occurs in many forms and is not necessarily kneeling before some statue or symbol. A nation in the midst of destroying themselves is in the midst of spiritual idolatry. When this occurs Idolatry becomes a rampant part of the society and as it continues it brings an end to the nation. These people are generally under **Negative Volition** toward Bible Doctrine and God and are required to be judged by God as a result. They are Judged for rejecting the Lord and replacing him with Idol worship as a result of their Negative Volition. In the nation where society does not look favorably on the various forms of Idolatry and the people are not permitted to worship Idols but still have concepts of Idolatry in their minds this mental idolatry is equivalent to mental adultery while overt Idolatry is equivalent to overt adultery. When Idolatry has become rampant in a society, as it is in the United States of America today, this is the OVERT sign of **National Apostasy and Degeneracy**. In this Church Age in Client Nation United States of America believers have the same relationship with The Lord Jesus, The Christ, being Royal Family of God he being head of the church, as the Jews had at the time of the writing of the book of Jeremiah. Under the concept of marriage there is ONLY 1 Right Man for 1 Right Woman and in the spiritual realm The Lord Jesus, The Christ is the Right Man for both Israel in the Age of Israel and the church, the Royal Family of God, in this Church Age. This is the reason that any believer in the Church Age entering into idolatry is accepting a cheap substitute and is why Idolatry is always analogous to ADULTERY. The process of rejecting God and Bible Doctrine by believers is a gradual process first beginning mentally, then leading to overt rejection or neglect of Bible Doctrine and God, then going in for some form of Idol worship. The Result is that when believers reject Bible Doctrine or unbelievers reject the Gospel of Christ, by going after idols, they are going after NOTHINGNESS. Idols of all sorts and categories are NOTHING and EMPTINESS. (**Deut 32:21**)

All believers must choose from their free will volition either apostasy, degeneracy, idolatry and unfaithfulness to God or Grace and Spiritual Advance. When they have chosen to stand under idolatry, apostasy and unfaithfulness there are certain specific divine laws which apply to them. If they choose to step over to the other side under Grace there are very different laws which apply to them. The laws on the Grace side relate to blessing and happiness while the laws on the apostasy side relate to cursing and Divine Discipline. Believers who engage in consistent bible study with focus and concentration are on the Grace side and those who do not will end up on the Apostasy side. Believers on the apostasy side will always attempt to influence people on the Grace side to come over to apostasy and they are very often successful. However, this rarely works in reverse. Whatever side one chooses to live within determines which divine laws are applied to him from God. If he, as a believer, wants Divine Discipline he can choose it, if he wants blessing from God he can choose that also. Choosing the Grace side results in perfect happiness from the daily function under the **Grace Apparatus for Perception** and erection of the **Edification Complex of the Soul**. Choosing the Apostasy side brings totally misery in rejection of Bible Doctrine and acceptance of the functions of Idolatry, Apostasy, Degeneracy, both moral and immoral, or any other Sublimations. This results in perfect misery and

**SLAVERY TO THE DETAILS OF LIFE.** The question arises obviously, “What are the Details of Life” which will enslave this believer. To discover this simply read the Proverbs of Solomon and David and you will uncover the key to the Spiritual Life since these 2 great men came to the conclusion that EVERYTHING is EMPTINESS and EVERYTHING in life is a Detail except BIBLE DOCTRINE.

As a result of being under Negative Volition to Bible Doctrine believers do not enjoy any of the sublimation they choose to be involved in. When involved in things which are considered to comprise sublimation both the Negative Volition and Positive Volition believers will be stimulated by these things. However the people under Negative Volition to Bible Doctrine depend on this stimulation for happiness and it usually does not bring it and even when it does it does not last. Therefore, whatever the type of stimulation or sublimation when there is Negative Volition to Bible Doctrine it will not be enjoyable. The difference between a slave and a non-slave regarding details in life is the use of Negative Volition toward Bible Doctrine and Positive Volition toward the sublimation vs the opposite. When there is Positive Volition to Bible Doctrine the things considered to be sublimation will never ruin the life of the believer and he will not depend on these for happiness. There is a great difference between being enslaved or not to the things of sublimation in life and these things are usually completely innocuous things. The principle is that anything which conflicts with the teaching of the word of God, to which one succumbs, will inevitably destroy his life. These sublimation in life are not necessarily immoral or improper things of life but the things one enjoys which could cause him to be distracted from consistent Perception, Cognition, Incultation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine.

In the book of Ephesians it says that EMPTINESSES result from [Black out of the Soul](#) and [Scar Tissue of the Soul](#) as a result of consistent [Negative Volition toward Bible Doctrine](#). This describes the cause of the vacuum building up in the soul which results from falling into reversionism which then sucks in the false doctrines of demons derived from Evil and related to Idolatry. Idolatry is the overt manifestation of false doctrine in the souls of believers. ([Rom 1:21](#)) The problem with the people in the United States of America today is that they are and have been for some time consistently functioning under Negative Volition toward the truths of Bible Doctrine. When under Negative Volition toward the Bible Doctrine truths of the [Laws of Divine Establishment](#) and [Divine Institutions](#) or the Gospel of Christ or any of the myriad of principles of Bible Doctrine, these people WILL gravitate toward and pick up a cheap substitute in the doctrines of Demons, derived from Evil, the policy of Satan. The worst cheap substitute and a form of modern idolatry into which the believer can go “Whoring” is the ‘Tongues Movement’. This also includes a simple program of some kind such as “CHRISTIAN EDUCATION” in some form. It includes all the systems of getting people together as “Christians” in various organizations and programs which is simply like getting the YMCA into the church. The local church is designed SPECIFICALLY for the purpose of communication of Bible Doctrine and nothing else. All of these other things popular today in Christian circles are CHEAP substitutes and unfortunately there are very few churches in the United States of America today which stick strictly to the teaching of Bible Doctrine as their primary function. There is NO Substitute for Bible Doctrine and this nation has been in a state of Apostasy and



Degeneracy for MANY decades and the phony public relations [Human Viewpoint](#) techniques so prominent in Christianity today have nothing whatsoever to do with Christianity. Bible Doctrine is the only way to enter into [Occupation with the Person of The Lord Jesus, The Christ](#) which is Advanced Category I Love for GOD and that is the only way to completely avoid Idolatry. Faithfulness to The Lord depends on Bible Doctrine resident in the souls of both the Pastor Teacher who presents it and his congregation who are to receive it from him. It is essential for the local church to get Bible Doctrine out to as many believers as possible in whatever ways are possible because capacity to function under the Plan of God and to love God depends totally on Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the believer's Soul. The fact is that people go to idols because they reject Bible Doctrine. Rejection of Bible Doctrine results in Black out of the Soul and Scar Tissue of the Soul which is where Idolatry inevitably gets its start. Therefore, Idolatry is a manifestation that the believer has no interest in and does not care for Bible Doctrine. The tongues movement has nothing to do with Christianity and it is one of Satan's functions to distract people from Bible Doctrine. This is the same for all the sincere, bleeding heart liberal functions in and outside of local churches and all the one shot dedications to God. These are simply many various ways to get away from Bible Doctrine, line by line, verse by verse under the [ICE](#) principles of analyzing scripture and teaching Bible Doctrine. Idolatry is therefore called Spiritual Fornication. ([Jer 3:6-10](#), [Ez 16:23-43](#), [Ez 23:24-28](#), [Rev 17:1-5](#)) Therefore it is important to understand that in accepting a cheap substitute for the Lord believers accept the floozy of Idolatry which causes them to become EMPTY, NOTHING AND COMPLETELY WORTHLESS. This results in empty frustrated lives which lack basic or advanced Category I Love, as [Personal Love for God](#) or [Occupation with the Person of The Lord Jesus, The Christ](#).

The concept of teaching and appealing to the lascivious trends of the Old Sin Nature explains the trends of today and the phallic idolatry which is so prevalent today though not recognized as such. No one just JUMPS into the phallic idolatry. They come under the influence of one or more false teachers who are in [Emotional Revolt of the Soul](#) then the people enter into Emotional Revolt of the Soul and they respond first to the teaching of these false teachers and then go out and engaged in phallic idolatry as sublimation to relieve their frustrations, which it does not. When there is a whole generation of people who have become slaves to false teaching then God takes them with their soul slavery and puts them into bondage slavery since they do not understand nor are they fit to exercise freedom. This is another primary reason for the 5<sup>th</sup> cycle of Divine Discipline to completely remove a nation from history. It can take 2 or more generations for a people to enslave themselves to false teaching and engage in the apostasy and degeneracy associated with phallic idolatry. However, there is and always will be a COUNTER to the false doctrine and idolatrous functions toward which people are drawn and it comes in the form of the teaching of expository Bible Doctrine. The principle is that "You will know the Absolute Truth (3 categories) and the Absolute Truth will make you free". If, however, the people reject this truth they then put themselves into a slavery of the worst kind, Soul Slavery. When this occurs then in his Justice, God takes those in this soul slavery and literally drops them into Human Bondage slavery. For the Jews the first time they went from SOUL BONDAGE to HUMAN BONDAGE in 40 years 626 to 586 BC and they remained in human bondage for 70 years. This inevitably begins with Negative Volition toward Bible

Doctrine and God resulting in Emotional Revolt of the Soul leading to [Black out of the Soul](#).

When a person is a believer with Maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in all of the compartments of the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul then there is no way he can ever have any 'god' beyond The Lord Jesus, The Christ. God has proclaimed to man that "BEYOND ME there is nothing" and this is basic Grace and basic Freedom. There is no way to know this apart from the understanding of Bible Doctrine and accumulation of Metabolized Bible Doctrine into the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of one's Soul. Idolatry does not start by someone manufacturing an idol like a golden calf but it starts by having the calf in one's thinking initially in soul idolatry. In Israel during the exodus the Jews were willing to give up all their Jewels and gold, which God had enabled them to take from Egypt as a BLESSING to them, to be melted into a full sized golden calf and it took a LOT of gold to do this. Therefore they first had soul idolatry with free bodies and this is the same today with the vast majority of believers. Today especially most Christians are slaves in their soul to [Legalism](#), [Human Viewpoint](#), [Emotionalism](#), etc. Mental or soul idolatry or soul slavery is unfaithfulness in or rejection of Category I Love. It becomes very clear therefore that the 1<sup>st</sup> commandment is directly related to the Angelic Conflict as a prohibition of mental or soul slavery from mental or soul idolatry.

In the 2<sup>nd</sup> Commandment, OVERT Idolatry is prohibited. The prohibition is against making any idols which resembled any angel, bird, animal, fish or plant to worship. The ancient people who practiced idolatry always worshiped the female form as Venus, Aphrodite, Ishtar, Ashterah, Ashtarte, all of these were representative of a goddess of Love and Murder combined. The Thugees of India worshiped Cali and were the greatest crime syndicate in all of Human History. They worshiped Cali the goddess of Love and of Murder and they learned many very interesting ways to commit murder. Functioning under strong doctrinal principles the British broke up this syndicate. In the 2<sup>nd</sup> commandment a prohibition is against bowing and when the soul is in slavery the volition operates according to the pattern of slavery and in this pattern an idolater bows to something as a god he has carved or created himself or which some other human being has. The idiocy of this is the slavery formed from it. The soul is in slavery while the body is free but the enslaved soul is bowing to a god which has been manufactured by another human being. This is the typical disorientation to reality of soul slavery. Today, in our pseudo sophisticated society our idols are a bit more difficult to recognize, however, when a believer bows from his own volition he has enslaved himself. When the believer bows down the soul is enslaved while the body is free and the free body is made to be subservient to the enslaved soul. Therefore the soul inevitably enslaves the body just as is clearly demonstrated by the individual producing incredible Self Induced Misery from failing in the Plan of God. The Idol manufactured by someone is NOTHING and the body enslaved by the soul bows to NOTHING and thus becomes an enslaved body. A degenerate or soul enslaved people, like those in the United States today, always have some form of overt manifestation of their soul slavery as some form of idolatry. Believers cannot bow to idols and respond to God and this is why He is said to be a possessive God and this is again why idolatry is considered spiritual adultery.

Therefore, no one jumps into the middle of Idolatry they work into it gradually with a change or distortion of their mental attitude and then an engage in overt action. They manufacture Apostasy out of their Negative Volition toward Bible Doctrine and their [Reversionism](#). Out of apostasy they then manufacture some form of Idolatry to substitute something for the worship of God and The Lord Jesus, The Christ. Their unfaithfulness starts as a [Mental Attitude](#) and when any believer goes under Negative Volition toward Bible Doctrine they lose all capacity for life and therefore develop Black out of the Soul. This results in ERASURE of all Bible Doctrine they may have accumulated which leads to the production of Scar Tissue of the Soul leading to the creation of an information or knowledge vacuum in the soul into which NO TRUTH can ever enter, thus they do not ever think of God. With the development of the vacuum in the soul there begins the infiltration of the false doctrine of demons, the LIE of EVIL, the plan and policy of Satan, and with this an overt manifestation of IDOLATRY. Instead of thinking about the Lord believers then think about idols and when they are in trouble and have problems they ask their idols for help. When you ask help from NOTHING you get nothing when you try to love NOTHING you have only frustration.

The relationship between the thinking of idolatry and practicing it is a very fine line and having idolatry in the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul occurs long before it is overtly practiced. When a person consistently thinks a certain way they will eventually ACT on that thinking. The Tablet of the Right Lobe is specifically the Frame of Reference of the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul. ([Prov 3:3](#), [Prov 7:1-3](#)) When one thinks in certain ways his thoughts are written in his Frame of Reference and when he recalls those thoughts he brings them out into the conscious mind for action. The policy maker for an individual is therefore his Frame of Reference and Norms and Standards of the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of his Soul and this is where his life actually occurs. The vacuum caused by the Black out of the Soul as a result of consistent [Negative Volition toward Bible Doctrine](#) results in drawing the LIE of EVIL into the soul. Into this soul vacuum are drawn these Satanic LIES and false doctrine concepts and these are deposited into the Frame of Reference and Norms and Standards of the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul thereby modifying the content of the soul. They are then brought back for action when the LIES are recalled from memory and this is how idolatry begins in the believer's soul. This focus on EVIL thus results in [National Disintegration](#) when a maximum number of people write false concepts, the LIES from EVIL, onto the tablet of the Right Lobe of their Stream of Consciousness of the Soul. Then when they use these recalled LIES and false doctrine concepts to establish national policy these EVIL based policies begin the process of national disintegration. This is then:

- ✧ Operation Sublimation and drinking the 'wine' of sublimation.
- ✧ Emphasis on Parties and Social Life to the exclusion of Bible Doctrine.
- ✧ Emphasis on the details of life resulting in slavery to them.
- ✧ Emphasis on the greatest good for the greatest number.

If one is on top of or in control of the details of life he will have a great time in life but if he is under an emphasis on the details he will be enslaved to them. This is what occurs when people constantly try to engage in "keeping up with the Joneses".

The manner in which anyone gets into idolatry is the same manner in which people get into sublimation during holidays like Christmas. Initially the soul gets out of phase with Category I Love and the Soul and Body ultimately get out of phase with Category II Love. When the believer consistently says NO to Bible Doctrine he will keep on building up total unhappiness. When this occurs it results in sublimation since a substitute is needed for the lack of Bible Doctrine and any source is welcomed for stimulation in the production of presumed happiness. When substitutes are constantly picked up as in phallic idolatry (today there still are phallic cult functions but the overt idols have been dropped because this society is a bit more sophisticated). When 'NO' is persistently expressed toward God and Bible Doctrine from free will God will eventually say "OK go your own way, you have been building up misery and are not fun to be around and are making yourself constantly miserable so have at it". He will allow this to go on and on to the point of NO RETURN thus requiring the Sin Unto Death to be administered to the individual and when the client nation as a whole is in this situation, this is the cause for the national Sin Unto Death, the 5<sup>th</sup> cycle of Divine Discipline. Believers under negative volition toward God and Bible Doctrine move through a process of doing 3 things under Negative Volition:

- ✧ Disregard God
- ✧ Neglect God
- ✧ Forget God

This is what always causes the believer to trust in the LIES of the policy and plan of Satan. This vacuum set up in the soul from Negative Volition DEMANDS false doctrine, it DEMANDS something to fill the vacuum. True, accurate Bible Doctrine teaching breaks and smashes false doctrine in order to rebuild the believer. False teaching stimulates the soul but does not teach and does not rebuild the soul. Once the believer starts down the path of rejection of God there comes to him, like the illicit fornicator, committing the violence and rape of idolatry, Divine Discipline or the 5 cycles of Divine Discipline to the nation. Once a person chooses to mess around with pseudo lovers they start into the apostasy of phallic idolatry by picking their partners but once this goes on for a period of time they are forced to fornicate with partners they did not pick in RAPE. When a believer is consistent under Negative Volition over and over again there comes a point in time when they no longer can change this attitude and must be removed from life lest their attitude 'infect' the unbelievers in their periphery and prevent their salvation.

Idolatry is forbidden in the 1<sup>st</sup> and 2<sup>nd</sup> commandments of the Decalogue, ([Ex 20:3-4](#), [Ex 23:24](#), [Deut 4:28](#), [Deut 5:7](#), [Deut 6:14](#), [Deut 7:16](#), [Deut 8:19](#)) and in fact it was forbidden before idolatry existed. God knew that the Jews and in fact all believers would be unfaithful and warned them about it even before they became aware of it. Idolatry provides an excuse for promiscuity and produces fear and Psychosis. ([Ez 22:3-18](#), [Ez 23:37-49](#), [1Cor 6:9](#), [Jer 50:38](#)) When people are going in the wrong direction from what God has designed for man the result is psychosis therefore much of psychosis is the result of people who have walked away from some facet of the design of God. Idolatry is so very important to understand because when a believer leaves the one who provides freedom for him there is only left vanity which is Emptiness and Idols. Therefore, the believer cannot walk away from the one who provides freedom for him and have anything but worse slavery than he ever imagined he could have.

By choosing to be involved in any aspect of Idolatry the believer is choosing a slavery which is the greatest imaginable slavery because by their own free will they choose to be slaves to Idols. The nation involved in overt idolatry generally has a leader or system of government composed of a weak individual or group running the land providing susceptibility to the LIES of Evil on a national basis. The Lord Jesus, The Christ is the source of the perfect Grace of the Father. Without Christ there is nothing, therefore, Idols as substitutes for God and Christ are Nothing. Having turned away from the living word, The Lord Jesus, The Christ, there is NOTHING and when one has nothing he has only Idolatry. Idolatry like adultery always results in destruction or catastrophe. Adulterous fornication is physical or mental unfaithfulness in category II Love and idolatry is spiritual adultery where there is unfaithfulness in Category I love.

In turning from the Lord to idols the believer turns to something which is totally unable to benefit them and is not at all profitable for them and cannot bring any degree of happiness to them. There are many things which can bring some degree of happiness in life including materialistic accumulation, social life, romantic life but IF one does not have a Category I Love relationship in which he is faithful to the Lord these things, which might have some happiness, profit or blessing, will simply cause him to be MISERABLE. Whatever he may be reaching for in life instead of The Lord Jesus, The Christ DOES NOT PROFIT him in any way. Therefore, Idolatry is something which substitutes for developing Category I love and this brings with it a multiplying of unhappiness. The Lord Jesus, The Christ is so wonderful, perfect, stable, fantastic in his love for the believer that when the believer accepts a cheap substitute for the Lord, even the ANGELS are shocked. If angels are shocked over the unfaithfulness of the believer toward The Lord when involved in idolatry then maybe the believer should be shocked at himself. Angels can also have fear. If angels are shocked and aghast when observing idolatry then those involved individuals should be even more fearful at their infidelity toward Christ and their intimate relationship with a cheap substitute of idols of wood or stone under Satan's policy of EVIL.

Forsaking the Living God is in effect exchanging him for an imaginary god, actually a man made god hence Idolatry. Idolatry is, therefore, a life of cheap substitutions for God. The believer going negative to the Lord and Bible Doctrine is using the freedom which God has given him to enter into to the bondage of Idolatry. Idolatry in societies today is represented by and practiced by a focus on the Details of Life and the fantastic misery and self destruction which comes from making this one's focus in life. The entrance into the functions of Idolatry involve the use of personal volition to tear off the bands of protection from the Lord including the [Laws of Divine Establishment](#) and [Divine Institutions](#). This is what has occurred in the United States of America in the generations after World War II and is clearly seen in the anti authority attitudes of the 60s and 70s in our history but is definitively worse today in the revolutionary tendencies of the 21<sup>st</sup> century. While rejecting the Lord and Bible Doctrine and worshiping idols believers are consistently denying this protection in their minds. The attitude of the Lord toward Idolatry and his command with regard to idols and idolatry are found in [Ex 34:13-14](#).

Ritual without reality is mental adultery and the reality of Christian ritual is found in the



teaching of Bible Doctrine. Therefore, rejection of Bible Doctrine while accepting or adhering to the ritual results in the first stage of Idolatry, Mental Idolatry. Today, for many people, the holidays of Christianity are ritual alone. Lent when it comes up in the Roman church makes people feel better about themselves giving them a clean feeling because they change their behavior pattern for 40 days. It is the observance of religious ritual such as penance for sins which simply gives a psychologically assuaging to a guilt complex. Under these rituals the person is NOT cleansed for cleansing comes only from 2 sources, Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God and [Rebound Adjustment to the Justice of God](#). Believers today as in the time of Jeremiah reject Bible Doctrine and as a result have no capacity to love The Lord Jesus, The Christ and thereby are involved with many different forms of idols throughout their lifetime. At sometime in life each individual believer must use his own volition to acquire Bible Doctrine principles when and where he can. People who want Bible Doctrine will go through hell and high water to get it but those who give lip service to it are only using it to try to get something from God.

### **Substitution & Despondency in Idolatry**

The Lord Jesus, The Christ died on WOOD, the Cross, for our salvation but Wood in any form is no substitute for the person. When The Lord Jesus, The Christ was on the cross it was the PERSON on the cross who counted. When one takes the PERSON off of the cross he is therefore already involved with FALSE DOCTRINE. Then one fashions a cross out of wood or gold or silver or stone and WEARS IT AROUND HIS NECK and then worships a piece of wood called a CROSS, this is IDOLATRY and APOSTASY. NO CHUNK OF WOOD, METAL OR STONE WILL TAKE THE PLACE OF JESUS CHRIST THE GOD / MAN AND SAVIOR. Every person in an organization who wears a cross around his neck is false and apostate and he is just as much involved in idolatry, [Legalism](#) and religion as the northern kingdom of Israel was. Every now and then people in sorrow or self pity will sit in front of a window which allows light to come through the window and put the shadow of a cross on the wall and become ecstatic about this or entranced by it. One can drive along places and see signs in juxtaposition forming a cross or its shadow and often people stare in wonder at these. These people become emotionally stimulated by these shadows and in effect are fornicating with shadows. One cannot get comfort of any permanence from a shadow or juxtaposition of materials forming a cross. The shadow is NO Comfort at all and there are many shadows in life which people try to use but only The Lord Jesus, The Christ can satisfy. Thus for the believer in the Royal Family of God no shadow will ever take the place of Category I Love, Basic [Personal Love for God](#) and Advanced Personal Love for God, [Occupation with the Person of Christ](#).

Deriving comfort from wood (in essence fornicating with wood) or from a shadow is either [Self Pity](#) or self induced sublimation. Worship means love, does one love wood and stone, the material details of life in modern idolatry, or does one love The Lord Jesus, The Christ? It must be one or the other. If one loves The Lord he will respond to him through consistent Perception, Cognition, Inculcation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine, which is the THINKING of Christ ([1Cor 2:16](#)) accumulated by functioning under the [Grace Apparatus for Perception](#). With Bible Doctrine saturating the soul and building the [Edification Complex of the Soul](#), then he will also build from this Metabolized Bible Doctrine capacity for life and love. Category I

Love for God puts everything in its proper perspective but pseudo love and slavery to the details of life distorts everything in life and for this reason some will have wide emotional swings during holidays and inevitably engage in the sublimation of apostasy and idolatry and the Immoral Degeneracy of illicit fornication. They are under Negative Volition to God as a result of rejection of Bible Doctrine and Right Lobe malfunction.

No one negative toward The Lord Jesus, The Christ can get very far into idolatry or sublimation without becoming despondent. Despondency of those who have Negative Volition toward Bible Doctrine is a warning from the Lord to turn back to Bible Doctrine. Some of the reasons for despondency are physiological, some environmental but SOME are simply a warning signal from God saying to the believer "Turn around and come back to Me". After Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God there is only one kind of love which matters at all and that is the Category I Love of [Basic](#) and [Advanced](#) Personal Love for God. This love can only be achieved with persistent Perception, Cognition, Inculcation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine to the point of [Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God](#). Nothing for the Christian must EVER come before The Lord and *when anything or anyone does this is a form of Idolatry*. This is slavery to the DETAILS of life. The only way to avoid this trap is through the daily intake of Bible Doctrine. This is the concept of the thief caught in the act of stealing where the thief analogy brings home the objective recovery from idolatry which is spiritually adultery. Shame is the Mental Attitude of Idolaters caught talking to an idol of wood or stone because idols cannot provide help in time of trouble or disaster. Confusion is the Mental Attitude of the caught thief and also the idolater who depends on the idol for something when the idol is nothing and can give nothing. Disgrace is the Mental Attitude of the thief when apprehended and is also the life of the Idolatrous nation. Therefore, Idolatry connotes the disappointment and frustration which comes to idol worshipers as a result of the failure of the details of life to provide happiness.

Those involved in idolatry are never helped in disasters or catastrophes in life because there is nothing there to help them. In time of disaster the idols they worship cannot help them, they are NOTHING. They are totally without resources in their souls for dealing with disaster as a result of being the ones who rejected Bible Doctrine and therefore they have no excuse. NO SOUL RESOURCES in time of trouble, problems, heartache, disaster, catastrophe defines the Idolater so that frustration from idolatry brings shame and confusion to the individual and the nation as well. In the nation saturated with idolatry all the leaders or rulers and the people as well are totally without the soul resources of Bible Doctrine to deal with any type of problem or disaster in life. They will talk to a tree, a piece of wood, an IDOL of some sort even a piece of stone or metal as an idol and expect help in time of trouble. This is the United States of America Today and all believers functioning under Negative Volition try wood, stone and metal and when trouble comes they always cry out to the Lord again for help. The whole time they have been engaged in idolatry yet they think God, The Lord Jesus, The Christ, has been sleeping, neglecting them and ignoring them and their needs. These believers then DEMAND that the Lord himself SAVE them, deliver them RIGHT at that very MOMENT. There is never anyone more demanding than a believer in trouble who is lacking Bible Doctrine or who is in a disaster. There is no one who wants more of the Grace of God and knows less about the

Grace of God than this Negative Volition believer under pressure. Obviously then this Mental Attitude and expectation of deliverance by idols inevitably results in despondency in the individual.

Idols are impotent and the believer always has free will to love God under the daily function of the Grace Apparatus for Perception yet he chooses through his free will not to. This results from Negative Volition creating in the believer spiritual impotence. The disastrous foreign policy of the Jews in Judah, changing their foreign policy from depending on the Lord to depending on Egypt, is the result of Negative Volition to Bible Doctrine where the Jews involved in Phallic Idolatry turned to Egypt for security because they had no confidence in their idols ability to help them. They depended on Egypt for help and security on the outside while they depended on idols for help on the inside. What very often happens when a person is involved in idolatry and is let down by his idol, he keeps on going back again to other, different idols and NONE OF THEM ever satisfy. The apostate idolater cannot be satisfied as a result of his infidelity to The Lord Jesus, The Christ, therefore, he must fake it when he comes to the idolatrous rituals of his time. Any believer who talks about loving God or Jesus but does not consistently take in Bible Doctrine may fool the people around him but he never can fool God. As an application to LIFE remember that whatever legitimate grievances exist in life, NEITHER APOSTASY NOR IDOLATRY ARE EVER JUSTIFIED.

The Arrogance of [Reversionism](#) with Self Righteousness is creative and brings the person to the point of involvement in demonism. Evil becomes creative in the manufacture of idols whereby people can make contact with demons. In these situations Evil creates its own gods and the [Self Righteous Arrogant](#) reversionist therefore does this for himself, setting himself above the Essence of God, distorting the attributes of God into ridiculous images of human or animal power. Following this total lack of common sense, which has resulted from Maladjustment to the Justice of God, the arrogant man declares that the images he has created are gods. The false doctrine which man can manufacture from the influence of Evil on his Stream of Consciousness of the Soul has application to this as well. The fact that man can even think he can manufacture gods is the quintessence of arrogance and complete blaspheme. This Arrogance of reversionism always seeks to corrupt the incorruptible and the creativeness from Evil always seeks to destroy the thinking of others. The idea that creature power, no matter how great, can ever supersede creator power is arrogance as evidenced by the fall of Lucifer and his followers. ([Rom 1:23](#))

### **Modern Idolatry**

In the United States of America today for the most part there are not idols on the hill tops like the Jews, IN THEORY. In reality the same situation exists in the United States, where the Jews had BAAL siting over a furnace, Americans have Television sitting on floors, cell phones, ipads and computers which can access any and all media at any time. One must consider that in society today the FAST CROWDS are the IDOLS, which are always picking up a new crop of Girls to worship them. They had Astarte and we have pornography printed, videos, and today even LIVE STREAMING. The true failure of the believers in this nation is found in their constant NEGLECT of spending time in the Perception, Cognition, Inculcation and

Metabolization of Bible Doctrine. Unless a person is on his death bed and cannot move he should be in bible study class or listening to Bible Doctrine wherever he happens to be. As this extends and continues into the functions of Overt Idolatry with its physical and spiritual fornication and unfaithfulness the results is a people totally lacking NOBILITY. Degenerate people have no nobility nor any romanticism and as a result of this very few people will ever link up with their Right Man or Right Woman. One cannot remove the nobility of individuals through moral or immoral degeneracy and have anything left. “Auld Lang Zine” means remembering the people one has loved and having the nobility to do so. Not everyone is capable of this and as a result many are not capable of proper function in the communion ritual of the Lord’s Table in Christianity.

It is CLEARLY demonstrated in the younger generations today, far more extensively than it was in the 70’s and 80’s, that they totally lack integrity, nobility and romanticism. People in the United States used to have nobility of character and romanticism in the 30’s and 40’s and this was demonstrated by the music they enjoyed. The music as it came out of Africa enunciates this great difference in the people. The generation after World War II has lost much from its fathers generation but the generation of children from the children born after World War II have lost more and the generation of children’s children today has lost everything and are totally divorced from reality. Even in dancing Americans have long ago lost their nobility along with their culture and this is also blatantly demonstrated by a lack of patriotism and lack of discipline in schools and athletics. Today both music and dancing definitively reflects the insane gyrations of the people involved in narcotic induced trance like states and in phallic idolatry. The situation in the 70’s was tragic and that generation should have had to fight World War III but it was avoided most likely by the Positive Volition generated at the time by the teaching of these lessons by R. B. Thieme Jr. However, today, with the overwhelming lack of interest in Bible Doctrine the world is again on the very brink of World War III as a result of the biological warfare engagement by the Chinese release of the Wuhan Virus onto the world. The generation which was maturing in the 70s was mostly a GUTLESS generation and should have made all Americans ashamed but the generations after that are vastly worse and bring with them more than shame even TOTAL DISGUST with regard to their attitudes. The level of cowardice in this current generation is beyond imagination and this can be easily demonstrated by the people who lack biblical perspective from Metabolized Bible Doctrine. Even the Peace symbol used by the hippies of the 60s and 70s was a sign of being a traitor in the United States of America. If a person drinks VODKA, the Russian National Drink, they are a traitor and must if they support patriotism switch to English gin. It is a travesty what has happened to this nation and in 2019 America moved into the midst of a tyrannical display of government restrictions of individual movement and even business functions as a result of overreaching governmental restrictions because of the Wuhan CCP Virus. This is as a result of being totally saturated with the idolatry of occupation with the details of life above all else.

There is always some system available which is picked up immediately and around which sublimation is constructed. In Jeremiah’s day it was Phallic Idolatry with both physical and spiritual fornication and today it is the same thing but without the IDOLS and STATUES. There are many systems in place today from television to radio to internet with its social media

and government, media and “on line” sales tracking and advertising and manipulation of what can be found by media corporations controlling the internet searches all which put forward Satan’s Propaganda. Currently in the United States of America the country has begun the development and reliance on AI, Artificial Intelligence to determine better what the individual wants and needs. In essence there is a JUG of Sublimation for everyone and some people know how to handle their JUG because of Capacity from maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul but most do not.

### **Ritual vs Reality**

As in Judah so also today in Christianity believers put up a smoke screen for God trying to fake him out by going through all the rituals imaginable but under their smoke is the desire for involvement in Idolatry. Ritual, Emotionalism, Sublimation, etc., all do this without reality.

‣ Deceitfulness + Unfaithfulness == Treachery.

Today the groups who claim to be “speaking in tongues” is the worst thing that anyone can become involved in as a form of idolatry and apostasy. It is either psychological idiocy or demon possession. Anyone who claims to speak in tongues is either a Liar, a demon possessed person or a psychologically confused and mixed up person, because this function has no spiritual connotation of any kind. Speaking in tongues is a sign of strong apostasy and rejection of Bible Doctrine just as fornicating in phallic idolatry was a sign of **Negative Volition** toward Bible Doctrine.

This is the stage in any nation which anticipates the total self destruction of the people. They come under Negative Volition toward Bible Doctrine and lose capacity for loving God. This brings on the Black out of the Soul which creates a vacuum in the soul and results from the formation of Scar Tissue of the Soul. The Vacuum then draws in a NOTHING so that they worship a NOTHING. Idolatry is called the Devil’s Communion table because in the Communion ritual the purpose is to remember the Lord (**1Cor 10:19-21**), but when involved in idolatry these believers remember NOTHING, having the NOTHING LIE of idols and idolatry on their mind. In effect this is remembering EVIL and thus Satan.

### **Idolatry & Love**

A question one must answer for himself is, “Whom or What do you worship”? If a woman has a Right Man and he has initiated toward her then she can worship him but this requires capacity for love which she may or may not have. Many women fear being a responder to a man even though they were designed for it. Another question is “On what do you concentrate and think the most about, what in effect is your IDOL”. Anything one worships apart from God in Category I Love is apostasy and false worship. Any man whom a woman worships apart from her Right Man reflects her involvement in pseudo Love. An idol is nothing and when an idol is worshiped then nothing is worshiped and nothing loved. When one is in love with nothing then he gets nothing back. If one gets nothing from loving and concentrating on nothing a vacuum is created in the soul and this draws into it things to make him totally miserable. This is what has happened to the JEW and what has been happening to the people in the United States for many decades. God constantly provides a challenge to all believers to use their volition to do some thinking and concentration. Joshua said **“For me and my house**



**we will serve the Lord”**. This requires only one thing, maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul from consistent use of the [Grace Apparatus for Perception](#), Operation Z in the Perception, Cognition, Incultation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine. [Mental Attitude Arrogance](#) and its Sins which produce Self Induced Misery are always intensified in Category II Love and destroy the divine design of these relationships. Category II Love is designed for maximum happiness and love but in the practice of Idolatry it results in maximum misery for both.

A woman who finds her Right Man and then becomes involved in idolatry of one sort or another will still have her Right Man saturating her soul because he is the one God has made just for her. However, he will be surrounded by her many Mental Attitude Sins and as a result she will Hate him. The Right Man will always be in her soul but as a result of lacking the capacity for Loving him she surrounds him with Mental Attitude Sins resulting in a very strong HATE response all resulting from her unfaithfulness, her slavery to the details of life and becoming involved in Idolatry. This is what occurred for Jeremiah and his Right Woman where her hatred of Jeremiah was so great that she conspired to murder him.

### **Idolatry & Emotion**

Lacking doctrinal content in the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul is a result of one's entrance into the 8 stages of [Reversionism](#) with Negative Volition causing a Black out of the Soul and Scar Tissue of the Soul. This results in the Emotion beginning to dictate to the Mentality of the Right Lobe, which is supposed to dominate the soul with proper thought, and this apostasy results in Idolatry. This is the beginning of brittleness of soul where the emotion begins to overrun the soul and control it. This [Emotional Revolt](#) of the Soul is also the road to [Psychoses](#).

Self Mutilation is always Passion gone astray and it comes from emotion often combined with passion. There is nothing wrong with either passion or emotion if they are properly oriented, but when they go to self mutilation there is a definite problem. This was definitively OUTLAWED by the bible. ([Lev 19:28-29](#), [Deut 14:1-2](#)) Had the women in these passages been alive during the 5<sup>th</sup> cycle of Divine Discipline they would have followed the forbidden mourning customs of self mutilation. This self mutilation is the influence and infiltration of heathen customs into the funeral customs of the Jews where only the women engaged in this self mutilation. They would do this because of the disorientation and misuse of emotion as a result of involvement in Phallic Idolatry and this is an indictment of the women of that time. Idolatry always involves self mutilation along with illicit sex and this self mutilation had moved into the customs of the funeral for the Jewish people. The people of Judah were so involved in Apostasy that they had destroyed some of their very beautiful funeral customs by the use of these ridiculous hideous customs. With normal emotional functions the customs for funerals were good for the survivor of the deceased. They were often beautiful and were very good at bringing the survivor of the deceased back into the normal activities of life after losing a close loved one. Self mutilation is not normal nor biblical and is not part of the DOCTRINAL system but is an aberrant emotional function related to idolatry. Because of their involvement in and practice under phallic idolatry they had destroyed their stability and capacity to have normal

emotion. Not related to funeral customs a clear demonstration of the involvement of the people in America with Idolatry is the growing acceptance of the self mutilation of Transgender surgical transformation of males to females and females to males, with acceptance of this being driven into the thinking of the children today.

There is a capacity for emotion just like every other capacity in life and the people involved in systems or organizations like the “tongues movement” have lost all capacity and direction for their emotion and are totally out of line. Anyone who has capacity for love in Category II Love, intimate love, must have emotion involved. Love is mental but must have properly oriented and responding emotion and the emotion, as it was designed, appreciates these mental functions of the soul. A person must have ‘virginity’ of emotion to have great capacity for love. The person must not take their emotions and spread them out all over every idiot who comes into their periphery. This is where teen aged children start to get mixed up and think they need more dates, social activities and even sexual experiences rather than needing to go to bible class all the time. If one dissipates her emotions on a bunch of idiots she will never have discernment and will certainly be unhappy for the rest of her life. She will undoubtedly marry an idiot and be unhappy whether she remains married to him or not. Emotion has capacity to appreciate good things in life because or as a result of:

- ✧ Being able to respond to good music while others respond to bad music.
- ✧ Having good emotions which respond to the mentality of the soul while others have bad emotions which try to run the soul.
- ✧ Having capacity for life while others do not.

Capacity for life therefore involves proper orientation of the emotions of the soul but one is not born with properly oriented good emotions. Good emotions are developed along with capacity for life from Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul which establishes correct Norms and Standards and a stable Frame of Reference in the soul. Every facet of Bible Doctrine develops capacity for life in the mentality of the soul and also in the emotion of the soul. People with good emotions are never bored, never unstable, never lack discernment, never sublimate at parties or social gatherings. The person with good emotions may go to a party as a master of the details of life and have a wonderful time while other people may go simply to sublimate which results in their having a hangover in the soul. People in the ‘tongues movement’ always have disoriented, disorganized emotion patterns and are generally unstable individuals looking for a place to throw their instability and relieve their frustrations. The ‘tongues movement’ is a great example because of the number of people who are hooked into it. It is strictly a satanic distortion and a distraction to the Christian Way of Life and at best it is an emotional farce and at worst it is demon possession. In either case it is one of the most vicious apostasies derived from EVIL in the United States today. Those involved are sublimating and totally miserable in all aspects of their life and are restless, unstable, bored, mixed up people.

### **Idolatry & Freedom**

For the believer, Spiritual Freedom demands:

- ✧ That he follow the commands of God.

- ✧ That he fight against outside and inside foes.
- ✧ That he recognize the rights, privacy and property of others.
- ✧ That he adhere to the things specified in the Decalogue.
- ✧ That he avoid idolatry in any of its many forms and slavery to the details of life.
- ✧ That he avoid all conflicts between pleasures and Bible Doctrine studies.

God is the source of freedom, salvation, blessing and Grace and Freedom is essential for the resolution of the Angelic Conflict and to provide the opportunity to appreciate and enjoy the Grace of God and his blessings of Grace. Freedom is the basis of everything important in this life. Therefore, the Freedom provided by God for the Human Race must be protected. Freedom begins in the soul and idolatry is prohibited because it results in soul slavery. God can provide freedom for the bodies of people but he cannot free the souls because soul freedom revolves around the function of one's volition as a positive function toward [Absolute Truth](#). In this Church Age the ritual of the Eucharist or the communion service is designed to stimulate positive volitional function from the soul toward the truth of Bible Doctrine. Believers properly observing the communion table are more patriotic than anyone because they recognize that the Plan of God and God the Son's execution of that plan is the true basis for freedom and liberty.

“No other Gods” in the Decalogue indicates that there can be false gods in the minds of people in many different ways. False gods are always created by the soul when it is in slavery. False gods are the direct inevitable result of [Emotional Revolt of the Soul](#). When the soul revolts against what God has designed and the emotions wipe out the authority of the Right Lobe that soul is looking beyond God for something else. Unfortunately for these souls there is nothing beyond God and according to the book of Corinthians, Idols ARE nothing. If people go, in Emotional Revolt of the Soul, beyond God into nothing they must draw upon their own resources and false gods are a figment of the imagination as a result of Emotional Revolt of the Soul. Since the emotion has no knowledge, doctrine or character but is only an appreciator of things brought to it by the soul when initiated by the Mentality of the Right Lobe, anything originating from the emotion in revolt is FALSE. Once a person jumps into nothing (idolatry) he has placed himself into soul slavery. The idol is nothing and Satan himself tries to pick up on this nothing and do something with it for distraction of the believer and subversion of the Unbeliever. [1Cor 10:19-21](#) describes Satan's communion table which is Idolatry in any form and behind any idol is a demon or corps of demons waiting to engage in influence of the believer's soul or control of the unbeliever's soul by possession.

There cannot ever be true overt freedom without soul freedom to enable its appreciation. Without freedom of soul individuals will abuse freedom of body but when they possess freedom of soul they can then enjoy freedom of body. Therefore, when a person or group rejects God and engages in idolatry as both overt and soul idolatry then the 1<sup>st</sup> 2 commandments are violated, therefore FREEDOM is gone and is replaced by soul slavery. When idolatry in any form is prohibited it always involves and becomes the focal point of conspiracy to effect some aspect of CHANGE to enable idolatry. As a result of Negative Volition toward Bible Doctrine and the imminent Emotional Revolt of the Soul which brings on Black out of the Soul there is no capacity for any aspect of life and no enjoyment of the freedom and privacy of the royal

priesthood for the believer in this Church Age. Believers have double freedom in the Church Age, in the United States of America, where there still is some small freedom guaranteed by the American Constitution there is also the spiritual freedom of the Royal Family of God Royal Priesthood. This freedom also infers the privacy of the priesthood to live life as unto the Lord without coercion or interference in any way. When there is, as there is in the United States today, a mass stampede into phallic idolatry the concepts of “Live and Let Live” are destroyed. Therefore, systematically privacy and freedom are totally destroyed. Rejection of the Absolute Truth from Bible Doctrine results in a lack of capacity for freedom in the nation and lack of ability to respond to the Love of God by the believer.

### **Idolatry & Psychosis**

What causes a person to become so mentally distorted that they enter into some form of **Psychosis**? Phallic Idolatry begins with somewhat normal sex, even group sex or exhibitionistic sex but nevertheless close to normal. This however eventually leads to totally abnormal sexual practices which results in the one's involved becoming psychotic. This psychotic state is entered by rejection of Absolute Truth and allowing the emotion to control and dictate to the soul as a result of Emotional Revolt of the Soul, which is a totally abnormal situation. This abnormal condition in Judah resulted in human sacrifice which was designed to arouse the involved individuals for more intense sexual experience in totally abnormal people and in addition, supposedly, to placate the gods. This same effect is true of those involved in the “tongues movement” where the emotion dictates to the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul. In these cases the Emotion starts into wide swings so that capacity for life is lost and replaced by frustration. The emotion seeks to break through the frustration by various forms of sublimation, SEX for those in Phallic Idolatry, drugs or alcohol for those prone to addiction, and other forms of sublimation as well. When sex is used for sublimation to break the frustration of the emotion some stimulus must be added to the sex activities to prevent frustration there. The whole idolatry factor always includes Demon Possession, strong Demon Influence and in some cases Human Sacrifice all designed to enable the ecstatic functions in individual or group sex orgies. This inevitably leads to Psychosis.

### **Results of Idolatry**

When the believer has failed to complete construction of his **Edification Complex of the Soul** and he lives in a beautiful home with all the accouterments of life constantly surrounding him what is often brought into this home is APOSTASY as Idolatry. In Judah, where there were cases of rampant idolatry, God destroyed the palaces, homes and temple because the people in these were minus the Edification Complex of the Soul and under Negative Volition to Bible Doctrine and were positive toward Apostasy. The ultimate Destruction is not the pulling down of the walls of the buildings but occurs in the souls of those living in these structures or attending them.

The Backlash of Idolatry is that unfaithfulness in either Category I Love or Category II Love never brings happiness. The believer cannot be unfaithful to the Lord and be happy as a believer. One cannot be unfaithful to one's Right Man or Right Woman and be happy. Unfaithfulness ALWAYS **boomerangs**. In the Old Testament Scripture when believers became

involved in idolatry there were deadly consequences. The initial destruction of the worship in the Phallic Idolatry of Baal in the Northern Kingdom occurred because King Jahu entered into a treaty with the Rechabites, famous fighters of the ancient world and strong believers under strong Positive Volition to Bible Doctrine. Jahu was one of the MOST FAMOUS chariot drivers in history and when they came to Samaria they killed everyone who was loyal to Ahab and then deceived the people by telling them that though Ahab served Baal a little Jahu would serve him much more. They then went into the houses of Baal and isolated all the phallic idolaters and killed them all. *As a result of the policy of their king Jehonadab the Recabites from one generation to another always understood that one could choose either for Bible Doctrine and happiness OR the details of life and misery and engaging in sublimation only clouds the issues.* Jehonadab knew that to love God one must have Bible Doctrine and if he loves God based on Bible Doctrine he will have capacity for that love and for all aspects of life. Therefore, rejection of Bible Doctrine means lack of capacity for Category I Love. ([Pet 1:8](#)) The Recabites had this capacity and therefore they were truly GREAT in Category II Love and this was an important reason they did not want to be involved in Idolatry.

The common people who are apostate, idolatrous and involved in the phallic cult are all filled with the intoxication, inebriation and drunkenness of self inflicted misery. These people are trying to find happiness outside of the divine design where a person can look for substitutes but the only thing which will be found is frustration, misery and unhappiness. Idolatry will destroy people rather than deliver them. Collective idolatry results in mass destruction as a result of a complete lack of Category I Love capacity. The believer involved in idolatry puts himself into slavery. Inevitably, no one ever gets into slavery to the details of life without some other person ultimately taking the place which he wanted to have in life and only Bible Doctrine can head this off.

Rape in the Old Testament Scripture is often set as analogous to the 5<sup>th</sup> cycle of Divine Discipline on a nation where there then is literal rape of the women and the traumatic effects of the rape of the nation. The point is that ultimately the wages of fornication where volition is involved is to wind up in fornication where volition is NOT involved. In the case of Judah and the client nations of the Church Age, God will observe their unfaithfulness and idolatry for a very long time but this inevitably will be the ultimate cause of their destruction. When a nation goes down and out of history under the 5<sup>th</sup> cycle of Divine Discipline it is a HORRIBLE time but this always purges the nation of the national counsel of religious leaders which pervert the proper teaching of Bible Doctrine to the people. In Category I Love God makes love to the believer through Bible Doctrine and as he absorbs Bible Doctrine he receives God. God provides doctrine daily for any believer who expresses Positive Volition and he can either respond to it or NOT. There is NO Substitute for Bible Doctrine and all the emotionalism and human effort works systems will not take up the slack for a lack of Metabolized Bible Doctrine. Bible Doctrine is provided by God in order that while He is NOT visible or seen the believer can still love him. This is the greatest failure of Christianity today, which has been in a great state of apostasy for many DECADES. Christianity is saturated with sipping of the wine of Sublimation including the emotionalism of ‘Tongues movements’, licentious idolatry similar to the past, Christian education systems, church programs, ETC., all which fail to consistently



present accurate Bible Doctrine to the believers involved. Generally most Christians have outright rejected Bible Doctrine and therefore are NO Pleasure to God. The same thing which is demonstrated in the Old Testament Scripture passages regarding Judah and their failure occurs in Anathema Maranatha (**1Cor 16**) and IF the believer in the Royal Family of God chooses to reject Bible Doctrine he will live the most miserable life, though he will still be a believer. When the crisis inevitably comes to this United States of America those who are faithful in taking in Bible Doctrine will have the IRON of the soul from the Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of their Soul to survive the Crisis. Those who do not have the IRON of the soul but who have turned their back on Bible Doctrine and accepted the substitutes of sublimation in Sex, Drugs, Religious Idolatry and many other forms will inevitably be destroyed.

As a result of involvement in some form of idolatry there is in the 5<sup>th</sup> cycle of Divine Discipline where the Population to be Judged will be in 4 categories but there will still be survivors as those who have Positive Volition toward Bible Doctrine:

- ✧ Many will DIE from disease, (like the Chinese CCP Wuhan virus of 2019) and the diseases will include venereal disease, alcoholism, drug addiction, other various idolatrous function diseases, even psychoses from [Mental Attitude Arrogance](#). They will suffer excruciating pain from diseases and then die.
- ✧ Many will die in military disaster under military defeat as a result of failure of the nation to maintain properly prepared military systems. This will result in a fantastic slaughter of people and there will be NO ONE left to bury the dead. An unarmed population of civilians, are vulnerable to whichever invaders get there first and an unarmed people are people in slavery to the strong. In the United States of America today there is the FALSE propaganda of the liberal in citing “crime studies” and recommending the confiscation of firearms from the people to lower crime. An unarmed population cannot protect itself from crime nor from a tyrannical government nor can an unarmed nation protect itself from other invading groups or nations. It is vital that a nation be armed and that their military organizations be constantly kept up to date. When the military is to go into operation in war, any civilians who get in the way should be executed by firing squad and then the military continue to complete its job of wiping out the enemy wherever they may be as the “CHRISTIAN” thing to do according to Bible Doctrine. It is very often false teachers in organizations such as the national counsel of churches that condemn the military and cause their degradation. This is what occurs whenever a people start to decline with or without idolatry in place, and this is the United States of America today.
- ✧ Many will die in famine which is lack of food as a result of economic disaster or depression and they will die of starvation and from the destruction of the economic system of the land. This is economic disaster of any kind or the starvation of the people from being under siege. ([Lev 26:29](#), [Deut 28:49-57](#))
- ✧ SLAVERY will be the result for those who survive and are taken as slaves and they often die as slaves.

In addition there are 4 kinds of destroyers God will use to attack the bodies of those involved in idolatry. The idolaters will be killed by weapons during military encounters. They will be

left to lie where they died and carrion animals and birds will eat their flesh.

DEFENSELESS WOMEN will be defenseless because the carrion eaters of the vultures, dogs and wild animals are eating the flesh of their dead men. Invading armies will slaughter many men and leave the women defenseless and then the armies will move on the women involved in idolatry and then they will be involved in fornication against their volition. Though they have been engaged in the idolatry of illicit sex, over and over they still will not want this rape. The strongest of the women with the best health will, as a result of this constant rape, in a very short time become weaker. They will finally give up in their soul and die. In RAPE the soul becomes involved in sex whereas it was not involved in idolatrous fornication but in rape it is PUNISHMENT added to the sex. In these cases the torture of body is so very great but the torture of soul is even greater and they simply give up their life as a result of it. The Hebrew word for Corpse also means Idol and this is a PUN by God in scripture because when people start in idolatry they are already making themselves corpses. They become walking psychological corpses and they become literal corpses during the 5<sup>th</sup> cycle of Divine Discipline.

When there are a maximum number of people NOT functioning under the principles of God in the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions and with Right Man / Right Woman relationships there is universal fornication and degeneracy. The heritage provided for believers from Eternity Past is to be acquired as a result of the daily function under the [Grace Apparatus for Perception](#) which they reject for Idolatry. By the Grace of God believers in a client nations accumulate a great deal of wealth and details of life but when they are involved in idolatry they are already spending their wealth on idolatry. As result they lose their wealth and their systems of sublimation as well. At the time of the administration of the 5<sup>th</sup> cycle of Divine Discipline to the failing nation, this wealth would still be present but it would be lost as “SPOILS” to the conquering nations. There would be loss of wealth, and all material things along with the idols and all that the people have leaned on as a crutch.

The judgment of God on idolatry in the client nation results in the brittle jug of sublimation being smashed by the 5<sup>th</sup> cycle of Divine Discipline administered to the nation so involved. Under consistent [Negative Volition](#), believers will pass the point of no return in their rejection of Bible Doctrine then, therefore, as a result of becoming brittle in soul, they also must be smashed. Of their own free will they empty the Jug of Sublimation, of their own free will they therefore, under freedom, became Brittle Jugs themselves. They existed in freedom when they came to the point of being smashed and when they are smashed under the 5<sup>th</sup> cycle of Divine Discipline they cannot ever be used again. Like the people in America today, Judah had freedom and abused it and abuse of FREEDOM invariably destroys FREEDOM. Therefore like the valley of Topheth in Judah or a potters field of past times, this nation will ultimately be filled with broken shards of people which cannot ever be used again. Therefore, one of the basic reasons for the administration of the 5<sup>th</sup> cycle of Divine Discipline is Apostasy and rejection of Bible Doctrine, ([Jer 7:24-29](#), [Jer 13:10+11](#), [Jer 13:17](#), [Jer 15:5-6](#), [Jer 17:27](#), [Jer 35:13](#)) and another is the manifestation of this apostasy in Idolatry ([Jer 2:27-30](#), [Jer 3:9](#), [Jer 7:17-20](#), [Jer 13:10](#), [Jer 17:1-4](#))

## Recovery from Idolatry

An apostate believer, in order to recover, must start at the beginning with basic Bible Doctrine again and basic doctrinal principles in order to regrow into the Spiritual Life. The process involved in developing Black out of the Soul and Scar Tissue of the Soul in effect erases Bible Doctrine from the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul and to recover from this status, Bible Doctrine must be replaced in an orderly fashion to allow the application of advanced doctrines later in one's growth. The only hope for these believers is to get off the alcohol of sublimation and idolatry and get onto the nourishing milk of the word of God. The principle is that once one acquires something which is a perfect fit in the soul, he must STAY WITH IT, and avoid idolatry and its practices. From the Goblet of Idolatry every sip of wine is fornication, apostasy, Self Induced Misery and at the bottom is the 5<sup>th</sup> cycle of Divine Discipline for the nation or the Sin Unto Death for the individual. The Lord constantly "knocks" on the believer's door for recovery asking the failing believer to return to him. This is Grace provided for recovery. Recovery begins with the decision to use the Rebound Procedure which restores the Filling of God the Holy Spirit, a return to fellowship with God, but once under the Filling of God the Holy Spirit the believer must still choose to either:

- Return to the mountain for idolatry functions
- Leave the mountain and consistently go to bible study.

Recovery from apostasy or degeneracy is NEVER EASY but God has provided in Eternity Past a mechanism for recovery from these and idolatry. Recovery becomes a reality through attaining Category I Love where capacity for this is provided through the daily Perception, Cognition, Incultation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine. As the Grace Apparatus for Perception, Operation Z, functions daily in the believer's life, Scar Tissue of the Soul is removed from the Soul and thereby recovery begins. Once the believer begins recovery and is under the Filling of God the Holy Spirit there must be constant decisions to engage in Perception, Cognition, Incultation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine. Which way he decides determines whether he will ever have capacity for loving God. After the use of the Rebound Procedure there must be consistent Positive Volition toward Bible Doctrine so that under the Filling of God the Holy Spirit he can take in Bible Doctrine and begin to move toward Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God again. When it is read in scripture "Humble Yourselves" it is an urgent command to the believer as a result of time being very short prior to the administration of the 5<sup>th</sup> cycle of Divine Discipline for that nation. This is the Grace warning and Grace opportunity for recovery from the degeneracy of Idolatry. This is the Grace Option of Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God and a command to orient to Grace for the Unbeliever. For people who are locked into Negative Volition toward Bible Doctrine it is a command or appeal to change to Positive Volition toward Bible Doctrine. Without Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul circumstances will inevitably impose upon one misery and frustration causing gravitation toward sublimation and ultimate self destruction. Positive Volition toward Bible Doctrine is the ONLY way to achieve happiness in life and get out of the destruction of Idolatry.

Believers are constantly trying to whitewash their Old Sin Nature by deceiving God by giving him lip service in following ritual and attending Bible Study Class without concentration nor Positive Volition. This is totally deceitful to God. They leave bible study and return again to idolatry then come back again for the rituals and the bible study but WITHOUT REBOUND AND WITHOUT ANY ORIENTATION TO DOCTRINE. As a result, for any difficulties or problems in life, they have no solutions as a result of a lack of Bible Doctrine in the soul. In only giving lip service to God and the system set up by God it is like the black man trying to wash the black out of his skin and the leopard trying to wash the spots off his skin. The principle of reality is that ***NO ONE can ever play games with God EVER!*** The dumb person who tries to deceive others only gets dumber. Only Grace has found a way to wash black out of the skin of the Ethiopian and the spots off of the leopard.

The only solutions for the believer within his Spiritual Life and for man in history are found in the consistent Perception, Cognition, Incultation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine. For all believers the underlying principle is that from one's own free will volition he must respond to Grace and doctrine but, very often, he will not do it. Grace can solve the problems of idolatry, apostasy and degeneracy but the people will not turn to Grace and there is no system of Human Effort or Good Deeds which can take even one idolatrous spot from the leopard or one spec of idolatrous black from the negroid skin nor any one failure from the Old Sin Nature. When it comes to human solutions it is hopeless, as the (gr) Elative Conclusion says, "Human solutions are no solutions and Divine solutions are the ONLY Solutions".

When Nebuchadnezzar deposed Koniah and took him to Babylon as a prisoner all the divine laws came due for Judah at the same time and there was a fantastic saturation of Self Induced Misery. The accumulated practice of sublimation and phallic idolatry began to place maximum pressure on the people. At the same time there was such a fantastic accumulation of Self Induced Misery that it enhanced their antagonism and brought them back around to Jeremiah. This time of evil so shocked many of the population that they turned to Bible Doctrine after Koniah was removed. This is especially true of the young people who were eventually in the death march to Babylon. (**Ps 119**) It very often takes national and personal catastrophe before some people, individually or collectively, realize the value of Bible Doctrine and then it is almost too late for their recovery.

Return to the [Table of Contents](#)

### **Gate #83 – The Arrogance of Legalism**

Legalism is a "stumbling block" or "obstacle" to the Christian way of life because it is a distraction to the Christian way of life and the Perception, Cognition, Incultation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine. The functions of Legalism in judging, maligning and slandering other believers is putting an obstacle in their way and is the operation of **Self**

[Righteous Arrogance](#) and polarized Legalism. This judging is blasphemy, because it interferes with the disciplinary functions of God, and with understanding and using the [Problem Solving Devices](#) by the individual believer being judged. Such interference always brings judgment to the legalist ([Matt 7:1-3](#)) in the intensive form of Triple-compound Divine Discipline.

Man always wants to deal with man on the basis of Legalism, it is the nature of man to deal with man on this basis and is an obvious result of the function of the Old Sin Nature's Area of Strength producing Legalistic Self Righteousness. When someone is nice to another person they are nice back to them and when someone is not nice the other person is not nice back, this is Legalism. Generally speaking everyone treats people on the basis of whether or not they have earned or deserved their approval and universally they make all people earn the approbation they receive and this is both Legalistic Self Righteousness and [Egotistical Arrogance](#). Most of the people one likes or responds to in a pleasant way have EARNED this response by something they have Said or Done for him. This is where Christianity makes a GREAT change and where the Mature Christian's attitude toward people becomes relaxed. The Christian is to mind his own business and treat people as The Lord Jesus, The Christ would treat them rather than how he would generally treat them on the basis of function under the control of his Old Sin Nature. This is the reason King David, when given a choice of 3 disciplines chose the one which God administered directly rather than the 2 where man was involved in administering it.

Involvement in Self Righteous Arrogance results in interlocking with Legalism, the vanity of the unique experience with erroneous emphasis on human achievement. Legalism expressed through Self Righteous Arrogance includes:

- ✧ Salvation by Human Efforts, Achievement or “works”.
  - Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God is by faith alone in the Substitutionary Spiritual Death of The Lord Jesus, The Christ alone and nothing more or less else the unbeliever become entangled in Arrogance and not have salvation.
- ✧ Spirituality by Human Efforts or “works”.
  - Assuming greater levels of spirituality because of something the individual feels or does when spirituality is an absolute based on whether the believer is controlled in his soul by God the Holy Spirit or by the Old Sin Nature.
- ✧ Blessing from God based only on:
  - Human achievement
  - Self Sacrifice
  - Morality
  - Giving
  - Conforming to a church program
  - Participation in some ritual.

Self Righteous Arrogance is the motivation while Legalism is the function from that motivation for the believer in this level of Arrogance. Legalism is:

- ✧ The pomposity resulting from the energy of the flesh human works or efforts.
- ✧ The blaspheme of a Christian's human effort works being substituted for provisions from



the Grace of God.

- The insolence of replacing [Divine Assets](#) provided by God for the Spiritual Life with the conceit of pretensions from human abilities.

The irrationality of Legalism is the same as much of what is found in the [Arrogance of Morality](#). When Self Righteous Arrogance malfunctions and shocks the individual believer it results in a conceited conclusion that Bible Doctrine does not work and that the Plan of God has failed because the believer has himself failed. Therefore, Self Righteous Arrogance and Legalism interlock resulting in the conclusion that the Plan of God succeeds or fails on the basis of what the believer does rather than the truth that success in the Plan of God is ONLY and TOTALLY based on who and what God is and what he provides. Legalism establishes false standards and measures spiritual success based on compliance with these false standards just as the Jewish religious contention that salvation or spirituality is based on keeping the Mosaic Law, a concept which is refuted in both the book of Romans and Galatians. Legalism includes the superimposition of false standards on others and then judging them for non-compliance. Legalistic Arrogance is a system derived from EVIL resulting in bullying where one assumes he is totally right and others are always wrong. Legalism is why at least 80% of believers never reach Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and glorification of God.

The perfect illustration is the Old Sin Nature of an [Iconoclastic](#) Aggressor, who may have a trend toward Self Righteous Arrogance from Legalism, thinking that this is compatible with the idolized object of admiration while, in fact, it is not. The idolized one, who is the victim, may have a trend toward antinomianism, (lasciviousness) and when the Aggressor eventually sees the antithesis of trends as the [Feet of Clay](#) of his idol it causes resentment resulting in a conflict with his idol. It must be remembered that the Self Righteous Arrogance of the aggressor placed the idol on the pedestal in the first place because people involved in [Self Absorption](#) cannot admire another without putting them on a pedestal. The Aggressor, who is the Arrogant iconoclast, then reacts to the apparent failings of his idol and his Old Sin Nature polarizes and tries to build Doctrine on his experience and this is FALSE DOCTRINE and, ultimately, will destroy the soul of this believer. The Arrogant iconoclast never blames himself for destroying the Idol but blames the Idol, created by his own fantasizing in total irrationality, for its failure to measure up to his false standards. This is the origin of Legalism. This aggressor is extremely vulnerable to antagonism with anyone who does not fit their pattern of Legalism. This is exactly what happens to Legalistic theologians who are always self righteous. When the legalist sins they move toward the opposite trend of antinomianism and this causes resentment in their compatriots. This whole system of Legalism controls believers who are forced into a system where it is inferred that if one is not involved in the Interlocking System of Arrogance and Self Righteousness then he is not saved at all. Legalism is Arrogance which always builds up a system of values which are contradictory with the Word of God. Legalism and [Virtue](#) are totally mutually exclusive. Virtue has the power and ability to forgive whereas Legalism is only able to condemn based on false pseudo spiritual standards. It is inevitable that people who enter Christianity and bring with them their personal taboos will eventually admire someone who is part of the congregation who is also restrained by the same taboos but only until they see the feet of clay of that person and then they will try to destroy them. Legalistic people must [Justify](#) their actions and in that justification they move into the 2<sup>nd</sup>

Arrogance Skill entering [Self Deception](#) resulting in total Self Absorption which eventually destroys themselves. They enter into a system where they equate Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God with things besides Faith alone in The Lord Jesus, The Christ alone.

A plan is no stronger than its weakest link and there are NO WEAK LINKS in the Grace Plan of God BECAUSE Grace excludes all human merit, ability, good deeds, Legalism, self righteousness and ALL Arrogance. Legalism is the enemy of Grace and there is no place for Legalism in the Plan of God. All Legalism and Human Good are associated with Arrogance or [Pride](#) and Arrogance is also the great enemy of Grace. There are 4 areas in which Arrogance rejects Grace:

- ✧ The pride of the believer who rejects Eternal Security. To reject Eternal Security one has to be the most Arrogant person in existence and think his sins are greater than the Grace of [GOD](#).
- ✧ The Pride of the believer who succumbs to the pressures of his ADVERSITIES. This believer thinks his sufferings and adversities are greater than the Plan of God. ([2Cor 12:7](#))
- ✧ The Pride of the [Reversionist](#) who assumes his reversionism is greater than Super – Grace blessings from God. He assumes that the non-permanent pseudo blessings of Satan are greater than anything God can provide and until he is face to face with death he never gives Bible Doctrine a single thought.
- ✧ The Pride of pseudo spirituality where these believers think their energy of the flesh, human good deed efforts or works for spirituality are greater than the true function of God the Holy Spirit in their life and very often in Arrogance they become involved with the “tongues” movement, or with taboo-ism, or various other categories of Legalism.

Legalists are always unhappy and very often that is the reason they go to church because they hope going to church will make them happy. Pride often goes with Legalism and with pride goes its counterparts and NO ONE can ever have this [Mental Attitude Arrogance](#) without total misery in their life.

When prayer is used as a Problem Solving Device, that believer will try to control other believers through the coercion of their volition through prayer. Legalism causes fear as part of [Emotional Arrogance](#) and Self Righteous Arrogance and is always wrong and these believers are totally saturated with Arrogance and will never be teachable. There is no greater system of TYRANNY than that which Legalism imposes on Christianity. This is why all persons are to be given their privacy and especially why believers should be LEFT ALONE so as to be able to figure out the Christian Way of Life for themselves from Bible Doctrine which they individually metabolize. [Scar Tissue of the Soul](#) as stage 7 of Reversionism results from injury and damage to the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul which inevitably is derived from [Negative Volition](#) toward Bible Doctrine resulting eventually in [Black out of the Soul](#). There then develops a vacuum in the soul which sucks false doctrine, the LIES from Evil, into the soul and in turn stimulates the [Arrogance Skills](#) and causes the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul to be emptied of [Metabolized Bible Doctrine](#).

Role Model Arrogance is the function of the double standard of assigning customary, but impossible, standards to a role model and then reacting when the Role Model cannot live up to these standards and systematically destroying the Role Model. By the destruction of the Role Model the believer sets up a system of pseudo perfection in his own soul by thinking to himself “I could never do that”. Role Model Arrogance and Unrealistic Expectations combine to form the tragic flaw of Legalism which is "Self Absorption". The fragmented life of Legalism rejects the policies of God and enters into Mental Attitude Arrogance and Sin and just as the Spiritual Life is a system of thought the Arrogance Skills are also a system of thought which gives one the Power to Destroy another or oneself. Therefore Role Model Arrogance & Unrealistic Expectations have 3 results:

- ✧ “Eyes on Self”, Self Absorption with a double standard to justify self and rationalize one’s own sins and ignore the polarization of Arrogance which results on the one hand in Legalism and on the other Antinomianism. Eyes on self is very often Moral Degeneracy judging Immoral Degeneracy but can occur in reverse.
- ✧ Eyes on People, Self Justification which is a double standard used by Self Righteous Arrogance to express Vituperation and Vilification.
- ✧ Eyes on Things, Arrogant resentment of others who possess material things which one does not possess and because of this Arrogance he is quick to jump on any band wagon which promotes redistribution of wealth.

The fragmented believer with a trend toward Self-righteousness and Legalism enters into the sinful sphere of slander, gossip, maligning, judging, unrealistic expectation, and Role Model Arrogance. This Self Righteous Legalistic believer contends that one cannot commit the sins of lasciviousness and lawlessness and be a Christian,” Those believers and unbelievers with a trend toward lasciviousness and lawlessness react to the arrogance of Legalism and often renounce or reject Christianity and because of this reaction they associate Self-righteous Arrogance and Legalism with:

- ✧ Bible doctrine and they reject Bible doctrine.
- ✧ The local church, and therefore, they stop going to church.
- ✧ Christians in general, and avoid Christians in general.
- ✧ Hypocrisy, and become critical of polarized Legalism.

The reaction of Legalism to antinomianism results in the heresy of faith plus human effort works for salvation and spirituality by human effort works. This Legalism erroneously contends that believers who commit the sins of antinomianism and who perpetuate this fragmentation are really not saved in the first place because they didn’t add something to faith. The result of this polarized fragmentation of Legalism versus antinomianism means the failure of believers on both sides to execute Will, Plan and Purpose of God and therefore fail to Glorify God.

The first sin by a rational creature occurred infinitely long ago in Eternity Past before our human parents were even created. Lucifer the Son of the Morning was God's perfect Creation holding the highest position of any creature as the honor guard of The Lord Jesus the Christ himself. Isaiah tells us that his Arrogance was demonstrated when he proclaimed the 5 ‘I

Wills' culminating with "I will make myself like the Most High". He didn't use the word God in this proclamation because he was already in revolt against the Creator. When any believer reaches the point of cycling the Arrogance Skills in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul and condemning other believers who do not have the same legalist trends they do, they in effect say "I will make myself like the most high". ALL Believers do think differently! The real question is WHAT do they think and WHY do they think differently? They can very often be involved in the Arrogance Skills and try to use Prayer as a Problem Solving Device when it is not. When a believer is out of fellowship and in Legalism and is locked in Arrogance, God the Holy Spirit prays for that person with Groanings which cannot be uttered in order to give them a fighting chance to extricate themselves from the Legalism. Unfortunately their own personal prayers are basically ignored by God.

The Mosaic Law in part has a code of human freedom which belongs to both believer and unbeliever alike in Codex III and it includes all the things necessary for the function of a country and government, to provide freedom and not tyranny. The Mosaic Law had virtue if one didn't get into Arrogance, Legalism or Emotion. The Arrogance of Legalism results in wrongdoing which in some cases erroneously indicates that Faith in The Lord Jesus, The Christ results in Salvation BUT the believer has to abide by all the rules of the Mosaic Law. This Legalism results in confusion from false doctrine along with false concepts of the post salvation Spiritual Life especially for this Church Age. People who are involved in Legalism, Arrogance and Self Righteousness are always users. Legalism always means Arrogance and Arrogance + Legalism always results in 'wrongdoing'. These believers, after salvation, only know they must earn their way in the Spiritual Life through some system such as keeping the Mosaic Law or being strictly Moral for them to maintain Spirituality.

The Mosaic Law is NOT part of the Spiritual Life of the Church Age but it is designed for all humanity as a system of social order for both believers and unbelievers and was designed and provided by God to keep humanity from self destruction. Morality is NOT spirituality but is a system to preserve all humanity. However, Morality has a dark side which is Legalism and Self Righteous Arrogance both which are destructive to the Spiritual Life. Arrogant Morality when it involves Legalism can be wrongdoing and is one of the most destructive forces in the Spiritual Life and the only thing which is equally destructive to the Spiritual Life is entanglement in Arrogance or Emotional Antagonism. These all can lead to [Activism](#) and other distortions of the Spiritual Life.

### **Moral Degeneracy the Result of Legalism**

Degeneracy is defined as decline from standards considered normal, reversion from divine standards, sinking to a state below normal for the Protocol Plan of God and the Christian way of life. Religious Legalism unchecked results in Moral Degeneracy which expresses itself in the various sins and functions of both [Motivational Arrogance](#) and [Functional Arrogance](#). This results in the individual seeking to control and change others to conform to his pattern of Legalism. This Legalistic believer will use any process to cause others to conform to his Legalism and this results in some level of Functional Arrogance especially Christian Activism

which invariably includes the destruction of property, civil disobedience, violence, and even murder. Individually the legalist in moral degeneracy engages in some of the various sins of asceticism such as commitment of heresies, extreme self-denial, self-mortification, abstinence from normality, and abnormal austerity. Thus moral degeneracy substitutes human energy and power for the ability, energy and power of God the Holy Spirit in the life of the Christian. The only way any believer can fulfill and execute the Plan of God is by means of the Power given to him under the Filling of God the Holy Spirit and from the consistent Perception, Cognition, Inculcation and Metabolization of Bible doctrine. Moral degeneracy always functions by way of the Arrogance Skills and justifies Human Good, Sinful or Criminal action as a result of the strong influence of EVIL from functioning under the Cosmic Dynaspheres by distorting morality into a system for justifying tyranny from Evil.

Moral degeneracy follows the pattern of post-salvation Fragmentation involving Implosion, Explosion and Reversion. Moral degeneracy always confuses morality with spirituality. While morality is legitimate and necessary for the proper function of the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions, it is not only a part of the Christian way of life but a part of all human life. Moral degeneracy as a distortion combines morality with arrogance in the fragmented life, and contends that such modus operandi is spirituality. Therefore, the religious Legalistic believer never discovers that which is above morality, namely, Virtue and Grace. Moral degeneracy is the persistent involvement of the believer in the Interlocking System of Arrogance and his decline through the 8 stages of [Reversionism](#). The predominant characteristic of moral degeneracy is the tendency in Motivational Arrogance of the believer to judge others. This judgment by the Legalistic believer solves nothing and is only his own efforts in trying to convert the immorally degenerate believer into becoming morally degenerate believer. ([Rom 14:8-13](#))

Moral Degeneracy always receives the most awful judgment from God, because it is a slanderous, judging, maligning, gossiping type of sinning, accompanied by all the Motivational Arrogance sins. Therefore, if the believer has a trend toward Legalism, he will commit sins related to moral degeneracy, Motivational Arrogance, and the overt sins of Functional Arrogance. Moral Degeneracy always involves Self Righteous Arrogance and the fragmented believer. This Self Righteous Arrogance establishes both non-pertinent and false standards, and seeks to impose these standards on other believers as well as on unbelievers. This polarized Self Righteous Arrogance with its Religious Legalism seeks to Christianize a nation through Crusader Arrogance and Christian Activism. The desire is to pass “Christian” laws which by default makes all unbelievers criminals and thus destroy fundamental freedom. This sets aside the [Laws of Divine Establishment](#) and [Divine Institutions](#) and ignores the separation of church and state, and causes all unbelievers to be made subject to persecution or turned into criminals.



Return to the [Table of Contents](#)

### [Gate #84 – The Arrogance of Religion](#)

Religion is an antithetical system to Grace devised by Satan in which man by his own human good deeds, efforts and merit seeks to gain eternal salvation or the approbation of God. It is a Satanically inspired counterfeit to God's Grace of Christianity. Religion is the greatest part of the devils strategy to distract the individual from the Plan of God and Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God. It has been created by the devil to counterfeit the system for relationship with God. Religion therefore distracts the unbeliever from the Gospel of Christ and the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions provided by God for the salvation and protection of man. Religion distracts the believer from consistent Post Salvation Epistemological Rehabilitation by Perception, Cognition, Inculcation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine leading him into either Moral or Immoral Degeneracy and Antagonism toward God. One of Satan's greatest strategies is to convert Christianity into 'religion' in the eyes of the people. Christianity is NOT a religion but a relationship with God through or based on the Substitutionary Spiritual Death of The Lord Jesus, The Christ on the cross for all human sins. Religion is a means of using Arrogance to subvert others into the devil's system of conspiracies and religion is a primary means of Satan distracting believers from the Absolute Truth of Bible Doctrine and the reality of the true Christian Way of Life. Christianity is a GRACE relationship were the believer enters the Royal Family of God through the [Baptism of God the Holy Spirit](#) at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God obtained ONLY through faith alone in The Lord Jesus, The Christ alone. Religion is, by contrast, man seeking to gain the approbation of God through his own plans, works, systems or deeds. Many people have no talent but are full of good deeds and therefore are attracted to religion to give them purpose for producing these inherent good deeds. Religion as a principle represents and clearly demonstrates the incredible Evil of the genius of Satan and it has many counterfeits to the Grace Plan of God. These counterfeits of religion include:

- ↗ **False Gospel** ([2Cor 4:3-4](#))
- ↗ **False Ministers** called "clergy" ([2Cor 11:13-15](#))
  - These are often the sweetest wimpiest jackasses and often wear clerical garb and speak in soft dulcet tones about nothing because they know nothing, think nothing and say nothing and do it beautifully.
- ↗ **False Doctrines** ([2Tim 4:1-3](#))
- ↗ **False Communion** ([1Cor 10:19-21](#))
- ↗ **Pseudo Spirituality** ([Gal 3:2-23](#), [2Thes 2:8](#))
- ↗ **False Righteousness** ([Matt 19:16-28](#))
  - This is the [Self Righteousness](#) from the Interlocking System of Arrogance.
- ↗ **False Modus Vivendi** ([Matt 23:13-36](#))
  - Very often widows get into the situation where they are conned and robbed by religious types. All con artists get people to believe that their ideas are the only truth and these people always have a hidden area of great Arrogance. They never

appear to be Arrogant and always appear sincere and right but in fact are never right and always wrong.

↪ **False Power & Dynamics** ([2Thes 2:8-10](#))

- This is demonstrated by the “Holy Rollers”, “Tongues” movement who are Satan's own royal regiment and involve any believers who have ever claimed to speak in tongues.

↪ **False Gods** in the systems of Idolatry. ([2Thes 2:3-4](#))

↪ **False Teachers** of his policy and doctrines. ([Gal 4:17-18](#), [2Tim 3:5-7](#))

- They have phony hypocritical facades talking about brotherly love and world peace and disarmament, and use human public relations and [Legalistic](#) flirtations to court believers. They always appeal to human Arrogance ([2Cor 10:12](#)) and they promote [Idolatry](#) as part of the devils communion table. ([Hab 2:18-19](#)) In addition they promote Self Righteousness in both believers, who succumb to their system, and the unbeliever as well and this will continue throughout the Church Age but peak in the tribulation.

↪ **False Teaching**

- False teaching, in the presentation of Bible Doctrine or the Gospel of Christ, based on emotion and experience rather than the content of the word of God which is applying experience to Doctrine. This type of false teaching should never confuse the believer who has been persistent in the Perception, cognition, inculcation and metabolization of bible doctrine.

Arrogance is found in religion trying to change the world through [Activism](#) and rejecting the concept that the purpose of the Christian is to witness and bring people to [Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God](#) through faith alone in The Lord Jesus, The Christ alone. The Believer involved with religion in [Self Righteous Arrogance](#) has a moral facade to cover his Arrogance. Religion is THE MOST implacable EVIL related to mankind. Murder is both a SIN and a Crime related to Cosmic Dynasphere involvement and the rejection of the Laws of Divine Establishment and is very often manifest in the functions of religion. All religions and cultures of the ancient world used human sacrifice and murdered to gain the approbation of and to appease a false god and all totally rejected the principles of GRACE. Evil as the plan and policy of Satan to rule this world started at the fall of Adam and Religion is a major part of this to produce distraction to the truth of the Christian Way of Life. Religion is, in fact, a system designed by Satan to keep people away from making Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God. Arrogance and hypocrisy contradict accurate Bible Doctrine and these produce religious superficiality. Christianity is not by any stretch of the imagination a religion because it is God seeking man and finding him through his volitional acceptance of the Substitutionary Spiritual Death of The Lord Jesus, The Christ on the cross while religion is man trying to gain the approval of God through his own efforts and sacrifices. One of the greatest causes of inadequacy in the stress known as psychosis is religion. This nation is saturated with religion and religion is the worst thing for any nation and the success of the attacks of religion in any nation is a cause for divine national destruction.

Ritual without reality is demonstration of RELIGIOUS Arrogance, Self Righteousness and Works

Righteousness all guaranteed to place the unbeliever involved in the Lake of Fire forever. Religion is skimmed off from Christianity and distorted through Self Righteous Arrogance and used to distract people from the Plan of God and the believer from the Christian Way of Life. The religion which was the operation of Phallic Idolatry in the ancient world, has the same motivation as those who are involved in the Tongues Movement today and when unbelievers are involved in the tongues movement it inevitably involves demon possession. "Speaking in Tongues" is a fake and has ALL the ingredients of religion which are destructive. By attempting to equate man with God religion demonstrates [Scar Tissue of the Soul](#) which is Arrogance and rejection of divine authority and involves the ludicrous conclusions and self limitations of personal rationalism. To ascribe to God human characteristics is to not understand him at all. It is also Arrogance and ignorance of Bible Doctrine which assumes that man's works and actions can please God and bring blessing. Religion invariably involves the 4<sup>th</sup> stage of reversionism, [Emotional Revolt of the Soul](#) and Self Righteous Arrogance. Arrogance is demonstrated in religion when people ignore the basic principles of separation of church and state resulting in the destruction of the most important factor in life, FREEDOM. Worship directed toward Man is a distortion of [Rom 14:8-13](#) and total Arrogance and Stupidity and is Religion by definition. As a result of the influence of religion from the national council of churches and liberalism every liberal thinks he has the absolute panacea solution for the problems of the human condition. As a result a majority of the people of the United States of America have come to think of themselves in terms of a spiritual narcissism where they consider themselves to be the favorites of a PARTIAL God.

One of the greatest problems in interpretation of the New Testament Scripture is that pastors do not know the original languages especially the prepositions which are rarely properly understood. No one can be accurate in presenting a passage if they do not understand the original languages. The pastors who do not understand the original languages must depend on someone who does and often will not do so because of their personal Arrogance. This is often the underlying basic cause of Religious Arrogance, involving the teaching the bible from an emotional basis or erroneous interpretation resulting in false doctrine which can be and has been perpetuated over centuries in a [Denominational](#) setting.

In any system of Ecumenical Religion, the leadership always exalts itself, setting self above or over everything and everyone. At times this leadership itself becomes worshiped instead of the true God, The Lord Jesus, The Christ. In many cases the religious leader sets himself above God and takes the position that what he proclaims supersedes what is found in the Word of God. All so called Christian organizations have this process just as the Roman Catholic religion definitively does and the National Counsel of Churches. They set up systems of pseudo salvation and pseudo spirituality in order to maintain control over their members. In the National and World Counsel of Churches the underlying principle is one of pacifism. They espouse to be extremely opposed to war or military functions in any way and want to establish world peace and brotherhood, a concept contrary to what Jesus even said in his time on this earth. Then, in total hypocrisy, they turn around and take their members monies and provide arms and support for terrorists and revolutionaries throughout the world. The Interlocking System of Arrogance and Ecumenical Religion are mutually exclusive with the Protocol Plan of

God and the Spiritual Life of the Christian. Religion is hostile to Christ and in opposition to the entire Triune God and through many systems exalts itself over God. The fact is that religion opposes The Lord Jesus, The Christ and the protocol set up in his plan for the function of believers in time.

Ecumenical religion as the world system in the tribulation is an overt system of Satan Worship. However, once one gets involved in any religious system it is inevitable that he will become involved in worshipping some human being, again as a distortion of [Motivational Virtue](#), and NO human is worthy of worship. Nothing is worse for any human being than to be worshiped by other members of the Human Race. This means those worshipping are Arrogant having no capacity for LIFE, LOVE, HAPPINESS or BLESSING, and the one receiving the abnormal adulation is also Arrogant and has no capacity for LIFE, LOVE, HAPPINESS or BLESSING. More than the simple fact that some are worshipping another human being is that this has an adverse effect historically and is a great tragedy invariably resulting in historical disaster. Respect, love appreciation, friendship toward others are all acceptable but NEVER worship of human beings. The only thing which comes from a human being which could be involved with worship is the Bible Doctrine which comes from the accurate teaching by the Pastor Teacher but it is the principles and doctrine worshiped NOT the Pastor Teacher..

Maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul provides the principles of Absolute Truth for the believer who functions under consistent Positive Volition in the Protocol Plan of God. When people lack Truth they inevitably succumb to a fascination with POWER and develop a respect for power which invariably destroys their freedom. When one develops an abnormal attitude toward power it is because he has no concept of the principles of freedom derived from Category I TRUTH of the [Laws of Divine Establishment](#) and [Divine Institutions](#). As a result, it is inevitable that he will become irrational and move deeper into Arrogance with [Emotional Revolt of the Soul](#) in Reversionism and into [Psychopathic Arrogance](#) where there will be worship of a person. Therefore, people who worship another person do so from the Arrogance of their own soul. This strange form of Arrogance results when they find they cannot compete with the power of the person they worship and thus they succumb to it emotionally and worship him as part of the Modus Operandi of some form of religion. There is a huge difference between loving, admiring, being close to some and worshipping someone. This all links with RELIGION which makes it legitimate and a part of worship so that sooner or later, once idolatry or Satan worship in any form because of Demonism begins, it is inevitable that people look for a person with power to worship.

Religion, the worst thing to happen to the Human Race, and Satan Worship are both extremely destructive to people and brings CRIME out in the world beyond imagination. This occurs when the public attitude rejects Truth and will not engage in the necessary punishment to remove criminals from society permanently, Capital Punishment, and therefore, criminals feel no restraint. However, when crime becomes a part of a system of of worshipping a pseudo god and gaining pseudo Eternal Life under a false principle of satanic religion, then even capital punishment is NO restraint. This is islam and the ecumenical religion of the Tribulation which

will spawn the greatest period of violence in the history of mankind. (Rev 16) Religion is the consistent sponsor of War and Violence at all levels of society while preaching peace and brotherly love at any cost and under religion there is:

- No compassion
  - ▲ Normal people often have compassion on others no matter what stupid thing they do or say but under a religious system, such as islam or that in the tribulation, people will not feel compassion for others unless they have Metabolized Bible Doctrine in their Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
  - ▲ People depend on the kindness of others developed under the Laws of Divine Establishment with the concept of compassion for strangers and respect in keeping control over one's own expressions when one encounters STUPID ideas.
- No thoughtfulness
  - ▲ People can often be thoughtful of others because they are treated as individual persons under the Virtue of [Impersonal – Unconditional Love](#) and have capacity for life.
  - ▲ People are therefore not laughed at, ridiculed nor criticized because of their ideas nor persecuted because of those ideas.
- No Tolerance
  - ▲ People are not treated as individual persons but as achievers or failures, attractive or ugly, smart or dumb, etc.

As a result of the preoccupation with self which is derived from all aspects of [Motivational Arrogance](#) within the Interlocking System of Arrogance, as [Functional Arrogance](#) develops this moves people to the worship of power and those people who wield it. However, the one who worships power will NEVER appreciate freedom and his entire life is characterized by false motivation with ambition for more power and success and the desire for more approbation. Worshiping power brings strong desire for greater personal power. People who are greedy want money because money is to them power and people want success because this is power as well thus interlocking with [Inordinate Ambition & Competition Arrogance](#). The rulers of islam throughout its history have used this religion exclusively to control people in many nations. A few of these rulers of islam combined their Religion with Military power as the most irresistible force in history and almost conquered the world in the 6<sup>th</sup> century AD.

Religion always produces Zealots as a result of appealing to Arrogance and religious people in Arrogance are always zealous to KILL believers who function under the Absolute Truths from Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of their Soul. This is the NATURE of Religion which is based totally on EVIL and which is antithetical to Christianity which is based totally on GRACE as presented in the New Testament Scripture. Christianity is not dependent on anything a person can do and is not a religion but is a personal relationship with God based on faith in the Substitutionary Spiritual Death of The Lord Jesus, The Christ for all sin. Religion is man seeking the approbation of Man or God through is zealous Arrogant function. Therefore, Religion, as a principle, represents the Evil Genius of Satan to counterfeit the Plan of God and draw worship to himself and away from The Lord Jesus, The Christ.



Religion is a system of Organized Evil and is a great weapon in the hands of dictators for persecution. Most modern dictators do not use this weapon but islamic dictators use this principle constantly. The whole system of Organized Evil expressed in Religion is classically illustrated in 6<sup>th</sup> century AD with the rise of islam and all islamic nations have this fantastic system under Fanatics. Within the framework of Religion as Organized Evil there are counterfeits:

- ▲ Gods ([2Thes 2:3-4](#))
- ▲ Gospel ([2Cor 4:3-4](#))
- ▲ Ministers ([2Cor 11:13-14](#))
- ▲ Evangelists
- ▲ Doctrines ([2Tim 4:1](#))
- ▲ Communion Table ([1Cor 10:19-21](#) – Idolatry)
- ▲ Spirituality ([Gal 3:2-3](#))
- ▲ Righteousness ([Matt 19:16-28](#))
- ▲ Power ([2Thes 2:8-10](#))
- ▲ Modus Vivendi ([Matt 23:13-16](#))

Europe has a strong historical trend of a rise of dictatorships in those countries but they have little toleration of Disorganized NON-Systematic Evil as CRIME and a tendency to accept readily Organized Systematic Evil as RELIGION but this has generally NOT been so in the United States of America in the past. However, the United States of America has come under the strong influence of the EVIL in religion such as existentialism and [Denominationalism](#) and other philosophical religious concepts from European thinking which WILL lead to Organized Systematic Evil in this nation as well. Europe has been and will continue to be susceptible to Organized Systematic Evil which is founded in all religious systems. One of the GREATEST powers of Organized Systematic Evil is to combine the internal political power with religious power so that the control of this power is able to move throughout the entire world by means of Missionaries for Religion. It is by this means that through Religion spreads the influence of Organized Systematic Evil.

Self Righteous Arrogance seen among fundamental believers results in their becoming [Inflexible](#) because of interlocking with many areas of Motivational Arrogance in [Mental Attitude Arrogance](#) as a system of and from EVIL which is most common among believers. Self Righteous Arrogance very often takes some form of [Morality](#) minus [Virtue](#). However, Virtue First is the requirement of the Divine Dynasphere and VIRTUE can only exist within the Divine Dynasphere. Therefore, Morality minus Virtue is an expression of individual Arrogance. The most painful people to be around are the Inflexible Self Righteous believers who are some of Satan's greatest emissaries or evangelists.

Religion Penetrates into areas where it has NO LEGITIMATE AUTHORITY and extends its influence which is based on Evil where political power cannot penetrate:

- ▲ Governments of Nations where no separation of religion and state exists.
- ▲ Languages where it has no authority because it does not THINK or communicate in

that language.

- ▲ Citizens being driven in any nation to destroy their freedom of choice.

World Peace is one of the foremost motives of Religion as the satanic attempt to bring about the utopia of a pseudo millennium before and apart from The Lord Jesus the Christ. However, religion cannot bring peace to the world because it is the ultimate source of wars, historically, biblically and prophetically. ONLY an enlarged pivot of mature believers in Orthodox Christianity can provide any interlude of peace as occurred during the Antoine Caesars from 92 to 196 AD. In contrast religion, in its fight for the downtrodden lazy scum individuals of a society advocate civil disobedience. The worst thing for any Christian to become involved in is Social Action or Civil Disobedience. The Christian is to advance in the Spiritual Life through persistent Post Salvation Epistemological Rehabilitation by Perception, Cognition, Incultation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and beyond to enter the pivot so his nation will be blessed by association.

Return to the [Table of Contents](#)

### **Gate #85 – The Arrogance of Denominationalism**

The Evil involved with denominational religion is exemplified by the distorted translations and interpretations of many passages in the Bible. One such example is found in John Chapter 19 where the crucifixion of The Lord Jesus the Christ is being described in detail by the later Apostle John. The hill on which Christ was crucified was called “Golgotha” and the Hebrew term Golgotha is a transliteration from the Aramaic (ar) gulgulta both meaning skull. The Hill was said to or designated to look like a human skull. Over the centuries this landmark has been obliterated by the ravages of time and basically cannot be pinpointed although that is an inconsequential thing in any case. The problem in the text of **John 19:17** is that the original languages used here should have been “Translated” skull 2 times or it should have been transliterated 2 times but the translation and transliteration was mixed together which causes confusion and is a distortion of how the scripture was originally written. The 2 terms used for the hill of the crucifixion were (gr) Kranion and (heb) Golgotha and this would have been the proper transliteration with “skull” being the proper translation. However, the Latin word for “skull” is (lat) calvaria and as a result of the Roman Catholic distortions of the original text many now consider the hill of the crucifixion of Christ as “Calvary”. This occurred when the Pope of the time told Jerome to come up with a translation for this thus the Roman Catholic Church calls this hill Calvary. One reason it is a very bad thing for any protestant hymnal to have “Calvary” within its text because the Huguenots and Valdencians, who were a great Christian people in the past were persecuted and slaughtered by the thousands by the Roman Catholic Church because they would never use this Latin word for Golgotha found in the Vulgate. The concept is that when a man talks about “Calvary” he is under the influence of the Papacy and the Evil of denominational religion, but when he talks of Golgotha he is under the influence of the Word of God. The incredible fact is that in the original scripture there is not one single word of LATIN and the original bible is only written in Hebrew, Chaldean,

Greek, and Aramaic. Pontius Pilate wrote out the inscription for the headboard for the “cross” of Jesus large enough so that people could see and read it from the walls of Jerusalem during the crucifixion. However, he did not write it in Latin though he was as Roman as one could be by his training. This points to the fact that IF God were behind the Roman catholic church, or any religion of any kind, Pilate could have written the headboard in Latin ONLY!

The basic underlying factor in denominational religion is a total rejection of the mandate by the Word of God that all churches function autonomously in order to prevent Arrogance in any developed hierarchy of leadership. Religious Hierarchy Arrogance results in doctrinal distortion eventuating in false doctrine being taught with the addition of [Legalism](#) and tabooism as the basis for the teaching. Today there are 2 basic systems violating Freedom, privacy and property, both Religion and Government. However, there is restraint on these functions as a result of existence of a PIVOT of mature believers (no longer in the United States of America) and the CLIENT NATION functions under the ministry of God the Holy Spirit and The Lord Jesus, The Christ controlling Human History. The purpose for the laws and rules of God regarding the human race in history is to ensure that people have the opportunity to decide between the Grace Plan of God vs the Evil Plan of Satan and other various issues in life as part of the Angelic Conflict Appeal Trial.

People are stupid when it concerns keeping and protecting their own privacy. It has been considered a virtue by Evil for others to know one’s personal business and intrude on his privacy in every way. The major functionary in this area has been religion in the name of God, [Human Good](#) or some other false objective. Therefore, in the name of religion there is gross intrusion into the lives of people and destruction of their Freedom. Ecumenical religion in any form is totally antagonistic to Freedom. Ecumenical religion always has a nice FACADE of doing good for everyone and in many religions the Modus Operandi of public confession to a priest or allowing mixed religious marriage only after counseling by a minister or another couple under direction of the “priest”, is put forward as helping the believer to remain “good”. Ecumenical religion as the National and World Counsel of Churches comes and demands to know one’s income so they can properly assess your giving responsibility to the church, another intrusion on privacy and destruction of Freedom. There never has been nor ever will be a DENOMINATION of any kind, a group of churches gathered together for any reason, which does not in principle and for its very survival intrude on the privacy of the members and thereby become an attack on the Freedom which is the very basis for the resolution of the Appeal of the Angelic Conflict trial. Religion has always been the enemy of Freedom, whether Roman Catholic, Presbyterian, Greek Orthodox, Methodist, Southern Baptist, or any of the cult religions. They establish a set of standards revolving around [Self Righteous Arrogance](#) which are then imposed on the members by the church so that there is a compromise of their privacy and destruction of their right of self determination, which inevitably means loss of Freedom. The fact that churches band together in a religious group is, in itself, an attack on Freedom. When privacy is attacked this is an attack on Freedom, so that when private property is attacked, including possession of finances, it is an overall attack on Freedom. This is also demonstrated by Government who in the name of Self Righteousness or the “Greater Good for the GREATER Number”, also directly attacks Freedom, privacy and

personal property. This has been demonstrated in America by:

- ✧ Ralph Nader's and many other group's environmental efforts
- ✧ Having to reveal your income when running for public office
- ✧ Graduated Income Tax
- ✧ Registration of Firearms
- ✧ Mandatory Auto Insurance
- ✧ Mandatory Health Care
- ✧ Many other situations

The key to understanding Human History is understanding that God created man WITH Freedom to resolve a question of conflict between fallen angels and his Justice. One of the greatest issues in history has always been how much property one owns or how much money one makes but neither government nor religion has any right to do what they are doing now in interfering with these areas of life. With regard to religion there very often is a gross intrusion on privacy and from the standpoint of government this occurs to a greater extent today than ever before. In the United States of America having a Social Security Number and having information concerning one's personal life in any way entered into some computer somewhere is a total violation of privacy but the people constantly and willingly allow this to occur. The government has openly revealed that it and other private organizations are tracking the information from individual cell phones, email, internet usage, GPS data from vehicles, ETC., under the guise of doing good things for the people and protecting the nation from terrorism and crime. The Law Enforcement system has installed video cameras on every street corner to identify the owners of vehicles by the photograph of the license plate number. The reality is that if the government truly wanted to halt terrorism in the world and actually protect the United States from terrorism there would no longer be any habitable areas in the Arabic middle east. These governmental intrusions are total violations of privacy and Freedom and most law abiding citizens have their entire lives computerized in government centers today.

The Word of God in the New Testament Scripture with Church Age doctrine specifies that the local church will be autonomous which is equivalent politically in the United States of America to State's Rights. No local church is ever to hook up with another local church to form a common church government. The final authority in church function after the death of the apostles was to be the Pastor Teacher of that one local church. The design was such that there should be many local churches with different people in them under the authority of ONE single Pastor Teacher. These people are not denied fellowship on an individual basis with members of OTHER local churches but they are NEVER to bring them under one church government which would destroy self determination in the spiritual realm. This is exactly what has occurred in the American government system and was feared by the American founders with the insidious development of big federal government which causes this same amalgamation in the political or civil realm. This is a time of declining Freedom and escalating tyranny, but even with this escalation of tyranny the individual retains the right to Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God through Faith alone in The Lord Jesus, The Christ alone without persecution, for the time being in this nation. The individual also still has the right to refuse Christ and reject him as savior without retaliation from religion, church or government. Lack of this Freedom is the

underlying Evil demonstrated by the religion of islam which says that people must convert or die. Unfortunately, the Freedom in America today has been forced within definitive limitations, far greater than ever before in this nation's history. There needs to be, and has always been, a limitation on Freedom with regard to crime, which in fact is a violation of the Freedom of others, therefore this limitation is required in order to allow for coexistent Freedoms of groups in a nation.

American national Freedoms have been shrinking day in and day out but even with this there will always be the opportunity throughout the world for Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God through faith in Christ alone. However, even today in some areas of the world there is severe persecution and even execution when the expression of faith in Christ does exist. This is inevitable when one believes in Christ under conditions of maximum tyranny. Islam is an extreme example of denominational destruction of Freedom. There always has been maximum tyranny under the fanatical tenets of islam where there is no Freedom and never was and this pertains to a lesser extent to all religions. Islam has been a system of tyranny from its inception and is in effect a world domination ideology, similar in every way to communism, under the guise of a religion. In the United States of America the very distortion of Freedom through the infiltration of liberalism has caused the acceptance of islam even in this country and it is growing and is leading to the disintegration of much of the American system of life. Dealing with islam and being a missionary to moslem people is the most difficult thing in the world and many missionaries have been martyred as a result of trying to bring Christ to them. The fanaticism of islam is incredible and people who lived in Iran prior to World War II knew that there were certain "HOLY DAYS" when they were not safe anywhere so they had to lock themselves in their homes until those days passed. The fanaticism of these "HOLY DAYS" is analogous to the fanaticism of the Moros in the Philippines in WWI in their attempts to destroy American troops. The opposition of islam to Christianity and to Freedom in general has been more intensely manifest in certain historical periods. In the middle ages it was overwhelmingly manifest when islam almost conquered the world. In the United States of America the rise of liberalism gives islam the opportunity to be tolerated here although it, itself, will not tolerate anything. Liberalism used to mean toleration but instead it only tolerates the viper which eventually destroys Freedom. Many times in history religion and tyranny have been synonymous on LOCAL levels:

- Roman Catholics of Spain in persecuting the Jew.
- Roman Catholic persecution of the Huguenots in France.

Religion on an organized scale may appear sweet and tolerant in the beginning but as it grows it eventually becomes totally intolerant and tyrannical as is demonstrated by the national counsel of churches' attitudes toward fundamental Christianity.

Return to the [Table of Contents](#)

### **Gate #86 – The Arrogance Involving Dormant Faculties**

{Acknowledgment: Although the majority of the information in this entire book has been



extracted from notes I have personally taken on bible studies delivered by Pastor R. B. Thieme Jr., in this segment I collaborated with Pastor Robert K Lyon of Sapulpa OK, in the development of this segment of the Interlocking System of Arrogance.}

Dormant Faculty is a term used in the secular realm to describe hidden, unknown or undeveloped mental and physical abilities which are not being used but are capable of being activated.

- ✧ **DORMANT** is an adjective describing a state or status marked by a suspension of activity, temporarily devoid of external activity, being in abeyance, yet capable of being activated. Abeyance is a status or state or condition of being temporarily set aside, a state of inactivity or not being used. It is a suspension or cessation of a plan or action and with regard to thinking or mental activities or abilities; it can be considered a status quo of a lack of productive thought which results in being devoid of appropriate action to gain a desired objective.
- ✧ **FACULTY** is an acquired or innate, natural, special or inherent ability, capability or power to do or function such as found in the senses, any of the powers of the mind such as will, reason, or instinct, a natural aptitude.

When in a dormant state therefore whatever faculties are being considered are in effect suspended and inactive. Having suspended faculties reduces the thinking processes to instinct and limits or destroys capacity for increasing mental accumulation of pertinent information related to an objective. Dormant Faculties, in the view of secular humanity, are therefore considered to be human abilities both physical and mental which have been suppressed or forgotten and individuals who seek to rekindle these faculties do so in the hope of gaining some great mental or physical advancement. In part this is true but it also is a distortion of truth used by Satan and his Cosmic Dynasphere systems to recruit individuals into his plan to function under his system of Evil. In fact, activated dormant faculties are a [Reversion](#) of the individual from using the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul for thought and decision BEFORE action to allowing Old Sin Nature control of the soul and [Emotional Revolt of the Soul](#). When these are developed by an individual they open the door for satanic control of the individual's life by either intensive demonic influence based on EVIL or actual demonic possession and control of the individuals body and all of his abilities.

### **Development, Effects and Dangers of Dormant Faculties**

[Rom 7:18-25](#) explains the Carnal Death of the Believer or Cosmic Death resulting from Carnality which deals with three categories of failure:

- ✧ Post-salvation influence from Evil which results in
- ✧ Post-salvation sinning ([1John 1:6](#), [1John 1:8](#), [1John 1:10](#))
- ✧ Post-salvation human effort or [Human Good Production](#) outside the [Divine Dynasphere](#) of the Protocol Plan of God.

This carnal death of the believer may be classified in three ways:

- ✧ The temporal death of the believer
  - The believer out of fellowship with God

- ✧ The cosmic death of the believer
  - The believer involved in functioning under the Cosmic Dynaspheres of Evil, the Plan of Satan.
- ✧ The fragmented death of the believer
  - The believer involved in various aspects of degeneracy from involvement in the Interlocking System of Arrogance.

[1Cor 3:1](#) describes carnality by referring to the carnal believer as an [INFANT](#). Infant as a description of believers is a reference to a believer who has not advanced in the Spiritual Life from the point of his Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God or one who has ceased his advance in the Spiritual Life as a result of becoming a persistently carnal believer. Here the DORMANT FACULTIES of an infant human being are equated with the status of FACULTIES in a carnal believer. There is no spiritual momentum in the life of a carnal believer. The seven compartments of the consciousness are only partially active in an infant human being and this also applies to an infant believer or one who as a result of his persistent carnality reverts to infancy status. Therefore it is simple to see that the thinking faculties of an infant human being are either unused, or unable to be used or suppressed as:

- ✧ A DORMANT Frame of Reference – Nothing is written on it to distinguish reality from unreality.
- ✧ A DORMANT format Memory Center – Nothing of value is contained here to be recalled when needed.
- ✧ A DORMANT Vocabulary Storage area – No technical knowledge based on stored individual technical words with technical meaning designed to facilitate learning and understanding.
- ✧ A DORMANT Categorical Storage center – No accumulated knowledge arranged in groupings or categories for more ready access for application to problems for solutions.
- ✧ A DORMANT Conscience – A complete lack of reality oriented Norms and Standards upon which thought, decision and action is based where there is therefore inability to effectively distinguish good from bad, moral from immoral, spiritual from carnal.
- ✧ DORMANT Wisdom – Nothing has been learned, nothing can be recalled therefore nothing can be applied to life and situations or problems in life.

The unbeliever, who rejects the Lord Jesus, the Christ at the point of gospel hearing has isolated himself from the plan of God. He will go through life, either miserably or gloriously but after his life is ended he will eventually be called for the Great White Throne Judgment and inevitably be relegated to the Lake of Fire. This individual is living and functioning under the processes described in the [Equation of Despair](#). [1Cor 2:13-14](#) explains that spiritual information is presented by the communicator of bible doctrine to spiritual beings, individuals who have made Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God and now possess the [Filling of God the Holy Spirit](#), who teaches that doctrine to the regenerated Human Spirit in the believer in The Lord Jesus, The Christ. These things are foolishness to the unbeliever because he lacks the regenerated Human Spirit and cannot comprehend these spiritual concepts. They are additionally foolishness to the persistently carnal believer, in carnal death, because his soul is

under the control of the Old Sin Nature and because he has lost the Filling of God the Holy Spirit his Human Spirit cannot be taught Bible Doctrine putting him in the status of having Dormant Faculties. For the believer who has been constantly persistent in maintaining his carnality he is unable to understand spiritual data just like the infant human being is unable to understand complex technical subjects. Therefore this carnal believer, under the spiritual death resulting from constant residence and function in the [8 stages of reversionism](#), is like an infant human being having Dormant Faculties and absolutely NO ORIENTATION to the Plan of God.

The believer who has retrogressed into DORMANT FACULTIES has done so as a direct result of carnal, temporal, cosmic, or fragmented death and this is the function of the believer's own personal volition converting temptation from the Old Sin Nature into sinfulness. Decisions to engage in sin automatically place the believer inside the Cosmic Dynasphere systems of Satan, functioning under the Equation of Despair, therefore living in temporal death. Upon entrance into the Cosmic Dynaspheres and being under the control of the Old Sin Nature and involved in Emotional Revolt of the Soul this believer is completely entangled in, functioning in, the degeneracy of the Interlocking System of Arrogance and the apostasy of Reversionism. When the believer enters the Cosmic Dynaspheres as a result of his volition accepting temptation and engaging in sin, he is in the status of stalling or abeyance of his spiritual life. When he refuses to use the Rebound Procedure of [1John 1:9](#), he enters into function under the [3 Arrogance Skills](#) of self-justification, self-deception, and self-absorption. This inevitably results in interlocking with many various aspects of the systems of Arrogance. As [Negative Volition](#) persists in the believer as he continues under carnality without the function of rebound he develops a [Black Out of the Soul](#) where his Negative Volition begins to erase any bible doctrine he has accumulated in his soul. Lacking any Absolute Truth from doctrinal information to respond to, the Emotions Revolt in the soul and take over soul functions from the Mentality of the Right Lobe and provide stimulation for the believer in place of thinking. In this Emotional Revolt of the Soul the believer builds greater and greater [Scar Tissue of the Soul](#) which in fact prevents his accepting any spiritual information in the form of Bible Doctrine he may hear or be exposed to. This then LOCKS the believer into a pattern of rejection of Bible Doctrine under Locked In Negative Volition where he becomes incapable of learning or understanding any Absolute Truth and ONLY capable of accepting the LIES of Satan's Cosmic Dynasphere plan and policy, EVIL.

Dormant Faculty functions reach a zenith when the soul is completely devoid of all Absolute Truth, unable to accept truth, and has developed a vacuum which desperately needs to be filled. This vacuum sucks in ONLY LIES and false information known as Doctrines of Demons or the Plan and Policy of Satan, EVIL. This false information then is processed into the believer's frame of reference, his norms and standards, vocabulary center, memory center, and no truth is able to be absorbed. Thus, the believer's mind is in a state of having its Faculties in a Dormant Status Quo. In this status of mind everything related to the spiritual life and Plan of God become DORMANT, any previously learned Bible Doctrine is completely erased. ([Eph 4:17-18](#)) Therefore based on the use of one's personal volition one enters into Dormant Faculty status by either rejecting God and the Gospel of Christ therefore being unable to comprehend spiritual phenomenon OR rejecting Bible Doctrine as a believer and living

persistently in carnality. This puts the proper functions of the Soul into status quo of dormant or inactive and causes improper functions in the soul where Emotions dominate the soul in Emotional Revolt of the Soul so that the Old Sin Nature controls the soul resulting in its saturation with the degeneracy of the Interlocking System of Arrogance and / or the apostasy of Reversionism. Having Dormant Faculties a believer is unable to advance in the Spiritual Life and will never reach [Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God](#).

Placing one's soul into the status of Dormant Faculties results in opening up the vacuum of the soul for all aspects of EVIL which result, for the believer, in extreme influence and pressure from evil and for the unbeliever, as a result of his rejection of Absolute Truths, the potential for demon possession. The entire Interlocking System of Arrogance of Satan utilizes Dormant Faculty production to engage in complete control of the individual so involved. ([Prov 23:7](#)) Having set up Dormant Faculties the entire thinking of the individual is effected, whether he is a carnal believer or unbeliever, that person only considers their own human abilities as solutions to life's problems and adversities. King Saul sought to determine future events in War by attending a seance with the witch at Endor. Like Saul even today there are "spiritualists" serving under the doctrines of Satan. In so doing they actually believe in the horoscope to determine events in their lives. Or they pay for palm readings, or order prayer cloths touched by some idiotic personality who only has a huge materialism lust pattern. They attend motivational churches with female preachers in hope of acquiring some pseudo-happiness or explanation for the empty hole that is in their soul. The empty hole is the result of their own Negative Volition producing DORMANCY of their soul FACULTIES. Some put great stock in dreams and some claim to have visions like "heaven is real" reports, some claim to be directed personally by God, hearing God speak to them. One of the great deceptions of Dormant Faculties is a belief in extra sensory perception for providing insight into the thinking of others or future events, disembodied spirits, speaking with the dead, etc. Dormant Faculty development does not open a person to greater enlightenment but instead locks them into slavery under Satan's cunning and diabolical control of mankind.

These individuals, under the misconception of what dormant faculties actually are, seek to be able to determine future events by mental visions or some form of extra sensory perception (ESP) activities. They engage in what they consider touch or faith healing, out of body experiences, and many other supernatural functions. In reality this opening up of or relinquishing the soul's thinking apparatus does not bring in greater or more fantastic mental and physical abilities but in fact subjects the individual to soul and body slavery to strong demonic influence or demon possession. Satan is the sponsor of both the apostasy of Reversionism and the degeneracy which is a result of function in the Interlocking System of Arrogance. When a person rejects Absolute Truth in the form of the gospel of Christ as an unbeliever, the [Laws of Divine Establishment](#) and [Divine Institutions](#) as either believer or unbeliever and the whole realm of Bible Doctrine as a believer, they have used their Negative Volition in such a way as to enter into the 8 stages of reversionistic apostasy. As them move through these stages, they will be caused to revert to complete rejection of any Absolute Truth. This would include the truths of the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions and all truths of Bible Doctrine. For the believer in The Lord Jesus, The Christ in this status quo

of advanced reversionism he is now completely functioning under Demon Influence using the doctrines of demons, the EVIL of the policy of Satan, in his daily life AND CONVINCED THAT THIS IS REALITY AND TRUTH. For the non-believer in Christ this total saturation with EVIL principles eventually results in demon possession.

Attempting to activate “Dormant Faculties” provides a rapid entrance into all phases of the Cosmic Dynaspheres the Interlocking System of Arrogance and Interlocking System of Antagonistic Emotional Hatred, compatible with the trends of that person’s Old Sin Nature as a result of his soul being completely controlled by the Old Sin Nature and being dominated by his emotion in Emotional Revolt of the Soul. In these situations, where the body is brought under total control of the soul, the soul is then given to Satan by means of the satanic mass and it’s or other ceremonies. Persons can become disembodied spirits like what is taught in the false cult religion of Theosophy which recognizes the Adept and engages in “Healing” functions, out of body experiences, and many other pseudo “SPIRITUAL” things. The Theosophical Adept lays hands on the afflicted person to heal what ever is their illness. I had personally been to several of the meetings of the Theosophical Society in Illinois when I was studying for my professional degree many years ago in Chicago. I had heard stories there of how advanced healers had allegedly reached into the bodies of individuals to physically remove problems or dysfunctional anatomic parts. It is the ADEPTATION of theosophy in which there may be a disembodied spirit and the potential for and often the reality of demon possession unless the person involved has personally made [Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God](#). Adeptation is the sending of the soul into space to determine what others are doing or thinking. This also occurs in what is called ESP, Telepathy, Spiritism and Super-naturalism. In this unlawful function of what is called isolation of “Dormant Faculties” the key consideration is that it occurs completely by positive use of personal volition but the thing which is missing is AUTHORITY ORIENTATION. This is impossible when the Laws of Divine Establishment function properly or when there is consistent Perception, Cognition, Inculcation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine. Anything which orients a person to authority makes it impossible for this unlawful isolation of these supposed “dormant faculties” to occur. This also is what occurs in seances involving a demon possessed medium where the MIND of one person can take control of the minds of others. Mental telepathy, thought transference or mind reading are also related to this facet of Demon Possession. This is the mind of one person strongly influencing or hypnotizing another to such a degree so as to impart knowledge not previously known. This often begins with simple parlor game activities like using a ouigi board to determine what one should do. One factor which should be emphasized when considering the Interlocking System of Arrogance is that every entrance into that System is related to either *DEMON POSSESSION OR DEMON INFLUENCE WHEN THERE IS REJECTION OF AUTHORITY ALONG WITH REJECTION OF TRUTH AS OCCURS WITH THE BELIEVER OR UNBELIEVER*. Unlawful isolation of supposed “dormant facilities” very often results in individuals entering into abnormal sexual and / or criminal activities and the abnormal use and abuse of power. In many demonic cult religions it is still today related to and involved with phallic idolatry without the involvement of the traditional idols of ancient times.

This can involve passive submission to Demons accomplished through illicit Drugs such as LSD



or through other functions such as the Hindu Soma Mysteries of Sucha and Monti or the Ancient Lavid Vapors of the Oracle of Delphi. Any system of mesmerism including the Whirling Dervishes of the Sudan and in our time the unbeliever's participation in the Tongues Movement are also part of this pattern of function. Emotional Revolt of the Soul as part of the 8 stages of reversionism and Emotional Arrogance are ways that passive submission to demons begins. There must be some object of idolatry or system of "religion" in addition to this and it is still often related to human sacrifice under idolatry. Warnings against demonism and human sacrifice, which are totally prohibited in scripture, are found in [Lev 17:7](#), [Deut 22](#), [Deut 32:17](#), [Ps 96:5](#) and these include prohibitions of child sacrifice. ([Ps 106:37-39](#)) Demon possession was the basis for the administration of capital punishment ([Lev 20:27](#)) and this is the necessary assertion of authority for the control of demonism in any nation. The Lord Jesus, The Christ controlling human history restrains demonism and the greatest defense against demonism for anyone is Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God and the Absolute Truth of Bible Doctrine resident in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul. It is the residence of God the Holy Spirit indwelling the believer after Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God which prevents demon possession from occurring. It is the believer possessing an accumulation of Maximum levels of Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul which is insulation for him against demon obsession and influence. Demons are powerless to change the course of Human History ([Is 19:3](#)) but can have a great influence on both the believer and unbeliever individually and collectively as part of Satan's attempts to win the Angelic Conflict.

Therefore in essence the exploration and activation of "Dormant Faculties" in the individual is a result of his using his own volition to reject truth, accept the satanic LIES of EVIL, and willingly come under demon influence or demon possession and is NOT a means of ascending to a higher plane of existence or reaching a state of mental superiority over others. It is however a mechanism for both the believer and unbeliever to put himself into SOUL SLAVERY under satan's plan and policy and for the unbeliever to potentially be subject to body slavery under demon possession. For the believer this WILL result in the inevitable extreme Divine Discipline of the administration of the Sin Unto Death. For the unbeliever his life will be one of total confusion, complete lack of orientation to reality and unimaginable misery.

### **The Grace of God vs Dormant Faculties**

There are three Grace provisions for mankind of Absolute Truth.

- ✧ The Laws of Divine Establishment and The Divine Institutions
- ✧ The Gospel of Christ
- ✧ The entire realm of Absolute Truth found in the Bible Doctrines of Scripture

When these are rejected by man several things result:

- ✧ Warning, Intensive and Dying Discipline for the individual
- ✧ 5 cycles of Divine Discipline for a national entity especially the Client Nation

Entrance into the eight stages of the apostasy of [Reversionism](#) or the degeneracy of the Interlocking System of Arrogance, whether as an individual person or collectively in a National Entity, results from a saturation of the people with active Dormant Faculties from rejection of

Truth. For an entire society then, saturation with Dormant Faculties sustains a condition in the general population where the [Laws of Divine Establishment](#) and the [Divine Institutions](#) cannot be understood and applied as truth resulting in the required administration of all 5 of the cycles of Divine Discipline for the nation. ([Hos 4](#)) When a person or group as in a nation functions based only on dormant faculties there is no recognition of the real problem, therefore there is no seeking the real solution the Divine Solution. Therefore, the retrogressing of the individual to the use of Dormant Faculties causes the reality of degeneracy and apostasy to go unrecognized. The problem for the believer is that in the process of reestablishing dormant faculties all compiled Bible Doctrine is erased from the right lobe of the stream of consciousness. For the unbelievers in the client nation it is the understanding and dependence on the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions which is eliminated. Under Dormant Faculty functions both groups no longer can believe Absolute Truth because they cannot assimilate truth any longer. Dormant Faculties accept and inculcate ONLY false doctrine and false dogma of EVIL under the plan of Satan. Both cosmic believers and unbelievers therefore operate under demon influence, with some unbelievers subject to demon possession, where both are under demon obsession. In addition their reality becomes a system of complete deception and LIES directly from the EVIL of the policies of Satan. The attempts at development of pseudo or false Dormant Faculties provides an accelerated advance into the Interlocking System of Arrogance and 8 stages of Reversionism. For the believer all spiritual advance is halted, all Metabolized Bible Doctrine is erased from the soul and this leaves only Emotion with Old Sin Nature control as the alternative to a life of Wisdom provided by Bible Doctrine under the Grace Plan of God. Under the influence of revived Dormant Faculties a believer will conclude that everything they once learned and believed regarding the Absolute Truths of God's Grace plan was nothing but another system of human thought and therefore a myth. In short attempts at activation of presumed false or pseudo dormant faculties can lead the believer into such blindness of soul that Satan wins the victory over the ignorant believer and holds him in the grip of his power under the Cosmic Dynaspheres.

There is reference made to Demons in [Matt 8:31](#); [Mark 5:12](#); [Rev 16:14](#). The original Greek words here almost always refer to a disembodied spirit or refer to a specific category of demons determined by the context as in, [Matt 7:22](#), [Matt 9:33-4](#), [Matt 12:24-8](#); [Mark 1:34](#), [Mark 1:39](#), [Mark 7:26-30](#); [Luke 4:33-35](#), [Luke 4:41](#), [Luke 8:27-35](#), [Luke 11:14-20](#); [John 8:48-52](#); [1Cor 10:20-21](#). Another Greek word used in [Matt 8:16](#), [Matt 8:28](#), [Matt 8:33](#); [Mark 5](#); [Matt 15:22](#) means to be demon possessed or to be tormented by a demon, or to be influenced by a demon. There is a distinct difference between Demon Possession and Demon Influence. Demon possession is defined as demon invasion of the physical body which can occur for the unbeliever only. Generally, this occurs through involvement in some form of idolatry such as phallic idolatry or some form of pseudo contrived religion. In contrast, demon influence is the demon invasion of the soul with the EVIL concepts of Satanic thought. Satanic thought generally is not expressed in terms of things considered bad or sinful or destructive, but in terms of improving this world, doing nice things for mankind and supporting bleeding heart do good crusades. It is the false thinking comprising the policy and principles of EVIL by which Satan operates. Demon influence is not possible unless the believer enters into, by use of his own personal volition, the Cosmic Dynasphere systems of Satan and proceeds to return to

functions under his Dormant Faculties under which the he becomes “isolated” from reality and the Grace plan of God. This influence is initiated by rejection of scripture, bible doctrine, and often involves the use of illicit drugs to alter mental perceptions of reality. In all cases, all demonic activity requires human free will consent. This human consent for demon possession may only involve some bad decision which has been made, so that the demon can invade the body of the unbeliever, but only the unbeliever. The unbeliever can invite demon possession by decisions that can include involvement in:

- ✧ Idolatry ([1Cor 10:19-21](#))
- ✧ Drug addiction ([Gal 5:20](#))
- ✧ Religious reversionistic sensitivity, dabbling in the occult, consulting mediums, the function of necromancy ([Is 8:19](#))
- ✧ Idolatry such as phallic cult activity ([Is 2:6](#), [Luke 8:2](#))
  - Demonic orgiastic response, auto-eroticism, lesbianism, homosexuality, verbal response demons, promiscuity demons, group orgies, human sacrifice, and unrestrained sexual lust

The believer cannot be possessed by demons because of the protection given him from the indwelling of the Godhead and the imputed Righteousness of God provided at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God. Since the believer cannot be directly controlled by demons the only remaining attack to which the believer is susceptible is to line him up with Satan's policy and plan by accepting a strong influence from EVIL. In the religions of man demon possessed people can become disembodied because the body is turned over to Satan by invitation. Such a person begins to participate in the idea and unseen incident of sending the soul into space to determine what others are doing which in fact may be simply 2 demons communicating about different spacial occurrences, one indwelling the body of the person receiving the information from the other. Demon possession can occur for an unbeliever during seances where the participant thinks he is communicating with the dead departed soul of someone when in fact the medium is possessed by an engostromuthos demon speaking through the medium. Astrology is another area of demon influence and or possession.

There is nullification of the potential for demon influence, possession or obsession found in [Authority Orientation](#) especially [Bible Doctrine Orientation](#), and for the unbeliever the orientation to the Laws of Divine Establishment, the Divine Institutions, and most importantly the Grace of God. Anything which orients one to authority makes it impossible for the system of control by Satan to work. Socialism, as part of the Evil plan of Satan, could never have gained a foothold in the United States, nor destroy objectivity in Court decisions, nor destroy the Police and Law Enforcement, nor the military, nor the sovereignty and freedom of this Nation, if there had been strong authority orientation, adhered to by the majority of citizens and taught to subsequent generations. The Laws of divine establishment and the four divine institutions can not be destroyed if authority orientation is the predominant thinking pattern. Authority is therefore necessary to restrain demonism. But today Christians and unbelievers both have a different thought pattern which encourages demon influence and is the inevitable result of having returned to the status of Dormant Faculties in their souls.

Under demon influence, obsession or possession the mind of one person can both influence or hypnotize or mesmerize another person or large group of persons to such a degree so as to impart knowledge not previously known. This may be the coordinated function of many demons over the entire group. This is clearly demonstrated by the activities of faith healers, the emotional charismatic and tongues movements, the mesmerizing motivational speeches of women in drawing huge crowds of mental cripples, or the sweeping propagandizing of millions of people with the dogmas of socialism, Marxism and communism.

### **Results of Dormant Faculty Development**

For King Saul the involvement in the practice of necromancy was the cause of his personal judgment and administration of the Sin Unto Death as an end to his life. ([1Chron 10:13-14](#), [2Kings 21:2-3](#)) In addition there is the story of Balaam and his involvement with Balak king of the Moabites and their attempts to curse the Jews of the Exodus. ([Num 21-31](#))

In the time of the exodus of the Jews in the 40<sup>th</sup> year after leaving Egypt when the Jews were about to come to the Jordan river and then cross into the land promised them by God, an incident occurred which they were completely unaware of. Balak the King of Moab had been defeated by the Amorites who took possession of the Plains of Moab. The Jews in moving toward their entry point in the land defeated the Amorites and encamped on the Plains of Moab. This caused Balak to become terribly frightened that Moab would be NEXT on their conquest list. He understood Spiritual Power and knew that the Jews had some level of spiritual power which others did not and that to defeat them he would have to use an opposing spiritual power. Considering that the Jews had the spiritual power from the GRACE Plan of God Balak decided to pursue using the spiritual power of EVIL and sought one Balaam, a well known wizard in his time, to curse the Jews so he could defeat them. Ancient manuscripts discovered in the 20<sup>th</sup> century describe Balaam as a Hittite and it was well known that the Hittites were ardent practitioners of demonism. It is through Balaam which a better understanding of Dormant Faculties can be derived.

As this story of Balam unfolds it becomes more clear that this reflects an ongoing tragic story and that it is very true even today, in that if Satan wants to get a special job accomplished he uses believers to do it. All the believer has to do is have ignorance of Bible Doctrine from rejection or neglect of Bible Doctrine. This puts him under the [8 stages of reversionism](#) and living on his emotions under Emotional Revolt of the Soul with emotions through the Old Sin Nature controlling the soul. Invariably his Negative Volition to Bible Doctrine inserts him also into Cosmic Dynasphere #1 the Interlocking System of Arrogance where he is susceptible to complete control by Satan. 1<sup>st</sup> Timothy chapter 4 describes EVIL as The Doctrine of Demons, by which believers and unbelievers are controlled by the policy and plan of Satan. The absence of Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul opens up the Soul for the influence by this demonic doctrinal system. Therefore in entering reversionism through [Negative Volition toward Bible Doctrine](#) and progressing through

the stages of reversionism a Black Out of the Soul is built up as Negative Volition persists and Emotional Revolt of the Soul occurs literally ERASING any and eventually all previously metabolized Bible Doctrine from the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul. This is true for believers concerning the entire realm of Bible Doctrine and for the unbelievers concerning the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions. In addition then the build up of Scar Tissue of the Soul from persistent Negative Volition PREVENTS THE INTAKE OF Absolute Truth from BIBLE DOCTRINE including the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions. Having the soul blacked out to truth creates a vacuum in the Right Lobe so that ONLY the LIES of Satan's policy of EVIL are SUCKED into the soul as the Doctrines of Demons. It therefore becomes impossible for this believer, or unbeliever under Negative Volition toward Absolute Truth, to believe anything except the LIES of the EVIL policy and plan of Satan and they cannot accept or even acknowledge Absolute Truth as TRUTH. This is Demon Influence or Satanic Influence from the doctrines of Evil. Therefore the believer must take heed of 1<sup>st</sup> Timothy chapter 4 which ends with the dogmatic statement that the believer "MUST KNOW BIBLE DOCTRINE". The most important thing in the Christian Way of Life the highest priority of the Christian Way of Life is that believers MUST KNOW DOCTRINE.

Where there is the indwelling of God the Holy Spirit or the presence of The Lord Jesus, The Christ Demons cannot enter or remain. When The Lord Jesus Christ came to the demon possessed man the demons begged him saying, "Don't cast us out" but when Jesus kept saying 'get out', 'get out', 'get out, the Demons said "Let us go indwell these swine", because they could not be where Christ was present. There can be no demon possession of the believer only demon pressure or demon influence and this comes through the Right Lobe of the soul and the result is very often mental illness as psychosis where believers under demon influence very often become Psychotic. Under Emotional Revolt of the Soul pressure, believers can become neurotic and when this is unchecked can ultimately lead to the psychosis caused by intensive demon influence. The tragedy is that the once the believer enters into the trend toward psychosis he no longer has the ability to learn Bible Doctrine as a result of the incredible level of Scar Tissue of the Soul he has built up. This results in the final stage of Reverse Process Reversionism and the intensity of demon influence is tantamount to what unbelievers call activation of Dormant Faculties in this individual. Therefore, it is Negative Volition toward Bible Doctrine, God, the Gospel of Christ and the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions which begins the retrogression to Dormant Faculties in the individual. The point is that it is a complete waste of time to try to present Bible Doctrine to a psychotic believer to try to help them. The reality and fact is that the only way to help people is through their volitional intake of Bible Doctrine. They must want to take in Bible Doctrine and understand the Plan of God because ONLY GOD can help these people. Unfortunately, people at this point of involvement in reversionism and the retrogression to dormant faculties have used Negative Volition so persistently and so strongly that they CANNOT TAKE IN DOCTRINE ANY LONGER, they are functioning under soul faculties as if they were an infant again.

It is the word of God which helps people and changes them and in reality NO PERSON can help any other person in any situation under any condition. In fact, many Christians HINDER people by giving them sympathy and attention when what they need is consistent Bible



Doctrine. If it is not possible to get Bible Doctrine to a person to help them then it is a dead issue to try anything else to help them. Therefore, the person who has reached a point of psychosis and who has their Right Lobe perceptive valve scarred and closed so that they cannot let Bible Doctrine in, has no hope. Invariably, most psychotic people got into this situation in the first place because they hate Bible Doctrine. They did it to themselves, they rejected truth, opened up their soul to the retrogression to a status of Dormant Faculties and allowed the doctrines of demons in willingly. This gave them a status of complete divorcement from reality, thus psychosis. For these people the only thing which the believer can do to help is engage in persistent prayer for them which does not violate their volition and is a prayer for recovery of their mental perceptive ability and recognition of the importance and value of Bible Doctrine.

The Lord Jesus, The Christ indwells every believer in this Church Age and though the believer may be carnal and is quenching or grieving God the Holy Spirit, God the Holy Spirit still indwells him also and therefore a demon cannot possess a body where God indwells. Greater is he that is in you, God the Holy Spirit, The Lord Jesus, The Christ, God the Father, than he that is in the world, Satan ruler of this world. Believers battle incredible unseen forces against which they are completely helpless and were it not for God's provision NO BELIEVER COULD SURVIVE as a believer in this world of Satan. Believers often think they are great, wonderful, fantastic, and when they start thinking this way they have disoriented themselves to GRACE and the reality of the powerless status they have on this earth. The mature believer, the great believer by bible standards is just as helpless as any other believer except that he has maximum residence and understanding of Bible Doctrine in his Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul and therefore knows how to use God's power. There is a fantastic unseen battle occurring in the lives of believers and this is very often why Christians seem to be so goofy and mentally tied up in all sorts of knots. Christians fight an incredible spiritual warfare which the unbeliever does not fight at all and they are under fantastic pressure as a result.

A prime Old Testament Scripture example of this is Balaam who lived in Mesopotamia. Balaam's father Beor was a renowned Wizard who could and did curse and bless people and nations and his curses and blessings were fulfilled. Balaam followed in his father's footsteps and was the best known wizard in the world at that time and he also was very successful in cursing and blessing people and especially nations. Both Balaam and his father Beor were demon possessed and there were demons which had served Satan within this family for a very long time. However, at some point before this story begins Balaam expressed Positive Volition at God Consciousness and Positive Volition at Gospel Hearing and made Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God. Balaam was in the past demon possessed but his Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God and regeneration eliminated demon possession in him. However, his Right Lobe retained an incredible level of demon influence pressure from his LUSTS. Balaam's Old Sin Nature had an incredible materialism and wealth lust which he had spent his entire life fulfilling with his cursing and blessing of people and nations for others in exchange for large sums of money. Balaam, as a believer, had no demon influence pressure until he opened the door for it by catering to his materialism lusts and neglecting or rejecting the Word of God. Balaam wanted more than anything to be an extremely rich man and he loved money more

than anything in the world. [1Tim 6:10](#) says, “The LOVE OF MONEY is the root of ALL KINDS or CATEGORIES of EVIL” and EVIL is the sum total of the plan and policy of Satan embodied in the functions of the Old Sin Nature. Balaam, as a believer, had his own genetic Old Sin Nature and this had strong lusts in the area of materialism and this lust fed into and stimulated his Old Sin Nature trends so that his area of weakness developed strong temptation to SIN. When the lusts through the trends of the Old Sin Nature motivate the Area of Strength temptation to produce Human Good is what results. However, when God the Holy Spirit controls the soul the lusts and trends are suppressed and out comes Divine Good production and the big conflict in the life of Balaam was Divine Good vs Human Good.

The Lord comes to Balaam and tells him directly NOT to go to Moab despite the incredible offer of wealth and the entreaties of the high ranking nobles of Moab. Balaam ultimately decides he is going to go to Moab and try to figure out a way to earn the incredible payment that Balak King of Moab has offered to him. The Lord even tries to stop him 3 times on his trip to the mountains of Moab but Balaam ignores even these attempts. Upon arriving and meeting with Balak, Balaam tries 3 different times to curse the Jews but the Lord only puts blessings in his mouth. It is clearly obvious that, like believers today who reject Bible Doctrine taught by their Pastor Teacher, Balaam completely rejected the word of God delivered to him DIRECTLY by the Lord repeatedly placing himself in a situation of carnality but also under extreme demon influence through the voluntary retrogressing to the status of Dormant Faculties in his soul. Balaam’s rejection of the commands of the Lord, entering into carnality, coming under Emotional Revolt of the Soul and moving backward to the status of dormant faculties in his soul puts him immediately under the control of the area of weakness of his Old Sin Nature which was involvement in occult powers and Demonism. In so doing the level of demon influence in his soul reached a maximum. Being unable to curse the Jews he told Balak to send beautiful women into the camp of the Jews to distract them and then attack. What he did not consider was that by the time the attacks occurred many of the Jews who had succumbed to these Moabite women had made Rebound Adjustment to the Justice of God and were ready to fight. As a part of his reward Balaam did earn a great deal of money and was also made a prince of Moab and was therefore required to participate in the attack on the Jews on the plains of Moab. It was at this time that he was removed from this life under the Sin Unto Death Divine Discipline when the Jews defeated the Moabites, the inevitable result of a believer becoming involved in the retrogression of soul to the status of Dormant Faculties.

In Acts chapter 8 there is an exact parallel to Balaam where Simon the Sorcerer was also a Wizard and had in the past been demon possessed and did all sorts of miraculous things and bewitched the people of Samaria. In [Acts 8:13](#) Simon himself made Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God but then in [Acts 8:21](#) sinned and got out of fellowship in carnality. Peter Warned him to get back into fellowship or he would be subject to the Sin Unto Death Divine Discipline, exactly the same fate of Balaam.

The Sovereignty of God said directly to Balaam “DO NOT GO TO MOAB”. Under the Negative Volition his Soul Balaam Said “I AM GOING”. God PERMITS Balaam to Go, because Absolute

Righteousness will not interfere with man's volition. This would violate the very premise of setting up the appeal demonstration for Satan and the fallen angels in the Angelic Conflict Trial. However, the Love of God warned Balaam 3 times but as is to be expected Balaam fails to heed these warnings so that the Justice of God ultimately had to administer Divine Discipline for Balaam as the Sin Unto Death. When persistent Negative Volition exists in the believer GOD will not override this Negative Volition. [2Pet 3:9](#) clearly indicates that it is the sovereign Will of God that all members of the Human Race be saved. If God would override Negative Volition of the unbeliever the whole world would be saved and the purpose for man existing in the first place would be negated. For the unbeliever the Justice of God operates in judgment and for the believer the Justice of God operates in Divine Discipline when there is persistent Negative Volition. The unbeliever who is persistent in his rejection of the gospel will suffer the judgment of the Great White Throne and as a result spend eternity in the Lake of Fire. For the believer who consistently rejects Bible Doctrine and remains in carnality the Divine Discipline will systematically intensify until it reaches the point of the Sin Unto Death and that believer is removed from this life BUT is then face to face with the Lord for eternity. Both have, by their own volition, retrogressed in their soul to the status of Dormant Faculties such as in the infant.

As a result of his consistent Negative Volition Balaam was insane, psychotic, completely irrational and this is the same madness of believers in any generation of any dispensation who consistently function outside the Will of God. Balaam was insane to put material possessions, money, success, power and wealth before spiritual things but this is normal for unbelievers. However, what is NORMAL in the unbeliever is abnormal for the believer and it is ABNORMAL for the believer to desire these things over a solid spiritual status in life because he is a NEW creature in Christ where God has given him wonderful permanent things both seen and unseen which he must become cognizant of. Therefore when a believer opposes the Will of God he develops serious mental illness, insanity or psychosis. The believer does not have to run around and act ridiculous and say idiotic nonsensical things to be Insane, all he must do is move himself out of the Will of God and then STAY THERE. Therefore, when a believer becomes mentally ill his mental illness occurs most often as a result of ignoring Bible Doctrine, the stated Will of God, because of persistent Negative Volition. When the believer becomes psychotic as a result of his Old Sin Nature and his emotions controlling the soul, he begins to do irrational things just like Balaam did. ([2Pet 2:15-16](#)) Therefore it is obvious that there is a very strong correlation between Demon Influence on the believer and psychoses and insanity and with regard to the unbeliever, Demon Possession definitely produces insanity. This happened also to King Saul who became Manic Depressive and then psychotic when he went contrary to the Will of God and sought advice from a necromancer.

Balaam's insanity came from his own persistent Negative Volition in opposition to the directive Will of God. ([Num 22:12](#)). Balaam was as mad as the hatter in Alice and Wonderland because the Ass now speaks to him and he does not even blink an eye at this. ([Num 22:30](#)) His insanity becomes obvious when he speaks to the Ass and tells her that if he had a sword he would kill her right there. Only a real nut ball would kill a faithful, loyal ass in the ancient world for this was the means of transportation of Kings and a very expensive commodity. People, like Balaam, who are insane can often see truth when it is pointed out to them but

then they go right on without it. Thus the true uselessness of presenting Bible Doctrine to the psychotic individual.

Demonism in any form saturating a nation brings the fifth cycle of discipline to that nation. ([Is 29:4](#), [Is 47](#), [Jer 27:6-10](#)) In addition, Satan and demons are often used by God in the administration of the Sin Unto Death for reversionistic believers. ([1Cor 5:5](#), [1Tim 1:19-20](#)), and often for divine discipline. ([Luke 22:31-32](#), [Ps 109:6-13](#)) where Satan and demons can be used to provide warning discipline. ([1Tim 3:6](#)) As a result of the supernatural power Satan possesses, he is often the source of disease, death, and “miracle” cures. As a result of demon possession, many abnormal abilities can occur and abnormal activities result where Satan according to [Ps 109:6-13](#) uses demons to:

- ✧ Blind through religion [v7](#)
- ✧ Shorten life span [v8a](#)
- ✧ Remove people from authority [v8b](#)
- ✧ Exercise the power of death [v9](#)
- ✧ Persecute children [v10](#)
- ✧ Remove wealth [v11](#)
- ✧ Cause general antagonism to the believer [v12](#)
- ✧ Cut off posterity to the 2<sup>nd</sup> generation [v13](#)
- ✧ Kill when permitted, [Heb 2:14-15](#), [1John 3:8](#), [1John 3:12](#), [Job 1:12](#), [Job 1:18-19](#), [John 8:44](#)
- ✧ Execute believers under the Sin Unto Death, [1Cor 5:5](#), [1Tim 1:19-20](#).
- ✧ Be the source of demon induced illness or diseases, [Job 2:6-8](#); [Matt 12:22](#), [Luke 13:16](#), [Acts 10:38](#)
  - Mental diseases, [Mark 5:1-13](#)
  - Inability to speak under demon possession, [Mark 9:17](#), [Luke 11:14](#)
  - Deafness, [Mark 9:25](#)
  - Blindness, [Matt 12:22](#)
  - Convulsions, [Mark 1:26](#), [Mark 9:20](#), [Luke 4:35](#)

When Satan orders the removal of a demon induced illness and the person appears to be cured the one who is practicing as a healer appears to be legitimate and gains a strong following. Through demon possession Satan can cause the inducement of a variety of abnormal behaviors:

- ✧ Convulsions, [Mark 1:26](#), [Mark 9:20](#)
- ✧ Abnormal violence, [Matt 8:28](#)
- ✧ Abnormal strength, [Mark 5:4](#); [Luke 8:29](#)
- ✧ Raving and abnormal screaming, [Mark 5:5](#)
- ✧ Self-mutilation, [Mark 5:5](#)
- ✧ Foaming at the mouth, [Mark 9:20](#)
- ✧ Public Nakedness, [Luke 8:27](#)
- ✧ Living among corpses, [Mark 5:3](#)
- ✧ Excessive continuous grinding of the teeth, [Mark 9:18](#)
- ✧ Attempting self destruction, [Matt 17:15](#)

Within the emotionally saturated ecstatic tongues movement in Christian circles is found the believer who is completely entrapped in both the Interlocking System of Arrogance and 8 Stages of Reversionism under Emotional Revolt of the Soul and also the unbeliever who is under demon possession both alleging to speak in languages, often said to be “angelic”, which are not understood by man. This pseudo gift of speaking in languages not known to the individual continues to be perpetuated by Satan for his use in the Tribulation. ([2Thes 2:8-12](#)). When there is involvement of unbelievers under demon possession in this pseudo spiritual gift the mechanics are related to the function of possession by an engostromuthos demon. ([Is 8:19](#), [Is 29:4](#), [Rev 16:13-14](#)) For believers involvement in this ecstatic [Emotional Revolt of the Soul](#) system of speaking in tongues it is designed by Satanic as a distraction to the consistent intake of Bible Doctrine. ([2Cor 6:11-12](#), [Rom 16:17-18](#)) Involvement in the tongues movement today It is an entrapment pulling the believer toward involvement with and practice using only Dormant Faculties.

The reality of dormant faculty regression and the resultant demon possession, influence and or obsession explains supernatural phenomena including such things as faith healing, speaking in tongues, the rise of certain world rulers who obviously function based on EVIL, wars, antisemitism, contacting the dead, and many other activities. Demons attempt to distract believers and entrap unbelievers through ‘religious’ activities, culture and pseudo-intellectualism. When a believer lacks doctrinal truth he has opened himself up to the retrogression to the status of and function under Dormant Faculties, where lacking the TRUTHS of Bible Doctrine, EVIL is able to infiltrate and saturate his soul.

Return to the [Table of Contents](#)

### [The Solution to Arrogance](#)

The believer who functions under consistent Positive Volition toward Bible Doctrine and the Grace Plan of God is protected from Cosmic Dynasphere Evangelism as a result of having a maximum accumulation of Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of his Soul and by the use of the [10 Problem Solving Devices](#) when he sees he has inadvertently pulled the pin of the Arrogance grenade. The Believer may have heavy seas of Pressure, Adversity, Difficulty, even PROSPERITY, with Troubles, Calamities, Sorrows, the extremities of life and if his life is fragmented in Arrogance he will break up and sink in these heavy seas of adversity. The believer cannot maintain progress in the Spiritual Life when he has fragmented his life by involvement in the Interlocking System of Arrogance. However, if the believer is consistent in his use of the [Rebound Procedure](#) and functions consistently under Post Salvation Epistemological Rehabilitation from Perception, Cognition, Incultation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine then he will weather the storms of life.



## The Escape

It is the responsibility of the individual's Volition to resist temptation from the Old Sin Nature thus resist the devil and his strategies to control the Human Race. ([James 4:7](#)) It is the responsibility of the individual's Volition to make the decision to use the Rebound Procedure and leave the Cosmic Dynaspheres if he has failed in some way and fallen into it. Therefore it is imperative that the believer learn and consistently use the Rebound Procedure to avoid the Cosmic Dynaspheres or escape from them when he becomes involved in them from personal failure to reject temptation. An essential key to this process is the effective teaching of Bible Doctrine from a properly prepared and oriented Pastor Teacher. ([1Pet 5:1-9](#))

All Pastor Teachers, like shepherds, are to lead their sheep to the food and water of the pasture but he does not go around grabbing each one by the neck and forcing him to eat and drink. The eating of the spiritual food of Bible Doctrine is a volitional choice from the privacy of the priesthood of the believer and results from [Teachability](#) developed from Humility in the Divine Dynasphere. Rejecting Bible Doctrine and eating the spoiled food of the Doctrines of Demons or resisting Bible Doctrine is developed from involvement in Arrogance. The sheep in the congregation of any local church must orient to the Authority of both Bible Doctrine and the Pastor Teacher who teaches it accurately and cease trying to promote self in any aspect of life. The principle for the believer is that when God does not promote one he is NOT promoted and forcing this issue results in the [Arrogance of Achievement](#) again entangling the believer within the Interlocking System of Arrogance classroom. The problem is that for the believer Achievement belongs to God while Happiness belongs to the believer IF he is consistently residing in the [Divine Dynasphere](#). ([1Pet 5:7](#)) However, Demon influence and living in the Cosmic Dynaspheres causes this concept to be distorted into "Achievement belongs to ME therefore I will be happy ONLY as long as I succeed". This is a fallacy and disorientation to reality. The believer must also understand the difficulty in consistent Perception, Cognition, Incultation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine under the same Pastor Teacher. In order to be able to constantly listen to the same Pastor Teacher all the time and concentrate on the Bible Doctrine he is teaching requires Motivation and great Self Discipline and a clear understanding of where his is going in the Spiritual Life and what the big picture is. Therefore he must be constantly Alert to maintain residence in the Divine Dynasphere. Self Discipline is required to remain in the Divine Dynasphere and is a major part of any success in life in general. Therefore, Demon Influence can only be avoided through consistently living in the Divine Dynasphere and functioning consistently under the [Grace Apparatus for Perception](#), Operation Z with the 4 Rs of perception: ([1John 3:4-9](#))

- ✧ Reception – Faith Perception
- ✧ Retention – Metabolization of Bible Doctrine
- ✧ Recall – Application of Bible Doctrine to life
- ✧ Resist – Stand fast in stability of thinking and function in the Divine Dynasphere.

Without Absolute Truth fertilizing the thinking of the soul there is no possibility of [Virtue](#) being developed as a standard in the Conscience. ([Ps 25:8-9](#)) The believer learns from Absolute Truth

what Sin and Failure is, what happiness and salvation is and what the Plan of God for the believer is and how to be happy with people and in circumstances. God can and will instruct the sinner but those deeply involved in the Interlocking System of Arrogance are unteachable thus the reality of the extreme difficulty for these believers to recover from Arrogance. [Self Righteous](#) people cannot learn anything because they already know it all. ([Prov 11:2](#)) The Message of Elihu to Job in [Job 33:16-17](#) emphasizes that it is only Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul which protects us from Arrogance.

The many entrances into Arrogance inevitably begin with a [Motivational Arrogance](#) of [Mental Attitude Arrogance](#) with Mental Attitude Sin but once in, the system then moves quickly to interlock the individual with any of the other categories of Arrogance. No matter how one enters he is vulnerable to all the levels of Arrogance. If he remains outside the Interlocking System of Arrogance he is, obviously, not vulnerable to the system UNTIL HE ENTERS IT. Once a person becomes Arrogant and enters into the system it controls his thoughts, decisions, motivations and actions. This is Degeneracy and it takes only moment of [Negative Volition](#), which may be the result of [Pride](#) or any other aspect of Mental Attitude Arrogance, which then leads to either Moral Degeneracy or Immoral Degeneracy. ([Prov 11:2](#)) Once in the system it is possible and likely that one can become a criminal, psychopath, distorted sex maniac, conspirator, anti establishment activist or a revolutionary among other disdainful things. The [Rebound Procedure](#) will extricate the believer from the Interlocking System of Arrogance but this does not mean the person will not turn right around and rapidly reenter the system. For the believer to remain outside the Interlocking System of Arrogance requires his consistent use of the [4 Spiritual Skills](#) and all of the Stages of the [Faith Rest Drill \(5 stages\)](#). In order to avoid constant failures and persistent residence in the Interlocking System of Arrogance the believer must follow up Rebound with consistent personal use of the Grace Apparatus for Perception for Perception, Cognition, Incultation and Metabolization and Application of Bible Doctrine. Deeply entrenched within the labyrinth of the Interlocking System of Arrogance there are members of organizations like the national council of churches, religious denominations and the bureaucratic government as a result of their ignorance of or failure to use the Rebound Procedure. The Degeneracy resulting from involvement in the Interlocking System of Arrogance is not the same as [Reversionism](#) although they do overlap in many areas. They are, however, 2 different aspects of believers failing where entrance into either involves foremost some level of REJECTION OR NEGLECT OF TRUTH in any of the 3 categories:

- ✧ Gospel of Christ for the unbeliever
- ✧ Bible Doctrine for the believer where there is failure to be consistent in the Perception, Cognition, Incultation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine therefore failure in the function under the Grace Apparatus for Perception.
- ✧ Laws of Divine Establishment & Divine Institutions for both believer and unbeliever.

Both the Believer and unbeliever can be reversionistic and under negative volition toward truth and entrance into the Interlocking System of Arrogance is inevitably caused by the believer initially moving into Arrogance under some level of Negative Volition Arrogance. Historically, many great believers like David, Elijah, Moses, Paul, etc., as believers in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God entered this Arrogance system as rapidly as the immature believer. Once

in the Interlocking System of Arrogance and being vulnerable to all the rest of the Arrogance Complex the believer might even think of self as a great believer because of functioning under some system of [Morality](#) which he has substituted for true spirituality. However, morality has nothing to do with spirituality. This morality he is so very proud of in the Arrogance system is in fact very unstable and can cause interlocking with many other aspects of Arrogance. ([Job 33:16-17](#), [Ez 7:10](#))

If one is not rapidly moving to get out or stay out of the Interlocking System of Arrogance he should fear the Divine Discipline from God which can lead to the [Sin Unto Death](#) under Negative Volition Arrogance and a degradation of his Spiritual Life as he slides down through reversionism. If one is in the Interlocking System of Arrogance and he is able to extricate himself, he does so only by having respect for the proper things in life. He can avoid the Divine Discipline which comes from the Interlocking System of Arrogance by [Respect for and Orientation to Authority](#) especially that of God and the mandates of his word. As an unbeliever the only true mandated issue in life is the Gospel of The Lord Jesus, The Christ for salvation. As a believer the only true issue and the key to the Spiritual Life is consistent Perception, Cognition, Incultation and Metabolization of the whole realm of Bible Doctrine in scripture. For both this includes a respect for and function under the [Laws of Divine Establishment](#) & [Divine Institutions](#) doctrinal principles from scripture. As an unbeliever the only way to break out of the Interlocking System of Arrogance is by means of the acceptance of and adherence to the Absolute Truth in the Laws of Divine Establishment, Divine Institutions and the Gospel of Christ for regeneration as a result of choosing Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God. As a believer the only means to break out of the Interlocking System of Arrogance is by persistent and consistent Perception, Cognition, Incultation & Metabolization of Bible Doctrine and the frequent consistent use of the Rebound Procedure and the Faith Rest Drill (5 stages) techniques. Arrogance is only restrained by Positive Volition toward doctrine and respect for God which can and should include fear of Divine Discipline from God. Fear of punishment is a legitimate restraint on the believer until he reaches [Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God](#). Once a believer approaches or reaches Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God then the level of responsibility existing there along with the development of [Occupation with the Person of The Lord Jesus, The Christ](#) results in the fear of punishment no longer being a major issue. This occurs because of the development of capacity for Maximum Category I Love motivation which replaces any fear as a restraint on involvement in the Interlocking System of Arrogance.

Therefore the divine solution to Arrogance is 2 fold:

- **Pre-salvation Solution of Regeneration** through faith alone in The Lord Jesus, The Christ alone resulting in [Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God](#) and initial entrance into the [Divine Dynasphere](#), the Protocol Plan of God as a part of the Royal Family of God in this Church Age. This results in God the Holy Spirit creating a new human spirit for each believer thus regenerating him as the one who has accepted the Substitutionary Spiritual Death of The Lord Jesus, The Christ on the cross for all human sins which provided the potential for Eternal Salvation.

- **Post Salvation Solutions** through the Spiritual Mechanics of the Protocol Plan of God which include the use of the 2 Power Options of Filling of God the Holy Spirit and Perception, Cognition, Incultation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine and the 4 Spiritual Skills. This adds the development and deployment of the 10 Problem Solving Devices onto the Forward Line of Troops of the soul resulting in the execution to completion of the Protocol Plan of God. This believer then reaches Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and may move beyond to Advanced Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God. The Direct Escrow Super – Grace BLESSING from God is intensified for the believer who moves from Maturity Adjustment to the Justice toward Advanced Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God. Divine Discipline for Sin is also intensified here as a result of the Self Righteousness of the believer who falls into a Mental Attitude revolving around Arrogance.

### Recovery from Arrogance

Believers must rethink their priorities and establish a permanent Scale of Values related to the Irrevocable Assets provided by God at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God for their life support and related to the Christian Way of Life within the Divine Dynasphere. Spending even a single hour of the day in the Cosmic Dynaspheres is tragic and they must develop the sense, even a reflex action, for using the Rebound Procedure to keep short accounts of their failings. Then they must keep moving ahead in the Spiritual Life with Post Salvation Epistemological Rehabilitation from consistent Perception, Cognition, Incultation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine. There are those believers who, in their Arrogance, think they do not sin which John clearly refuted a long time ago. (1John 1:8-10) This clearly reveals the necessity for and mechanics of the Rebound Procedure which is to be PRIVATE between the believer and God even if he has hurt other people. However, when a believer has caused problems for others he should correct the situation but NEVER proclaim his sins to them. Rebound is a “procedure” based on the Substitutionary Spiritual Death of Christ on the cross during the judgment of all sins by God the Father in the humanity of Christ. Just as there is NO MERIT in faith for Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God there is NO MERIT in acknowledging sins to God, and Rebound is only the believer recognizing the efficacy of God’s judgment, so that God can be faithful and justified in forgiving those named sins.

### Orientation to the Christian Way of Life

Paul’s answer to the believer living in this world ruled by Satan is in Phil 4:11, explaining that the believer is to BE CONTENT with whatever circumstances he is in. In 1Tim 6:6-8 Paul also said, Godliness or Spiritual Maturity, is a means of great profit when accompanied by contentment. The minimum standard for the believer in this life is simply having enough food and proper clothing which should bring to the believer contentment. There are many types of lust and many levels of involvement in Arrogance and in Heb 13:5, the believer is told to let his lifestyle be free from the LOVE OF MONEY, and be content with what he has, for He, God, has said, that He will never leave the believer and He will never forsake him. This is not inferring that believers should have a lifestyle free of money and live in poverty under extreme asceticism, because without money one cannot have any lifestyle to speak of. However, one’s personal lack of great prosperity OR the prosperity of another person should never distract the

believer from consistent Perception, Cognition, Incultation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine. Whether a person functions under Evil or Grace and whether he is an advancing winner believer or a reversionistic loser believer, that should never be the source of distraction for any other believer. Believers may in fact classify some people as functioning under EVIL but this in reality is NONE OF THEIR BUSINESS but it is possible that it will occur, especially if these others push the believer and fail to give him his privacy. There are always many reasons for these kinds of attitudes some valid and some imagined. One must never become involved in Mental Attitude Sins or Lusts including [Jealousy](#) or [Bitterness](#) or Envy which will instantly pull the pin of the Arrogance Grenade and deeply entangle him in the Interlocking System of Arrogance and result in fragmentation of his own life. The only prosperity in life which really counts originates from execution of the Protocol Plan of God and subsequent distribution of the Escrow Super – Grace Blessings for time which have been deposited for each believer by God in Eternity Past. When the believer has these blessings distributed to him, he will have contentment plus prosperity which perfectly FITS his capacity in life. Every believer should always be aware that God does not prosper all believers in the same way and He knows the capacity each has for various levels and types of prosperity and knows that if He gives some believers certain things they would be totally miserable because they lack capacity for those things. When the believer receives blessing from God, only things which align with his capacity are provided and all that believer must do is stay within the framework of the capacity which God provides by KNOWING HIS OWN [LIMITATIONS](#).

The real prosperity for the Christian functioning in the Protocol Plan of God is related to understanding the [10 Problem Solving Devices](#) and the [10 Unique Characteristics of the Church Age](#) and using them, building a solid [Edification Complex of the Soul](#), living and functioning consistently withing the [Divine Dynasphere](#) AND consistently using the 40 Assets provided for every believer by God at the point of his making Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God. Most individuals when they have temporal prosperity are totally miserable but always put on a front of great happiness while inside they are completely distraught and constantly worrying about losing their material possessions. Without capacity, prosperity is meaningless and useless and a source of great irritation and unhappiness, but when God provides prosperity, aligned with one's capacity which has developed from consistent Post Salvation Epistemological Rehabilitation, it brings fantastic happiness. This is why the Word of God emphasizes CONTENTMENT with what one has and having minimal temporal assets should bring contentment because there is a capacity aligned with these things and developed from Perception, Cognition, Incultation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine, which is absolutely fantastic when it comes. Therefore, true prosperity for the believer is always related to his spiritual assets though there will be other aspects of and advances in prosperity as he advances and **Progresses in the Spiritual Life**.

The only way for the believer to avoid total entanglement in the Interlocking System of Arrogance, Cosmic Dynasphere I is by advancing to Spiritual Adulthood and reaching the point of [Basic Personal Love for God](#) within the [Integrity Envelope](#) beginning with Problem Solving Device #7. The believer will build an appreciation for what God has provided as he moves through spiritual youth but a Personal Love for God does not truly begin until he reaches the



level of spiritual adulthood. This can continually advance into an [Advanced Personal Love for God](#) as Occupation with the Person of The Lord Jesus, The Christ when the believer reaches Spiritual Maturity. Consequently the 7<sup>th</sup> and 10<sup>th</sup> Problem Solving Devices do not become truly effective as Problem Solving Devices until the believer reaches Spiritual Adulthood and then moves into Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God. Along with the basic Personal Love for God when the believer reaches Spiritual Self Esteem and has friends and even a romantic love he must have also developed a solid [Impersonal Love for Mankind](#) to enable this love of other people to function properly. Therefore, the only the escape from or means of avoidance of entanglement in the Cosmic Dynaspheres is execution of the Protocol Plan of God. ([Prov 16:18](#), [Prov 11:2](#), [Prov 29:23](#), [Is 13:11](#), [James 4:6](#), [1Pet 5:6](#)) The definite command for the believer is to STOP being Arrogant and STOP lying against or about Bible Doctrine because this is [Self Deceit](#) and Arrogance. ([James 3:14-16](#)) It is only Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul which is to be the standard of thinking for the believer and this is the only means of developing the Divine Viewpoint of Life. ([Rom 12:3](#))

### **[Solution to National Arrogance](#)**

The only check on mass or [National Arrogance](#) is the understanding of and adherence to the [Laws of Divine Establishment](#) and [Divine Institutions](#) for the entire population and a consistent positive attitude change for believers regarding Perception, Cognition, Incultation & Metabolization of Bible Doctrine. Only [Metabolized Bible Doctrine](#) in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul and function under Laws of Divine Establishment can act as a catharsis for existing Arrogance as well as insulation against Arrogance. Every person has an Old Sin Nature and sooner or later each must face this as an issue. There is no way to crusade against Arrogance and, in fact, as soon as one crusades in any way he enters into Arrogance. Laws cannot be passed against the Old Sin Nature function nor Interlocking System of Arrogance involvement because legislation is not designed to control the Interlocking System of Arrogance which is so very devastating to both believer and unbeliever. The ONLY Solution to avoiding the entrance into the Interlocking System of Arrogance is a matter of PERSONAL VOLITION and [Authority Orientation](#) in the Human Race in general. The function of Bible Doctrine in the form of the Gospel and then the entire realm of Bible Doctrine from the scripture is supposed to have as its impact on the individual a change in his own personal life. It is absolutely impossible to apply Bible Doctrine, no matter how much Bible Doctrine one has learned, if there is Arrogance in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul. Arrogance will not permit the transfer Bible Doctrine from the Left Lobe of the soul to the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul and Arrogance will not allow Metabolized Bible Doctrine to be deployed where it is applicable to situations in life and can be used as solutions. It is possible to learn a great deal of Bible Doctrine and take great pride in it and by this means also become Arrogant.

Within the Interlocking System of Arrogance the believer does not need to have developed [Scar Tissue of the Soul](#) to believe the LIE from EVIL and fail in the application of Bible Doctrine. However, the development of Scar Tissue of the Soul instantly results in the [Faith Rest Drill \(5 stages\)](#) being cut off and Bible Doctrine not being applied. In victory the mature believer uses the 5 stages of the Faith Rest Drill and succeeds in avoiding the Interlocking System of

Arrogance. In failure the mature believer malfunctions under the 5 stages of the Faith Rest Drill and therefore fails. The mature believer, being the greatest in the use of the Faith Rest Drill <sup>(5 stages)</sup>, malfunctions in Faith Rest BECAUSE OF Arrogance. Therefore, even the greatest believers can get caught in Arrogance. Consequently, victory in the Spiritual Life by mature believers often enters them into Arrogance and they carry this Arrogance to the point of defeat and malfunction of the Faith Rest Drill <sup>(5 stages)</sup>. This occurs because invariably the believer is ALWAYS most vulnerable to defeat after great victory and the source of the defeat will be found in the Interlocking System of Arrogance. God is fair and works for each individual believer and the believer DOES NOT WORK FOR HIM. God knows what he is doing and the believer cannot do anything to advance the Plan of God and always needs God's help and He does not EVER need ours. The point is that the little Bible Doctrine which the believer can know is nothing compared to what God knows. Applications made from this simple principle will force one into Humility and thus protect him from Arrogance and therefore he will have the potential to have capacity for life, love and happiness. Arrogance in any form closes down the Faith Rest Drill and as a result the Metabolized Bible Doctrine in one's Stream of Consciousness of the Soul cannot be drawn out as Doctrinal Principles or Doctrinal Rationales for application to situations in life.

As a result of the 2 imputations from God to the individual at physical birth one can see clearly how wise God is and how stupid man is and can then relate one's life to God and NEVER to other believers. Absolute Righteousness in each believer is also a great insulator from Arrogance in his life if he simply remembers that he has been given this at the point of faith alone in The Lord Jesus, The Christ alone and could never have earned nor deserved it. Arrogance is the most dangerous and detrimental DISTRACTION to Bible Doctrine because it provides so many ways to distort Bible Doctrinal principles. One must always be cognizant that the Plan of God rolls right on despite all of the Arrogance of any individual believer in any stage of spiritual growth or any nation whether operating properly as a client nation to God or wallowing in mass Arrogance. It is imperative to remember that the Plan of God was designed and laid out in Eternity Past and God took into consideration EVERY SUCCESS AND FAILURE EACH INDIVIDUAL WOULD ENGAGE IN when he formulated His plan. No one is indispensable in the service of the Lord and no human being can ever conclude that God cannot get along without him. Undoubtedly the worst conclusion anyone can ever come to is that the world and God cannot get along without him. This results from failure to use reverse concentration on Bible Doctrine in any pressure situation. Because of this failure to learn the lesson that divine plans can only be executed by divine provision resulting in divine glory great believers are very often be set aside as spiritual leaders. God must therefore assign to these Arrogant spiritual leaders Divine Discipline in the form of demotion. This is failure and total Arrogance and the failure of mature believers is very often Arrogance. The Interlocking System of Arrogance does not need the development of Scar Tissue of the Soul from involvement in Reversionism to lock the believer in and blind and trap him. Whenever one uses his volition in any situation, he is held accountable by the Justice of God, whether he knows he is doing wrong or not, because God gave him volition specifically to resolve the angelic conflict. Therefore, entrance into the Interlocking System of Arrogance by even the most obscure means is still a very good reason for intensive Divine Discipline administered by God to the believer.

The biography of the WALKING GRENADE found in [2Tim 3:2-7](#) is the story of the fragmented life and this is describing believers. Advancing believers under consistent Positive Volition toward Bible Doctrine are therefore commanded to AVOID these fragmented believers because they will destroy one's Spiritual Life. Fragmentation from Arrogance involvement results in the believer, when exposed to Bible Doctrine, never learning the Absolute Truth of Bible Doctrine because the fragmentation from Arrogance RESISTS metabolization or Acceptance of Bible Doctrine. The devastating result is that without Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul there can be NO momentum in the Spiritual Life.

Return to the [Table of Contents](#)

## Conclusions

It is extremely important for the believer to understand that Arrogance is what started the Angelic Conflict Revolution in eternity past and it began in the THINKING of Lucifer, son of the morning, the most beautiful, capable and intelligent of creatures ever created by God. This Arrogance was developed, after the Angelic Conflict Trial Appeal was granted, into a planned system of ruling this world with a policy known as EVIL. This Plan and Policy of Satan has functions which both angelic and human beings are expected to operate under and thereby produce "GOOD DEEDS". The operational mechanics for function under EVIL, the Plan of Satan, to produce Human Good by human beings are found within the Cosmic Dynaspheres. These are the power spheres of the Plan of Satan, which consist of the Interlocking System of Arrogance and Interlocking System of Antagonistic Emotional Hatred. It is truly imperative for the Christian to understand that this entire world RUNS ON A SYSTEM BASED ON THE INTERLOCKING SYSTEM OF ARROGANCE, Cosmic Dynasphere I, designed to enable the production Human Good deeds apart from any involvement with GOD. This intricate system of deception and distraction for the believer not only INTERLOCKS within itself but also INTERLOCKS with Cosmic Dynasphere II, the Interlocking System of Antagonistic Emotional Hatred and the 8 Stages of Reversionism for the explicit purpose of halting and then destroying the Spiritual Life of the believer. This then, obviously, prevents his spiritual advancement and functionality as a witness for the prosecution in the Angelic Conflict Appeal Trial, the SOLE PURPOSE for human beings to exist. Once there is entrance by some level of Negative Volition toward the principles of Bible Doctrine which then moves the individual into one of the myriad "Gates" of the Interlocking System of Arrogance there is immediate interaction and interlocking with many other areas of Arrogance which serve to DISTRACT the believer from his proper function in the Spiritual Life under the Protocol Plan of God. This entrance into Arrogance functions interlocks with Reversionism which will systematically remove any accumulated Metabolized Bible Doctrine from the believer's soul and replace it with principles of EVIL. In addition when there is persistent resistance to Bible Doctrine and function within the Interlocking System of Arrogance this eventually leads to "interlocking" with the Interlocking System of Antagonistic Emotional Hatred where the believer's Arrogance functions are expanded so that he becomes a direct antagonist to Bible Doctrine and the Plan of God and God himself, an ENEMY of God. (James 4:4-7)

It is the believer's responsibility to RESIST involvement with the power spheres of Satan, the Interlocking System of Arrogance and Interlocking System of Antagonistic Emotional Hatred, and continue living within the power sphere of God, the Divine Dynasphere. Several things will weaken the believer's resistance to these attacks of Satan with all his strategies:

- ✧ Succumbing to involvement within the Interlocking System of Arrogance with its resultant Christian degeneracy
- ✧ Adherence to False Doctrine (1Tim 4:1)
- ✧ Involvement in Cosmic Dynasphere II the Interlocking System of Antagonistic Emotional Hatred with its tie into Emotional Revolt of the Soul.
- ✧ Being drawn into the 8 Stages of Reversionism and neglecting the Spirituality Envelope of Problem Solving Devices #1 & #2.

Obviously the believer must learn the Absolute Truth of Bible Doctrine so that he can think in terms of this Truth and avoid the FALSE issues of the Cosmic Dynaspheres. Truth as Metabolized Bible Doctrine saturating the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul modifies the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul and alters the Memory, Categorical Storage, Norms and Standards, Frame of Reference and all compartments of the Right Lobe of the Soul to enable the thinking of the believer to be altered into Divine Viewpoint. However, rejection of the TRUTH of Bible Doctrine at any level results eventually and inevitably in any previously Metabolized Bible Doctrine being systematically ERASED from the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul and replaced with the LIES of the doctrines of demons derived directly from the Policy of Satan, EVIL. Once the believer thinks in terms of TRUTH he then has the needed integrity to function properly behind the [Forward Line of Troops](#) of his soul consisting of the [10 Problem Solving Devices](#), the Spiritual Mechanics of the [4 Spiritual Skills](#) while consistently residing in the [Divine Dynasphere](#) and functioning through the completed construction of the [Edification Complex of the Soul](#). Therefore, Christian [Integrity](#) is mandated in the Protocol Plan of God and is obtained by:

- Accumulation of the Absolute Truth of Bible Doctrine
  - Using the [Grace Apparatus for Perception](#), Operation Z to engage the 4 Rs of Reception, Retention, Recall and Resistance to the Cosmic Dynaspheres
  - Therefore, Knowing, learning, standing by the truth in all cases
- Development of thought as [Divine Viewpoint](#) thinking from Maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.

Thus Metabolized Bible Doctrine circulating through the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul is the **ABSOLUTE PRIMARY ESSENTIAL** in the Christian Way of Life to enable the believer to resist and overcome involvement in the Cosmic Dynaspheres and to recover from any involvement in the [Stages of Reversionism](#). The principles contained in this document regarding the Interlocking System of Arrogance cannot and MUST NOT be minimized because their subtlety in attracting the believer to reside within that sphere of influence is rarely understood by Christians and results in the destruction of the potential of their Spiritual Life. In addition because of the influence of the invisible hero Mature believer on his nation and on history in general the overall involvement in Arrogance by Christians prevents their rise to [Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God](#) and thus results in national destruction and historical disaster. Without consistent post salvation epistemological rehabilitation from consistent Perception, Cognition, Incultation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine the believer cannot advance in the Spiritual Life and will live a totally distorted and miserable life. Everything in life after Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God, all happiness, all meaningful things, all the means of handling problems and pressures in life, all worthwhile things, come from the accumulation of a maximum level of Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the believer's own Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul along with ALL potential Eternal Blessings. This is also true for the unbeliever on a limited basis, who has rejected The Lord Jesus, The Christ, when he accepts and functions under the doctrinal concepts involved in the [Laws of Divine Establishment](#) and [Divine Institutions](#), but his blessings exist ONLY for his lifetime. The result of maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul of the believer is the development of the [Integrity](#) of the believer



necessary to stand behind that Forward Line of Troops to resist the attacks of Satan and consistently move forward in his Spiritual Life to Maximum Glorification of God. No matter where the believer is in his life HE WILL BE SUSTAINED by God until he has used up the provision of his EQUALITY of Opportunity and Privilege to complete the Execution of the Protocol Plan of God. To accomplish this execution he must use the Power of God the Father, God the Son, and God the Holy Spirit, related to residence, function and momentum within the Divine Dynasphere.

No spiritual progress is possible when the believer becomes involved in the EVIL of the Cosmic Dynaspheres of Satan, the [Interlocking System of Arrogance](#) and the [Interlocking System of Antagonistic Emotional Hatred](#) and functions under the [3 Arrogance Skills](#) to the destruction of his Spiritual Life as he progresses through the Stages of reversionism. Such involvement simply and inevitably makes him totally miserable and negates any potential [Divine Good](#) influence he might have on himself, his friends and loved ones, his nation and on history.

### **The Fragmented Life**

The tragedy of the fragmented life is that GOD has provided an incredible amount of protection to prevent the believer fragmenting his life and becoming a LOSER Believer. It is the Loser believer, failing to Execute the Protocol Plan of God due to an overriding [Negative Volition](#) toward Bible Doctrine who has a totally Fragmented Life as a result of his being totally ignorant of God's Plan, Purpose and Will for his life in this Church Age.

The Grace provision of God as protection for the believer to avoid fragmenting his life includes:

- ✧ [40 Divine Assets](#) given each believer at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God.
- ✧ The Unique [Mechanics](#) of the Spiritual Life in this Church Age.
- ✧ [10 characteristics of the Church Age](#)
- ✧ [10 Problem Solving Devices](#) of the Church Age
- ✧ [4 Spiritual Skills](#)
- ✧ God's Power System, the [Divine Dynasphere](#).
- ✧ Mystery Bible Doctrine of the Church Age
- ✧ The Grace Mechanics for Post salvation Epistemological Rehabilitation including the Grace Apparatus for Perception, [Operation Z](#) and the 4 Rs of Perception, Cognition, Incultation, Metabolization and Application of Bible Doctrine to life.

Every individual lives long enough to be able to make decisions regarding The Lord Jesus, The Christ and his Spiritual Life, IF he CHOOSES to have one, therefore every believer CHOOSES his own life as a believer. The Winner Believer makes Good decisions from a position of Strength which results from maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul and its use in application to his life {(gr)[Sophia](#) – Wisdom}. Winners use the Grace Provision from God and engage in Daily Perception, Cognition, Incultation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine and Live in the Sphere of Power and Blessing from God, the Divine Dynasphere. The Loser believer makes BAD decisions from a position of weakness lacking Bible Doctrine in the Right Lobe as a result of CHOOSING to live within the Cosmic Dynaspheres in the Interlocking System of Arrogance and Interlocking System of Antagonistic Emotional Hatred thus leading a totally fragmented life and he remains

(gr) Nepios, a physical adult who is childish and fragmented. Therefore, the Loser believers pull the pin of the Cosmic Dynasphere Grenade using their own volition and as a result fragment their own life therein.

**Recovery from the fragmented life:**

Recovery from the Fragmented life of living and functioning in the Interlocking System of Arrogance must begin with the most basic Problem Solving Device, #1, [The Rebound Procedure \(1John 1:9\)](#) This initiates the process of recovery but subsequent to using the rebound procedure the believer MUST KEEP MOVING forward in the Spiritual Life through consistent Post Salvation Epistemological Rehabilitation.

The Tragedy of the Spiritual Life is that MANY if not MOST believers never make use of the **40** Assets provided by God to prevent fragmentation of one's life and therefore never execute the Protocol Plan of God through consistent Post Salvation Epistemological Rehabilitation. The result for this fragmented believer is his being completely IGNORANT of the provisions of God for his life to enable his spiritual growth. Every believer makes a single choice at Gospel Hearing for or against Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God but then, as a believer, he must make consistent daily choices based on his establishment of priorities in life. The winner believer who makes Good decisions from a position of Strength chooses to become a mature believer and invisible hero. He CHOOSES to use the Grace provisions of God and engage in the daily Perception, Cognition, Incultation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine and engage the Rebound Procedure when needed and continuously move on in his Spiritual Life. Loser believers who CHOOSE to make Bad decisions from a position of weakness end up remaining childish believers with totally fragmented lives and thereby fail to acquire their [Escrow Blessings](#) in 6 categories for time and their Escrow Blessings for all eternity.

More complete and vastly more detailed information of the Christian Way of Life and the believer's function in it can be obtained without charge from:

**R. B. Thieme Jr. Bible Ministries**  
**Post Office Box 460829 Houston, Texas 77056-8829**  
**(713) 621-3740**

or by logging on to

[R. B. Thieme Junior Bible Ministries](#)

Return to the [Table of Contents](#)

## [Introduction to Arrogance Reference Material](#)

This document concerning Arrogance is for all believers and even unbelievers to give to them an understanding how one uses his own volition to destroy his own temporal and spiritual life. However, it is NOT a simplistic treatise on arrogance but requires understanding of some very complex and advanced principles of Bible Doctrine which I have attempted to include here. Therefore, this segment of the 3 part document regarding the Interlocking System of Arrogance is the reference material which basically is information to support and solidify accurate concepts of the Christian Way of Life and help provide a solid background for understanding how involvement in Arrogance can disrupt and distort the Spiritual Life, destroying the effectiveness of the believer in his service to Christ. Within this 3<sup>rd</sup> section is a compilation of such reference material providing clarification regarding the [Power System of God](#) – the Divine Dynasphere, the [10 Problem Solving Devices](#), the [Edification Complex of the Soul](#), the degradation resulting from the Apostasy of [Reversionism](#), and many other fundamental considerations in the Christian Way of Life.

Return to the [Table of Contents](#)

## [40 Divine Assets for the Spiritual Life](#)

### [39 Irrevocable Assets](#)

#1 – Residence in the Protocol Plan of God sharing the destiny of Christ.

- ✧ Foreknown: Acts 2:3, Rom 3:29, 1Pet 1:2
- ✧ Elected: Rom 8:33, Col 3:12, 1Thes 1:4, Tit 1:1, 1Pet 1:2
- ✧ Predestined: Rom 8:29-30, Eph 1:5+11
- ✧ Chosen: Matt 22:14, 1Pet 2:4
- ✧ Called: 1Thes 5:24

#2 – Reconciled to God (Removal of the Sin Barrier)

- ✧ By God: 2Cor 5:18-19, Col 1:20
- ✧ To God: Rom 5:10, 2Cor 5:20, Eph 2:14-17

#3 – Redeemed (Purchased from the Slave Market of Sin): Rom 3:24, Col 1:14, 1Pet 1:18

#4 – Condemnation (Eternal Judgment) Removed: John 3:18, 5:24, Rom 1:18

#5 – All Human Sins imputed to and judged in The Lord Jesus the Christ and paid for with his Substitutionary Spiritual Death: Rom 4:25, Eph 1:7, 1Pet 2:24

#6 – Receipt of the Propitiation of God for Personal Sins

- ✧ God the Father is satisfied with the Substitutionary Spiritual Death of Christ on the cross
- ✧ Rom 3:25-26, 1John 2:2, 4:10

#7 – Dead to the Old Sin Nature, Alive to God from Retroactive Positional Truth and he is:

- ✧ Crucified with Christ: Rom 6:6, Gal 2:20
- ✧ Dead with Christ: Rom 6:8, Col 3:3, 1Pet 2:24
- ✧ Buried with Christ: Rom 6:4, Col 2:12
- ✧ Raised with Christ: Rom 6:4, 7:4, Col 2:12, 3:1

#8 – Freedom from the Mosaic Law and he is:

- ✧ Dead to the Law: Rom 7:4
- ✧ Delivered: Rom 6:14, 7:6, 2Cor 3:6-11, Gal 3:25

#9 – Regeneration

- ✧ Born again a spiritual 2nd birth: John 3:7, 1Pet 1:23
- ✧ A Child of God: Rom 8:16, Gal 3:26
- ✧ A Son of God: John 1:2, 2Cor 6:18, 1John 3:2
- ✧ A New Creation: 2Cor 5:17, Gal 6:15, Eph 2:10

#10 – Adoption by God

- ✧ Adopted as an Adult son because of Positional Truth
- ✧ Rom 8:15, 8:23, Eph 1:5

#11 – Acceptable to God: Eph 1:6, 1Pet 2:5, and he is:

- ✧ Receives Absolute Righteousness from God: Rom 3:22, 1Cor 1:30, 2Cor 5:21, Phil 3:9
- ✧ Positionally Sanctified: 1Cor 1:30, 6:11
- ✧ Eternal Perfection: Heb 10:14
- ✧ Qualified for Inheritance: Col 1:12

#12 – Justified being declared Righteous: Rom 3:24, 5:1+9, 8:30, 1Cor 6:11, Tit 3:7

#13 – Receipt of Divine Power: 2Pet 1:3

#14 – Guarantee of Heavenly Citizenship by Reconciliation: Luke 20:10, Eph 2:14-19, Phil 3:20

#15 – Delivered from the Kingdom of Satan: Col 1:13a, 2:15

#16 – Transferred to the Kingdom of God: Col 1:13b

#17 – On a secure Foundation: 1Cor 3:11, 10:4, Eph 2:20

#18 – Made a Gift from God the Father to Christ: John 10:29, 17:2, 6, 9, 11-12, 24

#19 – Delivered Positionally from the Old Sin Nature Power: Rom 8:2, Phil 3:3, Col 2:11

#20 – Appointed a Priest to God

- ✧ A Holy Priesthood: 1Pet 2:5+9

‣ A Royal Priesthood: 1Pet 2:9, Rev 1:6

#21 – Eternal Security: John 10:28-29, Rom 8:32, 38-39, Gal 3:26, 2Tim 2:13

#22 – Receives Access to God: Rom 5:2, Eph 2:18, Heb 4:16, 10:19-20

#23 – Under “Much More” grace of God: Rom 5:9-10

‣ Objects of his Personal Love: Eph 2:4, 5:2

‣ Objects of his Grace

◦ For Salvation: Eph 2:8-9

◦ For Keeping: Rom 5:2, 1Pet 1:5

◦ For Service: John 17:18, Eph 4:7

◦ For Instruction: Tit 2:12

‣ Objects of his Power: Eph 1:19, Phil 2:13

‣ Objects of his Faithfulness: Phil 1:6, Heb 13:5b

‣ Objects of his Peace: John 14:27

‣ Objects of his Consolation: 2Thes 2:16

‣ Objects of his Intercession: Rom 8:34, Heb 7:25, 9:24

#24 – Beneficiary of Inheritance as Heirs of God & Joint Heirs of Christ:

‣ Rom 8:17, Eph 1:14+18, Col 3:24, Heb 9:15, 1Pet 1:4

#25 – A Position in Christ: Eph 2:6

‣ Partners with Christ in Life: Col 3:4

‣ Partners with Christ in Service: 1Cor 1:9

◦ Workers with God: 1Cor 3:9, 2Cor 6:1

◦ Servants of the New Covenant: 2Cor 3:6

◦ Royal Ambassadors for Christ: 2Cor 5:20

◦ Living Epistles: 2Cor 3:3

◦ Servants of God: 2Cor 6:4

#26 – Recipients of Eternal Life: John 3:15, 10:28, 20:31, 1John 5:11-12

#27 – A NEW Spiritual Species: 2Cor 5:17

#28 – A Light in the Lord (in the Angelic Conflict): Eph 5:28, 1Thes 5:4-5

#29 – Unity with God the Father, the Son, and the Holy Spirit:

‣ In God the Father: 1Thes 1:1; God in You: Eph 4:6

‣ In God the Son: John 14:20; Christ in You: Col 1:27



- A member in His body: 1Cor 12:13
- A branch in the Vine: John 15:5
- A Stone in the Building: Eph 2:21-22, 1Pet 2:5
- A Sheep in the Flock: John 10:27-29
- A portion of his Bride: Eph 5:25-27, Rev 19:6-8, 21:9
- A Priest of a Kingdom of Priests: 1Pet 2:9
- ↗ In God the Holy Spirit: Rom 8:9
  - God the Holy Spirit in You

#30 – A Recipient of the Ministries of God the Holy Spirit:

- ↗ Born of God the Holy Spirit: John 3:5-8
- ↗ Baptized with God the Holy Spirit: Acts 1:5, 1Cor 12:13
- ↗ Indwelt by God the Holy Spirit:
  - John 7:39, Rom 5:5, 8:9, 1Cor 3:16, 6:19, Gal 4:6, 1John 3:24
- ↗ Sealed by God the Holy Spirit: 2Cor 1:22, Eph 4:30
- ↗ Receive Spiritual Gifts: 1Cor 12:11, 27-31, 13:1-2

#31- Glorification: Rom 8:30

#32 – Complete in Christ: Col 2:10

#33 – Possessor of All Spiritual Blessings from Eternity Past: Eph 1:3

#34 – Receipt of a New Human Spirit essential for Operation Z:

- ↗ Rom 8:16, 1Cor 2:12, 2Cor 7:13, 1Thes 5:23

#35 – All Sins & Transgressions Blotted Out: Is 43:25, 44:22

#36 – Efficacious Grace for Salvation: Eph 1:13

#37 – Guaranteed Resurrection Body for Eternity: 1Cor 15:40-54

#38 – Beneficiary of Unlimited Atonement:

- ↗ 2Cor 5:14-15+19, 1Tim 2:6, 4:10, Tit 2:11, Heb 2:9, 2Pet 2:1, 1John 2:2

#39 – Equal Privilege and Opportunity under Election & Predestination to execute to completion the Protocol Plan of God: Rom 12:3, Eph 3:16-19

### **1 Revocable Asset**

#40 – Filling of God the Holy Spirit:

- ✧ Begins at the instant of Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God: Gal 3;3
- ✧ Lost upon leaving the Plan of God as a result of Carnality but recovered by use of the Rebound Procedure: 1John 1:9, 1Cor 11:31, Rom 6:13, 12:1, Heb 12:1, 12:9, 12:12-13, Matt:3;3, Eph 5:14, 4:22, Jer 3:13, 1Pet 2:5+9; Rev 1:6, 5:10, 3:19 Heb 12:15, Phil 3:13-14, 2 Cor 1:12, Ps 32:5, 38:18, 51:3-4; Prov 28:13; Jam 1:21, 2Tim 2:26, Ps 32:5, 38:18, Psa 51, Heb 9:12-14

Return to the [Table of Contents](#)

## The 10 Problem Solving Devices

### **#1 – Rebound Procedure**

(1John 1:9, 1Cor 11:31, Rev 3:19, 2Tim 2:25, Eph 4:22, Heb 9:12-15, Heb 12:11-15, James 1:21, Phil 3:13, Jer 3:13, Lev 4, Prov 28:13, Ps 32:5, Ps 38:18, Ps 51:1-4, Rom 12:1, Rom 6:12-13) A Grace procedure to recover from sin requiring the believer to name, site or acknowledge his sin to GOD directly functioning under his Royal Priesthood representing himself to God.

### **#2 – Filling of God the Holy Spirit**

The indwelling of God the Holy Spirit for every believer in this Church Age plus the Royal Priesthood of each and every believer makes it possible for the believer to be under the Filling of God the Holy Spirit. This is the primary power source of the Grace Plan of God. the teacher of Bible Doctrine under the [Grace Apparatus for Perception](#), Operation Z.

### **#3 – Faith Rest Drill**

5 stages of progressively developed nonmeritorious [Faith Rest](#)

- ↗ Faith Perception
- ↗ Claiming Promises from God
- ↗ Supporting Promises with Metabolized Bible Doctrine Principles
- ↗ Forming Bible Doctrine Rationales
- ↗ Coming to Bible Doctrine focused conclusions

### **#4 – Grace Orientation**

The opening of the [Orientation Envelope](#) of the Plan of God which begins development of an understanding and appreciation of the Grace Policy and Grace Plan of God. See “[To an Understanding of Grace](#)”

### **#5 – Bible Doctrine Orientation**

The closing of the [Orientation Envelope](#) of the Plan of God which focus’ the believer’s understanding on the necessity for continued development of consistent Post Salvation Epistemological Rehabilitation from persistent Perception, Cognition, Inculcation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine the only means for spiritual growth.

### **#6 – Personal Sense of Destiny**

Increased levels of Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Soul provide an understanding that as long as the believer lives, God has a plan and purpose for his life in time AND has provided all necessary support for his function in that plan.

### **#7 – Personal Love for God**

This is the opening of the Integrity Envelope of the Plan of God and the primary [Motivational Virtue](#) of Love for God which only results from maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the soul.

### **#8 – Impersonal / Unconditional Love for Mankind**

This is the closing of the Integrity Envelope of the Plan of God and the primary **Functional Virtue** of toleration of the failures, flaws and quirks of others providing a solid orientation to the **Divine Institutions** and the **Laws of Divine Establishment**.

### **#9 – Sharing the Happiness of God**

This is the culmination or maximized development of inner happiness, contentment and mental stability from **Progress in the Spiritual Life** as a result of the accumulation of Maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.

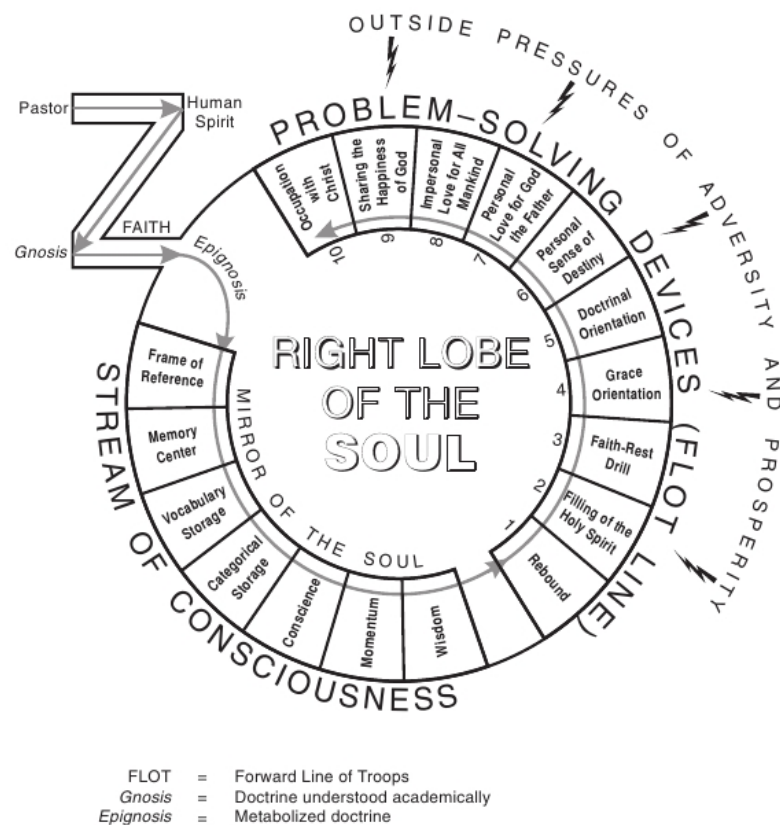
### **#10 – Occupation with the Person of The Lord Jesus, The Christ**

This is the complete development of the Love for God as Advanced Personal Love for God from maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Soul usually referred to as Occupation with the Person of The Lord Jesus, The Christ.

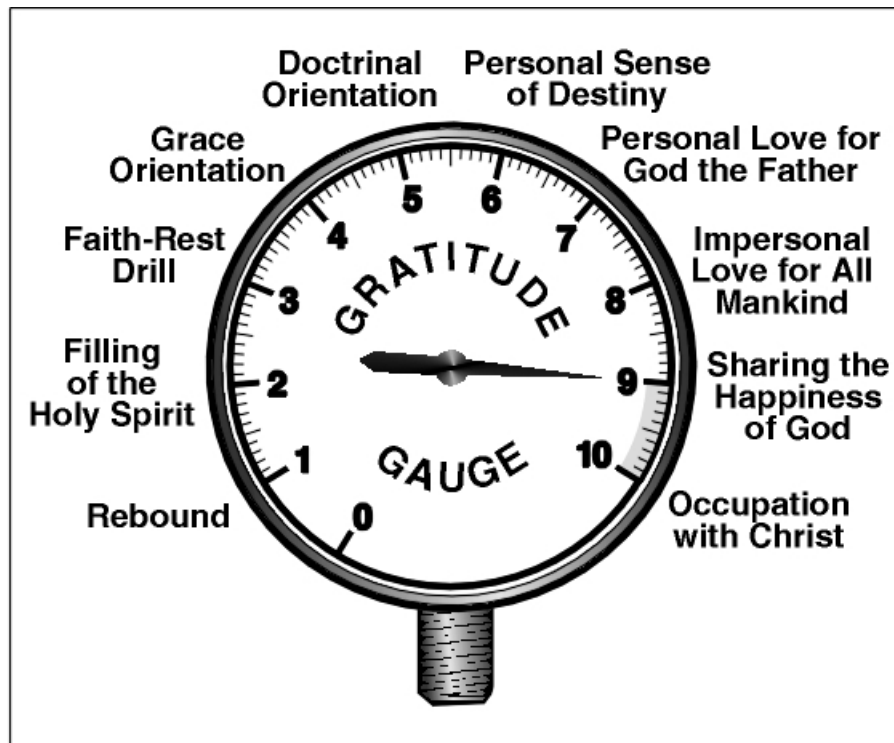
For a more complete descriptions see **“Understand the Problem Solving Devices”**

## **Problem Solving Devices on the Forward Line of Troops**

### **CREATION OF PROBLEM-SOLVING DEVICES**



## The Problem Solving Devices & The Gratitude Gauge



The gratitude gauge is an invisible measure in the soul that indicates the progress of the believer's rapport and relationship with God. The gauge assesses incremental increases of capacity in the spiritual life. Each increment reflects one of the ten problem-solving devices deployed on the FLOT line of the soul. The gauge registers "1" when the believer employs rebound. When the believer metabolizes doctrine, he advances by spiritual growth to the highest reading of "10"—occupation with Christ. At this pinnacle of the spiritual life the mature believer achieves maximum capacity for virtue, honor, and integrity; for life, love, and happiness; and the divine viewpoint necessary to solve problems and glorify God to the maximum.

1992 Spiritual Dynamics Series  
31 December 1996, Lesson Number 986+

©1996 by R. B. Thieme, Jr.  
All rights reserved

Return to the [Table of Contents](#)

### **The Divine Dynasphere**

The Power System of God

For a detailed discussion see:

*The Interlocking System of Virtue and Love*

### **Gate #1 – Filling of God the Holy Spirit**

Power Gate of the System

The indwelling of God the Holy Spirit initiated for every believer in this Church



Age at the point of Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God plus the Royal Priesthood of each and every believer based on the Baptism of God the Holy Spirit placing him into union with Christ makes it possible for the believer to be under the Filling of God the Holy Spirit.

The purpose is to provide Perceptibility, Cognition, Inculcation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine

½ of the Spirituality Envelope

**Gate #2 – Basic Christian Modus Operandi**

Basic Faith Rest Drill (5 stages), Logistical Grace support

Rebound Procedure to recover Perceptibility

Objectivity for the Intake of Bible Doctrine

Function under the [Royal Family Honor Code](#) and effective Worship

Beginning of the Perception Envelope

**Gate #3 – The Authority Envelope – Teachability**

Development of Enforced & Genuine Humility – foundational Virtue

Proper function under authority

Teachability from God the Holy Spirit under the Grace Apparatus for Perception

**Gate #4 – Orientation Envelope**

Establishing Bible Doctrine as Priority #1

Understanding and orienting to Basics concerning GRACE

Gates 1-4 support Gate 5 the Momentum Gate

**Gate #5 – Advanced Christian Modus Operandi – Basic Spiritual Momentum**

Consistency in Faith Rest Drill (5 stages) functions

Reception – Listen, Concentrate & learn Bible Doctrine

Retention – Functional Knowledge from faith acceptance

Recall – Application of “metabolized” Bible Doctrine to life

Resistance – Avoidance of involvement in the Cosmic Dynaspheres

Accumulation of Metabolized of Bible Doctrine for Momentum in the Spiritual Life

Closing of the Perception Envelope

**Gate #6 – Integrity Envelope – of Virtue**

Motivational Virtue

*Personal Love for God*

Functional Virtue

*Impersonal Love for Mankind*

*Impact Virtue – Sensitivity toward All others*

*Impact Virtue – Thoughtfulness toward All others*

*Impact Virtue – Courtesy toward All others*

*Impact Virtue – Good Manners toward All others*

*Impact Virtue – Accommodating to All others*

*Impact Virtue – Kindness to All others*

*Impact Virtue – Understand toward All others*

*Impact Virtue – Lack of prejudice toward all others*

*Confidence toward God*

*Worship toward God*

*Genuine Humility toward God*

*Inflexibility regarding God & Bible Doctrine*

*Faithfulness to God*

*Courage toward Man*

*Morality toward Man*

*Enforced Humility toward Authority*

*Flexibility regarding every detail of life*

*Consistent Unwavering Responsibility toward Man*

### **Gate #7 – Testing Envelope**

3 Areas of Testing in 9 Categories

- #1 Basic Spiritual Life Testing (3 Categories)
  - ▲ Old Sin Nature
  - ▲ Cosmic Dynasphere I
  - ▲ Cosmic Dynasphere II
- #2 Providential Preventative Momentum Testing (5 Categories)
  - ▲ Thought
  - ▲ People
  - ▲ System
  - ▲ Disaster
  - ▲ Prosperity
- 4 Stages or Levels of Intensity
  - ▲ Providential Preventative Suffering
  - ▲ Basic Momentum Testing
  - ▲ Intermediate Momentum Testing
  - ▲ Advanced or Intensified Momentum Testing
- #3 Evidence Testing (2 Categories)
  - ▲ Toward Man & Life
  - ▲ Toward God

### **Gate #8 – Maturity Envelope – Execution of the Protocol Plan of God**

- ▲ Basic Spiritual Maturity
- ▲ Intermediate Spiritual Maturity
- ▲ Advanced Spiritual Maturity

For a more detailed presentation of the Power System of God see [The Divine Dynasphere](#).

Return to the [Table of Contents](#)

### **The Edification Complex of the Soul**

For those familiar with the Edification Complex of the Soul devised by R. B. Thieme Jr. in his presentations of Bible Doctrine over the course of some 53 years this layout of the Edification

Complex of the Soul is based on his EARLY studies in combination with his later descriptions of the Edification Complex of the Soul, it is a compilation of ALL that he said concerning the structure of the Edification Complex of the Soul. (FF)

### **Foundation**

**The Filling of God the Holy Spirit**, this is Power Option #1, the ultimate power of the Spiritual Life initially provided for the believer at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God when God places the believer into his Divine Dynasphere but must be maintained by consistent use of the Rebound Procedure ([1John 1:9](#)).

### **1<sup>st</sup> Floor**

**Grace Orientation**, comprehending and accepting that Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God is by faith alone in the Substitutionary Spiritual Death of The Lord Jesus the Christ alone and cannot ever be earned, deserved nor added to lest Salvation never be acquired. Understanding in addition that provision for the life of the believer and his function in the Plan of God is based on the WORK of GOD not the believer's efforts. ([Gal 5:21](#))

### **2<sup>nd</sup> Floor**

**Authority Orientation – Humility & Teachability**, this is the opening of the Virtue Envelope of [Gate #3](#) of the Divine Dynasphere with the development of Authority Orientation under adherence to the Laws of Divine Establishment and is the basis for Virtue with the development of Enforced Humility from Enforced Discipline leading to the development of Genuine Humility from Self Discipline, the Humility Envelope as foundational virtue.

### **3<sup>rd</sup> Floor**

**Bible Doctrine Orientation**, this is the clear understanding that from consistent Perception, Cognition, Incultation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine comes the Application of Bible Doctrine to life and that this is the primary *[ESSENTIAL](#)* in the Spiritual Life.

### **4<sup>th</sup> Floor**

**Personal Love for God**, this is the primary Motivational virtue of [Gate #6](#) of the Divine Dynasphere and [Problem Solving Device #7](#) as part of the Integrity Envelope of the Spiritual Life developed only by KNOWING God from consistent Perception, Cognition, Incultation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine.

### **5<sup>th</sup> Floor**

**Impersonal, Unconditional Love for Mankind**, this is the primary Functional Virtue of the Integrity Envelope of ([Gate #6](#) of the Divine Dynasphere and [Problem Solving Device #8](#), and initially develops from the motivation from Personal Love for God and an understanding of and adherence to the principles of the [Divine Institutions](#) and [Laws of Divine Establishment](#) under the concept of Live and Let Live.

## **6<sup>th</sup> Floor**

**Relaxed Mental Attitude**, this is a complete lack of Motivational Arrogance, Mental Attitude Arrogance and Mental Attitude Sins as a result of the believer approaching or reaching Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God from consistency in Post Salvation Epistemological Rehabilitation by Perception, Cognition, Incultation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine.

## **7<sup>th</sup> Floor**

**Mastery of the Details of Life**, this is a complete understanding that everything in one's life is a detail and basically inconsequential in the Protocol Plan of God where Bible Doctrine is the only ESSENTIAL in the Christian Way of Life, so that the believer is content when he has the details and content when he lacks the details recognizing that the SOURCE of the details is vastly more important than the details themselves.

## **8<sup>th</sup> Floor**

**Sharing the Happiness of God**, is developed from a Relaxed Mental Attitude with maximum inner happiness, contentment, stability and peace as a result of the accumulation of a maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul providing capacity for life

In order to reduce the size of this document the graphic file concerning the Edification Complex of the Soul can be viewed and downloaded at:

[ECS](#)

For a more complete description of the Edification Complex of the Soul see:  
“[Understanding the Edification Complex of the Soul](#)”

Return to the [Table of Contents](#)

## **Four Spiritual Mechanics of the Protocol Plan of God**

- ↗ [Filling of God the Holy Spirit](#)
- ↗ Perception, Cognition, Incultation and [Metabolization Bible Doctrine](#)
- ↗ Development and Deploying of the [10 Problem Solving Devices](#)
- ↗ Execution of the [Sophisticated Spiritual Life](#)

In order to reduce the size of this document the graphic file concerning the 4 Spiritual Mechanics can be viewed and downloaded at:

## 4 Spiritual Mechanics

The systems of testing for the believer have been revised in this document and are available under the [Testing Envelope](#) of the [Power System of God](#) the Divine Dynasphere.

Return to the [Table of Contents](#)

### Grace Apparatus for Perception – Operation Z

**Operation Z** is the structured involvement and mechanical process of learning Bible Doctrine based on the Filling of God the Holy Spirit under his mentorship ministry and with the believer functioning under Positive Volition Faith as a non-meritorious system of perception. It begins when the Pastor Teacher teaches Bible Doctrine which God the Holy Spirit takes, when Positive Volition exists on the part of the believer, and moves into the Human Spirit. Simultaneously God the Holy Spirit moves this Doctrine from the Human Spirit into the Left Lobe of the Soul, in order for it to become academic knowledge, (gr) gnosis, for academic comprehension. Here the understood or comprehended Bible Doctrine is staged for the believer to use his volition to accept or reject it on the basis of nonmeritorious Faith. Accepting the Bible Doctrine by faith results in its being transferred again by God the Holy Spirit to the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul becoming “epignosis” knowledge or Metabolized Bible Doctrine. In the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul accumulation of this “metabolized” or accepted Bible Doctrine then saturates the compartments of the soul and transforms the soul of the believer. It eventually becomes sufficient in its accumulation and acceptance for application to life as wisdom, (gr) sophia. This process is a GRACE benefit from God and is therefore labeled the [Grace Apparatus for Perception](#).

This is the mechanic for the Perception, Cognition, Incultation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine for the believer based on the ministry and Filling of God the Holy Spirit under [Operation Z](#). This involves the Concepts and Principles of the 4 Rs:

#### 4 Rs of Perception, Cognition, Incultation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine

- ▲ Reception – the consistent Perception, Cognition, Incultation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine under Stage 1 of the Faith Rest Drill (5 categories)•
- ▲ Retention – the Faith transfer of the learned Bible Doctrine under the ministry of God the Holy Spirit to the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul where it is stored as memory, vocabulary and categories of Bible Doctrine modifying the Frame of Reference and Norms and Standards of the soul.
- ▲ Recall – the Faith application of Bible Doctrine by the:
  - Claiming one or more of the 7000+ promises of God in the bible.
  - Using doctrinal principles to support these promises.
  - Developing doctrinal Rationales from the combination of these promises and



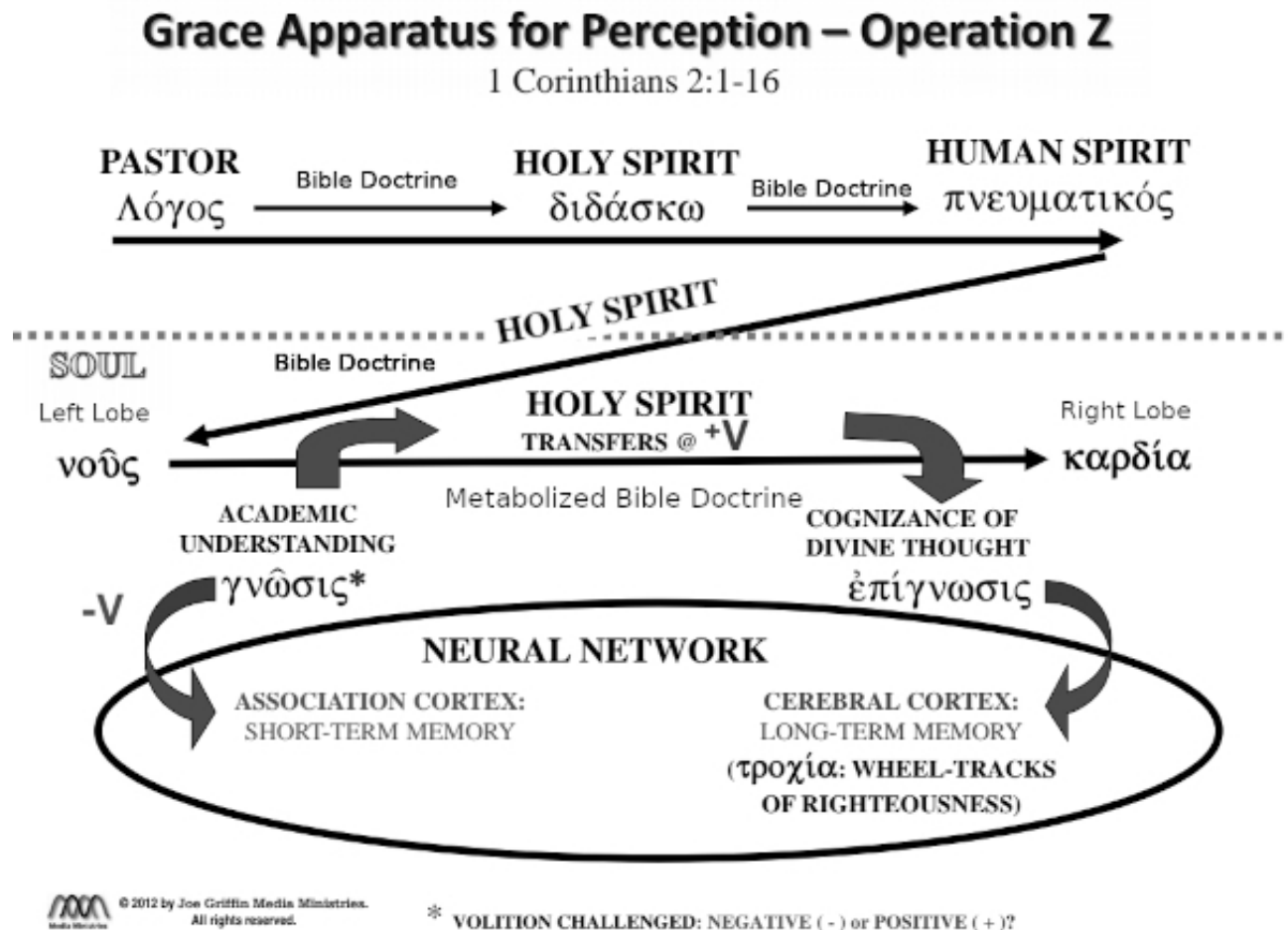
principles.

- Reaching doctrinal conclusions to control or overcome the situation.
- ▲ Resistance – to the influence of Evil and temptations from the Old Sin Nature to engage in functions within the Cosmic Dynaspheres.

### **Malfunction of the Grace Apparatus for Perception**

If one does not transfer academic knowledge accumulated in the Left Lobe of the Soul into the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul by faith he cannot develop Divine Viewpoint thinking to apply to situations. When a believer tries to apply what has been accumulated in the Left Lobe of the Soul as academic knowledge he always ends with Human Viewpoint thinking because the Left Lobe of the Soul merges this knowledge into his background conscience and unbeliever Norms and Standards to provide application. Therefore, one cannot apply Bible Doctrine from the Left Lobe of the Soul to any situation as (gr) gnosis because he will apply it in a Human Viewpoint application because the application would be drawn from the background conscience built up from childhood to the point of Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God. For application of Bible Doctrine to circumstances in life the believer needs to draw on the Norms and Standards of his Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul where Bible Doctrine has been “metabolized” by faith and then come to Divine Viewpoint Doctrinal conclusions from these Norms and Standards. This emphasizes the importance of the completion of FAITH PERCEPTION under Operation Z the Grace Apparatus for Perception. Even clearly understanding a situation or circumstance in life but NOT merging this understanding into the Bible Doctrine of the Plan of God metabolized into the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul by FAITH will result in failure to come to effective solutions. This results every time when Bible Doctrine is not metabolized into the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul by faith and cycled in the Right Lobe of the Soul to modify the Frame of Reference and Norms and Standards so that there will only be Human Viewpoint available for application from background Norms and Standards and Frame of Reference, NO Divine Viewpoint.

## Grace Apparatus & Operation Z



Return to the [Table of Contents](#)

### Faith Rest Drill (5 stages)

#### Stage #1 – Faith Perception

Under the ministry of [God the Holy Spirit](#) and functioning through the [Grace Apparatus for Perception](#), Operation Z the believer under Positive Volition motivation inculcates Bible Doctrine and by faith acceptance of it metabolizes it into the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul as (gr) Epignosis Doctrine. This Metabolized Bible Doctrine is then available to be used for application to the situations and circumstances of his life.

#### Stage #2 – Claiming Promises

From the [Metabolized Bible Doctrine](#) in his Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul the believer extracts any of the over 7000 promises from God found in the scripture to stabilize his thinking when he is under outside pressure from adversity or prosperity in his life.

### **Stage #3 – Adding Supportive Doctrinal Principles**

From the [Metabolized Bible Doctrine](#) in the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of his Soul the believer adds individual inculcated (gr) Epignosis Bible Doctrine principles to the promises to support them in order to further stabilize his thinking under pressure.

### **Stage #4 – Forming Bible Doctrine Rationales**

From the [Metabolized Bible Doctrine](#) in the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of his Soul the believer takes the combined Promises of God and the Principles of Bible Doctrine and merges these with Categories of Bible Doctrine to form Rational Thinking as Doctrinal Rationales to solidify his Divine Viewpoint thinking under the outside pressures of life.

### **Stage #5 – Reaching Bible Doctrinal Conclusions**

From the Promises, Principles, Categories and Rationales of Bible Doctrine recalled and developed from the [Metabolized Bible Doctrine](#) in the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of his Soul the believer then reaches Doctrinal Divine Viewpoint Conclusions which SOLVE whatever the problem may be and CONTROLS whatever circumstance or situation he finds himself under.

Return to the [Table of Contents](#)

### **Reversionism**

This is truly a 9 stage process in the soul of the believer where he reverts to a status in his Spiritual Life which is equivalent to his being an Unbeliever as a result of rejection of Bible Doctrine. It is a reversal of priorities, attitudes, affections, accompanied by the destruction of impersonal love, and a change in his manner of operation and personality to what it was prior to Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God. This entry as does the entrance into the Interlocking System of Arrogance and Interlocking System of Antagonistic Emotional Hatred begins with some level of Initial Negative Volition toward Bible Doctrine and includes:

- ✧ Initial Negative Volition toward Bible Doctrine
- ✧ Reaction & Distraction from the Spiritual Life
- ✧ Frantic Search for Happiness
- ✧ Operation Boomerang
- ✧ Emotional Revolt of the Soul
- ✧ Locked in Negative Volition
- ✧ Black Out of the Soul
- ✧ Scar Tissue of the Soul
- ✧ Reverse Process Reversionism

### **Definition of Reversionism**

To revert means: to come or go back, as to a former condition, period, or subject, to return to an ancestral type. Reversionism is the believer returning to the condition or ancestral type

which he occupied prior to making Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God through faith alone in The Lord Jesus, The Christ alone. ([2Pet 2:20-21](#), [James 4:4](#), [1Tim 1:19](#), [2Tim 2:13](#), [2John 9](#), [James 1:22-24](#), [Prov 14:14](#), [Hos 10:2](#))

### **Preliminary Negative Volition toward Bible Doctrine**

This is the initial rejection, disinterest or indifference of the believer regarding the realm of Bible Doctrine from scripture, and also of the unbeliever with regard to the Bible Doctrine principles related to the [Laws of Divine Establishment](#) and [Divine Institutions](#) provided for the protection of the Human Race by God.

### **Reaction and Distraction**

This believer tends to react to obnoxious or irritating individuals, groups, organizations, situations, circumstances or conditions in his life instead of using Bible Doctrine and Impersonal Unconditional Love for Mankind to respond to them and focus on the Plan of God and Purpose of God for his life.

### **Frantic Search for Happiness**

The believer who is consistently reacting to situations and individuals in his life discerns that his life is one of misery and becomes determined to find some system or thing which will bring him happiness.

### **Operation Boomerang**

The believer Frantically searching for Happiness has not achieved what he sought by focusing on the details of life but has invariably provided greater Self Induced Misery for himself. This causes intensification of Negative Volition toward God's Grace system and a greater Reaction to circumstances in his life with a huge intensification of his search for something that will bring him happiness.

### **Emotional Revolt of the Soul**

Emotion, which is designed to RESPOND to the thinking of the soul, as a result of involvement in the prior stages of reversionism revolts and takes control of the soul forcing the mentality of the soul to the side.

### **Locked In Negative Volition**

At this stage of reversionism the Negative Volition of the believer interlocks with [Negative Volition Arrogance](#) and possibly [Negative Volition Antagonistic Emotional Hatred](#) so that he

tends to become saturated in Arrogance and possibly totally antagonistic and HOSTILE toward Bible Doctrine, God and the Grace Plan of God.

### **Black Out of the Soul**

Locked in Negative Volition prevents the acceptance of Bible Doctrine so that it cannot be metabolized and this sets up a vacuum in the Soul which must be filled with information and thus draws in information but the only thing left to assimilate are the LIES of the principles of EVIL, the Plan of Satan.

### **Scar Tissue of the Soul**

The believer accumulating the LIES of EVIL causes his soul to become damaged and scarred and therefore unable to learn, process, accept or circulate Bible Doctrine.

### **Reverse Process Reversionism**

This is the PEAK of Christian Apostasy, and often Degeneracy and Antagonism toward the Grace Plan of God with total acceptance of the Plan of Satan driving him back into a Status Quo equivalent to the unbeliever but still possessing Eternal Life Salvation.

For a more detailed explanation of the process and 8 stages of reversionism see:

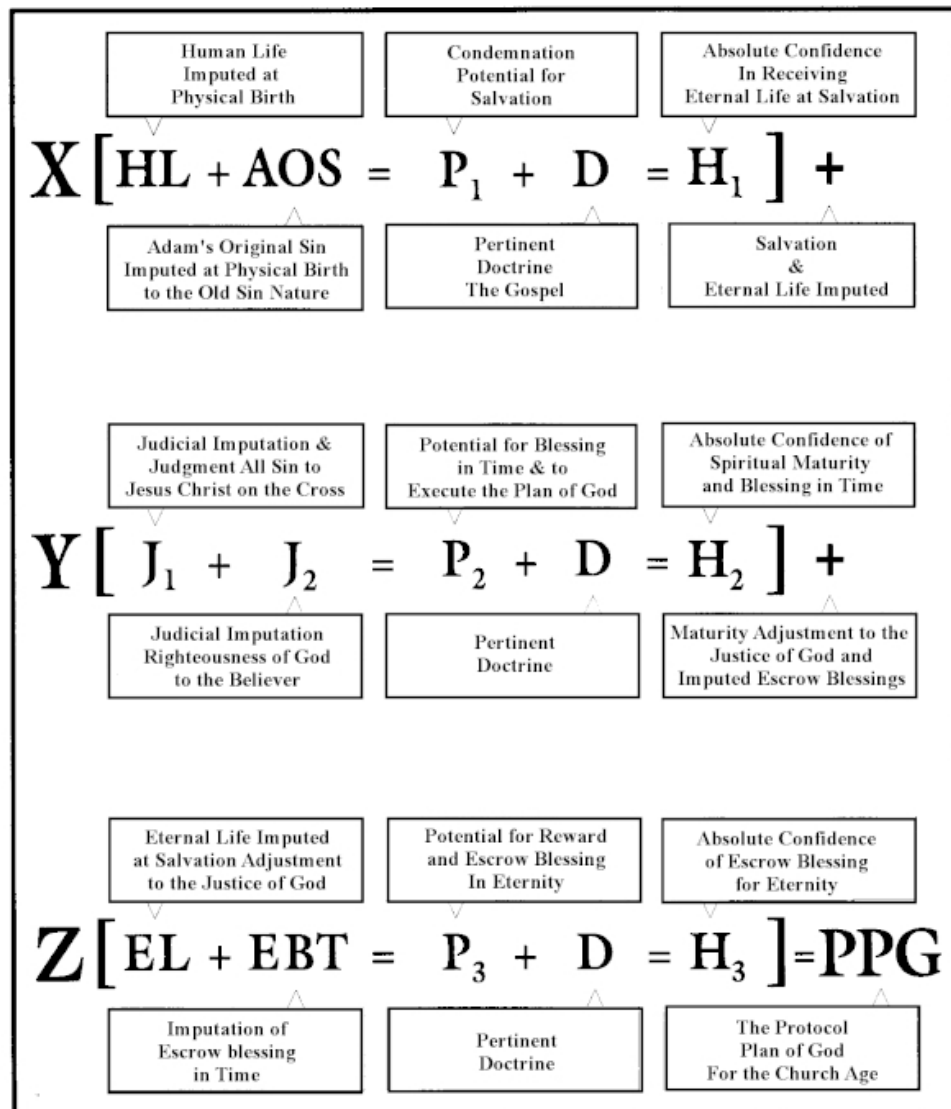
**[“Reversionism”](#)**

Return to the **[Table of Contents](#)**



## [The Equation of Hope](#)

### THE EQUATION OF HOPE



For a detailed explanation of this equation see R. B. Thieme, Jr.,  
*The Integrity of God* (Houston: R. B. Thieme, Jr., Bible Ministries,  
1988), 174-184.

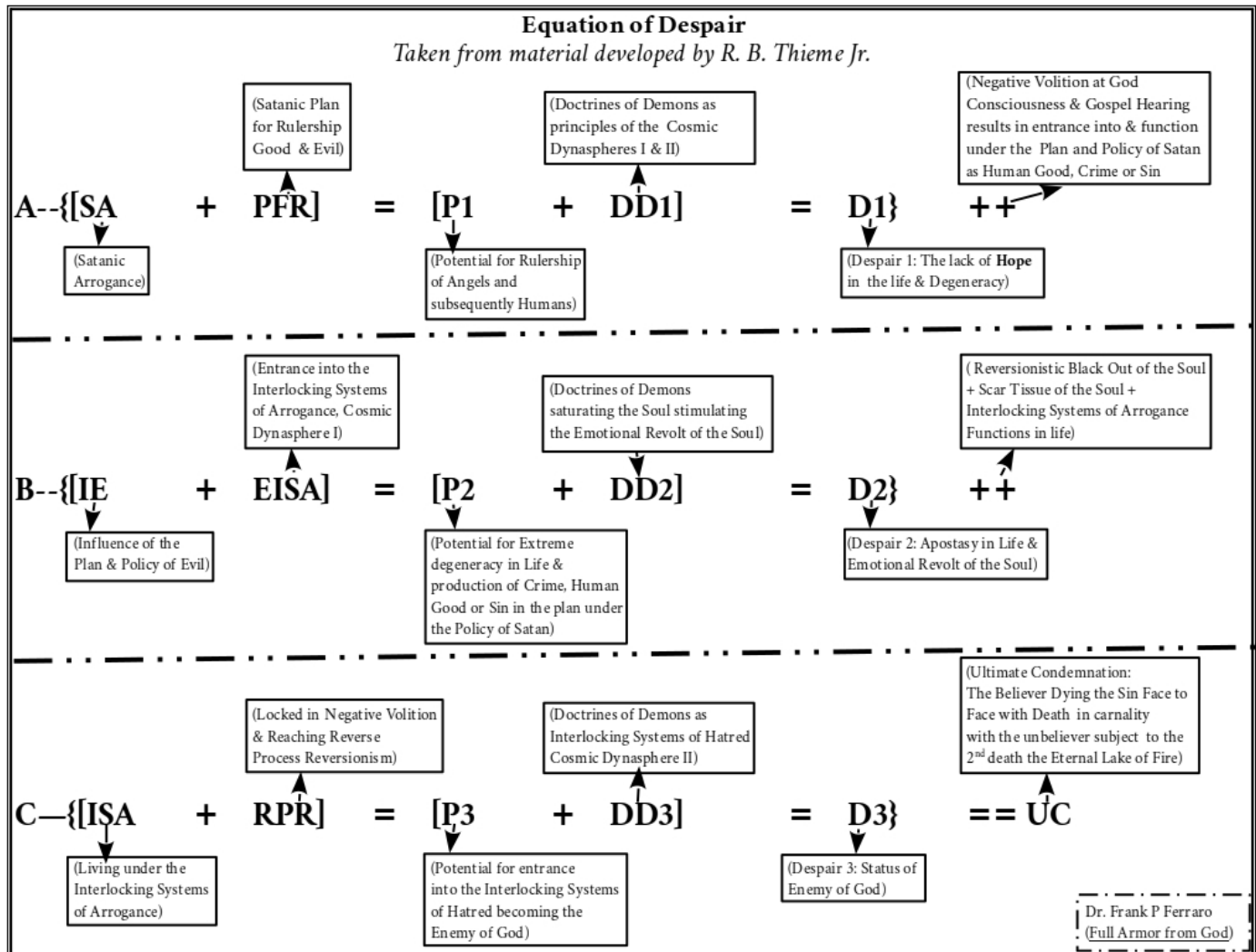
Philippians 3:12  
22 May 1994, Lesson Numbers 414\*  
© 1994 by R. B. Thieme, Jr. All rights reserved

A clearer copy of the Equation of Hope can be viewed and downloaded at:

[Equation of Hope](#)

Return to the [Table of Contents](#)

## The Equation of Despair



Return to the [Table of Contents](#)

## **10 Unique Factors of the Church Age**

### **#1: Baptism of God the Holy Spirit**

The ministry of God the Holy Spirit placing the believer into union with The Lord Jesus, The Christ resulting in current and retroactive positional sanctification and his Status Quo as Royal Family of God.

### **#2: Indwelling of the Trinity**

God the Holy Spirit

God the Father

The Lord Jesus, The Christ

### **#3: Protocol Plan of God, the Divine Dynasphere, the Power System of God**

### **#4: 40 Assets for the Spiritual Life**

### **#5: 2 Royal Commissions for every Believer**

Royal Priesthood – representing self before God

Royal Ambassadorship – representing The Lord Jesus, The Christ to mankind

### **#6: Mystery Doctrines of the Church Age never before revealed**

### **#7: 5 Unique Problem Solving Devices of the Adult Spiritual Life**

#6 Personal Sense of Destiny

#7 Personal Love for God

#8 Impersonal Unconditional Love for Mankind

#9 Sharing the Happiness of God

#10 Occupation with the Person of The Lord Jesus, The Christ

### **#8: Providential Perventative Momentum Testing**

Thought

People

System

Disaster

Prosperity

**Evidence Testing both as Undeserved Suffering for Blessing  
Toward God**

Toward People

#9: **Equality of Opportunity**

40 Assets provided to enable ALL Believers to execute the Protocol Plan of God completely.

#10: **Historical Uniqueness of the Church Age**

The Lord Jesus, The Christ controls Human History

Completed Canon of Scripture

No Prophecy to be fulfilled

Dispensation of the *Invisible* Hero Mature Believer

Intensification of the Angelic Conflict

Return to the [Table of Contents](#)

## National Debt

This file shows what needs to occur as of June 2023 regarding the situation concerning repayment of the national debt!

How Much is 1 Trillion Dollars.....REALLY?						
	One	One	One Hundred	One	One	One
One	Hundred	Thousand	Thousand	Million	Billion	Trillion
1	100	1,000	100,000	1,000,000	1,000,000,000	1,000,000,000,000
How many years to spend 1 Trillion Dollars at 1 Million Dollars per DAY!?!?						
Days / Year	Dollars / Day	Dollars / Year	Years / Trillion			
365	\$1,000,000	\$365,000,000	2739.73			
Starting in 3BC when Jesus was Born how much longer to spend 1 Trillion Dollars?!?!?						
Jesus' Birthday	Current Year	Elapsed Years	Years Left to spend it ALL!!			
3	2023	2026	713.73	Spending \$1,000,000 per day!!!		
How Long to repay the National Debt at the proposed Ceiling of \$51 Trillion?!?!?!?!?						
Days / Year	Dollars / Day	Dollars / Year	Years to Repay			
365	\$1,000,000	\$365,000,000	139,726			\$51,000,000,000,000
Proposed Lifespan	Average US Citizen's Age	Lifespan Remaining	Current US Population	Working US Population	Debt / US Citizen	Amount Repaid / Year
76.4	39	37.4	333,300,000	128,346,299	\$397,362	\$10,625
The working population in the US will be repaying \$10,625 PER YEAR for the next 37.4 years, for some that will be the rest of their lives to pay off the national debt if they start today!!!!						
It is a good thing the Chinese have 1,455,610,219 people cause it will be easier for each of them when China takes over the US!						

Return to the [Table of Contents](#)



### [The Cogs of Carnality](#)

This graphic is a fantastic depiction of the results of Motivational Arrogance moving the believer into Functional Arrogance and various levels of PRODUCTION under Evil and eventuating in his DEVOLVING into Antagonistic Emotional Hatred as he OOZES down through the 8 stages of Reversionism and enters Cosmic Dynasphere II.

In order to reduce the size of this document the graphic file concerning the Cogs of Carnality can be viewed and downloaded at:

### [Cogs of Carnality](#)

Return to the [Table of Contents](#)

## **8 Characteristics of the Plan of God**

- ▲ **Purpose** – For the Believer to Glorify The Lord Jesus, The Christ by Achieving tactical victory in the Spiritual Life through spiritual momentum from consistent Post Salvation Epistemological Rehabilitation by Perception, Cognition, Incultation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine.
- ▲ **Objective** – For the Believer to advance in the Power System of God, the Divine Dynasphere to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and complete construction of his Edification Complex of the Soul again by means of Spiritual Momentum.
- ▲ **Policy** – Grace as the administrative system of the Plan of God for the Church Age believer who is part of the Royal Family of God in contrast to believers in other dispensations which are FAMILY of God.
- ▲ **System** – The Divine Dynasphere, the POWER SYSTEM of God
  - With 3 Categories of Virtue First as priorities in the Plan of God.
    - △ Humility – Basic Foundational Virtue directed toward Authority
    - △ Motivational Virtue – ALWAYS directed toward God as a function of the Royal Priesthood but which must be predicated by Knowledge of God from consistent Post Salvation Epistemological Rehabilitation by Perception, Cognition, Incultation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine.
    - △ Functional Virtue – Always directed toward Man and Circumstances in one's life as a function of the Royal Ambassadorship
- ▲ **Point of Reference** – the Justice of God as ½ of the Integrity of God or Holiness of God which is composed of 2 attributes:
  - Justice of God
  - Righteousness of God
    - △ What the Righteousness of God demands the Justice of God must execute under motivation from the Love of God.
- ▲ **Authority** – Bible Doctrine, the Word of God with delegation of this authority to the spiritual gift of Pastor Teacher with proper preparation, training and study to communicate principles of GRACE under this authority.
- ▲ **Result** – Good decisions from a position of strength by the believer which provides for personal control of one's own life, learning to treat all people as individual persons and with the development of a Personal Sense of Destiny.
- ▲ **Enemy** – Satan's Cosmic Dynaspheres, the Power Systems of Satan with his plan of EVIL and his production in that plan of Human Good, Sin or Crime.

### **Priorities of the Power System of God**

As the believer advances from Spiritual Infancy in his development in the Spiritual Life he continues to change his priorities of life based on his level of inculcated and Metabolized Bible Doctrine. He will progressively set priorities so that his focus in life remains primarily on his Spiritual Life and his Spiritual Growth. These priorities are part of the details needed to successfully execute to completion the Protocol Plan of God. The priorities of the Power System of God, the Divine Dynasphere, the Protocol Plan of God include:

- In the Plan of God, **Mandates First**
- In the System of God, **Virtue First**
- In the Purpose of God, **Christ First**
- In the Policy of God, **Grace First**
- In the Objective of God, **Momentum First**
- In the Authority of God, **Bible Doctrine First**

The believer who does not maintain the priority of the Objective of God by consistent Post Salvation Epistemological Rehabilitation from Perception, Cognition, Incultation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine has put other things first in his Spiritual Life and will NOT advance and will inevitably become a LOSER believer, losing his eternal rewards but NOT his salvation.

### **Mandates of the Power System of God**

In addition the Power System of God has Mandates which must become the 1<sup>st</sup> priority of the believer:

- 1<sup>st</sup> – LEARN Bible Doctrine in the system.
  - ▲ Therefore the first factor in the Power System of God is to constantly make good decisions from a position of strength, within the Divine Viewpoint developed from Metabolized Bible Doctrine inculcated into the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
- 2<sup>nd</sup> – Retain personal control over one's own life.
  - ▲ If believers do not use Metabolized Bible Doctrine to control self then they have NO CONTROL over their lives.

Return to the [\*\*Table of Contents\*\*](#)

## Doctrinal Rationales

God keeps the believer alive for a reason and no believer could ever survive in the world ruled by Satan without God's Logistical Grace support. The believer is a royal priest and must take responsibility for representing himself before God in both successes and failures. He is a royal ambassador and is delegated the responsibility of representing The Lord Jesus the Christ to Mankind in his thinking and overt actions.

The Development of the function of the believer under the Faith Rest Drill <sup>(5 Stages)</sup> ultimately comes to where he can take Bible Doctrine promises provided by God from the Word of God and combine them with Bible Doctrine Principles and form these into Bible Doctrine Rationales to be used to come to Divine Viewpoint, Bible Doctrine Oriented, conclusions about the situations or circumstances in his life and there by to SOLVE all his life's pressures, adversities and problems. Some of the Bible Doctrine Rationales are:

<b>Essence of God Rationale</b>	<b>Afortiori Rationale</b>
<b>Logistical Grace Rationale</b>	<b>Plan of God Rationale</b>
<b>Authority of God Rationale</b>	<b>Sovereignty of God Rationale</b>
<b>Transcendence of God Rationale</b>	<b>The Grace Policy of God Rationale</b>
<b>Will of God Rationale</b>	<b>Faithfulness of God Rationale</b>
<b>Wrath of God Rationale</b>	<b>Glorification of God Rationale</b>
<b>Jeshurun Status Rationale</b>	<b>Pleroma Status Rationale</b>
<b>Imputation Rationale</b>	<b>Condemnation Rationale</b>
<b>Wall of Fire protection Rationale</b>	<b>Suffering for Blessing Rationale</b>
<b>Ambassadorship Rationale</b>	<b>Priesthood Rationale</b>
<b>Kenosis Rationale</b>	<b>Unlimited Atonement Rationale</b>
<b>The Word of God-Truth Rationale</b>	<b>Eternal security Rationale</b>
<b>Spirituality Rationale</b>	<b>Volitional Responsibility Rationale</b>
<b>God's Perfect Timing Rationale</b>	<b>Living in Light of Eternity Rationale</b>
<b>Dispensational Rationale</b>	<b>Supreme Court of Heaven Rationale</b>
<b>Christ Controls History Rationale</b>	<b>Uniqueness of Jesus Christ Rationale</b>
<b>Covenants of God Rationale</b>	<b>Holy Spirit Ministry Rationale</b>
<b>Victory of God Rationale</b>	<b>Divine Decree Rationale</b>
<b>Protocol Plan of God</b>	<b>Plan of God Priorities Rationale</b>
<b>Plan of God Mandates Rationale</b>	<b>The Depravity of man Rationale</b>
<b>Fall of Satan Rationale</b>	<b>Angelic Conflict Rationale</b>
<b>Cosmic System Rationale</b>	<b>Fall of Man Rationale</b>

Salvation Rationale	Royal Family of God Rationale
Sanctification Rationale	Royal Family Honor Code Rationale
Equation of Hope Rationale	Equation of Despair Rationale
Perseverance in the Plan of God Rationale	Rebound Rationale
Virtue Rationale	Reciprocity Rationale
Spiritual Growth Rationale	10 Problem Solving Devices Rationale
Happiness and Contentment Rationale	Orientation Rationale
Gratitude Rationale	Power of Prayer Rationale
Christian Way of Life Rationale	Slave Market of Sin Rationale
Slave or Servant of God Rationale	Laws of Divine Establishment Rationale
Divine Institution Rationale	Negative Volition Rationale
Resurrection Rationale	Power Systems Rationale

For a more complete description and breakdown of the doctrinal rationales see:  
[“Bible Doctrine Rationales”](#)

Return to the [Table of Contents](#)



## Cosmic Dynasphere Comparison

Cosmic Dynasphere I	Cosmic Dynasphere II
Prehistoric Life of Satan in the Angelic Conflict	Historic Life of Satan in the Angelic Conflict Appeal Trial
The Interlocking System of Arrogance	The Interlocking System of Antagonistic Emotional Hatred
Motivational & Functional System of Arrogance	Motivational & Functional System of Antagonism
<i>When the believer gets into functions under EVIL he must realize that he is personally MOTIVATED to do so.</i>	
Arrogant Emphasis on Preoccupation with Self	Antagonistic Emphasis on People, Circumstances, God, Grace & Christ
<i>The Believer in Cosmic Dynasphere II has a BAD Attitude toward people, circumstances and with antagonism toward God, Christ, Grace and God's priorities:</i> <i>Plan of God - Mandates first</i> <i>System of God - Virtue First</i> <i>Purpose of God - Christ first</i> <i>Policy of God - Grace First</i> <i>Objective of God - Bible Doctrine first</i>	
A System of Interlocking Arrogance	A System of Interlocking Antagonism, Emotionalism and Hatred
<i>Cosmic Dynasphere I is the key to understanding our original parents who were occupied with SELF. If Ish had been occupied with The Lord Jesus, The Christ he would have rejected the fruit and left the woman to be cast outside of the garden. If The woman had been occupied with The Lord Jesus, The Christ she would have rejected the conversation with the pet indwelt by Satan.</i> <i>When persistently residing in the Cosmic Dynasphere I, the Arrogance system, when the area of arrogance involvement is challenged by TRUTH, this results in entrance into and residence in Cosmic Dynasphere II, the Antagonism system which produces terrible Antagonisms toward Truth, God, Jesus Christ, People and Circumstances</i>	
Targets the Ego, the Self Consciousness of the soul emphasizing self to the exclusion of Others	Targets The Lord Jesus, The Christ, Bible Doctrine, God, People, Circumstances of life.
Emphasis on Self in contrast to God	Emphasis on Human Viewpoint in contrast to

Cosmic Dynasphere I	Cosmic Dynasphere II
	Divine Viewpoint
Emphasis on Satan's Attitude at his Fall	Emphasis on Satan's Attitude at his Appeal of the Judgment of God & the Creation and Fall of Man
<i>At the time of Satan's Fall, Lucifer had more advantages than any other creature who had ever lived or ever will live and his preoccupation with self at his fall is represented by the functions in Cosmic Dynasphere I the Interlocking System of Arrogance. His attitude regarding everything concerning the creation and fall of man (thus at his Appeal being Granted) is represented by the functions in Cosmic Dynasphere II the Interlocking System of Antagonistic Emotional Hatred because he is the GREATEST Hater or Antagonist of God ever to exist.</i>	
The Attitude, Philosophy, Principles of the Policy of Satan to Rule Angelic Creation during the Revolution of the Prehistoric Angelic Conflict.	The Attitude, Philosophy, Principles of the Policy of Satan to Rule Human Creation after the approval of his Appeal, during Human History.
Cosmic Dynasphere I involvement results in inculcation with the Attitude and thinking of Satan PRIOR to Man's Creation	Cosmic Dynasphere II involvement results in inculcation with the attitude and thinking of Satan AFTER God granted his appeal & the creation and fall of Man
Reflects Satan's Policy and Philosophy as Ruler of Fallen Angels	Reflects Satan's Policy and Philosophy as Ruler of this World & Fallen Man
Results in Slavery to Self	Results in Slavery to Satan

Return to the [Table of Contents](#)

## The 10 Characteristics of Spiritual Adulthood

- **Tranquility of Soul**
  - ▲ From Metabolized Bible Doctrine accumulated into the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul
- **Stability of Mentality**
  - ▲ From Metabolized Bible Doctrine accumulated into the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul
- **Composure Marked by Self Assurance**
  - ▲ Accompanied by Tranquility and Stability in the Soul from Metabolized Bible Doctrine accumulated in the soul which will cause the believer to engage in self evaluation and come to the recognition of personal sin and the necessity for the consistent use of the rebound procedure.
- **Grace Orientation to Life**
  - ▲ Causing the believer to KNOW that all that he is and has is provided by God and any and all suffering and adversity in his life has a purpose in the Plan of God for HIS BENEFIT, ([Rom 8:28](#)) and while one might not know the cause he can, in the Protocol Plan of God, the Divine Dynasphere, the [Power System of God](#), handle the effects.
- **Bible Doctrine Orientation to Reality**
  - ▲ Causing the believer to recognize that Bible Doctrine is the only [ESSENTIAL](#) in the Christian Way of Life and that no matter what the cause of suffering or adversity may be or the fact that the results of that suffering COULD make him a very miserable person the misery is eliminated by the Metabolized Bible Doctrine which provides for him Orientation to Reality under the Protocol Plan of God.
- **Good Decisions from a position of Strength**
  - ▲ The result of maintaining consistent Post Salvation Epistemological Rehabilitation which brings Spiritual Advancement or Recovery in the midst of adversity or suffering which brings great blessing from avoiding entanglement in the Interlocking System of Arrogance or Interlocking System of Antagonistic Emotional Hatred.
- **Personal Control of One's Life**
  - ▲ Results because of consistent residence and function in the Divine Dynasphere so that whatever the initial cause of any adversity or suffering may be the believer handles his own life with happiness, peace, tranquility and integrity from maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul and function under the [10 Problem Solving Devices](#).
- **Personal Sense of Destiny**
  - ▲ Understanding clearly that God is perfect and has a plan which is perfect and because of the believer having made Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God, he is inextricably in that plan and part of the Royal Family of God PERMANENTLY and this carries him through ALL the outside pressures of life.
- **Cognitive Expansion from Metabolized Bible Doctrine**
  - ▲ Results from moving into Spiritual Adulthood and developing from Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul,

Cognitive Self Confidence, Cognitive Independence, and Cognitive Invincibility as he progresses through Spiritual Self Esteem to Spiritual Autonomy and eventually Spiritual Maturity.

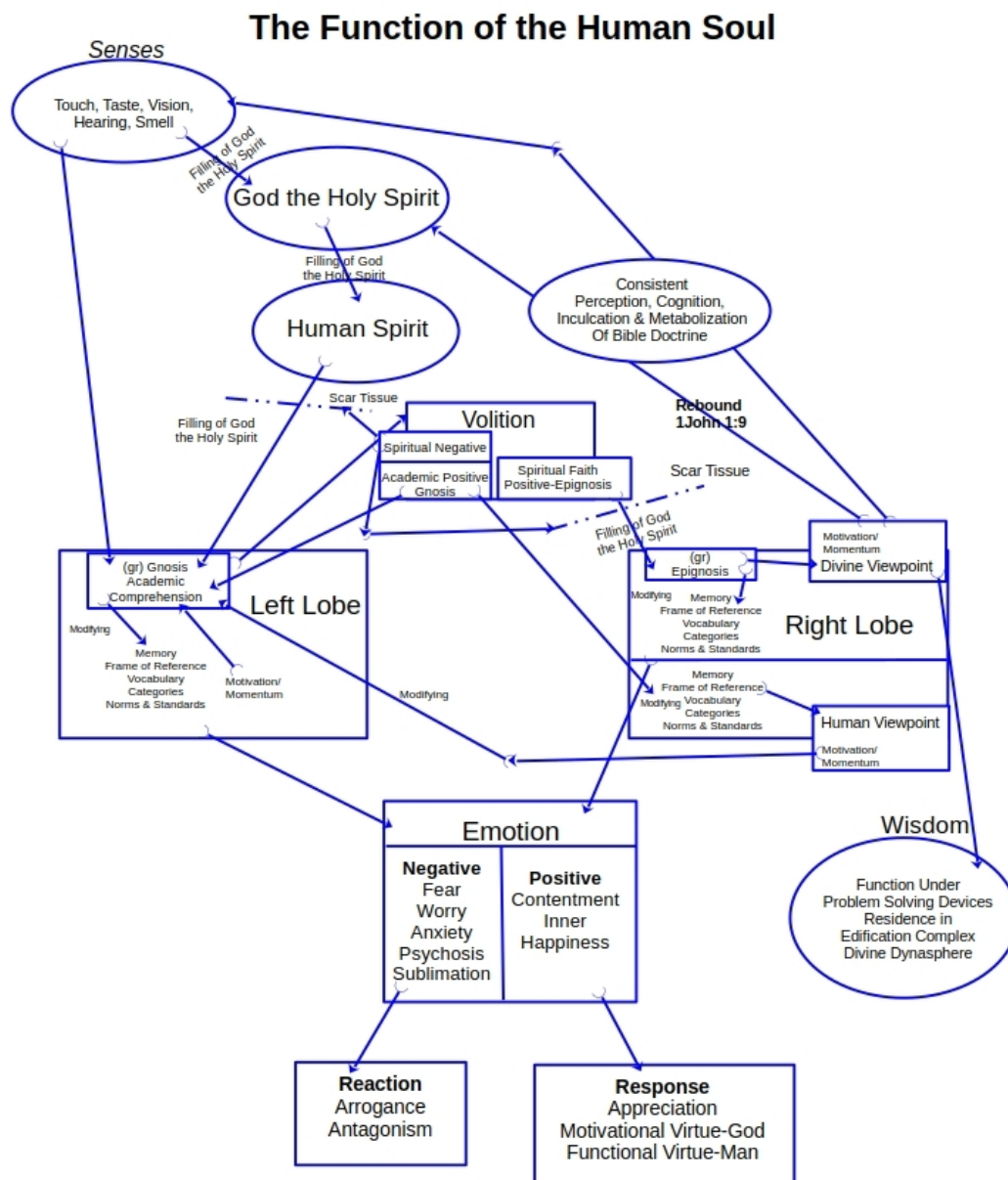
- **Poise and Command of Self**

- ▲ NO MATTER how long adversity or suffering may last or how intense the it may be, the duration and the intensity, like the cause, is inconsequential for the believer residing in the Plan of God, the Power System of God, the Divine Dynasphere because he recognizes his status as Royal Family of God and his permanent residence in the GRACE Plan of God.

Return to the [Table of Contents](#)

## Human Soul Functions

This file depicts in graphic form how information is entered into the human soul and processed for application to one's life situations.



Based on Material Taught by R. B. Thieme Jr. – Copyright © 2024 ALL rights reserved –Dr. Frank P. Ferraro

Return to the [Table of Contents](#)



### Passages Concerning Arrogance

1Chron 10:13-14; Therefore Saul died for his reversionistic treachery against God; in which he was unfaithful to the LORD against the word of the Lord which he did not systematically daily guard, nor keep the command of the LORD, and also for asking counsel from a demon possessed medium, seeking or searching for her. But he had not searched for the LORD for 16 years. Therefore the LORD caused him to slowly die under the Sin Unto Death, and caused to transfer the kingdom over to David the son of Jesse.

1Chron 28:20; Then David said to his son Solomon, Be strong and courageous, therefore be decisive, do not fear, do not lose your poise, for the Lord MY GOD is with you in blessing by association, he never fail you he will never forsake you until the work for the service for the house of the Lord is completed. (Logistical Grace)

1Cor 2:5; That your FAITH or Bible Doctrine cannot or should not, stand or be or exist in the wisdom of men or demon influence, but in the power of God the Divine Dynasphere.

1Cor 2:9-14; But just as it stands Written (Is 64:4), or to use the language of Old Testament Scripture, "Things which Eye has not seen nor ear has heard (empiricism) nor things which have not entered into the Right Lobe of man (rationalism) all the things which God has prepared for those who Love him (Advanced Believers in Reciprocal Love for God) these have not entered their Right Lobes. For to us, the God has revealed them (His plans) to us by means of or through the instrumentality of God the Holy Spirit, for the Spirit searches or investigates all things even the Deep things from God. For who among men or mankind inherently knows or understands the thoughts, motives, memories, deliberations or reflections of a man or all mankind except by means of the spirit of rationalism or empiricism which is in man, even so the thoughts of God no unbeliever knows except the spirit of God or God the Holy Spirit. Now we have not received or do not receive the source and seat of human discernment or the cosmic spirit but the Human spirit or divine source of discernment from the source of God, that we might have inherent and permanent knowledge of the things (Bible Doctrine) having been freely or graciously given to us under the authority of God. Which divine wisdom or spiritual phenomenon things or Bible Doctrine we also speak or teach or communicate by categories, not in words or categories taught by human wisdom, but in words or categories that are taught by or from the source of God the Holy Spirit; explaining or combining with the Human Spirit to teach, spiritual things or phenomena or doctrine to a spiritual apparatus or spiritual persons. But the natural or Soul-ish man or unbeliever (dichotomous) does not grasp or acquire or receive knowledge of the spiritual phenomenon or things or doctrine of or from the Spirit of God, to him they are foolishness or absurd to him, furthermore he is not able to learn or acquire or obtain knowledge of the spiritual phenomenon or the gospel, because they are discerned, understood or perceived spiritually or from the source of God the Holy Spirit.

1Cor 2:16; For, Who has known the thinking of the Lord that we should instruct him, (NO ONE) but we keep on having the thinking of Christ.

1Cor 3:1; "And I brethren cannot speak to you as to spiritual persons, but as to persons under the control of the Old Sin Nature"

1Cor 3:3, For you are still carnal, for since there is jealousy and fragmentation among you, are you not carnal? Are you not walking like unbelievers?

1Cor 3:11-16; For no man can lay any foundation ever again, other than the one which already is laid, which is Jesus Christ. Now if any one keeps on building upon this foundation: gold {Divine Good}, silver {Divine Good}, precious stones {Divine Good}, wood {human good}, hay {energy of the flesh}, stubble or straw {human good}. Every or each man's work or production shall become manifest obvious or evident for the ONE (1) day of the rapture or resurrection of the church at the Judgment Seat of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ which shall declare, reveal or show it, because the day shall receive revealing, be uncovered, in, with or by means of fire. And, the fire shall test the quality of every man's production. If any believer's work or production which he has built upon

the foundation in time remains or stands up having been built on the function of the 3 Spiritual Skills, and it will, he shall receive a reward of conveyance of escrow Surpassing Grace Blessings for Eternity. If any believer's work or production shall be burned, and it is, he shall suffer loss of Escrow Surpassing Blessings and Reward for Eternity, But he himself shall be saved yet so as through fire. Do you not KNOW that your body keeps on being the temple of God and that the Spirit of God keeps on dwelling or cohabiting in you?

1Cor 4:9; For it seems to me or I have concluded, that The God has placed or exhibited us as the Apostles & Pastor Teachers; in the arena LAST of all, as it were, as men or gladiators condemned to death. Because we are or have become under observation as a spectacle to the world {unbelievers}, and to angels, and to men {carnal believers}.

1Cor 5:5; To turn such a one over to Satan for the destruction of his flesh, that the spirit may be delivered from this unpleasantness during the future day of the Lord Jesus.

1Cor 6:9; Do you not know that the unbeliever {does not have the imputed righteousness of Christ} shall not inherit the kingdom of God? Be not deceived! Neither fornicators {in phallic cult}, nor idolaters {extremely religious judges}, nor adulterers {outside of phallic cult sex}, nor homosexual, nor abusers of themselves with mankind {another Greek word for a type of homosexual or pedophile},

1Cor 10:12; Therefore let any one who thinks that he stands having learned a great deal of Church Age doctrine, take heed of the Old Testament Scripture and put together the practical application with the doctrine lest he fall.

1Cor 10:19-21; What do I mean then, that a thing sacrificed to idols is anything, or that an idol is anything, But I say that the thing which the gentiles sacrifice, they sacrifice to Demons, not to God, and I do not want you to become sharers in demons. You cannot drink the cup of the lord and the cup of demons, you cannot partake of the table of the lord and the table of demons.

1Cor 10:22; Shall we provoke the Lord to jealousy? Are we stronger than he?

1Cor 11:18; For in the first place, when you come together in your church, I hear that schisms [fragmentations] exist among you.

1Cor 11:28-30; A person ought to examine himself (Rebound) before he eats of the Break or Drinks of the Cup. For anyone who eats and drinks without recognizing the Body (Perfection of JC in HU) of the Lord, eats and drinks judgment to or on himself. That is why many among you are weak and sick and a number of you have fallen asleep (Sin unto Death [1Thes 4:15])

1Cor 11:31-32; And if we keep on judging ourselves rightly or accurately (1John 1:9) and nothing else, but we (Corinthians) are not and should be, we will not receive judgment from the Justice of God. But when we are judged by the Lord, we are being disciplined so we will not be condemned with the World.

1Cor 12:13; For by means of One Spirit, God the Holy Spirit, we were all baptized into One Body, whether Slaves of free, greek or Jew for we were all made to drink of one spirit, for the body is not one part but many parts.

1Cor 13:1; If I speak in the tongues of men and of angels, but have not love, I am a noisy gong or a sounding brass or clanging cymbal.

1Cor 13:4; Virtue-love is not jealous.

1Cor 13:5-8; Impersonal Unconditional Love does not behave dishonorably does not seek her own things, is not easily provoked, does not THINK EVIL, it does not rejoice at wrong, but rejoices in the right. Love bears all things, believes all things, hopes all things, endures all things. Love ie Filling of God the Holy Spirit, never fails; but if there are gifts of prophecy they shall be totally abolished; whether there are the gift of tongues they will

cease before the abolishing of other temporary spiritual gifts AD70; Or the gift of knowledge it will be abolished.

1Cor 14:35; And if they (ladies) are willing or desire to learn anything of Mystery Bible Doctrine from someone, they should and some do, they should ask their husbands at home the question about what they are learning, for it is improper, disgraceful, against protocol for a woman to speak and disrupt leadership in church.

1Cor 15:21-22; For since by man came death, by man came also the resurrection from the dead, For as in Adam all die, so also in Christ shall all be made alive.

1Cor 15:34; Awaken from your drunken stupor of Human Viewpoint to righteousness, or come to your senses righteously, after being deceived by blurred doctrinal thinking or strong delusion from deception; and cease sinning. For some believers have acquired no knowledge of God though available. I speak this to your humiliation or shame in time or this life.

1Cor 15:36; You ignorant unthinking ones! What you sow does not come to life unless it dies.

1John 1:3 (The purpose of converting oral tradition into written BD); What we have both seen and heard we also report to you, in order that YOU also may keep on having fellowship with us, furthermore, our fellowship is also with the Father, and with his Son, JC.

1John 1:4; In fact these things we write in order that our state of happiness might potentially be completed or fulfilled continually in you with the result that in time and eternity you might be Sharing the Happiness of God.

1John 1:6; If we contend, assert, maintain, claim, that we have fellowship with Him, God the Father & The Lord Jesus, The Christ and we keep walking in darkness in Cosmic Dynasphere I, the Interlocking System of Arrogance and Cosmic Dynasphere II, the Interlocking System of Hatred, We keep on lying to ourselves and we do not live or practice the Truth, Bible Doctrine. (The First Illusion of Interlocking System of Arrogance Cosmic Dynasphere involvement)

1John 1:8; If we say we have no Old Sin Nature or Do Not Sin, being in Denial and Projection, we are deceiving ourselves and the truth or Metabolized Bible Doctrine is NOT in us with No knowledge of the recovery procedure.

1John 1:9; If we Believers would acknowledge, admit, name, cite, confess our personal Post salvation sins, maybe we will and maybe we will not; He, GOD the Father, always keeps on being Faithful or dependable and Justified or Righteous, with the result that he might (IF we will do this he ALWAYS WILL) forgive, cancel, pardon us our sins and cleanse or purify us from all unknown wrongdoing or wickedness or unrighteousness

1John 1:10; If we say that we have not sinned, we make GOD out to be a liar and the truth of his word is NOT in us.

1John 2:9-11; When anyone asserts, claims, maintains, contents, that he is in the light (Divine Dynasphere) and hates his fellow Believer, he continues to be in the darkness (Cosmic Dynaspheres) until now. He who loves his fellow Believer resides in the light (Divine Dynasphere) and there is no cause for ruin or reason for stumbling in it (Divine Dynasphere). When anyone hates his fellow Believer he is in the Darkness (Cosmic Dynaspheres, Black Out of the Soul and Scar Tissue of the Soul) and he walks in the Darkness (Residence and function in the Cosmic Dynaspheres) and he does not know where he is going (his life has lost direction) because the darkness has blinded his eyes (Black Out of the Soul).

1John 2:13; I am writing you fathers (Mature Believers) because you know him who was from the beginning, I am writing you young men, Believers advancing in the Divine Dynasphere, because you have overcome the evil one the Lure of Satan the Cosmic Dynaspheres; I have written you infants, New Believers responding to Basic Bible Doctrine, because you have come to know the Father through Personal Love for God. I have written you fathers,

Mature Believers, because you have come to know him through Occupation with the Person of The Lord Jesus, The Christ, who was from the beginning of the virgin birth, I have written you young men, Believers with Momentum, because you are powerful from consistent residence and function in the Divine Dynasphere, and the word of God remains in you and you have overcome the evil one the distractions from the Cosmic Dynaspheres.

1John 2:15-16; Stop loving Cosmic Dynasphere I, the Interlocking System of Arrogance, or anything related to the Cosmic Dynaspheres, if anyone, the Believer in Cosmic Dynaspheres, keeps loving the Cosmic Dynaspheres, the Motivational Virtue of the love for the Father as Personal Love for God the Father and the Functional Virtue of Impersonal Love for Mankind is not in him, because all that is in Cosmic Dynaspheres I & II, the Interlocking System of Arrogance and Interlocking System of Antagonistic Emotional Hatred, the Lust from the flesh, the Old Sin Nature attack to control the soul, lust from the eyes as thinking of Motivational Degeneracy from Evil from arrogance in the distorted mentality of the soul and the arrogant pattern of life in the Functional Degeneracy from Evil of Cosmic Dynasphere I, with its false Scale of Values in Cosmic Dynasphere residence and function, is not from the Father but from the Cosmic Dynaspheres.

1John 2:18; Students it is the last favorable time to use the Divine Dynasphere, and just as you have heard that Antichrist will come (In the Tribulation) even now in the Church age many antichrists (Believers in the Cosmic Dynaspheres) therefore we have come to realize that it is the last favorable time to advance in the Divine Dynasphere to Gate 8

1John 2:27; and as for you the anointing of the indwelling and Filling of God the Holy Spirit which you received from him abides in you, and you have no need for any one to teach you; as his anointing teaches you about all things by taking the Bible Doctrine you perceive and makes it a reality in life, and is true, and is no lie, just as it has taught you, abide in him.

1John 3:4-7; Every Believer who commits or does sin also does lawlessness leaving the Divine Dynasphere & enters the Cosmic Dynaspheres, in fact sin is lawlessness, Cosmic Dynasphere involvement. Indeed you know that He, The Lord Jesus, The Christ, the unique one, was revealed at the 1<sup>st</sup> advent, in order that he might carry away our sins having been judged for all of them and in fact sin was not in him. When anyone, any believer, resides in IT, the Divine Dynasphere, he is NOT sinning; when anyone sins, thus residing in the Cosmic Dynaspheres, he has not seen him, The Lord Jesus, The Christ, lacking Perception, Cognition, Incultation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine; nor has he come to know him from Metabolized Bible Doctrine not having Motivational Virtue directed toward God. My dear Children, believers in John's nonresident congregation, let no one deceive you, when anyone performs righteousness having a priority of Virtue First as Motivational Virtue toward God and Functional Virtue toward man, from residence and function in the Divine Dynasphere, he is Honorable, just as He, The Lord Jesus, The Christ, in the prototype Divine Dynasphere is honorable.

1John 3:8; When any Believer commits a sin he has become the Agent of the devil (from the devil) for the devil has sinned from the beginning, for this reason the son of God was revealed or appeared, (1<sup>st</sup> Advent) that he might destroy, void, nullify the works of the devil.

1John 3:9; At the Moment that anyone is born from God at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God, He is NOT sinning, because his Seed, God the Holy Spirit, keeps residing in It the Divine Dynasphere, furthermore he is not able to sin in the Divine Dynasphere because he has been born from God.

1John 3:12; Not as Cain, who was motivated from that Evil one, Satan, and consequently he murdered his brother with a sacrificial knife, and why or for what reason did he murder him with a sacrificial knife? Because his deeds, functions, actions keep on being evil while his brother with Absolute Righteousness from God whose deeds kept on being honorable, virtuous, righteous in expression of Bible Doctrine to fulfill his responsibility to God.

1John 4:19; We (The Winner Believer) love in true virtue love or Impersonal Unconditional Love for Mankind, because he (God) first loved us (in E Past)



1John 5:5

v5: and this is the victory which has overcome the world, the Cosmic Dynasphere our faith. who is this person who has overcome the Cosmic Dynasphere, no one else but he who believes that Jesus is the Son of God.

1John 5:16-17; If anyone sees a brother sinning a Sin face to face with or leading to Death, he shall ask and he God will give Life to those who commit sin not leading to or terminating in Death, there is a sin terminating in Death, I do not say you should pray for this sin. All wrongdoing (Modus Operandi of the Believer in the /cds) is Sin, and yet there is sin NOT terminating in death ( because of rebound)

1John 3:1-2; Concentrate on or Understand how great a love complex, the Divine Dynasphere, the father has given to us in the Royal Family of God, that we should be designated children or Students of God, and we are students of God under divine authority and training, obligated to learn Bible Doctrine & Glorify God, therefore the Cosmic Dynaspheres do not understand nor recognize us, because it Cosmic Dynasphere disciples did not understand nor recognize him Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ in Hypostatic Union in the Divine Dynasphere. Beloved, Royal Family of God, we are now children, students of God, and what we will be in the future (Phase III) has not yet been revealed or manifest, we know, however, that if he should appear (resurrection of the Church is imminent) we shall be similar to Him in our Resurrection Body (not identical) because we shall see him (resurrected Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ) just as he is.

1John 5:18; We have learned that anyone born from God does not sin, but He, Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ who was born from God, guards or protects the Believer in the Divine Dynasphere, and the Evil one, (Satan and the Cosmic Dynasphere) does not touch him (Believer in the Divine Dynasphere )

1Kings 12:19; So, as a result, Israel has been in rebellion against the house of David to this day.

1Kings 13:4; And when the king heard the saying of the man of God, which he cried against the altar at Bethel, Jerobo'am stretched out his hand from the altar, saying, "Lay hold of him." And his hand, which he stretched out against him, dried up, so that he could not draw it back to himself.

1Kings 18:40; Then Eli'jah said to them, "Capture or Seize violently the prophets of Ba'al using whatever force needed; let not one of them escape." And the people responded immediately and they violently seized them; and Eli'jah took them down to the brook Kishon, and slaughtered them there.

1Kings 19:10; And He replied, "I have most certainly been extremely zealous for Jehovah, the God of the armies; for the people of Israel have deserted or forsaken your covenant of the Laws of Divine Establishment and rejection of Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ as the God of Israel thus Bible Doctrine, they have pulled down and destroyed your altars, and slaughtered your prophets with the sword; and I, even I myself alone remain; and they constantly seek my life, to violently take it away."

1Kings 19:18; Furthermore I will leave seven thousand in Israel, all that have not bowed a knee to Ba'al, and every mouth that has not kissed him by engaging in all the aspects of the phallic cult."

1Pet 1:4-5; We have or obtain an inheritance incorruptible and undefiled that does not fade away reserved for us in heaven, who are kept or protected by the power of God through the Faith Rest Drill <sup>(4 categories)</sup> in salvation or deliverance as Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God, ready to be revealed in the last times.

1Pet 1:7; That the proof or testing of your faith or doctrine, being much more precious than gold which is perishable even though your faith is tested by fire in extreme adversity may be found to result in the praise, honor and glory at the revelation of our Lord Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ

1Pet 1:8; Even though you have not seen him, Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ, yet you love him, and though you do not see him now but believe in him you greatly rejoice with happiness inexpressible and full of Glory



1Pet 1:12; It was revealed to them that they were not serving themselves but you, in these things which now have been announced to you by those who preached the good news to you by means of God the Holy Spirit sent from heaven, things into which angels have an insatiable desire to bend down and concentrate on.

1Pet 1:17-19; And if you address as father the one who impartially judges according to each mans work, conduct yourselves in fear or approach therefore in respect, during the time of your stay on this earth. knowing that you were not redeemed with perishable things like silver and gold, from your futile way of life inherited from your ancestors, but with the precious blood of Christ, a Lamb without spot, and without blemish.

1Pet 2:1; Therefore get rid of all evil and all deceit, all hypocrisies, and jealousies, and all evil speakings {slander, gossip, meandering}.

1Pet 2:6-8; For contained in the scripture (Is 28:16), "Behold, I lay in Zion a choice stone, Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ God of Israel, a precious cornerstone, Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ in Hypostatic Union, and he who believes in him will not be disappointed." Therefore this precious value is for you who believe, but for those who do not believe, (Ps 118:22) "The very stone which the builders, the Jews in Israel as client nation, have rejected this one has become the very cornerstone," and (Is 8:14) "A stone of stumbling, a rock of offense"; for they, the unbelieving Jews, stumble because they are disobedient to the word and to this judgment they were decreed in their unbelief.

1Pet 2:9; You are a chosen or elect race (Church Age Believers & No racial distinction), you are a royal priesthood (Representing Self to God), you are a holy nation (Client Nation), a people for God's own possession ( Royal Family of God ) , that you may proclaim the virtues or excellencies of Him (Christ in Hypostatic Union) who called you out of Darkness into his marvelous light (Divine Dynasphere).

1Pet 2:13-14; Subordinate yourselves for the Lord's sake to every human institution, whether to a king as supreme, or to a governor as sent by him, for punishment of those who do evil and recognition of those who do good.

1Pet 2:16; Live as free men, yet without using your freedom as a pretext for evil; but live as servants of God.

1Pet 2:17; Have respect for all men in authority {in context means men in proper positions of authority}. Love {have a relaxed mental attitude - no jealousy, bitterness, etc.} toward the family of God.

1Pet 2:18-19; Servants, Labor, be submissive to your masters, management, executives or capital investors with all respect for their authority, not only to the good and gentle boss but also to the unreasonable, unfair, falsely opinionated or perverse one. For this is GRACE, if, for the sake of conscience toward God, anyone bears up under sorrows when suffering unjustly.

1Pet 2:20-24; For what credit is there, if when you do wrong or sin and are rejected and harshly treated for it but you endure it with patience; SO WHAT GOOD IS THIS? But if when you do what is good or right and are rejected and suffer for it as an innocent victim and you endure that with patiently, This is GRACE from God. For you have been called for this purpose of being rejected, because Christ also suffered AS A SUBSTITUTE for all of you, leaving you an example of how to handle unfair, unjust uncalled for rejection, so that you should follow in his footsteps. He committed no sin; no guile was found on his lips. Who when he was reviled and insulted, he did not revile or insult in return trading insult for insult; While he suffered, he did not threaten; but he kept on entrusting himself to him, God the Father, who judges justly; and He (Jesus Christ) himself carried our sins in his own human nature body on the cross that we might die to sin and live to righteousness (of God) for by his wounds we are healed ( Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God through faith alone).

1Pet 3:15-16; but set apart the lord Christ in your hearts the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul and always be prepared to make a defense to any one who asks you a word concerning your confidence in you with Grace Orientation and Occupation with the Person of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ . Be having an intrinsically good conscience (write vs wrong) so that in things in which you are slandered or maligned, those who

malign your intrinsic good conscience in Christ may be put to shame

1Pet 5:1-4; Therefore I exhort you Pastor Teachers, as a fellow Pastor elder and a witness of the sufferings of Christ and also a partner of the the glory that is to be revealed. FEED the flock of God among you serving as an overseer, not because you must but because you are voluntarily willingly, not greedy for money but EAGER to serve. Not as domineering over those entrusted to you but being a pattern to the flock, a model of momentum through Perception, Cognition, Incultation and Metabolization and Application of Bible Doctrine. And when the chief Shepherd, The Lord Jesus, The Christ, appears at the Rapture and Judgment Seat of Jesus Christ, you, Pastor Teacher who is faithful in teaching expository Bible Doctrine, will receive the unfading wreath or crown of glory which will never fade away.

1Pet 5:5-6; Likewise you younger (immature Believers) submit yourselves to the Pastor – Teacher, the elder, all of you others in the congregation fasten to one another or clothe yourselves with humility towards one another, being oriented to the Grace of God, because God makes war against the arrogant Believer but gives grace to the Humble Believer. Therefore be grace oriented or Humble yourselves under the Mighty or Powerful or ruling hand of God (Divine Dynasphere Residence) and his delegated authority, that he may exalt or Promote you in the proper time.

1Pet 5:7; Cast all your anxieties from terrorism on him, because he keeps on caring and providing for you.

1Pet 5:8-9; Attain Spiritual Self Esteem, Be stabilized, sober, vigilant, self disciplined, in the Divine Dynasphere, be on the alert from Perception, Cognition, Incultation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine, because, your enemy or adversary the Devil prowls around like a hungry roaring Lion , a carnivore, seeking someone to devour. Hold your ground against him, resist him being strong or stabilized in Bible Doctrine, knowing that the same experience of suffering and pressures which cause worry is found by your fellow believers throughout the world.

1Sam 1:10; She and only she, Hannah was deeply distressed with bitterness of the soul from mental attitude sins and she offered a false imprecatory prayer of intercession to the Lord to get even with Peninnah, and weeping she kept on weeping bitterly from frustrated anger toward Peninnah.

1Sam 2:3; Do not multiply conversation with gossip and maligning or judging from mental attitude sins of great arrogant pride, Nor let Insolent arrogance proceed out from your mouth; for the Lord Jehovah is a God of omniscience, by him works and deeds are examined.

1Sam 17:28; And Eli'ab his handsome eldest brother kept listening to the whole conversation of David when he spoke intensively to the men and realized that his little brother was about to accept the challenge; and Eli'ab's anger was inflamed by his jealousy against David, and he said, "For what reason have you come down from the mountains of Bethlehem? And with whom have you abandoned those few sheep in the wilderness? I know your arrogance, and the deformity of the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of your Soul; for you a child have come down to watch us fight."

1Sam 17:47; and that all this multitude or assembly of cowardly maneuvering men of the armies of Israel, may know that the LORD not with sword and not with the spear shall deliver; the battle is the LORD'S and he, God, will give you into our hand."

1Sam 18:6-9; And it came to pass as they were coming home, when David returned from the slaughter of the Philistines, the women came out of all the cities of Israel, singing and dancing, to meet King Saul, with timbrels, with songs of joy, and with instruments of music because they are protected by their strong military. And the women sang in antipathy answering one another as they sang, "Saul has slain his thousands, and David his ten thousands." And Saul was completely enraged, because the lyrics in the song displeased him or were evil in his eyes or thinking; he said, "They have ascribed to David ten thousands, and to me they have ascribed thousands; and what more can he have but the kingdom?" And Saul became jealous of David from that day on.

1Sam 18:10-12; And on the next day Demon Influence rushed upon reversionistic Saul and was permitted by God

along with his reversionism discipline, and he raved within his house, while David was playing the lyre with his hands, as he did at other times. Saul had his spear in his hand; and Saul cast the spear, for he said, "I will smite David and pin David to the wall." But David evaded him on two other different occasions. And Saul was afraid of David, because the LORD was with him but had departed from Saul.

1Thes 4:16; For the lord himself shall descend from heaven with a universally loud voice, a command, with the voice of the commanding archangel, with the military trumpet for assembly of the angels of God, and the Dead in Christ (dead Believers) will rise, for the benefit of the believer, first.

1Thes 5:18

v18: (Command) YOU In everything or all kinds of things give thanks and Do NOT display lack of Gratitude for this is the will of God in Christ Jesus for you.

1Thes 5:19; (Command) YOU habitually Stop Quenching, Squelching, Hindering, Thwarting, Dampening or Suppressing God the Holy Spirit, get out of His Way!

1Tim 1:3; Since I nicely ordered, commanding you to stay where you are, remain behind at Ephesus while I went to Macedonia, in order that you may instruct by direct command and order with authority certain persons under legalism, religionism, reversionism, evil not to teach heretical false doctrine.

1Tim 1:19-20; Be having and holding or keeping the Bible Doctrine in the Human Spirit and Soul and keeping good of intrinsic value Norms and Standards of Bible Doctrine in the conscience, free from evil, which good conscience or Norms and Standards some reversionistic Believers have rejected, cast off, thrust away or repudiated, have suffered shipwreck concerning their Bible Doctrine being in reversionism with influence from evil resulting in bad Norms and Standards. (cut the happiness from God out of your life) Among whom are Hymenae'us a gossip and maligner and Alexander, who keep on being in reversionism and under the influence of evil, whom I have delivered over to Satan in order that they might be taught the hard way by pain and discipline not to blaspheme.

1Tim 2:1-2; First of all therefore I request or summon, that petitions for urgent needs for others or self, prayers of intercessions and thanksgivings be made for all mankind. On behalf of Rulers (Kings) and all who are in authority, (legislative and judicial government branches) that we may lead an undisturbed and tranquil life in all of our post salvation Spiritual Life with Integrity.

1Tim 2:6; Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ, Who having given himself in exchange as a redemptive ransom from the slave market of sin, a substitute on behalf of everyone; His, God the Father's, testimony to be given in his own times or dispensations, OR at the proper time of Gospel Hearing.

1Tim 2:11-12; Let the High Class or High Quality Woman repeatedly learn Bible Doctrine in quietness or quietly, in silence, receive instruction without contention, with concentration, thoughtfulness, and entire, total, complete subordination or submissiveness, tranquility, lacking Mental Attitude Sins, at successive regular intervals from a teacher with authority. But I, Paul, absolutely do not ever permit or allow a woman to teach a congregation from the pulpit in the Local Church, Bible Doctrine especially to the adult male, nor to EVER usurp or have or exercise authority over a true Man, but she must be constantly quiet or learn in silence with good manners, self control, respect for authority in the local church, not distracted mentally, concentrating on Bible Doctrine.

1Tim 3:6; Do Not be an immature Believer or neophyte lest having received Blind Arrogance he might fall into the condemnation of the devil,

1Tim 3:16; And by consent of all with everyone in agreement, great is the Mystery Doctrine of the Church Age, with reference to becoming God Like, He, the unique One Christ Eternal God, who became visible from the virgin birth to the ascension and session at the right hand of God the Father, by means of the flesh of his humanity, the same one Christ in Hypostatic Union at the 1<sup>st</sup> advent, was vindicated, justified and treated as just by means of God the Holy Spirit, he was carefully scrutinized and observed by angels from his birth to his session at the right

hand of God the Father, he was proclaimed, by many heralds communicating with the authority of the King of Kings, among the nations, he was and still is the object of Faith in the world of satan's rulership, always resulting in individual eternal salvation, and he was taken via the ascension up into the place of Glory.

1Tim 4:1; But that same God the Holy Spirit, who during the 1st advent, vindicated the incarnate Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ (1Tim 3:16), explicitly communicates or teaches or reports, that in latter periods of Time, the dispensations of the Royal Family of God and completion of the Age of Israel, Between the 1st & 2nd Advents, some Believers in the Royal Family of God, fail and will become apostate in reversionism, standing away from revolting against, abstaining from, departing from, rejecting, withdrawing from The TRUE Bible Doctrine as a result of Demon Influence, constantly paying attention to, concentrating on, applying the mind to, adhering to, being occupied with fallen angelic deceitful demon teachers communicating the Doctrines from Demons, EVIL and the Cosmic Dynaspheres.

1Tim 5:21; I Solemnly warn or charge you before The God the Father, the author of the Plan of God and source of all grace, and before Christ Jesus and before the elect angels, that you to remain alert, guard, protect and preserve these principles leadership from Bible Doctrine, apart from or without prejudice, habitually doing nothing by a spirit of partiality.

1Tim 6:3-4; If and it is true, any one teaches you otherwise, a different doctrine in opposition to this context and continually does not concur with the sound doctrines, namely those doctrines of the words of our Lord Jesus Christ, even the teaching of doctrine pertaining to Spiritual Maturity and residence in the Divine Dynasphere or "godliness", or the balance of residence; Absolutely, from rejection of Bible Doctrine and The Lord Jesus, The Christ, He has automatically received blind arrogance in the Interlocking System of Arrogance, and is cycling in the Arrogance Skills, being stupid, knowing, understanding, comprehending, perceiving nothing, not one thing or zero about the mechanical functions of Bible Doctrine; as a result of his Metabolized Bible Doctrine being erased from his soul which is covered with Scar Tissue of the Soul. Furthermore, in contrast, he, as expected, has a morbid craving, obsession, with self and an excessive vicious fondness for controversy and verbal conflict, from which originate jealousy, discord, evil speculations, malignings or verbal sins, strife, abusive language, evil speculations. Consequently constant friction between persons of depraved mind (resulting from cycling of Arrogance skills) and deprived of doctrine (when you cycle the arrogance skills it builds scar tissue on the soul and deprives you of more doctrine) who assume that the spiritual life is a means of profit, but the spiritual life is a means of great profit, where the Protocol Plan of God glorifies God in both Time and Eternity and is the resolution of Angelic Conflict, when accompanied by Sharing the Happiness of God, and contentment

1Tim 6:6-8; But in contrast to false prosperity, Godliness, Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God with balance of residence of God the Holy Spirit and Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul, associated with contentment, Mental Attitude capacity for life KEEPS ON BEING a great means of prosperity. For, you see, nothing have we, believers, brought or carried into this life or world, not one thing, and it is certain and obvious, that neither are we able to carry anything outside or off of this world. Now having and holding edible and nourishing varieties of foods and a respectable change of clothing, with these let us, or we shall, as believers in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace, have our capacity for life and contentment with our foods and clothings.

1Tim 6:10; For you see, the LOVE of money, avariciousness, keeps on being a root of all those different categories of evil, through or by which love or money or monetary reversionism certain reversionistic believers in management or any others, by intensely desiring, striving, longing or lusting for money, have swerved, deviated from, gone astray or away from, being perverted from the doctrine and they will spend their life having skewed, impaled or gutted themselves with many types of pain or torments of soul and body from the Intensive Divine Discipline of the 8 stages of reversionism.



1Tim 6:17; Be commanding, exhorting and with authority instructing in application for their benefit, those Rich Ones, in the congregation in this present dispensation of the Church Age, that they be not arrogant, nor set their confidence upon the uncertainty of wealth or riches, but set their confidence on God who richly provides, furnishes us as believers in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace for our advantage all things abundantly for our pleasure and enjoyment.

2Chron 10:19; So Israel has been in rebellion against the house of David to this day.

2Chron 25:27; From the time when he turned away from the LORD they made a conspiracy against him in Jerusalem, and he fled to Lachish. But they sent after him to Lachish, and slew him there.

2Chron 32:26; However Hezekiah humbled the pride of his Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul, both he and the inhabitants of Jerusalem, so that the wrath of the LORD did not come upon them in the days of Hezekiah.

2Chron 36:12-13; And he Zedekiah did evil in the sight of the Lord and he did not humble himself before and accept the authority of Jeremiah the Prophet who spoke for the Lord. He also revolted against king Nebuchadnezzar who made him promise in the name of God to be loyal to him, but he stiffened his neck (STS) and hardened his heart (STS) refusing to turn to the God of Israel.

2Cor 2:3; And I wrote as I did, so that when I came I might not suffer pain from those who should have made me rejoice, for I felt sure of all of you, that my joy would be the joy of you all.

2Cor 2:11; In order that no advantage be taken of us by Satan for we are not ignorant of his schemes or devices or strategies (thoughts and people to distract us and remold our personality for conformance with the CDS).

2Cor 2:12-13; When I came to Tro'as to preach the gospel of Christ, a door was opened for me in the Lord; but my mind could not rest because I did not find my brother Titus there. So I took leave of them and went on to Macedo'nia.

2Cor 4:3-4; And even if our gospel is obscured (Unclear to those hearing it) it is obscured to those who are perishing or lost (Unbelievers) in whose case the god of this world (Satan) has blinded the thoughts of the Unbelievers (Black Out of the Soul) that they might not see the light of the gospel which is the glory of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ who is the exact image of God.

2Cor 4:15; For all these things are for your benefit, for the purpose that the grace having been multiplied to more and more people may cause the giving of thanks to abound to the glory of God.

2Cor 5:1; For we know that if the earthly tent our human body we live in is destroyed in physical death, we have a building from God in the Resurrection Body, a house not made with hands, eternal in the heavens.

2Cor 5:10; For we must all appear before the Judgment Seat of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ, that each one may be evaluated or recompensed for his deeds or accomplishments through or in the temporal body according to or face to face with what he has accomplished whether good of intrinsic value, execution of the Spiritual Life by advance to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God, as valuable Divine Good from function under the 3 Spiritual Skills or worthless Human Good production and everything related to carnality, failure to rebound, and failure to execute the spiritual life derived from Evil.

2Cor 5:17; Therefore if anyone is in Christ and you as a Believer in the Church Age are, he is a NEW spiritual species, Old things have lost their power, Behold, New things (Spiritual Life) have come.

2Cor 6:8; in honor and dishonor, in ill repute and good repute. We are treated as impostors, and yet are true;



2Cor 6:11-12; Oh you Corinthians we, Paul, Timothy, Apollos, teach you Bible Doctrine, our Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul is enlarged with Bible Doctrine and we teach from Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of our Soul. You are not limited or hindered from learning Bible Doctrine and spiritual growth by us your teachers but you are limited by your own emotional pattern.

2Cor 7:5-10; For even when we came into Macedo'nia, our bodies had no rest but we were afflicted at every turn -- fighting without and fear within. But God, who comforts the downcast, comforted us by the coming of Titus, and not only by his coming but also by the comfort with which he was comforted in you, as he told us of your longing, your mourning, your zeal for me, so that I rejoiced still more. For even if I made you sorry with my letter, I do not regret it (though I did regret it), for I see that that letter grieved you, though only for a while. As it is, I rejoice, not because you were grieved, but because you were grieved into repenting; for you felt a godly grief, so that you suffered no loss through us. For godly grief produces a repentance that leads to salvation and brings no regret, but worldly grief produces death.

2Cor 7:16; I rejoice and have inner happiness therefore, because I now have perfect confidence in you all that you will stick with solid Bible Doctrine teaching, though it was not possible in the past.

2Cor 8:22; And with them we are sending our brother whom we have often tested and found earnest in many matters, but who is now more earnest than ever because of his great confidence in you.

2Cor 9:7+11; Each one according as he has determined by means of his Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul, so give not from distress of mind nor compulsion of emotion, for God loves a Gracious generous giver. You will be enriched in all things because of your generosity of mind.

2Cor 10:2; I beg of you that when I am present I may not have to show boldness with such confidence as I count on showing against some who suspect us of acting in worldly fashion.

2Cor 10:4-6; for the equipment and weapons of our conflict are not human attributes but the attributes of unseen divine power from Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul given by God to destroy Satan's fortifications or strongholds of EVIL; attacking, assaulting and demolishing Cosmic Dynasphere thoughts of thinking Human Viewpoint and Human Good and every subjective arrogant or proud thought obstacle which attacks the objective that is the objective knowledge of God in Divine Viewpoint, and making a prisoner every Cosmic Dynasphere or Human Viewpoint thought bringing it under the authority of Christ, holding in readiness as an instant reaction force, garrisoning the soul with Bible Doctrine to punish every deviation or disobedience of reversionism from obedience of reversionistic Human Viewpoint, when your obedience of daily function of the Grace Apparatus for Perception has been fulfilled by attaining Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God.

2Cor 10:12; Not that we venture to class or compare ourselves with some of those who commend themselves. But when they measure themselves by one another, and compare themselves with one another, they are without understanding.

2Cor 11:2; I am jealous for you with a godly jealousy, for I have betrothed you to one husband that to Christ I might present you not as a chaste virgin but also as a pure virgin.

2Cor 11:3; But I am afraid unless as the serpent deceived Eve by his craftiness, deceive your minds that you will be led astray from the simplicity, virtue and purity of devotion to Christ.

2Cor 11:13-15; For such men are false apostles, deceitful workers, disguising themselves as apostles of Christ, and no wonder even Satan himself disguises himself as an angel of Light, therefore it is not surprising that his servants disguise themselves as the servants of righteousness, whose end shall be according to their deeds.

2Cor 11:17; (What I am saying I say not with the Lord's authority but as a fool, in this boastful confidence;

2Cor 11:24-33; From the Jews, 5 times I was beaten, 39 times with a lash, Three times I was beaten with rods (roman punishment), Once I was stoned (killed and recussitated by God), 3 times I was shipwrecked, a night and a day I was adrift in the sea. In traveling often in perils of water, of robbers, in perils of my own countrymen, by the heathen, in the city, in the wilderness of the desert, of the sea, perils among false brethren, In weariness, in painfulness, in sleeplessness, in hunger, and thirst and fasting, in cold and nakedness, Besides those things which were without, that which came upon me daily the care of all the churches. Who is weak, and I am not weak? Who is made to fall, and I am not indignant? If I must boast, I will boast of the things that show my weakness. The God and Father of the Lord Jesus, he who is blessed for ever, knows that I do not lie. At Damascus, the governor under King Ar'etas guarded the city of Damascus in order to seize me, but I was let down in a basket through a window in the wall, and escaped his hands.

2Cor 12:1-10; It is not expedient for me to glory, I will come to visions and revelation of the Lord. I knew a man in Christ (Himself) about 14 years ago whether in the body I cannot tell or out of the body I cannot tell (only aware of where he was not his status) such a one was caught up to the 3<sup>rd</sup> heaven. I knew such a man whether in the body or out of the body I cannot tell, God knows, was caught up to paradise and heard unspeakable words. On behalf of this man I will boast, but on my own behalf I will not boast, except of my weaknesses. Though if I wish to boast, I shall not be a fool, for I shall bespeaking the truth. But I refrain from it, so that no one may think more of me than he sees in me or hears from me. Therefore that I, Paul, be not elevated or glorified by means of or because of the surpassing greatness or abundance of revelations, for this reason to keep me from being arrogant from the past and that overflowing into my life or over elated exalting myself, there was given to me for my benefit, a thorn in the flesh (constant physical irritation or ailment of some kind), an angel demon from the source of Satan that he might enter into battle and buffet or punch me, to keep me from being over elated and exalting myself. On behalf of this thorn in the flesh, I began to exhort and fervently and intensively begging, pray to the Lord, 3 times that it, the thorn demon, might depart, shear off or stand off from me. But, He (God) had communicated to me in the past with the result that I had this information metabolized, "My Super Grace keeps on being sufficient or always produces contentment for you, for the inherent omnipotent power has been and keeps on being fulfilled by means of weakness (in Paul), with the GREATEST PLEASURE to the HIGHEST DEGREE therefore, I will dogmatically boast in the sphere of my weaknesses, in order that the omnipotent power of Christ may take up quarters or bivoauc upon me. Therefore, because in Status Quo Super Grace, the omnipotence of Christ takes up quarters on me, I take pleasure, am well contented with infirmities of physical illness and loss of health, in the sphere of insults or malignings, in the pressures of needs and lack of the details of life in disasters, in persecutions from religion or legalism, in distresses or anguish from disappointment in human relationships from those whom you love, for Christ's sake, for on the occasion I am weak or helpless, at that time and only at that time, I keep on being strong.

2Cor 12:7-10; And For this reason, (function of the arrogance skills) that I should not begin to become Arrogant, (recycling arrogance skills) because of the extraordinary quality of revelations that were given to me for my benefit, there was given to me a thorn in the flesh, an angel from satan (thorn demon) that he might torment me, that I should not even begin to become arrogant. (Doctrinal Orientation related to Grace Orientation) On behalf of this thorn in the flesh, I began to exhort and fervently and intensively begging, pray to the Lord, 3 times that it, the thorn demon, might depart, shear off or stand off from me. But, He (God) had communicated to me in the past with the result that I had this information metabolized, "My Super Grace keeps on being sufficient or always produces contentment for you, for the inherent omnipotent power has been and keeps on being fulfilled by means of weakness (in Paul), with the GREATEST PLEASURE to the HIGHEST DEGREE therefore, I will dogmatically boast in the sphere of my weaknesses, in order that the omnipotent power of Christ may take up quarters or bivoauc upon me. Therefore, because in Status Quo Super Grace, the omnipotence of Christ takes up quarters on me, I take pleasure, am well contented with infirmities of physical illness and loss of health, in the sphere of insults or malignings, in the pressures of needs and lack of the details of life in disasters, in persecutions from religion or legalism, in distresses or anguish from disappointment in human relationships from those whom you love, for Christ's sake, for on the occasion I am weak or helpless, at that time and only at that time, I keep on being strong.

2Cor 12:20; For I am afraid that when I come I may find you not to be what I wish, and that there may be strife,

jealousy, anger, flared tempers, disputes, slandering, gossips, arrogance, hence a congregation in a state of confusion.

2John 9; Everyone who advances in knowledge out of bounds and does not remain in the field of play of the Divine Dynasphere by means of the Bible Doctrine of The Lord Jesus, The Christ does not have fellowship with God, he who remains with Bible Doctrine, this same one has a close relationship with the both the Father and the Son.

2Kings 12:19-21; Now the rest of the acts of Jo'ash, and all that he did, are they not written in the Book of the Chronicles of the Kings of Judah? His servants arose and made a conspiracy, and slew Jo'ash in the house of Millo, on the way that goes down to Silla. It was Jo'zacar the son of Shim'e-ath and Jeho'zabad the son of Shomer, his servants, who struck him down, so that he died. And they buried him with his fathers in the city of David, and Amazi'ah his son reigned in his stead.

2Kings 14:17-19; Amazi'ah the son of Jo'ash, king of Judah, lived fifteen years after the death of Jeho'ash son of Jeho'ahaz, king of Israel. Now the rest of the deeds of Amazi'ah, are they not written in the Book of the Chronicles of the Kings of Judah? And they made a conspiracy against him in Jerusalem, and he fled to Lachish. But they sent after him to Lachish, and slew him there.

2Kings 21:2-3; And he did what was evil in the sight of the LORD, according to the abominable practices of the nations whom the LORD drove out before the people of Israel. For he rebuilt the high places which Hezeki'ah his father had destroyed; and he erected altars for Ba'al, and made an Ashe'rah, as Ahab

2Pet 1:12-21; Therefore or because of this, (shocks which came to Peter), I will always be ready (God uses prepared men), to keep on reminding you concerning these things (Perception, Cognition, Incultation, Metabolization, and Application of Epignosis Bible Doctrine) although you know them and having become mentally stabilized, or firmly supported, or sustained, by means of Bible Doctrine which has come to or is always with you. Moreover I consider it my duty, my solemn responsibility to the lord and those I teach, as long as I am in this body (tabernacle or TEMPORARY shelter of soul), to stir you up or turn you on, by means of repetition of doctrine. Because I know that the laying aside of my tabernacle or human body (temporary residence for my soul) is imminent, just as our lord The Lord Jesus, The Christ has made it clear to me. In fact (Peter recognizing he was going to die soon), I will always be diligent that you may have and hold the doctrine at any and all times after my death or departure, in order that you might remember these doctrines for application. (Peter shouted as he came into the congregation) For we have not followed cleverly invented myths when we made know to or taught you the Power of the coming of our Lord The Lord Jesus, The Christ. But when He (The Lord Jesus, The Christ on the mount of transfiguration Matt 16:28) received from the immediate source of God the Father, Honor (humanity) and Glory (deity), and there came such a unique voice in this was carried or transmitted to Peter by his Majestic Glory of God the Father, "This is my beloved Son, with whom I am well pleased". Furthermore we (Peter James and John) heard this voice which was being transmitted or carried from Heaven, when we were with The Lord Jesus, The Christ on the holy mountain of God (mount of Transfiguration). And we keep on having and holding a more reliable prophetic doctrine. Regarding which doctrine, you do well or honorably to keep on giving attention as to a lamp shining in a dark place until the day dawns and the morning star arises in the right lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of your Soul. Know or Understand from study this, as a solution, first before dealing with any problems, that ALL prophecy of scripture DOES NOT originate or come into existence from one's personal or private explanation. For Prophecy or eschatology was never produced by the design, will, scheme or purpose of mankind, but holy men of God (human authors) communicated or expressed themselves in writing, as they were being carried along by God the Holy Spirit.

2Pet 2:1-5; But there were false prophets also among the people in Jeremiah's Day, just as there will be false teachers among you in Peter's Day, who will secretly bring in damnable or destructive heresies, even denying the Lord who bought them under unlimited atonement, and bring upon themselves swift destruction of the Soul. And many will follow their licentiousness, and because of them the way of truth will be reviled. And in their greed they will exploit you with false words; from of old their condemnation has not been idle, and their

destruction has not been asleep. (divine Judgment on the Fallen Angels who Fornicated with Human Females, Gen 6) For if the God himself did not spare, the angels having sinned (now in prison for Gen 6:2, bne Ha Elohim), and he did not spare them, but by means of chains of thick darkness having incarcerated or imprisoned them in Tartarus he delivered them to judgment being constantly guarded. But he, God, preserved Noah, a preacher or herald of righteousness with seven others when he brought a flood upon the world of the ungodly.

2Pet 2:15-16; Forsaking or abandoning the straight road or normal Christian life with consistent Perception, Cognition, Incultation, Metabolization and Application of Bible Doctrine they have become deluded or deceived from series Negative Volition toward Bible Doctrine; they have pursued the way of life of Balaam, the son of Be'or, who loved reward, gain or wages from wrongdoing or unrighteousness under materialism lust, but he had a rebuke because of his very own transgression violating the Will of God; a ass unable to normally speak with a man's voice, who preached eloquently with human speech or voice in the sphere of mankind and had forbidden the insanity, madness or psychosis of the Prophet.

2Pet 2:20-21; For if and it is true, unbelievers, after having already escaped from the ultimate source of defilement of the False Teaching Evil of the Cosmic Dynaspheres the Doctrine of Demons having rejected this false doctrine (1Tim 4:1), by means of the epignosis knowledge of our Lord and Savior Jesus Christ in the gospel, they are again involved, entangled or interwoven by this false Doctrine now listening intently as the result of a change in their Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul and which they have rejected at {before} gospel hearing by their own Negative Volition and are {now} constantly overcome and defeated; the latter end or last state of {(ff) believer} reversionism has, from their own free will volition, become with permanent results far worse for them than the first of the unbeliever with common sense when they rejected false teaching, they now being minus all common sense. For it would have kept on being better for them, slave victims of false teaching, not to have fully known (epiginosko) the way of imputed righteousness of the gospel of Christ for salvation, than after having fully known, by free will, to turn away from authority of the holy or sanctified commandment (1John 3:23) having been delivered to them for their advantage.

OR v21 For it would have been better for the unbeliever never to have known the way of righteousness of epignosis gospel than having known the gospel to turn back from the holy commandment for Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God through faith alone in Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ alone through Negative Volition, delivered to them in witnessing or evangelism.

2Pet 2:22; It has happened to them according to the correct proverb, The dog returns back to his own vomit, and the sow the female pig after being washed returns to wallowing in the mire.

2Pet 3:9; The Lord is not slow about his promise from his integrity as some count slowness, but He is patient toward you, not wishing for any to perish (all to have Salvation), but for everyone to come to a change of thinking about Salvation through Faith alone in Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ alone.

2Pet 3:13; But according to his promise we wait for new heavens and a new earth in which righteousness dwells.

2Sam 5:13; Meanwhile David took more mistresses and wives from Jerusalem, after he came from Hebron; therefore more sons and daughters were born to David.

2Sam 15:6; Consequently, Ab'salom behaved in this manner to all of Israel who came to the king for justice; so Ab'salom stole by deception the Right Lobe of the Streams of Consciousness of the Soul of the men of Israel.

2Sam 15:12-13; Now while he was offering sacrifices as a hypocritical facade of religion, Absalom sent for Ahith'ophel the Gi'lomite, David's advisor or counselor, from his home town of Giloh. Therefore the conspiracy gained momentum, and the general public kept coming to Ab'salom in constantly increasing numbers. And a intelligence officer who had been sent (by Joab) to David, reported (here in summary), "It has happened the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul of the people of Israel follow Absalom, the revolution has begun."

2Sam 19:40-43; The king went on to Gilgal, and Chimham went on with him; all the people of Judah, and also



half the people of Israel, brought the king on his way. Then all the men of Israel came to the king, and said to the king, "Why have our brethren the men of Judah stolen you away, and brought the king and his household over the Jordan, and all David's men with him?" All the men of Judah answered the men of Israel, "Because the king is near of kin to us. Why then are you angry over this matter? Have we eaten at all at the king's expense? Or has he given us any gift?" And the men of Israel answered the men of Judah, "We have ten shares in the king, and in David also we have more than you. Why then did you despise us? Were we not the first to speak of bringing back our king?" But the words of the men of Judah were fiercer than the words of the men of Israel.

2Thes 1:12; so that the uniqueness of the celebrityship of our Lord Jesus may be glorified in you NOW having maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in your Stream of Consciousness of the Soul, and you in him, according to the norm and standard of the grace of our God the Father and the Grace of the Lord Jesus Christ.

2Thes 2:2; In order that you, believers in the Royal Family of God in the Church Age in historical crisis or catastrophe, not be easily disturbed, agitated, mentally shaken or unstable in your mind, from the source of your Left Lobe of the Soul nor or not even so nervous, agitated or disturbed that you scream, neither through or by an attractive personality (or a demon spirit) teaching you false doctrine, nor by verbal teaching of false doctrine, evil policy, bad motives by false teachers, or wrong pastor teachers, nor through a forged letter or written teaching or epistle purporting to be from us, to the effect or alleging that the day of the Lord, the 2<sup>nd</sup> advent of Christ, has come or is here now, you being in the tribulation.

2Thes 2:3; Let no one in any way or by means of any one's norms and standards superimpose them on you and thoroughly beguile, lead astray, delude or deceive you OR let no one thoroughly deceive you with their norms and standards, manner of life or conduct in any way and lead you astray into reversionistic revolution against God, Since the Day of the Lord, the tribulation and 2<sup>nd</sup> Advent of Christ cannot come unless, these things must occur first chronologically, the Departure or Resurrection or Rapture of the Church age believers has come first, and the man of the lawlessness of revolution against God or who is lawless, as the anti Laws of Divine Establishment dictator of the revived roman empire as the son of or the one doomed to annihilation, destruction or ruin indwelt by Satan, shall be revealed in the tribulation (Rev 13:1-10, 16:13-14, Dan 7:17, 11:38, 11:31)

2Thes 2:4; The man of lawlessness, who is constantly a hostile enemy opposing and in total arrogance exalting or lifting himself above or over everything that is called, designated or related to the Lord God, or all that is the object of worship or every so called god related to ecumenical religious activity, with the result that he, the Dictator, or his statue image, is caused to sit or installed in the temple of God in Jerusalem, duplicating the glorification of Christ at the right hand of God the Father, proclaiming himself to be God or displaying himself as God. (Matt 24)

2Thes 2:8-10; And then, at that time of the tribulation after the resurrection of the church, the lawless one, dictator of the Revived Roman Empire and leader of ecumenical religion, will be revealed, whom The Lord Jesus, The Christ will consume, destroy, kill and take away with the truthful breath of his mouth, like a nerve gas, in fact, he shall neutralize, wipe out, render powerless by means of the bright glorious glamorous appearance and display of his presence at the 2<sup>nd</sup> advent. (Rev 19:15,19-21) This is the one, the man of lawlessness the dictator of the Revived Roman Empire, whose presence or presentation in history is in accordance with or according to the norm or operational power or activity or Modus Operandi of Satan, himself, in the sphere of all power of religion, revolution, and social action and by means of extra natural phenomenon in the spiritual realm including miracles, healings, pseudo speaking in tongues, etc., and even wonder miracles of the lying propaganda as satanic doctrine infiltrating the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of his Soul. And In the sphere of or by means of all delusion or perpetual deception of wickedness, deceitfulness, injustice, falsehood or unrighteousness or wrongdoing as maladjustment to the Justice of God, to those citizens of the client nations both believers and unbelievers, who are being led astray, deprived, ruined or utterly destroyed just as the unbelievers will be in the tribulation by the man of lawlessness, because they did not receive, accept or embrace the Agape Mental Emotionless Love for the truth as Bible Doctrine or Laws of Divine Establishment in order that they might be delivered or saved.

2Thes 2:11-12; Therefore God sends upon them a strong delusion, to make them believe what is false, so that all



may be condemned who did not believe the truth but had pleasure in unrighteousness.

2Tim 1:7; For THE God has, to our advantage, dogmatically, absolutely not given to us, as Pastor Teachers who have a local church, the life or state of mind of cowardice (Timothy having been a coward), but of inherent inner power from Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul and reciprocal or virtue love for God, Impersonal Love and a Relaxed Mental Attitude for Mankind (Rom 5:5, Gal 5:22), and the sound mentality of wisdom and of self control and self discipline.

2Tim 1:9; This one, Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ, who, in 1 instant of time, has eternally saved us at our making Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God through faith alone in Jesus Christ alone, the one having in the past called or invited or elected us to the privileges and benefits of Grace as Royal Family of God who have reached Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace which continues into the present, into a holy station of life set apart, NOT EVER UNDER ANY CIRCUMSTANCES according to our works or productions but according to his own privately possessed prefabricated or predetermined plan even GRACE which has been given to us in Christ Jesus before the times of the ages or dispensations, before Human History began.

2Tim 2:13; IF we as reversionistic believers under the influence of evil, are not believing, being unfaithful by neglecting or rejecting Bible Doctrine, and some believers are, He abides or remains faithful {the title of this hymn}." For you see, He, Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ, can not deny Himself {In Union with Christ we are part of Him} Tim.

2Tim 2:25; In grace orientation, humility, meekness, and gentleness, freedom from pride and arrogance, when necessary, exercise correction through disciplinary action, toward those reversionistic believers who resist or are in opposition to sound doctrinal teaching, so that perhaps The God may hopefully give to them a consistent change of mind toward Bible Doctrine for the purpose of achieving maximum epignosis or metabolized knowledge of The Truth or Doctrine.

2Tim 3:2-7; For reversionists in any nation under the 5 cycles of Divine Discipline or the end of any dispensation having intensive apostasy, will inevitably become lovers of self in Self Righteous Arrogance, lovers of money in Greed Lust willing to do anything for money, overtly Proud Braggarts, Involved in the Interlocking System of Arrogance with an inner arrogance of soul, abusive, Slandorous Blasphemers, Disobedient with reference to Parents, ungrateful, devoid of gratitude ones, anti establishment ones. Ones with no capacity for love resulting in abnormal affection pseudo love of selfishness or abnormal sexual activity; implacable; unpacifiable, irreconcilable, malicious gossips; without self discipline lacking self control and mastery of self; savage, violent, brutal; despising haters of both Moral and Divine Good not loving the Plan of God, Traitorous, dishonest, treasonous, disloyal, treacherous; rash, reckless, precipitous, thoughtless; having become conceited, puffed up with hot air bullshit deluded pride from self love, lovers of pleasure rather than lovers of God, religious, having from the past and continuing to hold to the external mold or form of Piety or Pseudo Godliness although they have denied, disregarded, renounced or repudiated the inner inherent power of Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul of that same experiential sanctification of Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace or Ultra Super Grace, also be turning yourself away or avoid these reversionistic evangelists of evil. For out of or among these apostles of apostasy or evangelists of evil are those which worm or creep or insinuate into those same houses, Local Churches, in order to sell satanic doctrines of evil, and take captive or captivate silly weak willed women or reversionistic believers in the systems of Evil and False doctrine, because they have been piled up, burdened, overloaded and overwhelmed with sins from poor judgment and as a result saturated with misery from Divine Discipline and Self Induced Misery and led on or carried away by evil as prisoners of reversionism and by various kinds or categories of Lusts. These reversionists, always learning false doctrine from some evangelist of evil who is a teacher and so they are never able to come into a full epignosis knowledge of the absolute truth of Bible Doctrine in the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.

2Tim 3:2-4, "For persons [Church Age believers] will be lovers of self [Interlocking System of Arrogance], lovers of money, boastful, arrogant, abusive, disobedient to parents, ungrateful, wicked, without virtue love, unforgiving, malicious gossips, without self-control, brutal, not lovers of God, haters of divine good of intrinsic value,

treacherous, rash, thoughtless, conceited, lovers of pleasure rather than lovers of God,

2Tim 3:5-7; religious, having an overt appearance of godliness in the hypocrisy of legalism, having from the past and continuing to hold to the external mold or form of Piety or Pseudo Godliness although they have denied, disregarded, renounced or repudiated the inner inherent power of Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul of that same experiential sanctification of Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace or Ultra Super Grace, also be turning yourself away or avoid these reversionistic evangelists of evil. For out of or among these apostles of apostasy or evangelists of evil are those which worm or creep or insinuate into those same houses, Local Churches, in order to sell satanic doctrines of evil, and take captive or captivate silly women or reversionistic believers in the systems of Evil and False doctrine, because they have been piled up, burdened, overloaded and overwhelmed with sins from poor judgment and as a result saturated with misery from Divine Discipline and Self Induced Misery and led on or carried away by evil as prisoners of reversionism and by various kinds or categories of Lusts. These reversionists, always learning false doctrine from some evangelist of evil who is a teacher and so they are never able to come into a full epignosis knowledge of the absolute truth of Bible Doctrine in the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.

2Tim 4:1-3; I adjure, give a solemn command under penalty of courts martial or execution to, charge you, Timothy, under oath, in the presence of The God and of Christ Jesus, who is inevitably destined to judge the dead unbelievers at the Great White Throne Judgment and evaluate the dead and living believers at the Judgment Seat of Jesus Christ, (John 5:22, 27) both with reference to his appearance at the rapture of the church and with reference to his kingdom at the Great White Throne Judgment. As a herald of the King, make a public proclamation, delineate the plan and policy of the King of Kings from the original languages of the canon of scripture; stand by, be alert and stick to studying and teaching in time of opportunity when it is convenient and in time of no opportunity when it is not convenient; publicly reprimand, discipline, punish when necessary; convict, privately rebuke, reprimand, discipline face to face when out of line; exhort, help, comfort, cheer up, incite by words or advice, encourage through Bible Doctrine; be steadfast, tenacious, fixed in purpose, unshakable, immovable, unfailing in fulfilling the ministry by studying and teaching the word of God by means of Bible Doctrine. For the generation or time will be when people will as a result of strong Negative Volition to Bible Doctrine NOT endure, bear up with, put up with, listen willingly to accurate sound healthy public teaching of Bible Doctrine, but they, believers under Negative Volition in reversionism under the influence of evil, according to their own personal lusts regarding false doctrines, will accumulate to themselves false teachers to suit their own lusts because they have an itch in their faculty of hearing and are constantly anxious to hear new false doctrines.

2Tim 4:6-8; For you see even now, EMPHATICALLY, I, Paul, an Ultra Super Grace believer, am already being poured out as a libation during this process of dying grace; this time under dying grace on this earth, of my striking the tent, hoisting the anchor, being unyoked from life, being released, my departure from life is standing by, at hand, imminent. I have desperately fought with all my spiritual weapons in the campaign of the Angelic Conflict, that noble, honorable fight of combat, seizing and holding the high ground of Super-Grace and Ultra Super-Grace, I have finished, carried out or completed the race course of life in the past and not left anything unfinished and have no regrets of any kind, I have Guarded and retained therefore, preserved that which is believed, the inestimably valued Bible Doctrine resident in my Stream of Consciousness of the Soul, maintaining the High Ground of Ultra Super-Grace. In the future in Phase III, eternity there is laid up, stored away, preserved or reserved for me a decoration wreath or medal of that righteousness (Dikaiousune) because of total fulfillment of Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God spiritual progress from Super-Grace to Ultra Super-Grace to Dying Grace, which the Lord Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ, the totally objective righteous evaluator or judge who will award or give to me on that day at the Judgment Seat of Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ and not to me only but also to all those Super-Grace and Ultra Super-Grace believers who love his appearing at the exanastasis or rapture of the church, having Occupation with the Person of Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ in time.

2Tim 4:14; Alexzandros the Metal Smith showed or exhibited on certain occasions, demonstrating or giving proof of many categories of EVIL to me even at my trial in Rome; the Lord Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ, shall pay back or remit to him according to his deeds.

Acts 5:1-10; But a certain man (Believers) named Ananias with Sapphira his wife, sold a possession, in competition with Barnabas and kept back part of the price while presenting the impression they were giving all; his wife also being privy to it or knowing along with him; and brought a certain part, and laid it at the apostles' feet. So Peter said, "Anani'as, why has Satan filled your right lobe (demon influence), to lie to God the Holy Spirit and to keep back some of the price of the land"? "While it remained unsold, did not the property remain your own? And after it was sold was the profit under your control? Why is it that you have put this deed or conceived this thing in your right lobe? You have not lied to man but to God." And Ananias hearing these words fell down, and gave up the spirit {died}. And great fear came on all them that heard these things. And the young men arose, wrapped up the body in swaddling clothes or death wraps, and carried him out, and buried him. And it was about the space of three hours after, when his wife, not knowing what was done, came in. And Peter answered unto her, "Tell me whether you sold the land for so much?" And she said, "Yes, for so much." Then Peter said unto her, "How is it that you have agreed together {with your husband} to tempt the Spirit of the Lord?" "Behold, the feet of them which have buried thy husband are at the door, and shall carry you out." Then fell she down straightway at his feet and yielded up her spirit {also croaked on the spot}. And the young men came in; found her dead; carrying her forth and buried her by her husband.

Acts 5:14-18; And believers were the more added to the Lord; multitudes both of men and women.) Insomuch that they brought forth the sick into the streets, and laid them on beds and couches, that at a minimum the shadow of Peter passing by might overshadow some of them. There came also a multitude out of the cities round about unto Jerusalem, bringing people who were sick, and them which were under the control of demons and they were healed individually one by one. Then the high priest rose up; and all they that were with him (Sadducees - Ruling Class); and were filled with jealousy. And they seized the apostles violently (Beat them when they were arrested), and put them in the common prison.

Acts 5:19; But the angel of the Lord by night opened the prison doors, and brought them forth, and said,

Acts 5:28; saying, "Did not we straightly command you that you should not teach in this name {in the name of Jesus}? And, behold, you have filled Jerusalem with your doctrine, and intend to bring this man's blood upon us."

Acts 7:9; "And the patriarchs moved with envy or Jealousy, one of the worst sins, sold Joseph into Egypt into slavery. But God was with him,

Acts 8:9-24; But there was a certain man, called Simon, who before time in the same city used sorcery and practiced miracles from demon possession, and bewitched the people of Samaria, giving out that he himself was some great one. To whom they {the Samaritans} all gave heed or great attention, from the least to the greatest, or all walks of life in the city, saying, "This man is the great power of God, the highest gnostician with a divine spark." And to him they kept on regarding him as the greatest person in the city, because for a long time he had bewitched or amazed them with sorceries. But when they believed Philip preaching the things concerning the kingdom of God, and the person of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ, they were baptized over and over, both men and women. Then Simon himself believed also. And when he was baptized with water, he continued hanging around like a shadow with Philip, and kept on being astounded or amazed, beholding the miracles and signs, which were done. Now when the apostles who were at Jerusalem heard that Samaria had received the word of God, they sent unto them Peter and John. Who {the apostles}, when they were come down, prayed concerning them, that they might receive the God the Holy Spirit. (For as yet He [God the Holy Spirit] was fallen upon none of them [like Old Testament saints like the disciples]. Only they were baptized in the name of the Lord Jesus.) Then laid they their hands on them, and they received the Holy Spirit. And when Simon saw that through laying on of the apostles' hands the Holy Spirit was given, he offered them money. And kept on saying, "Give me also this power, that on whomsoever I lay hands, he may receive the Holy Spirit." But Peter said unto him, "Your money will be your destruction, because you have thought that the gift of God may be purchased with money." "You have neither part nor lot in this matter. For your heart is not right in the sight of God." "Change your mind therefore of this your wickedness or SIN, and pray God {I John 1:9}, and perhaps the thought of your heart may be forgiven you and it will be." "For I perceive that you are in the gall of bitterness or frustration, and in the bond or slavery to iniquity or misery." Then answered Simon, and said, "Pray you to the Lord for me, that

none of these things which you have spoken come upon me."

Acts 10:38; how God anointed Jesus of Nazareth with the Holy Spirit and with power. Who {Jesus} went about doing {divine} good, and healing all that were oppressed of demons for God kept on being with Him."

Acts 13:44-46; And the next Sabbath day almost the entire city came together to hear the Word of God or Bible Doctrine. But, When the Jews {unbelievers with negative volition} saw the crowds they were filled with Envy or Jealousy, and they began contradicting, speaking against, criticizing the Bible Doctrine spoken by Paul (Rejection) contradicting and blaspheming or they reviled or lied about him. Then Paul and Barnabas spoke dogmatically with confidence, and said, " It was necessary that the word of God should first have been spoken to you {Jews} but seeing you put or thrust it (Gospel) from the ultimate source of yourself or emphatically rejected it {negative volition}, even judging yourselves unworthy {make human good or the Law, the issue for salvation} of everlasting life; because you have; we now turn to the Gentiles."

Acts 13:45; But, When the Jews {unbelievers with negative volition} saw the crowds they were filled with Envy or Jealousy, and they began contradicting, speaking against, criticizing the Bible Doctrine spoken by Paul (Rejection) contradicting and blaspheming or they reviled or lied about him.

Acts 17:5; But the Jews which believed not or were not persuaded with regard to Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ, were moved with envy or became jealous, associated with, for the purpose of using them, certain evil men or unemployed troublemakers of the marketplace, and formed a mob or rabble, and incited a riot or caused a commotion or disturbed the peace, and assaulted or destroyed or tore down the house of Jason, and sought to bring them (Paul and Silas) to the people.

Acts 23:12-13; And when it became day, certain of the Jews banded together, and bound themselves under a curse, saying again and again that they would neither eat nor drink till they had killed Paul. And they were more than forty which had made this conspiracy.

Col 3:2; Set your mind or be intent on or keep thinking objectively about the things above not on things which are on the earth (make every day Christmas)

Col 3:13; Be tolerant of or put up with one another as believers and graciously forgiving and forgetting one another. If anyone has a complaint against anyone else, just as Christ forgave you, so also graciously forgive them!

Col 3:18; Wives be subordinate or keep on voluntarily yielding yourselves to your husbands as is protocol or fitting or proper in the lord (right thing in the right way)

Col 3:19; The Noble Men keep {impersonally} loving the woman {relaxed mental attitude} and stop being bitter face to face with her.

Col 3:20; The children keep obeying the parents in all things for it is to your advantage.

Col 3:25; For he who does wrong will receive the consequences for that wrong and there is no partiality.

Dan 3:8-12; For this reason at that time certain Chaldeans came forward and brought charges against the Jews. They responded and said to Nebuchadnezzar the king: "O king, live forever! "You yourself, O king, have made a decree that every man who hears the sound of the horn, flute, lyre, trigon, psaltery, and bagpipe, and all kinds of music, is to fall down and worship the golden image. "But whoever does not fall down and worship shall be cast into the midst of a furnace of blazing fire. There are certain Jews whom you have appointed over the administration of the province of Babylon, namely Shadrach, Meshach and Abed-nego. These men, O king, have disregarded you; they do not serve your gods or worship the golden image which you have set up."



Dan 4:37; Now I, Nebuchadnezzar, praise and exalt and honor the King of heaven, The Lord Jesus, The Christ; for all his works are doctrine and his ways are justice; furthermore he is able to humble those who walk in pride.

Dan 5:20; But when his (Nebuchadnezzar's) heart was lifted up in Interlocking System of Arrogance in institutional arrogance, then his mind became hardened so that he behaved arrogantly, therefore he was deposed from his throne, and his glory was taken from him;

Dan 6:4; Then the presidents and the satraps sought to find a ground for complaint against Daniel with regard to the kingdom; but they could find no ground for complaint or any fault, because he was faithful, and no error or fault was found in him.

Deut 1:6; Be strong and courageous, do not be afraid nor tremble, for the Lord your God is the one who goes with you HE will never fail you, HE will never forsake you.

Deut 1:26-28; "Notwithstanding, you would not go up, but rebelled against the command of the LORD your God; and you complained in your tents with verbal sins when Caleb and Joshua insisted that they should go, and said, 'Because the LORD hated us he has brought us forth out of the land of Egypt, to give us into the hand of the Amorites, to destroy us. Why shall we go up? Our 10 brethren have discouraged our Right Lobes, saying, "The people are greater and taller than we; the cities are great and walled and fortified up to heaven and you cannot get over them; and moreover we have seen the sons of the Anakim the Giants from 8 to 10 feet tall there."

Deut 4:28; And there you will serve gods of wood and stone, the work of men's hands, that neither see, nor hear, nor eat, nor smell.

Deut 5:7; "You shall have no other gods before me.

Deut 6:4-6; Shamah Israel Adanai (Jehovah) Elohenu Adanai Echod; Hear, concentrate, start learning and focus attention OH Israel; Jehovah (Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ) is our Eternal God, Jehovah (Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ) is the Unique One of the 1<sup>st</sup> advent, virgin birth and Hypostatic Union, (Is 9, 52, 53 Burnt Offerings) and you shall love the LORD Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ your God with all your Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul, and with all your soul through advance to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God from maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul, and with all your concentration in worship and Perception, Cognition, Incultation & Metabolization of Bible Doctrine, And these doctrines which I am commanding you today shall be in your Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul; and you shall teach them diligently to your children, and shall talk of them when you sit in your house, and when you walk by the way, and when you lie down, and when you rise.

Deut 6:14; You shall not go after other gods, of the gods of the peoples who are round about you;

Deut 7:16; And you shall destroy all the peoples that the LORD your God will give over to you, your eye shall not pity them; neither shall you serve their gods, for that would be a snare to you.

Deut 8:19; And if you forget the LORD your God and go after other gods and serve them and worship them, I solemnly warn you this day that you shall surely perish.

Deut 14:1-2; "You are the sons of the LORD your God; you shall not cut yourselves or make any baldness on your foreheads for the dead. For you are a people holy to the LORD your God, and the LORD has chosen you to be a people for his own possession, out of all the peoples that are on the face of the earth.

Deut 24:16; "The fathers shall not be put to death for the children, neither shall the children be put to death for the fathers; every man shall be put to death for his own sin. (The Law of Culpability)

Deut 28:49-57; The Lord will bring a nation against you (SPQR) from afar from the ends of the earth as the eagle



swoops down a Nation whose language you will not understand. A nation of stern countenance, who shall not regard the person of the old or show favor to the young, and shall eat the offspring of your cattle and the fruit of your ground, until you are destroyed; who also shall not leave you grain, wine, or oil, the increase of your cattle or the young of your flock, until they have caused you to perish. And It (Roman Army) shall besiege you at all your gates, until your high and fortified walls in which you trusted come down throughout all your land and it (Romans) shall besiege or attack all your towns throughout all your lands which the Lord has given you. And you shall eat the production of your own body, the flesh of your sons and of your daughters, whom the LORD your God has given you, in the siege and in the distress with which your enemies shall distress you. The man who is the most tender and delicately bred among you will grudge food to his brother, to the wife of his bosom, and to the last of the children who remain to him; so that he will not give to any of them any of the flesh of his children whom he is eating, because he has nothing left him, in the siege and in the distress with which your enemy shall distress you in all your towns. The most tender and delicately bred woman among you, who would not venture to set the sole of her foot upon the ground because she is so delicate and tender, will grudge to the husband of her bosom, to her son and to her daughter, her afterbirth that comes out from between her feet and her children whom she bears, because she will eat them secretly, for want of all things, in the siege and in the distress with which your enemy shall distress you in your towns.

Deut 31:3-5; The LORD your God, The Lord Jesus, The Christ, himself will go over before you; he will destroy these nations before you, so that you shall dispossess them; and Joshua will go over as your leader at your head, as the LORD has spoken. And the LORD will do to them as he did to Sihon and Og, the kings of the Amorites, and to their land, when he destroyed them. And the LORD will give them, the Canaanites, over to you, and you shall do to them according to all the commandment which I have commanded you.

Deut 31:6; Be strong and courageous with a stable mentality (Think, Concentrate and Apply Bible Doctrine) do not be afraid nor tremble (control the emotions) because of or before the enemy, for the Lord your God, The Lord Jesus, The Christ, is the one who goes with or before you, He will never fail you, He will never forsake or cause you to fail because you have Eternal Security.

Deut 31:8; Therefore the Lord is the one who advances ahead of you, taking care of you in any disaster, He will be with you from Metabolized Bible Doctrine in your Stream of Consciousness of the Soul, He will never fail you nor cause you to fail (forsake you), DO NOT FEAR NOR BE SHATTERED NOR BE AFRAID NOR LOSE YOUR POISE NOR BE DEMORALIZED NOR PANIC NOR BECOME DISORIENTED IN BATTLE.

Deut 32:17; They sacrificed to demons not to God, to gods whom they had never known, to new gods that had come newly up, whom your fathers had never feared.

Deut 32:21; They, Jews in every generation under the Big Blot Out, have moved me the God of Israel to jealousy with that which is NOT or negative god in Idols; they have forgotten and provoked me Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ the God of Israel to anger with their emptiness or vanity with Idols. So I, Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ, the God of Israel, will make them the Jews jealous with those who are not a people the gentiles; I will provoke them to anger with a foolish nation a gentile client nation operating on grace not human ability.

Deut 32:35; Retaliation or Vengeance is mine, and retribution belongs to me for the due time when their foot will slip; for the day of their calamity is near, and the impending things of judgment which shall come upon them are hastened as they move toward their apostasy.

Eccl 1:1-2; The words of the The Man with the Message, The King, the son of David, king in Jerusalem. Emptiness of Emptiness, says the The Man with the Message, Emptiness of Emptiness! All is Emptiness.

Eccl 1:12-14; I, Solomon, the The Man with the Message have been king over Israel in Jerusalem. And I applied my thinking mind or devoted myself to study, to seek, to search out and to explore by academics or wisdom all things that had been or are done under heaven; What a heavy burden of self discipline, an unhappy business, a difficult thing that God has given to or laid upon the sons of men to be occupied with or exercise. I have seen

everything, all the works, that are done under the sun; and behold, all of them are Meaningless or Emptiness and I found myself chasing or FEEDING on AIR or the Wind.

Eccl 3:8; (There is) a time to love principles of Divine Viewpoint and Bible Doctrine (Not People), and a time to hate false principles or false doctrines like communism or ecumenicalism; a time for war, and a time for peace.

Eccl 6:2; A mature believer who had made Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God to whom God gives riches, wealth, possessions and honor, so that he lacks nothing for his soul of all that he desires as Ultra-Super Grace blessings, BUT God does not give him the power to enjoy them, (apart from Bible Doctrine) but a stranger enjoys them as part of the Divine Discipline from God; this is emptiness, futility and meaningless calamity of evil as a disease of thinking in reversionism.

Eccl 6:9; Better is the SEEING of the Eyes, perception of Bible Doctrine, than the wandering of the soul lusts in reversionism, for this also is meaningless or emptiness and chasing after or feeding on the wind.

Eccl 6:11; For there are many thoughts which increase vanity, greater futility and meaninglessness or emptiness of reversionism, what therefore is the advantage of this to man?

Eccl 8:2-5; I Say keep the command of the king (government) because of the oath to God, do not be in a hurry to revolt against him, do not join in an evil matter, revolution, for he will do whatever he chooses, since the word of the king is authoritative who will say to him “where are you going”, he who keeps the royal command will experience no evil, for a wise right lobe knows the proper time and procedure.

Eccl 9:3; This is an evil in all that is done under the sun, that one fate comes to all; also the hearts of men are full of evil, and madness is in their hearts while they live, and after that they go to the dead.

Eccl 9:4-8; For he who is reckoned among the living there is hope or he has something to look forward to for a live dog is better than a dead lion. For the living know that they will die. But the dead do not know anything. They {the dead} no longer have a reward. For even their memory has died. Their {pseudo} loves, their hates and their jealousies have already long since perished. Therefore, they no longer have a share in all that is done under the sun. Go, eat your bread in gladness, and drink your wine in joy for your action was long ago approved by God. Let your clothes always be washed, and your head never lack ointment.

Eccl 9:9; Enjoy living with the right woman who you have loved all the days of your life of emptiness (unbeliever or reversionistic believer) the Right Woman whom he has given you under the sun (Believer & Unbeliever) all the days of your life of emptiness, for this is your portion in life, and in your work or toil, profession, occupation, in which you are laboring or working under the sun.

Eccl 12:8; Emptiness of Emptiness, everything is emptiness, says the man with the message, all is empty.

Eph 1:4-6; Just or even as He, God the Father, chose or elected us as Royal Family of God for himself in him (Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ) before the foundation or beginning of the world, Eternity Past, for the purpose that we should keep on being set apart to God or holy and even unblemished or blameless before or in the presence of him, God the Father, through the agency of LOVE. In love or by means of virtue love having pre-designed us for the purpose of adoption, with the result of the appointment of adult sons for Himself through Jesus Christ according to the benevolent grace purpose from the source of His will, resulting in recognition or praise of God's Glory from the source of his grace from which he has pursued us with grace in the one having been loved (Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ).

Eph 2:2; in which sphere you once walked, according to the lifestyle of the KOSMOS the Cosmic Dynaspheres, according to the ruler of the power of the air or atmosphere of this world, (John 12:31, 14, 30, 16:11, 2Cor 4:4), the spirit, Satan, that is now operational and working in the believer sons (Gal 3:26) of disobedience.

Eph 2:8-9; For by Grace you have been saved now with the result that you keep on being saved always, through faith alone in The Lord Jesus, The Christ alone and that Salvation, not from yourselves, nor anything you do IT IS the gift of God, not as a result of works, that no one should be arrogant or ever boast going beyond his limitations.

Eph 3:10; that through the church the manifold wisdom of God might now be made known to the principalities and powers in the heavenly places.

Eph 3:19; And Come or Get to know the surpassing knowledge Love for Christ, which goes beyond Gnosis Academic Knowledge being Epignosis function of the 3 Spiritual Skills of Filling of God the Holy Spirit Metabolized Bible Doctrine and 10 Problem Solving Devices, so that we may be filled (Eph 5:18 Filling of God the Holy Spirit), resulting in all the unique fullness of blessings from the source of God.

Eph 4:14; In order that, we, believers, may no longer be, or stop being, stupid, imbecilic, childish, foolish, FRAGMENTED, spiritual morons, immature adults as long term believers in reversionism and under the influence Evil producing only Human Good, being tossed here and there and destabilized by waves of reversionistic thoughts as a ship in heavy stormy seas, being carried here and there or driven out of control because of FRAGMENTATION OF THE LIFE, by every wind of false doctrine teaching, by the dice playing or trickery of men in cheating or teaching false doctrines of demons (1Tim 4:12), or cunning deception for the purpose of leading us astray easily through Marxist principles, face to face with their cunning method of deception for the scheming of deceit.

Eph 4:17-18; This therefore I have explained and make an emphatic demand by means of the Lord, that all of you reversionistic Believers no longer continue walking just as also the gentile reversionistic unbelievers keep walking by means of the worthlessness, futility or the vacuum or nothingness of their mind from Black Out of the Soul. Their minds having become darkened in their way of thinking or understanding from Blackout of the Soul or by way of their thinking, having been alienated, estranged, excluded from the Life of God from Scar Tissue of the Soul, because of the ignorance which keeps on being in them and because of the ignorance which is in them because of the hardness or scar tissue of their Right Lobe.

Eph 4:19; Who while having become become callous with Scar Tissue of the Soul have betrayed themselves to permiscuous debauchery, resulting in the practice of very kind of immorality in the sphere of insatiable lust.

Eph 4:22; In order that you lay aside, not allow your Old Sin Nature to control your life through the use of the Rebound Procedure, which as belonged to the Norms and Standards of your former manner of life and is constantly corrupt and depraved according to the deceitful lusts,

Eph 4:23-24; But in contrast to the carnal status, (v22) receive restoration by the Breathing, inhale and exhale of Bible DoctriJerne, by your minds, and for the purpose that you, yourselves, clothe your soul with the new in species pertaining to man, Bible Doctrine, which having been called into being according to the standard of God which brings order out of chaos in true fairness and justice in the sphere of GRACE Orientation and piety, fidelity, devotion, to the Absolute Truth of Bible Doctrine.

Eph 4:26; Although you may have become indignant or angry because of some hostility toward you, in spite of that sin, nevertheless stop this sinning do not allow it to become chain sinning; the sun must not ever go down or set on your angry mood, the perpetuation of your anger.

Eph 4:27; and Stop doing what you are already doing in giving room or opportunity to the Devil by living in the Cosmic Dynaspheres, to the Great Slanderer, the Ruler of this World.

Eph 4:28; Let the thief no longer steal, but rather let him labor, doing honest work with his hands, so that he may be able to give to those in need.

Eph 4:30-32; Furthermore Stop Grieving GHS, The God, by means of whom you have been sealed to the Day of

Redemption. All bitterness, both anger and wrath, both quarreling and slander must be removed from you along with all malice. But become kind toward one another, (Grace Orientation) compassionate (Impersonal Love for Mankind) even forgiving each other, just as God also, by means of The Lord Jesus, The Christ has forgiven us.

Eph 5:3; But fornication and any abnormal sex or any other aspect of a Frantic Search for Happiness should not even be mentioned among you, as is proper with reference to the Royal Family of God.

Eph 5:16; constantly Redeeming or buying time through Perception, Cognition, Inculcation, Metabolization and Application of Bible Doctrine and attaining Maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul with Filling of God the Holy Spirit, because the Days are evil

Eph 5:20

v20: Be thankful for all things in the sphere of our Lord Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ to God even the Father.

Eph 5:23-33; Because the husband is the HEAD or ruler of the wife just as Christ also is head or ruler of the church he himself is the savior of the body, the body of the woman by his love care and tenderness. But as the church is subject to Christ, you wives are also subject to your husbands in all things, that having purified her, the Royal Family of God, he might consecrate or dedicate her by means of the washing from the water from or with the word of Bible Doctrine, that he, himself, Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ, might present the splendid glorious church to himself not having stain of no Old Sin Nature in the Resurrection Body, nor wrinkle of Good and Evil or any such category of things related to the devils world, that she the Royal Family of God might be holy in ultimate sanctification and blameless with relationship to lack of Good and Evil. Even so husbands should love their wives as their own bodies. He who loves his wife loves himself. For no man ever hates his own flesh, but nourishes and cherishes it, as Christ does the church, because we are members of his body. "For this reason a man shall leave his father and mother and be joined to his wife, and the two shall become one flesh." This mystery is a profound one, and I am saying that it refers to Christ and the church. However each one of you also individually, let you husbands, so love your own wife as he loves himself, and the wife see to it that she respects her husband.

Eph 6:10-17 (command for the believer-the Armor from God); Therefore in the future keep on becoming strong in the Lord (Interlocking of the Gates of the Divine Dynasphere) even by means of the Rule of his Endowed power (Divine Dynasphere). Put on or wear for yourselves the full armor of God that you might be able to hold your ground against the tactics of the Devil, Because our combat is not against flesh and blood human beings, but against rulers, the demon general officers, against authorities, the demon commissioned officers, against the world rulers of this darkness, the demon ambassadors to capitals of the world rulers, and against the Spirit forces of evil the rank and file demons. *Because of this Angelic Conflict pick up and put on the whole armor from God, in order that you may have the ability to resist in the evil day of attack, even after having achieved everything by reaching Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God, to oppose the forces of Satan through No Man's Land and at advanced Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God during Evidence Testing.* Stand fast therefore, after having buckled your bauldritch around your waist by means of Metabolized Bible Doctrine resident in the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul, also after having put on the body armor of righteousness. Also having put on combat boots on your feet with the equipment of the gospel even peace or reconciliation. In addition to All this Armor, having picked up and carried the shield of Faith with which you may be able to extinguish all the missiles of the evil one. And take the helmet of salvation, and the sword of the Spirit, which is the word of God.

Eph 6:18; With all prayer and petition pray at all times in the power of God the Holy Spirit, and with this in view be alert with prayer, for all the saints with all persistence and petition.

Ex 5:17-18; But he, Pharaoh, said, "You are idle, you are idle; therefore you say, 'Let us go and sacrifice to the LORD.' Go now, and work; for no straw shall be given you, yet you shall deliver the same number of bricks."



Ex 14:13-14; And Moses spoke, being a courageous leader able to think under pressure, saying to the people, "Fear not, Fear not, You shall not be afraid, You yourself must take a stand on doctrine, stand fast in place be stabilized and concentrate on doctrine and see or watch the physical deliverance of the LORD, which he, God, will do or manufacture for you this day from Grace; because what you see, the Egyptians, today, you will not see again, see them any more forever and ever; or because the Egyptians whom you have seen today you will never see again not ever. The LORD Jehovah, Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ, God of Israel, himself, will fight for you, while you 2,000,000 Jews keep your damned mouths shut, no more whining and crying no more hysteria."

Ex 16:2-4; And the whole congregation, ALL of the people of Israel murmured against Moses and Aaron in the desert, and said to them, "Would that we had died by the hand of the LORD in the land of Egypt, when we sat by the giant outdoor kettle where we cooked our meals of miserable carrion scraps and worms and snails for food and ate disgusting food to the full; for you have brought us out into this desert to kill this whole assembly by starvation." Then the LORD said to Moses, "Behold, I will rain bread from heaven for ya'all, (While they were complaining against Moses and Aaron); and the people shall go out and gather a day's portion every day, for the purpose or in order in order that I may test them, whether they will obey my instructions or not.

Ex 17:1-7 (The last test before WAR); All the congregation of the people of Israel moved on from the wilderness of Zin by stages, according to the commandment of the LORD, and camped at Reph'idim (the place of refreshment); but there was no water for the people to drink. Therefore the people complained (Meribah) with Moses, and said, "Give us water to drink." And Moses said to them, "Why do you find fault with me? Why do you tempt the Lord (to destroy them totally)?" The people at meribah thirsted for water and complained against Moses and said why have you brought us up from Egypt to kill us and our livestock with thirst. So Moses earnestly prayed to the LORD, "What shall I do to these people? They are almost ready to stone me." And the LORD said to Moses, "Get out in front of the people (where you make a better target for stoning), taking with you some of the elders of Israel; and take in your hand the rod with which you struck the Nile, and go. Behold, I will stand before you there on the rock in Horeb; and you shall strike the rock, and water shall come out of it, that the people may drink." And Moses did so, in the sight of the elders of Israel. And he called the name of the place Massah and Mer'ibah, because of the testing and complaining of the children of Israel, and because they put the LORD to the proof by saying, "Is the LORD among us or not?"

Ex 20:3-4; "There shall not be to you personally any other gods beyond me. "You shall not manufacture out of existing materials for yourself any graven or sculpted image, or any likeness of anything that is in heaven above, or that is in the earth beneath, or that is in the water under the earth;

Ex 20:23-24; You shall not make gods of silver to be with me, nor shall you make for yourselves gods of gold. An altar of earth you shall make for me and sacrifice on it your burnt offerings and your peace offerings, your sheep and your oxen; in every place where I cause my name to be remembered I will come to you and bless you.

Ex 34:13; You shall destroy their altars, and break their images, and cut down their groves for you shall worship no other god, for the LORD your God, whose name is possessive, is a possessive God and you belong to him,

Ez 7:10; "Behold, the day is coming as the 5th cycle of Divine Discipline to any nation saturated in the Interlocking System of Arrogance! Your doom has gone forth, the rod of Divine Discipline has blossomed because the Interlocking System of Arrogance has sprouted.

Ez 14:7; For any one of the house of Israel, or of the strangers that sojourn in Israel, who separates himself from me, taking his idols into his heart and putting the stumbling block of his iniquity before his face, and yet comes to a prophet to inquire for himself of me, I the LORD will answer him myself;

Ez 16:9; Then I bathed you with the water of Bible Doctrine and thoroughly washed off your blood of hopelessness from you, and anointed you with oil.



Ez 16:23-33; "And it came to pass after all your wickedness; woe, woe to you! says the Lord GOD, Then you have built yourself a house of prostitution, and made yourself a lofty place in every street bringing an orgy into your house of prostitution. You have built a house of prostitution at the head of every street and prostituted your beauty, offering yourself to any one who passes by, and multiplying your whoredom being a prostitute with your own house. You also committed fornication with the fat Egyptians, your lustful neighbors, and you have increased your whoredoms to provoke me. Behold, therefore, I have stretched out my hand against you, and diminished your ordinary food, and by your free will delivered you to the those who hate you, the lesbian daughters of the Philistines, who were ashamed of your lewd behavior. You played the whore also with the fierce Assyrians, because you were insatiable and unsatisfied; Yes, you played the whore with them, and still you were not satisfied. You have moreover multiplied your fornication also with the land of Caanan unto Chaldea; and even with this you were not satisfied. "How weak is your Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul, says the Lord GOD because of lack of function under Grace Apparatus for Perception, seeing you did all these things, the work of a ruling whorish woman no longer a responder; building your house of prostitution at the head of every street, and making your house in every square. Yet you were not like a harlot, because you scorned hire. You are like an Adulterous wife, who receives strangers instead of her husband, giving herself away no longer a prostitute! Men give money to all prostitutes; but you gave money to all your lovers, bribing them to come to you from every side for your harlotries.

Ez 22:3-18; You shall say, Thus says the Lord GOD: A city that sheds blood in the midst of her, that her time may come, and that makes idols to defile herself! You have become guilty by the blood which you have shed, and defiled by the idols which you have made; and you have brought your day near, the appointed time of your years has come. Therefore I have made you a reproach to the nations, and a mocking to all the countries. Those who are near and those who are far from you will mock you, you infamous one, full of tumult. "Behold, the princes of Israel in you, every one according to his power, have been bent on shedding blood. Father and mother are treated with contempt in you; the sojourner suffers extortion in your midst; the fatherless and the widow are wronged in you. You have despised my holy things, and profaned my sabbaths. There are men with you who plan to shed blood, and men in you who eat upon the mountains; men commit abusive perverted sex in your midst. In you men uncover their fathers' nakedness; in you they humble women who are unclean in their impurity. One commits abomination with his neighbor's wife; another incestuously defiles his daughter-in-law; another in you defiles his sister, his father's daughter. In you men take bribes to shed blood; you take interest and increase and make gain of your neighbors by extortion; and you have forgotten me, says the Lord GOD. "Behold, therefore, I strike my hands together at the dishonest gain which you have made, and at the blood which has been in the midst of you. Can your courage endure, or can your hands be strong, in the days that I shall deal with you? I the LORD have spoken, and I will do it. I will scatter you among the nations and disperse you through the countries, and I will consume your filthiness out of you. And I shall be profaned through you in the sight of the nations; and you shall know that I am the LORD." And the word of the LORD came to me: "Son of man, the house of Israel has become dross to me; all of them, silver and bronze and tin and iron and lead in the furnace, have become dross.

Ez 23:24-28; And they will come against you with weapons, chariots, wagons, and a company of people who fight, and they will set themselves up against you in every side with buckler and shield and helmet, and I shall commit the judgment to them and they will judge you according to their customs. And I will direct my indignation against you, that they may deal with you in fury. They shall cut off your nose and your ears, and your survivors shall fall by the sword. They shall seize your sons and your daughters, and your survivors shall be devoured by fire. They shall also strip you of your clothes and take away your fine jewels. Thus I will put an end to your lewdness and your harlotry brought from the land of Egypt; so that you shall not lift up your eyes to the Egyptians or remember them any more. For thus says the Lord GOD: Behold, I will deliver you into the hands of those whom you hate, into the hands of those from whom you turned in disgust; For thus says the Lord Jehovah, "Behold, I will deliver you into the hands of those whom you despise, having not accepted responsibility for your acts thus refusing to rebound, into the hands of those from whom your soul has torn itself away

Ez 23:37-49; They have committed adultery, and blood is upon their hands; with their idols they have committed adultery; and they have also even offered up their sons to pass through the fire of the child sacrifice of the phallic

cult whom they had borne to me. Moreover this they have done to me: they have defiled my sanctuary on the same day and profaned my sabbaths. For when they had slaughtered their children in sacrifice to their idols, on the same day they came into my sanctuary to profane it. And lo, this is what they did in my house. They even sent for men to come from far, to whom a messenger was sent, and lo, they came. For them you bathed yourself, painted your eyes, and decked yourself with ornaments; you sat upon a stately couch, with a table spread before it on which you had placed my incense and my oil. The sound of a carefree multitude was with her; and with men of the common sort drunkards were brought from the wilderness; and they put bracelets upon the hands of the women, and beautiful crowns upon their heads. "Then I her Right Man the Lord said to her that was debilitated or made old by adulteries from excess fornication now will her fornicating itself being unfaithful to the Right Man go on fornicating? For they have gone in to her, as men go in to a harlot. Thus they went in to Oho'lah and to Ohol'ibah to commit lewdness. But righteous men shall pass judgment on them with the sentence of adulteresses, and with the sentence of women that shed blood; because they are adulteresses, and blood is upon their hands." For thus says the Lord GOD: "Bring up a host against them, and make them an object of terror and a spoil. And the host shall stone them and dispatch them with their swords; they shall slay their sons and their daughters, and burn up their houses. Thus will I eradicate lasciviousness from the land, that all women may take warning and not commit lasciviousness as you have done. And your lewdness shall be requited upon you, and you shall bear the penalty for your sinful idolatry; and you shall know that I am the Lord GOD."

Ez 28:12-13; "Son of man, raise a lamentation upon the king of Tyre a demon possessed man, and say to him, thus says Jehovah Elohim: "You were the greatest of all creature perfection, full of wisdom and perfect in beauty. You were in Eden, the garden of God in the third heaven even the throne room; every precious stone was your covering, carnelian, topaz, and jasper, diamonds, beryl, and onyx, sapphire, carbuncle, and emerald; and wrought in gold was your suit or garment and coverings and your vocal cords or voice were prepared in you on the day that you were created.

Ez 28:14-17; You (Satan) were the anointed cherub who guards (the Throne room of heaven), I (God) placed you there, you were on the holy mountain of God, you walked in the stones of Fire. You were blameless perfect in your ways from the day you were created until unrighteousness was found in you. By the abundance of your slander or gossip or malign, they filled your inner life with violence, your motivation and thought pattern was filled with violence (as terrorists) And you sinned (Is 14:14) therefore I have cast you out as defiled from the mountain of God, I have excluded you oh Guardian Cherub, from the midst of the stones of fire. Your Right lobe was lifted up (arrogance) because of your beauty, you were corrupted because of your glamour and wisdom or intelligence, I have cast you to the earth, I have placed you before kings so that they may see you.

Ezra 3:12-13; But many of the priests and Levites and heads of fathers' houses, old men who had seen the first house, wept with a loud voice when they saw the foundation of this house being laid, though many shouted aloud for joy; so that the people could not distinguish the sound of the joyful shout from the sound of the people's weeping, for the people shouted with a great shout, and the sound was heard afar.

Gal 2:11-13; But when Peter was come to Antioch I braced or opposed or resisted or stood up against him to his face before the church because he {Peter} was found after investigation to be in the past and kept on being so, wrong or blamed or standing condemned, for legalism infiltration, according to divine viewpoint. For before that, when certain ones or men came from James with a legalistic purpose, he {Peter} did habitually eat or dine in the company of Gentile Believers. But when the legalistic Jewish Believers arrived, he {Peter} made a strategic withdrawal and gradually, secretly, quietly, separated himself from the Gentiles keeping on fearing them who were of the circumcision the legalistic Jewish Believers. And the other Jewish Believers dissembled or acted likewise or spoke from behind a false front or face or to become a hypocrite with him. Insomuch that Barnabas also was carried away with their legalism or two-faced-ness or hypocrisy!

Gal 2:16; Nevertheless, knowing that a man does not receive justification by means of the works of the Law (Mosaic Law), but through or by instrumentality of faith in Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ alone, even we (Peter & Paul) who are Believers have believed in Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ, that we might receive, once and for all,

justification by Faith Alone in Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ alone, and not by the works of the LAW, since by the works of the law, NO MORTAL MAN will be justified.

Gal 2:21; I do not keep on canceling, frustrating or voiding the grace of God. For if righteousness comes by the law, and let us assume it does, then Christ is dead, has died, in vain!

Gal 3:1-23; Oh Asinine stupid Galatians, who has hypnotized or given you the evil eye, that Before whose eyes Jesus Christ has been publicly displayed crucified among you! I could rest my case on this one point only, I desire to learn from you and only you, once and for all, did you receive in a point of time God the Holy Spirit by means of the works of the law, or by means of the hearing of faith, or the willingness or desire to listen? Are you so stupid? {Yes we are so stupid!} Having begun in the sphere of the Spirit, are you, yourselves, now made perfect by means of the work the flesh? Have you suffered so many things in vain? If so indeed in vain. Therefore He who keeps on giving graciously un-bountifully to you, to your advantage, God the Holy Spirit and {Who} works with effectiveness providing both natural and supernatural abilities inside of you, does He do it by the works of the law or by the hearing of faith or the willingness or desire to listen? (Gen 15:6) Even as Abraham believed in The God, and it was credited to him in a point of time for Divine Righteousness know you therefore {by study} that they out from the source of faith or born again believers the same ones are the adult sons of Abraham. And the scripture {Genesis 12:3} foreseeing that God would habitually justify in the same way, the heathen or Gentiles out from the source of faith preached or announced before in history, the gospel unto the advantage of Abraham "In you {Abraham through Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ} shall all nations be blessed." So then in conclusion, they out of the source of faith receive blessing in association with The Believing Abraham. For as many as are under the works of the law are under the curse of the Mosaic Law. For it is written in the past and stands written forever {Deuteronomy 27:26}, "Cursed be all ones that fail to keep on abiding in or adhering to all things, which are written in the past and stands forever, in the book of the law (Codex 1, 2, & 3) to do them". But that no one receives justification in the sphere of the law in the sight of God evident for (Hab 2:4) "The justified ones shall live out of the source of faith." And the law is not of faith. "But, the man that having done them, shall live, in the future, in them." {Leviticus 18:5} Christ and only Christ has once and for all redeemed or purchased us (Believers) out from the slave market of the curse of the law. For it is written in the past with the result that it stands written forever {Deut 21:23}, "Under a curse is every one who keeps on hanging on The Wood having become a curse for us." For the purpose that the blessing of Abraham might once and for all come to pass on the Gentiles for their benefit, in union with Jesus Christ with the result that we might once and for all receive the promise of the Spirit through the instrumentality of faith. Brethren, I keep on speaking from the human viewpoint but though a human's contract, yet if it be confirmed in the past, with the result it continues to be a contract forever, then no man keeps on voiding it or a Divine Dynasphere to it. (Parenthetical) (Now to Abraham and his Seed {Christ & Believers in union with him} were the promises once and for all forever made. He said not to seeds as of many {Racial or physical birth Jews} but as of one and to your Seed which is Christ.) And this I keep on saying that the Abrahamic covenant that which was ratified or confirmed in the past by God with the result that it keeps on being ratified forever before the Mosaic law, under the authority of God in Christ, the Mosaic law which was four hundred and thirty years after can not annul or abrogate with the result that the promise becomes void! For if the inheritance is based on the law it is no longer based on promise but God gave it to Abraham by means of promise {and He will NOT renege}. Why the law or What is the purpose of the {Mosaic} law? It was added for the sake or purpose of defining the transgressions (to see sin as transgression of God's laws) having been ordained or arrangements precisely made in a point of time through the instrumentality of angels in the hand of a mediator (the preincarnate Jesus Christ), until the Seed (of the woman Gen 3:15, the incarnate Jesus Christ) should decide to come to whom the promise was made. Now the mediator of the law is not a mediator of THE one God but God (Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ) is one in essence. OR Now the mediator of the law is not of one party only, whereas God is One party only. Is the law then against the promises of God? Let it not be so or It is not so! For if there had been a law given which could have given life but there isn't, verily divine righteousness should have been in the past from the source of the law! For the scripture (Deut 27:26) has concluded all humanity is under the Old Sin Nature, that the promise by faith in Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ might be given to them who believe to their advantage. But before faith came to the Jews in the beginning of the Church Age, we were constantly or habitually kept or jailed under the Law and therefore shut up or closed out in a prison cell, from the possibility of with reference to faith which as a

result of departing from the law should be here in after revealed.

Gal 3:24; Therefore the Law was our custodian slave to bring or escort us to an understanding of Christ, in order that we might receive once and for all justification by volitional faith.

Gal 3:28; There is Neither Jew nor Gentile (NO racial distinctions), there is neither Slave or Freeman (NO social distinction), there is neither Male nor Female (NO gender distinction), but you are always in absolute status quo of one in Christ Jesus.

Gal 4:17-18; They {the legalistic Jews} keep on zealously courting you {tell you HOW GOOD YOU are doing} but not honestly. Yes, they would separate you {from Paul and his teaching of Grace} that they might affect you. But good to be properly courted when I am present. And, not only when I am present with you!

Gal 5:9; A little leaven leavens the entire lump.

Gal 5:17-18; For you see, the Old Sin Nature rises up in protest against the indwelling God the Holy Spirit and the indwelling God the Holy Spirit wars against the Old Sin Nature for these are constantly opposed to each other with the result that you may not do the things which you desire. But if you are led by the Spirit you are not under the law.

Gal 5:19-20; Now the works of the flesh are evident, they are fornication (Sexual sins) abstain from Fornication, idolatry, sorcery, enmity, strife, jealousy, anger, selfishness, dissension, party spirit,

Gal 5:21; envy, drunkenness, carousing, and the like. I warn you, as I warned you before, that those who do such things shall not inherit the kingdom of God.

Gal 5:22; But the Fruit of God the Holy Spirit is Love, Happiness, Tranquility (in time of disaster) , Patience, Kindness, Goodness and Faithfulness

Gal 5:25-26; for if we live by means of the Filling of God the Holy Spirit let us also advance by means of the spirit, let us not become arrogant challenging each other being jealous of each other.

Gal 6:3; For if anyone thinks he is something when he is nothing (and we do) he leads his own mind astray, he deceives himself and Doctrine is not in him. (Self Deception)

Gal 6:7; Be not deceived God is not mocked whatever a person sows so shall he also reap. they who sow to the wind will reap the whirlwind\

Gen 1:1; In a beginning which was, without a beginning, not a beginning, in a segment of Eternity Past, there always existed elohim, and God (elohim) Created out of nothing the heavens and Planet Earth.

Gen 1:2 (Chaos); But the Earth had become desolate, and empty, packed in ice, (No animal, plantlife, preadamic, invisible unformed) with darkness above the Ice (No Light nor heat) upon the face of the Raging Waters, But the Spirit of God, radiated Heat to melt the Ice Pack, upon the face of the waters,

Gen 1:3-31; And Elohim the father said, Light BE and Light Was, Elohim saw that the Light, Good, and elohim caused to separate between the light and between the darkness (caused by Angelic Fall), And elohim called the light Day, but the Darkness he called Night, and so it became evening getting darker, and the morning became dawn getting lighter, (the first cycle is) DAY ONE. And Elohim communicated, "Atmosphere Be, in the middle of the Waters, and become a cause of dividing between the lower waters on the earth and Heavenly, upper waters, And Elohim the Son manufactured the Atmosphere out of something and caused to separate between the waters under the atmosphere and the waters above the atmosphere, and so it came to pass, or was done as previously described. And Therefore God designated the atmosphere Heaven, So it became evening getting darker and it



became Dawn, getting lighter, Day 2. Then Elohim said Waters below the atmosphere, Be Assembled into boundaries (one place), and now dry land be seen, and so it came to pass as described. and So Elohim (all three agreed) called the Dry Land Earth, and the Gathering together, Collection into one Place, waters within their boundaries, he called oceans, seas or Bodies of Water, therefore Elohim saw, Good. And elohim said, Dry Land cause to Sprout or grow vegetation, self perpetuating plantlife yielding Seed, producing fodder for animals and food for mankind, causing to produce seed according to its own species, and fruit tree producing fruit according to its own species, whose seed is within it on the earth, and so it came to pass as described. And So the Dryland of the Planet Earth caused to spring up (on a self perpetuating basis), vegetation, plantlife causing to produce seed according to its own species and also the tree producing fruit whose seed was within it according to its own species therefore elohim saw that it was Good. So it became evening getting darker, and it became Dawn getting lighter, Day Three. And Elohim, (God) Said, "Light Bearers (our solar system) Be, in the expanse of the heavens, to cause to divide between the day and between the night, also to become for signs, and to become for seasons, and for days and for years. And let them become for light bearers in the heavens, to cause to give light to the planet earth and so it came to pass as described. So elohim constructed out of light, the 2 great categories of Light Bearers, [1-Sun a Star + 2-Planets], namely the Greater light for the dominion of the day (Sol Star) and both the Lesser light (Planets) and the already existing stars for the dominion of the night, and Elohim the Son gave them (Sun and planets) to the atmosphere of the heavens to provide light on planet earth, consequently. And one category to rule over the day and the other category in the night, and to cause to divide between the light and darkness, and elohim saw that it was Good. So it became evening getting darker (earth rotating again) and it became morning getting lighter, Day 4. And elohim decrees "The waters (in their boundaries) be prolific with aquatic Life, living creatures, and birds fly above the earth on the face of the atmosphere of the heavens (close to the earth). And Elohim (The Son) created out of nothing the giant whales, and every other aquatic living moving creature with which the waters abounded, according to their own species, and above the water every bird with wings according to their own species, and elohim saw that it kept on being good. And Elohim (The Trinity) blessed them saying, reproduce and multiply and fill the waters in the oceans with your own kind, And to the Birds he commanded, Multiply in or over the planet earth. And elohim decreed the Earth cause to spring up the Living Creature animals on the land, according to its own species, domesticatable animals, reptiles along with insects, and wild animals of the land according to its own species, and So it came to pass as previously described. And Elohim constructed the wild animals of the land according to its own species, domesticated animals according to its own species, and all the reptiles (worms, insects, etc) of the ground according to its own species, and elohim saw that it was Good. Elohim (trinity) decreed, "Let us manufacture (Adam) the Human Race personslities in the shadow image of our essence after our pattern of personalities, and they shall rule over the birds of the heavens, the fish of the sea, and over the domesticated animals, and over all the earth (Lower creation),and over all the reptiles creeping and gliding over the earth (insects and snakes). So Elohim (trinity) Created out of nothing the Adam (Soul) in His shadow image, in the image of Elohim created out of nothing He (God) Him (Adam), created he Them Male and Female souls, Right Man and Right Woman in Soul only. And Elohim blessed them abundantly, therefore elohim said unto them, "reproduce and multiply and fill the earth, both dominate and subdue it and rule over the fish of the sea, the birds of the heavens and every living animal moving on the land". And Elohim decreed, behold, I have given you all plantlife producing and scattering seeds, which is on the surface of the Earth, and every tree which in it the fruit of the tree producing seeds, to you it shall be for food. And to every beast of the earth (Mammals), and to every bird of the air (Fowls), and to everything that creeps or glides (Snakes & Insects etc) which in it has life, every green plant for food, and so it came to pass as previously described. And Elohim saw everything which he had manufactured out of something (Restored) and behold very Good, And so it became evening becoming darker, and it became dawn getting lighter the 6th Day.

Gen 2:7; (God's Provision for Man's Soul); And the Jehovah Elohim formed or designed the male body (Man) out of the Dust from the Ground and Breathed into his nostrils the Breath or Spark of Life of Soul Lives (man and woman) and The Adam, Man only became a Soul having life. (Woman's Body created later)

Gen 2:17 (The Test); And from the Tree of the Knowledge of Good and Evil you MUST not eat from it, because in the day that you eat from it Dying (spiritually), you will die (physically). DEAD DEAD



Gen 3:1-3 (Satanic Agent); Now the Serpent the hissing one, was, more crafty or clever than any lower creature of the field that Jehovah Elohim had manufactured (out of something) and he said to the woman, "Have you heard, or is it really True, that Elohim, God, has said, "You shall not eat of every tree of the garden". And the woman replies to the serpent "From the Fruit of the trees of the Garden we may eat but from the fruit of the tree in the middle of the Garden", Elohim has Said' "you shall not eat from it neither shall you touch it, lest you die." (Satan Speaking Rev 12:9) And the Serpent said to the Woman, "No, definitely you will never die, For Elohim keeps on knowing that the day you eat from it, then the eyes of your soul will be opened, and you shall become like Elohim, knowing Good and Evil. And when the Woman kept on seeing that the tree was good for food and that it was an object of desire for the Eye, and the Tree being desirable to make one wise, causing one to be knowing, she took from the tree's fruit and she kept on eating it over and over. Then she gave also to Her Man with her and He also did keep on eating.

Gen 3:15 (Salvation promise); and I will put enmity or hostility or antagonism between you (serpent) and the woman (Salvation Promise – Grace before Judgement), between your seed, offspring, descendant (fallen angels & unbelievers) and her seed, offspring, descendant (JC & believers), and HE (Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ) shall crush your (Satan) ruler-ship or headship (operation footstool), and you (Satan) shall crush His heel (Spiritually Dead Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ judged on the cross for SIN).

Gen 15:6; Now He, Abraham, being motivated for Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God, had been caused to believe by means of common grace and Efficacious Grace 50+ years before through faith alone, in Jehovah, Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ and he, God the Father, had computed it to be credited to him for imputed Absolute Righteousness of God.

Gen 34:25-26; On the third day, when they were sore, two of the sons of Jacob, Simeon and Levi, Dinah's brothers, took their swords and came upon the city unawares, and killed all the males. They slew Hamor and his son Shechem with the sword, and took Dinah out of Shechem's house, and went away.

Gen 49:5-7; Simeon and Levi are brothers; weapons of violence are their swords. O my soul, come not into their council; O my spirit, be not joined to their company; for in their anger they slay men, and in their wantonness they hamstring oxen. Cursed be their anger, for it is fierce; and their wrath, for it is cruel! I will divide them in Jacob and scatter them in Israel.

Gen 49:6; O my soul, come not into their council; O my spirit, be not joined to their company; for in their anger they slay men, and in their wantonness they hamstring oxen.

Hab 2:18-19; What profit is an idol when its maker has shaped it, a metal image, a teacher of lies? For the workman trusts in his own creation when he makes dumb idols! Woe to him who says to a wooden thing, Awake; to a dumb stone, Arise! Can this give revelation? Behold, it is overlaid with gold and silver, and there is no breath at all in it.

Heb 2:14-15; since therefore the children share blood and flesh, he also himself JC took hold of blood and flesh in the Hypostatic Union of the virgin birth, in order that he through Spiritual Death he might neutralize the one who has the power of Spiritual Death that is the devil. and deliver all those who through fear of death were subject to lifelong bondage.

Heb 6:1; Therefore having graduated from the elementary Doctrine of Christ, let us (Believers) advance ourselves to maturity through the grace status, not again laying the foundation (Gospel Doctrine), changing our minds (repenting) about dead works or human good (related to salvation)

Heb 6:4-6; For in the case of those who have not been enlightened (Common grace) and have tasted the heavenly gift (Fair shake of Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God through faith in The Lord Jesus, The Christ alone) and have been made partakers of God the Holy Spirit in the Spiritual Life, And have tasted for themselves the noble Doctrine of God (Royal Family of God ) and his powers of the age to come (Millennial powers for Church

Age Believers); then having fallen away it is impossible to renew them again with reference to a change of mind (Rebound is impossible) while they again crucify to themselves the son of God (Perpetual carnality) and expose him to public shame)

Heb 9:12-15; And not by means of the blood of goats and young bulls the Leviticus offerings, but by means of his own blood (figurative) he our great high priest entered into the holy of holies once and for all having procured eternal redemption for us. For you see if the blood of goats and bulls and the ashes of the red heifer, the animal sacrifices of atonement and rebound, which becomes ceremoniously unclean continue purifying with reference to the ceremonial cleansing of the flesh and they do, How much more than ceremonial cleansing through the shedding of animal blood shall the blood of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ who through his eternal divine essence has offered himself without blemish and impeccable to the God the Father, purify by an expiatory offering, our conscience from dead works to serve the living God. And because of this, Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ becoming true humanity and went to the cross without Adam's Original Sin nor personal sin, accomplishing redemption, by means of a new contract or covenant he is mediator, a death having occurred for the purpose of redemption from the transgressions against the first covenant, in order that they having been called may take into their possession the promise of eternal inheritance,

Heb 9:14; How much more than ceremonial cleansing through the shedding of animal blood shall the blood of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ who through his eternal spirit (divine essence) has offered himself without blemish (impeccability) to the God, purify by an expiatory offering, our conscience from dead works to serve the living God.

Heb 12:2; Be concentrating on or Occupied with the person of The Lord Jesus, The Christ our prince ruler, even the one who brings the attainment of Super-Grace, Ultra Super-Grace, Dying Grace, and Surpassing Grace objectives, the originator, pioneer and perfecter of our doctrine which was in the Stream of Consciousness of his Soul, who because of his exhibited Absolute Happiness of God he endured the cross disregarding or despising the shame and he has sat down in the past with the result he remains seated at the right hand of the throne of God the Father the highest place of honor

Heb 12:3; For I say through the grace which has been given to me to everyone which is among you, Stop thinking of self in terms of Arrogance, beyond what you ought to think, but think in terms of sanity as god has assigned to each one of us a standard of thinking from Bible Doctrine.

Heb 12:6; For you see, whom the Lord Loves he disciplines or punishes and he skins alive with a whip every son whom he receives by grace or welcomes home.

Heb 12:11-13; For the present moment all discipline from God seems painful or grievous rather than joyous or pleasant not bringing inner mental happiness; nevertheless, in spite of the pain and affliction or sorrow coming from Divine Discipline, after rebound and reorientation (1John 1:9, Rom 8:28, 1Thes 5:18) it, the Rebound, yields the peaceful fruit of righteousness to the advantage of those who have been trained by it. (Is 35:3) {a command} Therefore lift up your drooping shoulders and hands which hang down and strengthen your weak Paralyzed feeble knees by the consistent use of the rebound procedure (Prov 4:26) and make straight paths for your feet thus avoiding Mental Attitude Sins, so that what is lame may not be put or turned out of the way but rather let yourself receive healing and restoration of your Spiritual Life depending on whether you isolate your sin or NOT!

Heb 12:14; Orient to the peace of reconciliation between man and God from Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God, and orient to THE holiness of positional truth, without the peace of reconciliation from salvation or holiness of positional truth being in union with Christ, no one will see God.

Heb 12:15; Constantly being responsible for yourself, (Sin), see to it that no one comes short of or fails or comes below the standard of or falls back from, be deficient of the standard of the Grace of God, with arrogance skills applying sins from the arrogance complex to experience, and that not one root of bitterness as a Mental Attitude Sins (Sin and Evil combined) springing or sprouting up causes internal trouble, distraction and Emotional Revolt of

the Soul or relapse into the Cosmic Dynaspheres and through this Evil relapse, many are contaminated or defiled by the excrement of your soul. (bitterness is a reaction sin of arrogance and reflects self absorption)

Heb 13:1; Let brotherly love continue.

Heb 13:5; Let your conversations, way or manner of life be without or free from covetousness, the lust patterns of the Old Sin Nature or love for money, power, details of life etc; keep on being CONTENT with what you possess or such things as you have and hold, for He, God, Himself has said in the past with the result that it stands written forever *"I will never abandon or desert you or neither will I ever forsake or desert you in any point of Time,* (Deut 31:8 Isaiah)

Heb 13:6; with the result that being bold or confident with maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul We will say with confidence (Ps 118:6) *the Lord is my helper in Logistical Grace and I will not be afraid of anything in life or death, of anything which man shall be able to do to me*".

Heb 13:7; Be concentrating on them, Pastor Teachers, those who spoke to you the word of God; consider the outcome of their life, and imitate their faith.

Heb 13:17; Keep obeying those pastors who themselves are ruling over you and submit to their authority; for these same ones, Pastor Teachers, keep being alert for the benefit for your souls, as those who have to render an account. Keep obeying them that they may do this accounting with joy and not with groaning for this accounting with groaning will be unprofitable for you.

Hos 4:1-6; Hear, listen and concentrate and learn and apply the doctrine of the Lord Jehovah, Oh you citizens of Israel (North Kingdom); because the Lord Jehovah has a court case or lawsuit or controversy against the inhabitants of the client nation, (a charge against the Ministers & Believers) Because NOTHING of Bible Doctrine or Laws of Divine Establishment truth is being taught and accepted, therefore nothing of Grace is being applied, there is NO knowledge of or nothing of knowing God in the Land or client Nation (the Result). Instead of doctrine, truth, grace and knowledge of God, there is false business practices of swearing and lying, dishonesty, deception, lack of morality and virtue, murder and getting away with it, stealing, breaking in to rape (All Sex crimes), every possible category of violence and oppression resulting in total lawlessness. Therefore the Land shall mourn or lament and all People are miserable under the cycles of discipline; and the citizens of the client nation live in misery, loss of national courage, discontent, unhappiness without character succumbing to vibrant personalities, with freedoms destroyed by criminality and governmental tyranny, all those living in the nation loose all categories of vigor and strength, privacy and property, becoming feeble without character, arrogant, self centered and self absorbed; along with the domestic animals, birds and fish of the sea are abused and taken away or destroyed. Only Let no one find fault or quarrel from mental attitude sins expressed as verbal sins resulting in Self Induced Misery, as well as activism denial & projection, and let no one offer criticism of anyone who teaches Bible Doctrine, or blame others for actually your citizens are of the type who complain, vilify, and contend or cause strife against the priests who communicate Bible Doctrine. Therefore You People of the Client Nation have stumbled and shall fall from Perpetual Carnality in the daylight because of Rejection of Bible Doctrine after hearing, so that even the prophet will stumble with you in the night darkness because of failure to teach Bible Doctrine, prophets teach "Peace, Peace where there is no peace" (Jer 6:14, 8:11, Ez 13-16). Therefore, I will destroy your mother, the nation itself. My people or nation are destroyed because of LACK of Knowledge of Doctrine, because you have rejected knowledge of Bible Doctrine, therefore I will reject you from being my priest nation or client nation, since you have forgotten or neglected the doctrine of your God, I will also neglect your children in future generations.

Hos 4:2; Instead there is Lying (Self Deception), Lack of Morality and Virtue, Murder and getting away with it, breaking in to commit adultery (Rape), every possible category of violence and oppression (blood touching blood)

Hos 4:3; Therefore the Land mourns; and the citizens of the client nation live in misery, discontent, unhappiness, with freedoms destroyed by criminality and governmental tyranny, all those living in the nation loose all categories

of vigor and strength becoming arrogant, self centered and self absorbed; along with the domestic animals, birds and fish of the sea, were abused and taken away.

Hos 7:10-14; Though the pride of Israel testifies against him; yet they do not return to Jehovah their God, nor seek him, for all this. Ephraim is like a dove, silly and without sense, calling to Egypt, going to Assyria. As they go, I will spread over them my net; I will bring them down like birds of the air; I will chastise them for their wicked deeds. Woe to them, for they have strayed from me! Destruction to them, for they have rebelled against me! I would redeem them, but they speak lies against me. They do not cry to me from the heart, but they wail upon their beds; for grain and wine they gash themselves, they rebel against me.

Hos 8:7; They sow to the wind and reap the whirlwind. The standing grain has no heads, it shall yield no meal; if it were to yield, outsiders would devour it.

Hos 10:2; Their heart is false; now they must bear their guilt. The LORD will break down their altars, and destroy their pillars.

Is 1:3-5; (Even) The Ox knows and understands it's owner but the Jews do not know The Lord Jesus, The Christ as their owner, and (even) the Jackass or Donkey knows it's masters feeding trough, but believers in Israel, particularly Judah, do not know, consider or understand doctrine or where to get it. (Luke 2:12). Alas, sinful nation having rejected Christ, a people breaking down under a heavy weight of unpardonable sin of rejection of Christ, a progressing seed of evil passed on to their children ignoring Christ, arrogant children who are corrupters saturated with legalism! They have abandoned or forsaken the LORD in apostasy from false doctrine, they have provoked the Holy One of Israel, The Lord Jesus, The Christ, therefore now receiving Divine Discipline, they are utterly estranged becoming spiritual morons. Where will you still be struck again, and you will continue in revolution? Your whole head is sick, and the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul if weak

Is 2:6; (Having rejected Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God) Therefore you, The Lord, have forsaken your people as a group bringing judgment in administration of the 5th cycle of Divine Discipline from the Chaldeans and pressure on Israel in the tribulation, the house of Jacob, because they are filled or saturated with the religions and false doctrines from the east and of soothsayers under demon possession like the Philistines, and they clapped their hands pleasing themselves by making alliances with foreign countries, the children of the revived roman empire of the tribulation.

Is 8:14; Therefore he will become a sanctuary to the believer in Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God, but a stone of stumbling and a rock of offense to both houses of Israel the northern and southern kingdoms who are unbelievers, both a snare and a trap to the inhabitants of Jerusalem.

Is 8:19; And when they say to you, Isaiah, "Seek those who have familiar spirits or demons, the mediums and wizards, under demon possession, who speak through the medium peeping and muttering," should not a people consult or seek advice from their God who is alive for the living rather than from people who are the dead and cannot advise?

Is 9:9; and all the people will know, Ephraim and the inhabitants of Samarium, who speak in pride and in arrogance of heart:

Is 11:13; Then the jealousy of E'phraim of Judah shall depart , and those who harass Judah shall be cut off; E'phraim shall not be jealous of Judah, and Judah shall not harass E'phraim.

Is 13:11; Thus I will punish the world for it's evil and the wicked for their iniquity, I will also put an end to the Interlocking System of Arrogance related to the proud and I will humble the pride of tyranny.

Is 14:12-14 (Satan's Thinking); How have you fallen from heaven oh Shining One (Morning Star or Day Star, the most beautiful creature from God) Oh day star from the morning, on son of the Dawn, you are cut down to the



earth, you that once laid low the nations. Because you said in your Stream of Consciousness, "I will ascend into the 3<sup>rd</sup> heaven (replace God), I will raise my throne above the shining one's (angels) the stars of God (getting them on his side by persuasion), I will sit on the mount of the assembly (Supreme Court of Heaven trial area) in the recesses of the north (he will change God's Mind). I will ascend above the heights of the clouds (winning the Appeal Trial) I will make myself like the most high (take the authority from God)

Is 16:6; We have heard of the pride of Moab, an excessive pride; even of his arrogance, his pride, and his anger his idle boasts are false.

Is 19:3; Then the spirit of the Egyptians will become demoralized within them, also I will frustrate their strategy so that they will resort to demons and the ghosts of the dead through necromancy and the mediums and spiritists of demon possessed counsel.

Is 28:1-3; Woe to the proud crown of the drunkards of Ephraim, and to the fading wreath of its majestic beauty, which is on the head of the fertile valley of those overcome with wine! Behold, the Lord has one who is mighty and strong; like a storm of hail, a destroying tempest, like a storm of mighty, overflowing waters, he will cast down to the earth with violence. The proud crown of the drunkards of Ephraim will be trodden under foot;

Is 28:4-9; and the fading flower of its glorious beauty, which is on the head of the rich valley, will be like a first-ripe fig before the summer: when a man sees it, he eats it up as soon as it is in his hand. In that day the LORD of hosts will be a crown of glory, and a diadem of beauty, to the remnant of his people; and a spirit of justice to him who sits in judgment, and strength to those who turn back the battle at the gate. They, Ephraim have erred through or also reel with wine and stagger with or are out of the way through strong drink; the priest and the prophet reel with or have erred through strong drink, they are confused or swallowed up with wine, they stagger with or are out of the way through strong drink; they err in vision, they stumble in giving judgment. For all tables are full of vomit and filthiness, there is not a clean place on the tables or the floor. To whom shall he teach knowledge, to whom shall be caused to understand the doctrine of the message, those children just weaned from the milk, NO! those children just taken from the mothers Breast? NO!

Is 28:16; therefore so communicates Adanai Jehovah or thus says the Lord GOD the Father , "Behold, Concentrate, I, God the Father, am He who has laid a foundation setting up a decree in Zion regarding David's greater future Son, The Lord Jesus, The Christ, a stone, a perfect rock of testing or a tested or proven rock or stone, (40 years of testing in the Desert) a valuable honorable battlement, a cornerstone a prince of Honor, ruling the 2 elections to privilege, Israel and the Church, through the 1<sup>st</sup> advent of Jesus of Nazareth providing salvation, The Christ and his resurrection, ascension & session at the right hand of God the Father, for a secure foundation: 'The one who has believed in him WILL NOT PANIC NOR BE DISTURBED.'

Is 29:4; Then deep from the earth you shall speak, from low in the dust your words shall come; your voice shall come from the ground like the voice of a ghost, and your speech shall whisper out of the dust.

Is 29:9-14; You yourself, Be shocked and astonished or amazed, blind yourselves and be blind with Scar Tissue of the Soul! Be drunk, but not with wine in the holocausts; they stagger, but not from strong drink but from judgment and are mentally defeated! For the LORD has poured out upon you a life and spirit of deep sleep because of the Big Blot Out from the Interlocking System of Arrogance and Scar Tissue of the Soul, He has shut your eyes oh prophets, He has covered your heads, OH seers (another type of Prophet). Therefore the entire vision of the 1<sup>st</sup> advent shall be to you like the words of a sealed book totally obscured by your Negative Volition. Which when they give it to one who is literate, saying, "Please Read this," he will reply, "I cannot read it for it is sealed." (these are those who understood it and rejected it with Negative Volition). And when they give the book to one who illiterate, saying, "Please Read this," he will reply, "I cannot read." (These are those who did not understand it and did not want to understand it) Then the Lord said: "Because this people draw near with their mouth and honor me with their lips worshiping as from Codex II saying the right words and offering the right sacrifices but rejecting that which they were saying and doing, but they remove their Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul from me at the 1<sup>st</sup> advent and their respect for me instead of believing in me is the



commandments of Codex I and III learned by rote memorizing. Therefore, behold, I will once again deal wonderfully with this people of Israel, doing wonderfully a wonderful thing restoring Israel at the 2<sup>nd</sup> advent in spite of the big blot out and its judgments; therefore the wisdom of their wise men shall perish, and the intelligence of their intelligent shall perish and vanish in the holocaust of the big blot out judgments."

Is 31:6; Return to him, The Lord Jesus, The Christ, from whom you have revolted and defected, O citizens of Israel.

Is 33:6-7; and he, Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ, will be the stability of your times, a wealth of salvation, a wealth of wisdom from Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul, and a wealth of knowledge in use of Bible Doctrine to orient to current circumstances; the fear of the LORD is his treasure. Behold, their brave military men cry in the streets during historical or national catastrophe, the ambassadors of peace weep bitterly.

Is 35:3-4; Strengthen the weak hands, and make firm the feeble knees. Say to those who are of a fearful heart, "Be strong, fear not! Behold, your God will come with vengeance, with the recompense of God. He will come and save you."

Is 37:30-31; "And this shall be the sign for you: this year eat what grows of itself, this is deliverance, and in the second year what springs of the same; then in the third sow and reap and plant vineyards and eat the fruit thereof. And the remnant of the House of Israel who have escaped those who did not succumb to terrorism, shall again increase by taking the root downward planting Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the soul during 5<sup>th</sup> cycle of discipline, and bear fruit upward.

Is 41:10; Fear not, for I am with you, do not anxiously look around for help, for I am your God, surely I will strengthen and give you power from Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul, definitely I will help you with Logistical Grace, most emphatically I will sustain you with the right hand of my righteousness or my victorious right hand.

Is 43:7; Even every one (Homosapein) who is called by my name, I have created his soul out of nothing, for my glory, I have formed him out of something, yes I have made him different personality and body but out of the same Essence of the Soul.

Is 44:20; He feeds on ashes; a deceived heart has turned him aside and he cannot deliver himself, nor say, 'Is there not a lie in my right hand?'

Is 45:4-7; The Lord God of Israel, who called you by his name for the sake of Jacob my servant, even Israel my elected one to privilege, I have call you by my name, I have given you a title of honor. I am the LORD, and there is no other, besides me there is no God; I gird you, though you do not know me, that men may know, from the rising of the sun and from the west, that there is none besides me; I am the LORD, and there is no other. (Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ Creator) Forming or Sculpting the Light or Bible Doctrine and creating out of nothing Lucifer the prince or originator of Darkness, I am the one manufacturing out of Bible Doctrine prosperity and creating out of nothing the evil one, Lucifer the source of EVIL, (synopsis of History), I, Jehovah, am the still one manufacturing out of history all of these things in MY PLAN.

Is 45:18; For thus (adanai) the Lord has communicated, the one that created out of nothing all three heavens of the Universe, The God (Trinity) himself the one who formed the earth (sculpting it with Ice) and restored HER for habitation and stabilized her to prevent her destruction, he created her not a waste, he reformed or sculpted restoring Her to be inhabited for a blessing, I am the Lord (JC) and there is No Other celebrity.

Is 53:3; He, Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ, was the recipient of insults, imprecations, hatred, implacability, vindictiveness and antagonism of all types, and forsaken or rejected by men who said they loved him; a man of

adversities, and kept on genuinely knowing afflictions and catastrophes; brokenhearted by the rejection and like a leper caused to hide his face from men because of scorn (Lev 13:45) and we were caused to hide and cover our faces from him because of his disfigurement (Is 52:14) he was the one receiving condemnation and despising and repudiation totally by society, and we unbelievers did not add up the facts about him and did not value him.

Is 54:17; No weapon that is fashioned against you, Israel, shall prosper, and every tongue that accuses you in judgment Christ as the judge of the Supreme Court of Heaven shall judge or condemn. This is the heritage of the servants of the LORD and their righteousness or vindication is from or has its source in me or is my business, decrees Jehovah the LORD."

Is 59:13; Transgressing or rejecting the Laws of Divine Establishment, and denying the LORD, rejection of the gospel, and turning away from following our God, rejection of Bible Doctrine, speaking oppression and talking about revolution, conceiving and uttering Human Viewpoint from the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul, lying words we have conceived.

Is 64:6; All of us have become like one who is unclean and all of our righteousnesses are like menstrual rags, furthermore all of us wither like a leaf and our iniquity or perversity of reversionism and respectable sins like the wind carries us away to Divine Discipline followed by the Sin Unto Death.

Is 65:1-2; (Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ the God of Israel speaking) I have permitted myself to be sought by those gentiles with Positive Volition at God Consciousness, who did not ask for me having no spiritual heritage and not knowing whom to believe in for Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God; I have permitted myself to be found through gospel hearing by those who did not seek me under the name of Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ being gentiles. I Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ God of Israel have said, "Here am I, here am I," to a nation, Client Nation Israel, that did not call on my name. I, Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ the God of Israel, continuously, desperately intensively have spread out my hands all day long to this rebellious nation of Jews with Negative Volition to the gospel and the resultant Big Blot Out, who in every generation keep on walking in ways not for the ultimate good of the Equation of Hope Plan of God, according to or after their own thoughts and machinations in the Big Blot Out.

James 1:21; Therefore having put away or removed all pollution, filthiness and rank growth or overflow of demonic wickedness through rebound, Receive, through stage 1 of the Grace Apparatus for Perception Reception, and Retain or implant through stage 2 of the Grace Apparatus for Perception Retention, in the sphere of humility and teachability the impregnated word, which is able to deliver or save your souls through stage 3 of the Grace Apparatus for Perception Recall for application, (experiential sanctification, construction of the Edification Complex of the soul).

James 1:22; But keep on becoming doers through reception and retention of Bible Doctrine resulting in Doing or application of the word, and not hearers only receiving building up gnosis doctrine, deceiving or deluding yourselves.

James 1:23-24; For if any one is a hearer of the word only developing gnosis and not a doer engaged in retention and recall, he is like a man who observes his natural face in a mirror as Bible Doctrine in the Left Lobe of the Soul; for once he has looked at himself in the mirror of gnosis reception without epignosis retention and goes away he has immediately forgotten what category of person he is.

James 1:25; But he the one having looked intently through Positive Volition toward Bible Doctrine into the perfect law, the law of liberty or freedom, and having persisted or persevered in the function of the Grace Apparatus for Perception, that one having become NOT a hearer of oblivion that rejects doctrinal teaching and forgets but a doer of assigned occupation that learns and applies doctrine after Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God to reach Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God, this believer shall be HAPPY blessed in all of what he does

James 3:14; But if you have bitter jealousy, contentiousness and self serving inordinate ambition in the Right Lobe

of the Stream of Consciousness of your Soul, Do Not Become OR STOP BEING ARROGANT, Stop Boasting and Lying about or against the Absolute Truth of Bible Doctrine. (self deception) (Bitterness is assigned to all arrogance sins)

James 3:15-16; This pseudo or distorted wisdom is not that which comes down from above from Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul, but is what is on the earthly related to demon influence and propaganda of the Cosmic Dynaspheres, Natural related to Human Viewpoint and psychological living substituting Human Viewpoint for Divine Viewpoint, and demonic related to demon possession of the unbeliever where this believer is thinking like an unbeliever. For where jealousy as motivation and contentiousness or selfish inordinate ambition exists there is disorder, instability in the life and every evil function involving the Interlocking System of Arrogance and the Interlocking System of Antagonistic Emotional Hatred.

James 4:2; You continue to lust (killer lust) you do not have doctrine so you murder (self justification, self deception, self absorption cycling) furthermore you are jealous, consequently you are not able to attain the PSD's and you quarrel and fight.

James 4:3; If you have bitter jealousy and inordinate ambition in your right lobe, STOP being arrogant, STOP lying against the truth.

James 4:4-7; You adulteresses in reverse process reversionism do you not know that love of the Cosmic Dynasphere or the world, keeps on being alienation from God, therefore whoever has decided their options from Volition to be a lover of the Cosmic Dynasphere or world appoints himself the enemy of God. Or do you presume (Subjective thinking of the Believer) that the scripture speaks for no reason face to face with or against your jealousy, (Worst Sins) the spirit, who dwells permanently in us, deeply loves or pursues us with love. Moreover He gives Greater Grace or super-grace, therefore it, the Old Testament Scripture, says in Proverbs 3:34 "The God makes War against the Arrogant Believer, But he gives Grace to the Humble Believer". Therefore be subordinate or submit to The God with residence & function in the Divine Dynasphere resist or oppose the devil and the Cosmic Dynasphere and he will flee from you.

James 4:8-10; Draw near to The God through Gate 4 of the Divine Dynasphere by means of Perception, Cognition, Incultation, Metabolization & Application of Bible Doctrine and he will draw near to you, cleanse your hands you sinners through rebound and purify your right lobes you hypocritical double minded people from the pollution of evil of Human Viewpoint thinking. (the alternative) Be afflicted miserable and lament and weep. Your Laughter will be turned to grief and your happiness turned to dejection.

James 4:10

v10: Therefore humble yourselves under the mighty hand of God, in order that he might promote you.

James 4:13-15; Come now, you who say, "Today or tomorrow we will go into such and such a town and spend a year there and trade and get gain"; whereas you do not know about tomorrow. What is your life? For you are a mist that appears for a little time and then vanishes. Instead you ought to say, "If the Lord wills, we shall live and we shall do this or that."

Jer 2:27-30; Who say to a tree or piece of wood as an idol, 'My father,' and they say to a stone as an idol for worship, 'You have given me birth, I owe my life and being to you.' For they have turned their back on me and walked away from me with total rejection under Negative Volition, and not turned their face to me with Positive Volition. But in the time of their pressure they will say to The Lord Jesus, The Christ the God of Israel, 'Get up, wake up from your sleep and you yourself cause us to be delivered RIGHT NOW!' (sarcasm) Where are your gods that you manufactured for yourself from your own free will out of wood and stone from your Negative Volition toward me? Let your gods of wood and stone arise, if they can deliver you in your time of trouble; for the number of your cities are the number of your gods, O Judah. "Why do you, Judah, quarrel, complain, bitch against me? All of You have already rebelled, revolted against me, says the LORD. In vain have I chastised, punished or disciplined your children, discipline under authority which is for their benefit they have not seized or

grasped; your own sword which you had to defend yourself has turned around and destroyed yourselves and devoured your only hope, your prophets, like a ravening lion.

Jer 3:6-7; The LORD deliberately said also unto me in the days of Josiah the King: "Have you been caused to study what apostate, backsliding, defecting revolting Israel the northern kingdom of Ephraim has done or manufactured out of Negative Volition to Bible Doctrine, idolatry, frustration, misery, destruction of the 5th cycle of Divine Discipline, she has revolted against God, gone up on every high mountain and under every green tree for all aspects of Phallic Idolatry, and there at that place she fornicated, was raped, involved in illicit and perverted sex in Phallic Idolatry? And I, the Lord God of Israel, said from thinking and offering GRACE, "After she, the northern kingdom, has done all these things, I said 'return to me'; but she, the northern kingdom, did not return, and her treacherous sister Judah studied it.

Jer 3:8-10; I, Jeremiah, saw, perceived and kept on studying all the causes of unfaithfulness for the fall of Ephraim the Northern Kingdom (Hosea, Amos, Isaiah Etc) whereby backsliding faithless Israel committed intensive adulteries as a nymphomaniac in a Frantic Search for happiness, I had sent her away and I had given her a decree of divorce, a writing of cut off or letter of phase out in the 5<sup>th</sup> cycle of Divine Discipline; BUT, her treacherous, faithless, deceitful sister Judah did not concentrate in occupation with God lacking capacity for category I Love, but she too ended up practicing prostitution as a professional under idolatry. And it came to pass as her enjoyment of the idolatry functions faded, through the shouting or screaming of her fornication, though not satisfied still faking it, and she, Ephraim, polluted and seduced the land, she committed adultery desperately trying fornicating for fun with stone and the wood. And yet because of all this Self Induced Misery of Ephraim, her treacherous, deceitful, unfaithful sister Judah who observed all this, did not return to me with the whole Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of her Soul, but only with deceitful pretense, says the LORD."

Jer 3:13; Only name cite or acknowledge your iniquity, wrong actions in rebound (1John 1:9) that you have, overstepped the law, revolted, rebelled in the soul, transgressed against the Lord your God, and have intensely disbursed, scattered, your intimate ways to loathsome strangers, fornicating around indiscriminately, under every green tree, and you have not obeyed my voice from Bible Doctrine thus lack capacity for love, says the Lord.

Jer 5:23; But this people has a calloused and revolutionary Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of their Soul; they have turned aside from Bible Doctrine and departed from Laws of Divine Establishment.

Jer 7:17-20; Do you not see what they are doing in the cities of Judah and in the streets of Jerusalem? The children gather wood, the fathers kindle fire, and the women knead dough, to make cakes for the queen of heaven; and they pour out drink offerings to other gods, to provoke me to anger. Is it I whom they provoke? says the LORD. Is it not themselves, to their own confusion? Therefore thus says the Lord GOD: Behold, my anger and my wrath will be poured out on this place, upon man and beast, upon the trees of the field and the fruit of the ground; it will burn and not be quenched."

Jer 7:24-29; But they (Believers in Israel) did not hear Bible Doctrine or obey, nor incline their ear to concentrate on Bible Doctrine (-Vol to all Bible Doctrine) but they walked in their own councils of arrogance and in the stubbornness of their evil right lobes (Perpetual carnality and Scar Tissue of the Soul), therefore they went backward into reversionism and not forward. Since the day their ancestors came out of the Land of Egypt (BC 1441) until this day (586 BC) I have sent my servants the prophets, daily rising up early and sending them. and Yet they did not listen to me in Bible Doctrine (-Vol) nor incline their ear in concentration on Bible Doctrine, but stiffened their necks through Scar Tissue of the Soul (arrogance of the Soul) they did more evil than their ancestors before them. "So you Jeremiah shall speak all these words to them, but they will not listen to you. Furthermore, You shall call to them, but they will not answer you. And you shall say to them, 'This is the nation that under Negative Volition toward Bible Doctrine did not obey the voice of the LORD their God, and did prophesy from doctrine because they do not accept correction being no longer teachable; Doctrine has perished; and has been cut off from their lips thus they are without Divine Viewpoint. Cast off your high priest crown and throw it away; and take up your lamentation on the highest bare mountain or start crying on the bare mountains beyond the tree line, for the LORD has both rejected and forsaken this generation of his wrath, 2 generations which will be



judged.'

Jer 11:9; Again the LORD said to me, "A conspiracy or revolt is discovered among the Leading Men of Judah in the Plot and the common inhabitants of Jerusalem as pawns in the intrigue.

Jer 11:20; But, O LORD of hosts, who judges righteously, who tests or puts on trial the emotions and the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul, let me see thy vengeance upon them, for to thee have I committed my cause.

Jer 11:22; Therefore thus says the LORD of the armies: "Behold, Therefore I will keep on causing to indirectly punish them; the vigorous conspiring men without self discipline, Authority Orientation, and without Metabolized Bible Doctrine shall die by the sword in battle; their sons and their daughters shall die by famine or economic depression;

Jer 12:1-2; Defender of RIGHT causes, Righteous, objective, fair, just, and always this way, are YOU, O LORD, IF I would complain with you, and I am strongly complaining this once; Yuck! I will talk intensively to you of Justice or Judgments. What is being known or I do not understand or Why the way of the wicked with unjust cause in conspiracy advance, flourish, prosper in the Anathoth conspiracy? Why do all who being treacherous of character keep on being treacherous of action enjoy prosper?

Jer 13:10-11; The worthless people; with strong Negative Volition, unwilling to hear my words, who stubbornly walk after or follow their own Right Lobe imagination for mental adultery and have gone after other gods in overt phallic adultery to, knowingly from their own free will, be enslaved to them and worship them instead of The Lord Jesus, The Christ the God of Israel; shall even be like this girdle, which prospered for nothing under temporary happiness of illicit fornication. For as the girdle, Judah, responds and clings in perfect fit to the loins of a man, The Lord Jesus, The Christ, so I caused the whole house of Israel and the whole house of Judah to cling to me, says the LORD, that they might be for me a right people, for a name, Jisrael, Jeshurun honorable prince of God, a day by day appreciation of who and what The Lord is as a result of daily response to God and discovery of his grace, character, stability and function under the Grace Apparatus for Perception, and a crown of reflected glory from their completed Edification Complex of the Soul, but they would not listen.

Jer 13:12-17; "Therefore, because they would not hear, You shall speak what is in your mind to them this word of Bible Doctrine: `Thus says the LORD, the God of Israel, "Every wine skin, jar or jug shall be filled to the brim with the wine of misery, frustration and unhappiness as a result of Negative Volition to doctrine.'" And they have already said what is on their mind to you, `Do we not indeed ALREADY know that every jug will be filled with the wine of misery, frustration and unhappiness?' Then you shall say to them, `Thus says the LORD: "Behold, I will fill, as a result of their free will drinking, with intoxicated drunkenness of Self Induced Misery, all the inhabitants of this land who know what they are doing to themselves: the kings who sit on David's throne, the priests, the prophets, and all the inhabitants of Jerusalem. And I will smash into small pieces them one man against his counter part or a Right Man against his Right Woman, even the fathers and the sons at the same time, the LORD says, I will continue not having compassion nor spare nor pity them, nor express cherishing love in mercy, not making LOVE from giving Bible Doctrine, that I should not destroy them.'" Hear, understand, concentrate and from volition OBEY and be caused by Bible Doctrine to be alert and desire more; be not proud, avoid the Interlocking System of Arrogance and Arrogance Skills, for the LORD God of has communicated through Bible Doctrine intensively to the soul. Give glory, from the accumulated Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul building the Edification Complex of the Soul, to the LORD your God of Judah, The Lord Jesus, The Christ, before he brings the darkness of catastrophe and disaster shattering the vessel nation under the 5<sup>th</sup> cycle of Divine Discipline, before, from your own volition, you cause your feet to stumble and fall, again and again upon the dark mountains of Phallic Idolatry, and while you waste your time waiting for the light of happiness he turns it into the shadow of death and decreed it gross darkness of unhappiness from Eternity Past under the 5<sup>th</sup> cycle of Divine Discipline. But if you, Judah, will not from your own volition listen with concentration under the Grace Apparatus for Perception, my soul will weep in secret places because of your involvement in the pride of the Interlocking System of Arrogance and Arrogance Skills



involvement destroying capacity for love; my eyes with tears weeping they shall intensely overtly constantly weep, because the Lord's flock, his Right Woman people is carried away captive.

Jer 15:5-6; "For who will have compassion or provide comfort for you, O Jerusalem, who will lament for or console you? Who will turn back to ask about your welfare, if you are alright? You who have rejected, cast out, abandoned, left and forsaken me from your own volition says the Lord, you constantly keep engaging in a pattern of backward movement, therefore I will stretch out my hand to strike and destroy you under the 5<sup>th</sup> cycle of Divine Discipline; I have received an exhausting weariness of soul from grieving because of love sickness.

Jer 15:16; I recognize your authority, Your doctrines were discovered, found and acquired and I ate or assimilated or devoured them into the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul as a result of consistent function under the Grace Apparatus for Perception Operation Z and as a result your words or Bible Doctrines became to me a source of superabundant inner happiness, and the overt expression, a delight, to my Frame of Reference in my Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul, because your name was engraved in my soul, I have been called by your name since salvation, Oh Lord Adanai, God of the Armies.

Jer 17:1-4; "The sin or missing the mark of Judah, as a result of Negative Volition toward Bible Doctrine rejecting their spiritual heritage, is firmly permanently written with a pen of iron for names; with a point of diamond for sculpting images as signs of apostasy, it is engraved and sculpted on the table of their heart, and on the horns of their altars as names of false gods, As they, the parents, remember, in the memory of their Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul the false norms and standards of Idolatry, their children so do they remember their heathen altars where the names of gods are engraved with the iron pen, and their Ashteras by every green tree of the goddess' of sex, murder and war upon the high hills of the Baal or Moleck Sanctuaries, on the mountain of the Baal sanctuary in the field of Jerusalem. I will give for spoils of the 5<sup>th</sup> cycle of Divine Discipline, a little at a time all your wealth and all your treasures and your high places of Baal sanctuaries for the sin of phallic idolatry throughout all your territory or on the borders of your lands. (Jer 22:20) You Judah yourself, shall discontinue and you shall slip, cease or break loose and that by means of your own self from the act of possessing your wonderful heritage possessions, in overt experience from Metabolized Bible Doctrine and the Edification Complex of the Soul, which I gave to you from Eternity Past, and I will cause you serve your enemies, the Chaldeans, in slavery in a land, Chaldea, which you do not know happiness, for you have kindled a fire in my anger from brittleness of your souls which shall receive ignition for a very long time for Judah under the 5<sup>th</sup> cycle of Divine Discipline and for the Unbeliever forever in the Lake of Fire."

Jer 17:5; Thus says the Lord, cursed, receiving unhappiness because of Negative Volition function, is the person, courageous male hero or exquisitely beautiful female, who uses his volition and puts his trust in mankind and establishes a pattern from free will Negative Volition toward any part of the Plan of God and depends on the flesh, the Old Sin Nature, male sexual ability, or some gimmick for his strength or as a crutch (the basis of attraction), whose Right Lobe turns away from the Lord and his design into the Cosmic Dynaspheres and Occupation with People in Human Viewpoint through a series of activities.

Jer 17:27; But if you do not listen to me, to keep the sabbath day holy, and not to bear a burden and enter by the gates of Jerusalem on the sabbath day, then I will kindle a fire in its gates, and it shall devour the palaces of Jerusalem and shall not be quenched."

Jer 27:6-10; And now I have given all these lands into the hand of Nebuchadnezzar, the king of Babylon, my servant, and I have given him also the beasts of the field to serve him. All the nations shall serve him and his son, Nabonitis, and his grandson, Belshazzar, until the very time of his own land comes; then many nations and great kings shall serve themselves through him" "But if any nation or kingdom will not serve this Nebuchadnezzar king of Babylon, and put its neck under the yoke of the king of Babylon, I will punish that nation with the sword, with famine, and with pestilence, says the LORD, until I have consumed it by his hand. So do not listen to your prophets, your diviners, your dreamers, your soothsayers, or your sorcerers, who are saying to you, 'You shall not serve the king of Babylon.' For it is a lie which they are prophesying to you, with the result that you will be removed far from your land, and I will drive you out, and you will perish.

Jer 35:13; Thus says the LORD of hosts, the God of Israel: "Go and tell the information which you now have firmly in mind regarding the Recabites, Arab Gentiles, and say to the men of Judah and the inhabitants of Jerusalem, Will you not eagerly grasp quickly seize disciplinary admonishing instruction or repetitive categorical teaching and hear, listen, concentrate on and obey my words of Bible Doctrine?" says the LORD.

Jer 50:38; A drought upon her waters, that they may be dried up! For it is a land of images, and they are mad over idols.

Job 1:12; And the LORD said to Satan, "Behold, all that he has is in your power; only upon himself do not put forth your hand." So Satan went forth from the presence of the LORD.

Job 1:18-19; While he was yet speaking, there came another, and said, "Your sons and daughters were eating and drinking wine in their eldest brother's house; and behold, a great wind came across the wilderness, and struck the four corners of the house, and it fell upon the young people, and they are dead; and I alone have escaped to tell you."

Job 2:6-8; And the LORD said to Satan, "Behold, he is in your power; only spare his life." So Satan went forth from the presence of the LORD, and afflicted Job with loathsome sores from the sole of his foot to the crown of his head. And he took a potsherd with which to scrape himself, and sat among the ashes.

Job 3:20; Why is light given to him that is in misery, and life to the bitter in soul,

Job 5:1-3; "Call now upon God for help; is there any one who will answer you? To which of the holy ones, creatures of integrity, will you turn? For he who is maladjusted to the Justice of God is a fool who is destroyed by bitter complaining or excessive bitching, and the one who is maladjustment to the Justice of God is destroyed by jealousy. I have seen the fool, the maladjusted believer, taking root settling down somewhere in the neighborhood and his home is decayed in a moment, lacking happiness in any way.

Job 5:2; For he who is maladjusted to the Justice of God is a fool who is destroyed by bitter complaining or excessive bitching, and the one who is maladjustment to the Justice of God is destroyed by jealousy.

Job 5:19-27; From six crises, catastrophes or disasters, he will deliver or rescue you, mature Believer, furthermore in seven the evil of satanic Doctrine will not meddle with nor touch you. In famine or economic disaster he will redeem or purchase or preserve you, Mature Believers, from death, In war or military Disaster from the power of the sword in battle, you will be protected and hidden, delivered from the lash of the tongue in social disasters from maligning, neither will you be afraid of *destruction, violent death, ruin, oppression, tyranny*, when it comes because of Dying Grace. You will relax and laugh with a sense of humor from Relaxed Mental Attitude from Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul at violent physical death and at economic depression because of dying grace and super grace in time, neither will you be afraid of wild animals or violent death nor any dangerous instruments of death. For your contract will be with the weapons of the battlefield the artillery or weapons of destruction of the military, and the wild animals of the field which kill man like conventional weapons will be at peace with you and pass you by, or will not destroy you until the Lord is ready for you to die. Therefore you will know that your human body is in a state of prosperity in peace while dying (Mature believers die with minimum pain) and you will visit your home in heaven and not fear forfeit of your rewards or blessings And You will also know from application of Bible Doctrine that your seed will be numerous and the pivot great and that the Human Race will continue on and be able to adjust to your death and the nation perpetuated and your spiritual offspring shall be as the grass of the earth from blessing by association and historical impact. You will come to your grave in full vigor at the peak of your life for the mature believer, like a shock of corn comes in its season as the Timing and Plan of God in Grace is perfect. Behold this doctrine of Death and Dying Grace,

we have researched, investigated and studied it, so it is, Hear and learn it and know it applying it for yourself for your own good.

Job 7:11; "Therefore I will not restrain my mouth; I will speak in the anguish of my spirit; I will complain in the bitterness of my soul.

Job 10:1; I loath my own life, I will give vent to my complaint, I will speak in bitterness of my soul.

Job 26:13; By his wind the heavens were made fair; his hand pierced the fleeing serpent.

Job 33:16-17; When He opens the ears of men through Perception, Cognition, Inculcation & Metabolization of Bible Doctrine and he seals their instructions because of their motivation and self discipline of enforced or genuine humility converting gnosis to epignosis. In order that he may turn man aside from his Divine Discipline and protect them from the Interlocking System of Arrogance

Job 33:16-17; When He opens the ears of men through Perception, Cognition, Inculcation & Metabolization of Bible Doctrine and he seals their instructions under the Faith Rest Drill (4 categories) because of their motivation and self discipline of enforced or genuine humility converting gnosis to epignosis in order that he may turn man aside from his Divine Discipline and protect them, Man, from the Interlocking System of Arrogance

Job 35:9-13; Because of a multitude of oppressions (reversionistic discipline) they cry out for help to other people, because the arm of the mighty is stretched out to them. But no one under the influence of evil says, "where is God my maker who gives songs in the night and teaches us more than the beasts of the earth, and makes us wiser than birds of the heaven". There they cry out but mankind does not answer because of the pride or arrogance of evil men, surely God will not listen to an empty cry nor will the almighty regard it, because of Pride of Evil Men.

Job 38:4-7;"Where were you when I laid the foundation of the earth? Tell me, if you have understanding. Who determined its measurements -- surely you know! Or who stretched the line upon it? On what were its bases sunk, or who laid its cornerstone, when the morning stars sang together, and all the sons of God shouted for joy?

Joel 1:4-6; What the cutting locust left, the swarming locust has eaten. What the swarming locust left, the hopping locust has eaten, and what the hopping locust left, the destroying locust has eaten. Awake, you drunkards, and weep; and wail, all you drinkers of wine, because of the sweet wine, for it is cut off from your mouth. For a nation has come up against my land, powerful and without number; its teeth are lions' teeth, and it has the fangs of a lioness.

John 1:14; And the word or Logos, the Living Word, The Lord Jesus, The Christ, became flesh in Hypostatic Union and pitched a tent or tabernacled or temporarily lived among us at the 1<sup>st</sup> advent and we have seen or beheld his glory, his deity, the glory as of the only or uniquely born one from the father, full of grace and doctrine (John 3:16).

John 3:16; For you see, THE God loved the world (Human Race) SO MUCH or IN THIS MANNER from the Integrity of God, with the result that He (God) gave His son, the uniquely born one, in order or with the result that anyone who believes in him (Faith alone in Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ alone) WILL NOT perish and WILL have eternal life.

John 3:18; He who believes in Him (JC the son of God) is NOT judged (for sin which is judged on the Cross, but only for his success or failure in the SL) but he who does not believe has been judged already, because he has not believed in the Person of the Uniquely born Son of God.

John 4:9-14, The Samaritan woman said to him, "How is it that you, being a Jew, ask me for a drink, my being

a Samaritan woman?" For Jews have no dealings with Samaritans. Jesus answered her, "If you knew and you should know and will know the gift of God with absolute certainty, and who it is that is saying to you, 'Give me a drink,' you would have asked him (Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ), and he would have given you living water." The woman sarcastically said to him, "Sir, you have nothing to draw water with, and the well is deep; where do you get that living water? Are you greater than our father Jacob, who gave us the well, and drank from it himself, and his sons, and his cattle?" Jesus said to her, "Every one who drinks of this well water will thirst again, but whoever drinks of the water that I shall give him will never thirst; the water that I shall give him will become in him a well of water springing up to eternal life."

John 6:36; But I said to you that you have seen me and yet do not believe.

John 6:47; Truly, I give or say to you an absolute truth of doctrine, he who believes in me, Christ, has eternal life.

John 8:3-6; Now the scribes and pharisee's arrested or took into custody, a woman caught or seized in the very act of adultery and forced her to stand before a large crowd in a courtroom. Then they said to Him (Jesus,) "Rabbi or Teacher, this woman was caught in adultery in the very act. The Law of Moses commands us to stone such a woman, then they turned to Jesus and said, YOU THERE, YOU THERE, what do you say. They were using this question in order to have a basis or grounds to accuse or indict him condemning him to death, and Jesus, therefore, bent his body (Body language) and started to write in the ground with his finger the 10 commandments (rejection of Legalism and activism) Ex 31:18

John 8:7; Now when they persisted in asking him (JC) he straightened up and said to them "He who is without an Old Sin Nature among you, let him be the first one to throw a stone at her".

John 8:32; You will know the Bible Doctrine (truth) and the Truth of Bible Doctrine shall make you free (To execute the Spiritual Life under the Royal Family Honor Code)

John 8:44; You are from your father the Devil (Humans in the Cosmic Dynasphere I & II) and the policies of your father you wish to accomplish or keep on desiring to do, (religious self righteous people) He was a murderer from the beginning furthermore he does not stand in the truth because there is no truth or Bible Doctrine in him, Whenever he communicates the Lie, he speaks or communicates from his own person or system for he is a liar and the father of lies.

John 8:48-52; The Jews answered him, "Are we not right in saying that you are a Samaritan and have a demon?" Jesus answered, "I have not a demon; but I honor my Father, and you dishonor me. Yet I do not seek my own glory; there is One who seeks it and he will be the judge. Truly, truly, I say to you, if any one keeps my word, he will never see death." The Jews said to him, "Now we know that you have a demon. Abraham died, as did the prophets; and you say, 'If any one keeps my word, he will never taste death.'

John 10:1-21; "As Final Authority, a Point of Doctrine, I keep on communicating a principle to you for your advantage, he who does not enter into the sheepfold, Israel during the time of Christ, the Royal Family of God during the Church Age, through the door, the false shepherds of the religious leaders, but keep on trying to climb up again and again by some other way elsewhere, the same ones, the religious leaders, are thieves using the strategy and craftiness of false doctrine from EVIL and physical violence. He, The Lord Jesus the Christ, who has the right to, enters in through the door, He keeps on being the true shepherd of the sheep. To him, The Lord Jesus the Christ, the true shepherd, the Door Guard, God the Holy Spirit, opens the door; the sheep listen and obey his voice, the Gospel of Salvation, and He, the True Shepherd, The Lord Jesus the Christ, calls his own sheep according to a norm or standard of the Name or Person of the only savior, and He continues to lead them out of the Sheepfold into the pasture of Bible Doctrine in Phase II of the Plan of God until the end of the millennium. And when He, The Lord Jesus the Christ the True shepherd, cast out, threw out, or brought out all his own personal sheep, he goes before them providing the pasture of Bible Doctrine, and the sheep desire to follow him always, for they know from consistent Perception, Cognition, Incultation and Metabolization of Bible



Doctrine his voice and will never forget him. And a stranger, a person they cannot ever love who belongs to another system, ie. religion, they will not follow because they do not want to follow religion, but they will avoid and separate from the ultimate source of the Stranger and his false doctrine having fed in the pasture of Bible Doctrine, because they do not have inherent knowledge of the voice of strangers, the false doctrines of religion. This allegorical similitude comparison of shepherds and religion spoke Jesus at this point of time for their benefit, but they, the religious leaders, did not understand that principle nor the Bible Doctrine which he was communicating to them. Then Jesus again said to them, "As final authority, a point of doctrine, I say to you, I keep on being forever the door of ingress to the sheepfold in the 1<sup>st</sup> advent. All that ever came before me, Pharisees, Scribes, Chief priests and Sanhedrin with their religion, are thieves, robbing (sheep) by the strategy of false doctrines and robbers, stealing (sheep) by using violence; but the sheep did not follow them. I keep on being the OPEN door of salvation and there will never be another; if anyone, any human being, in a point of time, enters through me, The Lord Jesus the Christ, into the Plan of God, he shall be saved and this point of time is perpetuated forever as Eternal Security, and he shall enter in the future into, and find or discover the pasture of categorical Bible Doctrine. The thief, Satan and religious people, who uses strategy to steal, comes, not being in the Plan of God, only to steal sheep through the use of false doctrine, to kill through the use of force or physical violence, to destroy through the use of total ostracism to eliminate human freedom by coercing volition; but in contrast I am come in order that they might keep on possessing forever everlasting life, and in order that they might keep on having MORE ABUNDANTLY Eternal Life based on maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul. I, The Lord Jesus the Christ, even I keep on being, there never will be a time when I am not, the perfect shepherd with perfect body and soul. The perfect shepherd lays down or lays aside his own soul on behalf of the sheep, the Human Race (Substitutionary Spiritual Death for sin). He who is a hireling, a religious leader scribe, pharisee and chief priest, and not the shepherd, whose own the sheep are not, perceives the trend of the wolf (Rome) in the process of coming (30 AD) and they desert, leave (70AD) the sheep and flee; and the wolf seizes, tortures and destroys the sheep with violence and scatters into slavery those who survive (5<sup>th</sup> cycle of Divine Discipline). He, the religious leader, flees because he is a religious leader and indifferent with regard to the fate he brought on the sheep. I keep on being, always will be, there never will be a time when I am NOT the good shepherd with perfect symmetry and coordination of mind and body, deity and humanity in Hypostatic Union; I keep on knowing, always have known, by name, from observation, experience and intimate contact, and keep on loving, the MINE, Believers in The Lord Jesus the Christ who are his sheep, furthermore they potentially know from experience and observation and can love, me as a result of Metabolized Bible Doctrine in their Right Lobe. In Eternity Past, even as the Father keeps on knowing from observation, experience and intimate relationship and loving, me even so I keep on knowing from observation, experience and intimate relationship and love the Father; and I, The Lord Jesus the Christ, placed my soul as payment, on the line, as a substitute for the sheep. And other sheep of the same kind, gentile believers in the Church Age, I keep on and always will be having, that are not of this fold, the dispensation of Israel; them also, Church Age Believers, it is necessary for me to lead out into the Green pastures of Phase II of the Plan of God, and they, themselves, will in the future Church Age, hear my voice, the Gospel message, and obey, receiving benefit from moving through the 2<sup>nd</sup> DOOR of EGRESS for Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God. There shall be one fold under positional sanctification and one shepherd, The Lord Jesus the Christ. Because of this prophecy, there being another kind or category of sheep in another dispensation with 1 fold and 1 shepherd, my Father, God the Father, keeps on throughout all of Human History loving me, The Lord Jesus the Christ, because, operating within the framework of the Plan of God, I place my soul down as payment for all human sins, in order that I might receive it, my soul, at a point of time during resurrection again. No one, human or angelic, removes my human soul from the ultimate source of me, but in contrast, I lay or put it down on the line from the ultimate source of my own volition, I keep on having volitional authority to lay it down, and I also have volitional authority to receive it again, this is the commandment of the whole Plan of God the Father, I have received in Eternity Past from the immediate source of my father.

John 10:27-30; My sheep hear my voice and I know them and they follow me. I give eternal life to them, and they cannot ever, shall never perish neither is anyone ever able to snatch them out of my hands. My Father (Humanity speaking) who has given them to me is greater than all, and no one is able to snatch them out of my father's hands. I and my father are one



John 12:31; Now judgement is upon this world, now the ruler of this world shall be cast out

John 13:17; IF, you know and understand the principles of doctrine taught in the foot washings and the purpose behind it, and you do, inner happinesses belong to you, IF you do the same doctrine or apply the bible doctrines to life, maybe you will and maybe you will not.

John 13:34; A new commandment I give to you, that you love one another; even as I have loved you, that you also love one another.

John 14:30; I will no longer talk much with you, for the ruler of this world is coming. He has no power over me;

John 15:12; "This is my commandment, that you love one another as I have loved you.

John 15:17; This I command you, to love one another.

John 15:23; He who hates me also hates my father.

John 16:2; They will put you out of the synagogues; indeed, the hour is coming when whoever kills you will think he is offering service to God.

John 16:11; Concerning justice, the act of judgment, because the prince ruler of this world, Satan, is to be judged at the 2<sup>nd</sup> advent of Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ by the Justice of God.

John 16:12-15; I ( Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ ) have yet many things to say to you but you are not able to comprehend them now. But when he the spirit of truth (energizer) has come, he will instruct or guide you into all truth or doctrine, for he will not speak from his own initiative but whatever he hears he will communicate and he will disclose to you things which are coming in the future, He will glorify me, he shall take of my doctrine and he shall communicate it to you. All things which the father has are mine therefore I remarked, "he takes of mine and will communicate it to you.

John 17:13; But now I (Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ in Hypostatic Union addressing God the Father) come face to face with you, and these things (Bible Doctrine) I am communicating in the world that they (Believers) might keep on having my happiness (Jesus Sharing the Happiness of God) having been fulfilled in themselves (execution of the Spiritual Life of the Church Age).

John 17:17; (Demand, Command to God the Father) Sanctify, set them believers under Positive Volition toward Bible Doctrine apart, by means of the entire categorical system of your Absolute Truth of Bible Doctrine, your Word, the Source of Bible Doctrine keeps on being, always is and always was the Absolute Truth.

John 17:19; And for their sake I consecrate myself, that they also may be consecrated in truth.

John 19:17; So they received possession of Jesus. And he, Jesus, lifted up the heavy burden of the cross and by means of himself kept on carrying it despite the pressure and his weakness, he went outside of the gate of the city, Jerusalem, (Lev 16:27, Heb 13:12) to a place being designated or Said of a skull, which is transliterated from Hebrew Golgotha.

Josh 3:7; And the LORD said to Joshua, "This day I will begin to exalt or magnify you in the sight of all Israel, in order that they may know that, as I was with Moses, so I will be with you.

Josh 6:20-21; So the people shouted, and the trumpets were blown. As soon as the people heard the sound of the trumpet, the people raised a great shout, and the wall fell down flat, so that the people went up into the city, every man straight before him, and they took the city. Then they utterly destroyed all in the city, both men and women, young and old, oxen, sheep, and asses, with the edge of the sword.

Josh 7:1; But the men of Israel committed a trespass in regard to the accursed things of Jericho, Cherem; for Achan the son of Carmi, son of Zabdi, son of Zerah, of the tribe of Judah, took some of the accursed things; and the anger of the LORD burned against the armies of Israel.

Josh 8:1; And the LORD said to Joshua, "Do not fear or be dismayed or lose your poise; take the entire army with you therefore assemble it, advance against Ai; behold, I have given it into your hand all the king of Ai, the people, the city, and the land;

Josh 8:21-26; And when Joshua and all Israel saw that the ambush had taken the city, and that the smoke of the city went up, then they turned back and smote the men of Ai. And the others came forth from the city against them; so they were in the midst of Israel, some on this side, and some on that side; and Israel smote them, until there was left none that survived or escaped. But the king of Ai they took alive, and brought him to Joshua. When Israel had finished slaughtering all the inhabitants of Ai in the open wilderness where they pursued them and all of them to the very last had fallen by the edge of the sword, all Israel returned to Ai, and smote it with the edge of the sword. And all who fell that day, both men and women, were twelve thousand, all the people of Ai. For Joshua did not draw back his hand, with which he stretched out the javelin, until he had utterly destroyed all the inhabitants of Ai.

Josh 24:15; And if you be unwilling or it seems evil to you to serve the LORD, choose you this day whom you will serve, whether the gods your fathers served in the region beyond the River, or the gods of the Amorites in whose land you dwell; but as for me and my house, we will serve the LORD."

Jude 11; Whoa to them for they have gone the way of cain (Violence murder and terrorism, approbation, lust and jealousy) they have rushed to illegal profit, or ran greedily to the deceit of Balaam's error, and abandoning themselves to materialism lusts, they have been destroyed in Corah's revolution.

Judg 2:10-14; And all that generation also were gathered to their fathers, Caleb and Joshua; and there arose another generation after them, who did not know the LORD lacking Bible Doctrine nor the works which he had done for Israel and did not understand Category I Love. And the people of Israel did what was evil in the sight of the LORD and served the Ba'alim a system of Idolatry gods; and they forsook, were unfaithful to the LORD Jesus Christ, the God of their fathers, the one who had brought them out of the land of Egypt; and they followed other gods, from among the gods of the peoples who were round about them, and bowed down to them; and they provoked the LORD to anger. They forsook, were unfaithful to the LORD, and served the Ba'al and the Ash'taroth. So the anger of the LORD was kindled against Israel, and he gave them over to plunderers, who plundered them; and he sold them into the power of their enemies round about, so that they could no longer withstand their enemies.

Lam 3:15-20; He (God) filled me with bitterness (blaming God for it), he made me drunk with venom of the soul. He, God, has broken my teeth with gravel, he has made me to cower in the dust; You have removed My soul, it has been rejected far off from prosperity, tranquility and happiness in reversionism, ie blessings from the Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God , and I have forgotten happiness and The Good, the doctrine of the equation of hope as the Plan of God in PROSPERITY; so I say, "My strength has perished, and so has my Hope 3 or expectation of the 7<sup>th</sup> imputation is from the LORD." Remember my afflictions from reversionism and restlessness, the bitterness and poison of absinth or wormwood as venom of my soul from incarceration, I will remember. Surely My soul still has them in remembrance and it is bowed down or humbled within me:

Lam 3:21-24; This DOCTRINE I recall to mind, therefore I, Ultra Super-Grace believer Jeremiah, have confident expectations or faith under pressure (HOPE) in time of disaster. It is because the grace expression of the Lord, His gracious unfailing love or mercies which never ceases and are never exhausted, that we are not CUT OFF or Consumed, His Gracious Mercies or functions of temporal security from logistical support, never cease for His compassions never end or fail, they, Logistical Grace support functions, are renewed every morning, His faithfulness continues. (logistical grace is received 1 day at a time and is intensified in Super-Grace B) (what

GOD has promised HE will deliver) The Lord is my portion says my soul in Occupation with the Person of Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ in Super-Grace, therefore I am caused to have absolute confidence in Him in the midst of pressure. (part of virtue is personal love directed to GOD, impersonal love directed to man, confidence directed to GOD, courage directed to man)

Lam 3:25-26; The Lord is good to those who endure patiently in absolute confidence of hope or trust in him, to the soul who constantly seeks Him ( Positive Volition toward Bible Doctrine ) great is his faithfulness. Good it is to STAND STILL be silent and wait for the deliverance of the Lord.

(This is the faith rest drill used in adversity with integrity {spiritual strength} from constant +volition for perception, cognition, metabolization and application of Bible Doctrine)

Lev 17:7; So they shall no more slay their sacrifices for satyrs, after whom they play the harlot. This shall be a statute for ever to them throughout their generations.

Lev 18:28-29; You shall not make any cuttings in your flesh on account of the dead or tattoo any marks upon you: I am the LORD. "Do not profane your daughter by making her a harlot, lest the land fall into harlotry and the land become full of wickedness.

Lev 20:27; "A man or a woman who is a medium or a wizard shall be put to death; they shall be stoned with stones, their blood shall be upon them."

Lev 26:19; Then I will also break down the arrogance of your abuse of power, I will make your sky like Iron (Drought - Economic Disaster, Inflation first and then Depression), and your earth like Bronze.

Lev 26:29; No one devoted, who is to be utterly destroyed from among men, shall be ransomed; he shall be put to death.

Luke 4:5-7; And the devil took him up, and showed him all the kingdoms of the world in a moment of time, and said to him, "To you I will give all this authority and their glory; for it has been delivered to me, and I give it to whom I will. If you, then, will worship me, it shall all be yours."

Luke 4:33-35; And in the synagogue there was a man who was possessed and held by the spirit of an unclean demon; and he screamed out with a piercing cry, "Ah! Leave us alone, what do we have to do with you, Jesus of Nazareth? Have you come to destroy us? I know who you are, the Holy One of God." But Jesus told him, saying, "Be silent, and come out of him! OR Shut up and get out!" And when the demon had thrown him down in the midst of the people, he came out of him, having done him no harm.

Luke 4:41; And demons also came out of many, crying, "You are the Son of God!" And rebuking them, he would not allow them to speak, because they knew that he was the Christ.

Luke 8:2; and also some women who had been healed of evil spirits and infirmities: Mary, called Mag'dalene, from whom seven demons had gone out,

Luke 8:22-24; One day he got into a boat with his disciples, and he said to them, "Let us go across to the other side of the lake." So they set out, and as they sailed he fell asleep. And a storm of wind came down on the lake, and they were filling with water, and were in danger. And they went and woke him, saying, "Master, Master, we are perishing!" And he awoke and rebuked the wind and the raging waves; and they ceased, and there was a calm.

Luke 8:27-35; And as he stepped out on land, there met him a man from the city who had demons; for a long time he had worn no clothes, and he lived not in a house but among the tombs. When he saw Jesus, he cried out and fell down before him, and said with a loud voice, "What have you to do with me, Jesus, Son of the Most

High God? I beseech you, do not torment me." For he had commanded the unclean spirit to come out of the man. (For many a time it had seized him; he was kept under guard, and bound with chains and fetters, but he broke the bonds and was driven by the demon into the desert.) Jesus then asked him, "What is your name?" And he said, "Legion"; for many demons had entered him. And they begged him not to command them to depart into the abyss. Now a large herd of swine was feeding there on the hillside; and they begged him to let them enter these. So he gave them leave. Then the demons came out of the man and entered the swine, and the herd rushed down the steep bank into the lake and were drowned. When the herdsmen saw what had happened, they fled, and told it in the city and in the country. Then people went out to see what had happened, and they came to Jesus, and found the man from whom the demons had gone, sitting at the feet of Jesus, clothed and in his right mind; and they were afraid.

Luke 11:14-20; Now he was casting out a demon that was dumb; when the demon had gone out, the dumb man spoke, and the people marveled. But some of them said, "He casts out demons by Be-el'zebul, the prince of demons"; while others, to test him, sought from him a sign from heaven. But he, knowing their thoughts, said to them, "Every kingdom divided against itself is laid waste, and a divided household falls. And if Satan also is divided against himself, how will his kingdom stand? For you say that I cast out demons by Be-el'zebul. And if I cast out demons by Be-el'zebul, by whom do your sons cast them out? Therefore they shall be your judges. But if it is by the finger of God that I cast out demons, then the kingdom of God has come upon you. But if I by the little finger or tiniest power of God the Father, instantly cast or throw out with great violence and power demons and I do, therefore then the kingdom of God on Earth has come to you.

Luke 11:27-28; Now it came to pass that while he (JC) was teaching these things (Luke 11:14-17), a certain popular woman from the audience interrupted having spoken up with shouting with a loud voice she said to him (JC) "Happy is the woman whose Womb carried you, and the woman whose breasts gave you suck (fed him as an infant)". But Jesus, himself, replied 'Wrong' or 'On the contrary', happinesses belong those who keep on hearing and guarding and therefore retain the word of God, Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul, they are the ones who are blessed.

Luke 12:24-26; Consider the ravens: they neither sow nor reap, they have neither storehouse nor barn, and yet God feeds them. Of how much more value are you than the birds! And which of you by being anxious can add a cubit to his span of life? If then you are not able to do as small a thing as that, why are you anxious about the rest?

Luke 13:16; And ought not this woman, a daughter of Abraham whom Satan bound for eighteen years, be loosed from this bond on the sabbath day?"

Luke 13:28; There you will weep and gnash your teeth, when you see Abraham and Isaac and Jacob and all the prophets in the kingdom of God and you yourselves thrust out.

Luke 14:11; For everyone who exalts himself (including through the Arrogance of Christian Service) will be humbled under the Law of Volitional Responsibility being a loser living a fragmented life, and he who humbles himself shall be exalted (True Humility Gate 3 of the Divine Dynasphere)

Luke 15:7-10; I tell you, that or in the same way there will be more happiness or joy in heaven over one sinner who changes his mind toward the gospel of Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ than over ninety-nine righteous persons who presume to need no repentance. "When you are invited by any one to a marriage feast, do not sit down in a place of honor, lest a more eminent man than you be invited by him; and he who invited you both will come and say to you, 'Give place to this man,' and then you will begin with shame to take the lowest place. But when you are invited, go and sit in the lowest place, so that when your host comes he may say to you, 'Friend, go up higher'; then you will be honored in the presence of all who sit at table with you.

Luke 16:18; "Every one who divorces his wife and marries another commits adultery, and he who marries a woman divorced from her husband commits adultery.



Luke 16:25; But Abraham said, `Son, remember that you in your lifetime received your good things, and Laz'arus in like manner evil things; but now he is comforted here, and you are in anguish.

Luke 17:25; But first he must suffer many things and be rejected by this generation.

Luke 22:31-32; "Simon, Simon, behold, Satan demanded to have you, that he might sift you like wheat, but I have prayed for you that your faith may not fail; and when you have turned again, strengthen your brethren."

Mark 1:26; And the unclean spirit, causing him convulsions and crying with a loud voice, came out of him.

Mark 1:34; And he healed many who were sick with various diseases, and cast out many demons; and he would not permit the demons to speak, because they knew him.

Mark 1:39; And he went throughout all Galilee, preaching in their synagogues and casting out demons.

Mark 3:22; And the scribes who came down from Jerusalem said, "He is possessed by Be-el'zebul, and by the prince of demons he casts out the demons."

Mark 4:35-39; On that day, when evening had come, he said to them, "Let us go across to the other side." And leaving the crowd, they took him with them in the boat, just as he was. And other boats were with him. And a great storm of wind arose, and the waves beat into the boat, so that the boat was already filling. But he was in the stern, asleep on the cushion; and they woke him and said to him, "Teacher, do you not care if we perish?" And he awoke and rebuked the wind, and said to the sea, "Peace! Be still!" And the wind ceased, and there was a great calm.

Mark 5:1-13; They came to the other side of the sea, to the country of the Ger'asenes. And when he had come out of the boat, there met him out of the tombs a man with an unclean spirit, who lived among the tombs; and no one could bind him any more, even with a chain; for he had often been bound with fetters and chains, but the chains he wrenched apart, and the fetters he broke in pieces; and no one had the strength to subdue him. Night and day among the tombs and on the mountains he was always crying out, and bruising himself with stones. And when he saw Jesus from afar, he ran and worshiped him; and crying out with a loud voice, he said, "What have you to do with me, Jesus, Son of the Most High God? I adjure you by God, do not torment me." For he had said to him, "Come out of the man, you unclean spirit!" And Jesus asked him, "What is your name?" He replied, "My name is Legion; for we are many." And he begged him eagerly not to send them out of the country. Now a great herd of swine was feeding there on the hillside; and they begged him, "Send us to the swine, let us enter them." So he gave them leave. And the unclean spirits came out, and entered the swine; and the herd, numbering about two thousand, rushed down the steep bank into the sea, and were drowned in the sea.

Mark 5:12; and they begged him, "Send us to the swine, let us enter them."

Mark 7:26-30; Now the woman was a Greek, a Syrophoeni'cian by birth. And she begged him to cast the demon out of her daughter. And he said to her, "Let the children first be fed, for it is not right to take the children's bread and throw it to the dogs." But she answered him, "Yes, Lord; yet even the dogs under the table eat the children's crumbs." And he said to her, "For this saying you may go your way; the demon has left your daughter." And she went home, and found the child lying in bed, and the demon gone.

Mark 9:17; And one of the crowd answered him, "Teacher, I brought my son to you, for he has a dumb spirit;

Mark 9:18; and wherever it seizes him, it dashes him down; and he foams and grinds his teeth and becomes rigid; and I asked your disciples to cast it out, and they were not able."

Mark 9:20; And they brought the boy to him; and when the spirit saw him, immediately it convulsed the boy, and



he fell on the ground and rolled about, foaming at the mouth.

Mark 9:25; And when Jesus saw that a crowd came running together, he rebuked the unclean spirit, saying to it, "You dumb and deaf spirit, I command you, come out of him, and never enter him again."

Mark 9:33-37; And they came to Caper'na-um; and when he was in the house he asked them, "What were you discussing on the way?" But they were silent; for on the way they had discussed with one another who was the greatest. And he sat down and called the twelve; and he said to them, "If any one would be first, he must be last of all and servant of all." And he took a child, and put him in the midst of them; and taking him in his arms, he said to them, "Whoever receives one such child in my name receives me; and whoever receives me, receives not me but him who sent me."

Mark 10:35-45; And James and John, the sons of Zeb'edee, came forward to him, and said to him, "Teacher, we want you to do for us whatever we ask of you." And he said to them, "What do you want me to do for you?" And they said to him, "Grant us to sit, one at your right hand and one at your left, in your glory." But Jesus said to them, "You do not know what you are asking. Are you able to drink the cup that I drink, or to be baptized with the baptism with which I am baptized?" And they said to him, "We are able." And Jesus said to them, "The cup that I drink you will drink; and with the baptism with which I am baptized, you will be baptized; but to sit at my right hand or at my left is not mine to grant, but it is for those for whom it has been prepared." And when the ten heard it, they began to be indignant at James and John. And Jesus called them to him and said to them, "You know that those who are supposed to rule over the Gentiles lord it over them, and their great men exercise authority over them. But it shall not be so among you; but whoever would be great among you must be your servant, and whoever would be first among you must be slave of all. For the Son of man also came not to be served but to serve, and to give his life as a ransom for many."

Mark 15:10; For he, The Lord Jesus, The Christ, was aware that the Chief Priests had delivered him over to the Romans because of jealousy,

Matt 4:1-10; Then Jesus was led up by God the Holy Spirit into the wilderness to be tempted by the devil, Satan. And he fasted forty days and forty nights, and afterward he was extremely hungry or famished. And the tempter (Satan) came and said to him, "If you are the Son of God and of course you are, command that these stones to become loaves of bread." But he answered and said, "It is written in Old Testament Scripture, 'Man shall not live by bread alone, but by every word that proceeds from the mouth of God.'" Then the devil, the antagonist, the accuser, took him to the holy city of Jerusalem, and had our Lord stand on the pinnacle of the temple, or Herod's Portico 450' above the valley and said to him, "If you are the Son of God, and of course you are, throw yourself down; for it is written, 'He, God the Father, will give his angels charge concerning you,' and 'On their hands they will bear you up, lest you strike your foot against a stone.'" Jesus said to him, "Again it is written, 'You shall not tempt the Lord your God.'" Again, the devil took him to a very great height or highest of mountains, and showed him all the kingdoms of the world and their glory; and he said to him, "All these I will give you, if you will fall down and worship me." Then Jesus said to him, "Begone, Satan! for it is written, 'You shall worship the Lord your God and him only shall you serve.'"

Matt 5:17; "Think not that I have come to abolish the law and the prophets; I have come not to abolish them but to fulfil them.

Matt 5:32; But I keep on saying, as the final authority on this doctrine, unto you for your advantage, that who ever puts away or divorces his wife, except for or on the grounds of fornication or adultery, causes her to receive adultery; and whoever marries an illegitimately divorced woman commits adultery.

Matt 6:22-24; If your eyes, reflecting what you think, are the animation of the inner beauty of the Body, being without blemish and are healthy from consistent Filling of God the Holy Spirit and maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul providing momentum in the Spiritual Life, maybe they are and maybe NOT, then your whole body will be animated with great inner beauty. But if your eye

reflects Mental Attitude Sins from the influence of evil residing in your soul, your whole body will be full of darkness as reversionistic Blackout of the Soul, If therefore the light within you is darkness, you know only about the Cosmic Dynaspheres and imitate the unbeliever, how great is that darkness. No one can serve 2 masters, either he will hate the one and love the other or he will be devoted to the one and despise the other, you cannot serve God and Mammon, the Chaldean God of money, avarice and desire.

Matt 6:26-27; Look at the birds of the air, they do not sow they do not reap or work for their food neither do they gather into barns or accumulate capitol profit as in free enterprise and yet your heavenly father feeds them. Aren't you not worth more than or of greater value than the Bird? Of course you believers are! And which of you by worrying, having a lack of confidence in God and cowardice toward man, can add 18 inches to his height

Matt 6:34; Therefore DO NOT WORRY about the next day, tomorrow, for tomorrow will take care of itself (God provides EACH day one at a time in his faithfulness). Each day has its own brand of Evil which is sufficient of itself (temptations) take care of today's evil first.

Matt 7:1-2; (Command) YOU Stop Judging, gossiping, maligning, verbally trying to run another's life, therefore you are without excuse, every man among you who passes judgment, for in that you judge another you condemn them and you do the same things yourself, for IF you who judge practice the same things you will receive double Divine Discipline. OR Judge not that you RECEIVE NOT double Divine Discipline judgment, maybe you will and maybe you will not depending on whether you JUDGE others. For in the way or by which judgment that you judge (the sins you mention), you will be judged in triple compound Divine Discipline, and with what or by which measure you measure it out in judging another, the same will be measured back to YOU! Why do you make a superficial scrutinizing critical maligning observation of the speck or splinter that is in your brother believer's eye, but do not evaluate your own life by the norm and standard of Bible Doctrine and notice the log that is in your own eye?

Matt 7:15; "Constantly be on Guard and Aware of false prophets, religious leaders, who come to you in sheep's clothing but inwardly are ravenous wolves.

Matt 7:22; On that day many will say to me, 'Lord, Lord, did we not prophesy in your name, and cast out demons in your name, and do many mighty works in your name?'

Matt 8:12; In contrast while the mature adult sons of the kingdom, the promises from God not yet fulfilled, the racial Jewish unbelievers, will be thrown or cast out into outer darkness; in that place of the outer darkness of the Lake of Fire there shall be weeping or crying with total breakdown of poise in total eternal frustration and grinding of teeth."

Matt 8:16; That evening they brought to him many who were possessed with demons; and he cast out the spirits with a word, and healed all who were sick.

Matt 8:23-26; Nevertheless, when he boarded the ship, the Positive Volition student believer disciples followed him. And so look what happened, instantly a great force 12 storm originated, on a calm sea, on the sea of Tiberius, with the result that the ship was covered by and being swamped by the waves; but he, Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ continued sleeping with a Relaxed Mental Attitude. And consequently they, his disciples, came to him as quickly as possible and they aroused and awakened him, shouting and screaming again and again at him, "Lord, Lord, Lord, (meaning God or Deity); Rescue, Deliver or Save US, we are about to perishing, being destroyed, wrecked." And so as a result he, Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ, said to them, disciples aboard ship (while the storm continued), "Why are you disciples cowards, afraid, You short time trusters or men short of or having little faith rest?" At that time then after reprimanding the disciples, when he arose and stood up at attention he reprimanded with his voice the winds and the sea; and it became in a single moment a great calm.

Matt 8:28; And when he came to the other side, to the country of the Gadarenes, two demoniacs met him, coming out of the tombs, so fierce that no one could pass that way.

Matt 8:31; And the demons begged him, "If you cast us out, send us away into the herd of swine."

Matt 8:33; The herdsmen fled, and going into the city they told everything, and what had happened to the demoniacs.

Matt 9:4; But Jesus, aware of their thinking and knowing their thoughts, said, "Why do you think Evil , slander, in the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of your Soul ?

Matt 9:33-34; And when the demon had been cast out, the dumb man spoke; and the crowds marveled, saying, "Never was anything like this seen in Israel." But the Pharisees said, "He casts out demons by the prince of demons."

Matt 10:36-38; And A person's greatest enemies shall be they, the members of his own household or family, even husband and wife;. When anyone loves father or mother more than the sword of Bible Doctrine or Me, Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ, is not worthy of me, the one loving son or daughter more than the sword of Bible Doctrine, or me, he is not worthy of me, And he who does not pick up his cross putting Bible Doctrine first, going against social tradition, and follow after me through the daily function of the Grace Apparatus for Perception, is not worthy of me.

Matt 11:11; Truly as final authority, I say to you, among those born of women there has not been a greater man than John the Baptist; notwithstanding, in spite of naming the greatest, he who is least in the kingdom of heaven is greater than John the Baptist.

Matt 11:15-17; He who keeps on having his ears, let him keep on listening. "But to what shall I compare this legalistic religious generation? It is like children sitting in the market places and sulking and complaining, saying to their friends about the treatment they are getting from their friends, `We played music for you, and you did not dance; we mourned and wept unto you, and you did not lament.'

Matt 12:22; Then a blind and dumb demoniac was brought to him, and he healed him, so that the dumb man spoke and saw.

Matt 12:24-28; But when the Pharisees heard it they said, "It is only by Be-el'zebul, the prince of demons, that this man casts out demons." Knowing their thoughts, he said to them, "Every kingdom divided against itself is laid waste, and no city or house divided against itself will stand; and if Satan casts out Satan, he is divided against himself; how then will his kingdom stand? And if I cast out demons by Be-el'zebul, by whom do your sons cast them out? Therefore they shall be your judges. But if I cast out demons by means of God the Holy Spirit, then the kingdom of God has come upon you.

Matt 15:22; And behold, a Canaanite woman from that region came out and cried, "Have mercy on me, O Lord, Son of David; my daughter is severely possessed by a demon."

Matt 17:15; "Lord, have mercy on my son, for he is an epileptic and he suffers terribly; for often he falls into the fire, and often into the water.

Matt 18:1-3; At that same time the disciples came to Jesus, saying, "Who is the greatest in the kingdom of heaven?" And Jesus called to him a little child, and he put the child in the midst of these disciples, and He, The Lord Jesus, The Christ, said to them, "A Point of Bible Doctrine I keep on saying to you for your advantage, If or unless you disciples be converted through Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God and regeneration, maybe you will and maybe you will not be, and at that point, for your benefit, have made Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God (John 3:36) and you become AS or LIKE a little child, maybe you will and maybe you will not depending on your volition, you, Judas, nor anyone else will never enter the kingdom of heaven.

Matt 18:23-35; Therefore, the kingdom of heaven may be compared to a certain king who wished to settle accounts for his administration. And when he began to settle the accounts which were outstanding, there was brought before him one of his bureaucrats or administrators who owed him \$10,000,000. And since he did not have the means to pay this account the king commanded him to be sold, along with his wife and children and payment made against his account. Therefore the Bureaucrat or administrator, fell down and prostrated himself before the king saying "have patience with me and I will pay all". And the King of that administrator had compassion, therefore he released him from his debt and he canceled the entire loan. (This is GRACE function) But that same bureaucrat having departed discovered one of his fellow bureaucrats who owed him 20 dollars, so he seized him by the throat and began to strangle him saying over and over, "Pay me back what you owe me". And this fellow bureaucrat fell down and began to beg him saying, "Have patience with me and I will repay you. However he was not willing to do the same thing which had been done to him, and he went and threw the debtor into prison until he could pay. So when his fellow bureaucrats had observed what had happened they were deeply grieved and came and reported to the king what had transpired. And having summoned him, his King said to him, "You Evil bureaucrat, I canceled all your debt because you begged me, Should you not also have had mercy on your fellow bureaucrat as I have had mercy on you. And his king having become angry, handed him over to the Torturers, to be tortured every day until he could pay all that he owed. So shall my heavenly father also do to you if each one of you does not forgive his fellow Believer from YOUR right lobe.

Matt 19:4; He answered and said to them, "Have you not read that he who made them from the beginning made them male and female, (Gen 1:27)

Matt 19:9; But I say to you: whoever divorces or puts away his wife, except because of her fornication, and marries another, commits adultery."

Matt 19:16-26; Then one {rich young ruler} came to Him {Jesus} and said, "Good {good of intrinsic value} master or teacher of doctrine {not 'Lord'}, what good things {salvation by works} must I do to gain or obtain eternal life {rejecting the Lord}?" He {Jesus} replied to Him {ruler}, "Why do you question Me about what is 'good of intrinsic value'? There is Only One who is good of intrinsic value. (God, Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ for Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God) If you want to enter into eternal life, assuming you do, keep the commandments {reject Me as Lord, then look at the commandments to see your condemnation}." "Which ones?" he {ruler} asked. Jesus alleged, "You will not murder, You will not commit adultery or fornicate, You will not steal, You will not perjury, keep on honoring your father and mother' {probably guilty of the korban gimmick in Matthew 15:1-9} and love your neighbor as yourself." Lev 19:18, 34, Mark 12:29-31 The young man said to him {Jesus}, "I have kept or guarded all these things. What am I still lacking?" Jesus said to him for his advantage, "If you wish or want to be perfect, go or depart, sell once and for all, all your possessions and give to the poor (not salvation) and you will have treasure in heaven. In fact then come {express faith (Matthew 11:28)} and follow Me {regeneration Matt 19:28}." When the young ruler heard this he went away being constantly filled with sorrow or grieved, for he possessed a great deal of property. Then Jesus said to His disciples, "A point of truth or doctrine, it is difficult but not impossible for a rich person to enter the kingdom of heaven {they tend to depend on wealth and rely on works}." "Again I {Jesus} say, it is easier for a camel to go through the eye of the needle gate in the city, than for a rich person to enter into the kingdom of God." When the disciples heard this they were utterly astonished, and replied, "Who then can be saved?" (They in fact were total dummies) Jesus stared or glared at them and said, "This {salvation by works} is impossible with mankind, but with the Integrity of God all things are possible."

Matt 19:27-30; Then Peter, having answered or replied as a result of many questions not in the context, said to Him, "Behold, WE {Peter was the talker but ALL the Apostles were in on this thought having discussed this prior} have abandoned or forsaken or given up everything or all THINGS and followed You. What therefore shall WE have or will there be for us?" And so Jesus replied to them (Peter and all the disciples in blind arrogance), "Truly I say to you {point of doctrine}, that you who have followed Me in regeneration, (all but Judas Iscariot) (Open Parenthesis discussing rewards in eternity) when the Son of Man shall sit on the throne of His glory, you also (including Paul who replaces Judas) shall sit upon twelve thrones, judging the twelve tribes of Israel, and every one that has forsaken houses, or brethren, or sisters, or father, or mother, or wife, or children, or lands or



businesses for My name's sake shall receive a hundred-fold {maximum reward}(Close Parenthesis) also even you shall inherit everlasting life." But many (that are) first (in the vineyard) (1<sup>st</sup> century Believers Matt 20:10) Shall be last in blessing and reward, and many last (Believers) shall be first in blessing and reward.

Matt 20:1-15; "For the kingdom of heaven is like a capitalist who went out early in the morning to hire laborers for his vineyard; and when he had bargained with the labor union laborers for a denarius a day, he sent them into his vineyard. (6:00 AM) And going out about the third hour (9:00 AM) he saw others scab labor standing idle in the market place not part of the labor union; and to them he said, 'You go into the vineyard too, and whatever is right I will give you.' So they went and trusted him. Going out again about the sixth hour (12:00 noon) and the ninth hour (3:00 Pm), he did the same thing. And about the eleventh hour (5:00 pm) he went out and found others standing; and he said to them, 'Why do you stand here idle all day?' They said to him, 'Because no one has hired us.' He said to them, 'You go into the vineyard too.' And when evening came (6:00 pm), the owner of the vineyard said to his steward, 'Call the laborers and pay them their wages, beginning with the last group, up to the first group the union men.' And when those hired about the eleventh hour (5:00 pm) came, each of them received a denarius in GRACE. Now when the first came, they thought with EVIL thinking that they would receive more; but each of them also received a denarius. And when those in the labor union received their wages at the end of the day they began to complain against management and the capitalist. saying, 'These last men worked only one hour, and you have made them equal to us (this is wrong they have been in fact made superior) who have endured and carried the burden of the day and the scorching heat.' But he replied to them and said, 'Partner, I am doing you no wrong; did you not bargain, AGREE to a contract, with me for a denarius? Throwing the payment onto the ground the Owner said, "Take what is yours, and get out of here"; I WILL GIVE to this last group what I want to give as I give to you UNDER GRACE. Is it not lawful for me as a capitalist to do what I desire with my own capital, YES IT IS!, or are you jealous because I am generous, or is your eye or perspective evil because I am Good (agathos intrinsic good). (Jesus Christ said) Therefore the last (believers who learn Bible Doctrine) will be first, and the first (believers in Interlocking System of Arrogance) last."

Matt 20:16-29; Jesus Said, "So the last in the field will be first in reward, and the first in the field the Legalists shall be last in reward." For many shall be called but few shall be chosen." And as Jesus was about to go up to Jerusalem, he took the twelve disciples aside, and on the way he said to them, "Behold, we are going up to Jerusalem; and the Son of man will be delivered to the chief priests and scribes, and they will condemn him to death, and deliver him to the Gentiles the Romans, to be mocked and scourged and crucified, and on the third day he will receive resurrection." Then the mother, Salome, of the sons of Zeb'edee, sister to Mary mother of Jesus, came up to him, with her sons, James and John, Bowing down and kneeling obsequiously before him she asked him for something, making a request. And he said to her, "What do you want?" She said to him, "Command that these two sons of mine may sit, one at your right hand and one at your left, in your kingdom." But Jesus answered, "You do not know what you are asking. Are you able to drink the cup that I am to drink?" They said to him (Blind Arrogance), "We are able." He said to them, James and John, "You will drink my cup, but to sit at my right hand and at my left is not mine to grant, but it is for those for whom it has been prepared in the past with the result that it stands prepared by my Father." And when the ten heard it, they were indignant with the two brothers. But Jesus called them to himself and said, "You know that the rulers of the Gentiles that is the Romans, lord it over them, the jews, and their great men in command of the province, exercise authority over them. It shall not be so among you, some are already acting like romans; but whoever would become great among you must be your servant, and whoever wills to be first among you shall be your slave; just as the Son of man did not come to be served but to serve, and to give his life as a ransom for the many." And as they, Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ and the disciples, went out of Jericho, a great mob followed him, out of curiosity.

Matt 20:30-34; And behold, two blind men sitting helplessly, having been dumped out of life, by the roadside, when they heard that Jesus was passing by, they shouted, "(Kurioi, Deity) Lord, Grace us OUT, or Have mercy on us, Son of David, (perfect humanity)!" And the mob, with their Blind Arrogance, censored and severely reprimanded or rebuked these same 2 blind men, that they might shut up or keep silent; but they began to shout out all the more loudly, "Lord, Grace us out, deliver us, Son of David!" And Jesus having stopped momentarily summoned them, and said, "What do you wish what do you desire me to do for you?" They said to him, Jesus



of Nazareth, The Christ, "Lord, that our eyes may be opened, given sight." So Jesus had and was moved with compassion, instantly touched their eyes, and at immediately once they recovered their sight with absolutely perfect vision and with grace humility followed him wherever he went.

Matt 22:21; They said, "Caesar's." Then he said to them, "Render therefore to Caesar the things that are Caesar's, and to God the things that are God's."

Matt 23:13-36; "But woe to you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! because you shut the kingdom of heaven against men; for you neither enter yourselves, nor allow those who would enter to go in. Woe to you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! for you traverse sea and land to make a single proselyte, and when he becomes a proselyte, you make him twice as much a child of hell as yourselves. "Woe to you, blind guides, who say, 'If any one swears by the temple, it is nothing; but if any one swears by the gold of the temple, he is bound by his oath.' You blind fools! For which is greater, the gold or the temple that has made the gold sacred? And you say, 'If any one swears by the altar, it is nothing; but if any one swears by the gift that is on the altar, he is bound by his oath.' You blind men! For which is greater, the gift or the altar that makes the gift sacred? So he who swears by the altar, swears by it and by everything on it; and he who swears by the temple, swears by it and by him who dwells in it; and he who swears by heaven, swears by the throne of God and by him who sits upon it. And Jesus then dealt with them and this is what he said to them "Whoa to you scribes and pharisee's hypocrites for you tithe mint, dill, and cummin (Perfumes) and you have neglected the weightier provisions of the law, Justice Mercy and Faithfulness, but these are the things which you should have done without neglecting the others". (Sarcasm) You blind guides, you strain at a gnat and swallow a camel. (Extreme Pickiness) Whoa to you scribes pharisee's and hypocrites for you cleaned the outside of the cup and the dish, but inside they are full of robbery (stealing from the people) and self indulgence (no rule by law). You blind pharisee's first clean up the inside of the cup and dish so that the outside of it may become clean also (Clean up your own souls with BD in the SC). Whoa to you scribes pharisee's and hypocrites, you are like whitewashed tombstones, which on the outside you appear beautiful (lovely language used) but inside you are filled with dead men's bones and all uncleanness (religion). Even so you too outwardly appear righteous to men (phonies) but inwardly you are full of hypocrisy and lawlessness. "Woe to you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! for you build the tombs of the prophets and adorn the monuments of the righteous, saying, 'If we had lived in the days of our fathers, we would not have taken part with them in shedding the blood of the prophets.' Thus you witness against yourselves, that you are sons of those who murdered the prophets. Fill up, then, the measure of your fathers. You serpents, you brood of vipers, how are you to escape being sentenced to hell? Therefore I send you prophets and wise men and scribes, some of whom you will kill and crucify, and some you will scourge in your synagogues and persecute from town to town, that upon you may come all the righteous blood shed on earth, from the blood of innocent Abel to the blood of Zechari'ah the son of Barachi'ah, whom you murdered between the sanctuary and the altar. Truly, I say to you, all this will come upon this generation.

Matt 25:30; And cast the worthless servant into the outer darkness; there men will weep and gnash their teeth.'

Matt 26:58; But Peter followed him at a distance, as far as the courtyard of the high priest, and going inside he sat with the guards to see the end.

Matt 27:18; For he, Pilate, knew that because of envy they, the religious leaders, had brought him, Jesus, to the Praetorium.

Matt 27:46; And about the 9<sup>th</sup> hour Jesus Shouted, 'ali ali lama sabakthanie' (Ps 22:1) "My God, My God, Why have you forsaken me",

Neh 8:10; Then he said to them, "Go your way, eat the fat and drink sweet wine and send portions to him for whom nothing is prepared; for this day is holy to our Lord; and do not be grieved, for the joy, inner happiness, Relaxed Mental Attitude of the LORD is your strength."

Num 5:14-18; and if the spirit of jealousy comes upon him, and he is jealous of his wife who has defiled herself;

or if the spirit of jealousy comes upon him, and he is jealous of his wife, though she has not defiled herself; then the man shall bring his wife to the priest, and bring the offering required of her, a tenth of an ephah of barley meal; he shall pour no oil upon it and put no frankincense on it, for it is a cereal offering of jealousy, a cereal offering of remembrance, bringing iniquity to remembrance. "And the priest shall bring her near, and set her before the LORD; and the priest shall take holy water in an earthen vessel, and take some of the dust that is on the floor of the tabernacle and put it into the water. : And the priest shall set the woman before the LORD, and unbind the hair of the woman's head, and place in her hands the cereal offering of remembrance, which is the cereal offering of jealousy. And in his hand the priest shall have the water of bitterness that brings the curse.

Num 11:1-3; And the people complained in the hearing of the LORD about their misfortunes; and when the LORD heard it, his anger was kindled, and the fire of the LORD burned among them, and consumed some outlying parts of the camp. Then the people cried to Moses; and Moses prayed to the LORD, and the fire abated. So the name of that place was called Tab'erah, because the fire of the LORD burned among them.

Num 11:4-6; Now the rabble the scum who were among them had a greedy desires; and the people of Israel also wept again, and said, "Who will give us meat to eat! We remember the fish (slave food) we ate free in Egypt, the cucumbers, the melons, the leeks, the onions, and the garlic (To make it palatable); but now our appetite is gone, and there is nothing at all to look at except this miserable manna."

Num 11:7-9; Now the manna was like coriander seed, and its appearance like that of bdellium. The people went about and gathered it, and ground it in mills or beat it in mortars, and boiled it in pots, and made cakes of it; and the taste of it was like the taste of cakes baked with oil. When the dew fell upon the camp in the night, the manna fell with it.

Num 11:10-15; Moses heard the people weeping throughout all their families, every man at the door of his tent; (the anger of the LORD burned hotly), and Moses also was displeased. Then Moses said to the LORD, "Why have YOU afflicted your servant? And why have I not found favor or Grace in YOUR sight, that you does lay the burden of all this people upon me? Did I conceive all this people? (great sarcasm) Did I bring them forth as a woman giving birth to the child, (Greater sarcasm), that you should say to me, 'Carry them in your bosom, as a nursing father carries the suckling child, to the land which you did swear to give their fathers?' Where am I to go to get or buy enough meat to give to all this people? For they weep unto me saying, 'Give us meat, that we may eat.' I am not able to carry all this people alone, because the burden is too heavy for me. If you will deal thus with me, because it is your fault, just kill me violently out of hand at once, if I have found favor in thy sight, let me not see my wretchedness, get rid of me right now."

Num 11:31-33; And there went forth a South East wind (Ps 78:26) from across the Persian *gulf* and scrub Arabic desert peninsula country from the LORD, and it brought quails from the direction of the red sea, and let them fall beside the camp (10 miles across), about a day's journey on this side and a day's journey (20 to 30 Miles) on the other side, round about the camp, and about two cubits (36 inches) high above the face of the ground. (An area about 50 miles in diameter) And the people stayed out all that day, and all that night, and all the next day, and gathered the quail; he who gathered least gathered ten homers (640 quarts, 20 bushels); and they spread them out for themselves all around the camp. And while the raw meat was yet between their teeth being chewed, before it was consumed, the anger of the LORD was kindled against the people, and the LORD smote the people with a very great plague.

Num 12:1-15; Then Miriam and Aaron maligned, gossiped, judged Moses because of the Ethiopian woman whom he had married, for he had married a Ethiopian Princess either a Caucasian or Eurasian woman; and they said, "Has the LORD indeed spoken only through Moses? Is he the only teacher among us who knows the word of God? Has he not spoken through us as well?" (all the people agreed and this started the revolution) And the LORD heard it. Now the man Moses, in his personal life, was very humble with a Grace Orientation Mental Attitude, more than anyone or any person on the face of the earth. And suddenly the LORD said to Moses and to Aaron and Miriam, "Come out, you three, to the tabernacle of the congregation." And the three of them came out

in front of many thousands of the people. And the LORD came down in a pillar of cloud, and stood at the door of the tabernacle, and He called Aaron and Miriam; and they both came forward. And He, the Lord, said, "Hear now my words: If there is a prophet among you, I the LORD will make myself known to him in visions, I will speak with him in dreams. Not so with my servant Moses; (he is faithful in all my house more than any other Jew living) (Heb 3:2+5) With him I speak to him mouth to mouth clearly, even with Moses seeing me, and not in dark speeches of dreams and visions; and the similitude form of The Lord Jesus, The Christ manifest shall he behold. Why then were you not afraid to speak against my servant Moses?" And the anger of the LORD was kindled against them, and he departed; and when the cloud departed from outside the tabernacle, and behold, Miriam became leprous, as white as snow. And Aaron looked at Miriam, and behold, she was leprous, dying slowly and horribly. And Aaron ran from the tabernacle entrance back to Moses and said to Moses, "Alas, my lord, do not punish or lay the sin upon us because we have done foolishly and have sinned. Let her, Miriam, not be as one dead, of whom the flesh is half consumed when he comes out of his mother's womb." And Moses cried to the LORD saying, "Heal her now, O God, I beseech thee." And the LORD said to Moses, giving instructions, "If her father had spit in her face, she should not be shamed but only seven days? (Miriam is like a child, childishly maligning from jealousy, envy, self pity etc., and God will deal with her as a child should be dealt with) Let her be shut up outside the camp seven days, and after that she may be brought in again." So Miriam was shut up outside the camp seven days; and the people did not set out again on the march until Miriam was brought in again. (her leprosy was gone)

Num 14:1; And then all the congregation lifted up their voices, raised a loud cry; and the people wept all that night.

Num 14:2-4; And all the people of Israel complained against Moses and Aaron; the whole congregation said to them, "Would that we had died in the land of Egypt! Or would that we had died in this Desert! Why does the LORD bring us into this land, to fall by the sword? Our wives and our little ones will become prey; would it not be better for us to go back to Egypt?" And they said to one another, "Let us choose a captain, and go back to Egypt."

Num 14:21-38; but truly, as I live, and as all the earth shall be filled with the glory of the LORD, none of the men who have seen my glory and my signs which I wrought in Egypt and in the wilderness, and yet have put me to the proof these ten times and have not hearkened to my voice, shall see the land which I swore to give to their fathers; and none of those who despised me shall see it. But my servant Caleb, because he has a different spirit and has followed me fully, I will bring into the land into which he went, and his descendants shall possess it. Now, since the Amalekites and the Canaanites dwell in the valleys, turn tomorrow and set out for the wilderness by the way to the Red Sea." And the LORD said to Moses and to Aaron, "How long shall this wicked congregation murmur against me? I have heard the murmurings of the people of Israel, which they murmur against me. Say to them, 'As I live,' says the LORD, 'what you have said in my hearing I will do to you: your dead bodies shall fall in this wilderness; and of all your number, numbered from twenty years old and upward, who have complained against me, not one of you shall come into the land where I swore that I would make you dwell, except Caleb the son of Jephun'neh and Joshua the son of Nun. But your little ones, who you said would become a prey, I will bring in, and they shall know the land which you have despised. But as for you, your dead bodies shall fall in this wilderness. And your children shall be shepherds in the wilderness forty years, and shall suffer for your faithlessness, until the last of your dead bodies lies in the wilderness. According to the number of the days in which you spied out the land, forty days, for every day a year, you shall bear your iniquity, forty years, and you shall know the postponement of my promise' I, the LORD, have spoken; surely this will I do to all this wicked congregation that are gathered together against me: in this desert they shall come to a full end, and there they shall die." And the men whom Moses sent to spy out the land, and who returned and made all the congregation to complain against him by bringing up an negative report against the land, the men who brought up an negative report of the land, died by plague before the LORD. But Joshua the son of Nun and Caleb the son of Jephun'neh remained alive, of those men who went to spy out the land.

Num 16:8-11; And Moses said to Korah, "Hear now, you sons of Levi: It is a small a thing to you that the God of

Israel has separated you from the congregation of Israel, to bring you near to himself, to do service in the tabernacle of the LORD, and to stand before the congregation to teach doctrine to them; and that he has brought you near him, and all your brethren the sons of Levi with you? And would you seek the priesthood also? Therefore it is against the LORD that you and all your company have gathered together; what is Aaron that you complain against him?"

Num 16:12-15; And Moses sent to call Dathan and Abi'ram the sons of Eli'ab; and they said, "We will not come up. It is a terrible thing that you have brought us up out of a land flowing with milk and honey (Egypt), to kill us in the desert, in order that you can also make yourself a prince over us? Moreover you have not brought us into a land flowing with milk and honey, nor given us inheritance of fields and vineyards. Will you put out the eyes of these men? We will not come up." And Moses was very angry, and said to the LORD, "Do not respect their offering. I have not taken one ass from them, and I have not harmed one of them."

Num 17:5-10; And it shall come to pass that the rod of the man whom I choose shall blossom; thus I will make to cease from me the murmurings or complaining of the people of Israel, which they murmur against you." And Moses spoke to the people of Israel; and all their prince leaders gave him rods, one for each prince leader, according to their fathers' houses, twelve rods; and the rod of Aaron was among their rods. And Moses laid the rods before the LORD in the tabernacle of witness (the Tabernacle Witnessed to the Person and Work of The Lord Jesus, The Christ). And it came to pass on the next day Moses went into the Tabernacle of witness; and behold, the rod of Aaron for the house of Levi had budded and put forth buds, and produced blossoms, and it yielded ripe almonds. Then Moses brought out all the rods from before the LORD in the holy of holies, to all the people of Israel; and they looked, and each man took his rod. But the LORD said to Moses, "Put back the rod of Aaron Because the testimony for preserving as a sign against the sons of revolution that you may put an end to their grumblings against me, so that they should not die the Sin Unto Death."

Num 20:2-4; There was no water for the new congregation, the next generation; and they assembled or gathered themselves together AGAIN against Moses and against Aaron. And the people contended with, complained to and opposed Moses rejecting his authority, and thinking they spoke saying, "Oh that we had died under adverse conditions by the Sin Unto Death, when our contemporaries of the first generation of the exodus died before the LORD! Why have you, Moses, caused to bring the congregation of the LORD into this desert, that we and our cattle might die here, losing both our life and property wealth?

Num 21:4-6; From Mount Hor they set out by the way to the Red Sea, to go around the land of Edom; and the people became impatient on the way. And the people spoke against God and against Moses, "Why have you brought us up out of Egypt to die in the wilderness? For there is no food and no water, and we loathe this worthless food." Then the LORD sent fiery serpents among the people, and they bit the people, so that many people of Israel died.

Num 22:12; And God said to Balaam, "You shall not go with them; you shall not curse the people, for they are blessed."

Num 22:30; Then the ass said to Balaam, "Am I not your ass, don't I belong to you, upon which you have ridden since I have been yours, all your life long to this day? Have I ever failed you?" And Balaam admitted, "No."

Phil 1:15; On the one hand, certain or specific ones, the category of arrogant reversionists, are now declaring or making know the policy of the king as a herald for the king, The Christ, even because of arrogance or jealousy and discord, certain or specific ones, the category of advancing believers, on the other hand also because of good motivation.

Phil 1:20-21; According to my earnest expectation, waiting calmly and humbly under authority and orders, and intense concentration on Bible Doctrine as Priority #1 and daily function under the Grace Apparatus for Perception focusing on Bible Doctrine taught, and resultant confidence expectation that in nothing, in the various aspects of



life, shall I be put to shame or disgraced, but with integrity of Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and the Royal Family Honor Code resulting in courage, confidence and total relaxation toward God, even now being in Super-Grace B, as always Ultra Super-Grace, and in all stages of Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God, THE unique Christ shall be magnified or exalted in my person alive on earth in time, whether by my living in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God or by my dying under dying grace. For you see, or As I, Paul in Super-Grace B, see it, for me, as far as I am concerned, Living or to continue living, is (ellipsis) Occupation with the Person of Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ; likewise dying is unusual Gain, great Profit, Riches of Glory, Magnetism beyond life in eternity.

Phil 2:2; Bring to completion, by your pressing on, advancing, moving through Super-Grace B into Ultra Super-Grace, my Sharing of the Happiness of God, in order that you might have the same thinking, in Super-Grace B, No Man's Land, from Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul, of the same category of things, having and holding, or maintaining from the past into the present, the same Love of Reciprocal Love for God, Occupation with the Person of Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ, united in the Filling of God the Holy Spirit in soul rapport, intent concentrating on the one purpose or objective of advance to the high ground of the Spiritual Life, Ultra Super-Grace.

Phil 2:5; (YOU THE SUPER GRACE BELIEVER ENJOYING R&R BLESSINGS IN SUPER GRACE A) Have this attitude or Keep objectively thinking this Metabolized Bible Doctrine in your Stream of Consciousness of the Soul in No Man's Land within yourselves, that which was (ellipsis) also resident in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul of the Humanity of Christ Jesus

Phil 2:13-14; for it absolutely always is and keeps on being The God the Holy Spirit who, has been from Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God to the present time, at work in all you believers, both to will or purpose, producing desire and motivation to take in Bible Doctrine in No Man's Land, and to do, execution of the intake of Bible Doctrine for spiritual growth, above and beyond his, God's, will and good pleasure reaching Ultra Super-Grace. Press on and Keep on doing all things in advance through Super-Grace B to Ultra Super-Grace without sullen discontent, argumentation, bitching, complaining, having or being tempted to a sloppy Evil Mental Attitude, which puts down and undermines someone in authority.

Phil 2:14-16; Press on and Keep on doing all things in advance through Super-Grace B to Ultra Super-Grace without sullen discontent, argumentation, bitching, complaining, having or being tempted to a sloppy Evil Mental Attitude, which puts down and undermines someone in authority. In order that you yourselves might become (because of your historical impact) faultless, blameless, not censored by God for reversionism, in Ultra Super-Grace EVEN undiluted by evil, pure or innocent without evil, full of integrity from Metabolized Bible Doctrine, children under the discipline and authority of God, not a disgrace to society, harmless in the sense of Laws of Divine Establishment, being patriotic, pro military, pro Law Enforcement, Pro free enterprise, anti communist, etc with obligation under the Laws of Divine Establishment in the areas of morality and patriotism, child students of a Father God, in the midst of a crooked, unscrupulous, dishonest not influenced by the Laws of Divine Establishment or Bible Doctrine, and a depraved, perverse, misshapen generation under the influence of Evil, among whom you believers in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God keep shining in your generation as a light giving body with radiance of maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul in the world under satan's rule, *Be concentrating on*, hold onto or hold fast, give attention to, focus on by means of the daily function under the Grace Apparatus for Perception, *the word of life*, Bravo Grace which sustains the life of the Super-Grace B Believer, moving into Ultra Super-Grace, *in order that I (Paul)* having a personal interest in you, *may have a basis for Esprit De Corps and boasting*, with reference to THE Unique day of Christ, the rapture of the church, that I have not run or advanced to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God, Ultra Super-Grace, for no profit nor have worked very hard or struggled to exhaustion in personal study for no purpose.

Phil 3:13; Members of the Royal Family of God, I even I consider, estimate or evaluate myself even myself, objectively, as not yet to have attained, overtaken, seized, reached and held the deliberate objective according to the specified Norms and Standards of the Grace Apparatus for Perception, the ultimate of Pleroma, Advanced Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God, however, now one thing on which I concentrate, constantly forgetting



or deliberately assigning to oblivion those things which have already happened and lay behind, the things of the great sins related to reversionism as a handicap, and constantly and eagerly vigorously pursuing advancing or straining or pressing toward, the front or what lies ahead, through the function of Grace Apparatus for Perception as the Ultra Super-Grace objective.

Phil 3:14; I keep on advancing, pressing and closing in toward the next goal or objective of Ultra Super-Grace across no man's land, for the purpose of the reward, wealth, success in Super-Grace and Surpassing Grace packages of blessings and decorations belonging to that upward or highest station or position in life of potential blessing at the Judgment Seat of Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ from that self same God, God the Father by means of Christ Jesus.

Phil 3:15; Therefore, as many as (are) already fully developed, believers in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God in Super-Grace A or B, let us, Super-Grace believers, continue objective thinking of Divine Viewpoint from maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul. In fact if you are thinking somewhat differently and have a different Mental Attitude or hold different opinions toward anything, and you are, The God, as the ultimate source of revelation will reveal through the immediate source of Bible Doctrine and your right Pastor Teacher, even that to you for your benefit and in your interest.

Phil 3:16; However the objective or status to which we have already attained or reached in Super-Grace status, by that same function of the Grace Apparatus for Perception, let us under strict discipline, keep marching, advancing in step, with others, in ranks by means of enforced & genuine humility and academic discipline to the next objective of Ultra Super-Grace, by the same rule or standard or sphere of action or daily function under the Grace Apparatus for Perception with regard to the sum total of Bible Doctrine in the Canon of Scripture, in persistent Momentum in the Spiritual Life.

Phil 3:18-19; (Alternative to Effective Rebound for Believers); For many reversionistic believers keep walking from the past and making wrong decisions falling into various stages of reversionism and under the influence of evil, concerning, with reference to whom I have constantly, regularly, repeatedly communicated to ya'all honestly, faithfully many, many times and now, even though momentarily weeping for former friends and Christians, I continue, faithfully, to communicate that these not taking responsibility, have made themselves the enemies of the cross of That Same Christ. (1Sam 28:16) (The reversionists as enemies of the cross), Whose termination, cessation or conclusion of this life keeps on being or is ruin, the destruction which one experiences from administration of the Sin unto death discipline, whose god is his emotion in Emotional Revolt of the Soul and emotional arrogance, who have a way of life which is to glory in their shame or dishonor, or whose fame comes by cheating, lack of integrity and dishonor from involvement in the Cosmic Dynasphere #2, who keep on thinking and form and hold opinions about human viewpoint or earthly things being under the influence of evil from Satan's policy and plan.

Phil 3:21; who shall change or transform the form of the body of our humble station, contamination or humility (Old Sin Nature in our Human Body), into conformity with the Resurrection Body of his glory according to the operational power from which the same one, Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ, keeps on being able to bring into subjection all things to himself (Angelic and Human)

Phil 4:4; Keep on having and Sharing the perfect Happiness of God by means of the Lord at all times, once more I repeat the COMMAND, keep on having and Sharing the Happiness of God.

Phil 4:7; In fact that hidden spiritual prosperity of Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God, Super-Grace and Ultra Super-Grace from the source of The God, which rises above every human mind, thought or human capacity of thinking surpassing all understanding, will garrison or mount guard over and supply the logistics of Bravo Grace for the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of your Soul and your motivations or thoughts by means positional sanctification from the Baptism of God the Holy Spirit in Christ Jesus.

Phil 4:11-13; Not because I am speaking with reference to poverty or adversity for I have come to learn from Bible Doctrine, I am to keep on being self sufficient with contentment and happiness in whatever circumstances. In fact,

I have come to know both how to live in degradation or adversity and get along with humble means and I also know how to function in success or in prosperity in all places and all circumstances I have been instructed in the past with the result that this instruction stays with me, having learned the secret both how to be well fed or face plenty and hunger and how to prosper or be in abundance and how to be in poverty. "I can do everything through Him, Christ, who keeps on pouring the power into me". (Bible Doctrine)

Phil 4:19; And My God will keep on fulfilling your every need on the basis of the riches of his glory by agency of Christ Jesus.

Prov 1:22; How long silly ones totally involved in the details of life, will you fail to match my perfect standards, you inadequate nonexistent, reversionistic, stupid imbecilic, idiotic believers under constant Divine Discipline, how long will you be stupid ones and love ignorance or stupidity regarding Bible Doctrine? (Reversionism Stages 1-3) How long will you engage in thought patterns of stupid senseless babbling, where mockers delight themselves in mocking and scorners delight themselves in scorning and those ridiculing delighting themselves in ridiculing and dimly viewing Bible Doctrine? (Reversionism Stages 4-6) AND How Long stupid fools, who have great ability, perspicacity, high IQ, great personality, leadership ability, talent and physical ability and depends on these attributes which become weakness, will you have hatred or despising of knowledge of Bible Doctrine the STRENGTH of GOD and the discipline needed to acquire it.

Prov 3:3; Let not mercy or grace in action and truth of doctrine leave you; bind them about your neck or carry it with you constantly, write them on the tablet of your Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul as Metabolized Bible Doctrine.

Prov 3:7; "Do not become wise in your own eyes, fear the Lord and turn aside from evil".

Prov 3:12; for the LORD reproves him whom he loves, as a father the son in whom he delights.

Prov 3:13; Perfect happinesses, inner and overt, belongs to the man or person who finds or learns doctrine and develops wisdom as application from doctrine in the Right Lobe Stream of Consciousness of the Soul, and the man who gains understanding with Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Frame of Reference.

Prov 3:14-15; for the acquisition or profit of Bible Doctrine is better than the acquisition or profit of silver and the gain thereof is greater than the gain of fine gold. She, Bible Doctrine, is more precious than rubies or jewels, and all the things or details of life you can desire cannot compare with her.

Prov 3:31-32; Do not intensely envy or have intense jealousy of, the oppressor, bully or gossip, the man of violence and do not retaliate with his ways; for the perverted man minus Bible Doctrine, who has the details of life as his focus, is an abomination to the LORD, but his secret of Bible Doctrine is with the righteous.

Prov 3:33-35; The curse of the LORD's is on the house EVIL of the wicked carnal or arrogant believer constantly under the influence of Evil, the Family living constantly in the Cosmic Dynaspheres but he blesses the house of Establishment, the believer who has maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in his Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul dwelling with Logistical Grace and super-grace where there is the imputed Righteousness of God. He, the Lord, is caused to mock or ridicule, reject or discipline, makes war against the arrogant scorning scoffer who is habitually constantly indifferent to Bible Doctrine, but he gives GRACE to the humble believer. The wise who has teachability from function under enforced humility having developed genuine humility, who reaches Spiritual Maturity from Perception, Cognition, Inculcation and Metabolization and Application of Bible Doctrine will inherit honor or the reward of Divine Good in super-grace blessings, but fools who are in Interlocking System of Arrogance and Negative Volition to Bible Doctrine carry away dishonor and shame bringing life to ruin and misery.

Prov 3:34, He, the Lord, mocks or ridicules the arrogant scoffer, but he gives grace to the humble believer.

Prov 6:16-19; These are 6 things which the Lord hates or abhors this ugliness; yes 7 which are an abomination to his essence or attributes. Involvement in Interlocking System of Arrogance or pride (Mental Attitude Arrogance and Sins), a Lying Tongue (Verbal Sins); Murder or Hands which shed innocent blood (Overt Sins), Mutual Admiration Society forming Conspiracy or Revolt with the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul devising the thoughts of evil from the Interlocking System of Arrogance lacking discipline and interacting with sin or human good from Evil; Feet that are quick to run to Evil in reversionism forming conspiracy under Maladjustment to the Justice of God. A false witness who utters lies (perjury) or slanders (Verbal Sins); and a person who causes dissension and spreads discord among believers

Prov 6:32; But the one who keeps fornicating with the wrong woman is in a worse condition than the one having to restore financial loss because he is destitute in the Right Lobe of the Soul, he that seduces her corrupts his own soul with Scar Tissue of the Soul and Reverse Process Reversionism. Eph 4:18-19

Prov 6:34; For jealousy makes a man furious, and he will not spare when he takes revenge.

Prov 7:1-3; My son, keep my words and treasure up my commandments with you; keep my commandments and live, keep my teachings as the apple of your eye; bind them on your fingers, write them on the tablet of your heart.

Prov 8:13; The Fear or Respect for the Lord or Occupation with the Person of The Lord Jesus, The Christ is to HATE Evil. The pride of Evil in the Interlocking System of Arrogance also the Evil Modus Operandi, the perverted mouth involved in Evil and the Interlocking System of Arrogance (the liar who functions under delusion and uses lies to destroy another) I hate.

Prov 10:12; Hatred stirs up strife, but love covers all transgressions.

Prov 11:2; When pride as Mental Attitude Arrogance comes in via Interlocking System of Arrogance then comes dishonor, but in contrast, with the grace oriented (3 Categories) believers oriented to the Plan of God there is Wisdom from knowledge of or Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.

Prov 11:24-25; One man gives generously yet gains even more; another man is stingy and comes to poverty. A generous man will prosper, and he who refreshes others will himself be refreshed.

Prov 13:10; Through arrogance comes strife but wisdom is with those who receive instruction of Bible Doctrine

Prov 13:16-17; Every wise believer acts with Bible Doctrine but a fool or reversionist communicates foolishness. A wicked messenger falls into adversity or discipline for reversionism, but a faithful ambassador brings healing and Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God from proper witnessing.

Prov 14:12; There is a way, a lifestyle involving Activism which seems right to a person, but it's end is the way of Carnal Death

Prov 14:14; A perverse reversionistic man will be filled with the fruit of his own ways and finally begins to bore himself, and a good honorable mature believer from the Metabolized Bible Doctrine inside himself is not depending on emotion which depends on Metabolized Bible Doctrine in his Right Lobe.

Prov 14:30; Tranquility, Happiness a stabilized mentality in the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul from Metabolized Bible Doctrine is the life of the body, (Metabolized Bible Doctrine gives good health to the body) ; Mental Attitude Sins such as Envy or Jealousy is a rottenness to the bones (Poor health)

Prov 15:16; Better is a little reverence for the Lord than great wealth and misery.

Prov 15:17; Better is a horrible, unpalatable, dinner or dish of cabbage where category 1 love toward God or 2

Personal Love toward another, (gr) Agape Mental Attitude and (gr) Philos Rapport LOVE is; than a stall or grain fed fated ox and the perfect Chateaubriand or fillet steak accompanied by Hatred from Mental Attitude Arrogance and Mental Attitude Sins resulting in total misery.

Prov 15:33; The Respect for the Lord, Occupation with the Person of The Lord Jesus, The Christ, is the maximum instruction and accumulation of Metabolized Bible Doctrine leading to wisdom, and before honor there is the Humility of Grace Orientation.

Prov 16:18; Arrogance or Pride precedes destruction and before there is any kind of a fall there is a lifestyle of pride or arrogance of spirit in the Interlocking System of Arrogance the Strongest of Satanic Attacks.

Prov 16:23; The mind of the wise makes his speech judicious, and a Divine Dynasphere persuasiveness to his lips.

Prov 16:25; There is a way which seems right to a man, but its end is the way to death.

Prov 16:29; 29: A man of violence entices his neighbor and leads him in a way that is not good.

Prov 17:1-8; Better a dry crust with peace and quiet than a house full of feasting and strife; A slave who deals wisely will rule over a son who acts shamefully, and will share the inheritance as one of the brothers. The crucible is for silver, and the furnace is for gold, and the LORD tries hearts. An evildoer or liar listens to wicked lips; and a liar pays attention or listens to other liars. He who mocks the poor insults his Maker; he who is glad at calamity will not go unpunished. Grandchildren are the crown of the aged, and the glory of sons is their fathers. Excellent speech is not fitting for a senseless fool; much less is lying lips fitting to a national leader, ruler or prince with a code of honor. A bribe is like a magic stone in the eyes of him who gives it; wherever he turns he prospers.

Prov 17:11; A rebellious man seeks only evil.

Prov 18:22; Whosoever finds their right woman receives Grace from the Lord

Prov 22:8; He who sows wickedness reaps trouble and the rod of His (Gods) wrath is ready. (Supreme court function)

Prov 23:6-7; Do not eat the food of a selfish man who does not want to share his bounty with others; or desire his delicacies; for as a person thinks in the right lobe of his soul ([heb] nephesh = soul), so he is; He says to you "Eat and drink my food and beverage!"; but his Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul is not with you but in fact against you and despises you.

Prov 23:15-16; (Father now speaking to his son having disciplined him properly and applied Metabolized Bible Doctrine from his own Right Lobe) My son, if your Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul is wise having maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Frame of Reference and Norms and Standards resulting in Divine Viewpoint, my heart or Right Lobe will rejoice even my very own. Yes my reins or emotions shall rejoice when your lips speak what is doctrinal.

Prov 23:17; Do not let your Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul envy sinners, but respond to the Lord with occupation of the LORD all the day.

Prov 23:29; A persons arrogance will bring him low but a life style of humility will attain honor. (Self justification)

Prov 24:1; Be not continuously intensely envious or jealous of, or have ANY Mental Attitude Sins toward, the evil person, believer or unbeliever, who habitually lives under the Old Sin Nature and appears to profit by it and has the Human Viewpoint of life, because it will result in intense Self Induced Misery; neither extremely intensely



desire or long, without possibility of satiation, to be with them and participate in the details of life to the exclusion of Bible Doctrine;

Prov 24:19; Do not be continuously kindled or mentally burn with intense irrational anger or jealousy or envy yourself because of unbelievers or carnal believers influenced by evil who appear to be prosperous, having a good time or are successful or happy, do not be intermittently intensely jealous in spurts, of those who APPEAR to you to be wicked reversionists.

Prov 25:6-7; Do not put yourself forward, displaying your Mental Attitude Arrogance and pride, assuming equality and equal authority, in the presence of the king during a state banquet or royal function and stand not in the place at the head of the table with the higher ranking people in authority; for better it is to be told, "Come up here," than that you should be put lower in the presence of the prince whom your eyes have seen in jealousy, approbation or power lust.

Prov 26:12; See or observe a man who is wise in his own eyes with Mental Attitude Arrogance or Self Righteous pride and Mental Attitude Sins who is a trouble maker? There is more hope for the FOOL, the believer without Bible Doctrine, than for him.

Prov 27:3-4; The heaviness of a stone, The weight of sand, but a fool's anger is heavier than both. While Wrath is fierce or cruel and anger is outrageous or a flood, but who is able to stand before envy or jealousy.

Prov 28:13; He, the believer rejecting Bible Doctrine, who produces Human Good when he conceals or covers or intensely rationalizes his sins feeling sorry for them will not prosper, but he, the believer, who names, acknowledges, citing the case of the cross or throws the emphasis of his sins back to the cross where it was already judged and forgets the sins, will obtain mercy or compassion.

Prov 29:23; A persons arrogance will bring him low but a spirit of humility will attain honor.

Prov 31:25-28; Beauty and glamour of soul is her clothing, she shall laugh from being double graced by God from Bible Doctrine and her Right Man at the next day having a Relaxed Mental Attitude. Her mouth she opens with wisdom from bible doctrine, and on her tongue the law of grace, she has a capacity for life from Metabolized Bible Doctrine and can carry on an interesting conversation without vilification. She is alert to the way of her house administering a pleasant home for her Right Man and keeps it clean and organized. Her children arise up and bless her, call her blessed, her Lord, her Husband also praises her, She is loved by her children and husband.

Ps 5:8-9; Lead me, O LORD, in your grace righteousness because of my enemies; make your way smooth before me. There is nothing true in what they say; their soul or inner part is destruction from mental attitude sins, their throat is an open grave which stinks of the rotting corpse of their mental attitude sins, they flatter with their tongue.

Ps 8:3; When I look at thy heavens, the work of thy fingers, the moon and the stars which thou hast established;

Ps 10:2-4; In arrogance or pride the reversionist hotly pursues the afflicted; let them be trapped in the plots and conspiracies which they have devised. For the wicked reversionists have boasted over the desires of his Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul, and the criminal in arrogance has maligned the Laws of Divine Establishment and LORD. The wicked reversionist in the pride of his face does not seek him (God); in all his thoughts he says, "There is no thinking about God."

Ps 12:2-4; They, the Mutual Admiration Society, speak what they think in the form of evil, as motivation then application and function from the motivation, each one the arrogant, gossip and judger, to his friend, the inadequate one, vindicating themselves; the arrogant and inadequate speaks rationalizing or vindicating themselves with a lip of braggings or flatteries in order to or as they slander or destroy one in authority, and with a doubled Stream of Consciousness of the Soul do they speak, the reversionist under evil influence vindicating self making



Self Righteous Arrogance the self confidence of this evil person, motivating the functions of judging, slander, maligning and condemnation of others. Jehovah shall destroy or root out all flattering lips, the tongue of the reversionistic believers that speaks arrogant things from the motivation of the mental attitude sins of pride and arrogance etc. Who (the mutual admiration society) has thought or said, "With our tongue expressing judgment, slander and gossip we will overcome, prevail or put down, our lips are our own, we have a right or it is our duty to use our mouth to do this; who is lord or has authority over us?"

Ps 22:1; My God, My God why have you forsaken me?

Ps 23:4; Also, when in this life, I, *as a believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God*, walk through or in a valley overshadowed by physical death, I cannot, will not, and do not fear anything about the manner of my death, about harm, malignancy, sting of death, violence of death from another person's or any category of evil, because or since you, Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ as God, are with me (reciprocity), Your rod of Blessing from Divine discipline from the Justice of God and your staff of Blessing and protection from Divine Deliverance and Bible Doctrine from the Justice of God, They both console and comfort me.

Ps 23:6

v6: Emphatically, as the basis for confidence, benefit, good of intrinsic value, or prosperity and unfailing love or grace shall pursue me all the days of my life, and (when my life is over) I will dwell in the house of the Lord forever

Ps 25:8-9; The Plan of God depends on the Integrity of God; these together with the essence of God is perfect Divine Good, and Honorable is Jehovah, God the Father & God the Son & God the Holy Spirit; therefore he will cause to teach by discipline, the ones inclined to live by the Old Sin Nature producing Sin, Evil and Human Good, His ways or Modus Operandi. He guides or leads in the wagon tracks of righteousness (Ps23) the humble believer who avoids the Interlocking systems of Arrogance, through or by means of the Logistical Grace provision of Bible Doctrine from Justice of God and discipline, consequently he teaches, through constant repetition the positive believer with humility, his road or Path of Bible Doctrine and righteousness

Ps 27:4-6; One thing, which is my first priority, have I desired or asked or petitioned of the LORD, and that will I constantly seek after; in order that I may dwell permanently in blessing and relaxation, in the permanent house of the teaching of Bible Doctrine of the Lord, all the days of my life, in order that I may perceive and permanently understand the Glory and Grace of the Lord. For in the day of trouble or pressure or disaster, HE, God, in grace, will hide or conceal me as a treasure in the temporary shelter of his promises; in the secret or prophetic nature of his categorical doctrines (especially christology & sotierology) he will hide or conceal me, he has stabilize me up high upon the rock of salvation with blessing and Eternal Security. And now (even as a fugitive) I will be promoted above my enemies who are all around me and try to destroy me; and I will offer in his tabernacle Levitical sacrifices of joy and I will spontaneously sing alone; I will also play the string instrument and sing and make music to the LORD.

Prov 29:23; A persons arrogance will bring him low through involvement in the Cosmic Dynaspheres but a life of humility in the Divine Dynasphere will attain honor.

Ps 31:7; I will rejoice overtly and have inner happiness in your mercy or grace in action and steadfast love because you have seen my affliction and you have taken heed of the troubles of my soul, my adversities.

Ps 32:5; I will acknowledge or name or cite or cause to make know my sin to you God the Father and my guilt or sin I opened up to you OR I did not or WILL NOT cover up or hide my guilt or sin or depraved action, and I have decided or said to myself "I have been caused to acknowledge or cite or name my transgression to the Lord", and YOU completely forgave or lifted up and carried away the Guilt or Depravity of my sin in Interlocking System of Arrogance. Selah, NOW REST and THINK ABOUT IT while GOD acts in Logistical Grace.

Ps 33:18-19; Behold the eye of the Lord is on them (Believers) who are occupied with or respect, fear, stand in

awe of him, on those who have confidence or trust in his unfailing love or grace. To rescue or deliver their soul from death (dying grace) and to keep them alive in economic depression or historical disaster (or other adversity or suffering).

Ps 35:8; Let destruction come upon him unawares; and let the net which he hid catch himself; into that very destruction let him fall.

Ps 37:1-2; {An acrostic Psalm of David} Do not fret, become resentful, no mental attitude sins, or react yourself because of evildoers the Unbeliever reversionist who habitually lives under the Old Sin Nature and is a “NICE GUY” but break out of this mental attitude sin process, do not become intensively envious or jealous toward wrongdoers! For the apparently prosperous unbeliever will soon (relative to eternity) be circumcised, cut down like the grass and wither and be dead like the green herb (2nd death).

Ps 37:4-5; Make coquettish love to the Lord being totally occupied with the Person of Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ, and he will give you the deepest desires of the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of your Soul. Roll your whole pack of troubles onto the LORD; Slam your troubles onto him and leave it there, and he will do or bring to pass the work of Divine Good solutions and blessing.

Ps 37:24; When or although he, the Super-grace Believer, falls into carnality and the Cosmic Dynaspheres, he shall not be completely or utterly cast down, he cannot lose his salvation, because the Lord is the one who sustains him with his hands of gracious giving for both Temporal Security and Eternal Security.

Ps 38:1-6; Oh lord do not cause me to be punished in your anger, or discipline me in your wrath, (This was post Bathsheba Discipline), for your arrows have sunk deep into me causing inner pain and your hand has come down on me hard causing surface pain. Because of your wrath there is no health in my body, there is no health in my bones because of my sin. For my iniquities have passed through my head moving into psychosis, like a heavy burden of mental pressure of guilt and psychosis, they are too heavy for me. My wounds have a bad odor and stink psychologically from complaining or moping, they have festered in my state of being smart but foolish from arrogance (He made the decisions which caused the trouble), I am bent (but not broken), I am bowed down very low, I am humbled or shriveled by discipline, all the day my manner of life is meaningless or constantly dark (worst part of Divine Discipline).

Ps 38:8; I am debilitated and terribly feeble, I scream because of the groaning of my Right Lobe

Ps 38:18; (his Halt) Therefore I will admit, cite, name, declare or acknowledge all my sin (not Human Good nor Evil), because of your grace, I am worried troubled, concerned, uneasy because of my sin against You (God)

Ps 51:1-4; Have mercy on me, O God, according to your steadfast love, mercy or grace policy; according to the greatness of your compassion blot out my transgressions. Wash away all my iniquity, and cleanse me from my sin! For I acknowledge my transgressions, and my sin is continually before me constantly in my face from what occurs in my installment discipline. Against you and you only, Oh God, I have sinned, I have manufactured from Interlocking System of Arrogance what is evil in your sight, so that you are vindicated when you speak in judgment and justified when you pronounced judgment and perfect when you render a judicial decision.

Ps 56:1-2; Be gracious to me Oh God for people keep snapping at me (vilification and revenge Modus Operandi). All day long my enemies are attacking me, they are many who fight against me in Arrogance.

Ps 56:3+4; The Day that I am constantly afraid I will trust in you and in your doctrine, slamming my troubles on you in faith to stabilize my thinking. In God, I will praise or believe his doctrine, in God and his doctrine I have put my trust without any fear. What can man do to me?

Ps 56:5-10; Every day they distort my words everything I say; all their thoughts are against me for evil with hatred, jealousy implacability and every Mental Attitude Sin possible. They incite a mob against me, they stalk

me and seek to ambush me, they stalk me while I am still free to walk the city. And they wait for a chance to kill me, Because of iniquity, nothingness, my reversionism there is no deliverance for them who attack the reversionist, they shall not escape; in anger cast down the philistine peoples, O Elohim! You have kept track of or written my fugitive life in reversionism in Nob and Gath; my tears are being put in your bottle as your mourning! Are they not in your book as warnings that recovery is only from Perception, Cognition, Inculcation, Metabolization & Application of Bible Doctrine? Then my enemies will be turned back or fall back in the day when I call in reversion recovery. In This I have confidence, that Elohim is for me. In Elohim (the Trinity), I will praise doctrine, in the Jehovah Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ I will praise doctrine,

Ps 66:18

v18: If I cherish sin or regard wickedness in the right lobe of the stream of consciousness of my soul, the Lord will not hear me nor listen to me, when I pray.

Ps 69:22-23; Let their own table of their spiritual heritage or their Modus Operandi or Modus Vivendi become a snare to them; and with reference to their prosperity let it become a trap. Let their eyes be darkened in the Big Blot Out, that they see not being blinded to truth; and cause their loins to tremble continually being deprive of reason or thought because of fear or cowardice, or have Central Nervous System break down.

Ps 73:21-22; Thus my heart or Right Lobe was grieved based on knowledge in the Frame of Reference, norms and standards and viewpoint, when I was pricked or stuck in my emotions, I was stupid and ignorant, I was like a beast toward you.

Ps 77:1-10; For the music director, according to the style of Jeduthun, the Kings Seer a prophet and teacher of doctrine; a Psalm of Asaph. My voice to Elohim, Triune God, to Elohim I continuously scream or cry aloud from the depths of despair in intense suffering, My voice unto Elohim even God as a result of the intensity of my suffering and He was caused to give ear or listen to me because of Grace. In the day of my extreme trouble, distress, catastrophe or adversity I diligently and sincerely sought the Lord my sovereign master in the night. My hand is stretched forth in begging and supplication in the night and my hands did not at any time ever become slack or weary in my seeking; my soul refused, was unwilling to receive, rejected consolation or comfort as a result of being in reversionism. I wanted and tried to remember Elohim but was too agitated, upset, disturbed in the Emotional Revolt of the Soul of reversionism, I kept on complaining and my Human Spirit fainted and was overwhelmed having brought this on myself . [Selah] You, God, hold the guards of my eyes, my eyelids, open in insomnia; I am so deeply, terribly disturbed or troubled that I cannot speak coherently from confusion of mind, as Divine Discipline; I have from thoughts put together evaluated, considered the days of old, of the deliverance of the Jews at the Red Sea, the years of ancient times, (better and happier days under Bible Doctrine). I will try to call to remembrance my song accompanied by stringed instruments in the night as moments of past happiness, special good times of the past; I kept on complaining in my Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul which was devoid of the inner resources of Bible Doctrine, I made a most vigorous diligent inquiry into my human spirit finding no Bible Doctrine. (Scar Tissue of the Soul) "Will the Lord reject, or thrust me away forever, removing my salvation, and will he not ever cause to enlarge, increase or be gracious to me or to take pleasure in me again? (Emotional Revolt of the Soul) Has his steadfast love or grace in action ceased forever? Has his word or doctrine failed or come to an end, from one generation to another? (Reversionism) Has God neglected or forgotten to be gracious? Has he in anger closed down or withdrawn his mercies compassion?" [Selah, I Rest from exhaustion] Then I said, "This reversionism with Frantic Search for happiness, Emotional Revolt of the Soul, Blackout of the Soul, Scar Tissue of the Soul and intensified pressure from escalating Divine Discipline makes me sick or causes me physical Illness, Oh for the years of function under the Grace Apparatus for Perception, of the right hand of the Most High, the Edification Complex of the Soul, Grace Orientation, Relaxed Mental Attitude, Capacity for Life, Sharing the Happiness of God and Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God, (which in intensive Divine Discipline has changed)."

Ps 77:11-20 (Reversion recovery); I will be caused to remember in reversion recovery from persistent Perception, Cognition, Inculcation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine, the grace deeds of the LORD on behalf of man; because or on account of reversion recovery I will remember from the former times your wonderful ways of grace

deliverance at the Red Sea. I will meditate or concentrate on the teaching of Bible Doctrine, all your wages or payoff of grace at the red sea deliverance, I will no longer complain but change converting complaints into Divine doctrinal Viewpoint concerning your doings, your actions, your functions; I will in recovery, even discourse on your deeds. Oh Elohim your way is Holiness. Who is great like Elohim? You and only you God the Father, The El or GOD, who constantly manufactures out of grace answers for the reversionist, a wonderful thing, the red sea deliverance & my reversion recovery, you have caused to make known your grace omnipotence among the people Israel. You have redeemed or freed from slavery in Egypt and delivered at the red sea with your arm your people, the sons of Jacob and Joseph. [Selah-Pause] The waters of the red sea or marsh sea saw you, Oh Elohim, God the Father, God the Son, God the Holy Spirit, The waters saw you, they danced, twisting and turning back upon the Egyptian Armor of Pharaoh destroying them, the depths were agitated boiling back onto the path. (Parenthesis) The dense clouds with water, Bible Teachers with Doctrine, intensely poured down water, teaching Bible Doctrine intensely; the skies gave out a voice of Thunder, the communication of Bible Doctrine by Moses and his voice commands to the Jews (Ex14:13-14) and in singing (Ex 15:1-19); your arrows or catapult stones or lightning shoot every which way, here and there, scattered everywhere missing the mark, with no one paying attention. The voice of your extremely clear thunderous teaching of Bible Doctrine is in the whirlwind of the unstable believer in Emotional Revolt of the Soul ; your lightning flashes illuminate the inhabited earth of the Jews; the Earth trembled and the Earth quaked. In the Red Sea your way, your Grace path in mighty waters; the grace markings of your footprints as a result of holding back the red sea, were not understood. (Parenthesis Closed) You have led your people like a flock of dumb sheep by the strong authoritative hand of Moses and Aaron.

Ps 89:15-17; Happinesses to the people or nation who keep knowing from one generation to the next, the sound or blast of the trumpet in universal military training or WAR, Oh Jehovah, they shall march and advance while concentrating and thinking in discipline in the light or doctrine of your face or presence or countenance. They shall express happiness in your person all day long from Occupation with the Person of Christ, and in your imputed righteousness they shall be happy or exalted. For you, The Lord Jesus, The Christ, are the object of glorying of their power of Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul; because by your Grace You will cause us to be promoted.

Ps 96:5; For all the gods of the peoples are idols; but the LORD made the heavens.

Ps 104:30; When thou sendest forth thy Spirit, they are created; and thou renewest the face of the ground.

Ps 106:37-39; They even sacrificed their sons and their daughters to the demons; they shed innocent blood, the blood of their sons and daughters, whom they sacrificed to the idols of Canaan; consequently the land was polluted with the blood of human sacrifice. Therefore they became unclean in their function of demon possession, and played the prostitute in the phallic cult by their deeds of human sacrifice.

Ps 109:6-13; Appoint a wicked man against him; let an accuser bring him to trial. When he is tried, let him come forth guilty; let his prayer be counted as sin! May his days be few; may another seize his goods! May his children be fatherless, and his wife a widow! May his children wander about and beg; may they be driven out of the ruins they inhabit! May the creditor seize all that he has; may strangers plunder the fruits of his toil! Let there be none to extend kindness to him, nor any to pity his fatherless children! May his posterity be cut off; may his name be blotted out in the second generation!

Ps 116:15; Precious, the number 1 priority, in the sight of the lord is the death of his set apart Godly ones in Maturity Adjustment

Ps 118:22; The ROCK, Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ, which the builders rejected, the Jewish Nation separated from the Integrity of God at the 1<sup>st</sup> advent, have totally rejected, has become the head of the corner or corner stone, head of Israel son of David and ruler of the church (Acts 4:11-12, 1Pet 2:4, Mk 12:10).

Ps 144:15; Happinesses of super-grace belongs to the people who are in such status of super-grace!



Happiness belongs to the people whose God is the The Lord Jesus, The Christ!

Rev 1:7-8; Now Behold or Consider or Listen carefully and remember with concentration and perception under Filling of God the Holy Spirit, He, Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ, will certainly return to the earth coming with clouds of innumerable people in great armies who will return with him at the 2<sup>nd</sup> advent, and every set of eyes of every person living on the earth will see him in omega glory, every Jew in the category of those Jews of history involved in the Big Blot Out specifically of the tribulation (Zech 12:12, John 19:37) who have pierced him; and all tribes of Jews, with reference to the promised land, shall beat their breasts in extreme mourning and tribulation and wail in lamentation over him. Yes, I believe it. "I, Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ the God of Israel and only savior, always have been and always will be the Alpha God of Israel and the Omega savior in Hypostatic Union," says the Unique Lord Our God (Kurios ho Theos == Adanai Eloheanu), both He who is; Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ in Hypostatic Union in the 1<sup>st</sup> advent; and He who was from Eternity Past Eternal God and is certainly coming at the 2<sup>nd</sup> advent in Hypostatic Union the unique omnipotent all powerful one the alpha and omega.

Rev 3:1; I know your production says the lord to the church, you have a reputation which you are living but you are dead from prolonged carnality.

Rev 3:14-20; "And to the messenger, future pastors of the church in La-odice'a write: `The Amen, The Lord Jesus, The Christ the only savior, the God of doctrine and who controls human history, the faithful and true witness in the 1<sup>st</sup> Advent of the Grace of God, the ruler prince of God's creation of the Royal Family of God in the Church Age, communicates these things. I am cognizant of, have known your behavior and production in the Christian Modus Vivendi and Modus Operandi in the doctrinal content of your Stream of Consciousness of the Soul, that you are neither cold (unbelievers) nor hot (Mature Believers in the Divine Dynasphere). Oh would that you were either cold, unbelievers, or hot, Mature believers. So therefore because you are Lukewarm reversionistic believers in the Cosmic Dynaspheres and carnal, apostate, evil servants of satan, in fact neither cold, unbelievers, nor hot, mature believers, I am about to vomit you out of my mouth administering the Sin unto death. Because you say, I am rich, I have prospered, in fact I have become very wealthy in the prosperity test, and I need nothing (Flunking the Prosperity Test with Wrong priorities); In fact you do not know that you are miserable without capacity for prosperity living in the Cosmic Dynaspheres, and despicable, insignificant, pitiful no happiness from prosperity living in the Cosmic Dynaspheres and impotent, poor, beggarly with spiritual poverty and weakness in the Cosmic Dynasphere lacking capacity for prosperity, and blind without Perception, Cognition, Incultation and Metabolization and Application of Bible Doctrine in the Cosmic Dynasphere, and naked without uniform of honor with no virtue nor integrity in the Cosmic Dynasphere. Therefore I, The Lord Jesus, The Christ through John, counsel or advise you for your benefit, to begin to buy or purchase, for re-entrance into the Divine Dynasphere from Perception, Cognition, Incultation and Metabolization and Application of Bible Doctrine, from me something of value manufactured from the gold of Bible Doctrine the thinking of The Lord Jesus, The Christ, refined though the HEAT of FIRE of inspiration and canonicity, in order that you may potentially become spiritually and materially prosperous in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace, and to wear white garments of the uniform of honor preceding the eternal uniform of glory in order that you may clothe yourself residing in the Divine Dynasphere, and by so doing the terrible shame, embarrassment and confusion of your disgraceful, horrible, spiritual nakedness, lacking the uniform of honor while residing in the Cosmic Dynaspheres in time may not be revealed at the Judgment Seat of Jesus Christ, and colirium the eye salve of historical trends to rub in your eyes for the understanding of historical trends over a period of time. Those whom I love, I punish and correct by Divine Discipline; therefore being lukewarm in reversionism, GET HOT, REPENT or change your mind about Bible Doctrine and recover and advance to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God. Behold, I have stood at the door and keep on knocking with warning Divine Discipline; if any one has heard my voice in Bible Doctrine and has opened the door through daily function under the Grace Apparatus for Perception, I will enter face to face with him and have dinner or fellowship with him, and he with me.

Rev 12:4; Then his Tail (Power) dragged him away (Presalvation revolution in heaven) and 1/3 of the stars of heaven (Fallen Angels) in fact he God threw them away from heaven and down to Earth. And the dragon (Satan) stood before the Woman (Virgin Mary) anticipating the Child in order that when she gave birth He (Satan) might devour or destroy the Child ( Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ )



Rev 13:6; And he, the dictator of the Revived Roman Empire, and he opened his mouth in blasphemies against God, to slander or blaspheme his name and person and his memorial tabernacle to the Substitutionary Spiritual Death of Christ in heaven, and those believers especially Jews, who tabernacle in heaven.

Rev 16:13; And I saw 3 unclean evil spirits, kosmokrator demons, causing a bad smell of demon possession in the world like the plague frogs of Egypt (Ex 8:14), small with a big voice or public speakers with nothing behind them, to persuade through conspiracy deceiving the rulers of the entire world, to invade Palestine (Eph 6:12, Dan 10:13, 20), out of the mouth of the dragon or Satan the great slanderer and out from the mouth of the wild beast dictator ruler of the revived roman empire the united states of western Europe and out from the eloquent speech of the mouth of the false prophet dictator of Palestine and the Antichrist; 3 unclean spirits like frogs came forth.

Rev 16:14; For these kosmokrators are and always will be the invisible spirits of demons performing extra natural phenomenon, miracles or miraculous signs, who go abroad as satanic ambassadors to gather the kings of the entire earth, to gather or mobilize or assemble them in the middle east, for the battle, war or campaign to destroy Israel the Armageddon campaign on the day of the great war of that God, The Lord Jesus, The Christ the Omnipotent one at the 2<sup>nd</sup> advent.

Rev 17:1-5; Then one of the seven angels who had the seven bowls came and said to me, "Come, I will show you the judgment of the great harlot who is seated upon many waters, with whom the kings of the earth have committed fornication, and with the wine of whose fornication the dwellers on earth have become drunk." And he carried me away in the Spirit into a wilderness, and I saw a woman sitting on a scarlet beast which was full of blasphemous names, and it had seven heads and ten horns. The woman was arrayed in purple and scarlet, and bedecked with gold and jewels and pearls, holding in her hand a golden cup full of abominations and the impurities of her fornication; and on her forehead was written a name of mystery: "Babylon the great, mother of harlots and of earth's abominations."

Rev 19:11-15; Then I saw heaven opened (2<sup>nd</sup> advent), and behold, a white horse! He who sat upon it is called Faithful and True, and in righteousness he judges and wages war. His eyes are like flame and fire, and on his head are many crowns or diadems of Kings; and he has a name inscribed on him which no one knows except himself. He is clothed in a military cloak or robe dipped in blood, and the name by which he is called is "ho logos", The Word of God. And the armies of heaven, arrayed in fine linen, white and clean, followed him on white horses. From his mouth comes a sharp sword with which to smite the nations, and he will rule them with a rod of iron; he will tread the wine press of the fierce wrath of God the Almighty.

Rev 20:10-15; Then the devil code named Gog who has deceived them, Magog (Millennial unbelievers) were also thrown into the lake of fire burning with sulfur where both the beast (dictator of the Revived Roman empire) and the false prophet (Jew who was False Messiah) were located, and they will be tormented day and night forever in the lake of fire. Then I saw a great white throne and him who sat upon it; from his presence earth and sky fled away or were destroyed, and no place was found for them in the eternal state. And I saw the Dead (Unbelievers at the Last Judgement) the Great (Older or higher rank who had longer time on earth) and Small (Younger or Lower Rank who had little time on earth) and these are standing before the throne (JC is the Judge) and the Books of works or Human Good were Opened, and another kind of Book was opened, which was the Book of Life, and the dead were judged on the basis of what was written in the books (Book of Works vs Book of Life) on the basis of or with reference to their works or deeds. The Sea Gave up it's dead (drown unbelievers), Death and Hades gave up the dead which were in them (those unbelievers died and went there), and they were judged on the basis of their works or deeds. And Death and Hades were thrown into the lake of fire, this is the 2<sup>nd</sup> death, the Like of Fire. When (if) anyone's name was NOT found written in the Book of Life, he was thrown into the lake of fire.

Rev 21:6; And he said to me, "It is accomplished, time is over! I am the Alpha and the Omega, the beginning (John 1:1) and the end. I will give to those who thirst from the springs of the water of life without cost.

Rev 22:13; I am the Alpha and the Omega, the first and the last, the beginning and the end."

Rom 1:18-32; Because Just Moral Anger, protecting from evil, from God, is being revealed from the Supreme Court of Heaven against all acts or thoughts of nongodliness (Ungodly), and AntiJustice of mankind from Salvation Maladjustment to the Justice of God, heathenism, of those who suppress or reject the Truth of God or the Salvation Gospel, through Antijustice Unrighteousness of salvation maladjustment to the Justice of God, Because, the reason for the wrath of God due to Negative Volition at God Consciousness and Gospel Hearing, what is known about The God, Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ, at God Consciousness, is conspicuous, manifest, evident, perceived and perspicuous, clearly understood, within them, or Revealed in their soul. For THE God made it evident or has revealed himself to them for their advantage (Unbelievers - 5 systems of perception or mechanics of God Consciousness). for since the creation of the world his own invisible attributes, his eternal power, his divine nature or the Essence of God have been clearly perceived being perspicuous and clearly understood through things which he has created, namely both his eternal power the omnipotence of God, and his divine nature or essence, for the purpose of being or so that they, the whole Human Race, are without excuse or defense against the Justice of God at God consciousness. Because (the reason for the wrath of God toward those maladjusted to the Justice of God at salvation) when they knew God as a result of the common grace ministry of God the Holy Spirit at gospel hearing, they did not honor with Positive Volition and Faith alone in Christ as God, nor did they feel obligated to thank him, in fact as a result of their negative volition or maladjustment to the Justice of God, they received worthless evil thoughts in their evil deliberations or rationalizations, and their deliberately ignorant right lobe receives darkness in the past and present. Although they claimed to be wise they became fools, saltless, insipid [These are Smart People who are DUMB] their right Lobe receives darkness although they claimed to be wise. And they, the unbeliever reversionists, exchanged the Glory or Essence of the Incorruptible, Imperishable, Eternal God for an image or copy in the form or appearance of corruptible, mortal, perishable mankind, and soaring birds and powerful quadrupeds and snakes and reptiles resulting in degenerate Humanizing of God. Therefore, as a result of the maladjustment to the Justice of God as unbeliever reversionism, the Justice of God handed or delivered them over to judgment, in the various multiple lusts of the Right Lobes of the Stream of Consciousness of their Soul; to impurity, immorality, sexual promiscuity, uncleanness, namely alienation from God, that their own bodies might be degraded or dishonored among themselves. For they unbeliever reversionists who exchanged the Truth of the Gospel of The God for the Lie or false assertions of evil satanic doctrines, and they showed reverence or respect or ritual worship of demonism, possession, human sacrifice, etc and served the Creature Satan or his perversions to their disadvantage, instead of or rather than the Creator, the Lord, Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ, who is blessed and whose integrity and all attributes are inviolable forever; Amen, I believe it with total confidence and am sure of the truth of it. Because of this, Negative Volition rejection of the truth of the doctrine of the gospel at God Consciousness and / or Gospel Hearing, The Justice of God in action, handed them, who are maladjusted to the Justice of God, over for judgment, not stopping their sins, to dishonorable, disgraceful, degenerate, degrading passions of sexual perversions. For not only their degenerate females exchanged the natural or normal function of the woman in sex with a man for that which is unnatural or contrary to natural function in Lesbianism. But also in the same manner even the degenerate or perverted males after they abandoned the natural or normal function of sex with the female, through deliberate volition, burned or become inflamed in their sexual lust or desire one toward another, males with homosexual males working out homosexual lusts from the past accomplishing perverted shameless acts and duly receiving back in their own persons the DUE or JUST penalty or judgment of their perversion which was inevitable from the Justice of God. And since or in so far as they, the unbeliever reversionist, rejected with Negative Volition after testing or examining in full knowledge the epignosis gospel and having the God at God Consciousness, resulting in maladjustment to the Justice of God causing unbeliever reversionism, The God, Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ, delivered or handed them over for judgment, in time and eternity, to a worthless mind filled with satanic evil, destroying their genius, to do those evil things which are not proper. Having been or being saturated or fully possessed or influenced by all anti justice through salvation maladjustment to the Justice of God; By Cat I intentional practice of evil wickedness in a state of evil; By Cat II inordinate desire of any kind such as greed, insatiability, avariciousness in the Frantic Search for Happiness; By Cat III depravity or degeneracy, malignity, function of evil, quality of evil, outworking or practice of all EVIL; including being full of jealousy, full of murder, full of strife, full of discord, full of contentiousness, full of dissension, troublemakers accompanied by and full of treachery as instinctive cunning or intelligent deliberate deceit, full of evil craftiness, they have become slanderers or gossips. They are backbiters, maligners,

detractors, gossips, slanderers haters of God, violently insolent, haughtily arrogant, disrespectful, implacable, overbearing, boastfully presumptuous, braggards, fabricators or contrivers of evil, with reference to parents disobedient ones, Evils of Socialism without understanding related to Laws of Divine Establishment or any spiritual connotation, senseless, foolish, stupid, ignorant ones with Black Out of the Soul, contract breakers, faithless, perfidious lacking personal integrity, untrustworthy, without natural affection, unloving, devoid of love instincts, unmerciful, unsympathetic, uncompassionate, inexorable, never pacified or appeased or reconciled to authority, Such are those unbeliever reversionists, who completely and fully with total cognizance and perception know the ordinances or legal requirements of the Justice of God as the gospel of Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ along with Establishment or Doctrinal Truth, that those who practice such evil reversionistic things of heathenism from the past through the present keep on being deserving of physical Death through maximum justice from the Justice of God as the Sin Unto Death, (Rom 13); these unbeliever reversionists not only do the same things but also continue to give hardy endorsement or approval to those who also practice them. (this demands execution)

Rom 1:21; Because (the reason for the wrath of God toward those maladjusted to the Justice of God at salvation) when they knew God as a result of the common grace ministry of God the Holy Spirit at gospel hearing, they did not honor with Positive Volition and Faith alone in Christ as God, nor did they feel obligated to thank him, in fact as a result of their negative volition or maladjustment to the Justice of God, they received worthless evil thoughts in their evil deliberations or rationalizations, and their deliberately ignorant right lobe receives darkness in the past and present.

Rom 1:23; and they, the unbeliever reversionists, exchanged the Glory or Essence of the Incorruptible, Imperishable, Eternal God for an image or copy in the form or appearance of corruptible, mortal, perishable mankind, and soaring birds and powerful quadrupeds and snakes and reptiles resulting in degenerate Humanizing of God.

Rom 1:26-27; Because of this, Negative Volition rejection of the truth of the doctrine of the gospel at God Consciousness and / or Gospel Hearing, The Justice of God in action, handed them, who are maladjusted to the Justice of God, over for judgment, not stopping their sins, to dishonorable, disgraceful, degenerate, degrading passions of sexual perversions. For not only their degenerate females exchanged the natural or normal function of the woman in sex with a man for that which is unnatural or contrary to natural function in Lesbianism. But also in the same manner even the degenerate or perverted males after they abandoned the natural or normal function of sex with the female, through deliberate volition, burned or become inflamed in their sexual lust or desire one toward another, males with homosexual males working out homosexual lusts from the past accomplishing perverted shameless acts and duly receiving back in their own persons the DUE or JUST penalty or judgment of their perversion which was inevitable from the Justice of God.

Rom 1:28; And just as they did not see fit to have God in their knowledge any longer [negative volition at God-consciousness], God delivered them over to a depraved mind to do the things that are not proper

Rom 1:29-32; Having been or being saturated or fully possessed or influenced by all anti justice through salvation maladjustment to the Justice of God; By Cat I intentional practice of evil wickedness in a state of evil; By Cat II inordinate desire of any kind such as greed, insatiability, avariciousness in the Frantic Search for Happiness; By Cat III depravity or degeneracy, malignity, function of evil, quality of evil, outworking or practice of all EVIL; including being full of jealousy, full of murder, full of strife, full of discord, full of contentiousness, full of dissension, troublemakers accompanied by and full of treachery as instinctive cunning or intelligent deliberate deceit, full of evil craftiness, they have become slanderers or gossips. They are backbiters, maligners, detractors, gossips, slanderers haters of God, violently insolent, haughtily arrogant, disrespectful, implacable, overbearing, boastfully presumptuous, braggards, fabricators or contrivers of evil, with reference to parents disobedient ones, Evils of Socialism, without understanding related to Laws of Divine Establishment or any spiritual connotation, senseless, foolish, stupid, ignorant ones with Black Out of the Soul, contract breakers, faithless, perfidious lacking personal integrity, untrustworthy, without natural affection, unloving, devoid of love instincts, unmerciful, unsympathetic, uncompassionate, inexorable, never pacified or appeased or reconciled to authority, Such are those unbeliever reversionists, who completely and fully with total cognizance and perception know the ordinances or



legal requirements of the Justice of God as the gospel of Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ along with Establishment or Doctrinal Truth, that those who practice such evil reversionistic things of heathenism from the past through the present keep on being deserving of physical Death through maximum justice from the Justice of God as the Sin Unto Death, (Rom 13); these unbeliever reversionists not only do the same things but also continue to give hardy endorsement or approval to those who also practice them. (this demands execution)

Rom 2:1; Therefore for this reason, the Justice of God judging heathenism, you keep on being inexcusable, without excuse, without defense before the Supreme Court of Heaven, oh man, everyone of you, double standard Self Righteous people, who keep on gossiping, maligning and judging another; for in which sphere you pass judgment upon another, the immoral or heathenistic person, you condemn yourself, because you who keep judging are practicing the same things.

Rom 2:22-24; You Self Righteous ones who keep on saying that a man under the law must not fornicate (Ex 20:14), do you fornicate? You who constantly or persistently are disgusted by or abhor or detest or despise idols, do you rob idol temple banks or treasuries? You Self Righteous arrogant legalistic people who habitually boast in the law, through violation of the law do you dishonor The God? Consequently, "The Reputation or Integrity of The God, because of you Self Righteous arrogant legalistic ones, constantly keeps on being slandered, maligned, blasphemed among the individual Gentiles or nations", just as it stands written with results that go on forever (Is 52:5).

Rom 3:20; Therefore by means of the works of the law, no flesh or human being shall ever be vindicated or justified before or in the presence of the Integrity of God, for through the Mosaic Law is full knowledge or consciousness or discovery of sin.

Rom 3:21-28; But now the Righteousness of God as part of the Integrity of God, apart from the law has been revealed or made known, being confirmed by the law and the prophets in the Old Testament Scripture. That is the Absolute Righteousness of God, part of the Integrity of God, through faith in Jesus Christ for everyone in the Human Race who express nonmeritorious faith. (Parenthesis) For there is no distinction between spiritually dead Jews or Gentiles; All mankind have done wrong or sinned and come short of the glory of the Essence of God (Parenthesis) Receiving vindication or justification gratuitously as a gift without payment by means of the instrumentality of his consistent grace, through or by means of the redemption or purchase of slaves or by paying ransom, which is in Christ Jesus. Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ whom The God the Father has appointed or publicly displayed or predetermined that which propitiates or expiates, as The Mercy Seat of the Ark of the Covenant, through faith in Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ as instant Adjustment to the Justice of God, by means of his blood the work of Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ bearing our sins and being judged by God the Father. For a demonstration of his, God the Father's Righteousness  $\frac{1}{2}$  of His Integrity, because of the passing over of the previously committed sins from the Old Testament Scripture times because of the holding back or delay of judgment or clemency from The God Face to face with or For a demonstration of his Righteousness  $\frac{1}{2}$  of the Integrity of God at the present decisive epoch of time of crisis the Church Age where Israel cannot be a client nation, in order that he might be just having consistency of justice, even when he justifies, vindicates or declares righteous anyone by means of or anyone who has faith in Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ. Where then, considering what has been stated before, is that boasting? It has been shut off or shut out or excluded in the past and is continually or perpetually. By what principle or rule governing our actions is boasting excluded? By that principle of works? Definitely NOT but by the principle of faith. Therefore we, mature believers strictly logically conclude expressing the facts without emotion then that mankind is justified or vindicated acquiring the Righteousness of God by faith alone in Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ alone apart from or without the deeds or works of law.

Rom 4:2; For supposing or assuming that Abraham has been justified or vindicated by means of works of every action of keeping the law (it is not true), he has grounds or a basis for boasting around people but not face to face or before or in the presence of God.

Rom 5:10; (Reconciliation Afortori); For if while we were hostile enemies we were reconciled and changed toward The God by means of the Substitutionary Spiritual Death of his Son, and it is true, much more to a greater

degree, having been reconciled, we shall be delivered in or by means of his life having a resurrection body in ultimate sanctification

Rom 5:12; Therefore in conclusion or for this reason, just as through one man, ADAM, THE Original Sin of Adam and THE Old Sin Nature, entered into the world, (created originally with the universe and after its destruction as a result of the Angelic Conflict restored for man), and so THE Spiritual Death through Adam's Original Sin imputed to the Old Sin Nature and so this spiritual death from Adam's Original Sin spread, through Adam & Subsequent Procreation and Pregnancies, to all mankind, because all the Human Race sinned genetically or in a point of time when Adam sinned and Acquired the Old Sin Nature.

Rom 6:12; Therefore STOP letting the Old Sin Nature to continue ruling, after Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God, with absolute sovereignty or authority in your mortal bodies, that you should obey the same Old Sin Nature with its trends toward sin, Human Good and Evil.

Rom 6:13; Neither or do not, place your body's members, including your hands, feet, tongue and brain, under orders as weapons of unrighteousness, in sin, Human Good or evil, in service to the Old Sin Nature; but consistently place yourselves, through the chain of command of Bible Doctrine, under orders to the God as those who are perpetually alive, under Retroactive and Current Positional Truth, from deaths, and the members of your body, including your brain, as weapons of righteousness to the God.

Rom 6:19; I am speaking or communicating dogmatically using this perfect human illustration of slavery, because of the weakness, sickness, infirmity or imperfection of your FLESH the Old Sin Nature. For just as you have from physical birth to Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God, have yielded or put your human body and soul members under orders as slaves to the impurity, anarchy or lawlessness of the Mental Attitude Sins, Old Sin Nature's lusts and trends toward Sin and Human Good resulting in anarchy or lawlessness of evil, even so now, after Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God with Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul as believer ambassadors for The Lord Jesus, The Christ, yield or put your body and soul members including your brain, under orders as slaves to the imputed Righteousness of God and developed righteousness from Metabolized Bible Doctrine resulting in the experiential sanctification of Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God.

Rom 7:18-25; Certainly, in fact, I know that there does not reside in me, that is, in my human body with its Old Sin Nature, any intrinsic good, for the resolve, wish, desire, will or purpose is constantly present in me to please and do the will of God, but the honorable accomplishment or execution of my purpose is negative. For the intrinsic good which I desire, purpose or resolve to do from emotion or sincerity on certain intervals, I do not do, But the evil which I do not desire or resolve to do, this I keep on practicing or accomplishing. Now if what I do not desire, purpose or resolve to do, the same I keep doing, I am no longer the one bringing it about or accomplishing it, but the Old Sin Nature which dwells or resides within me. Consequently, I have discovered this rule of action or principle residing in me, that when I, wish, desire, purpose, resolve to do the honorable thing, the principle of evil is always present residing in me. For along with other believers under Positive Volition, I am pleased or delighted in the Bible Doctrine from the source of the God, in the Stream of Consciousness of my Soul, but I see another principle of a different kind, namely of opposition, in the members of my human body, campaigning in antagonism against the principles of Bible Doctrine in the Left Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of my Soul and so bringing me into captivity making me a prisoner to the principle of the Old Sin Nature the same being in the members of my body. I am a totally miserable reversionistic believer under Divine Discipline from the Justice of God! Who will rescue me in my helplessness and drag me from this danger and incredible misery from the human body, with its Old Sin Nature, of this temporal or carnal death? Grace belongs to the God (the solution to all inner conflicts of the believer), through Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ our Lord! So then, on the one hand, I myself am obligated to serve, with my mind or Stream of Consciousness of the Soul, the law or principles or objectives or doctrines of God relating to experiential sanctification and Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God, but on the other hand with my Old Sin Nature, I impulsively serve the law or principles of the Old Sin Nature.



Rom 8:5

v5: For those believers who keep on being dominated by the flesh, the Old Sin Nature, being carnal or reversionistic, keep thinking about and concentrating on the things of the flesh the trends of the Old Sin Nature toward Sin, Human Good and Evil, but in contrast, those mature believers under Positive Volition to Bible Doctrine, who are dominated by God the Holy Spirit keep thinking about and concentrating on those doctrines from God the Holy Spirit.

Rom 8:28; THEREFORE, WE, Consistently Advancing Believers in or moving toward Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God, HAVE LEARNED DOGMATICALLY, SUDDENLY REALIZED, LEARNED TO KNOW or PERCEIVE from reverse concentration, IN FACT, THAT TO THE ADVANTAGE OF ONLY THOSE MATURE OR MATURING BELIEVERS persisting in Occupation with the Person of Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ, WHO LOVE THE UNIQUE GOD, from Reciprocal Love for God Motivation, HE, GOD, CAUSES ALL THINGS, Blessing, Adversity, and Undeserved Suffering in time , to continue TO WORK TOGETHER FOR THE GOOD OF INTRINSIC VALUE, Execution of the Equation of Hope Plan of God, TO the advantage of THOSE, both individual mature believers and the client nation, Believers only, WHO ARE ELECTED ACCORDING TO PRIVILEGE, Royal Family of God, forming the pivot, AS A PART OR ON THE BASIS OF A PREDETERMINED PLAN (Execution of the Equation of Hope Plan of God,  $X + Y + Z = \text{Maximum Glorification of God}$ ).

Rom 8:32; THE GOD THE FATHER WHO DID NOT EVEN SPARE HIS VERY OWN UNIQUE ADULT SON, Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ in Hypostatic Union, BUT HE, GOD THE FATHER, ON BEHALF OF, INSTEAD OF, IN PLACE OF ALL OF US, DELIVERED HIM, Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ, OVER through judicial imputation of all personal sins TO THE PUNISHMENT OF *SUBSTITUTIONARY SPIRITUAL DEATH* JUDGMENT as an act of justice, as a substitute; it is surprising that you cannot understand this logical concept; HOW SHALL HE, God the Father NOT ALSO, WITH HIM, Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ, FREELY OR GRACIOUSLY OR BENEFICIALLY IN GRACE GIVE TO US from the Justice of God THE ALL THINGS as temporal blessing, He DOES. (ALL Grace Blessings in time)

Rom 8:35; (rhetorical question) Who shall divide or separate us from the Lord Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ and his love for us? (answer NO ONE) Shall extreme circumstantial pressure afflictions or oppressions of historical disasters, or pressure of mental anguish, or persecution because of Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God, or deprivation of food, or nakedness from being deprived of clothing, or natural dangers, or suffering from military defeat or disaster, or revolution, or crime or violence?

Rom 8:38-39; Therefore, I, Paul, stand convinced, that neither any aspect of death nor life, neither fallen angels (or elect) nor high ranking ruling demons ie principalities, or all human powers, neither present things nor future things, neither any lofty concepts of arrogance of anything residing in the height of stellar space, ie Heaven, nor extreme poverty including the depth of Hell, nor any other created being, shall have the power to be able to separate us; especially believers in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God; from the Love of God the Father which is in Christ Jesus our Lord.

Rom 9:19-21; Therefore You will say to me, "Why does he (God) still find fault? For who has resisted his will or purpose?" On the contrary mankind oh Mankind, you, who are you who answers back to God? Shall what is formed say to him who formed it, "Why have you made me like this?" For does not the potter (God) possess authority over the clay (Mankind) from the same lump to make on the one hand a vessel for the purpose of Honor and on the other hand a vessel for the purpose of Dishonor, Of course he does.

Rom 9:30; (lit Therefore what shall we say) Therefore, to what conclusion are we forced? That the high quality Gentiles who did not strive for, run after or pursue Self Righteousness have attained, overtaken, acquired without their effort, divine righteousness in fact that is, even the Absolute Righteousness which is from the source or by means of faith in The Lord Jesus, The Christ?

Rom 9:31-32; But in contrast the racial Jew, Israel, who seeks or strives after or purses Self or Works Righteousness based on or by keeping the great Mosaic Law has not accomplished nor attained the purpose of the law. (Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God through faith in Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ alone Codex II,

Function of freedom in the client nation Codex I & III and to provide bases for evangelism and spiritual advance to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and missionary actions from the client nation and to demonstrate the fality of Self Righteousness for blessing and salvation). Because Why? Because they absolutely did not pursue or did not seek it, salvation, by means of the first single act of faith, but as it were by means of their many works or by keeping the law; they have seen yet still tripped or stumbled against or over that Stumbling Stone or Rock of stumbling Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ.

Rom 10:3; For or as a result of not knowing or constantly being ignorant of the righteousness that comes from God, and by seeking to establish or confirm what does not exist to God, their very own Self Righteousness, they have not been obedient nor subordinate not submitting to authority and rejecting the gospel and God's righteousness. (They have not been obedient to the Righteousness of God)

Rom 10:19; But Again I say, did Israel ever fail to know or understand? Of course NOT. First Moses speaks as a permanent witness about Israel from the exodus to AD70 and even to this day (Deut 32:21), "I, Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ God of Israel, will provoke and make you, Jews, jealous over a no nation, not a client nation, thus a gentile nation; over a dull stupid nation lacking understanding I will make you, Jews, angry."

Rom 10:20-21; Then next witness Isaiah, (Is 65:1) having maximum clear moral courage without loss of sanity or emotion not being stupid, is so very bold as to say; "I, Jesus of Nazareth, The Chris the God of Israel, have been found by those gentiles, without Jewish missionaries, who were not looking for me or who did not know or understand how to seek me; I became manifest or known to those gentiles with Positive Volition at God Consciousness for their interest who did not ask about me." But in contrast, face to face to Israel he Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ says in the past continuing into the present, (Is 65:2) "Day in and Day out I spend all my time in evangelizing the Jews who have already rejected the gospel presented in codex II and by the prophets, every day of every generation I have extended an imploring desperate last chance gesture with my hands, facing a client nation of Israel of disobedient Jews rejecting Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ and obstinate and stubborn beyond description nation of people in the Big Blot Out with accumulated Scar Tissue of the Soul, for Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God."

Rom 11:4

v4: But what says God or is the divine answer or response to him, Elijah? (1Kings 19:18) "I have left behind in a place of honor as a rear guard and reserved to myself an honorable pivot of seven thousand people who are of such a character because of their being believers in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God that have not bowed a knee to Ba'al."

Rom 11:8-10; Just as it stands written having been inspired by God the Holy Spirit (Deut 29:4, Is 29:10, Is 6:9-10), THE God of Israel, Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ, has given them the unbeliever Jews only, in the spin off of reversionism and apostasy, a state of mind of stupefaction and insensibility from arrogance in the big blot out, Black Out of the Soul, Eyes for the purpose of not seeing thus no concentration and ears for the purpose of not hearing thus no perspicacity or perception of the 1<sup>st</sup> advent of Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ, down to this very day, existing throughout the age of Israel and Church Age and through the tribulation. Also (in addition to Moses, Isaiah & Elijah) David says, "May their table of spiritual heritage in their scriptures be for a snare and for a trap causing maximum Negative Volition, and a stumbling block of the 1<sup>st</sup> advent especially the cross, the big blot out, and so for a retribution of just punishment for them historically in the holocaust judgments and eternally. Let their eyes be darkened for the purpose of NOT seeing (Quote from the Hebrew Torah), and cause the backs of the Jews to always bend constantly under the big blot out judgments. (Quote from Greek Septuagint) "

Rom 11:11; Therefore, I, Paul, say (in a rhetorical question expecting a negative answer), They, Jewish believers and unbelievers, did not stumble under the Big Blot Out, so as to fall under the 5<sup>th</sup> cycle of Divine Discipline did they? Of course or definitely NOT! But through their reversionistic apostasy transgression of defection from their spiritual heritage and the salvation message belonging to them the salvation message belongs to the Gentiles, in order that they, the Jews, might be provoked and stimulated to emulation of faith in Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ.

Rom 11:14; If in some way or some how, I shall provoke or stimulate to emulation my flesh the racial Jews jealous, and might save some of them.

Rom 11:15; Now or For if their rejection, the 5<sup>th</sup> cycle of Divine Discipline in AD70 which destroyed the client nation status of Israel, has become THE reconciliation of the world, and it has, what will be their acceptance but life from the dead (resurrection of the nation and all Jewish believers at the 2<sup>nd</sup> advent)?

Rom 11:19-20; Some of You, arrogant gentile believers, will say then, "The Branches were broken off in order that I a gentile believer might be grafted in." (sarcasm) Quite Right, That is SO true, but you don't have the whole story, because of their unbelief and rejection of ALL the Laws of Divine Establishment principles and the Gospel of Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ and Bible Doctrine and client nation functions, They, client nation Israel of the past and the unsaved jews, were broken off, but you, believing gentiles, stand fast because of faith in Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ, in contrast to the Jewish unbeliever and are supported by Logistical Grace and through all doctrines including those of the Faith Rest Drill (4 categories) . Stop arrogant thinking in error from inside the Interlocking System of Arrogance, but start voluntarily becoming respectful and keep thinking in terms of respect or fear the Divine Discipline from God.

Rom 11:33-34; Oh! THE inexhaustibility of THE abundant wealth, both of THE wisdom, the total self knowledge and omniscience and THE foreknowledge (not emotion) of THE God, How unfathomable beyond our ability to estimate or inscrutable are his decrees and how his Highway or road or way of life or Modus Vivendi the attributes and policies of God are untrackable! For who has know the mind or thinking or understanding of the Lord Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ (Is 40:13, 1Cor 2:16) or who has become his adviser or counselor.

Rom 12:1; Therefore, I (command) urge, encourage, exhort, seek to persuade you, NOW, believers in the Royal Family of God, by means of God's rational compassionate sympathetic mercies of grace blessing from the Justice of God, that you constantly place your bodies under orders as a living holy sacrifice, by using the rebound procedure constantly and the resultant Filling of God the Holy Spirit, this is acceptable and well pleasing to our God; which is your rational and spiritual service or worship.

Rom 12:2+3; Stop being conformed to this world (Arrogance Skills) but be transformed by the renovation of your thinking (Spiritual Skills), that you may prove what the will of God is, namely the good of intrinsic value, the well pleasing (execution of the Protocol Plan of God) the mature. (invisible impact Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God) For I say or communicate through the grace (the policy of God for mankind and for blessing for believers) which has been given to me, to everyone, all believers in the Church Age, who is among you who have the potential for becoming invisible hero's and part of the pivot, STOP persisting in over thinking of self in terms of arrogance and arrogance skills in your thinking, beyond the point of what you ought to think, but think objectively in terms of sanity, bible doctrine, for the purpose of being rational without illusion about self or others, as the God has assigned to each one of us a standard of thinking from Bible Doctrine as the Royal Family Honor Code.

Rom 12:9-10; Your Impersonal Love for Mankind should be non hypocritical and must function without hypocrisy; hate, detest, avoid always despise the evil as policy of Satan as ruler of the world and the function of the Old Sin Nature as ruler of life, adhere to the good of intrinsic value Plan of God; With reference to your brotherly or Impersonal Love, be devoted with a family affection to each other; with reference to your honor the Royal Family Honor Code, let each one esteem others in the Royal Family of God more highly than self, thus make it a matter of honor to give precedence to others in the Royal Family of God.

Rom 12:19; Beloved believers with Absolute Righteousness loved by God, Stop avenging or never avenge yourselves or Never take your own revenge, instead, give place to the punishment from the Justice of God, for it stands written (Deut 32:35) "Punishment belongs to me, the Justice of God, I will repay the obligation of you being wronged, says the Lord"

Rom 13:1-7; Let every soul (thinking area) be in subjection to governing authorities for there is NO authority except from God and those which exist are established by God. Therefore he who resists authority has opposed the ordinance of God (Laws of Divine Establishment) and also they (Believers) who have opposed will receive condemnation on themselves (discipline from God). For rulers are not a cause of fear for Good behavior (establishment Good) but for evil, do you want to have no fear of authority then do what is Good and you will have praise from the same, for it (Government authority of Establishment) is a minister from God to You for Good, but if you do what is EVIL you should be afraid for it (Government) does not bear the sword for nothing or in vain (capital punishment), for it is the minister of God an avenger who brings wrath on those who practice evil. Therefore it is necessary to be in subjection of authority not only because of punishment for rejection of establishment but for conscience sake but because of this you also pay taxes, for they in authority are servants of God devoting themselves to this thing, render to all what is due them, Tax where tax is due, custom where custom is due, honor to whom honor, respect to whom respect.

Rom 13:8-11; Owe nothing to anyone, do not have a personal sense of obligation in all relationships, except to tolerate (love) each other of the same category as other believers, for when he tolerates (loves) the believer with a different personality or opinion as part of his duty under the Royal Family Honor Code with Impersonal Love and toleration with respect for the Righteousness of God imputed by God to all believers, he who tolerates (loves) the other believers has fulfilled the Mosaic law. For instance, this part of the Decalogue referring to crime, You will not commit adultery the sin of fornication and the crime of stealing another man's property, his wife; you shall not murder; you shall not steal; you will not commit perjury in court; you will not lust; and if there is any other commandment it is summarized and epitomized in this principle, Namely, You shall love your neighbor as yourself. The Love required by the Royal Family Honor Code, namely Impersonal Love, does not produce evil to a neighbor or those in our periphery, therefore the love is the fulfillment of the law and the Royal Family Honor Code. This do also, in addition to your responsibility to the Laws of Divine Establishment government and believers under the Royal Family Honor Code, by having known, from consistent Perception, Cognition, Inculcation & Metabolization of Bible Doctrine, the period of time, that it is already, time for you to wake up, through cognizance of pertinent Bible Doctrine, from sleep of apathy, ignorance, indifference, disorientation to history and reality of contemporary events from reversionism and apostasy. For you see now, our deliverance, the entire Royal Family of God, in the rapture of the church, is nearer to us now than when we first believed;

Rom 13:13-14; Let us keep walking, under the Royal Family Honor Code and Filling of God the Holy Spirit with maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in our Stream of Consciousness of the Soul, honorably or behave properly; as in the daytime or light of eternity, not in rioting in rejection of other's authority as part of group discipline, nor in sin or carnality and evil, carousing, drunkenness or partying to the point of ignoring the Spiritual Life as rejection of personal volitional authority thus lack of self discipline; not in fornication normal or abnormal sexual promiscuity and not licentious thinking or sensuality, not in discord or contention from Mental Attitude Sins nor jealousy from lack of self discipline. But put on the Lord Jesus Christ by consistent Perception, Cognition, Inculcation & Metabolization of Bible Doctrine to the point of Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and entrance into Status Quo Super-Grace and Occupation with the Person of Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ, and STOP making provision for or giving forethought to the Old Sin Nature because of Lusts or distractions from Bible Doctrine in crusades or by persons or business or anything which involve sin, Human Good or evil.

Rom 14:4; You there, Who are you, who do you think you are, the one who keeps judging the (female) domestic slave belonging to another? To his own Lord, Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ, he stands firm and stabilized with steady advance without emotion to take the objective under maximum pressure under discipline and authority or he becomes a casualty falling or being slain in the battle from reversionism. For the Lord has the power to cause him to stand fast to hold his ground and when you judge stand he will.

Rom 14:8-13; For just as when we, believers in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God, live, we live to the Lord, so also when we, believers in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God, die under dying grace; we die for the Lord, so not only if we live maybe we will and maybe we will not based on the timing of God, but also if we die when life is over, we are the Lord's. You see, for this reason, Christ died, and lived, in order that or for the purpose that he might be the Lord over both dead and living. But You there, weak, legalistic and antinomian



growing and reversionistic believers, why do you always judge, malign, gossip about your fellow Believer, or you also strong believer why do you despise or regard your fellow weak Believer with contempt as their not being as spiritual as yourself? For all believers, the Royal Family of God, shall be present or stand by under orders at the Presiding Judgment Seat or Tribunal Throne of The God, Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ. For it stands written, (Is 45:23) "As I keep on living, having perfect attributes and essence and integrity, and By myself I have sworn the Lord communicates, 'Every knee shall kneel in genuflex to me, Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ, and every tongue in every language shall confess to the God the Father.'" So Therefore, each one of us, the Royal Family of God, shall give an account to God, Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ, concerning himself. Therefore let us, from our own motivation of Bible Doctrine in our Stream of Consciousness of the Soul, not, from now on judge each other but rather distinguish, prefer, or determine this, instinctively and instantaneously, not to place an obstacle, distraction or trap in front of his fellow weak Believer.

Rom 14:10; But You there, weak, legalistic and antinomian growing and reversionistic believers, why do you always judge, malign, gossip about your fellow Believer, or you also strong believer why do you despise or regard your fellow weak Believer with contempt as their not being as spiritual as yourself? For all believers, the Royal Family of God, shall be present or stand by under orders at the Presiding Judgment Seat or Tribunal Throne of The God, Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ

Rom 16:17; Now I urgently keep on appealing to, exhorting, comforting, encouraging, beseeching or energetically urge you advancing or mature Believers in the Royal Family of God, keep your eyes on or mark or be discerning or take critical notice of being alert with regard to, those weak believers who keep on causing dissensions, divisions, apostasies and temptations or strife and hindrances or offenses, trapping by causing enticement of people to get out of fellowship contrary to the Bible Doctrine which you have consistently learned from a Pastor Teacher, IN FACT, keep avoiding, shunning, separating yourself or turning away from them.

Rom 16:18; For such reversionistic believers do not obey or serve as slaves to our Lord Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ but their own emotional empty hidden responder patterns serving themselves, and by good, pleasant, bland words or sweet speaking masking a fraudulent purpose and clever speeches or smooth and flattering speech of hypocrisy false teachers deceive or seduce away from truth into error, the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul of those ignorant of Bible Doctrine

SS 1:13; My beloved (RM) is to me a pouch of Murr which lies all night between my breasts

SS 2:4; He has brought me to the House of Wine (Dining Out) and his banner over me is Love (protection)

SS 4:6; Until the Day blows away, when the shadows flee away I will go to the mountain of Murr to the Hill of frankensense (fragrance of Memories)

SS 8:6-7 (Shepard Lover Speaking after rescuing her from the Harem of Solomon); Stamp me like a Signet ring on your Right Lobe, as a signet ring on your arm (body) For Cat 2 Love is as strong as death, Jealousy is as cruel as the Grave, Love's Flame is like a flame of Fire and is the Flame of the Lord (passion of Soul and Body). Many Waters are not able to extinguish the Fire of Category 2 Love nor can flood waters inundate it, If a man were to give all of the wealth of his estate for Category 2 Love it would be rejected.

Titus 3:3; For we were at one time ignorant, disbelieving, being deceived, constantly enslaved to various kinds of lusts and pleasures, passing the time in wickednesses and jealousy, being detested and hating one another of the same kind [believers].

Titus 3:5; NOT by or on the basis of or out from the source of works, production, function of human abilities, Human Good, or human talents, by means of relative righteousness of Human Good which we have done, but according to the norms and standards of HIS MERCY or GRACE WORKING on our behalf, He saved us, through or by means of the washing even regeneration even the renewing of being again put into a new species, under the agency of God the Holy Spirit.



Zech 4:6; Then he said to me, "This is the word of the LORD to Zerub'babel: It is not by might, nor by power, but by my Spirit, says the Jehovah God of the Armies.

Zech 10:2; For the teraphim utter nonsense, and the diviners see lies; the dreamers tell false dreams, and give empty consolation. Therefore the people wander like sheep; they are afflicted for want of a shepherd.

Return to the [Table of Contents](#)

### The Reluctant Sparrow

There once was a little young sparrow who lived in the northern states of this great nation. It was a delightful summer with warm sunshine in the day with some cleansing rain shower occasionally to wash the dust from his wings. There was plenty of food in worms and fruit on the trees as the spring and summer unfolded and this sparrow was exceedingly pleased with his life and circumstances. As summer turned to fall and the weather became a bit cooler his friends the other older sparrows began to ready themselves for the long flight south to warmer climate and to avoid the chill of winter in the north. The little sparrow however did not want to go through all the effort to fly all that way just yet. The fruit on the trees was ripe and much had fallen to the ground and there was plenty to eat and still some warm places to sleep. As fall continued and the weather got colder and the fruit rotted away finally the little sparrow decided he might just have to endure the long flight south. So one particularly bleak day with great clouds in the sky and a strong chill in the air he began his flight south. As he flew along the weather turned very cold and it began to snow very hard. He fought his way through the icy cold snowy wind but eventually his wings froze over with the moisture from the snow and he plummeted to the ground. Fortunately for him he landed with a splat on the back of a large cow. The cow trying to avoid the irritation of the cold sparrow on his back shook him off into a large fresh cow patty. The little sparrow raised his head from the stench of the manure thinking how terrible and embarrassing it was to be covered with fresh cow manure. Suddenly he realized that his wings were thawing and he was warming up even though the snow was falling even harder. So to celebrate his incredible good fortune he stuck his head up above the manure and began to sing a sweet and pleasant sparrow song. Nearby, a vigilant barnyard cat heard the pleasant singing and began to search for its source. Finding the sparrow stuck in the fresh cow manure he instantly plucked him out and cleaned him off and promptly ATE HIM.

The moral of the story is:

It is a prudent insightful thing to Plan Ahead in your life.

HOWEVER!!!

If your plans fail and you find yourself deep in the SHIT of life remember that those who sometimes put you in the SHIT are not always your enemies.

If find yourself deep in the SHIT of life remember to keep your mouth shut because all of those who get you out of the SHIT are not always your friends.

Return to the [Table of Contents](#)

## Postulates of Divine Integrity

Advantage == Integrity of God

Advantages == blessing from the Integrity of God

Potential + Capacity == Advantages

Potential == Imputed Absolute Righteousness

Capacity == Metabolized Bible Doctrine acquired from the Grace Apparatus for Perception

### Personal Postulates:

There are no advantages to the advantages without the advantage.

If you have the advantage you have the advantages

Without the advantage there are no advantages.

Disadvantages and Maladjustment to the Advantage cannot cancel THE ADVANTAGE.

Potential + Capacity == Advantages

### National Postulates:

No nation can have the advantages without the advantage.

A nation without the advantage loses its advantages

No nation can recover its advantages without the advantage.

Loss of both the advantage and advantages removes that nation from Human History under the 5th cycle of Divine Discipline

Potential + Capacity == Reality

Potential does not become reality without capacity

Potential from Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God with imputation of Absolute Righteousness + Capacity from maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul resulting in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God == Reality of Blessing from God.

Potential + Capacity == Advantages

Potential == Imputed Absolute Righteousness

Capacity == Metabolized Bible Doctrine accumulated from consistent function under the Grace Apparatus for Perception

Advantages == Blessing from the Justice of God

While the Righteousness of God imputed at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God is the potential, Bible Doctrine perceived through the function of the Grace Apparatus for Perception is the capacity for and reality of unimaginable Blessing from the Justice of God.

Potential + Capacity == Reality.

Imputation of the Righteousness of God + Daily Grace Apparatus for Perception function and maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine built up in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul == Reality of reaching Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and the resultant Blessings in time and eternity.

Potential is provided through Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God

Mechanics include the imputation of the Righteousness of God and the resultant believer's justification

Capacity is developed through progress in spiritual growth by means of daily Grace Apparatus for Perception function thus perception of Bible Doctrine.

Reality occurs when the growing believer attains spiritual maturity and is thus in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God.

Potential + Capacity == Reality

Potential == Imputed Absolute Righteousness at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God

Capacity == Consistent Perception, Cognition, Incultation & Metabolization of Bible Doctrine using the Grace Apparatus for Perception.

Reality == Blessings from the Justice of God at Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God in 5 categories.

*Many people have blessings for which they have no capacity*

*This nation of America has freedom for which the people have no capacity*

*This is due to propaganda infiltrating the education system and every source of media and entertainment*

*Americans do not appreciate their prosperities and have no Frame of Reference for them and no understanding of how they relate to the Integrity of God.*

*THEREFORE: America is in the process of totally losing all of them.*



## Personal Postulates:

There are no advantages to the advantages without the advantage.

## The Advantage

Capacity from Metabolized Bible Doctrine

Reality of Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God

or

Imputed Absolute Righteousness as potential

Comprehension of Bible Doctrine as capacity

Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God as objective of reality

If you have the advantage; *Absolute Righteousness imputed at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God and Perception, Cognition, Incultation & Metabolization of Bible Doctrine for capacity and maximum Adjustment to the Justice of God for reality*; you have the advantages

Without the advantage; *Absolute Righteousness imputed at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God and Perception, Cognition, Incultation & Metabolization of Bible Doctrine for capacity and maximum Adjustment to the Justice of God for reality*; there are no advantages, no blessings from the Justice of God.

Disadvantages and Maladjustment to the Justice of God cannot cancel the Advantage, imputation of Absolute Righteousness at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God

Therefore: Potential + Capacity == Advantages

## National Postulates

No nation can have the advantages; blessing by association with a large pivot of mature believers, without the advantage, a large pivot of mature believers with total relationship with the Integrity of God.

A nation without the advantage; having a small or shrinking pivot of mature believers, loses its advantages, blessing by association with a large pivot of mature believers.

No nation can recover its advantages; *blessing from the Integrity of God by association with a large pivot of mature believers and imputed Absolute Righteousness and capacity from comprehended Bible Doctrine and reality of Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God*, without the advantage; *potential of Absolute Righteousness capacity from learning of Bible Doctrine and*

*reality from Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God by an enlarged or large pivot of mature believers.*

**Loss of both advantage and advantages removes that nation from Human History through administration of the 5th cycle of Divine Discipline as a result of Atrophy of the pivot of mature believers which always results in national disaster.**

Return to the [Table of Contents](#)

### Glossary

**Absolute Truth** – Exits in 3 categories for the:

- ✧ Unbeliever – Gospel of The Lord Jesus, The Christ
- ✧ Believer – Entire realm of Bible Doctrine from Scripture
- ✧ Both – The principles derived from Bible Doctrine concerning the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions.

**Adjustment to the Justice of God** – Divine grace is administered through the essence of God. Ultimately, all blessing or discipline from God to us must be filtered through His justice. As goes the justice of God, so goes blessing or cursing to us. It occurs in 3 areas, Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God, Rebound Adjustment to the Justice of God, Temporal Adjustment to the Justice of God, Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God

**Advanced Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God** – this is the status quo of the believer who has reached Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and continued to successfully progress through No Man's Land of Cosmic Dynasphere testing to receive from God his Ultra – Super Grace blessings and the Mantle of Suffering reward where pressure and adversity only serve to enhance his blessing and happiness.

**Apostasy** – Falling away from the system of belief arrived at through the Perception, Cognition, Incultation and Metabolization and Application of Bible doctrine, 2Th 2:3. Rejection of Bible Doctrine for the believer is entering into reversionism which is apostasy.

**Baptism of God the Holy Spirit** – One of seven salvation ministries of God the Holy Spirit whereby the omnipotence of the Holy Spirit enters the believer into union with Christ, making the Church Age believer a part of the royal family of God.

**Blackout of the soul** – The status of the believer with persistent negative volition to doctrine, which results in erasure of any Metabolized Bible Doctrine previously accumulated in the soul.

**Category I Love** – The love for God expressed as Occupation with the Person of The Lord Jesus, The Christ but also includes loving God the Father and God the Holy Spirit.

**Category II Love** – The romantic love involved with 1 special person in life of the opposite

gender in romance and ultimately marriage.

**Category III Love** – The love involved in close friendship with other individuals.

**Church Age** – The dispensation of intercalation inserted when the **Age of Israel** was temporarily halted by the 5<sup>th</sup> cycle of Divine Discipline in 70 AD as a result of Jewish overwhelming apostasy.

**Client Nation** – a national entity under the principle of divine institution #4, nationalism, which is responsible for custodianship and dissemination of the Word of God, Bible doctrine in the Church Age taking the place of Israel which is under the 5<sup>th</sup> cycle of Divine Discipline.

**Cosmic Dynasphere I** – The system of Satan to control this world based on encouraging human involvement in the *Interlocking System of Arrogance* resulting in indifference to the Plan of God and Will of God for mankind.

**Cosmic Dynasphere II** – The system of Satan to control this world based on sponsoring human involvement in the *Interlocking System of Antagonistic Emotional Hatred* resulting in antagonism to the Plan of God and Will of God for Mankind.

**Cosmos Diabolicus** – The orderly, cohesive and multifaceted system of thinking and function which includes purpose, policy, procedure and authority structure all designed by Satan, to subvert the human race and gain control over the world he rules, which is composed on one strategy to encourage Human Arrogance and sponsor Human Antagonism toward God in 2 organizational structures.

**Courage** – is the expression of Humility under pressure toward man and circumstances and is the ability to think under pressure and Courage and **Poise** are the covering of thinking with glory. Courage is a **Functional Virtue** when it is directed toward Man & Circumstances.

**Cowardice** – is the inability to think under pressure thus falling back on emotion which inevitably results in some level of FEAR.

**Dispensation** – An administrative period of Human History under the auspices of God. A divine categories of human history; therefore, both the divine outline and the divine interpretation of human history. A period of time during which a particular revelation of God's mind and God's will is operative, and during which man is tested as to his obedience to that specific manifestation of God's will, purpose, and plan.

**Divine discipline** – The punitive action taken by the justice of God under his Grace Policy to correct, punish, encourage, train, and motivate the believer's free will toward the plan of God for all dispensations. This occurs collectively for nations under the 5 cycles of Divine Discipline.

**Divine Dynasphere** – God's Power system for the believer in the Church Age with 8 areas or gates of entry and function including:

- ▲ *Filling of God the Holy Spirit*
- ▲ *Basic Christian Modus Operandi* of Faith Rest & Perception, Cognition, Incultation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine
- ▲ *Authority Orientation* producing Enforced & Genuine Humility
- ▲ *Orientation Envelope* of Bible Doctrine Orientation to reality and Grace Orientation to Life
- ▲ *Advanced Christian Modus Operandi* using the entire Faith Rest Drill (5 Stages) and consistent function under the Grace Apparatus for Perception
- ▲ *Integrity Envelope* of Motivational Virtue – Personal Love for God and Functional

Virtue – Impersonal, Unconditional Love for Mankind

▲ *Testing Envelope* for Momentum Testing in the Spiritual Life

▲ *Maturity Envelope*.

**Divine Good** – Production in the Spiritual Life of the advancing or mature believer under the Filling of God the Holy Spirit.

**Divine Institutions** – The systems created by God for the proper function and protection of the Human Race in the Angelic Conflict to allow a resolution of the Angelic Conflict appeal trail. There are 4 Divine Institutions including, Freedom (Volition), Marriage, Family, and Government each with its own specific area of and structure for function.

**Divine Viewpoint** – A system of thinking, values, problem solutions and orientation of the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul of the believer based on maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the soul providing God's Perspective of human life based on GRACE. This is the THINKING of The Lord Jesus the Christ. ([1Cor 2:16](#)) This thinking system results in Confidence ([2Cor 5:1](#), [2Cor 6:8](#)), Stability ([Phil 4:7](#), [2Thes 2:2](#)), Inner Happiness and Contentment ([Phil 2:2](#)), Grace Orientation, Capacity to Love God and a Relaxed Mental Attitude toward people ([1Cor 13:4-8](#), [1John 4:19](#)).

**Dying Grace** – This is the final and highest form of blessing in the life of the believer who has reached Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and is part of his Super – Grace blessing package. It is the provision of extraordinary blessing and happiness during dying. ([Ps 116:15](#)) The believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God transitions from Living Grace to Dying Grace and walks his final journey through the Death Shadowed Valley ([Ps 23:4](#)) accompanied by the Lord in harmonious rapport with him. This walk through the death shadowed valley for the mature believer is one of inner peace and tranquility.

**Election** – The recognition by God before creation in Eternity Past of those who would make Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God and the Sovereign Free Will decision of God to set apart for privilege these individuals based on their own free will decisions to make Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God through Faith alone in The Lord Jesus the Christ Alone.

**Enforced Humility** – The Status Developed from accepting and functioning under required conformity in any system of discipline instilled and based on the proper function of some organizational authority outside the individual.

**Essentials** – The absolute truths in life of the gospel of Christ, the Laws of Divine Establishment, and all other Bible Doctrines

**Epignosis** – Bible Doctrine which is clearly understood having been transferred into the Left Lobe of the Soul by God the Holy Spirit which is then ACCEPTED by faith and moved by God the Holy Spirit into the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.

**Equation of Hope** – In order to reduce the size of this document the graphic file concerning the Equation of hope can be viewed and downloaded at: [Equation of Hope](#)

**Equation of Despair** – In order to reduce the size of this document the graphic file concerning the Equation of Despair can be viewed and downloaded at: [Equation of Despair](#)

**Evil** – The plan and policy of Satan to rule this world. It is satanic THINKING and satanic doctrine. ([Matt 9:4](#), [Gal 6:3](#)) Under Satan's plan production results from thinking, Functional Arrogance or Functional Antagonism result from Motivational Arrogance or Motivational

Antagonism. Sin, Crime & Human Good result from THINKING. One cannot DO EVIL but he can THINK Evil and produce under that system.

**Evidence Testing** – This is testing only for the believer who has reached Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and continued through No Man's Land to Advanced Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God where he has reached the pinnacle of the Spiritual Life and is where his Spiritual Life is brought up before the Supreme Court of Heaven as a PRIMARY witness for the prosecution, The Lord Jesus, The Christ, to be subjected to cross examination by Satan who attempts to discredit his entire spiritual life.

**Expiation** – Payment of or cancellation of an unpayable debt, it describes the result of the Substitutionary Spiritual Death of Christ on the cross with regard to the unpayable penalty of human sin.

**Fear** – A part of [Emotional Revolt of the Soul](#) which is antithetical to Courage and [Poise](#) and the believer is constantly commanded to NOT FEAR anything at any time. ([Deut 31:3-6](#), [2Tim 1:7](#))

**Genuine Humility** – The Self Discipline which results in voluntary volitional conformity to the ABSOLUTE AUTHORITY of the Sovereignty of God and Bible Doctrine principles including the Laws of Divine Establishment, Divine Institutions and the entire content of Bible Doctrine developed as a result of properly functioning under Enforced Humility to develop Self Discipline.

**Gnosis** – is academically understood or comprehended Bible Doctrine as a result of the teaching ministry of God the Holy Spirit but which cannot be used in application to life's experiences having not at this point been accepted by faith.

**Grace** – The plan and policy of God toward mankind which is all that God can do for man which he CAN NOT earn nor deserve based on the Substitutionary Spiritual Death of The Lord Jesus, The Christ on the cross.

**Grace Apparatus for Perception** – The mechanic for the Perception, Cognition, Incultation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine for the believer based on the ministry and Filling of God the Holy Spirit under [Operation Z](#). This involves the Concepts and Principles of the 4 Rs:

- ✧ Reception – the consistent Perception, Cognition, Incultation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine under Stage 1 of the Faith Rest Drill (4 categories)•
- ✧ Retention – the Faith transfer of the learned Bible Doctrine under the ministry of God the Holy Spirit to the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul where it is stored as memory, vocabulary and categories of Bible Doctrine
- ✧ Recall – the Faith application of Bible Doctrine by the:
  - Claiming one or more of the 7000+ promises of God in the bible.
  - Using doctrinal principles to support these promises.
  - Developing doctrinal Rationales from the combination of these promises and principles.
  - Reaching doctrinal conclusions to control or overcome the situation.
- ✧ Resistance – to the influence of Evil and temptations to function within the Cosmic Dynaspheres

**Hamartiology** – The study of Sin.

**Human Good** – The function or production by man of anything benevolent or thought to be superficially beneficial for the Human Race resulting from operating under the principles of the



satanic plan and policy for this world, EVIL, all accomplished apart from God and out from the Power System of God.

**Human Viewpoint** – A system of thinking, values, problem solutions and orientation of the Soul of either the believer or unbeliever based on involvement with EVIL which is totally antithetical to Divine Viewpoint thinking, values, problem solutions and orientation based on GRACE as revealed by the Word of God.

**ICE** – This is an acronym for Isogogics, Categories, Exegesis as analytical tools in the overall method of interpretation of scripture where Isogogics is interpretation of biblical text within its historical context, Categories is classification of Bible Doctrines according to subject matter based on comparisons of scripture with scripture, Exegesis is a grammatical, etymological, syntactical and contextual analysis of scripture from the original Greek, Hebrew and Aramaic languages.

**Jeshurun**, (heb) – The remnant of mature believers who have persisted in their advance into and beyond Super Grace Statue Quo in the face of a declining number in the Pivot of the nation.

**Judgment Seat of Jesus Christ** – the time after the exit resurrection of the Church Age believers, the Rapture of the Church, prior to the beginning of the Tribulation, the end period of the Age of Israel, where The Lord Jesus, The Christ will judge or evaluate every Church Age believer for his performance, his use of the time given him in this life to execute the Protocol Plan of God. Each Church Age believer will be called to give an account of himself and will receive rewards based on his spiritual advance and Divine Good production during his lifetime.

**Justification** – to vindicate or declare righteous, it is a judicial act of vindication of the believer as a result of having received and possessing the Righteousness of God at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God. ([Rom 3:20-28](#))

**Kardia** – Greek for Heart referring to the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.

**Laws of Divine Establishment** – Laws or rules God has ordained for the survival, protection and freedom of the human race during the course of human history to allow completion of the Angelic Conflict appeal. They provide the freedom to fulfill the divine plan as ordained in the divine decrees and are designed and directed toward both believer and unbeliever.

**Legitimate Organization** – this includes any organization including systems of government which understand and adhere to the principles of the Laws of Divine Establishment and Divine Institutions in their establishment of Authority structure, Organizational Purpose and the Policies to support these.

**Logistical Grace** – The provision of support for every believer designed to provide for him everything needed to keep him alive in the world ruled by Satan in order that he might have the opportunity and choice of advancing in and executing the Protocol Plan of God.

**Loser Believer** – The loser believer combines emotional sins of the Interlocking System of Hatred and arrogance sins of the Interlocking System of Arrogance and functions under the 3 Arrogance Skills. He has problem solving incompetence resulting in perpetual carnality and has severely neglected or totally rejected Bible Doctrine and as a result is the Enemy of the Cross, the Enemy of God, and has become a Hater of God. ([John 15:23](#))

**Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God** – Is the result of the believer fulfilling the Plan of God and his purpose in life of consistent and persistent Perception, Cognition, Incultation and

Metabolization of Bible Doctrine moving from Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God and spiritual infancy through progressive stages of development to Spiritual Maturity having accumulated a maximum quantity of Bible Doctrine in his Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul. It is where he receives a package of 6 categories of incredible blessings for his life in time and a guarantee of special blessings for his life in eternity.

**Metabolized Bible Doctrine** – Bible doctrine which has been taught, understood academically and accepted by faith under the ministry and Filling of God the Holy Spirit therefore usable for application to life's experiences.

**Momentum Testing** – 5 Categories of Suffering for blessing and enhanced momentum in one's advance in the Spiritual Life occurring in varying stages of the Sophisticated Spiritual Life with Providential Preventative Momentum Testing Suffering beginning at Spiritual Self Esteem and having 2 levels in Spiritual Autonomy and intensified Momentum Testing in Intermediate Spiritual Maturity culminating in Evidence Testing in 1 of 2 categories in Advanced Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God. These 5 initial categories include testing from:

- Thoughts
- People
- Systems
- Disasters
- Prosperity

occurring in one's interactions in life.

**Nous** – (Gr) the Left Lobe of the Soul where academic comprehension or understand of Bible Doctrine occurs when it is perceived.

**Non-Essentials** – The accoutrements and accouterments of life, the DETAILS of life, over and above Bible Doctrine.

**Operation Z** – The structured involvement and mechanical process of learning Bible Doctrine based on the Filling of God the Holy Spirit and Positive Volition Faith as a non-meritorious system of perception on the part of the believer. It involves God the Holy Spirit providing Bible Doctrine to the Human Spirit when it is taught by a qualified prepared Pastor Teacher. This Doctrine is then in addition transferred to the Left Lobe of the Soul for academic comprehension where it is staged for the believer to accept or reject it on the basis of Faith. Accepting the Bible Doctrine by faith results in its being transferred by God the Holy Spirit to the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul for saturation of the compartments of the soul and eventual application to life. This process is a GRACE benefit from God and is therefore labeled the [Grace Apparatus for Perception](#).

**Organizational Humility** – Conformity to a systematic plan, policy and purpose developed under some system or organizational function in life based on the delegated authority from God and the Divine Institutions.

**Poise** – Humility under pressure, therefore humility is not only the [Foundation of Virtue](#) but gives the ability to THINK under pressure thus provides for the development of [Courage](#) and courage and poise are the covering of thinking with glory. Poise is part of the [Functional Virtue](#) of Courage and is a category of Courage giving one the ability to think under pressure which is the definition of true Courage. Poise is very important in Academic Discipline so that when one hears things he disagrees with or cannot grasp initially there must be poise, ie. no reaction, no disturbance, to distract others concentrating on what is being taught. Poise as the

ability to think under pressure requires concentration and having concentration ability when learning Bible Doctrine carries over into every aspect of life so that whatever one does in life he will be able to concentrate on. Facing Pressures in life with Poise means that there is concentration to focus the problem ON TO Bible Doctrine whether it is the result of prosperity or adversity in life. Courage with Poise and Concentration transfers knowledge which is in the soul onto the situation no matter what the subject matter is nor the situation. Poise and Concentration brings with them Objectivity which is expressed as good manners and thoughtfulness about others. This is the ability to NOT make an issue of self so others can learn or enjoy. Poise is the combination of Objectivity in life, therefore [Enforced Humility](#), with [Courage](#) and is therefore a clear manifestation of Courage. ([Deut 31:8](#), [Josh 8:1](#)) When the believer loses his Poise he inevitably succumbs to [Fear](#) and decisiveness is lost and decisions will be BAD Decisions from a position of weakness as a result of his having left the Divine Dynasphere and entered into the Cosmic Dynaspheres. ([1Chron 28:20](#))

**Problem Solving Devices** – The mechanics for overcoming all pressure, adversity, disaster and testing in the life of the believer as he advances in the Spiritual Life. There are 10 Problem Solving Devices including; Rebound, Filling of God the Holy Spirit, Faith Rest Drill, Grace Orientation, Bible Doctrine Orientation, Personal Sense of Destiny, Personal Love for God the Father, Impersonal Love for Mankind, Sharing the Happiness of God, Occupation with the Person of The Lord Jesus, The Christ.

**Problem Solving incompetence** – Failure to develop and deploy the 10 Problem Solving Devices and then use them to apply Metabolized Bible Doctrine from the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul to the circumstances of life.

**Providential Preventative Suffering** – 4 basic or preliminary categories of [Momentum Testing](#) with Suffering for Blessing when the believer enters into Spiritual Young Adulthood and has reached Spiritual Self Esteem as a result of developing a Cognitive Self Confidence in Bible Doctrine and God from consistency in his Perception, Cognition, Incultation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine.

**Propitiation** – this is an offering to satisfy or appease and is a description of the Substitutionary Spiritual Death of Christ on the cross as payment for all human sins which satisfied the Righteousness of God and appeased the Justice of God. ([1Pet 1:17-19](#))

**Rebound Adjustment to the Justice of God** – The Grace process provided by God for the believer to be able to be restored to fellowship with God and regain the Filling of God the Holy Spirit for Perception, Cognition, Incultation and Metabolization and Application of Bible Doctrine and function under the Royal Ambassadorship for Christ. ([1John 1:9](#), [1Cor 11:31](#))

**Reconciliation** – it is removal of a barrier between 2 antagonists, it describes all that Christ did in his Substitutionary Spiritual Death on the cross for all human sins to remove the barrier of antagonism between man to God and includes:

- ✧ Unlimited Atonement
- ✧ [Propitiation](#)
- ✧ Expiation
- ✧ Redemption

**Reverse Process Reversionism** – The final stage of reversionism in the soul of the believer where he now subject to the ultimate Divine Discipline of life, the Sin Unto Death as a result of being useless to God as a witness for the prosecution in the Angelic Conflict appeal trial. It

is a saturation of the soul with the Moral Degeneracy of Legalism or with the Immoral Degeneracy of Antinomianism from an interaction with the Interlocking System of Arrogance.

**Reversionism** – This is truly a 9 stage process in the soul of the believer where he reverts to a status in his Spiritual Life which is equivalent to his being an Unbeliever as a result of rejection of Bible Doctrine. It is a reversal of priorities, attitudes, affections, accompanied by the destruction of impersonal love, and a change in his manner of operation and personality to what it was prior to Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God. These stages are:

- ✧ Initial Negative Volition toward Bible Doctrine
- ✧ Reaction & Distraction from the Spiritual Life
- ✧ Frantic Search for Happiness
- ✧ Operation Boomerang
- ✧ Emotional Revolt of the Soul
- ✧ Locked in Negative Volition
- ✧ Black Out of the Soul
- ✧ Scar Tissue of the Soul
- ✧ Reverse Process Reversionism

**Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul** – Is called the (gr) Kardia or Heart in the scripture and is the residence of Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the soul of the believer from which this doctrine can be applied to life.

**Royal Family of God** – Is the title and station given to the believer in The Lord Jesus, The Christ in this dispensation of the church age which has been inserted into Human History in order to Christ to have a royal family for his royal patent of King of Kings and Lord of Lords his titles for his battlefield royalty having achieved a strategic victory in the Angelic Conflict as a result of his Substitutionary Spiritual Death for all human sin on the cross. This is the result of every believer at the point of Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God being placed into union with Christ by means of the ministry of the Baptism of God the Holy Spirit.

**Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God** – In the relationship between God and Man in Human History man must adjust to God and must do so according to the standards of the Righteousness of God under the auspices of the Justice of God. In other words man must adjust to God through his justice in order to have a relationship with God. This can only occur for mankind by Faith alone in The Lord Jesus, The Christ alone at the instant of Salvation.

**Sanctification** – the act of setting something or someone apart, a term used to designate something or someone being SET APART for GOD’S special purpose. It includes:

- ✧ Positional – a permanent status of every Church Age believer starting at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God where he is placed by God the Holy Spirit into positional union with The Lord Jesus, The Christ. ([1Cor 12:13](#))
- ✧ Experiential – the believer’s progressive execution of the Spiritual Life in the Protocol Plan of God from Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God to his physical death. ([John 17:19](#), [John 17:17](#))
- ✧ Ultimate – the believer receiving his Resurrection Body which glorifies The Lord Jesus, The Christ for all eternity. ([Phil 3:21b](#))

**Scar Tissue of the Soul** – This is the distortion of the soul as a result of persistent Negative

Volition toward Bible Doctrine which results from Emotional Revolt of the Soul where the emotions no longer respond to the Right Lobe but now control it, Black out of the Soul where all previously metabolized Bible Doctrine is systematically erased and replaced by Human Viewpoint Evil of the plan and policy of Satan. This makes it unlikely that the believer will respond to Bible Doctrine at any time.

**Sin unto Death** – The death of the believer who has rejected God, Bible Doctrine and the Spiritual Life of the Church Age for function under the plan and policy of Satan, EVIL. This results in his no longer being useful in the Plan of God as a witness for the prosecution in the Appeal of the Angelic Conflict Trial therefore being taken out of this life by God under a system of maximum misery.

**Sophia** – Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul which is available and possible to use in application to life's situations, conditions and experiences.

**Spiritual Adolescence** – The status of spiritual growth between spiritual infancy which occurs at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God and spiritual adulthood which occurs when the believer has accumulated enough Bible Doctrine in his Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul to have developed Grace Orientation to life and Bible Doctrine orientation to reality. (See [“Progressions in the Spiritual Life”](#) for further clarification of stages of spiritual growth.

**Spiritual Adulthood** – The status of the believer who has accumulated enough Bible Doctrine in the Right Lobe to have developed and deployed the Adult Problem Solving Devices of a Personal Sense of Destiny, Personal Love for God the Father and Impersonal Love for Mankind onto his Forward Line of Troops of his soul. (See [“Progressions in the Spiritual Life”](#) for further clarification of stages of spiritual growth.

**Spiritual Infancy** – The status of the believer immediately following Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God and remaining until there has been sufficient Bible Doctrine intake to provide a basic understanding of the Spiritual Life in the Plan of God. (See [“Progressions in the Spiritual Life”](#) for further clarification of stages of spiritual growth.

**Spiritual Skills** – Include the Filling of God the Holy Spirit, Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul, 10 Problem Solving Devices developed and deployed onto the Forward Line of Troops of the soul and complete execution of the Protocol Plan of God.

**Spirituality** – The ABSOLUTE status of the believer being under the Filling of God the Holy Spirit or NOT as a result of consistent use of the Rebound procedure after personal carnality to restore this status.

**Super Grace** – The Level of Direct Blessing for the believer who has reached Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God where he receives 6 categories of EXTREME or SUPER Grace blessing from God as a result of his execution of the Protocol Plan of God. These blessings include Spiritual, Temporal, Association, Historical, Heritage and Dying blessings.

**Surpassing Grace** – The Level of Direct Blessing for the believer in eternity who has demonstrated his successes in execution of the Protocol Plan of God in time by accumulation of a maximum level of Metabolized Bible Doctrine into his Stream of Consciousness of the Soul and therefore is the recipient of unimaginable blessing and reward for all eternity.

**Temporal Adjustment to the Justice of God** – The process which is supposed to occur in the believer on a daily basis resulting in consistent and persistent Perception, Cognition, Incultation



and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine to the point of Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and beyond.

**The Church** – The Body of Christ, the sum total of all believers in the Church Age from approximately 30 AD to the removal of all believers at the rapture of the church which is at the beginning of the Tribulational Period of the end of the Age of Israel

**Ultra – Super Grace** – The Level of Direct Blessing for the believer who is persistent in his progression in the Spiritual Life after reaching Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and receiving his Super – Grace package of blessings, where he is the recipient of a 2 fold increase in blessing which is beyond imagination in time despite extreme pressure in life.

**Undeserved Suffering for Blessing** – As the believer advances from spiritual infancy to Spiritual Maturity by the consistent accumulation of Metabolized Bible Doctrine in his Stream of Consciousness of the Soul, in order for this doctrine to be of any value to him in application to his life he must be able to access and use it. Therefore as different levels of spiritual advance occur different levels of testing are provided by God to allow the believer to use his accumulated Metabolized Bible Doctrine in application to the tests. This testing is designed to enhance and accelerate the spiritual advance of the believer and move him ever closer to completion of the Protocol Plan of God. This testing occurs as several categories and at different levels of intensity including 8 Systems or Levels of Testing in 9 Categories:

- ↗ **Basic Spiritual Testing** (3 Categories) – Old Sin Nature, Cosmic Dynasphere I & II
- ↗ **Providential Preventative Suffering** (4 Categories) – Preliminary Momentum Testing
- ↗ **Momentum Testing** (4 Categories) – Basic – Intermediate – Advanced
- ↗ **Evidence Testing** (2 Categories) – Regarding God, Regarding Man & Circumstances

**Virtue** – The quality of the individual based on the content of his soul and the decisions and actions he makes in life which includes:

Motivational Virtue

*Personal Love for God*

*Confidence toward God*

*Worship toward God*

*Genuine Humility toward God*

*Inflexibility regarding God & Bible Doctrine*

Functional Virtue

*Impersonal Love for Mankind*

*Impact Virtue – Sensitivity toward All others*

*Impact Virtue – Thoughtfulness toward All others*

*Impact Virtue – Courtesy toward All others*

*Impact Virtue – Good Manners toward All others*

*Impact Virtue – Accommodating to All others*

*Impact Virtue – Kindness to All others*

*Impact Virtue – Understand toward All others*

*Impact Virtue – Lack of prejudice toward all others*

*Courage toward Man*

*Morality toward Man*

*Enforced Humility toward Authority*

*Flexibility regarding every detail of life*

**Virtue Love** – Personal Love for God the Father and Impersonal Love for Mankind

**Winner Believer** – This is the believer who maintains a consistent residence in the Divine Dynasphere as a result of his use of the IRF (Instant Reaction Force) of the Rebound Procedure to recover from failures enabling him to be consistent in his Post Salvation Epistemological Rehabilitation from daily Perception, Cognition, Inculcation, Metabolization and Application of Bible Doctrine to his life.

**Wrongdoing** – Wrongdoing encompasses all sin which we either do not recognize as sin or have forgotten about after committing those sins. It is functioning outside the Plan of God with rejection of the power of the Spiritual Life given to us by The Lord. Wrongdoing encompasses such things as the sins involved with whitewashing the devil's world and greater involvement in the sins of the Interlocking System of Arrogance or Interlocking System of Hatred.

Return to the [Table of Contents](#)

